

**Cornell University Library**

**Ithaca, New York**

---

FROM THE

**BENNO LOEWY LIBRARY**

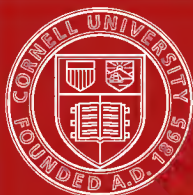
COLLECTED BY

**BENNO LOEWY**

**1854-1919**

**BEQUEATHED TO CORNELL UNIVERSITY**





Cornell University  
Library

The original of this book is in  
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in  
the United States on the use of the text.

<http://www.archive.org/details/cu31924013133065>

THE PLAYS  
OF  
PHILIP MASSINGER.



THE PLAYS  
OF  
PHILIP MASSINGER.

*From the Text*  
OF  
WILLIAM GIFFORD.

WITH THE ADDITION OF THE TRAGEDY "BELIEVE AS YOU LIST."

EDITED BY  
L<sup>T</sup>COL. FRANCIS CUNNINGHAM.



LONDON : JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 & 75,





# CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
INTRODUCTORY NOTICE . . . . .	vii
THE VIRGIN MARTYR . . . . .	I
THE UNNATURAL COMBAT . . . . .	35
THE DUKE OF MILAN . . . . .	65
THE BONDMAN . . . . .	99
THE RENEGADO . . . . .	133
THE PARLIAMENT OF LOVE . . . . .	166
THE ROMAN ACTOR . . . . .	194
THE GREAT DUKE OF FLORENCE . . . . .	223
THE MAID OF HONOUR . . . . .	253
THE PICTURE . . . . .	284
THE EMPEROR OF THE EAST . . . . .	320
THE FATAL DOWRY . . . . .	353
A NEW WAY TO PAY OLD DEBTS . . . . .	388
THE CITY MADAM . . . . .	423
THE GUARDIAN . . . . .	457
A VERY WOMAN ; OR, THE PRINCE OF TARENT . . . . .	492
THE BASHFUL LOVER . . . . .	527
THE OLD LAW . . . . .	560
BELIEVE AS YOU LIST . . . . .	595



## INTRODUCTORY NOTICE.

1584

PHILIP MASSINGER, the author of the nineteen plays contained in this volume, and of eighteen others, which, it is to be feared, are irrecoverably lost, was born in the year 1584; twenty years after Shakspeare and Marlowe, ten after Jonson, eight after Fletcher, and within two of Beaumont and Ford. Contemporary with him also were Greene, Webster, Peele, Chapman, Middleton, Shirley, Kyd, Decker, Marston, Daniel, Fulke Greville, and others of hardly inferior mark, "all of whom spoke nearly the same language and had a set of moral feelings in common." Such was the imperial manner in which Shakspeare and his brother dramatists of the great race took possession of the English stage, and filled

"The spacious times of great Elizabeth,  
With sounds that echo still."

Never before or since has the earth witnessed such a simultaneous outburst of minds of kindred power. Napoleon and his marshals did not make their appearance in a thicker cluster. When one thinks of the Burghley men, and the Armada men, who were sinking one by one into their graves: of Bacon and Raleigh in the full flush of their genius: of the Hampdens, and Cromwells, and Jeremy Taylors, and Miltons, who about the same time were being rocked in their cradles: lastly of old Queen Bess herself:—when one considers also that the entire population of England in those days was probably not more than that of our present London,—it is impossible not to feel an emotion of pride in belonging to the same "happy breed of men" from which they sprung, and in being born like them in

"This blessed plot, this earth, this realm, this England."

The same authorities which give 1584 for the year, fix Salisbury for the place, of Massinger's birth. The books of its churches have been searched in vain for any record of his baptism, but as one of the principal of them fell down in 1653, and there is a vacuum in its registers extending over the period in which the name might have appeared, it is probable that the infant son of Arthur Massinger received the name of Philip at the font of St. Edmund's. Hartley Coleridge indulges the pleasing fancy that he must have had for sponsor the greatest Englishman who has ever borne that name, the poet-soldier in whose "sweetly constituted mind no ugly thought or unhandsome meditation could find a harbour; who turned all that he touched into images of honour and virtue;" and who himself derived it from the arch-enemy of his country and his religion. And the circumstance of the sponsorship is in itself not improbable, for was not Sidney's sister Pembroke's wife, and the poet's father was a trusted and honoured "servant" of the Herbert family. Arthur Massinger indeed must have been a man of birth, education, energy, and high principle, for recent research has brought to light a letter from Henry Earl of Pembroke to the great Earl of Burghley, dated 28th March, 1587, recommending him in the strongest manner for the reversion of the office of Examiner in the Court of the Marches towards South Wales; and ten years afterwards, when a matrimonial arrangement of some sort was pending between these two powerful families, it was to Arthur Massinger that the delicate negotiation was confided.—[*Notes and Queries*, 1st S. iii. 52.]

In the dedication to *A New Way to Pay Old Debts* the poet states that he "was born a devoted servant to the thrice noble family" of Herbert, and the probability is that he was brought up as a page to the Countess of Pembroke at Wilton. His allusions to the position and minute duties of pages are perpetual. In that particular palace, if anywhere in England, he would learn to admire the combination of rank and power, and stately yet flowing courtesy, which in after life he was so fond of bestowing upon his favourite characters. So successful indeed is he in these delineations that, without the knowledge that such in all likelihood had been his upbringing, a biographer would be led to assume that it was so in order to account for the confident and consummate ease with which he treads the halls, and ascends the staircases, and enters the tents, and sits down at the banquets of his great dukes and emperors, and viceroys and proconsuls. But beyond this general idea which irresistibly forces itself upon us, we know nothing whatever of his early life. Not a single fact, not even a barren date, has come down to us until Friday, the 14th of May, 1602, when "Philip Massinger, a Salisbury man, the son of a gentleman" (*Sarisburiensis, generosi filii*), was entered at St. Alban's Hall in the University of Oxford. He must then have been about eighteen years old.

After this brief gleam of light, darkness again closes in—darkness that may be felt. Anthony à Wood says that the young student's expenses at the University were defrayed by the Earl of Pembroke, and that "he gave his mind more to poetry and romances for about four years or more, than to logic and philosophy, which he ought to have done, as he was patronized to that end." Langbaine, on the contrary, asserts that during his residence he applied himself closely to his studies; and that his whole support was drawn from his father. Tom Davies, his next biographer, considers that it was very wrong of him to neglect his logic and his philosophy, and thereby provokes the grim merriment of Gifford, who hints that the worthy fellow (whom one forgives for "mouthing a sentence as curs mouth a bone," in consideration of his having introduced Boswell to Johnson), neither possessed himself nor knew the meaning of "these valuable acquisitions." Gifford himself adopts the view of Langbaine, both as regards the studies and the means of living, and, after calling Wood a tasteless drudge, adds that the young man "must have applied himself to study with uncommon energy, for his literary acquisitions at this early period appear to be multifarious and extensive." The representatives of the "tasteless drudge" school might here retort on the logical and caustic critic, and inquire the names of the works in which at this period his literary acquisitions are made manifest.

It is agreed that Massinger left Oxford in 1606 abruptly, and without taking a degree; and, as it appears certain that his father died about the same time, it is reasonable to connect these circumstances together, and thence to conclude that at the age of twenty he found himself cast penniless on the world. The old Earl of Pembroke had died in January, 1601, and had been succeeded by his eldest son, who, according to Wood, was "not only a great favourer of learned and ingenious men, but was himself *endowed to admiration with a poetical geny*," and "was the very picture and *viva effigies* of nobility." Clarendon, in more weighty language, describes him as "the most universally beloved and esteemed of any man of that age. . . . of a pleasant facetious humour, and a disposition affable and magnificent." On every account, therefore, one would have supposed that a young man of such abilities would as a matter of course have been taken by the hand by a nobleman of such dispositions, who would have felt an additional pride in presenting him to the world as the son of his father's most cherished retainer. But the biographers, who agree in little else, are unanimous in saying that whatever may have been his claims to patronage, no patronage of any kind was afforded to him. To account for this singular neglect, Gifford is reduced to what I cannot but think the still more singular assumption, that Massinger had forfeited the Earl of Pembroke's favour by "having, during his residence at the University, ex-

changed the religion of his father for one at this time the object of persecution, hatred, and terror,"—in short, he had turned Roman Catholic. It requires a bold man to differ with Gifford on any point connected with Massinger, but is not a change of this sort the precise kind of circumstance the memory of which would have lingered longest among the cloisters of what Bunsen calls the Queen of Cities? Wood was entered at Merton forty-one years after Massinger quitted St. Alban's Hall, and it is not necessary to assume that there were Dr. Rouths in those days in order to feel convinced that he had opportunities of conversing with contemporaries of the poet. A freshman of 1868, of an enquiring turn of mind, would be tolerably certain to learn as much as he cared to hear about any distinguished character who had left the University in 1827. Besides, the fact would have been of particular interest to old Anthony, as he was himself again and again accused of exhibiting in his writings a strong leaning to all who were Papists or papistically inclined. But granting the force of the arguments as to the conversion, was the Earl of Pembroke a man likely to have been influenced as Gifford supposes? It is true that Clarendon says he was "a great lover of his country, and of the religion and justice which he believed could only support it; and his friendships were only with men of these principles;" but it was Puritanism, not Roman Catholicism, that was running in the Chancellor's head when he wrote these lines, and it must have been political rather than moral reasons that swayed the Earl in the choice of his friendships. Clarendon goes on to say that "he was clouded by great infirmities, which he had in too exorbitant proportion: he indulged to himself the pleasures of all kinds, almost in all excesses, and to women he was immoderately given up." For such an one to have been as strait-laced as Gifford's theory seems to require is to anticipate the pious fears of Goldsmith's soldier, in the exquisite dialogue in the *Citizen of the World*.

Gifford seems to think that this estrangement was limited to William, the then head of the house of Herbert, and speaks of Massinger's *anxiously avoiding* all mention of him individually, as contrasted with his *perpetually recurring* to his hereditary obligations to the family generally. But as far as I can discover, his mention of the family at all is limited to three occasions (*viz.*, in the dedications to *The Bondman*, 1624, the *New Way to Pay Old Debts*, 1633, and in a copy of verses 1636), so that the terms "anxious avoidance" and "perpetual recurrence" are at least as strong as the circumstances will justify. In one of these dedications also he expressly states that so late as 1624 he "had not arrived at the happiness to be made known to" Earl Philip, who up to that time, therefore, had neglected him as much as Earl William. Before dropping the subject, it will not be out of place to mention that the elder of these brothers is generally considered to be the mysterious W. H., the "only begetter" of sundry world-renowned sonnets; and that, only a year before the date above given, a certain folio volume had been dedicated to the two earls jointly as "the most noble and incomparable pair of brethren," whose "dignity" the editors "could not but know to be greater than to descend to the reading of these trifles"—the said trifles including, amongst other small matters, *Lear*, *Hamlet*, *Macbeth*, and *Othello*.

But to leave this long digression and return to Massinger. He left Oxford in 1606, and appears at once to have enlisted himself amongst "divers whose necessitous fortunes made literature their profession." He thus wrote of himself in the autumn of his days, when we know tolerably well how his time was employed; but of their spring and summer we can hardly say more than that they must have passed away in one long struggle for bare existence. The first distinct record of his independent doings is the performance at Court, in 1621, of his lost comedy of the *Woman's Plot*. But during this interval of fifteen years he must have produced

1. *The Forced Lady*, tragedy.
2. *Noble Choice*, comedy.
3. *The Wandering Lovers*, comedy.
4. *Philenzo and Hippolita*, tragi-comedy.

5. *Antonio and Vallia*, comedy.
6. *The Tyrant*, tragedy.
7. *Fast and Welcome*, comedy.
8. *The Woman's Plot*, comedy.

It is sad to think that the manuscripts of all these plays were in existence in the middle of the last century, and that not a trace of them now remains. They fell into the hands of one John Warburton, F.R.S. and F.S.A., Somerset Herald, a vulgar, illiterate, sordid, and unprincipled ex-exciseman, whose passion it was to glean up everything either in print or manuscript which bore in any way on a subject which interested him, making the collections over to the care of the domestic who discharged the double duties of cook and librarian, until he could find a person with education enough to write something fit for publication regarding them. In this way he had collected no less than fifty-five genuine unpublished English dramas of the golden period, unfortunately written upon paper suited for culinary purposes, every one of which, except three at the bottom of the pile, was appropriated leaf by leaf by this wretched kitchen wench for coverings for her pastry.\*

Besides these "martyrs of pies," as Pope would have called them, the four following surviving plays must be put down to the same period:—

9. *The Old Law*, comedy.
10. *The Virgin Martyr*, tragedy.†
11. *The Unnatural Combat*, tragedy.
12. *The Duke of Milan*, tragedy.

But when, after a careful calculation, it has been considered proved that fifteen pounds is the largest sum that even a writer of established reputation could reckon upon clearing by a single play, it is evident that Massinger must have had other sources of support for fifteen years than these twelve dramas could have afforded him. But it was the frequent fashion of those days, and a "noble practice" it was too, says Charles Lamb, for two or more writers to join in the composition of the same play, and Massinger's powers were such as peculiarly fitted him for the ready execution of this kind of mosaic. Langbaine has preserved some doggerel which describes his Pegasus as an easy hack that would

"Amble o'er

Some three-score miles of fancy in 'an hour ;"

and "he wrote with that equability of all the passions which made his English style the purest and most free from violent metaphors and harsh constructions of any of the dramatists who were his contemporaries." My present task has led me to peruse his works many times over, and again and again have his extraordinary fluency and facility led me to compare his powers to those of the statesman who could speak a king's speech off-hand.‡ That he lent such assistance to Fletcher, for one, we know from

\* There must have been something particularly hateful about this Warburton's character. Francis Grose, his brother herald, the "fine fat lodgel wight" of Burns, and the best-natured of men, quite exults in telling that "he died a beggar;" another friend seems to derive gratification from relating that he had a great abhorrence to the idea of worms crawling over him, and ordered his corpse to be packed in a particular manner: this packing fermented and burst the coffin during the funeral. But the feeling does not end even in the grave. His only son, we are told, happened to go into France in 1793, and was guillotined at Lyons. And here, in 1868, I plead guilty to feeling a certain sort of satisfaction in penning this note!

† Regarding this fine tragedy a brief note has been discovered in the Office Book of Sir George Buck, Master of the Revels, Oct. 6, 1620. "For new reforming the *Virgin Martyr* for the *Red Bull*, 40s."

‡ Macanlay describes Pitt's oratory as "lofty, sonorous, and commanding." But he only knew him at second-hand; while Cobbett, who must have heard him often, ad-

two altogether independent sources. Sir Aston Cockayne, a true friend, if not a true poet, has mentioned the fact on three separate occasions—the exact number which, according to Gifford, constitutes “perpetual recurrence.” In the first, addressing his cousin Charles Cotton, and speaking of Beaumont, he says :—

“ His own renown no such addition needs  
To have a fame sprung from another’s deeds ;  
And my good friend, old Philip Massinger,  
With Fletcher writ in some that we see there.”

Again, in his address to Mr. Humphrey Mosley and Mr. Humphrey Robinson, he comes to the same point :

“ For Beaumont of those many writ in few,  
*And Massinger in other few.*”

Lastly, in some lines to which I shall again have to refer, he says of the pair Fletcher and Massinger :—

“ Plays they did write together—were great friends.”

To all this quasi poetical testimony from his “worthy friend” must now be added the following most prosaic and most melancholy evidence under his own hand. It was discovered by Malone among the archives at Dulwich College, and may be left to tell its own sad and instructive story :—

“ To our most loving friend Mr. Phillipp Hinchlow, Esquire, these :—

“ Mr. Hinchlow,—You understand our unfortunate extremity, and I do not think you so void of Christianity, but that you would throw so much money into the Thames as we request now of you ; rather than endanger so many innocent lives ; you know there is ten pound more at least to be received of you for the play, we desire you to lend us five pound of that, which shall be allowed to you, without which we cannot be bailed, nor I play any more till this be dispatched. It will lose you twenty pound ere the end of the next week, beside the hindrance of the next new play. Pray, sir, consider our cases with humanity, and now give us cause to acknowledge you our true friend in time of need. We have entreated Mr. Davison to deliver this note, as well to witness your love as our promises, and always acknowledgment to be ever

“ Your most thankful and loving friends,

“ NAT: FIELD.

“ The money shall be abated out of the money remains for the play of Mr. Fletcher and ours.

“ ROB: DABORNE.

“ I have ever found you a true loving friend to me, and in so small a suit, it being honest, I hope you will not fail us.

“ PHILIP MASSINGER.”

It was of course impossible to refuse a request at once so urgent, so reasonable, so modest, and so “honest,”—*i.e.*, honourable ; but still it is satisfactory to be able to transcribe the following endorsement, which I copy *literatim* in order to show the spelling of the names, which no doubt to a certain extent preserves the pronunciation :—

“ Rec. by me Robert Davison of Mr. Hinshloe for the use of Mr. Dauboern, Mr. Feeld, Mr. Messenger the some of *vl.*

“ ROBERT DAVISON.”

This document is without date, but it must be before January 1616, when Henslow died, and therefore, which is worthy of note, during the lifetime of Francis Beaumont, who died on the 6th of March of the same year. The date of the tripartite letter is

dresses him in one of his “Rural Rides,” “Yes—you loud snorting bawler.” Is it possible for words to be more graphic ?

conjectured to be some time in either 1613 or 1614, and the research of Mr. Collier has discovered yet another document in the same quarry, which must also be given at length.

“Noverint Universi, &c., 4<sup>o</sup> die Julii, 1615.

“The condition of this obligation is such, that if the above bounden Robert Daborn and Philip Massinger, or either of them, should pay or cause to be paid unto the above-named Philip Henslowe, his executors, administrators, or assigns, the full and entire sum of three pounds of lawful money of England, at or upon the first day of August next ensuing the date of these presents, at the now dwelling-house of the said Philip Henslowe, situate on the Bankside, without fraud or farther delay, then and from thenceforth this present obligation to be null and void and of no effect, or else to remain and abide in full power, strength, and virtue.

“ROB. DABORNE,  
“PHILIP MASSINGER.”

When such uncommon pains are taken about so small a sum as three pounds, it is, I am afraid, evidence that the circumstances of the borrowers were such as to lead the lender to apprehend some difficulty in recovering his advance.

With the exception of the brief note of Sir George Buck regarding the *Virgin Martyr*, the first mention of Massinger's labours in the Office-book of the Master of the Revels, is on the 3rd of December, 1623, when

13. *The Bondman*, tragi-comedy,

was brought upon the boards. Philip Earl of Montgomery was present at the first performance, on which occasion, as Massinger states it, his “lordship's liberal suffrage taught others to allow it for current.” When in the following year the play was printed and dedicated to the Earl, it is to be hoped that the “liberal suffrage” assumed a more substantial shape than the forty shillings which was the customary payment for these compliments. Massinger's old comrade Field, as Mr. Collier tells us, when he printed his play *Woman is a Weathercock*, addressed it to “any woman that hath been no weathercock,” boastingly asserting that he did so “because forty shillings I care not for.” Matters at this time must have been better with him than when he penned that sad tripartite letter.

On April 17, 1624, Massinger produced

14. *The Renegado*, Tragi-comedy;

and on November 3 of the same year—

15. *The Parliament of Love*, Comedy.

They were both acted at the Cockpit, and are entered in Sir Henry Herbert's Office-book.

16. *The Spanish Viceroy*, Comedy,

which was one of the martyrs to Mr. Warburton's pies, is supposed to have been full of allusions to Gondomar, the Spanish Ambassador, and stood no chance of being licensed by the Master of the Revels. The players therefore resolved to act it on their own responsibility, and for this piece of insolence or of independence were required to make a most humble apology to Sir Henry Herbert, and to sign a promise “not to act any play without your hand or substitute's hereafter, nor do anything that may prejudice the authority of your office.” I find this circumstance recorded in the Life of John Lowin, and as Mr. Collier makes no allusion to Massinger being the author of the play, and as the date of the apology, December 20th, trends so closely on the date of performance of the *Parliament of Love*, I am led to suspect that Gifford may have admitted *The Spanish Viceroy* into his list on insufficient grounds. Malone, however, mentions that a play of Massinger's called *The Spanish Viceroy*; or, *the Honour of Women*, was entered at Stationers' Hall for Humphrey Mosely in 1653. If, indeed, Massinger were the author of a play in ridicule of Gondomar and his countrymen, would it not settle the question of his having become a Papist?



On October 11th, 1626, the King's Company performed—

17. *The Roman Actor*, Tragedy.

In dedicating this piece three years afterwards to Sir Philip Knyvett and Sir Thomas Jeay, he says, with manly self-confidence, "if the gravity and height of the subject distaste such as are only affected with jigs and ribaldry (as I presume it will), their condemnation of me and my poem can no way offend me; my reason teaching me such malicious and ignorant detractors deserve rather contempt than satisfaction." He adds, "I ever held this the most perfect work of my Minerva." And surely (*pace* Gifford) the character of Paris is a noble conception, upheld to the end with a grand consistency. In these respects it is only to be surpassed by that of Charalois in the *Fatal Dowry*—a Hamlet whose mind has not been sicklied o'er by the pale cast of thought.

Of his next play,

18. *The Judge*,

I find only the fact that it was acted by the King's Company on June 6th, 1627. It has perished, and left no trace behind. It does not appear to be known whether it was a tragedy or a comedy.

19. *The Great Duke of Florence*, Comedy,

was acted at the Phoenix, Drury Lane, on July 5th, 1627, under the name simply of *The Great Duke*.

20. *The Honour of Women*

was acted May 6th, 1628, and is now lost. If this were indeed the same as No. 16, *The Spanish Viceroy*, the perilous stuff must have been purged out of it to adapt it for representation.

21. *The Maid of Honour*, Tragi-Comedy,

was acted at the Phoenix, Drury Lane, but the date of its first appearance is unknown.

22. *The Picture*, Tragi-Comedy,

was first acted June 8th, 1629.

23. *Minerva's Sacrifice*, Tragedy,

perished by the hands of Mr. Warburton's kitchen wench. It was first acted Nov. 3rd, 1629, by the King's Company.

24. *The Emperor of the East*, Tragi-Comedy,

was acted March 11th, 1631, at Blackfriars, and was printed the following year.

We now come to

25. *Believe as You List*, Tragedy,

which was always described as a comedy, and believed to have been one of the many victims of that insatiable *barathrum* of the drama, the oven of the pie-eating Somerset Herald; and that one copy did so perish there can be very little doubt. Colley Cibber, however, had mentioned his having seen a transcript of it, with the stage directions inserted in the margin; and in the year 1844, "concealed in a vast mass of rubbish," this very transcript turned up once more. The lucky discoverer, Mr. Beltz, was fortunately a liberal and enlightened man, and lost no time in making a present of it to the public, through the medium of the long-defunct Percy Society.\* It was issued in 1848, under the nominal editorship of Mr. Crofton Croker, but might just as well have had no editor at all. I have not myself seen the manuscript, nor am I aware of the place of its deposit. An attempt was made to correct a few of the grosser errors by a writer in the fourth volume of the "Shakspeare Society's Papers," under the signature of a "Member of both Societies." Of his capabilities for the task I will only give two

---

\* The publisher of the present edition has not asked anybody's permission to make this reprint, simply because, when finder, editor, and "Society" had all alike gone to their graves, he was unable even to guess the quarter in which it would have been courteous to make the application

examples, taken for convenience, one from the Prologue, the other from the Epilogue. The latter, according to Mr. Crofton Croker, opens as follows:—

“ The end of Epilogues is to inquire  
The *conjure* of the play, or to desire  
Pardon for what's amiss.”

The word “conjure” in the second line is of course absurd, and the critic proposes to change it to *fortune*, which is not much better in meaning, and very unlike it in appearance. The true word, no doubt, is *censure*, which in those days, and much nearer our own time, was used for *judgment*. Congreve somewhere invites a “*favourable censure*.” In the Prologue Massinger had begged pardon in case it should be found that

“ What's Roman here,  
Grecian or Asiatic, *draw too near*  
*A late and sad example.*”

The critic must needs have it that the “late and sad example” could only refer to the fate of Charles I.; and as that king was not executed till eighteen years after the date of the play, he had to post-date the performance, which brought it to a period when acting was prohibited! He finds too the closest resemblance between the careers of Charles and Massinger's Antiochus, while beyond the salmons-in-both style of likeness there is literally no similarity whatever. On my own first perusal of the play I saw that no one individual of antiquity could possibly be identified with the hero of Massinger, and the introduction of a Proconsul of *Lusitania*, and the talk about seeking aid from the *Batavians* led me to suspect that he drew from a much more modern source. I then remembered that Mr. Collier in his “Annals of the Stage” (ii. 26) made mention of “Sir Henry Herbert on the 11th January,” 1630-1, refusing to license a play by Massinger, *the name of which he does not give*, “because it did contain dangerous matter, as the deposing of Sebastian, King of Portugal, by Philip II., and there being a peace sworn 'twixt the Kings of England and Spain.” I then turned to the first book of reference at hand, and discovered, as I expected, that the story of *Believe As You List* was, down to the most minute points, identical with that of the hero of Portugal. The book from which Massinger must have derived it is, “The True History of the *Late and Lamentable* Adventures of Don Sebastian, King of Portugal, after his imprisonment in Spain until this present day,” London, 1602.\* And thus, what the critic calls “those mysterious words, a late and sad example,” were at once rendered plain, and at the same time a point in Massinger's history cleared up.

Sir Henry Herbert must have made a good thing of his office as Master of the Revels. In this matter of *Believe As You List*, he seems to have acted on the principle of the attorney in *Joe Miller*, who made the double charge, “To calling at your house, 6s. 8d.; to not finding you at home, 6s. 8d.” After noting the refusal, he has recorded in his book, “I had my fee notwithstanding, which belongs to me for reading it over, and ought to be brought always with a book.” In some respects he is quite Pepys-like in his communicativeness. On the 17th July, 1626, Mr. Hemmings pays him £3 “for a courtesie done him about their Blackfriar's house;” and on the 11th April, 1627, the same Mr. Hemmings gives him £5, “to forbid the playing of Shakspeare's plays to the Red Bull Company.” Two years later, some women actors came over from France, and made their appearance here, which is thus spoken of by Prynne, in his *Histriomastix*. “Some French women, or monsters, rather, in Michaelmas term, 1629, attempted to act a French play at the playhouse in Blackfriars,

\* Of this pamphlet I know no more than the title, which I have taken from Mr. Hazlitt's laborious work, “The Bibliography of Old English Literature.”

an impudent, shameful, unwomanish, graceless, if not more than whorish, attempt." For this *attempt* Sir Henry Herbert says he received £2, which was a high fee, considering that the poor people were "hissed, hooted, and pippin-pelted from the stage." He had another fee "for allowing of the Frenche at the Red Bull for a day, 22nd Nov., 1629;" and again, "for allowing of a French Comanie at the Fortune, to play one afternoone, this 14th day of August, 1629, £1," to which he adds the following characteristic note,—“I should have had another piece, but in respect of their ill-fortune I was content to bestow a piece back!” Well may Gifford call him “a mean and rapacious overseer.” These notes are so necessary to a right understanding of the state of the Stage in Massinger’s time, that I make no apology for inserting them, except to my old friend Mr. Collier, from whose work they are stolen bodily.

To the refusal to license the *Believe As You List*, on the 11th January, 1631, the poet appears to me to allude in the prologue to the *Emperor of the East*, which was spoken on the 11th March following, when he says—

“He cannot 'scape their censures who delight  
To misapply whatever he shall write ;”

and from the desponding tone of the second prologue to the same play, which was composed for an occasion considerably later than the delivery of the first, and subsequent to the *acting* of *Believe As You List*, I cannot help thinking that both these plays were “damned” on their first appearance. In no other way can I account for the opening words of the Prologue to the *Guardian*, which was spoken October 31st, 1633.

“After twice putting forth to sea, his fame  
Shipwrecked in either, and his once known name  
In two years silence buried.”

26. *The Unfortunate Piety*, a Tragedy,  
was first acted by the King’s Company, June 13th, 1631. It is lost.

27. *The Fatal Dowry*, Tragedy, and

28. *A New Way to Pay Old Debts*, Comedy.

29. *The City Madam*, Comedy.

30. *The Guardian*, Comedy,  
will be spoken of in another place.

31. *Cleander*, Tragedy,  
was acted May 7th, 1634, by the King’s Company, and drew Queen Henrietta Maria to Blackfriars. “A remarkable circumstance,” says Gifford, “at that time when our sovereigns were not accustomed to visit the public theatres. It is to be hoped that it was the poet’s benefit day. The circumstance is recorded by the Master of the Revels.”

32. *A Very Woman*, Tragi-Comedy,  
will be spoken of in another place.

33. *The Orator*.

This play, which is lost, was first acted June 10th, 1635, by the King’s Company.

34. *The Bashful Lover*, Tragi-Comedy,  
will be spoken of in another place.

35. *The King and the Subject*,  
was first acted June 5th, 1638, by the King’s Company, and is now lost. Of this play a remarkable anecdote is related by the Master of the Revels, who would appear to have had doubts about the propriety of licensing it, and referred the manuscript to King Charles for his own decision. The following is the entry in Sir Henry Herbert’s book:—“At Greenwich, this 4th of June, 1638, Mr. W. Murray gave me power from the King to allow of *The King and the Subject*, and told me that he would warrant it.”

“ Monies ! we'll raise supplies what way we please  
 And force you to subscribe to blanks, in which  
 We'll mulct you as we shall think fit. The Cæsars  
 In Rome were wise, acknowledging no laws  
 But what their swords did ratify ; the wives  
 And daughters of the senators bowing to  
 Their will, as deities, ”\* &c.

“ This is a piece taken out of Philip Massenger's play called *The King and the Subject*, and entered here for ever to be remembered by my son, and those that cast their eyes on it, in honour of King Charles, my master, who, reading over the play at Newmarket, set his mark upon the place with his own hand, and in these words—*This is too insolent and to be changed.* Note, that the poet makes it the speech of a king, Don Pedro of Spain.” Had the judgment of King Charles been as sound as his taste was excellent, the history of England might have been different from what we find it. He would at any rate have made a very different Master of the Revels from Sir Henry Herbert, as witness the following entry in the latter's book, under date January 1634:—“The King is pleased to take *faith, death, slight*, for asseverations and no oaths, to which I do humbly submit as my master's judgment ; but under favour conceive them to be oaths, and enter them here to declare my opinion and submission.” And this is the man who screwed money from the poor painted women from France, and from the English players and poets who were poorer still.

36. *Alexius, or the Chaste Lover*, and

37. *The Fair Anchoress of Pausilippo*,

acted respectively on Sept. 25th, 1639, and Jan. 26th, 1640, both by the King's company, are the two last plays of Massinger which appear in the book of the Master of the Revels, and, although Gifford was not aware of the circumstance, *both were posthumous*. It is impossible now to discover whether they were really his latest compositions, or merely two unacted plays of earlier date found among his papers after his death. If the former, it is hardly possible to overrate the value of what we have lost ; for Massinger's mind was not one of those barren soils which forfeited any of its fertility by thirty years of cropping. His six last plays have all the vigour of his six first, but the judgment which guides his powers is riper and more serene. Strange to say, his *humour* kept growing brighter to the last. *The New Way to Pay Old Debts* and *The City Madam* are among the dozen finest comedies in the English language, and the slave-dealing scene in *A Very Woman* stands altogether by itself for the elastic play of a merry invention.

Of the personal history of Massinger during these last busy years nothing is known beyond what may be gleaned from hints dropped in his dedications, and these, alas, are but too uniformly manly confessions of poverty, and manly thanks for wants relieved. The Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery seems to have made up in these latter years for his own and his brother's early neglect ; and his son-in-law the gallant Earl of Carnarvon likewise befriended him. Without the aid of Sir Francis Foljambe and Sir Thomas Bland, he tells us, “ he had hardly subsisted ; ” and he “ stood much engaged to the noble Society of the Inner Temple for their so frequent bounties.” He also derived “ extraordinary content ” from the “ remembrance ” of Lord Mohun's love, which was conveyed to him by his lordship's nephew and his own zealous friend Sir Aston Cockayne.

This life of toil and care was suddenly brought to an end about the middle of March 1639—not 1640 as stated by Gifford and all previous biographers. He went to bed

\* It was probably this passage which led Malone to suppose that this play was identical with *The Tyrant*, one of the “ Martyrs of pies.” Sir H. Herbert mentions that the title was “ changed,” but whether *to* or *from* *The King and the Subject* does not appear.

in good health, says Langbaine, and was found dead in the morning in his own house on the Bankside. He was buried in the church of St. Saviour's, Southwark, and the "monthly accounts" give this record of the circumstance:\*

"1638. March 18th. Philip Massinger, stranger, in the church . . . . 2 li."

More than twelve years earlier the following entry is found in the same gloomy record:—

"1625. August 29. John Fletcher, a poet, in the church."

The charges for Fletcher's grave are entered as 20s., and 2s. for gr: and cl: (the grave digger and the clerk). The charges for Massinger were probably greater, as being a "stranger," or non-parishioner. Sir Aston Cockayne, who evidently was greatly attached to him, wrote the following "Epitaph on Mr. John Fletcher and Mr. Philip Massinger:—

"In the same grave Fletcher was buried, here  
Lies the stage poet Philip Massinger:  
Plays they did write together, were great friends:  
And now one grave includes them at their ends:  
So whom on earth nothing did part, beneath  
Here, in their fames, they lie in spite of death."

I am very reluctant to differ from so eminent an authority as my friend Mr. Dyce, who thinks the "same grave" means nothing more than the "same place of interment," but it will be observed that the idea is repeated in the fourth line, in a yet more definite shape, and the whole epitaph, to my thinking, bears unmistakable marks of being designed by its writer for cutting on the stone which covered their common grave. I also please myself by imagining that the arrangement was made in accordance with an expressed wish of Massinger himself.

The old Priory Church of St. Saviour's was, next to St. Paul's and the Abbey, the noblest church in London, and not being hemmed in as now by warehouses and breweries and railway stations, nor shorn of its fair proportions by fatal decay and more fatal repairs, must have dominated like a cathedral over the brothels and bear gardens that surrounded it. Massinger could not have crossed the ancient bridge or taken boat to the Temple or Queenhithe without having it ever in his view, and considering the circumstances of his life, what is more natural to suppose than that he should often desire to be resting in peace by the side of his illustrious friend and fellow labourer? But it is vain to speculate on a point which can never be decided. In Gifford's time every stone and every fragment of a stone was examined in the hope of finding some indication of the particular spot where these great poets were interred; and had there been anything in the shape of an inscription regarding either, it must have been discovered or have finally perished in the general levelling and destruction of 1832. The monument of that dry old stick Gower was then removed to its present site and "painted and repaired" by the pious care of his namesake, the Duke of Sutherland, but the dust of the authors of *The Faithful Shepherdess* and *The Fatal Dowry* most probably has found its last resting-place under the kitchen floor of some house in Doddington Grove, Kennington, S.W., which is built, we are told, on the "three feet surface of earth" removed from St. Saviour's, Southwark.

Having thus followed Massinger to his grave, and beyond it, I have only to record the subsequent fate of his works. The last play acted during his life, and the two which were produced immediately after his death, have perished, as have also fifteen

---

\* This extract was first correctly printed by the 1841 editor of Campbell's "Specimens," who also showed that "stranger" meant nothing more than non-parishioner. But he failed to point out that March 1638 meant March 1639—not March, 1639-40. This was left to Mr. Collier in his "Memoirs of Actors," p. xiii.

others. A much-damaged transcript of *The Parliament of Love* was discovered by Malone, who made it over to Gifford, when he first announced his intention of becoming the poet's editor. In sending it to him Malone said, "the piece is in such a mutilated state, wanting the whole of the first act and part of the second (to say nothing of its other defects from damp and time), that it is feared it can be of little use." Gifford worked diligently and reverently, and in six weeks sent Malone a transcript which "quite astonished" the veteran commentator. The circumstances under which *Believe as You List* was recovered have been already detailed.

Popular as Massinger must have been during the latter part of his life, he was utterly forgotten during the rule of the Puritans, and scarcely remembered for many years after the Restoration. During this period, indeed, the dramatists of the preceding generation seem to have been valued in proportion as indecency predominated in their writings, and Beaumont and Fletcher were greatly more popular than Shakspeare. But the public taste in every way was perverted, and if others had been as honest as Samuel Pepys we should have had many such records as—"To Deptford by water, reading *Othello*, *Moor of Venice*, which I ever heretofore esteemed a mighty good play, but having so lately read *The Adventures of Five Hours*, it seems a mean thing." Betterton indeed detected the fine opening which *The Bondman* and *The Roman Actor* afforded to his grand powers of declamation, but it is probable that the exhibition was attended with more pleasure to the player than to the public. At length Nicholas Rowe, sixty-four years after Massinger's death, determined upon collecting and publishing his works, but after mature deliberation considered it more judicious to plunder the dead man rather than attempt to revive him. Nothing can show more decisively the oblivion into which Massinger had fallen than that Rowe should think it possible to escape detection in his wholesale looting. For a time, too, he was thoroughly successful. His "Gay Lothario" took such a hold in the English mind that he still dwells in the English tongue, and nearly eighty years later, when Johnson pronounced this shameless plagiarism to be "one of the most pleasing tragedies on the stage, where it still keeps its turns of appearing, and probably will long keep them, for there is scarcely any work of any poet at once so interesting by the fable, and so delightful by the language," he was evidently not aware that everything in the play really deserving admiration, except the mere harmonious versification, was the work of another man. And yet Johnson was himself a Shakspearian commentator! Of the baseness and shabbiness of Rowe's conduct in the affair it is impossible to speak with patience, and one feels quite grateful to the Earl of Oxford for leading him that famous dance about the Spanish language. Time too has already put the matter square. The once fashionable *Fair Penitent* is read by no one, and will probably never be reprinted, while *The Fatal Dowry* is perused year after year by increasing numbers with increasing admiration.

"Massinger thus robbed and abandoned by Rowe, was after a considerable time taken up by Coxeter," whose gatherings formed the basis of the first collected edition of 1751. This was re-issued in 1761, with new title-pages and introductory matter by Tom Davies and George Colman, and is considered as the second collected edition. The third was brought out in 1779 by a Mr. John Monck Mason, who mentions in his preface that he had never heard of Massinger till two years before he edited him. It is not William Gifford's fault if everybody who now hears of Massinger does not hear also of John Monck Mason. The gentleman's only crime was his being inferior as an editor to the man who came after him; and to that man, as he appears in the Massinger volumes, very few "editors" would not be inferior. Gifford's knowledge of books was very great, although in the particular line of old English literature he may have been excelled by others who have taken up the same work; but in knowledge of mankind, in knowledge of the language and ways of thinking of all the different professions and ranks of life in England, none of them have approached him. He had witnessed, while quite a child, his

father sinking into the grave overwhelmed with drink and with debt—itsself a terrible training. He had held the plough; he had been not only a “ship-boy on the high and giddy mast,” but also in the cabin, where for a whole twelvemonth every menial office fell to his lot. He had been apprenticed to a sordid shoemaker, who debarred him from pen, ink, and paper, till he was reduced “to beat out pieces of leather as smooth as possible, and work his problems upon them with a blunted awl.” He had been the object of “A subscription for purchasing the remaining time of William Gifford, and for enabling him to improve himself in writing and English grammar.” He had at last received the full benefits of an Oxford education, and had been invited permanently to reside on terms of affection and esteem with one of the greatest noblemen of England. Few men have ever passed through such a varied career, and a careful student of his notes on Massinger will find that there is hardly a portion of that career which has not been made to throw light on the text of his author. Besides this, he was gifted with an enthusiasm which led him to regard Massinger first, and Ben Jonson afterwards, with the fierce affection which a tigress bears to her cubs. He considered that Coxeter and Monck Mason had not done their duty by Massinger, and there is hardly a page in his four thick volumes in which one or other of these gentlemen was not sneered at, or snarled at, or loaded with gross abuse. Charles Lamb, in some of those charming notes which he appended to his “Specimens of the English Dramatic Poets,” had, as I venture to think unjustly, underrated the powers of Massinger, as compared with some of the less known of his contemporaries, and this no doubt was the cause of that unhappy passage in the *Quarterly Review*, for the writing of which Gifford is said to have sorrowed with the same depth of feeling which actuated Sir William Napier when he wrote his noble letter to the mother of Sir James Outram. The result of these qualities and qualifications was the production of what is said to be the very best edition that has ever appeared of an old English writer. I am told, on competent authority, that the same pains are not by any means visible in his reproduction of Ford and Ben Jonson, while he shows himself, if possible, still more acrimonious and abusive; and his shafts being too often covertly aimed at higher game than those small deer Mason and Coxeter, whom nobody cares to be angry about, the notes are less amusing, and appear to have a great deal more of arrogance and self-assertion.

Of all the critics who have written upon Massinger, Hallam probably was the ablest, and he is certainly the one who has assigned him the highest position. As a tragic writer he appears to him second only to Shakspeare; and, in the higher comedy, he can hardly think him inferior to Jonson. His genius, he says, was not eminently pathetic, nor energetic enough to display the utmost intensity of devotion, but it “abounded in sweetness and dignity,” was “apt to delineate the loveliness of virtue, and to delight in its recompense after trial.” “His most striking excellence is his conception of character,” and in this he inclines to place him above Fletcher, and, if he may venture to say it, above Jonson also. “He is free from the hard outline of the one, and the negligent looseness of the other.” He thinks him deficient in variety, and somewhat given to repetition. He shows great mastery in the delineation of villains, but “his own disposition led him more willingly to pictures of moral beauty. A peculiar refinement, a mixture of gentleness and benignity with noble daring belong to some of his favourite characters; to Pisander in *The Bondman*, to Antonio in *A Very Woman*, to Charalois in *The Fatal Dowry*. It may be readily supposed that his female characters are not wanting in these graces. He seems to have more variety in his women than in the other sex, and that they are less mannered than the heroines of Fletcher. A slight degree of error or passion in Sophia, Eudocia, Marcellia, without weakening our sympathy, serves both to prevent the monotony of perpetual rectitude, so often insipid in fiction, and to bring forward the development of the story.”

“Next to the grace and dignity of sentiment in Massinger” Hallam praises the

same qualities in his style. "Every modern critic has been struck by the peculiar beauty of his language. In his harmonious swell of numbers, in his pure and genuine idiom, which a text by good fortune and the diligence of its last editor, far less corrupt than that of Fletcher, enables us to enjoy, we find an unceasing charm. The poetical talents of Massinger were very considerable, his taste superior to that of his contemporaries; the colouring of his imagery is rarely overcharged; a certain redundancy as some may account it, gives fulness, or what the painters would call *impasto*, to his style, and if it might not always conduce to effect on the stage, is on the whole suitable to the character of his composition."

To say that a writer is in tragedy second only to Shakspeare, and in the higher comedy not inferior to Jonson, while in conception of character he excels both Ben and Fletcher, is in effect to assign him the highest place among the illustrious brethren of the unapproachable Swan of Avon. Charles Lamb has pronounced a very different verdict, and regarding their merits from his own special and peculiar point of view, no one will be inclined to dispute the opinions he has expressed. His love and reverence for these old writers was so extreme that he dealt with them as a connoisseur of another description deals with his cabinet of costly liqueurs. He treated them like the most precious cordials, pouring them into the smallest glasses, and only allowing them to trickle drop by drop over his palate. In this way, and in this way alone, in my humble opinion, could he have arrived at the conclusion that Massinger was vastly inferior in the higher branches of poetic art, not to Ford and Webster only, but to Decker, Marston, Middleton, Heywood, Tourneur, Rowley, and others. But Massinger, above any writer with whom I am acquainted, requires to be judged of in the *full draught*. Not only should no scene or no act be read separately, but for the thorough relish of him too great a pause should not be made between play and play. Hallam, I have no doubt, penned his criticism fresh from a continuous perusal of this nature, and I can easily understand, therefore, how two judges, each in his way so admirably qualified as himself and Lamb, should have arrived at such very opposite conclusions. Am I wrong in thinking that the general opinion of the public sides with the historian of the Middle Ages rather than with the author of the *Essays of Elia*? Massinger, indeed, never has occupied, and never will occupy, the same space in the public eye, or the same place in the public heart, which has long been filled by Rare Old Ben. He was certainly not his equal in general literary abilities; and in that most popular of all accomplishments, the art of paying exquisite compliments, whether in polished and honeyed stanzas, or in vigorous though rugged couplets, Jonson is altogether without an equal. Massinger could never have written the marvellous "Drink to me only with thine eyes," the "Epitaph on the Countess of Pembroke," the lines on "Lord Bacon's Birthday," or those "To the memory of my beloved Master William Shakspeare." It only remains now to speak of Massinger's art in the construction and conduct of his plots, and on this point a writer may be quoted whose authority on such a question admits of no dispute. "Although Massinger's plays," says Sir Walter Scott, "are altogether irregular, yet he well understood the advantage of a strong and defined interest; and in unravelling the intricacy of his intrigues, he often displays the management of a master. Art, therefore, not perhaps in its technical, but in its most valuable sense, was Massinger's as well as Jonson's, and in point of composition, many passages of his plays are not unworthy of Shakspeare. Were we to distinguish Massinger's peculiar excellence, we should name that first of dramatic attributes, a full conception of character, a strength in bringing out, and consistency in adhering to it. He does not indeed always introduce his personages to the audience in their own proper character; it dawns forth gradually in the progress of the piece, as in the hypocritical Luke or the heroic Marullo. But upon looking back we are always surprised and delighted to trace from the very beginning intimations of what the personage is to prove as the play advances."



The following notes on the various printed Plays would have been inserted in the Narrative, but for the fear of making it even more confused than it already is.

[THE VIRGIN-MARTYR.] Of this Tragedy, which appears to have been very popular, there are four editions in quarto, 1622, 1631, 1651, and 1661; the last of which is infinitely the worst. It is not possible to ascertain when it was first produced, but it was certainly amongst the author's earliest efforts. In the composition of it, he was assisted by Decker, a poet of no mean reputation, and the writer of several plays much esteemed by his contemporaries.—W. G.

Charles Lamb extracts the scene between Angelo and Dorothea (p. 9), and says, "This scene has beauties of so very high an order that, with all my respect for Massinger, I do not think he had poetical enthusiasm capable of furnishing them. His associate Decker, who wrote *Old Fortunatus*, had poetry enough for anything. The very impurities which obtrude themselves among the sweet pieties of this play (like Satan among the Sons of Heaven) have a strength of contrast, a raciness, and a glow in them, which are above Massinger. They set off the religion of the rest, somehow as Caliban serves to show *Miranda*."

This play was frequently patched and altered. In Sir George Buck's Office-book is the following entry, "1620, Oct. 6.—For new reforming *The Virgin-Martyr* for the Red Bull, 4os.;" and in Sir Henry Herbert's book, "1624, July 7.—Received for the adding of a new scene to *The Virgin-Martyr*, 10s."

[THE UNNATURAL COMBAT.] Of this tragedy there is but one edition, which was printed for John Waterson, in 1639. It does not occur in Sir Henry Herbert's Office-book; so that it is probably of a very early date; and indeed Massinger himself calls it an "old tragedy." Like the *Virgin-Martyr*, it has neither Prologue nor Epilogue, for which the author accounts in his Dedication by observing that the play was composed at a time "when such by-ornaments were not advanced above the fabric of the whole work." It is said in the title-page to have been "presented by the King's Majesty's Servants, at the Globe."—W. G.

[THE DUKE OF MILAN.] Of this tragedy there are two editions in quarto; the first, which is very correct, and now very rare, bears date 1623; the other, of little value, 1638. It does not appear in the Office-book of the licenser; from which we may be pretty certain that it was among the author's earliest performances. It is said, in the title-page, to "have been often acted by His Majesty's servants at the Black Friars."—W. G.

[THE BONDMAN.] The *Bondman* was allowed by the Master of the Revels, and performed at the Cockpit in Drury Lane, on the 3rd December, 1623. It was printed in the following year, and again in 1638. This last edition is full of errors. Mr. W. C. Hazlitt mentions two editions of 1638.

[THE RENEGADO.] This tragi-comedy, for so Massinger terms it, appears, from the Office-book of the Master of the Revels, to have been first produced on the stage April 17th, 1624: it was not given to the public till several years after; the entry in the Stationers' Register, bearing date March 6th, 1629-30. It is said in the title-page to have been "often acted by the Queen's Majesty's servants at the private playhouse in Drury Lane."—W. G.

[THE PARLIAMENT OF LOVE.] A comedy of this name was entered on the books of the Stationers' Company, June 29th, 1660; and a manuscript play so called, and said to be written by W. Rowley, was in the number of those destroyed by Mr. Warburton's

servant. I suspect this to be the drama before us. It is, beyond all possibility of doubt, the genuine work of Massinger, and was licensed for the stage by Sir H. Herbert on the 3rd June, 1624. I have elsewhere mentioned my obligations to Mr. Malone for the use of the manuscript. The play was acted at the Cockpit in Drury Lane.—W. G. It was first printed by Gifford in 1805.

[THE ROMAN ACTOR.] This tragedy was licensed by Sir H. Herbert, Oct. 11th, 1626, and given to the press in 1629. This play was successful in the representation, and appears to have been well received by the critics of those times, since it is preceded by commendatory copies of verses from Ford, Harvey, May, Taylor, and others. Taylor, an admirable actor, who played the part of Paris, calls it "the best of many good;" and Massinger himself declares that he "ever held it as the most perfect birth of his Minerva." Too much stress must not be laid upon this expression; it is proper in advertising to it, to consider how few dramatic pieces Massinger had produced when it was used.

This tragedy was revived by Betterton, who took for himself the part of Paris, in which he was highly celebrated. The old title-page says that it had been "divers times acted with good allowance, at the private playhouse in the Black Friars, by the King's Majesty's servants."—W. G.

[THE GREAT DUKE OF FLORENCE.] The "Great Duke" was licensed by Sir H. Herbert for the "Queen's Servants," July 5th, 1627. This, Mr. Malone conjectures with every appearance of probability, to be the "Comical History" before us. This play was not committed to the press till 1636, when it was preceded by two commendatory copies of verses by G. Donne and J. Ford. Though highly, and indeed deservedly popular, it was not reprinted. It was acted "by her Majesty's servants at the Phoenix in Drury Lane," where, the title adds, it was "often presented."—W. G.

[THE MAID OF HONOUR.] This tragi-comedy does not appear, under the present title, in the Office-book of Sir H. Herbert; but a play called *The Honour of Women* was entered there May 6th, 1628, which Mr. Malone conjectures to be the piece before us. He speaks, however, with some hesitation on the subject, as a play of Massinger's, called the *Spanish Viceroy*; or, *the Honour of Women*, was entered at Stationers' Hall for Humphrey Moseley in 1653. Mr. Malone says that the *Maid of Honour* was printed in 1631. All the copies which I have seen (for there is but one edition) are dated 1632, which was probably the earliest period of its appearance. This play was always a favourite, and, indeed, with strict justice; for it has a thousand claims to admiration and applause. It was frequently acted, the old title-page tells us, "at the Phoenix in Drury Lane, with good allowance, by the Queen's Majesties Servants."—W. G.

[THE PICTURE.] This tragi-comedy, or as the old 4to calls it, this "true Hungarian History," was licensed by Sir H. Herbert, June 8th, 1629. The play was much approved at its first appearance, when it was acted, as the phrase is, by the whole strength of the house. Massinger himself speaks of it with complacency; and, indeed, its claims to admiration are of no common kind. It was printed in 1630, but seems not to have reached a second edition. It is said, in the title-page, to have been "often presented at the Globe and Black Friar's playhouses by the King's Majesty's servants." An unsuccessful attempt was made to revive this play by the Rev. Henry Bate: *Magnis excidit ausis*. We tolerate no magic now but Shakspeare's, and, without it, the *Picture* can have but little interest.—W. G.

Charles Lamb quotes the first scene of Act I., and adds, "The good sense, rational fondness, and chastised feeling of this dialogue, make it more valuable than many of

those scenes in which this writer has attempted a deeper passion and more tragical interest. Massinger had not the higher requisites of his art in anything like the degree in which they were possessed by Ford, Webster, Tourneur, Heywood and others. He never shakes or disturbs the mind with grief. He is read with composure and placid delight. He wrote with that equability of all the passions, which made his English style the purest and most free from violent metaphors and harsh constructions of any of the dramatists who were his contemporaries."

[THE EMPEROR OF THE EAST.] This tragi-comedy was licensed for the stage, March 11th, 1631, and printed in the following year. Notwithstanding the excellence of this play it met with some opposition at its first appearance; its distinguished merits, however, procured it a representation at Court, and it finally seems to have grown into very general favour. It was frequently acted, as the title-page tells us, "at the Black Friars and Globe Play-houses, by the King's Majesty's Servants."—W.G.

[THE FATAL DOWRY.] This most excellent tragedy does not appear to have been licensed by Sir H. Herbert, nor is it accompanied by any prologue or epilogue; circumstances from which Mr. Malone concludes that it was produced previous to 1620. However this may be, it was not printed till 1632, before which time the title-page says it "had been often acted at the private house in Blackfriars, by his Majesty's Servants." Massinger was assisted in the writing of it by Nathaniel Field.

From this play Rowe borrowed, or, according to Cicero's distinction, stole, the plan of the *Fair Penitent*, a performance by which he is now chiefly known.—W.G.

Richard Cumberland in an elaborate and masterly criticism has established the immeasurable superiority of the old dramatist over his copyist. I have ventured to insert the songs in their proper places, and in one of them to print a single line as a couplet, of which no one will dispute the propriety. The songs were retained by Gifford in ignominious banishment, but at p. 377 the dramatic action was injured by their absence.

[A NEW WAY TO PAY OLD DEBTS.] This comedy does not appear in Sir Henry Herbert's book; it must, however, have been produced on the stage before 1633, in which year it had been printed for Henry Scyle. It was extremely well received on its first appearance, and, as the quarto informs us, "often acted at the Phoenix, in Drurie Lane." It has been revived at different periods with considerable success, and still holds a distinguished place on the stage.—W.G.

Hallam says very truly that Sir Giles Overreach is an "original, masterly, and inimicable conception," and sufficient of itself to establish the rank of Massinger in this great province of dramatic art.

[THE CITY MADAM.] This comedy, of which it is not easy to speak in appropriate terms of praise, was licensed by Sir Henry Herbert, May 25th, 1632, and acted by the King's Company. It was received, as the quarto says, with great applause; but was kept in the players' hand till 1659, when it was given to the press by Andrew Penny-cuicke, one of the actors. I have seen one copy with the date 1658 on the title. It was probably thrown off in 1658-59.—W. G.

[THE GUARDIAN.] This "Comical History" was licensed by the Master of the Revels, October 31st, 1633, but not printed till 1655, when it was put to the press, together with the *Bashful Lover*, and the *Very Woman*, by Humphrey Moseley, the general publisher of that age. This popular drama was produced "at the private house in Black-fryers." From a memorandum in the Office-book of Sir Henry Herbert, we learn that shortly after its appearance it was acted before the king. "The

*Guardian*, a play of Mr. Massinger's, was performed at Court on Sunday, the 12th of January, 1633, by the king's players and well likte."—W. G.

[A VERY WOMAN.] This "tragi-comedy," as it is called, was licensed for the stage, June 6th, 1634. From the prologue it appears to be a revision of a former play which had been well received, and which the author modestly insinuates that he was induced to *review* by the command of his patron. If this patron was, as it has been supposed, the Earl of Pembroke, we are indebted to him for one of the most delightful compositions in the English language. The present play was most favourably received; and often acted, the old title-page says, "at the private house in Black Friars, by his late Majesty's Servants, with great applause." Its popularity seems to have tempted the author's good friend, Sir Aston Cockaine, to venture on an imitation of it, which he has executed, not very happily, in his comedy of *The Obstinate Lady*. It was printed with *The Bashful Lover* and *The Guardian* in 1655.—W. G.

[THE BASHFUL LOVER.] This tragi-comedy was licensed by the Master of the Revels, May 9th, 1636. It is the latest of Massinger's pieces which are come down to us, though he continued to write for the stage to the period of his death, which happened about four years after the date of the present play. It was extremely well received at its first appearance; it continued to be a favourite, and was "often acted," the old copy says, "by his late Majesty's servants with great applause." It was performed at Blackfriars. This play, together with *The Guardian* and *A Very Woman*, was printed in 8vo by H. Moseley, 1655. I know of no prior edition.—W. G.

[THE OLD LAW.] Of this comedy, which is said to have been written by Massinger, Middleton, and Rowley, in conjunction, there is but one edition, the quarto of 1656, which appears to be a hasty transcript from the prompter's book, made, as I have observed, when the necessities of the actors, now grievously oppressed by the republicans, compelled them for a temporary resource to take advantage of a popular name, and bring forward such pieces as they yet possessed in manuscript. Of Middleton and Rowley I have spoken elsewhere, and need only repeat my persuasion that the share of Massinger in this strange composition is not the most considerable of the three. This drama was very popular. The title of the quarto is "The excellent comedy called *The Old Law*, or *A New Way to Please You*. Acted before the King and Queen at Salisbury House, and at several other places, with great applause."—W. G.

Charles Lamb says of it, "There is an exquisiteness of moral sensibility, making one to gush out tears of delight, and a poetical strangeness in all the improbable circumstances of this wild play, which are unlike anything in the dramas which Massinger wrote alone. The pathos is of a subtler edge. Middleton and Rowley, who assisted in this play, had both of them finer geniuses than their associate."

# The Virgin-Martyr.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Dioclesian, } *Emperors of Rome.*  
 Maximinus, }  
 King of Pontus.  
 King of Epire.  
 King of Macedon.  
 Sapritius, *Governor of Cæsarea.*  
 Theophilus, *a zealous persecutor of the Christians*  
 Sempronius, *captain of Sapritius' guards.*  
 Antoninus, *son to Sapritius.*  
 Macrinus, *friend to Antoninus.*  
 Harpax, *an evil spirit, following Theophilus in the shape of a secretary.*

Angelo, *a good spirit, serving Dorothea, the habit of a page.*  
 Hircius, *a whoremaster,* } *servants of Spungius, a drunkard,* } Dorothea.  
 Julianus, }  
 Geta, } *servants of Theophilus.*  
 Priest of Jupiter.  
 British slave.  
 Artemia, *daughter to Dioclesian.*  
 Calista, } *daughters to Theophilus.*  
 Christeta, }  
 Dorothea, *the Virgin-Martyr.*  
 Officers and Executioners.

SCENE,—Cæsarea.

### ACT I.

SCENE I.—*The Governor's Palace.*

*Enter Theophilus and Harpax.*

*Theoph.* Come to Cæsarea to-night!

*Harp.* Most true, sir.

*Theoph.* The emperor in person!

*Harp.* Do I live?

*Theoph.* 'Tis wondrous strange! The marches of great princes,

Like to the motions of prodigious meteors,  
 Are step by step observ'd; and loud-tongued  
 Fame

The harbinger to prepare their entertainment:  
 And, were it possible so great an army,  
 Though cover'd with the night, could be so  
 near,

The governor cannot be so unfriended  
 Among the many that attend his person,  
 But, by some secret means, he should have  
 notice

Of Cæsar's purpose;—in this, then, excuse  
 me,

If I appear incredulous.

*Harp.* At your pleasure.

*Theoph.* Yet, when I call to mind you  
 never fail'd me

In things more difficult, but have discover'd  
 Deeds that were done thousand leagues  
 distant from me,

When neither woods, nor caves, nor secret  
 vaults,

No, nor the Power they serve, could keep  
 these Christians

Or from my reach or punishment, but th'  
 magic

Still laid them open; I begin again

To be as confident as heretofore,

It is not possible thy powerful art

Should meet a check, or fail.

*Enter the Priest of Jupiter, bearing a  
 Image, and followed by Calista and  
 Christeta.*

*Harp.* Look on the Vestals,  
 The holy plcdges that the gods have giv'  
 you,

Your chaste, fair daughters. Wer't not  
 upbraid

A service to a master not unthankful,  
 I could say these, in spite of your prevention:  
 Seduced by an imagined faith, not reason  
 (Which is the strength of nature,) qu'  
 forsaking

The Gentle gods, had yielded up themselv'  
 To this new-found religion. This I cross'  
 Discover'd their intents, taught you to us  
 With gentle words and mild persuasions,  
 The power and the authority of a father,  
 Set off with cruel threats; and so reclaim'  
 them:

And, whereas they with torment shou'  
 have died,

(Hell's furies to me, had they undergor'  
 it!) *[Aside]*

They are now votaries in great Jupiter  
 temple,

And, by his priest instructed, grown famili'  
 R

With all the mysteries, nay, the most abstruse ones,  
Belonging to his deity.

*Theoph.* 'Twas a benefit,  
For which I ever owe you.—Hail, Jove's  
flamen!

Have these my daughters reconciled themselves,  
Abandoning for ever the Christian way,  
To your opinion?

*Priest.* And are constant in it.  
They teach their teachers with their depth  
of judgment,

And are with arguments able to convert  
The enemies to our gods, and answer all  
They can object against us.

*Theoph.* My dear daughters!

*Cal.* We dare dispute against this new-  
sprung sect,

In private or in public.

*Harp.* My best lady,  
Persever in it.

*Chris.* And what we maintain,  
We will seal with our bloods.

*Harp.* Brave resolution!

I e'en grow fat to see my labours prosper.

*Theoph.* I young again. To your devotions.

*Harp.* Do—

My prayers be present with you.

[*Exeunt Priest, Cal. and Chris.*]

*Theoph.* O my Harpax!

Thou engine of my wishes, thou that steel'st  
My bloody resolutions, thou that arm'st  
My eyes 'gainst womanish tears and soft  
compassion,

Instructing me, without a sigh, to look on  
Babes torn by violence from their mothers'  
breasts

To feed the fire, and with them make one  
flame;

Old men, as beasts, in beasts' skins torn by  
dogs;

Virgins and matrons tire the executioners;  
Yet I, unsatisfied, think their torments easy—

*Harp.* And in that, just, not cruel.

*Theoph.* Were all sceptres

That grace the hands of kings, made into one,  
And offer'd me, all crowns laid at my feet,  
I would contemn them all,—thus spit at them;  
So I to all posterities might be call'd  
The strongest champion of the Pagan gods,  
And rooter out of Christians.

*Harp.* Oh, mine own,  
Mine own dear lord! to further this great  
work,  
I ever live thy slave.

*Enter Sapritius and Sempronius.*

*Theoph.* No more.—The governor.

*Sap.* Keep the ports close, and let the  
guards be doubled;

Disarm the Christians; call it death in any  
To wear a sword, or in his house to have one.

*Semp.* I shall be careful, sir.

*Sap.* 'Twill well become you.

Such as refuse to offer sacrifice  
To any of our gods, put to the torture.  
Grub up this growing mischief by the roots;  
And know, when we are merciful to them,  
We to ourselves are cruel.

*Semp.* You pour oil

On fire that burns already at the height:  
I know the emperor's edict, and my charge,  
And they shall find no favour.

*Theoph.* My good lord,

This care is timely for the entertainment  
Of our great master, who this night in person  
Comes here to thank you.

*Sap.* Who! the emperor?

*Harp.* To clear your doubts, he doth re-  
turn in triumph;

Kings lackingey by his triumphant chariot;  
And in this glorious victory, my lord,  
You have an ample share: for know, your son,  
The ne'er-enough commended Antoninus,  
So well hath flesh'd his maiden sword, and  
dyed

His snowy plumes so deep in enemies' blood,  
That, besides public grace beyond his hopes,  
There are rewards propounded.

*Sap.* I would know

No mean in thine, could this be true.

*Harp.* My head

Answer the forfeit.

*Sap.* Of his victory

There was some rumour: but it was assured,  
The army pass'd a full day's journey higher,  
Into the country.

*Harp.* It was so determined;

But, for the further honour of your son,  
And to observe the government of the city,  
And with what rigour, or remiss indulgence,  
The Christians are pursued, he makes his  
stay here: [Trumpets.

For proof, his trumpets speak his near arrival.

*Sap.* Haste, good Sempronius, draw up  
our guards.

And with all ceremonious pomp receive  
The conquering army. Let our garrison speak  
Their welcome in loud shouts, the city shew  
Her state and wealth.

*Semp.* I'm gone.

*Sap.* O, I am ravish'd

With this great honour! cherish, good Theo-  
philus,

This knowing scholar. Send [for] your fair  
daughters;

I will present them to the emperor,

And in their sweet conversion, as a mirror,  
Express your zeal and duty.

*Theoph.* Fetch them, good Harpax.—  
[*Exit Harpax.*]

*Enter Sempronius, at the head of the guard, soldiers leading three kings bound; Antoninus and Macrinus bearing the Emperor's eagles; Dioclesian with a gilt laurel on his head, leading in Artemia: Sapritius kisses the Emperor's hand, then embraces his Son; Harpax brings in Calista and Christeta. Loud shouts.*

*Diocle.* So: at all parts I find Cæsarea  
Completely govern'd: the licentious soldier  
Confined in modest limits, and the people  
Taught to obey, and not compell'd with  
rigour:

The ancient Roman discipline revived,  
Which raised Rome to her greatness, and  
proclaim'd her

The glorious mistress of the conquer'd world;  
But, above all, the service of the gods,  
So zealously observed, that, good Sapritius,  
In words to thank you for your care and duty,  
Were much unworthy Dioclesian's honour,  
Or his magnificence to his loyal servants.—  
But I shall find a time with noble titles  
To recompense your merits.

*Sap.* Mightiest Cæsar,  
Whose power upon this globe of earth is equal  
To Jove's in heaven; whose victorious  
triumphs

On proud rebellious kings that stir against it,  
Are perfect figures of his immortal trophies  
Won in the Giants' war; whose conquering  
sword,

Guided by his strong arm, as deadly kills  
As did His thunder! all that I have done,  
Or, if my strength were centupled, could do,  
Comes short of what my loyalty must chal-  
lenge,

But, if in anything I have deserved  
Great Cæsar's smile, 'tis in my humble care  
Still to preserve the honour of those gods,  
That make him what he is: my zeal to them  
I ever have express'd in my fell hate  
Against the Christian sect that, with one blow,  
(Ascribing all things to an unknown Power,)  
Would strike down all their temples, and  
allows them

Nor sacrifice nor altars.

*Diocle.* Thou, in this,  
Walk'st hand in hand with me: my will and  
power

Shall not alone confirm, but honour all  
That are in this most forward.

*Sap.* Sacred Cæsar,  
If your imperial majesty stand pleased

To shower your favours upon such as are  
The boldest champions of our religion;  
Look on this reverend man, [*points to Theo-  
philus.*] to whom the power  
Of searching out, and punishing such delin-  
quents,

Was by your choice committed; and, for  
proof,

He hath deserved the grace imposed upon  
him,

And with a fair and even hand proceeded,  
Partial to none, not to himself, or those:  
Of equal nearness to himself; behold

This pair of virgins.

*Diocle.* What are these?

*Sap.* His daughters.

*Artem.* Now by your sacred fortune, they  
are fair ones,

Exceeding fair ones: would 'twere in my  
power

To make them mine!

*Theoph.* They are the gods', great lady,  
They were most happy in your service else!  
On these, when they fell from their father's  
faith,

I used a judge's power, entreaties failing  
(They being seduced) to win them to adore  
The holy Powers we worship; I put on  
The scarlet robe of bold authority,  
And, as they had been strangers to my blood,  
Presented them in the most horrid form,  
All kinds of tortures; part of which they  
suffer'd

With Roman constancy.

*Artem.* And could you endure,  
Being a father, to behold their limbs  
Extended on the rack?

*Theoph.* I did; but must  
Confess there was a strange contention in me,  
Between the impartial office of a judge,  
And pity of a father; to help justice  
Religion stept in, under which odds  
Compassion fell:—yet still I was a father.  
For e'en then, when the flinty hangman's  
whips

Were worn with stripes spent on their tender  
limbs,

I kneel'd, and wept, and begg'd them,  
though they would

Be cruel to themselves, they would take pity  
On my grey hairs: now note a sudden change,  
Which I with joy remember; those, whom  
torture,

Nor fear of death could terrify, were o'ercome  
By seeing of my sufferings; and so won,  
Returning to the faith that they were born in,  
I gave them to the gods. And be assured,  
I that used justice with a rigorous hand,  
Upon such beauteous virgins, and mine own,

Will use no favour, where the cause commands me,

To any other ; but, as rocks, be deaf  
To all entreaties.

*Diocle.* Thou deserv'st thy place ;  
Still hold it, and with honour. Things thus order'd

Touching the gods, 'tis lawful to descend  
To human cares, and exercise that power  
Heaven has conferr'd upon me ;—which that  
you,

Rebels and traitors to the power of Rome,  
Should not with all extremities undergo,  
What can you urge to qualify your crimes,  
Or mitigate my anger !

*K. of Epire.* We are now  
Slaves to thy power, that yesterday were  
kings,

And had command o'er others ; we confess  
Our grandsires paid yours tribute, yet left us,  
As their forefathers had, desire of freedom.  
And, if you Romans hold it glorious honour,  
Not only to defend what is your own,  
But to enlarge your empire, (though our  
fortune

Denies that happiness,) who can accuse  
The famish'd mouth, if it attempt to feed ?  
Or such, whose fetters eat into their freedoms,

If they desire to shake them off ?

*K. of Pontus.* We stand  
The last examples, to prove how uncertain  
All human happiness is ; and are prepared  
To endure the worst.

*K. of Macedon.* That spoke, which now  
is highest

In Fortune's wheel, must, when she turns it  
next,

Decline as low as we are. This consider'd,  
Taught the Ægyptian Hercules, Sesostris,  
That had his chariot drawn by captive kings,  
To free them from that slavery ;—but to hope  
Such mercy from a Roman, were mere  
madness :

We are familiar with what cruelty  
Rome, since her infant greatness, ever used  
Such as she triumph'd over ; age nor sex  
Exempted from her tyranny ; scepter'd  
princes

Kept in her common dungeons, and their  
children,

In scorn train'd up in base mechanic arts,  
For public bondmen. In the catalogue  
Of those unfortunate men, we expect to have  
Our names remember'd.

*Diocle.* In all growing empires,  
Even cruelty is useful ; some must suffer,  
And be set up examples to strike terror  
In others, though far off : but, when a state

Is raised to her perfection, and her bases  
Too firm to shrink, or yield, we may use  
mercy,

And do't with safety : but to whom ? not  
cowards,

Or such whose baseness shames the conqueror,

And robs him of his victory, as weak Perseus  
Did great Æmilius. Know, therefore, kings  
Of Epire, Pontus, and of Macedon,

That I with courtesy can use my prisoners,  
As well as make them mine by force, provided

That they are noble enemies : such I found  
you,

Before I made you mine ; and, since you  
were so,

You have not lost the courages of princes,  
Although the fortune. Had you borne yourselves

Dejectedly, and base, no slavery  
Had been too easy for you : but such is  
The power of noble valour, that we love it  
Even in our enemies, and taken with it,  
Desire to make them friends, as I will you.

*K. of Epire.* Mock us not, Cæsar.

*Diocle.* By the gods, I do not.  
Unloose their bonds :—I now as friends  
embrace you.

Give them their crowns again.

*K. of Pontus.* We are twice o'ercome ;  
By courage, and by courtesy.

*K. of Macedon.* But this latter,  
Shall teach us to live ever faithful vassals  
To Dioclesian, and the power of Rome.

*K. of Epire.* All kingdoms fall before her !  
*K. of Pontus.* And all kings

Contend to honour Cæsar !

*Diocle.* I believe  
Your tongues are the true trumpets of your  
hearts,

And in it I most happy. Queen of fate,  
Imperious Fortune ! mix some light disaster  
With my so many joys, to season them,  
And give them sweeter relish : I'm girt round  
With true felicity ; faithful subjects here,  
Here bold commanders, here with new-made  
friends :

But, what's the crown of all, in thee, Artemia,  
My only child, whose love to me and duty,  
Strive to exceed each other !

*Artem.* I make payment  
But of a debt, which I stand bound to tender  
As a daughter and a subject.

*Diocle.* Which requires yet  
A retribution from me, Artemia,  
Tied by a father's care, how to bestow  
A jewel, of all things to me most precious :  
Nor will I therefore longer keep thee from



The chief joys of creation, marriage rites ;  
Which that thou may'st with greater pleasures taste of,

Thou shalt not like with mine eyes, but thine own.

Among these kings, forgetting they were captives ;

Or those, remembering not they are my subjects,

Make choice of any : By Jove's dreadful thunder,

My will shall rank with thine.

*Artem.* It is a bounty  
The daughters of great princes seldom meet with ;

For they, to make up breaches in the state,  
Or for some other public ends, are forced  
To match where they affect not. May my life  
Deserve this favour !

*Diocle.* Speak ; I long to know  
The man thou wilt make happy.

*Artem.* If that titles,  
Or the adored name of Queen could take me,  
Here would I fix mine eyes, and look no further ;

But these are baits to take a mean-born lady,  
Not her, that boldly may call Cæsar father :  
In that I can bring honour unto any,  
But from no king that lives receive addition :  
To raise desert and virtue by my fortune,  
Though in a low estate, were greater glory,  
Than to mix greatness with a prince that owes

No worth but that name only.

*Diocle.* I commend thee ;  
'Tis like myself.

*Artem.* If, then, of men beneath me,  
My choice is to be made, where shall I seek,  
But among those that best deserve from you ?  
That have served you most faithfully ; that  
in dangers

Have stood next to you ; that have interposed  
Their breasts as shields of proof, to dull the  
swords

Aim'd at your bosom ; that have spent their  
blood

To crown your brows with laurel ?

*Macr.* Cytherea,  
Great Queen of Love, be now propitious to  
me !

*Harp.* [to Sap.] Now mark what I foretold.  
*Anton.* Her eye's on me.

Fair Venus' son, draw forth a leaden dart,  
And, that she may hate me, transfix her  
with it ;

Or, if thou needs wilt use a golden one,  
Shoot it in the behalf of any other :  
Thou know'st I am thy votary elsewhere.

[*Aside.*

*Artem.* [advances to Anton.] Sir.

*Theoph.* How he blushes !

*Sap.* Welcome, fool, thy fortune.

Stand like a block when such an angel  
courts thee !

*Artem.* I am no object to divert your eye  
From the beholding.

*Anton.* Rather a bright sun,  
Too glorious for him to gaze upon,  
That took not first flight from the eagle's  
aerie.

As I look on the temples, or the gods,  
And with that reverence, lady, I behold you,  
And shall do ever.

*Artem.* And it will become you,  
While thus we stand at distance ; but, if love,  
Love born out of the assurance of your vir-  
tues,

Teach me to stoop so low—

*Anton.* O, rather take  
A higher flight.

*Artem.* Why, fear you to be raised ?  
Say I put off the dreadful awe that waits  
On majesty, or with you share my beams,  
Nay, make you to outshine me ; change the  
name

Of Subject into Lord, rob you of service  
That's due from you to me, and in me  
make it

Duty to honour you, would you refuse me ?

*Anton.* Refuse you, madam ! such a worm  
as I am,

Refuse what kings upon their knees would  
sue for !

Call it, great lady, by another name ;  
An humble modesty, that would not match  
A molehill with Olympus.

*Artem.* He that's famous  
For honourable actions in the war,  
As you are, Antoninus, a proved soldier,  
Is fellow to a king.

*Anton.* If you love valour,  
As 'tis a kingly virtue, seek it out,  
And cherish it in a king ; there it shines  
brightest,

And yields the bravest lustre. Look on  
Epire,

A prince, in whom it is incorporate ;  
And let it not disgrace him that he was  
O'ercome by Cæsar ; it was victory,  
To stand so long against him : had you  
seen him,

How in one bloody scene he did discharge  
The parts of a commander and a soldier,  
Wise in direction, bold in execution ;  
You would have said, Great Cæsar's self ex-  
cepted,

The world yields not his equal.

*Artem.* Yet I have heard,

Encountering him alone in the head of his troop,

You took him prisoner.

*K. of F.pire.* 'Tis a truth, great princess ;  
I'll not detract from valour.

*Anton.* 'Twas mere fortune ;  
Courage had no hand in it.

*Theoph.* Did ever man  
Strive so against his own good ?

*Sap.* Spiritless villain !  
How I am tortured ! By the immortal gods,  
I now could kill him.

*Diocle.* Hold, Sapritius, hold,  
On our displeasure hold !

*Harp.* Why, this would make  
A father mad ; 'tis not to be endured ;  
Your honour's tainted in't.

*Sap.* By heaven, it is :  
I shall think of it.

*Harp.* 'Tis not to be forgotten.

*Artem.* Nay, kneel not, sir, I am no  
ravisher,

Nor so far gone in fond affection to you,  
But that I can retire, my honour safe :—  
Yet say, hereafter, that thou hast neglected  
What, but seen in possession of another,  
Will make thee mad with envy.

*Anton.* In her looks  
Revenge is written.

*Mac.* As you love your life,  
Study to appease her.

*Anton.* Gracious madam, hear me.

*Artem.* And be again refused ?

*Anton.* The tender of  
My life, my service, or, since you vouch-  
safe it,

My love, my heart, my all : and pardon me,  
Pardon, dread princess, that I made some  
scruple

To leave a valley of security,

To mount up to the hill of majesty,

On which, the nearer Jove, the nearer light-  
ning.

What knew I, but your grace made trial  
of me ;

Durst I presume to embrace, where but to  
touch

With an unmanner'd band, was death ?  
the fox,

When he saw first the forest's king, the lion,  
Was almost dead with fear ; the second view

Only a little daunted him ; the third,  
He durst salute him boldly : pray you, ap-  
ply this ;

And you shall find a little time will teach me  
To look with more familiar eyes upon you,  
Than duty yet allows me.

*Sap.* Well excused.

*Artem.* You may redeem all yet.

*Diocle.* And, that he may  
Have means and opportunity to do so,  
Artemia, I leave you my substitute  
In fair Cæsarea.

*Sap.* And here, as yourself,  
We will obey and serve her.

*Diocle.* Antoninus,  
So you prove hers, I wish no other heir ;  
Think on't :—be careful of your charge, Theo-  
philus ;

Sapritius, be you my daughter's guardian.  
Your company I wish, confederate princes,  
In our Dalmatian wars ; which finished  
With victory I hope, and Maximinus,  
Our brother and copartner in the empire,  
At my request won to confirm as much,  
The kingdoms I took from you we'll restore,  
And make you greater than you were before.

[*Exeunt all but Antoninus and Macrinus.*  
*Anton.* Oh, I am lost for ever ! lost,  
Macrinus !

The anchor of the wretched, hope, forsakes  
me,

And with one blast of Fortune all my light  
Of happiness is put out.

*Mac.* You are like to those  
That are ill only, 'cause they are too well ;  
That, surfeiting in the excess of blessings,  
Call their abundance want. What could you  
wish,

That is not fall'n upon you ? honour, greatness,  
Respect, wealth, favour, the whole world for  
a dower ;

And with a princess, whose excelling form  
Exceeds her fortune.

*Anton.* Yet poison still is poison,  
Though drunk in gold ; and all these flat-  
tering glories

To me, ready to starve, a painted banquet,  
And no essential food. When I am scorched !  
With fire, can flames in any other quench me !  
What is her love to me, greatness, or empire,  
That am slave to another, who alone  
Can give me ease or freedom ?

*Mac.* Sir, you point at  
Your dotage on the scornful Dorothea :  
Is she, though fair, the same day to be  
named

With best Artemia ? In all their courses,  
Wise men propose their ends : with sweet  
Artemia,

There comes along pleasure, security,  
Usher'd by all that in this life is precious :  
With Dorothea (though her birth be noble,  
The daughter to a senator of Rome,  
By him left rich, yet with a private wealth,  
And far inferior to yours) arrives  
The emperor's frown, which, like a mortal  
plague,

Speaks death is near; the princess' heavy scorn,

Under which you will shrink; your father's fury,

Which to resist, even piety forbids:—

And but remember that she stands suspected  
A favourer of the Christian sect; she brings  
Not danger, but assured destruction with her.  
This truly weigh'd, one smile of great Artemia  
Is to be cherish'd, and preferr'd before

All joys in Dorothea: therefore leave her.

*Anton.* In what thou think'st thou art  
most wise, thou art

Grossly abused, Macrinus, and most foolish.  
For any man to match above his rank,  
Is but to sell his liberty. With Artemia

I still must live a servant; but enjoying  
Divinest Dorothea, I shall rule,

Rule as becomes a husband: for the *danger*,  
Or call it, if you will, *assured destruction*,

I slight it thus.—If, then, thou art my friend,  
As I dare swear thou art, and wilt not take

A governor's place upon thee, be my helper.

*Mac.* You know I dare, and will do any-  
thing;

Put me unto the test.

*Anton.* Go then, Macrinus,

To Dorothea; tell her I have worn,  
In all the battles I have fought, her figure,  
Her figure in my heart, which, like a deity,  
Hath still protected me. Thou canst speak  
well;

And of thy choicest language spare a little,  
To make her understand how much I love her,

And how I languish for her. Bear these jewels,  
Sent in the way of sacrifice, not service,

As to my goddess: all lets thrown behind me,  
Or fears that may deter me, say, this morning

I mean to visit her by the name of friendship:  
—No words to contradict this.

*Mac.* I am yours:

And, if my travail this way be ill spent,

Judge not my reader will by the event.

[*Excunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Dorothea's House.*

*Enter Spungius, and Hircius.*

*Spun.* Turn Christian! Would he that  
first tempted me to have my shoes walk upon  
Christian soles, had turn'd me into a capon;  
for I am sure now, the stones of all my  
pleasure, in this fleshly life, are cut off.

*Hir.* So then, if any coxcomb has a gal-  
loping desire to ride, here's a gelding, if he  
can but sit him.

*Spun.* I kick, for all that, like a horse;—  
look else.

*Hir.* But that is a kickish jade, fellow  
Spungius. Have not I as much cause to  
complain as thou hast? When I was a pagan,  
there was an infidel punk of mine, would have  
let me come upon trust for my curvetting:  
a pox on your Christian cockatrices! they  
cry, iike poulterers' wives:—no money, no  
coney.

*Spun.* Bacchus, the god of brew'd wine  
and sugar, grand patron of rob-pots, upsy-  
freezy tipplers, and super-naculum takers;  
this Bacchus, who is head warden of Vintner's-  
hall, ale-conner, mayor of all victualling-  
houses, the sole liquid benefactor to bawdy-  
houses; lanceprezade to red noses, and in-  
vincible adelantado over the armado of  
pimpled, deep-scarletted, rubified, and car-  
buncled faces—

*Hir.* What of all this?

*Spun.* This boon Bacchanalian skinker,  
did I make legs to.

*Hir.* Scurvy ones, when thou wert drunk.

*Spun.* There is no danger of losing a  
man's ears by making these indentures; he  
that will not now and then be Calabingo, is  
worse than a Calamoothe. When I was a  
pagan, and kneeled to this Bacchus, I durst  
out-drink a lord; but your Christian lords  
out-bowl me. I was in hope to lead a sober  
life, when I was converted; but, now amongst  
the Christians, I can no sooner stagger out  
of one alehouse, but I reel into another:  
they have whole streets of nothing but drink-  
ing-rooms, and drabbing-chambers, jumbled  
together.

*Hir.* Bawdy Priapus, the first school-  
master that taught butchers how to stick  
pricks in flesh, and make it swell, thou  
know'st, was the only ningle that I cared  
for under the moon; but, since I left him to  
follow a scurvy lady, what with her praying  
and our fasting, if now I come to a wench,  
and offer to use her anything hardly, (telling  
her, being a Christian, she must endure,) she  
presently handles me as if I were a clove,  
and cleaves me with disdain, as if I were a  
calf's head.

*Spun.* I see no remedy, fellow Hircius,  
but that thou and I must be half pagans,  
and half Christians; for we know very fools  
that are Christians.

*Hir.* Right: the quarters of Christians  
are good for nothing but to feed crows.

*Spun.* True: Christian brokers, thou  
know'st, are made up of the quarters of  
Christians; parboil one of these rogues,  
and he is not meat for a dog: no, no, I am  
resolved to have an infidel's heart, though in  
shew I carry a Christian's face.

*Hir.* Thy last shall serve my foot : so will I.

*Spun.* Our whimpering lady and mistress sent me with two great baskets full of beef, mutton, veal, and goose, fellow Hircius—

*Hir.* And woodcock, fellow Spungius.

*Spun.* Upon the poor lean ass-fellow, on which I ride, to all the almswomen : what think'st thou I have done with all this good cheer ?

*Hir.* Eat it ; or be choked else.

*Spun.* Would my ass, basket and all, were in thy maw, if I did ! No, as I am a demi-pagan, I sold the victuals, and coined the money into pottle pots of wine.

*Hir.* Therein thou shewed'st thyself a perfect demi-Christian too, to let the poor beg, starve, and hang, or die of the pip. Our puling, snotty-nose lady sent me out likewise with a purse of money, to relieve and release prisoners :—Did I so, think you ?

*Spun.* Would thy ribs were turned into grates of iron then.

*Hir.* As I am a total pagan, I swore they should be hanged first : for, sirrah Spungius, I lay at my old ward of lechery, and cried, a pox on your two-penny wards ! and so I took scurvy common flesh for the money.

*Spun.* And wisely done ; for our lady, sending it to prisoners, had bestowed it out upon lousy knaves : and thou, to save that labour, cast'st it away upon rotten whores.

*Hir.* All my fear is of that pink-an-eye jack-an-apes boy, her page.

*Spun.* As I am a pagan from my cod-piece downward, that white-faced monkey frights me too. I stole but a dirty pudding, last day, out of an almsbasket, to give my dog when he was hungry, and the peaking chitty-face page hit me in the teeth with it.

*Hir.* With the dirty pudding ! so he did me once with a cow-turd, which in knavery I would have crumb'd into one's porridge, who was half a pagan too. The sinug dandiprat smells us out, whatsoever we are doing.

*Spun.* Does he ? let him take heed I prove not his back-friend : I'll make him curse his smelling what I do.

*Hir.* 'Tis my lady spoils the boy ; for he is ever at her tail, and she is never well but in his company.

*Enter Angelo with a book, and a taper lighted ; seeing him, they counterfeit devotion.*

*Ang.* O ! now your hearts make ladders of your eyes,  
In shew to climb to heaven, when your devotion

Walks upon crutches. Where did you waste your time,

When the religious man was on his knees, Speaking the heavenly language ?

*Spun.* Why, fellow Angelo, we were speaking in pedlar's French, I hope.

*Hir.* We have not been idle, take it upon my word.

*Ang.* Have you the baskets emptied, which your lady

Sent, from her charitable hands, to women. That dwell upon her pity ?

*Spun.* Emptied them ! yes ; I'd be loth to have my belly so empty : yet, I am sure, I munched not one bit of them neither.

*Ang.* And went your money to the prisoners ?

*Hir.* Went ! no ; I carried it, and with these fingers paid it away.

*Ang.* What way ? the devil's way, the way of sin,

The way of hot damnation, way of lust ?

And you, to wash away the poor man's bread, In bowls of drunkenness ?

*Spun.* Drunkenness ! yes, yes, I use to be drunk ; our next neighbour's man, called Christopher, hath often seen me drunk, hath he not ?

*Hir.* Or me given so to the flesh : my cheeks speak my doings.

*Ang.* Avaunt, ye thieves, and hollow hypocrites !

Your hearts to me lie open like black books, And there I read your doings.

*Spun.* And what do you read in my heart ?

*Hir.* Or in mine ? come, amiable Angelo, beat the flint of your brains.

*Spun.* And let's see what sparks of wit fly out to kindle your cerebrum.

*Ang.* Your names even brand you ; you are Spungius call'd,

And like a sponge, you suck up lickerish wines,

Till your soul reels to hell.

*Spun.* To hell ! can any drunkard's legs carry him so far ?

*Ang.* For blood of grapes you sold the widows' food.

And, starving them, 'tis murder ; what's this but hell ?—

Hircius your name, and goatish is your nature ; You snatch the meat out of the prisoner's mouth,

To fatten harlots : is not this hell too ?

No angel, but the devil, waits on you.

*Spun.* Shall I cut his throat ?

*Hir.* No ; better burn him, for I think he is a witch : but sooth, sooth him.

*Spun.* Fellow Angelo, true it is, that

falling into the company of wicked he-Christians, for my part—

*Hir.* And she ones, for mine,—we have them swim in shoals hard by—

*Spun.* We must confess, I took too much out of the pot; and he of t'other hollow commodity.

*Hir.* Yes, indeed, we laid Jill on both of us; we cozen'd the poor; but 'tis a common thing: many a one, that counts himself a better Christian than we two, has done it, by this light!

*Spun.* But pray, sweet Angelo, play not the tell-tale to my lady; and, if you take us creeping into any of these mouse-holes of sin any more, let cats fly off our skins.

*Hir.* And put nothing but the poison'd tails of rats into those skins.

*Ang.* Will you dishonour hersweet charity, Who saved you from the tree of death and shame?

*Hir.* Would I were hang'd, rather than thus be told of my faults!

*Spun.* She took us, 'tis true, from the gallows; yet I hope she will not bar yeomen sprats to have their swing.

*Ang.* She comes,—beware, and mend.

*Hir.* Let's break his neck, and bid him mend,

*Enter Dorothea.*

*Dor.* Have you my messages, sent to the poor, Deiver'd with good hands, not robbing them Of any jot was theirs?

*Spun.* Rob them, lady! I hope neither my fellow nor I am thieves.

*Hir.* Delivered with good hands, madam! else let me never lick my fingers more when I eat butter'd fish.

*Dor.* Who cheat the poor, and from them pluck their alms, Pilfer from heaven; and there are thunderbolts,

From thence to beat them ever. Do not lie; Were you both faithful, true distributors?

*Spun.* Lie, madam! what grief is it to see you turn swaggerer, and give your poor-minded rascally servants the lie!

*Dor.* I'm glad you do not; if those wretched people, Tell you they pine for want of any thing, Whisper but to mine ear, and you shall furnish them.

*Hir.* Whisper! nay, lady, for my part I'll cry whoop.

*Ang.* Play no more, villainus, with so good a lady; For, if you do—

*Spun.* Are we Christians?

*Hir.* The foul fiend snap all pagans for me!

*Ang.* Away, and, once more, mend.

*Spun.* 'Takes us for botchers.

*Hir.* A patch, a patch!

[*Exeunt Spun. and Hir.*]

*Dor.* My book and taper.

*Ang.* Here, most holy mistress.

*Dor.* Thy voice sends forth such music, that I never

Was ravish'd with a more celestial sound. Were every servant in the world like thee, So full of goodness, angels would come down To dwell with us: thy name is Angelo, And like that name thou art; get thee to rest, Thy youth with too much watching is oppress.

*Ang.* No, my dear lady, I could weary stars, And force the wakeful moon to lose her eyes, By my late watching, but to wait on you. When at your prayers you kneel before the altar,

Methinks I'm singing with some quire in heaven,

So blest I hold me in your company: Therefore, my most loved mistress, do not bid Your boy, so serviceable, to get hence; For then you break his heart.

*Dor.* Be nigh me still, then:

In golden letters down I'll set that day, Which gave thee to me. Little did I hope To meet such worlds of comfort in thyself, This little, pretty body; when I, coming Forth of the temple, heard my beggar-boy, My sweet-faced, godly beggar-boy, crave an alms,

Which with glad hand I gave, with lucky hand!—

And, when I took thee home, my most chaste-bosom,

Methought, was fill'd with no hot wanton fire, But with a holy flame, mounting since higher, On wings of cherubins, than it did before.

*Ang.* Proud am I, that my lady's modest eye-So likes so poor a servant.

*Dor.* I have offer'd

Handfuls of gold but to behold thy parents. I would leave kingdoms, were I queen of some,

To dwell with thy good father; for, the son Bewitching me so deeply with his presence, He that begot him must do't ten times more. I pray thee, my sweet boy, shew me thy parents;

Be not ashamed.

*Ang.* I am not: I did never

Know who my mother was; but, by your palace, Fill'd with bright heavenly courtiers, I dare assure you,

And pawn these eyes upon it, and this hand,  
My father is in heaven : and, pretty mistress,  
If your illustrious hourglass spend his sand,  
No worse than yet it does ; upon my life,  
You and I both shall meet my father there,  
And he shall bid you welcome.

*Dor.* A blessed day !  
We all long to be there, but lose the way.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Street, near Dorothea's House.*

*Enter Macrinus, met by Theophilus and Harpax.*

*Theoph.* The Sun, god of the day, guide thee, Macrinus !

*Mac.* And thee, Theophilus !

*Theoph.* Glad'st thou in such scorn ?

I call my wish back.

*Mac.* I'm in haste.

*Theoph.* One word,

Take the least hand of time up :—stay.

*Mac.* Be brief.

*Theoph.* As thought : I prithee tell me, good Macrinus,

How health and our fair princess lay together  
This night, for you can tell ; courtiers have flies,

That buzz all news unto them.

*Mac.* She slept but ill.

*Theoph.* Double thy courtesy ; how does Antoninus ?

*Mac.* Ill, well, straight, crook'd,—I know not how.

*Theoph.* Once more ;—

Thy head is full of windmills !—when doth the princess

Fill a bed full of beauty, and bestow it  
On Antoninus, on the wedding-night ?

*Mac.* I know not.

*Theoph.* No ! thou art the manuscript,  
Where Antoninus writes down all his secrets :  
Honest Macrinus, tell me.

*Mac.* Fare you well, sir. [Exit.]

*Harp.* Honesty is some fiend, and frights him hence ;

A many courtiers love it not.

*Theoph.* What piece

Of this state-wheel, which winds up Antoninus,

Is broke, it runs so jarringly ? the man  
Is from himself divided : O thou, the eye,  
By which I wonders see, tell me, my Harpax,  
What gad-fly tickles this Macrinus so,  
That, flinging up the tail, he breaks thus from me.

*Harp.* Oh, sir, his brain-pan is a bed of snakes,

Whose stings shoot through his eye-balls,  
Whose poisonous spawn  
Ingenders such a fry of speckled villainies,  
That, unless charms more strong than adamant

Be used, the Roman angel's wings shall melt,  
And Cæsar's diadem be from his head  
Spurn'd by base feet ; the laurel which he wears,

Returning victor, he enforced to kiss  
That which it hates, the fire. And can this ram,

This Antoninus-Engine, being made ready  
To so much mischief, keep a steady motion ?—  
His eyes and feet, you see, give strange assaults.

*Theoph.* I'm turn'd a marble statue at thy language,

Which printed is in such crabbed characters,  
It puzzles all my reading : what, in the name  
Of Pluto, now is hatching ?

*Harp.* This Macrinus,

The line is, upon which love-errands run  
'Twixt Antoninus and that ghost of women,  
The bloodless Dorothea ; who in prayer  
And meditation, mocking all your gods,  
Drinks up her ruby colour : yet Antoninus  
Plays the Endymion to this pale-faced Moon,  
Courts, seeks to catch her eyes—

*Theoph.* And what of this ?

*Harp.* These are but creeping billows,  
Not got to shore yet : but if Dorothea  
Fall on his bosom, and be fired with love,  
(Your coldest women do so),—had you ink  
Brew'd from the infernal Styx, not all that blackness

Can make a thing so foul, as the dishonours,  
Disgraces, buffetings, and most base affronts  
Upon the bright Artemia, star o' the court,  
Great Cæsar's daughter.

*Theoph.* I now conster thee.

*Harp.* Nay, more ; a firmament of clouds,  
being fill'd

With Jove's artillery, shot down at once,  
To pash your gods in pieces, cannot give,  
With all those thunderbolts, so deep a blow  
To the religion there, and pagan lore,  
As this ; for Dorothea hates your gods,  
And, if she once blast Antoninus' soul,  
Making it foul like hers, Oh ! the example—

*Theoph.* Eats through Cæsarea's heart like liquid poison.

Have I invented tortures to tear Christians,  
To see but which, could all that feel hell's torments

Have leave to stand aloof here on earth's stage,

They would be mad till they again descended,  
Holding the pains most horrid of such souls,

May-games to those of mine ; has this my hand

Set down a Christian's execution

In such dire postures, that the very hangman  
Fell at my foot dead, hearing but their figures ;  
And shall Macrinus and his fellow-masquer  
Strangle me in a dance ?

*Harp.* No :—on ; I hug thee,  
For drilling thy quick brains in this rich plot  
Of tortures 'gainst these Christians : on ; I  
hug thee !

*Theoph.* Both hug and holy me : to this  
Dorothea,

Fly thou and I in thunder.

*Harp.* Not for kingdoms  
Piled upon kingdoms : there's a villain page  
Waits on her, whom I would not for the world  
Hold traffic with ; I do so hate his sight,  
That, should I look on him, I must sink down.

*Theoph.* I will not lose thee then, her to  
confound :

None but this head with glories shall be  
crown'd.

*Harp.* Oh ! mine own as I would wish  
thee ! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*A Room in Dorothea's House.*

*Enter Dorothea, Macrinus, and Angelo.*

*Dor.* My trusty Angelo, with that curious  
eye

Of thine, which ever waits upon my business,  
I prithee watch those my still-negligent  
servants,

That they perform my will, in what's enjoin'd  
them

To the good of others ; else will you find  
them flies,

Not lying still, yet in them no good lies :

Be careful, dear boy.

*Ang.* Yes, my sweetest mistress. [*Exit.*

*Dor.* Now, sir, you may go on.

*Mac.* I then must study  
A new arithmetic, to sum up the virtues  
Which Antoninus gracefully become.

There is in him so much man, so much  
goodness,

So much of honour, and of all things else,  
Which make our being excellent, that from  
his store

He can enough lend others ; yet, much ta'en  
from him,

The want shall be as little, as when seas  
Lend from their hounty, to fill up the poorness  
Of needy rivers.

*Dor.* Sir, he is more indebted

To you for praise, than you to him that  
owes it.

*Mac.* If queens, viewing his presents paid  
to the whiteness

Of your chaste hand alone, should be am-  
bitious

But to be parted in their numerous shares ;  
This he counts nothing : could you see main  
armies

Make battles in the quarrel of his valour,  
That 'tis the best, the truest ; this were  
nothing :

The greatness of his state, his father's voice,  
And arm, awing Cæsarea, he ne'er boasts of ;  
The sunbeams which the emperor throws  
upon him,

Shine there but as in water, and gild him  
Not with one spot of pride : no, dearest  
beauty,

All these, heap'd up together in one scale,  
Cannot weigh down the love he bears to you,  
Being put into the other.

*Dor.* Could gold buy you  
To speak thus for a friend, you, sir, are  
worthy

Of more than I will number ; and this your  
language

Hath power to win upon another woman,  
"Top of whose heart the feathers of this  
world

Are gaily stuck : but all which first you  
named,

And now this last, his love, to me are nothing.

*Mac.* You make me a sad messenger ;—  
but himself

*Enter Antoninus.*

Being come in person, shall, I hope, hear  
from you

Music more pleasing.

*Anton.* Has your ear, Macrinus,  
Heard none, then ?

*Mac.* None I like,

*Anton.* But can there be

In such a noble casket, wherein lie  
Beauty and chastity in their full perfections,  
A rocky heart, killing with cruelty  
A life that's prostrated beneath your feet ?

*Dor.* I am guilty of a shame I yet ne'er  
knew,

Thus to hold parley with you ;—pray, sir,  
pardon. [*Going.*

*Anton.* Good sweetness, you now have it,  
and shall go :

Be but so merciful, before your wounding me  
With such a mortal weapon as Farewell,  
To let me murmur to your virgin ear,  
What I was loth to lay on any tongue  
But this mine own.

*Dor.* If one immodest accent  
Fly out, I hate you everlastingly.

*Anton.* My true love dares not do it.

*Mac.* Hermes inspire thee !

*Enter above, Artemla, Sapritius, Theophilus, Spungius, and Hircius.*

*Spun.* So, now, do you see?—Our work is done; the fish you angle for is nibbling at the hook, and therefore untruss the cod-piece-point of our reward, no matter if the breeches of conscience fall about our heels.

*Theoph.* The gold you earn is here; dam up your mouths,  
And no words of it.

*Hir.* No; nor no words from you of too much damning neither. I know women sell themselves daily, and are hacknied out for silver: why may not we, then, betray a scurvy mistress for gold?

*Spun.* She saved us from the gallows, and, only to keep one proverb from breaking his neck, we'll hang her.

*Theoph.* 'Tis well done; go, go, you're my fine white boys.

*Spun.* If your red boys, 'tis well known more ill-favoured faces than ours are painted.

*Sap.* Those fellows trouble us.

*Theoph.* Away, away!

*Hir.* I to my sweet placket.

*Spun.* And I to my full pot.

[*Exeunt Hir. and Spun.*]

*Anton.* Come, let me tune you:—glaze not thus your eyes

With self-love of a vow'd virginity,  
Make every man your glass; you see our sex  
Do never murder propagation;  
We all desire your sweet society,  
But if you bar me from it, you do kill me,  
And of my blood are guilty.

*Artem.* O base villain!

*Sap.* Bridle your rage, sweet princess.

*Anton.* Could not my fortunes,  
Rear'd higher far than yours, be worthy of  
you,

Methinks my dear affection makes you mine.

*Dor.* Sir, for your fortunes, were they  
mines of gold,

He that I love is richer; and for worth,  
You are to him lower than any slave,  
Is to a monarch.

*Sap.* So insolent, base Christian!

*Dor.* Can I, with wearing out my knees  
before him,

Get you but be his servant, you shall boast  
You're equal to a king.

*Sap.* Confusion on thee,  
For playing thus the lying sorceress!

*Anton.* Your mocks are great ones; none  
beneath the sun

Will I be servant to.—On my knees I beg it,  
Pity me, wondrous maid.

*Sap.* I curse thy baseness.

*Theoph.* Listen to more.

*Dor.* O kneel not, sir, to me.

*Anton.* This knee is emblem of an humbled heart:

That heart which tortured is with your disdain,

Justly for scorning others, even this heart,

To which for pity such a princess sues,

As in her hand offers me all the world,  
Great Cæsar's daughter.

*Artem.* Slave, thou liest.

*Anton.* Yet this

Is adamant to her, that melts to you

In drops of blood.

*Theoph.* A very dog!

*Anton.* Perhaps

'Tis my religion makes you knit the brow;

Yet be you mine, and ever be your own:

I ne'er will screw your conscience from that  
Power,

On which you Christians lean.

*Sap.* I can no longer

Fret out my life with weeping at thee, villain.

Sirrah!

[*Aloud.*]

Would, when I got thee, the high Thunderer's hand

Had struck thee in the womb!

*Mac.* We are betray'd.

*Artem.* Is that the idol, traitor, which  
thou kneel'st to,

Trampling upon my beauty!

*Theoph.* Sirrah, bandog!

Wilt thou in pieces tear our Jupiter

For her? our Mars for her? our Sol for her?—  
A whore! a hell-hound! In this globe of

brains,  
Where a whole world of furies for such

tortures

Have fought, as in a chaos, which should  
exceed,

These nails shall grubbing hie from skull to  
skull,

To find one horrider than all, for you,

You three!

*Artem.* Threaten not, but strike: quick  
vengeance flies

Into my bosom; caitiff! here all love dies.

[*Exeunt above.*]

*Anton.* O! I am thunderstruck! We are  
both o'erwhelm'd—

*Mac.* With one high-raging billow.

*Dor.* You a soldier,

And sink beneath the violence of a woman!

*Anton.* A woman! a wrong'd princess.

From such a star,

Blazing with fires of hate, what can be  
looked for,

But tragical events? my life is now

The subject of her tyranny.



*Dor.* That fear is base,  
Of death, when that death doth but life  
displace  
Out of her house of earth ; you only dread  
The stroke, and not what follows when you're  
dead ;  
There's the great fear, indeed : come, let  
your eyes  
Dwell where mine do, you'll scorn their  
tyrannies.

*Re-enter below, Artemia, Sapritius, Theophilus, a guard ; Angelo comes and stands close by Dorothea.*

*Artem.* My father's nerves put vigour in  
mine arm,  
And I his strength must use. Because I once  
Sbed beams of favour on thee, and, with the  
lion,  
Play'd with thee gently, when thou struck'st  
my heart,  
I'll not insult on a base, humbled prey,  
By lingering out thy terrors ; but, with one  
frown,  
Kill thee :—hence with them all to execution.  
Seize him ; but let even death itself be weary  
In torturing her. I'll change those smiles  
to shrieks ;  
Give the fool what she's proud of, martyrdom :  
In pieces rack that bawd too.

[*Points to Macr.*

*Sap.* Albeit the reverence  
I owe our gods and you, are, in my bosom,  
Torrents so strong, that pity quite lies  
drown'd  
From saving this young man ; yet, when I see  
What face death gives him, and that a  
thing within me

Says, 'tis my son, I am forced to be a man,  
And grow fond of his life, which thus I beg.

*Artem.* And I deny.

*Anton.* Sir, you dishonour me,  
To sue for that which I disclaim to have.  
I shall more glory in my sufferings gain,  
Than you in giving judgment, since I offer  
My blood up to your anger ; nor do I kneel  
To keep a wretched life of mine from ruin :  
Preserve this temple, builded fair as yours is,  
And Cæsar never went in greater triumph,  
Than I shall to the scaffold.

*Artem.* Are you so brave, sir ?  
Set forward to his triumph, and let those two  
Go cursing along with him.

*Dor.* No, but pitying,  
For my part, I, that you lose ten times more  
By torturing me, than I that dare your  
tortures :  
Through all the army of my sins, I have even

Labour'd to break, and cope with death to  
th' face.

The visage of a hangman frights not me ;  
The sight of whips, racks, gibbets, axes, fires,  
Are scaffoldings by which my soul climbs up  
To an eternal habitation.

*Theoph.* Cæsar's imperial daughter, hear  
me speak.

Let not this Christian thing, in this her  
pageantry  
Of proud deriding both our gods and Cæsar,  
Build to herself a kingdom in her death,  
Going laughing from us : no ; her bitterest  
torment

Shall be, to feel her constancy beaten down ;  
The bravery of her resolution lie  
Batter'd, by argument, into such pieces,  
That she again shall, on her belly, creep  
To kiss the pavements of our paynim gods.

*Artem.* How to be done ?

*Theoph.* I'll send my daughters to her,  
And they shall turn her rocky faith to wax ;  
Else spit at me, let me be made your slave,  
And meet no Roman's but a villain's grave.

*Artem.* Thy prisoner let her be, then ;  
and, Sapritius,  
Your son and that, be yours : death shall be  
sent

To him that suffers them, by voice or letters,  
To greet each other. Rifle her estate ;  
Christians to beggary brought, grow des-  
perate.

*Dor.* Still on the bread of poverty let me feed.

*Ang.* O ! my admired mistress, quench  
not out

The holy fires within you, though temptations  
Shower down upon you ? Clasp thine armour  
on,

Fight well, and thou shalt see, after these wars,  
Thy head wear sunbeams, and thy feet  
touch stars. [*Exeunt all but Angelo.*

*Enter Hircius and Spungius.*

*Hir.* How now, Angelo ; how is it, how  
is it ?

What thread spins that whore Fortune upon  
her wheel now ?

*Spun.* *Com' esta, com esta,* poor knave ?

*Hir.* *Comment portez-vous, comment  
portez-vous, mon petit garçon ?*

*Spun.* My pretty wee comrade, my half-  
inch of man's flesh, how run the dice of this  
cheating world, ha ?

*Ang.* Too well on your sides ; you are hid  
in gold,

O'er head and ears.

*Hir.* We thank our fates, the sign of the  
jingle-boys hangs at the doors of our  
pockets.

*Spun.* Who would think that we, coming forth of the a—, as it were, or fag-end of the world, should yet see the golden age, when so little silver is stirring?

*Hir.* Nay, who can say any citizen is an ass, for loading his own back with money till his soul cracks again, only to leave his son like a gilded coxcomb behind him? Will not any fool take me for a wise man now, seeing me draw out of the pit of my treasury this little god with his belly full of gold?

*Spun.* And this, full of the same meat, out of my ambry?

*Ang.* That gold will melt to poison.

*Spun.* Poison! would it would! whole pints for healths should down my throat.

*Hir.* Gold, poison! there is never a she-thrasher in Cæsarea, that lives on the flail of money, will call it so.

*Ang.* Like slaves you sold your souls for golden dross,

Bewraying her to death, who stept between You and the gallows.

*Spun.* It was an easy matter to save us, she being so well back'd.

*Hir.* The gallows and we fell out: so she did but part us.

*Ang.* The misery of that mistress is mine own;

She beggar'd, I left wretched.

*Hir.* I can but let my nose drop in sorrow, with wet eyes for her.

*Spun.* The petticoat of her estate is unlaced, I confess.

*Hir.* Yes, and the smock of her charity is now all to pieces.

*Ang.* For love you bear to her, for some good turns

Done you by me, give me one piece of silver.

*Hir.* How! a piece of silver! if thou wert an angel of gold, I would not put thee into white money, unless I weighed thee; and I weigh thee not a rush.

*Spun.* A piece of silver! I never had but two calves in my life, and those my mother left me; I will rather part from the fat of them, than from a mustard-token's worth of argent.

*Hir.* And so, sweet nit, we crawl from thee.

*Spun.* Adieu, demi-dandiprat, adieu!

*Ang.* Stay,—one word yet; you now are full of gold.

*Hir.* I would be sorry my dog were so full of the pox.

*Spun.* Or any sow of mine of the meazles either.

*Ang.* Go, go! you're beggars both; you are not worth

That leather on your feet.

*Hir.* Away, away, boy!

*Spun.* Page, you do nothing but set patches on the soles of your jests.

*Ang.* I am glad I tried your love, which, see! I want not,

So long as this is full.

*Both.* And so long as this, so long as this.

*Hir.* Spungius, you are a pickpocket.

*Spun.* Hircius, thou hast nimm'd:—*So long as!*—not so much money is left as will buy a louse.

*Hir.* Thou art a thief, and thou liest in that gut through which thy wine runs, if thou deniest it.

*Spun.* Thou liest deeper than the bottom of mine enraged pocket, if thou affrontest it.

*Ang.* No blows, no bitter language;—all your gold gone!

*Spun.* Can the devil creep into one's breeches?

*Hir.* Yes, if his horns once get into the codpiece.

*Ang.* Come, sigh not; I so little am in love With that whose loss kills you, that, see! 'tis yours,

All yours: divide the heap in equal share, So you will go along with me to prison, And in our mistress' sorrows bear a part: Say, will you?

*Both.* Will we!

*Spun.* If she were going to hanging, no gallows should part us.

*Hir.* Let us both be turned into a rope of onions, if we do not.

*Ang.* Follow me, then; repair your bad deeds past;

Happy are men, when their best days are last!

*Spun.* True, master Angelo; pray, sir, lead the way. [*Exit* Angelo.]

*Hir.* Let him lead that way, but follow thou me this way.

*Spun.* I live in a gaol!

*Hir.* Away, and shift for ourselves:—She'll do well enough there; for prisoners are more hungry after mutton, than catch-poles after prisoners.

*Spun.* Let her starve then, if a whole gaol will not fill her belly. [*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Dorothea's House.*

*Enter* Sapritius, Theophilus, Priest, Calista, and Christeta.

*Sap.* Sick to the death, I fear.

*Theoph.* I meet your sorrow, With my true feeling of it.

*Sap.* She's a witch,  
A sorceress, Theophilus ; my son  
Is charm'd by her enchanting eyes ; and, like  
An image made of wax, her beams of beauty  
Melt him to nothing : all my hopes in him,  
And all his gotten honours, find their grave  
In his strange dotage on her. Would, when  
first

He saw and loved her, that the earth had  
open'd,

And swallow'd both alive !

*Theoph.* There's hope left yet.

*Sap.* Not any : though the princess were  
appeased,

All title in her love surrender'd up ;  
Yet this coy Christian is so transported  
With her religion, that unless my son  
(But let him perish first !) drink the same  
potion,

And be of her belief, she'll not vouchsafe  
To be his lawful wife.

*Priest.* But, once removed

From her opinion, as I rest assured  
The reasons of these holy maids will win her,  
You'll find her tractable to anything,  
For our content or his.

*Theoph.* If she refuse it,

The Stygian damps, breeding infectious airs,  
The mandrake's shrieks, the basilisk's killing  
eye,

The dreadful lightning that does crush the  
bones,

And never singe the skin, shall not appear  
Less fatal to her, than my zeal made hot  
With love unto my gods. I have deferr'd it,  
In hopes to draw back this apostata,  
Which will be greater honour than her  
death,

Unto her father's faith ; and, to that end,  
Have brought my daughters hither.

*Cal.* And we doubt not  
To do what you desire.

*Sap.* Let her be sent for.

Prosper in your good work ; and were I not  
To attend the princess, I would see and hear  
How you succeed.

*Theoph.* I am commanded too,  
I'll hear you company.

*Sap.* Give them your ring,

To lead her as in triumph, if they win her,  
Before her highness. [*Exit.*]

*Theoph.* Spare no promises,

Persuasions, or threats, I do conjure you :  
If you prevail, 'tis the most glorious work  
You ever undertook.

*Enter Dorothea and Angelo.*

*Priest.* She comes.

*Theoph.* We leave you ;

Be constant, and be careful.

[*Exeunt Theoph. and Priest.*]

*Cal.* We are sorry

To meet you under guard.

*Dor.* But I more grieved

You are at liberty. So well I love you,  
That I could wish, for such a cause as mine,  
You were my fellow-prisoners : Prithee,  
Angelo,

Reach us some chairs. Please you sit—

*Cal.* We thank you :

Our visit is for love, love to your safety.

*Christ.* Our conference must be private,  
pray you, therefore,

Command your boy to leave us.

*Dor.* You may trust him

With any secret that concerns my life,  
Falsehood and he are strangers : had you,  
ladies,

Been bless'd with such a servant, you had  
never

Forsook that way, your journey even half  
ended,

That leads to joys eternal. In the place  
Of loose lascivious mirth, he would have  
stirr'd you

To holy meditations ; and so far

He is from flattery, that he would have told  
you,

Your pride being at the height, how miserable  
And wretched things you were, that, for an  
hour

Of pleasure here, have made a desperate sale  
Of all your right in happiness hereafter.

He must not leave me ; without him I fall :  
In this life he's my servant, in the other  
A wish'd companion.

*Ang.* 'Tis not in the devil,

Nor all his wicked arts, to shake such  
goodness.

*Dor.* But you were speaking, lady.

*Cal.* As a friend

And lover of your safety, and I pray you  
So to receive it ; and, if you remember  
How near in love our parents were, that we,  
Even from the cradle, were brought up  
together,

Our amity increasing with our years,  
We cannot stand suspected.

*Dor.* To the purpose.

*Cal.* We come, then, as good angels,  
Dorothea,

To make you happy ; and the means so easy,  
That, be not you an enemy to yourself,  
Already you enjoy it.

*Christ.* Look on us,

Ruin'd as you are, once, and brought unto it,  
By your persuasion.

*Cal.* But what follow'd, lady ?

Leaving those blessings which our gods gave freely,

And shower'd upon us with a prodigal hand,  
As to be noble born, youth, beauty, wealth,  
And the free use of these without control,  
Check, curb, or stop, such is our law's indulgence!

All happiness forsook us; bonds and fetters,  
For amorous twines; the rack and hangman's whips,

In place of choice-delights; our parents' curses

Instead of blessings; scorn, neglect, contempt,  
Fell thick upon us.

*Christ.* This consider'd wisely,  
We made a fair retreat; and reconciled  
To our forsaken gods, we live again  
In all prosperity.

*Cal.* By our example,  
Bequeathing misery to such as love it,  
Learn to be happy. The Christian yoke's too heavy

For such a dainty neck; it was framed rather  
To be the shrine of Venus, or a pillar,  
More precious than crystal, to support  
Our Cupid's image: our religion, lady,  
Is but a varied pleasure; yours a toil  
Slaves would shrink under.

*Dor.* Have you not cloven feet? are you not devils?

Dare any say so much, or dare I hear it  
Without a virtuous and religious anger?  
Now to put on a virgin modesty,  
Or maiden silence, when His power is question'd

That is omnipotent, were a greater crime,  
Than in a bad cause to be impudent.

Your gods! your temples! brothel houses rather,

Or wicked actions of the worst of men,  
Pursued and practised. Your religious rites!

Oh! call them rather juggling mysteries,  
The baits and nets of hell: your souls the prey  
For which the devil angles; your false pleasures

A steep descent, by which you headlong fall  
Into eternal torments.

*Cal.* Do not tempt  
Our powerful gods.

*Dor.* Which of your powerful gods?

Your gold, your silver, brass, or wooden ones,  
That can nor do me hurt, nor protect you?

Most pitied women! will you sacrifice  
To such,—or call them gods or goddesses,

Your parents would disdain to be the same,  
Or you yourselves? O blinded ignorance!

Tell me, Calista, by the truth, I charge you,  
Or anything you hold more dear, would you,  
To have him deified to posterity,

Desire your father an adulterer,  
A ravisher, almost a parricide,  
A vile incestuous wretch?

*Cal.* That, piety  
And duty answer for me.

*Dor.* Or you, Christeta,  
To be hereafter register'd a goddess,  
Give your chaste body up to the embraces  
Of goatish lust? have it writ on your forehead,  
"This is the common whore, the prostitute,  
The mistress in the art of wantonness,  
Knows every trick and labyrinth of desires  
That are immodest?"

*Christ.* You judge better of me,  
Or my affection is ill placed on you;  
Shall I turn strumpet?

*Dor.* No, I think you would not.  
Yet Venus, whom you worship, was a whore;  
Flora, the foundress of the public stews,  
And has, for that, her sacrifice; your great god,

Your Jupiter, a loose adulterer,  
Incestuous with his sister: read but those  
That have canonized them, you'll find them worse

Than, in chaste language, I can speak them to you.

Are they immortal then, that did partake  
Of human weakness, and had ample share  
In men's most base affections; subject to  
Unchaste loves, anger, bondage, wounds,  
as men are?

Here, Jupiter, to serve his lust, turn'd bull,  
The shape, indeed, in which he stole Europa;  
Neptune, for gain, builds up the walls of

Troy,  
As a day-labourer; Apollo keeps  
Admetus' sheep for bread; the Lemnian smith

Sweats at the forge for hire; Prometheus here,

With his still-growing liver, feeds the vulture;  
Saturn bound fast in hell with adamant chains;

And thousands more, on whom abused error  
Bestows a deity. Will you then, dear sisters,  
For I would have you such, pay your devotions

To things of less power than yourselves?

*Cal.* We worship  
Their good deeds in their images.

*Dor.* By whom fashion'd?  
By sinful men. I'll tell you a short tale,  
Nor can you but confess it is a true one:  
A king of Egypt, being to erect  
The image of Osiris, whom they honour,  
Took from the matrons' necks the richest jewels,

And purest gold, as the materials,

To finish up his work ; which perfected,  
 With all solemnity he set it up,  
 To be adored, and served himself his idol ;  
 Desiring it to give him victory  
 Against his enemies : but, being overthrown,  
 Enraged against his god, (these are fine gods,  
 Subject to human fury !) he took down  
 The senseless thing, and melting it again,  
 He made a basin, in which eunuchs wash'd  
 His concubine's feet ; and for this sordid use,  
 Some months it served : his mistress proving  
 false,  
 As most indeed do so, and grace concluded  
 Between him and the priests, of the same  
 bason  
 He made his god again !—Think, think, of  
 this,  
 And then consider, if all worldly honours,  
 Or pleasures that do leave sharp stings be-  
 hind them,  
 Have power to win such as have reasonable  
 souls,  
 To put their trust in dross.  
*Cal.* Oh, that I had been born  
 Without a father !  
*Christ.* Piety to him  
 Hath ruin'd us for ever.  
*Dor.* Think not so ;  
 You may repair all yet : the attribute  
 That speaks his Godhead most, is merciful :  
 Revenge is proper to the fiends you worship,  
 Yet cannot strike without his leave.—You  
 weep,—  
 Oh, 'tis a heavenly shower ! celestial balm  
 To cure your wounded conscience ! let it fall,  
 Fall thick upon it ; and, when that is spent,  
 I'll help it with another of my tears :  
 And may your true repentance prove the child  
 Of my true sorrow, never mother had  
 A birth so happy !  
*Cal.* We are caught ourselves,  
 That came to take you ; and, assured of  
 conquest,  
 We are your captives.  
*Dor.* And in that you triumph :  
 Your victory had been eternal loss,  
 And this your loss immortal gain. Fix here,  
 And you shall feel yourselves inwardly arm'd  
 'Gainst tortures, death, and hell :—but, take  
 heed, sisters,  
 That, or through weakness, threats, or mild  
 persuasions,  
 Though of a father, you fall not into  
 A second and a worse apostacy.  
*Cal.* Never, oh never ! steel'd by your  
 example,  
 We dare the worst of tyranny.  
*Christ.* Here's our warrant,  
 You shall along and witness it.

*Dor.* Be confirm'd then ;  
 And rest assured, the more you suffer here,  
 The more your glory, you to heaven we  
 dear. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The Governor's Palace.*

*Enter Artemia, Sapritius, Theophilus, and Harpax.*

*Artem.* Sapritius, though your son deserve  
 no pity,

We grieve his sickness : his contempt of us,  
 We cast behind us, and look back upon  
 His service done to Cæsar, that weighs down  
 Our just displeasure. If his malady  
 Have growth from his restraint, or that you  
 think

His liberty can cure him, let him have it :  
 Say, we forgive him freely.

*Sap.* Your grace binds us,  
 Ever your humblest vassals.

*Artem.* Use all means,  
 For his recovery ; though yet I love him,  
 I will not force affection. If the Christian,  
 Whose beauty hath out-rivall'd me, be won  
 To be of our belief, let him enjoy her ;  
 That all may know, when the cause wills,  
 I can

Command my own desires.

*Theoph.* Be happy then,  
 My lord Sapritius : I am confident,  
 Such eloquence and sweet persuasion dwell  
 Upon my daughters' tongues, that they  
 will work her

To anything they please.

*Sap.* I wish they may !  
 Yet 'tis no easy task to undertake,  
 To alter a perverse and obstinate woman.

[*A shout within : loud music.*]

*Artem.* What means this shout ?

*Sap.* 'Tis seconded with music,  
 Triumphant music.—Ha !

*Enter Sempronius.*

*Semp.* My lord, your daughters,  
 The pillars of our faith, having converted,  
 For so report gives out, the Christian lady,  
 The image of great Jupiter borne before them,  
 Sue for access.

*Theoph.* My soul divin'd as much.  
 Blest be the time when first they saw this light !  
 Their mother, when she bore them to support  
 My feeble age, filled not my longing heart  
 With so much joy, as they in this good work,  
 Have thrown upon me.

*Enter Priest with the Image of Jupiter, incense and censers ; followed by Calista and Christeta, leading Dorothea.*

Welcome, oh, thrice welcome,  
 Daughters, both of my body and my mind !

Let me embrace in you my bliss, my comfort ;  
 And Dorothea, now more welcome too,  
 Then if you never had fallen off ! I am ravish'd  
 With the excess of joy :—speak, happy  
 daughters,

The blest event.

*Cal.* We never gain'd so much  
 By any undertaking.

*Theoph.* O my dear girl,  
 Our gods reward thee !

*Dor.* Nor was ever time,  
 On my part, better spent.

*Christ.* We are all now  
 Of one opinion.

*Theoph.* My best Christeta !  
 Madam, if ever you did grace to worth,  
 Vouchsafe your princely hands.

*Artem.* Most willingly—  
 Do you refuse it ?

*Cal.* Let us first deserve it.

*Theoph.* My own child still ! here set our  
 god ; prepare

The incense quickly : Come, fair Dorothea,  
 I will myself support you ;—now kneel down,  
 And pay your vows to Jupiter.

*Dor.* I shall do it  
 Better by their example.

*Theoph.* They shall guide you,  
 They are familiar with the sacrifice.  
 Forward, my twins of comfort, and, to teach  
 her,

Make a joint offering.

*Christ.* Thus—*[they both spit at the image,*  
*Cal.* And thus—*[throw it down, and*  
*spurn it.*

*Harp.* Profane,  
 And impious ! stand you now like a statue ?  
 Are you the champion of the gods ? where is  
 Your holy zeal, your anger ?

*Theoph.* I am blasted ;  
 And, as my feet were rooted here, I find  
 I have no motion ; I would I had no sight  
 too !

Or if my eyes can serve to any use,  
 Give me, thou injured Power ! a sea of tears,  
 To expiate this madness in my daughters ;  
 For, being themselves, they would have  
 trembled at

So blasphemous a deed in any other :—  
 For my sake, hold awhile thy dreadful  
 thunder,

And give me patience to demand a reason  
 For this accursed act.

*Dor.* 'Twas bravely done.

*Theoph.* Peace, damn'd enchantress,  
 peace !—I should look on you

With eyes made red with fury, and my hand,  
 That shakes with rage, should much outstrip  
 my tongue,

And seal my vengeance on your hearts ;—  
 but nature,

To you that have fallen once, bids me again  
 To be a father. Oh ! how durst you tempt  
 The anger of great Jove ?

*Dor.* Alack, poor Jove !  
 He is no swaggerer ; how smug he stands !  
 He'll take a kick, or anything.

*Sap.* Stop her mouth.

*Dor.* It is the patient'st godling ! do not  
 fear him ;

He would not hurt the thief that stole away  
 Two of his goldenlocks ; indeed he could not :  
 And still 'tis the same quiet thing.

*Theoph.* Blasphemer !  
 Ingenious cruelty shall punish this :  
 Thou art past hope : but for you yet, dear  
 daughters,

Again bewitch'd, the dew of mild forgiveness  
 May gently fall, provided you deserve it,  
 With true contrition : be yourselves again ;  
 Sue to the offended deity.

*Christ.* Not to be  
 The mistress of the earth.

*Cal.* I will not offer  
 A grain of incense to it, much less kneel,  
 Nor look on it but with contempt and scorn,  
 To have a thousand years conferr'd upon me  
 Of worldly blessings. We profess ourselves  
 To be, like Dorothea, Christians ;  
 And owe her for that happiness.

*Theoph.* My ears  
 Receive, in hearing this, all deadly charms,  
 Powerful to make man wretched.

*Artem.* Are these they  
 You brag'd could convert others !

*Sap.* That want strength  
 To stand, themselves !

*Harp.* Your honour is engaged,  
 The credit of your cause depends upon it ;  
 Something you must do suddenly.

*Theoph.* And I will.

*Harp.* They merit death ; but, falling by  
 your hand,

'Twill be recorded for a just revenge,  
 And holy fury in you.

*Theoph.* Do not blow  
 The furnace of a wrath thrice hot already ;  
 Ætna is in my breast, wildfire burns here,  
 Which only blood must quench. Incensed  
 Power !

Which from my infancy I have adored,  
 Look down with favourable beams upon  
 The sacrifice, though not allow'd thy priest,  
 Which I will offer to thee ; and be pleased,  
 My fiery zeal inciting me to act,  
 To call that justice others may style murder.  
 Come, you accurs'd, thus by the hair I drag  
 you

Before this holy altar ; thus look on you,  
Less pitiful than tigers to their prey :  
And thus, with mine own hand, I take that life  
Which I gave to you. [*Kills them.*]

*Dor.* O, most cruel butcher !

*Theoph.* My anger ends not here : hell's  
dreadful porter,

Receive into thy ever-open gates,  
Their damned souls, and let the Furies' whips  
On them alone be wasted ; and, when death  
Closes these eyes, 'twill be Elysium to me  
To hear their shrieks and howlings. Make  
me, Pluto,

Thy instrument to furnish thee with souls  
Of that accursed sect ; nor let me fall,  
Till my fell vengeance hath consumed them  
all. [*Exit with Harpax.*]

*Artem.* 'Tis a brave zeal.

*Enter Angelo, smiling.*

*Dor.* Oh, call him back again,  
Call back your hangman ! here's one pris-  
soner left

To be the subject of his knife.

*Artem.* Not so ;

We are not so near reconciled unto thee ;  
Thou shalt not perish such an easy way.  
Be she your charge, Saprītus, now ; and  
Suffer none to come near her, till we have  
Found out some torments worthy of her.

*Ang.* Courage, mistress ;

These martyrs but prepare your glorious fate ;  
You shall exceed them, and not imitate.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Room in Dorothea's House.*

*Enter Spungius and Hircius, ragged, at  
opposite doors.*

*Hir.* Spungius !

*Spun.* My fine rogue, how is it ? how  
goes this tattered world ?

*Hir.* Hast any money ?

*Spun.* Money ! no. The tavern ivy clings  
about my money, and kills it. Hast thou  
any money ?

*Hir.* No. My money is a mad bull ; and  
finding any gap opened, away it runs.

*Spun.* I see then a tavern and a bawdy-  
house have faces much alike ; the one hath  
red grates next the door, the other hath  
peeping-holes within doors ; the tavern hath  
evermore a bush, the bawdyhouse sometimes  
neither hedge nor bush. From a tavern a  
man comes reeling ; from a bawdyhouse not  
able to stand. In the tavern you are cozen'd  
with paltry wine ; in a bawdyhouse by a  
painted whore : money may have wine, and  
a whore will have money ; but to neither can

you cry, Drawer, you rogue ! or, Keep door,  
rotten bawd ! without a silver whistle :—We  
are justly plagued, therefore, for running  
from our mistress.

*Hir.* Thou didst ; I did not : Yet I had  
run too, but that one gave me turpentine  
pills, and that staid my running.

*Spun.* Well ! the thread of my life is  
drawn through the needle of necessity,  
whose eye, looking upon my lousy breeches,  
cries out it cannot mend them ; which so  
pricks the linings of my body, (and those  
are heart, lights, lungs, guts, and midriff,) that I  
beg on my knees, to have Atropos,  
the tailor to the Destinies, to take her shears,  
and cut my thread in two ; or to heat the  
iron goose of mortality, and so press me to  
death.

*Hir.* Sure thy father was some botcher,  
and thy hungry tongue bit off these shreds  
of complaints, to patch up the elbows of  
thy nitty eloquence.

*Spun.* And what was thy father ?

*Hir.* A low-minded cobbler, a cobbler  
whose zeal set many a woman upright ; the  
remembrance of whose awl (I now having  
nothing) thrusts such scurvy stitches into my  
soul, that the heel of my happiness is gone  
awry.

*Spun.* Pity that e'er thou trod'st thy shoe  
awry.

*Hir.* Long I cannot last ; for all sowerly  
wax of comfort melting away, and misery  
taking the length of my foot, it boots not  
me to sue for life, when all my hopes are  
seam-rent, and go wet-shod.

*Spun.* This shows thou art a cobbler's  
son, by going through stitch : O Hircius,  
would thou and I were so happy to be cobblers !

*Hir.* So would I ; for both of us being  
weary of our lives, should then be sure of  
shoemaker's ends.

*Spun.* I see the beginning of my end, for  
I am almost starved.

*Hir.* So am not I ; but I am more than  
famished.

*Spun.* All the members in my body are  
in a rebellion one against another.

*Hir.* So are mine, and nothing but a  
cook, being a constable, can appease them,  
presenting to my nose, instead of his painted  
staff, a spit full of roast meat.

*Spun.* But in this rebellion, what uproars  
do they make ! my belly cries to my mouth,  
Why dost not gape and feed me ?

*Hir.* And my mouth sets out a throat to  
my hand, Why dost thou not lift up meat,  
and cram my chops with it ?

*Spun.* Then my hand hath a fling at mine

eyes, because they look not out, and shark for victuals.

*Hir.* Which mine eyes seeing, full of tears, cry aloud, and curse my feet, for not ambling up and down to feed colon; sithence if good meat be in any place, 'tis known my feet can smell.

*Spun.* But then my feet, like lazy rogues, lie still, and had rather do nothing, than run to and fro to purchase anything.

*Hir.* Why, among so many millions of people, should thou and I only be miserable tatterdemallions, ragamuffins, and lousy desperates?

*Spun.* Thou art a merc I-am-an-o, I-am-an-as: consider the whole world, and 'tis as we are.

*Hir.* Lousy, beggarly! thou whoreson assafectida!

*Spun.* Worse; all tottering, all out of frame, thou fooliamini!

*Hir.* As how, arsenic? come, make the world smart.

*Spun.* Old honour goes on crutches, beggary rides caroched; honest men make feasts, knaves sit at tables, cowards are lapp'd in velvet, soldiers (as we) in rags; beauty turns whore; whore, bawd; and both die of the pox: why then, when all the world stumbles, should thou and I walk upright?

*Hir.* Stop, look! who's yonder?

*Enter Angelo.*

*Spun.* Fellow Angelo! how does my little man? well?

*Ang.* Yes;

And would you did so too! Where are your clothes?

*Hir.* Clothes! You see every woman almost go in her loose gown, and why should not we have our clothes loose?

*Spun.* Would they were loose!

*Ang.* Why, where are they?

*Spun.* Where many a velvet cloak, I warrant, at this hour, keeps them company; they are pawn'd to a broker.

*Ang.* Why pawn'd? where's all the gold I left with you?

*Hir.* The gold! we put that into a scrivener's hands, and he hath cozen'd us.

*Spun.* And therefore, I prithee, Angelo, if thou hast another purse, let it be confiscate, and brought to devastation.

*Ang.* Are you made all of lies? I know which way

Your guilt-wing'd pieces flew. I will no more

Be mock'd by you: be sorry for your riots,

Tame your wild flesh by labour; eat the bread

Got with hard hands; let sorrow be your whip,

To draw drops of repentance from your heart:

When I read this amendment in your eyes, You shall not want; till then, my pity dies.

[*Exit.*]

*Spun.* Is it not a shame, that this scurvy puerilis should give us lessons?

*Hir.* I have dwelt, thou know'st, a long time in the suburbs of conscience, and they are ever bawdy; but now my heart shall take a house within the walls of honesty.

*Enter Harpax behind.*

*Spun.* O you drawers of wine, draw me no more to the bar of beggary; the sound of *Score a pottle of sack*, is worse than the noise of a scolding oysterwench, or two cats incorporating.

*Harp.* This must not be—I do not like when conscience

Thaws; keep her frozen still. [*Comes forward.*] How now, my masters!

Dejected? drooping? drown'd in tears? clothes torn?

Lean, and ill colour'd? sighing? where's the whirlwind

Which raises all these mischiefs? I have seen you

Drawn better on't. O! but a spirit told me You both would come to this, when in you thrust

Yourselves into the service of that lady, Who shortly now must die. Where's now her praying?

What good got you by wearing out your feet, To run on scurvy errands to the poor,

And to bear money to a sort of rogues, And lousy prisoners?

*Hir.* Pox on them! I never prospered since I did it.

*Spun.* Had I been a pagan still, I should not have spit white for want of drink; but come to any vintner now, and bid him trust me, because I turned Christian, and he cries, Poh!

*Harp.* You're rightly served; before that peevish lady

Had to do with you, women, wine, and money

Flow'd in abundance with you, did it not?

*Hir.* O, those days! those days!

*Harp.* Beat not your breasts, tear not your hair in madness;

Those days shall come again, be ruled by me; And better, mark me, better.



*Spun.* I have seen you, sir, as I take it, an attendant on the lord Theophilus.

*Harp.* Yes, yes ; in shew his servant : but —hark, bither !—

Take heed nobody listens.

*Spun.* Not a mouse stir.

*Harp.* I am a prince disguised.

*Hir.* Disguised ! how ? drunk ?

*Harp.* Yes, my fine boy ! I'll drink too, and be drunk ;

I am a prince, and any man by me,

Let him but keep my rules, shall soon grow rich,

Exceeding rich, most infinitely rich :

He that shall serve me, is not starved from pleasures

As other poor knaves are ; no, take their fill.

*Spun.* But that, sir, we're so ragged—

*Harp.* You'll say, you'd serve me ?

*Hir.* Before any master under the zodiac.

*Harp.* For clothes no matter ; I've a mind to both.

And one thing I like in you ; now that you see

The bonfire of your lady's state burnt out,

You give it over, do you not ?

*Hir.* Let her be hang'd !

*Spun.* And pox'd !

*Harp.* Why, now you're mine ;

Come, let my bosom touch you.

*Spun.* We have bugs, sir.

*Harp.* There's money, fetch your clothes home ; there's for you.

*Hir.* Avoid, vermin ! give over our mistress ! a man cannot prosper worse, if he serve the devil.

*Harp.* How ! the devil ? I'll tell you what now of the devil,

He's no such horrid creature ; cloven-footed, Black, saucer-eyed, his nostrils breathing fire, As these lying Christians make him.

*Both.* No !

*Harp.* He's more loving To man, than man to man is.

*Hir.* Is he so ? Would we two might come acquainted with him !

*Harp.* You shall : he's a wondrous good fellow, loves a cup of wine, a whore, anything ; if you have money, it's ten to one but I'll bring him to some tavern to you or other.

*Spun.* I'll bespeak the best room in the house for him.

*Harp.* Some people he cannot endure.

*Hir.* We'll give him no such cause.

*Harp.* He hates a civil lawyer, as a soldier does peace.

*Spun.* How a commoner ?

*Harp.* I loves him from the teeth outward.

*Spun.* Pray, my lord and prince, let me encounter you with one foolish question : does the devil eat any mace in his broth !

*Harp.* Exceeding much, when his burning fever takes him ; and then he has the knuckles of a bailiff boiled to his breakfast.

*Hir.* Then, my lord, he loves a catchpole, does he not ?

*Harp.* As a bearward doth a dog. A catchpole ! he hath sworn, if ever he dies, to make a serjeant his heir, and a yeoman his overseer.

*Spun.* How if he come to any great man's gate, will the porter let him come in, sir ?

*Harp.* Oh ! he loves porters of great men's gates, because they are ever so near the wicket.

*Hir.* Do not they whom he makes much on, for all his stroaking their cheeks, lead hellish lives under him ?

*Harp.* No, no, no, no ; he will be damn'd before he hurts any man : do but you (when you are thoroughly acquainted with him) ask for anything, see if it does not come.

*Spun.* Anything !

*Harp.* Call for a delicate rare whore, she is brought you.

*Hir.* Oh ! my elbow itches. Will the devil keep the door ?

*Harp.* Be drunk as a beggar, he helps you home.

*Spun.* O my fine devil ! some watchman, I warrant ; I wonder who is his constable.

*Harp.* Will you swear, roar, swagger ? he claps you—

*Hir.* How ? on the chaps ?

*Harp.* No, on the shoulder ; and cries, O, my brave boys ! Will any of you kill a man ?

*Spun.* Yes, yes ; I, I.

*Harp.* What is his word ? Hang ! hang ! 'tis nothing.—Or stab a woman ?

*Hir.* Yes, yes ; I, I.

*Harp.* Here is the worst word he gives you : A pox on't, go on !

*Hir.* O inveigling rascal !—I am ravish'd.

*Harp.* Go, get your clothes ; turn up your glass of youth,

And let the sands run merrily : nor do I care From what a lavish hand your money flies, So you give none away to beggars—

*Hir.* Hang them !

*Harp.* And to the scrubbing poor.

*Hir.* I'll see them hang'd first.

*Harp.* One service you must do me.

*Both.* Anything.

*Harp.* Your mistress, Dorothea, ere she suffers,

Is to be put to tortures : have you hearts To tear her into shrieks, to fetch her soul Up in the pangs of death, yet not to die ?

*Hir.* Suppose this she, and that I had no hands, here's my teeth.

*Spun.* Suppose this she, and that I had no teeth, here's my nails.

*Hir.* But will not you be there, sir?

*Harp.* No, not for hills of diamonds; the grand master,

Who schools her in the Christian discipline, Abhors my company: should I be there, You'd think all hell broke loose, we should so quarrel.

Ply you this business; he, her flesh who spares, Is lost, and in my love never more shares.

[*Exit.*

*Spun.* Here's a master, you rogue!

*Hir.* Sure he cannot choose but have a horrible number of servants. [*Exeunt.*

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I.—*The Governor's Palace.*

Antoninus on a couch, asleep, with Doctors about him; Sapritius and Macrinus.

*Sap.* O you, that are half gods, lengthen that life

Their duties lend us; turn o'er all the volumes Of your mysterious Æsculapian science, T' increase the number of this young man's days:

And, for each minute of his time prolong'd, Your fee shall be a piece of Roman gold With Cæsar's stamp, such as he sends his captains

When in the wars they earn well: do but save him,

And, as he's half myself, be you all mine.

1 *Doct.* What art can do, we promise; physic's hand

As apt is to destroy as to preserve, If heaven make not the med'cine: all this while,

Our skill hath combat held with his disease; But 'tis so arm'd, and a deep melancholy, To be such in part with death, we are in fear The grave must mock our labours.

*Mac.* I have been

His keeper in this sickness, with such eyes As I have seen my mother watch o'er me; And, from that observation, sure I find It is a midwife must deliver him.

*Sap.* Is he with child? a midwife!

*Mac.* Yes, with child;

And will, I fear, lose life, if by a woman He is not brought to bed. Stand by his pillow Some little while, and, in his broken slumbers, Him shall you hear cry out on Dorothea; And, when his arms fly open to catch her, Closing together, he falls fast asleep,

Pleased with embracings of her airy form. Physicians but torment him, his disease Laughs at their gibberish language; let him hear

The voice of Dorothea, nay, but the name, He starts up with high colour in his face; She, or none, cures him; and how that can be, The princess' strict command barring that happiness,

To me impossible seems.

*Sap.* To me it shall not; I'll be no subject to the greatest Cæsar Was ever crown'd with laurel, rather than cease

To be a father.

[*Exit.*

*Mac.* Silence, sir, he wakes.

*Anton.* Thou kill'st me, Dorothea; oh, Dorothea!

*Mac.* She's here:—enjoy her.

*Anton.* Where? Why do you mock me? Age on my head hath stuck no white hairs yet, Yet I'm an old man, a fond dotting fool Upon a woman. I, to buy her beauty, (In truth I am bewitch'd,) offer my life, And she, for my acquaintance, hazards hers: Yet for our equal sufferings, none holds out A hand of pity.

1 *Doct.* Let him have some music.

*Anton.* Hell on your fiddling!

[*Starting from his couch.*

1 *Doct.* Take again your bed, sir; Sleep is a sovereign physic.

*Anton.* Take an ass's head, sir: Confusion on your fooleries, your charms!— Thou stinking clyster-pipe, where's the god of rest,

Thy pills and base apothecary drugs Threaten'd to bring unto me? Out, you impostors!

Quacksalving, cheating mountebanks! your skill

Is to make sound men sick, and sick men kill.

*Mac.* Oh, be yourself, dear friend.

*Anton.* Myself, Macrinus!

How can I be myself, when I am mangled Into a thousand pieces? here moves my head, But where's my heart? wherever—that lies dead.

*Re-enter Sapritius, dragging in Dorothea by the hair, Angelo following.*

*Sap.* Follow me, thou damn'd sorceress! Call up thy spirits,

And, if they can, now let them from my hand Untwine these witching hairs.

*Anton.* I am that spirit:

Or, if I be not, were you not my father, One made of iron should hew that hand in pieces,

That so defaces this sweet monument  
Of my love's beauty.

*Sap.* Art thou sick?

*Anton.* To death.

*Sap.* Wouldst thou recover?

*Anton.* Would I live in bliss!

*Sap.* And do thine eyes shoot daggers at  
that man

That brings thee health?

*Anton.* It is not in the world.

*Sap.* It's here.

*Anton.* To treasure, by enchantment lock'd  
In caves as deep as hell, am I as near.

*Sap.* Break that enchanted cave: enter,  
and rifle

The spoils thy lust hunts after; I descend  
To a base office, and become thy pander,  
In bringing thee this proud thing: make ber  
thy whore,

Thy health lies here; if she deny to give it,  
Force it: imagine thou assault'st a town's  
Weak wall; to't, 'tis thine own, but beat this  
down.

Come, and, unseen, be witness to this bat-  
tery,

How the coy strumpet yields.

*i Doct.* Shall the boy stay, sir?

*Sap.* No matter for the boy:—pages are  
used

To these odd bawdy shufflings; and, indeed,  
are

Those little young snakes in a Fury's head,  
Will sting worse than the great ones.—

Let the pimp stay.

[*Exeunt Sap. Mac. and Doct.*]

*Dor.* O, guard me, angels!

What tragedy must begin now?

*Anton.* When a tiger

Leaps into a timorous herd, with ravenous  
jaws,

Being hunger-starv'd, what tragedy then  
begins?

*Dor.* Death; I am happy so; you, hitherto,  
Have still had goodness spher'd within your  
eyes,

Let not that orb be broken.

*Ang.* Fear not, mistress;

If he dare offer violence, we two

Are strong enough for such a sickly man.

*Dor.* What is your horrid purpose, sir?  
your eye

Bears danger in it.

*Anton.* I must—

*Dor.* What?

*Sap.* [within.] Speak it out.

*Anton.* Climb that sweet virgin tree.

*Sap.* [within.] Plague o' your trees!

*Anton.* And pluck that fruit which none,  
I think, e'er tasted.

*Sap.* [within.] A soldier, and stand fumb-  
ling so!

*Dor.* Oh, kill me, [kneels—

And heaven will take it as a sacrifice;

But, if you play the ravisher, there is

A hell to swallow you.

*Sap.* [within] Let her swallow thee!

*Anton.* Rise:—for the Roman empire,  
Dorothea,

I would not wound thine honour. Pleasures  
forced,

Are unripe apples; sour, not worth the  
plucking:

Yet, let me tell you, 'tis my father's will,

That I should seize upon you, as my prey;

Which I abhor, as much as the blackest sin  
The villainy of man did ever act.

[*Sapritius breaks in with Macrinus.*]

*Dor.* Die happy for this language!

*Sap.* Die a slave,

A blockish idiot!

*Mac.* Dear sir, vex him not.

*Sap.* Yes, and vex thee too; both, I think,  
are geldings:

Cold, phlegmatic bastard, thou'rt no brat of  
mine;

One spark of me, when I had heat like thine,  
By this had made a bonfire: a tempting

whore,

For whom thou'rt mad, thrust e'en into  
thine arms,

And stand'st thou puling! Had a tailor  
seen her

At this advantage, he, with his cross capers,  
Had ruffled her by this: but thou shalt curse

Thy dalliance, and here, before her eyes,

Tear thy own flesh in pieces, when a slave

In hot lust bathes himself, and gluts those  
pleasures

Thy niceness durst not touch. Call out a  
slave;

You, captain of our guard, fetch a slave hither.

*Anton.* What will you do, dear sir?

*Sap.* Teach her a trade, which many a  
one would learn

In less than half an hour,—to play the whore.

*Enter Soldiers with a Slave.*

*Mac.* A slave is come; what now?

*Sap.* Thou hast bones and flesh

Enough to ply thy labour: from what country  
Wert thou ta'en a prisoner, here to be our

slave?

*Slave.* From Britain.

*Sap.* In the west ocean?

*Slave.* Yes.

*Sap.* An island?

*Slave.* Yes.

*Sap.* I'm fitted: of all nations

Our Roman swords e'er conquer'd, none comes near

The Briton for true whoring. Sirrah fellow, What wouldst thou do to gain thy liberty?

*Slave.* Do! liberty! fight naked with a lion,

Venture to pluck a standard from the heart Of an arm'd legion. Liberty! I'd thus Bestride a rampire, and defiance spit I' the face of death, then, when the battering-ram

Was fetching his career backward, to pash Me with his horns in pieces. To shake my chains off,

And that I could not do't but by thy death, Stood'st thou on this dry shore, I on a rock Ten pyramids high, down would I leap to kill thee,

Or die myself: what is for man to do, I'll venture on, to be no more a slave.

*Sap.* Thou shalt, then, be no siavc, for I will set thee

Upon a piece of work is fit for man; Brave for a Briton:—drag that thing aside, And ravish her.

*Slave.* And ravish her! is this your manly service?

A devil scorns to do it; 'tis for a beast, A villain, not a man: I am, as yet, But half a slave; but, when that work is past, A damned whole one, a black ugly slave, The slave of all base slaves:—do't thyself, Roman,

'Tis drudgery fit for thee.

*Sap.* He's bewitched too:

Bind him, and with a bastinado give him, Upon his naked belly, two hundred blows.

*Slave.* Thou art more slave than I.

[*He is carried in.*]

*Dor.* That power supernal, on whom waits my soul,

Is captain o'er my chastity.

*Anton.* Good sir, give o'er:

The more you wrong her, yourself's vex'd the more.

*Sap.* Plagues light on her and thee!—thus down I throw

Thy harlot, thus by the hair nail her to earth. Call in ten slaves, let every one discover

What lust desires, and surfeit here his fill.

Call in ten slaves.

*Enter Slaves.*

*Mac.* They are come, sir, at your call.

*Sap.* Oh, oh! [*Falls down.*]

*Enter Theophilus.*

*Theoph.* Where is the governor?

*Anton.* There's my wretched father.

*Theoph.* My lord Sapritius—he's not dead!—my lord!

That watch there—

*Anton.* 'Tis no Roman gods can strike These fearful terrors. O, thou bappy maid, Forgive this wicked purpose of my father.

*Dor.* I do.

*Theoph.* Gone, gone; he's pepper'd. It is ihou

Hast done this act infernal.

*Dor.* Heaven pardon you!

And if my wrongs from thence pull vengeance down,

(I can no miracles work,) yet, from my soul, Pray to those Powers I serve, he may recover.

*Theoph.* He stirs—help, raise him up,—my lord!

*Sap.* Where am I?

*Theoph.* One cheek is blasted.

*Sap.* Blasted! where's the lamia

That tears my entrails? I'm bewitch'd; seize on her.

*Dor.* I'm here; do what you please.

*Theoph.* Spurn her to the bar.

*Dor.* Come, boy, being there, more near to heaven we are.

*Sap.* Kick harder; go out, witch!

[*Exit.*]

*Anton.* O bloody hangmen! Thine own gods give thee breath!

Each of thy tortures is my several death.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*A Public Square.*

*Enter Harpax, Hircius, and Spungius.*

*Harp.* Do you like my service now? say, am not I'

A master worth attendance?

*Spun.* Attendance! I had rather lick clean the soles of your dirty boots, than wear the richest suit of any infected lord, whose rotten life hangs between the two poles.

*Hir.* A lord's suit! I would not give up the cloak of your service, to meet the splay-foot estate of any left-eyed knight above the antipodes; because they are unlucky to meet.

*Harp.* This day I'll try your loves to me; 'tis only

But well to use the agility of your arms.

*Spun.* Or legs, I'm lusty at them.

*Hir.* Or anyother member that has no legs.

*Spun.* Thou'lt run into some hole.

*Hir.* If I meet one that's more than my match, and that I cannot stand in their hands, I must and will creep on my knees.

*Harp.* Hear me, my little team of villains, hear me;

I cannot teach you fencing with these cudgels,  
Yet you must use them; lay them on but  
soundly;

That's all.

*Hir.* Nay, if we come to mauling once,  
pah!

*Spun.* But what walnut-tree is it we must  
beat?

*Harp.* Your mistress.

*Hir.* How! my mistress? I begin to have  
a Christian heart made of sweet butter. I  
melt; I cannot strike a woman.

*Spun.* Nor I, unless she scratch; bum  
my mistress!

*Harp.* You're coxcombs, silly animals.

*Hir.* What's that?

*Harp.* Drones, asses, blinded moles, that  
dare not thrust

Your arms out to catch fortune; say, you  
fall off,

It must be done. You are converted rascals,  
And, that once spread abroad, why every  
slave

Will kick you, call you motley Christians,  
And half-faced Christians.

*Spun.* The guts of my conscience begin  
to be of whiteleather.

*Hir.* I doubt me, I shall have no sweet  
butter in me.

*Harp.* Deny this, and each pagan whom  
you meet,

Shall forked fingers thrust into your eyes——

*Hir.* If we be cuckolds.

*Harp.* Do this, and every god the Gentiles  
bow to,

Shall add a fathom to your line of years.

*Spun.* A hundred fathom, I desire no more.

*Hir.* I desire but one inch longer.

*Harp.* The senators will, as you pass along,  
Clap you upon your shoulders with this hand,  
And with this give you gold: when you are  
dead,

Happy that man shall be, can get a nail,  
The paring,—nay, the dirt under the nail,  
Of any of you both, to say, this dirt  
Belonged to Spungius or Hircius.

*Spun.* They shall not want dirt under my  
nails, I will keep them long of purpose, for  
now my fingers itch to be at her.

*Hir.* The first thing I do, I'll take her  
over the lips.

*Spun.* And I the hips,—we may strike  
anywhere?

*Harp.* Yes, anywhere.

*Hir.* Then I know where I'll hit her.

*Harp.* Prosper, and be mine own; stand  
by, I must not

To see this done, great business calls me  
hence:

He's made can make her curse his violence.  
[*Exit.*]

*Spun.* Fear it not, sir; her ribs shall be  
basted.

*Hir.* I'll come upon her with rounce,  
robble-hobble, and thwick-thwack-thirlyery  
bouncing.

*Enter Dorothea, led prisoner; Sapritius,  
Theophilus, Angelo, and a Hangman,  
who sets up a pillar; Sapritius and Theo-  
philus sit; Angelo stands by Dorothea.  
A guard attending.*

*Sap.* According to our Roman customs,  
bind

That Christian to a pillar.

*Theoph.* Infernal Furies,

Could they into my hand thrust all their  
whips

To tear thy flesh, thy soul, 'tis not a torture  
Fit to the vengeance I should heap on thee,  
For wrongs done me; me! for flagitious facts,  
By thee done to our gods; yet, so it stand,  
To great Cæsarea's governor's high pleasure,  
Bow but thy knee to Jupiter, and offer  
Any slight sacrifice; or do but swear  
By Cæsar's fortune, and——be free.

*Sap.* Thou shalt.

*Dor.* Not for all Cæsar's fortune, were it  
chain'd

To more worlds than are kingdoms in the  
world,

And all those worlds drawn after him. I defy  
Your hangmen; you now shew me whither  
to fly.

*Sap.* Are her tormentors ready?

*Ang.* Shrink not, dear mistress.

*Spun and Hir.* My lord, we are ready  
for the business.

*Dor.* You two! whom I like foster'd  
children fed,

And lengthen'd out your starved life with  
bread.

You be my hangmen! whom, when up the  
ladder

Death haled you to be strangled, I fetch'd  
down,

Clothed you, and warm'd you, you two my  
tormentors!

*Both.* Yes, we.

*Dor.* Divine Powers pardon you!

*Sap.* Strike.

[*They strike at her! Angelo kneeling  
holds her fast.*]

*Theoph.* Beat out her brains.

*Dor.* Receive me, you bright angels!

*Sap.* Faster, slaves.

*Spun.* Faster! I am out of breath, I am

sure ; if I were to beat a buck, I can strike no harder.

*Hir.* O mine arms ! I cannot lift them to my head.

*Dor.* Joy above joys ! are my tormentors weary

In torturing me, and, in my sufferings, I fainting in no limb ! tyrants, strike home, And feast your fury full.

*Theoph.* These dogs are curs,  
[*Comes from his seat.*

Which snarl, yet bite not. See, my lord, her face

Has more bewitching beauty than before : Proud whore, it smiles ! cannot an eye start out,

With these ?

*Hir.* No, sir ; nor the bridge of her nose fall ; 'tis full of iron work.

*Sap.* Let's view the cudgels, are they not counterfeit ?

*Ang.* There fix thine eye still ;—thy glorious crown must come

Not from soft pleasure, but by martyrdom. There fix thine eye still ;—when we next do meet,

Not thorns, but roses, shall bear up thy feet : There fix thine eye still. [*Exit.*

*Dor.* Ever, ever, ever !

*Enter Harpax, sneaking.*

*Theoph.* We're mock'd ; these bats have power to fell down giants, Yet her skin is not scarr'd.

*Sap.* What rogues are these ?

*Theoph.* Cannot these force a shriek ?  
[*Beats Spungius.*

*Spun.* Oh ! a woman has one of my ribs, and now five more are broken.

*Theoph.* Cannot this make her roar ?  
[*Beats Hircius ; he roars.*

*Sap.* Who hired these slaves ? what are they ?

*Spun.* We serve that noble gentleman, there ; he enticed us to this dry beating ; oh ! for one half pot.

*Harp.* My servants ! two base rogues, and sometime servants

To her, and for that cause forbear to hurt her.

*Sap.* Unbind her ; hang up these.

*Theoph.* Hang the two hounds on the next tree.

*Hir.* Hang us ! master Harpax, what a devil, shall we be thus used ?

*Harp.* What bandogs but you two would worry a woman ?

Your mistress ? I but clapt you, you flew on. Say I should get your lives, each rascal beggar

Would, when he met you, cry out, Hell-hounds ! traitors !

Spit at you, fling dirt at you ; and no woman Ever endure your sight : 'tis your best course Now, had you secret knives, to stab yourselves ;—

But, since you have not, go and be hang'd.

*Hir.* I thank you.

*Harp.* 'Tis your best course.

*Theoph.* Why stay they trifling here ? To the gallows drag them by the heels ;—away !

*Spun.* By the heels ! no, sir, we have legs to do us that service.

*Hir.* Ay, ay, if no woman can endure my sight, away with me.

*Harp.* Dispatch them.

*Spun.* The devil dispatch thee !

[*Exeunt Guard with Spungius and Hircius.*

*Sap.* Death this day rides in triumph, Theophilus.

See this witch made away too.

*Theoph.* My soul thirsts for it ;

Come, I myself the hangman's part could play.

*Dor.* O haste me to my coronation day !

SCENE III.—*The Place of Execution. A scaffold, block, &c.*

*Enter Antoninus, supported by Macrinus, and Servants.*

*Anton.* Is this the place, where virtue is to suffer, And heavenly beauty, leaving this base earth, To make a glad return from whence it came ? Is it, Macrinus ?

*Mac.* By this preparation, You well may rest assured that Dorothea This hour is to die here.

*Anton.* Then with her dies The abstract of all sweetness that's in woman ! Set me down, friend, that, ere the iron hand Of death close up mine eyes, they may at once Take my last leave both of this light and her : For, she being gone, the glorious sun himself To me's Cimmerian darkness.

*Mac.* Strange affection ! Cupid once more hath changed his shafts with Death, And kills instead of giving life.

*Anton.* Nay, weep not ; Though tears of friendship be a sovereign balm,

On me they're cast away. It is decreed That I must die with her ; our clue of life Was spun together.

*Mac.* Yet, sir, 'tis my wonder, That you, who, hearing only what she suffers, Partake of all her tortures, yet will be, To add to our calamity, an eyewitness

Of her last tragic scene, which must pierce deeper,  
And make the wound more desperate.

*Anton.* Oh, Macrinus!

'Twould linger out my torments else, not kill me,

Which is the end I aim at: being to die too,  
What instrument more glorious can I wish for,  
Than what is made sharp by my constant love  
And true affection? It may be, the duty  
And loyal service, with which I pursued her,  
And seal'd it with my death, will be re-  
member'd

Among her blessed actions; and what honour  
Can I desire beyond it?

*Enter a Guard bringing in Dorothea, a  
Headsmen before her: followed by Theo-  
philus, Sapritius, and Harpax.*

See, she comes;

How sweet her innocence appears! more like  
To heaven itself, than any sacrifice  
That can be offer'd to it. By my hopes  
Of joys hereafter, the sight makes me doubtful  
In my belief; nor can I think our gods  
Are good, or to be served, that take delight  
In offerings of this kind: that, to maintain  
Their power, deface the masterpiece of  
nature,

Which they themselves come short of. She  
ascends,

And every step raises her nearer heaven.  
What god so'er thou art, that must enjoy her,  
Receive in her a boundless happiness!

*Sap.* You are to blame

To let him come abroad.

*Mac.* It was his will;

And we were left to serve him, not command  
him.

*Anton.* Good sir, be not offended; nor  
deny

My last of pleasures in this happy object,  
That I shall e'er be blest with.

*Theoph.* Now, proud contemner  
Of us, and of our gods, tremble to think,  
It is not in the Power thou serv'st to save  
thee.

Not all the riches of the sea, increased  
By violent shipwrecks, nor the unsearch'd  
mines,

(Mammon's unknown exchequer,) shall re-  
deem thee:

And, therefore, having first with horror  
weigh'd

What 'tis to die, and to die young; to part  
with

All pleasures and delights; lastly, to go  
Where all antipathies to comfort dwell,  
Furies behind, about thee, and before thee;

And, to add to affliction, the remembrance  
Of the Elysian joys thou might'st have tasted,  
Hadst thou not turn'd apostata to those gods  
That so reward their servants; let despair  
Prevent the hangman's sword, and on this  
scaffold

Make thy first entrance into hell.

*Anton.* She smiles,

Unmoved, by Mars! as if she were assured  
Death, looking on her constancy, would  
forget

The use of his inevitable hand!

*Theoph.* Derided too! dispatch, I say.

*Dor.* Thou fool!

That gloriest in having power to ravish  
A trifle from me I am weary of,  
What is this life to me? not worth a thought;  
Or, if it be esteem'd, 'tis that I lose it  
To win a better: even thy malice serves  
To me but as a ladder to mount up  
To such a height of happiness, where I shall  
Look down with scorn on thee, and on the  
world;

Where, circled with true pleasures, placed  
above

The reach of death or time, 'twill be my glory  
To think at what an easy price I bought it.  
There's a perpetual spring, perpetual youth:  
No joint-benumbing cold, or scorching heat,  
Famine, nor age, have any being there.

Forget, for shame, your Tempe; bury in  
Oblivion your feign'd Hesperian orchards:—  
The golden fruit, kept by the watchful  
dragon,

Which did require a Hercules to get it,  
Compared with what grows in all plenty  
there,

Deserves not to be named. The Power I  
serve,

Laughs at your happy Araby, or the  
Elysian shades; for he hath made his bowers  
Better in deed, than you can fancy yours.

*Anton.* O, take me thither with you!

*Dor.* Trace my steps,

And be assured you shall.

*Sap.* With my own hands

I'll rather stop that little breath is left thee,  
And rob thy killing fever.

*Theoph.* By no means;

Let him go with her: do, seduced young  
man,

And wait upon thy saint in death; do, do:  
And, when you come to that imagined place

That place of all delights—pray you, ob-  
serve me,

And meet those cursed things I once called  
Daughters,

Whom I have sent as harbingers before you;  
If there be any truth in your religion,

In thankfulness to me, that with care hasten  
Your journey thither, pray you send me some  
Small pittance of that curious fruit you boast  
of.

*Anton.* Grant that I may go with her, and  
I will.

*Sap.* Wilt thou in thy last minute damn  
thyself?

*Theoph.* The gates to hell are open.

*Dor.* Know, thou tyrant,  
Thou agent for the devil, thy great master,  
Though thou art most unworthy to taste  
of it,  
I can, and will.

*Enter Angelo, in the Angel's habit.*

*Harp.* Oh! mountains fall upon me,  
Or hide me in the bottom of the deep,  
Where light may never find me!

*Theoph.* What's the matter?

*Sap.* This is prodigious, and confirms her  
witchcraft.

*Theoph.* Harpax, my Harpax, speak!

*Harp.* I dare not stay:  
Should I but hear her once more, I were lost.  
Some whirlwind snatch me from this cursed  
place,  
To which compared, (and with what now I  
suffer,)

Hell's torments are sweet slumbers! [*Exit.*]

*Sap.* Follow him.

*Theoph.* He is distracted, and I must not  
lose him.

Thy charms upon my servant, cursed witch,  
Give thee a short reprieve. Let her not die,  
Till my return. [*Exeunt Sap. and Theoph.*]

*Anton.* She minds him not: what object  
Is her eye fix'd on?

*Mac.* I see nothing.

*Anton.* Mark her.

*Dor.* Thou glorious minister of the Power  
I serve!

(For thou art more than mortal,) is't for me,  
Poor sinner, thou art pleased awhile to leave  
Thy heavenly habitation, and vouchsafest,  
Though glorified, to take my servant's  
habit?—

For, put off thy divinity, so look'd  
My lovely Angelo.

*Ang.* Know, I am the same;

And still the servant to your piety.  
Your zealous prayers, and pious deeds first  
won me

(But 'twas by His command to whom you  
sent them)

To guide your steps. I tried your charity,  
When in a beggar's shape you took me up,  
And clothed my naked limbs, and after fed,

As you believed, my famish'd mouth. Learn  
all,

By your example, to look on the poor  
With gentle eyes! for in such habits, often,  
Angels desire an alms. I never left you,  
Nor will I now; for I am sent to carry  
Your pure and innocent soul to joys eternal,  
Your martyrdom once suffer'd; and before it,  
Ask any thing from me, and rest assured,  
You shall obtain it.

*Dor.* I am largely paid  
For all my torments. Since I find such grace,  
Grant that the love of this young man to me,  
In which he languisheth to death, may be  
Changed to the love of heaven.

*Ang.* I will perform it;  
And in that instant when the sword sets free  
Your happy soul, his shall have liberty.  
Is there aught else?

*Dor.* For proof that I forgive  
My persecutor, who in scorn desired  
To taste of that most sacred fruit I go to;  
After my death, as sent from me, be pleased  
To give him of it.

*Ang.* Willingly, dear mistress.

*Mac.* I am amazed.

*Anton.* I feel a holy fire,  
That yields a comfortable heat within me;  
I am quite alter'd from the thing I was.  
See! I can stand, and go alone; thus kneel  
To heavenly Dorothea, touch her hand  
With a religious kiss. [*Kneels.*]

*Re-enter Saprilius and Theophilus.*

*Sap.* He is well now,  
But will not be drawn back.

*Theoph.* It matters not,  
We can discharge this work without his help.  
But see your son.

*Sap.* Villain!

*Anton.* Sir, I beseech you,  
Being so near our ends, divorce us not.

*Theoph.* I'll quickly make a separation of  
them:

Hast thou aught else to say?

*Dor.* Nothing, but to blame  
Thy tardiness in sending me to rest;  
My peace is made with heaven, to which  
my soul

Begins to take her flight: strike, O! strike  
quickly;

And, though you are unmoved to see my  
death,

Hereafter, when my story shall be read,  
As they were present now, the hearers shall  
Say this of Dorothea, with wet eyes,  
"She lived a virgin, and a virgin dies"

[*Her head is struck off.*]



*Anton.* O, take my soul along, to wait on thine !

*Mac.* Your son sinks too.

[*Antoninus falls.*]

*Sap.* Alrcady dead !

*Theoph.* Die all

That are, or favour this accursed sect :  
I triumph in their ends, and will raise up  
A hill of their dead carcasses, to o'erlook  
The Pyrenean hills, but I'll root out  
These superstitious fools, and leave the world  
No name of Christian.

[*Loud music: Exit Angelo, having first laid his hand upon the mouths of Anton. and Dor.*]

*Sap.* Ha ! heavenly music !

*Mac.* 'Tis in the air.

*Theoph.* Illusions of the devil,  
Wrought by some witch of her religion,  
That fain would make her death a miracle ;  
It frights not me. Because he is your son,  
Let him have burial ; but let her body  
Be cast forth with contempt in some high-  
way,  
And be to vultures and to dogs a prey.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*Theophilus discovered sitting in his Study: books about him.*

*Theoph.* Is 't holiday, O Cæsar, that thy servant,

Thy provost, to see execution done  
On these base Christians in Cæsarea,  
Should now want work ? Sleep these idolaters,

That none are stirring?—As a curious painter,  
When he has made some honourable piece,  
Stands off, and with a searching eye examines

Each colour, how 'tis sweeten'd ; and then hugs

Himself for his rare workmanship—so here,  
Will I my drolleries, and bloody landscapes,  
Long past wrapt up, unfold, to make me merry

With shadows, now I want the substances.  
My muster-book of hell-hounds. Were the Christians,

Whose names stand here, alive and arm'd,  
not Rome

Could move upon her hinges. What I've done,

Or shall hereafter, is not out of hate  
To poor tormented wretches ; no, I'm carried  
With violence of zeal, and streams of service  
I owe our Roman gods. *Great Britain,*—  
what ?

[*reads.*]

*A thousand wives, with brats sucking their breasts,*

*Had hot irons pinch them off, and thrown to swine ;*

*And then their fleshy back-parts, hew'd with hatchets,*

*Were minced and baked in pies, to feed starv'd Christians.*

Ha ! ha !

Again, again,—*East Angles,*—oh, *East Angles :*

*Bandogs, kept three days hungry, worried A thousand British rascals, stied up fat*

*Of purpose, stripped naked, and disarm'd.*

I could outstare a year of suns and moons,  
To sit at these sweet bull-baitings, so I

Could thereby but one Christian win to fall  
In adoration to my Jupiter.—*Twelve hundred*

*Eyes bored with augers out—Oh ! eleven thousand*

*Torn by wild beasts : two hundred ramm'd in the earth*

*To the armpits, and full platters round about them,*

*But far enough for reaching: Eat, dogs, ha ! ha ! ha !* [*He rises.*]

Tush, all these tortures are but fillipings,  
Fleabittings ; I, before the Destinies

*Enter Angelo with a basket filled with fruit and flowers.*

My bottom did wind up, would flesh myself  
Once more upon some one remarkable  
Above all these. This Christian shut was well,

A pretty one ; but let such horror follow  
The next I feed with torments, that when Rome

Shall hear it, her foundation at the sound  
May feel an earthquake. How now ?

[*Music.*]

*Ang.* Are you amazed, sir ?

So great a Roman spirit—and doth it tremble !

*Theoph.* How cam'st thou in ? to whom thy business ?

*Ang.* To you :

I had a mistress, late sent hence by you  
Upon a bloody errand ; you entreated,  
That, when she came into that blessed garden  
Whither she knew she went, and where,  
now happy,

She feeds upon all joy, she would send to you  
Some of that garden fruit and flowers ;  
which here

To have her promise saved, are brought by me.

*Theoph.* Cannot I see this garden ?

*Ang.* Yes, if the master  
Will give you entrance. [*He vanishes.*]

*Theoph.* 'Tis a tempting fruit,  
And the most bright-cheek'd child I ever  
view'd ;  
Sweet smelling, goodly fruit. What flowers  
are these ?

In Dioclesian's gardens, the most beauteous,  
Compared with these, are weeds : is it not  
February,

The second day she died ? frost, ice, and  
snow,

Hang on the beard of winter : where's the sun  
That gilds this summer ? pretty, sweet boy,  
say,

In what country shall a man find this gar-  
den ?—

My delicate boy,—gone ! vanish'd ! within  
there,

Julianus ! Geta !—

*Enter Julianus and Geta.*

*Both.* My lord.

*Theoph.* Are my gates shut ?

*Geta.* And guarded.

*Theoph.* Saw you not  
A boy ?

*Jul.* Where ?

*Theoph.* Here he enter'd ; a young lad ;  
A thousand blessings danced upon his eyes :  
A smoothfaced glorious thing, that brought  
this basket.

*Geta.* No, sir !

*Theoph.* Away—but be in reach, if my voice  
calls you. [*Exeunt Jul. and Geta.*]

No !—vanish'd, and not seen !—be thou a  
spirit, sent from that witch to mock me,  
I am sure

This is essential, and, howe'er it grows,  
Will taste it. [*Eats of the fruit.*]

*Harp.* [*within.*] Ha, ha, ha, ha !

*Theoph.* So good ! I'll have some more,  
sure.

*Harp.* Ha, ha, ha, ha ! great liquorish fool !

*Theoph.* What art thou ?

*Harp.* A fisherman.

*Theoph.* What dost thou catch ?

*Harp.* Souls, souls ; a fish call'd souls.

*Theoph.* Geta !

*Re-enter Geta.*

*Geta.* My lord.

*Harp.* [*within.*] Ha, ha, ha, ha !

*Theoph.* What insolent slave is this, dares  
laugh at me ?

Or what is 't the dog grins at so ?

*Geta.* I neither know, my lord, at what,  
nor whom ; for there is none without, but

my fellow Julianus, and he is making a gar-  
land for Jupiter.

*Theoph.* Jupiter ! all within me is not well ;  
And yet not sick.

*Harp.* [*within.*] Ha, ha, ha, ha !

*Theoph.* What's thy name, slave ?

*Harp.* [*at one end of the room.*] Go look.

*Geta.* 'Tis Harpax's voice.

*Theoph.* Harpax ! go, drag the caitiff to  
my foot,

That I may stamp upon him.

*Harp.* [*at the other end.*] Fool, thou liest !

*Geta.* He's yonder, now, my lord.

*Theoph.* Watch thou that end,

Whilst I make good this.

*Harp.* [*in the middle.*] Ha, ha, ha, ha !

*Theoph.* He is at barley-break, and the  
last couple

Are now in hell.

Search for him. [*Exit Geta.*] All this ground,  
methinks, is bloody,

And paved with thousands of those Chris-  
tians' eyes

Whom I have tortured ; and they stare upon  
me.

What was this apparition ? sure it had

A shape angelical. Mine eyes, though  
dazzled,

And daunted at first sight, tell me, it wore  
A pair of glorious wings ; yes, they were wings ;

And hence he flew :—'tis vanish'd ! Jupiter,  
For all my sacrifices done to him,

Never once gave me smile.—How can stone  
smile ?

Or wooden image laugh ? [*music.*] Ha ! I  
remember,

Such music gave a welcome to mine ear,  
When the fair youth came to me :—'tis in

the air,

Or from some better place ; a Power divine,  
Through my dark ignorance, on my soul

does shine,  
And makes me see a conscience all stain'd o'er,

Nay, drown'd and damn'd for ever in Chris-  
tian gore.

*Harp.* [*within.*] Ha, ha, ha !

*Theoph.* Again !—What dainty relish on  
my tongue

This fruit hath left ! some angel hath me fed ;  
If so toothfull, I will be banqueted.

[*Eats again.*]

*Enter Harpax in a fearful shape, fire flash-  
ing out of the Study.*

*Harp.* Hold !

*Theoph.* Not for Cæsar.

*Harp.* But for me thou shalt.

*Theoph.* Thou art no twin to him that last  
was here.

Ye Powers, whom my soul bids me reverence,  
guard me!

What art thou?

*Harp.* I am thy master,

*Theoph.* Mine!

*Harp.* And thou my everlasting slave:  
that Harpax,

Who hand in hand hath led thee to thy hell,  
Am I.

*Theoph.* Avaunt!

*Harp.* I will not; cast thou down

That basket with the things in 't, and fetch up  
What thou hast swallow'd and then take a  
drink,

Which I shall give thee, and I'm gone.

*Theoph.* My fruit!

Does this offend thee! see! [*Eats again.*]

*Harp.* Spit it to the earth,

And tread upon it, or I'll piecemeal tear thee.

*Theoph.* Art thou with this affrighted?  
see, here's more.

[*Pulls out a handful of flowers.*]

*Harp.* Fling them away. I'll take thee  
else, and hang thee

In a contorted chain of icicles,  
In the frigid zone: down with them!

*Theoph.* At the bottom

One thing I found not yet. See!

[*Holds up a cross of flowers.*]

*Harp.* Oh! I am tortured.

*Theoph.* Can this do 't? hence, thou fiend  
infernial, hence!

*Harp.* Clasp Jupiter's image, and away  
with that.

*Theoph.* At thee I'll fling that Jupiter; for  
methinks,

I serve a better master: he now checks me  
For murdering my two daughters, put on by  
thee,—

By thy damned rhetoric did I hunt the life  
Of Dorothea, the holy virgin-martyr.

She is not angry with the axe, nor me,  
But sends these presents to me; and I'll  
travel

O'er worlds to find, and from her white  
hand

Beg a forgiveness.

*Harp.* No; I'll bind thee here.

*Theoph.* I serve a strength above thine;  
this small weapon,

Methinks, is armour hard enough.

*Harp.* Keep from me.

[*Sinks a little.*]

*Theoph.* Art posting to thy centre? down,  
hell-hound! down!

Me thou hast lost. That arm, which hurls  
thee hence, [*Harpax disappears.*]

Save me, and set me up, the strong defence,  
In the fair Christian's quarrel!

*Enter Angelo.*

*Ang.* Fix thy foot there,  
Nor be thou shaken with a Cæsar's voice,  
Though thousand deaths were in it; and I  
then

Will bring thee to a river, that shall wash  
Thy bloody hands clean and more white than  
snow;

And to that garden where these blest things  
grow,

And to that martyr'd virgin, who hath sent  
That heavenly token to thee: spread this  
brave wing,

And serve, than Cæsar, a far greater king.  
[*Exit.*]

*Theoph.* It is, it is, some angel. Vanish'd  
again!

Oh, come back, ravishing boy! bright mes-  
senger,

Thou hast, by these mine eyes fix'd on thy  
beauty,

Illumined all my soul. Now look I back  
On my black tyrannies, which, as they did  
Outdare the bloodiest, thou, blest spirit, that  
lead'st me,

Teach me what I must to do, and, to do well,  
That my last act the best may parallel. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—Dioclesian's Palace.

*Enter Dioclesian, Maximinus, the Kings of  
Epire, Pontus, and Macedon, meeting  
Artemia; Attendants.*

*Artem.* Glory and conquest still attend  
upon  
Triumphant Cæsar!

*Diocle.* Let thy wish, fair daughter,  
Be equally divided; and hereafter  
Learn thou to know and reverence Maxi-  
minus,  
Whose power, with mine united, makes one  
Cæsar.

*Max.* But that I fear, 'twould be held  
flattery,

The bonds consider'd in which we stand tied,  
As love and empire, I should say, till now  
I ne'er had seen a lady I thought worthy  
To be my mistress.

*Artem.* Sir, you shew yourself  
Both courtier and soldier; but take heed,  
Take heed, my lord, though my dull-pointed  
beauty,

Stain'd by a harsh refusal in my servant,  
Cannot dart forth such beams as may inflame  
you,

You may encounter such a powerful one,  
That with a pleasing heat will thaw your heart,  
Though bound in ribs of ice. Love still is  
Love.

His bow and arrows are the same : Great  
Julius,

That to his successors left the name of Cæsar,  
Whom war could never tame, that with dry  
eyes

Beheld the large plains of Pharsalia cover'd  
With the dead carcasses of senators,  
And citizens of Rome, when the world knew  
No other lord but him, struck deep in years  
too,

(And men gray-hair'd forget the lusts of  
youth,)

After all this, meeting fair Cleopatra,  
A suppliant too, the magic of her eye,  
Even in his pride of conquest, took him  
captive :

Nor are you more secure.

*Max.* Were you deform'd,  
(But, by the gods, you are most excellent,)  
Your gravity and discretion would o'ercome  
me ;

And I should be more proud in being prisoner  
To your fair virtues, than of all the honours,  
Wealth, title, empire, that my sword hath  
purchased.

*Diocle.* This meets my wishes. Welcome  
it, Artemia,

With outstretch'd arms, and study to forget  
That Antoninus ever was : thy fate  
Reserved thee for this better choice ; em-  
brace it.

*Max.* This happy match brings new  
nerves to give strength

To our continued league.

*Diocle.* Hymen himself  
Will bless this marriage, which we'll solemnize  
In the presence of these kings.

*K. of Pontus.* Who rest most happy,  
To be eyewitnesses of a match that brings  
Peace to the empire.

*Diocle.* We much thank your loves :

But where's Sapritius, our governor,  
And our most zealous provost, good Theo-  
philus !

If ever prince were blest in a true servant,  
Or could the gods be debtors to a man,  
Both they and we stand far engaged to cherish  
His pious and service.

*Artem.* Sir, the governor  
Brook sadly hisson's loss, although he turn'd  
Apostata in death ; but bold Theophilus,  
Who for the same cause, in my presence,  
seal'd

His holy anger on his daughters' hearts ;  
Having with tortures first tried to convert her,  
Dragg'd the bewitching Christian to the  
scaffold,

And saw her lose her head.

*Diocle.* He is all worthy :

And from his own mouth I would gladly hear  
The manner how she suffer'd.

*Artem.* 'Twill be deliver'd  
With such contempt and scorn, (I know his  
nature,)

That rather 'twill beget your highness'  
laughter,  
Than the least pity.

*Diocle.* To that end I would hear it.

*Enter Theophilus, Sapritius, and Macrinus.*

*Artem.* He comes : with him the governor.  
*Diocle.* O, Sapritius,

I am to chide you for your tenderness ;  
But yet, remembering that you are a father,  
I will forget it. Good Theophilus,  
I'll speak with you anon.—Nearer, your ear.

[To Sapritius.

*Theoph.* [*Aside to Macrinus.*] By An-  
toninus' soul, I do conjure you,  
And though not for religion, for his friendship,  
Without demanding what's the cause that  
moves me,

Receive my signet :—By the power of this,  
Go to my prisons, and release all Christians,  
That are in fetters there by my command.

*Mac.* But what shall follow ?

*Theoph.* Haste then to the port ;  
You there shall find two tallships ready rigg'd,  
In which embark the poor distressed souls,  
And bear them from the reach of tyranny.  
Enquire not whither you are bound : the  
Deity

That they adore will give you prosperous  
winds,

And make your voyage such, and largely  
pay for

Your hazard, and your travail. Leave me  
here ;

There is a scene that I must act alone :  
Haste, good Macrinus ; and the great God  
guide you !

*Mac.* I'll undertake it ; there's something  
prompts me to it ;

'Tis to save innocent blood, a saint-like act :  
And to be merciful has never been  
By moral men themselves esteem'd a sin.

[Exit.

*Diocle.* You know your charge ?

*Sap.* And will with care observe it.

*Diocle.* For I profess he is not Cæsar's  
friend,

That sheds a tear for any torture that  
A Christian suffers. Welcome, my best  
servant,

My careful, zealous provost ! thou hast toil'd  
To satisfy my will, though in extremes :  
I love thee for 't ; thou art firm rock, no  
changeling.

Prithee deliver, and for my sake do it,  
Without excess of bitterness, or scoffs,  
Before my brother and these kings, how took  
The Christian her death?

*Theoph.* And such a presence,  
Though every private head in this large  
room

Were circled round with an imperial crown,  
Her story will deserve, it is so full  
Of excellence and wonder.

*Diocle.* Ha! how is this?

*Theoph.* O! mark it, therefore, and with  
that attention,

As you would hear an embassy from heaven  
By a wing'd legate; for the truth deliver'd,  
Both how, and what, this blessed virgin  
suffer'd,

And Dorothea but hereafter named,  
You will rise up with reverence, and no more,  
As things unworthy of your thoughts, re-  
member

What the canonized Spartan ladies were,  
Which lying Greece so boasts of. Your  
own matrons,

Your Roman dames, whose figures you yet  
keep

As holy relics, in her history  
Will find a second urn: Gracchus' Cornelia,  
Paulina, that in death desired to follow  
Her husband Seneca, nor Brutus' Portia,  
That swallow'd burning coals to overtake  
him,

Though all their several worths were given  
to one,

With this is to be mention'd.

*Max.* Is he mad?

*Diocle.* Why, they did die, Theophilus,  
and boldly;

This did no more.

*Theoph.* They, out of desperation,  
Or for vain glory of an after-name,  
Parted with life: this had not mutinous sons,  
As the rash Gracchi were; nor was this saint  
A doating mother, as Cornelia was.

This lost no husband, in whose overthrow  
Her wealth and honour sunk; no fear of  
want

Did make her being tedious; but, aiming  
At an immortal crown, and in His cause  
Who only can bestow it; who sent down  
Legions of ministering angels to bear up  
Her spotless soul to heaven, who entertain'd it  
With choice celestial music, equal to  
The motion of the spheres; she, uncompell'd,  
Changed this life for a better. My lord  
Sapritius,

You were present at her death; did you e'er  
hear

Such ravishing sounds?

*Sap.* Yet you said then 'twas witchcraft,  
And devilish illusions.

*Theoph.* I then heard it  
With sinful ears, and belch'd out blasphemous  
words

Against his Deity, which then I knew not,  
Nor did believe in him.

*Diocle.* Why, dost thou now?  
Or dar'st thou, in our hearing—

*Theoph.* Were my voice  
As loud as is His thunder, to be heard  
Through all the world, all potentates on  
earth

Ready to burst with rage, should they but  
hear it;

Though hell, to aid their malice, lent her  
furies,

Yet I would speak, and speak again, and  
boldly,

I am a Christian, and the Powers you wor-  
ship,

But dreams of fools and madmen.

*Max.* Lay hands on him.

*Diocle.* Thou twice a child! for doating  
age so makes thee,

Thou couldst not else, thy pilgrimage of life  
Being almost past through, in this last mo-  
ment

Destroy whate'er thou hast done good or  
great.

Thy youth did promise much; and, grown a  
man,

Thou mad'st it good, and, with increase of  
years,

Thy actions still better'd: as the sun,  
Thou did'st rise gloriously, kept'st a constant  
course

In all thy journey; and now, in the evening,  
When thou should'st pass with honour to thy  
rest,

Wilt thou fall like a meteor?

*Sap.* Yet confess

That thou art mad, and that thy tongue and  
heart

Had no agreement.

*Max.* Do; no way is left, else,  
To save thy life, Theophilus.

*Diocle.* But, refuse it,  
Destruction as horrid, and as sudden,  
Shall fall upon thee, as if hell stood open,  
And thou wert sinking thither.

*Theoph.* Hear me, yet;

Hear, for my service past.

*Artem.* What will he say?

*Theoph.* As ever I deserved your favour,  
hear me,

And grant one boon; 'tis not for life I sue  
for;

Nor is it fit that I, that ne'er knew pity

To any Christian, being one myself,  
Should look for any : no, I rather beg  
The utmost of your cruelty. I stand  
Accomptable for thousand Christians' deaths ;  
And, were it possible that I could die  
A day for every one, then live again  
To be again tormented, 'twere to me  
An easy penance, and I should pass through  
A gentle cleansing fire ; but, that denied me,  
It being beyond the strength of feeble nature,  
My suit is, you would have no pity on me.  
In mine own house there are a thousand  
engines

Of studied cruelty, which I did prepare  
For miserable Christians ; let me feel,  
As the Sicilian did his brazen bull,  
The horrid'st you can find ; and I will say,  
In death, that you are merciful.

*Diocle.* Despair not ;  
In this thou shalt prevail. Go fetch them  
hither : [*Exit some of the Guard.*]  
Death shall pnt on a thousand shapes at once,  
And so appear before thee ; racks, and  
whips !—

Thy flesh, with burning pincers torn, shall  
feed

The fire that heats them ; and what's want-  
ing to

The torture of thy body, I'll supply  
In punishing thy mind. Fetch all the  
Christians

That are in hold ; and here, before his face,  
Cut them in pieces.

*Theoph.* 'Tis not in thy power :  
It was the first good deed I ever did.  
They are removed out of thy reach ; howe'er,  
I was determined for my sins to die,  
I first took order for their liberty ;  
And still I darc thy worst.

*Re-enter Guard with racks and other instru-  
ments of torture.*

*Diocle.* Bind him, I say ;  
Make every artery and sinew crack :  
The slave that makes him give the loudest  
shriek,

Shall have ten thousand drachmas : wretch !  
I'll force thee

To curse the Power thou worship'st.  
*Theoph.* Never, never :

No breath of mine shall e'er be spent on Him,  
[*They torment him.*]

But what shall speak His majesty or mercy.  
I'm honour'd in my sufferings. Weak tor-  
mentors,

More tortures, more :—alas ! you are un-  
skillful—

For heavcn's sake more ; my breast is yet  
untorn :

Here purchase the reward that was pro-  
pounded.

The irons cool,—here are arms yet, and  
thighs ;

Spare no part of me.

*Max.* He endures beyond  
The sufferance of a man.

*Sap.* No sigh nor groan,  
To witness he hath feeling.

*Diocle.* Harder, villains !

*Enter Harpax.*

*Harp.* Unless that he blasphemc, he's lost  
for ever.

If torments ever could bring forth despair,  
Let these compel him to it :—Oh me !  
My ancient enemies again ! [*Falls down.*]

*Enter Dorothea in a white robe, a crown  
upon her head, led in by Angelo ; Anto-  
ninus, Calista, and Christeta following,  
all in white, but less glorious ; Angelo  
holds out a crown to Theophilus.*

*Theoph.* Most glorious vision !—  
Did e'er so hard a bed yield man a dream  
So heavenly as this ? I am confirm'd,  
Confirm'd, you blessed spirits, and make  
haste

To take that crown of immortality  
You offer to me. Death ! till this blest  
minute,

I never thought thee slow-paced ; nor would I  
Hasten thee now, for any pain I suffer,  
But that thou keep'st me from a glorious  
wreath,

Which through this stormy way I would  
creep to,

And, humbly kneeling, with humility wear it.  
Oh ! now I feel thee :—blessed spirits ! I  
come ;

And, witness for me all these wounds and  
scars,

I die a soldier in the Christian wars. [*Dies.*]  
*Sap.* I have seen thousands tortured, but  
ne'er yet.

A constancy like this.

*Harp.* I am twice damn'd.

*Ang.* Haste to thy place appointed, cursed  
fiend !

[*Harpax sinks with thunder and lightning.*]  
In spite of hell, this soldier's not thy prey ;  
'Tis I have won, thou that hast lost the day.

[*Exit with Dor. &c.*]

*Diocle.* I think the centre of the earth be  
crack'd—

Yet I stand still unmoved, and will go on ;  
The persecution that is here begun,

Through all the world with violence shall  
run. [*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

# The Unnatural Combat.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Beaufort *senior*, governor of Marseilles.  
Beaufort *junior*, his son.  
Malefort *senior*, admiral of Marseilles.  
Malefort *junior*, his son.  
Chamont, }  
Montaigne, } *assistants to the governor.*  
Lanour, }  
Montreville, a pretended friend to Malefort  
*senior.*  
Belgarde, a poor captain.

*Three Sea Captains, of the navy of Malefort junior.*  
A Steward.  
An Usher.  
A Page.  
Theocrine, daughter to Malefort *senior.*  
*Two Waiting-women.*  
*Two Courtizans.*  
A Bawd.  
*Servants and Soldiers.*

SCENE,—Marseilles.

### ACT I.

SCENE I.—*A Hall in the Court of Justice.*

*Enter* Montreville, Theocrine, Usher, Page, and Waiting-women.

*Montr.* Now to be modest, madam, when you are

A suitor for your father, would appear  
Coarser than boldness; you awhile must  
part with

Soft silence, and the blushings of a virgin:  
Though I must grant, did not this cause  
command it,

They are rich jewels you have ever worn  
To all men's admiration. In this age,  
If, by our own forced importunity,  
Or others purchased intercession, or  
Corrupting bribes, we can make our ap-  
proaches

To justice, guarded from us by stern power,  
We bless the means and industry.

*Ush.* Here's music

In this bag shall wake her, though she had  
drunk opium,

Or eaten mandrakes. Let commanders talk  
Of cannons to make breaches, give but fire  
To this petard, it shall blow open, madam,  
The iron doors of a judge, and make you  
entrance;

When they (let them do what they can) with  
all

Their mines, their culverins, and basiliscos,  
Shall cool their feet without; this being the  
picklock

That never fails.

*Montr.* 'Tis true, gold can do much,  
But beauty more. Were I the governor,

Though the admiral, your father, stood con-  
victed

Of what he's only doubted, half a dozen  
Of sweet close kisses from these cherry lips,  
With some short active conference in private,  
Should sign his general pardon.

*Theoc.* These light words, sir,  
Do ill become the weight of my sad fortune;  
And I much wonder, you, that do profess  
Yourself to be my father's bosom friend,  
Can raise mirth from his misery.

*Montr.* You mistake me;  
I share in his calamity, and only  
Deliver my thoughts freely, what I should do  
For such a rare petitioner: and if  
You'll follow the directions I prescribe,  
With my best judgment I'll mark out the  
way

For his enlargement.

*Theoc.* With all real joy  
I shall put what you counsel into act,  
Provided it be honest.

*Montr.* Honesty  
In a fair she client (trust to my experience)  
Seldom or never prospers; the world's wicked.  
We are men, not saints, sweet lady; you  
must practise

The manners of the time, if you intend  
To have favour from it: do not deceive  
yourself,

By building too much on the false foundations  
Of chastity and virtue. Bid your waiters  
Stand further off, and I'll come nearer to  
you.

1 *Wom.* Some wicked counsel, on my life.

2 *Wom.* Ne'er doubt it,  
If it proceed from him.

*Page.* I wonder that  
My lord so much affects him.

*Ush.* Thou'rt a child,  
And dost not understand on what strong basis  
This friendship's raised between this Montre-  
ville

And our lord, Monsieur Malefort ; but I'll  
teach thee :

From thy years they have been joint pur-  
chasers

In fire and water works, and truck'd together.

*Page.* In fire and water works !

*Ush.* Commodities, boy,  
Which you may know hereafter.

*Page.* And deal in them,  
When the trade has given you over, as ap-  
pears by

The increase of your high forehead.

*Ush.* Here's a crack !

I think they suck this knowledge in their  
milk.

*Page.* I had an ignorant nurse else. I  
have tied, sir,

My lady's garter, and can guess——

*Ush.* Peace, infant ;

Tales out of school ! take heed, you will be  
breach'd else.

1 *Wom.* My lady's colour changes.

2 *Wom.* She falls off too.

*Theoc.* You are a naughty man, indeed you  
are ;

And I will sooner perish with my father,  
Than at this price redeem him.

*Montr.* Take your own way,  
Your modest, legal way : 'tis not your veil,  
Nor mourning habit, nor these creatures taught

To howl, and cry, when you begin to  
whimper ;

Nor following my lord's coach in the dirt,  
Nor that which you rely upon, a bribe,  
Will do it, when there's something he likes  
better.

These courses in an old crone of threescore,  
That had seven years together tired the court  
With tedious petitions, and clamours,  
For the recovery of a straggling husband,  
To pay, forsooth, the duties of one to her ;—  
But for a lady of your tempting beauties,  
Your youth, and ravishing features, to hope  
only

In such a suit as this is, to gain favour,  
Without exchange of courtesy—you con-  
ceive me—

*Enter Beaufort junior, and Belgarde.*

Were madness at the height. Here's brave  
young Beaufort,

The meteor of Marseillés, one that holds

The governor his father's will and power  
In more awe than his own ! Come, come,  
advance,

Present your bag, cramm'd with crowns of  
the sun ;

Do you think he cares for money ? he loves  
pleasure.

Burn your petition, burn it ; he doats on  
you,

Upon my knowledge : to his cabinet, do,  
And he will point you out a certain course,

Be the cause right or wrong, to have your  
father

Released with much facility. [*Exit.*

*Theoc.* Do you hear ?

Take a pander with you.

*Beauf. jun.* I tell thee there is neither  
Employment yet, nor money.

*Belg.* I have commanded,  
And spent my own means in my country's  
service,

In hope to raise a fortune.

*Beauf. jun.* Many have hoped so ;  
But hopes prove seldom certainties with  
soldiers.

*Belg.* If no preferment, let me but re-  
ceive

My pay that is behind, to set me up  
A tavern, or a vaulting-house ; while men  
love

Or drunkenness, or lechery, they'll ne'er fail  
me :

Shall I have that ?

*Beauf. jun.* As our prizes are brought in ;  
Till then you must be patient.

*Belg.* In the mean time,  
How shall I do for clothes ?

*Beauf. jun.* As most captains do :  
Philosopher-like, carry all you have about  
you.

*Belg.* But how shall I do, to satisfy colon,  
monsieur ?

There lies the doubt.

*Beauf. jun.* That's easily decided ;  
My father's table's free for any man  
That hath borne arms.

*Belg.* And there's good store of meat ?

*Beauf. jun.* Never fear that.

*Belg.* I'll seek no other ordinary then,  
But be his daily guest without invitement ;  
And if my stomach hold, I'll feed so heartily,  
As he shall pay me suddenly, to be quit of  
me.

*Beauf. jun.* 'Tis she.

*Belg.* And further——

*Beauf. jun.* Away, you are troublesome ;  
Designs of more weight——

*Belg.* Ha ! fair Theocrine.

Nay, if a velvet petticoat move in the front,



Buff jerkins must to the rear ; I know my manners :

This is, indeed, great business, mine a gew-gaw.

I may dance attendance, this must be dispatch'd,

And suddenly, or all will go to wreck ;

Charge her home in the flank, my lord : nay, I am gone, sir. [*Exit.*]

*Beauf. jun.* [*raising Theoc. from her knees.*] Nay, pray you, madam, rise, or I'll kneel with you.

*Page.* I would bring you on your knees, were I a woman.

*Beauf. jun.* What is it can deserve so poor a name,

As a suit to me ? This more than mortal form

Was fashion'd to command, and not entreat : Your will but known is served.

*Theoc.* Great sir, my father, My brave, deserving father ;—but that sorrow

Forbids the use of speech—

*Beauf. jun.* I understand you, Without the aids of those interpreters That fall from your fair eyes : I know you labour

The liberty of your father ; at the least, An equal hearing to acquit himself : And, 'tis not to endear my service to you, Though I must add, and pray you with patience hear it,

'Tis hard to be effected, in respect The state's incensed against him : all presuming,

The world of outrages his impious son, Turn'd worse than pirate in his cruelties, Express'd to this poor country, could not be With such ease put in execution, if Your father, of late our great admiral, Held not or correspondence, or conniv'd At his proceedings.

*Theoc.* And must he then suffer, His cause unheard ?

*Beauf. jun.* As yet it is resolved so, In their determination. But suppose (For I would nourish hope, not kill it, in you) I should divert the torrent of their purpose, And render them, that are implacable, Impartial judges, and not sway'd with spleen ;

Will you, I dare not say in recompense, For that includes a debt you cannot owe me, But in your liberal bounty, in my suit To you, be gracious ?

*Theoc.* You entreat of me, sir, What I should offer to you, with confession That you much undervalue your own worth,

Should you receive me, since there come with you

Not lustful fires, but fair and lawful flames. But I must be excused, 'tis now no time

For me to think of Hymeneal joys. Can he (and pray you, sir, consider it)

That gave me life, and faculties to love, Be, as he's now, ready to be devour'd By ravenous wolves, and at that instant, I But entertain a thought of those delights, In which, perhaps, my ardour meets with yours !

Duty and piety forbid it, sir.

*Beauf. jun.* But this effected, and your father free,

What is your answer ?

*Theoc.* Every minute to me Will be a tedious age, till our embraces Are warrantable to the world.

*Beauf. jun.* I urge no more ; Confirm it with a kiss.

*Theoc.* [*Kissing him.*] I doubly seal it. *Ush.* This would do better abed, the business ended :—

They are the loving'st couple !

*Enter Beaufort senior, Montaigne, Chamont, and Lanour.*

*Beauf. jun.* Here comes my father, With the Council of War : deliver your petition, And leave the rest to me.

[*Theoc. offers a paper.*]

*Beauf. sen.* I am sorry, lady, Your father's guilt compels your innocence To ask what I in justice must deny.

*Beauf. jun.* For my sake, sir, pray you receive and read it.

*Beauf. sen.* Thou foolish boy ! I can deny thee nothing.

[*Takes the paper from Theoc.*]

*Beauf. jun.* Thus far we are happy, madam : quit the place ; You shall hear how we succeed.

*Theoc.* Goodness reward you !

[*Exit Theocrine, Usher, Page, and Women.*]

*Mont.* It is apparent ; and we stay too long To censure Malefort as he deserves.

[*They take their seats.*]

*Cham.* There is no colour of reason that makes for him :

Had he discharged the trust committed to him,

With that experience and fidelity He practis'd heretofore, it could not be Our navy should be block'd up, and, in our sight,

Our goods made prize, our sailors sold for slaves,

By his prodigious issue.

*Lan.* I much grieve,  
After so many brave and high achievements,  
He should in one ill forfeit all the good  
He ever did his country.

*Beauf. sen.* Well, 'tis granted.

*Beauf. jun.* I humbly thank you, sir.

*Beauf. sen.* He shall have hearing,  
His irons too struck off; bring him before us,  
But seek no further favour.

*Beauf. jun.* Sir, I dare not.

[*Exit.*

*Beauf. sen.* Monsieur Chamont, Montaigne, Lanour, assistants,  
By a commission from the most Christian king,

In punishing or freeing Malefort,  
Our late great admiral: though I know you need not

Instructions from me, how to dispose of  
Yourselves in this man's trial, that exacts  
Your clearest judgments, give me leave, with favour,

To offer my opinion. We are to hear him,  
A little looking back on his fair actions,  
Loyal, and true demeanour; not as now  
By the general voice already he's condemn'd.  
But if we find, as most believe, he hath held  
Intelligence with his accursed son,  
Fallen off from all allegiance, and turn'd  
(But for what cause we know not) the most bloody

And fatal enemy this country ever  
Reputed to have brought forth; all compassion

[Of his years pass'd over, all consideration]  
Of what he was, or may be, if now pardon'd;  
We sit engaged to censure him with all  
Extremity and rigour.

*Cham.* Your lordship shews us  
A path which we will tread in.

*Lan.* He that leaves

To follow, as you lead, will lose himself.

*Mont.* I'll not be singular.

*Re-enter Beaufort junior, with Montreville, Malefort senior, Belgarde, and Officers.*

*Beauf. sen.* He comes, but with  
A strange distracted look.

*Malef. sen.* Live I once more  
To see these hands and arms free! these,  
that often,

In the most dreadful horror of a fight,  
Have been as seamarks to teach such as were  
Seconds in my attempts, to steer between  
The rocks of too much daring, and pale fear,  
To reach the port of victory! when my sword,  
Advanced thus, to my enemies appear'd

A hairy comet, threatening death and ruin  
To such as durst behold it! These the legs,  
That, when our ships were grappled, carried  
me

With such swift motion from deck to deck,  
As they that saw it, with amazement cried,  
He does not run, but flies!

*Mont.* He still retains

The greatness of his spirit.

*Malef. sen.* Now cramped with irons,  
Hunger, and cold, they hardly do support  
me—

But I forget myself. O, my good lords,  
That sit there as my judges, to determine  
The life, and death of Malefort, where are now  
Those shouts, those cheerful looks, those loud  
applauses,

With which, when I return'd loaden with spoil,  
You entertain'd your admiral? all's forgotten:  
And I stand here to give account of that  
Of which I am as free and innocent  
As he that never saw the eyes of him,  
For whom I stand suspected.

*Beauf. sen.* Monsieur Malefort,  
Let not your passion so far transport you,  
As to believe from any private malice,  
Or envy to your person, you are question'd:  
Nor do the suppositions want weight,  
That do invite us to a strong assurance,  
Your son—

*Malef. sen.* My shame!

*Beauf. sen.* Pray you, hear with patience,  
—never

Without assistance or sure aids from you,  
Could, with the pirates of Argiers and Tunis,  
Even those that you had almost twice de-  
feated,

Acquire such credit, as with them to be  
Made absolute commander; (pray you ob-  
serve me;)

If there had not some contract pass'd  
between you,

That, when occasion serv'd, you would join  
with them,

To the ruin of Marseilles?

*Mont.* More, what urged  
Your son to turn apostata?

*Cham.* Had he from

The state, or governor, the least neglect,  
Which envy could interpret for a wrong?

*Lan.* Or, if you slept not in your charge,  
how could

So many ships as do infest our coast,  
And have in our own harbour shut our navy,  
Come in unfought with?

*Beauf. jun.* They put him hardly to it.

*Malef. sen.* My lords, with as much  
brevity as I can,

I'll answer each particular objection

With which you charge me. The main ground, on which

You raise the building of your accusation, Hath reference to my son: should I now curse him,

Or wish, in the agony of my troubled soul, Lightning had found him in his mother's womb,

You'll say 'tis from the purpose; and I, therefore,

Betake him to the devil, and so leave him! Did never loyal father but myself

Beget a treacherous issue? was 't in me, With as much ease to fashion up his mind, As, in his generation, to form,

The organs to his body? Must it follow, Because that he is impious, I am false:—

I would not boast my actions, yet 'tis lawful To upbraid my benefits to unthankful men.

Who sunk the Turkish gallies in the streights, But Malefort? Who rescued the French merchants,

When they were boarded, and stow'd under hatches

By the pirates of Argiers, when every minute They did expect to be chain'd to the oar, But your now doubted admiral? then you fill'd

The air with shouts of joy, and did proclaim, When hope had left them, and grim-look'd despair

Hover'd with sail-stretch'd wings over their heads,

To me, as to the Neptune of the sea, They owed the restitution of your goods, Their lives, their liberties. O, can it then Be probable, my lords, that he that never Became the master of a pirate's ship, But at the mainyard hung the captain up, And caused the rest to be thrown over-board;

Should, after all these proofs of deadly hate, So oft express'd against them, entertain A thought of quarter with them; but much less

(To the perpetual ruin of my glories)

To join with them to lift a wicked arm Against my mother-country, this Marseilles, Which, with my prodigal expense of blood, I have so oft protected!

*Beauf. sen.* What you have done Is granted and applauded; but yet know This glorious relation of your actions Must not so blind our judgments, as to suffer This most unnatural crime you stand accused of,

To pass unquestion'd.

*Cham.* No; you must produce Reasons of more validity and weight,

To plead in your defence, or we shall hardly Conclude you innocent.

*Mont.* The large volume of Your former worthy deeds, with your experience,

Both what and when to do, but makes against you.

*Lan.* For had your care and courage been the same

As heretofore, the dangers we are plunged in Had been with ease prevented.

*Malef. sen.* What have I.

Omitted, in the power of flesh and blood, Even in the birth to strangle the designs of This hell-bred wolf, my son? alas! my lords, I am no god, nor like him could foresee His cruel thoughts, and cursed purposes: Nor would the sun at my command forbear To make his progress to the other world, Affording to us one continued light. Nor could my breath disperse those foggy mists,

Cover'd with which, and darkness of the night, Their navy undiscern'd, without resistance, Beset our harbour! make not that my fault, Which you in justice must ascribe to fortune— But if that nor my former acts, nor what I have deliver'd, can prevail with you, To make good my integrity and truth; Rip up this bosom, and pluck out the heart That hath been ever loyal.

[*A trumpet within.*]

*Beauf. sen.* How! a trumpet? Enquire the cause. [*Exit Montreville.*]

*Malef. sen.* Thou searcher of men's hearts,

And sure defender of the innocent, (My other crying sins—awhile not look'd on) If I in this am guilty, strike me dead, Or by some unexpected means confirm, I am accused unjustly! [*Aside.*]

*Re-enter Montreville with a Sea Captain.*

*Beauf. sen.* Speak, the motives That bring thee hither?

*Capt.* From our admiral thus: He does salute you fairly, and desires It may be understood no public hate Hath brought him to Marseilles; nor seeks be The ruin of his country, but aims only To wreak a private wrong: and if from you He may have leave and liberty to decide it In single combat, he'll give up good pledges, If he fall in the trial of his right, We shall weigh anchor, and no more molest This town with hostile arms.

*Beauf. sen.* Speak to the man, If in this presence he appear to you, To whom you bring this challenge.

*Capt.* 'Tis to you.

*Beauf. sen.* His father!

*Montr.* Can it be?

*Beauf. jun.* Strange and prodigious!

*Malef. sen.* Thou seest I stand unmoved:  
were thy voice thunder,

It should not shake me; say, what would  
the viper?

*Capt.* The reverence a father's name may  
challenge,

And duty of a son no more remember'd,  
He does defy thee to the death.

*Malef. sen.* Go on.

*Capt.* And with his sword will prove it on  
thy head,

Thou art a murderer, an atheist;  
And that all attributes of men turn'd furies,  
Cannot express thee: this he will make  
good,

If thou dar'st give him meeting.

*Malef. sen.* Dare I live!

Dare I, when mountains of my sins o'er-  
whelm me,

At my last gasp ask for mercy! How I bless  
Thy coming, captain; never man to me  
Arrived so opportunely; and thy message,  
However it may seem to threaten death,  
Does yield to me a second life in curing  
My wounded honour. Stand I yet suspected  
As a confederate with this enemy,

Whom of all men, against all ties of nature,  
He marks out for destruction! you are just,  
Immortal Powers, and in this merciful;

And it takes from my sorrow, and my shame  
For being the father to so bad a son,  
In that you are pleased to offer up the  
monster

To my correction. Blush and repent,  
As you are bound, my honourable lords,  
Your ill opinions of me. Not great Brutus,  
The father of the Roman liberty,  
With more assured constancy beheld  
His traitor sons, for labouring to call home  
The banish'd Tarquins, scourged with rods  
to death,

Than I will shew, when I take back the life  
This prodigy of mankind received from me.

*Beauf. sen.* We are sorry, monsieur Male-  
fort, for our error,

And are much taken with your resolution;  
But the disparity of years and strength,  
Between you and your son, duly consider'd,  
We would not so expose you.

*Malef. sen.* Then you kill me,

Under pretence to save me, O my lords,  
As you love honour, and a wrong'd man's  
fame,

Deny me not this fair and noble means  
To make me right again to all the world.

Should any other but myself be chosen  
To punish this apostata with death,  
You rob a wretched father of a justice  
That to all after times will be recorded.  
I wish his strength were centuple, his skill  
equal

To my experience, that in his fall  
He may not shame my victory! I feel  
The powers and spirits of twenty strong men  
in me.

Were he with wild fire circled, I undaunted  
Would make way to him.—As you do affect,  
sir,

My daughter Theocrine; as you are  
My true and ancient friend; as thou art  
valiant;

And as all love a soldier, second me  
[*They all sue to the Governor.*]

In this my just petition. In your looks  
I see a grant, my lord.

*Beauf. sen.* You shall o'erbear me;  
And since you are so confident in your cause,  
Prepare you for the combat.

*Malef. sen.* With more joy  
Than yet I ever tasted: by the next sun,  
The disobedient rebel shall hear from me,  
And so return in safety. [*To the Captain.*]

My good lords,  
To all my service.—I will die, or purchase  
Rest to Marseilles; nor can I make doubt,  
But his impiety is a potent charm,  
To edge my sword, and add strength to my  
arm. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*An open Space without the  
City.*

*Enter three Sea Captains.*

*2 Capt.* He did accept the challenge, then!

*1 Capt.* Nay more,

Was overjoy'd in't; and, as it had been  
A fair invitation to a solemn feast,  
And not a combat to conclude with death,  
He cheerfully embraced it.

*3 Capt.* Are the articles  
Sign'd to on both parts?

*1 Capt.* At the father's suit,  
With much unwillingness the governor  
Consented to them.

*2 Capt.* You are inward with  
Our admiral; could you yet never learn  
What the nature of the quarrel is, that  
renders

The son more than incensed, implacable,  
Against the father?

*1 Capt.* Never; yet I have,  
As far as manners would give warrant to it,

With my best curiousness of care observed him.

I have sat with him in his cabin a day together, Yet not a syllable exchanged between us. Sigh he did often, as if inward grief And melancholy at that instant would Choke up his vital spirits, and now and then A tear or two, as in derision of The toughness of his rugged temper, would Fall on his hollow cheeks, which but once felt,

A sudden flash of fury did dry up ; And laying then his hand upon his sword, He would murmur, but yet so as I oft heard him,

We shall meet, cruel father, yes, we shall ; When I'll exact, for every womanish drop Of sorrow from these eyes, a strict account Of much more from thy heart.

2 *Capt.* 'Tis wondrous strange.

3 *Capt.* And past my apprehension.

1 *Capt.* Yet what makes

The miracle greater, when from the maintop A sail's descried, all thoughts that do concern Himself laid by, no lion, pinch'd with hunger,

Rouses himself more fiercely from his den, Than he comes on the deck ; and there how wisely

He gives directions, and how stout he is In his executions, we, to admiration, Have been eyewitnesses : yet he never minds The booty when 'tis made ours ; but as if The danger, in the purchase of the prey, Delighted him much more than the reward, His will made known, he does retire himself To his private contemplation, no joy Express'd by him for victory.

*Enter Malefort junior.*

2 *Capt.* Here he comes, But with more cheerful looks than ever yet I saw him wear.

*Malef. jun.* It was long since resolved on, Nor must I stagger now in't. May the cause, That forces me to this unnatural act Be buried in everlasting silence, And I find rest in death, or my revenge ! To either I stand equal. Pray you, gentlemen,

Be charitable in your censures of me, And do not entertain a false belief That I am mad, for undertaking that Which must be, when effected, still repented. It adds to my calamity, that I have Discourse and reason, and but too well know

I can nor live, nor end a wretched life,

But both ways I am impious. Do not, therefore,

Ascribe the perturbation of my soul To a servile fear of death : I oft have view'd All kinds of his inevitable darts, Nor are they terrible. Were I condemn'd to leap

From the cloud-cover'd brows of a steep rock, Into the deep ; or, Curtius like, to fill up, For my country's safety, and an after-name, A bottomless abyss, or charge through fire, It could not so much shake me, as th' encounter

Of this day's single enemy.

1 *Capt.* If you please, sir,

You may shun it, or defer it.

*Malef. jun.* Not for the world :

Yet two things I entreat you ; the first is, You'll not enquire the difference between Myself and him, which as a father once I honour'd, now my deadliest enemy ; The last is, if I fall, to bear my body Far from this place, and where you please enter it.—

I should say more, but by his sudden coming I am cut off.

*Enter Beaufort junior and Montreville, leading in Malefort senior ; Belgarde following, with others.*

*Beauf. jun.* Let me, sir, have the honour To be your second.

*Montr.* With your pardon, sir, I must put in for that, since our tried friendship

Hath lasted from our infancy.

*Belg.* I have served Under your command, and you have seen me fight,

And handsomely, though I say it ; and if now, At this downright game, I may but hold your cards, I'll not pull down the side.

*Malef. sen.* I rest much bound To your so noble offers, and I hope Shall find your pardon, though I now refuse them ;

For which I'll yield strong reasons, but as briefly

As the time will give me leave. For me to borrow

(That am supposed the weaker) any aid From the assistance of my second's sword, Might write me down in the black list of those That have nor fire nor spirit of their own ; But dare, and do, as they derive their courage From his example, on whose help and valour They wholly do depend. Let this suffice, In my excuse, for that. Now, if you please,

On both parts, to retire to yonder mount,  
Where you, as in a Roman theatre,  
May see the bloody difference determined,  
Your favours meet my wishes.

*Malef. jun.* 'Tis approved of  
By me; and I command you [*To his Cap-*  
*tains.*] lead the way,  
And leave me to my fortune.

*Beauf. jun.* I would gladly  
Be a spectator (since I am denied  
To be an actor) of each blow and thrust,  
And punctually observe them.

*Malef. jun.* You shall have  
All you desire; for in a word or two  
I must make bold to entertain the time,  
If he give suffrage to it.

*Malef. sen.* Yes, I will;  
I'll hear thee, and then kill thee: nay, farewell.

*Malef. jun.* Embrace with love on both  
sides, and with us  
Leave deadly hate and fury.

*Malef. sen.* From this place  
You ne'er shall see both living.

*Belg.* What's past help, is  
Beyond prevention.

[*They embrace on both sides, and take  
leave severally of the father and  
son.*]

*Mulef. sen.* Now we are alone, sir;  
And thou hast liberty to unload the burthen  
Which thou groan'st under. Speak thy griefs.

*Malef. jun.* I shall, sir;  
But in a perplex'd form and method, which  
You only can interpret: Would you had not  
A guilty knowledge in your bosom, of  
The language which you force me to deliver,  
So I were nothing! As you are my father,  
I bend my knee, and, uncompell'd, profess  
My life, and all that's mine, to be your gift;  
And that in a son's duty I stand bound  
To lay this head beneath your feet, and run  
All desperate hazards for your ease and safety:  
But this confest on my part, I rise up,  
And not as with a father, (all respect,  
Love, fear, and reverence cast off,) but as  
A wicked man, I thus expostulate with you.  
Why have you done that which I dare not  
speak,

And in the action changed the humble shape  
Of my obedience, to rebellious rage,  
And insolent pride? and with shut eyes con-  
strain'd me

To run my bark of honour on a shelf  
I must not see, nor, if I saw it, shun it?  
In my wrongs nature suffers, and looks  
backward,

And mankind trembles to see me pursue  
What beasts would fly from. For when I  
advance

This sword, as I must do, against your head,  
Piety will weep, and filial duty mourn,  
To see their altars which you built up in me,  
In a moment razed and ruin'd. That you could  
(From my griev'd soul I wish it) but produce,  
To qualify, not excuse, your deed of horror,  
One seeming reason, that I might fix here,  
And move no further!

*Malef. sen.* Have I so far lost  
A father's power, that I must give account  
Of my actions to my son? or must I plead  
As a fearful prisoner at the bar, while he  
That owes his being to me sits a judge  
To censure that, which only by myself  
Ought to be question'd? mountains sooner fall  
Beneath their valleys, and the lofty pine  
Pay homage to the bramble, or what else is  
Preposterous in nature, ere my tongue  
In one short syllable yield satisfaction  
To any doubt of thine; nay, though it were  
A certainty disdaining argument!

Since, though my deeds wore hell's black  
livery,

To thee they should appear triumphal robes,  
Set off with glorious honour, thou being bound  
To see with my eyes, and to boid that reason,  
That takes or birth or fashion from my will.

*Malef. jun.* This sword divides that slavish  
knot.

*Malef. sen.* It cannot:  
It cannot, wretch; and if thou but remember  
From whom thou hadst this spirit, thou dar'st  
not hope it.

Who train'd thee up in arms but I? Who  
taught thee

Men were men only when they durst look down  
With scorn on death and danger, and  
contemn'd

All opposition, till plumed Victory  
Had made her constant stand upon their  
helmets?

Under my shield thou bast fought as securely  
As the young eaglet, cover'd with the wings  
Of her fierce dam, learns how and where to  
prey.

All that is manly in thee, I call mine;  
But what is weak and womanish, thine own.  
And what I gave, since thou art proud, un-  
grateful,

Presuming to contend with him, to whom  
Submission is due, I will take from thee.  
Look, therefore, for extremities, and expect  
not

I will correct thee as a son, but kill thee  
As a serpent swollen with poison; who sur-  
viving

A little longer, with infectious breath,  
Would render all things near him, like itself,  
Contagious. Nay, now my anger's up,

Ten thousand virgins kneeling at my feet,  
And with one general cry howling for mercy,  
Shall not redeem thee.

*Malef. jun.* Thou incensed Power,  
Awhile forbear thy thunder! let me have  
No aid in my revenge, if from the grave  
My mother—

*Malef. sen.* Thou shalt never name her  
more.

[*They fight.*]

Beaufort junior, Montreville, Belgarde, and  
the three Sea Captains, appear on the  
Mount.

*Beauf. jun.* They are at it.

*2 Capt.* That thrust was put strongly home.

*Montr.* But with more strength avoided.

*Belg.* Well come in ;

He has drawn blood of him yet : well done,  
old cock.

*1 Capt.* That was a strange miss.

*Beauf. jun.* That a certain hit.

[*Young Malefort is slain.*]

*Belg.* He's fallen, the day is ours!

*2 Capt.* The admiral's slain.

*Montr.* The father is victorious!

*Belg.* Let us haste

To gratulate his conquest.

*1 Capt.* We to mourn

The fortune of the son.

*Beauf. jun.* With utmost speed

Acquaint the governor with the good success,  
That he may entertain, to his full merit,  
The father of his country's peace and safety.

[*They retire.*]

*Malef. sen.* Were a new life hid in each  
mangled limb,

I would search, and find it : and howe'er to  
some

I may seem cruel thus to tyrannize  
Upon this senseless flesh, I glory in it.—

That I have power to be unnatural,

Is my security ; die all my fears,

And waking jealousies, which have so long  
Been my tormentors! there's now no sus-  
picion :

A fact, which I alone am conscious of,

Can never be discover'd, or the cause

That call'd this duel on, I being above

All perturbations ; nor is it in

The power of fate, again to make me  
wretched.

Re-enter Beaufort junior, Montreville, Bel-  
garde, and the three Sea Captains.

*Beauf. jun.* All honour to the conqueror!  
who dares tax

My friend of treachery now?

*Belg.* I am very glad, sir,

You have sped so well : but I must tell you  
thus much,

To put you in mind that a low ebb must  
follow

Your high-swoll'n tide of happiness, you  
have purchased

This honour at a high price.

*Malef.* 'Tis, Belgarde,

Above all estimation, and a little

To be exalted with it cannot savour

Of arrogance. That to this arm and sword

Marseillés owes the freedom of her fears,

Or that my loyalty, not long since eclipsed,

Shines now more bright than ever, are not  
things

To be lamented : though, indeed, they may

Appear too dearly bought, my falling glories

Being made up again, and cemented

With a son's blood. 'Tis true, he was my son,

While he was worthy ; but when he shook off

His duty to me, (which my fond indulgence,

Upon submission, might perhaps have par-  
don'd,)

And grew his country's enemy, I look'd on  
him

As a stranger to my family, and a traitor

Justly proscribed, and he to be rewarded

That could bring in his head. I know in this

That I am censured rugged, and austere,

That will vouchsafe not one sad sigh or tear

Upon his slaughter'd body : but I rest

Well satisfied in myself, being assured that

Extraordinary virtues, when they soar

Too high a pitch for common sights to judge  
of,

Losing their proper splendour, are condemn'd  
For most remarkable vices.

*Beauf. jun.* 'Tis too true, sir,

In the opinion of the multitude ;

But for myself, that would be held your  
friend,

And hope to know you by a nearer name,

They are as they deserve, received.

*Malef.* My daughter

Shall thank you for the favour.

*Beauf. jun.* I can wish

No happiness beyond it.

*1 Capt.* Shall we have leave

To bear the corpse of our dead admiral,

As he enjoin'd us, from this coast?

*Malef.* Provided

The articles agreed on be observed,

And you depart hence with it, making oath

Never hereafter, but as friends, to touch

Upon this shore.

*1 Capt.* We'll faithfully perform it.

*Malef.* Then as you please dispose of it :  
'tis an object

That I could wish removed. His sins die  
with him!

So far he has my charity.

*1 Capt.* He shall have  
A soldier's funeral.

[*The Captains bear the body off, with  
sad music.*

*Malef.* Farewell!

*Beauf. jun.* These rites

Paid to the dead, the conqueror that survives  
Must reap the harvest of his bloody labour.  
Sound all loud instruments of joy and  
triumph,  
And with all circumstance and ceremony,  
Wait on the patron of our liberty,  
Which he at all parts merits.

*Malef.* I am honour'd

Beyond my hopes.

*Beauf. jun.* 'Tis short of your deserts.

Lead on: oh, sir, you must; you are too  
modest. [*Exeunt with loud music.*

SCENE II.—*A Room in Malefort's House.*

*Enter Theocrine, Page, and Waiting-  
women.*

*Theoc.* Talk not of comfort; I am both  
ways wretched,  
And so distracted with my doubts and fears,  
I know not where to fix my hopes. My loss  
Is certain in a father, or a brother,  
Or both; such is the cruelty of my fate,  
And not to be avoided.

*1 Wom.* You must bear it  
With patience, madam.

*2 Wom.* And what's not in you  
To be prevented, should not cause a sorrow  
Which cannot help it.

*Page.* Fear not my brave lord,  
Your noble father; fighting is to him  
Familiar as eating. He can teach  
Our modern duellists how to cleave a button,  
And in a new way, never yet found out  
By old Caranza.

*1 Wom.* May he be victorious,  
And punish disobedience in his son!  
Whose death, in reason, should at no part  
move you,  
He being but half your brother, and the  
nearness

Which that might challenge from you, for-  
feited

By his impious purpose to kill him, from  
whom

He received life. [*A shout within.*

*2 Wom.* A general shout—

*1 Wom.* Of joy.

*Page.* Look up, dear lady; sad news  
never came

Usher'd with loud applause.

*Theoc.* I stand prepared  
To endure the shock of it.

*Enter Usher.*

*Ush.* I am out of breath  
With running to deliver first—

*Theoc.* What?

*Ush.* We are all made.

My lord has won the day; your brother's  
slain;

The pirates gone: and by the governor,  
And states, and all the men of war, he is  
Brought home in triumph:—nay, no musing,  
pay me

For my good news hereafter.

*Theoc.* Heaven is just!

*Ush.* Give thanks at leisure; make all  
haste to meet him.

I could wish I were a horse, that I might  
bear you

To him upon my back.

*Page.* Thou art an ass,  
And this is a sweet burthen.

*Ush.* Peace, you crack-rope! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*A Street.*

*Loud music. Enter Montreville, Belgarde,  
Beaufort senior, Beaufort junior; Male-  
fort, followed by Montaigne, Chamont,  
and Lanour.*

*Beauf. sen.* All honours we can give you,  
and rewards,

Though all that's rich or precious in Mar-  
seilles

Were laid down at your feet, can hold no  
weight

With your deservings: let me glory in  
Your action, as if it were mine own;  
And have the honour, with the arms of love,  
To embrace the great performer of a deed  
Transcending all this country e'er could  
boast of.

*Mont.* Imagine, noble sir, in what we may  
Express our thankfulness, and rest assured  
It shall be freely granted.

*Cham.* He's an enemy  
To goodness and to virtue, that dares think  
There's anything within our power to give,  
Which you in justice may not boldly chal-  
lenge.

*Lan.* And as your own; for we will ever be  
At your devotion.

*Malef.* Much honour'd sir,  
And you, my noble lords, I can say only,  
The greatness of your favours overwhelms  
me,

And like too large a sail, for the small bark  
Of my poor merits, sinks me. That I stand  
Upright in your opinions, is an honour  
Exceeding my deserts, I having done  
Nothing but what in duty I stood bound to:



And to expect a recompense were base,  
Good deeds being ever in themselves re-  
warded.

Yet since your liberal bounties tell me that  
I may, with your allowance, be a suitor,  
To you, my lord, I am an humble one,  
And must ask that, which known, I fear you  
will

Censure me over bold.

*Beauf. sen.* It must be something  
Of a strange nature, if it find from me  
Denial or delay.

*Malef.* Thus then, my lord,  
Since you encourage me : you are happy in  
A worthy son, and all the comfort that  
Fortune has left me, is one daughter ; now,  
If it may not appear too much presumption,  
To seek to match my lowness with your  
height,

I should desire (and if I may obtain it,  
I write *nil ultra* to my largest hopes)  
She may in your opinion be thought worthy  
To be received into your family,  
And married to your son : their years are  
equal,

And their desires, I think, too ; she is not  
Ignoble, nor my state contemptible,  
And if you think me worthy your alliance,  
'Tis all I do aspire to.

*Beauf. jun.* You demand  
That which with all the service of my life  
I should have labour'd to obtain from you.  
O sir, why are you slow to meet so fair  
And noble an offer? can France show a virgin  
That may be parallel'd with her? is she not  
The phoenix of the time, the fairest star  
In the bright sphere of women?

*Beauf. sen.* Be not rapt so :  
Though I dislike not what is motion'd, yet  
In what so near concerns me, it is fit  
I should proceed with judgment.

*Enter Usher, Theocrina, Page, and  
Waiting-women.*

*Beauf. jun.* Here she comes :  
Look on her with impartial eyes, and then  
Let envy, if it can, name one graced feature  
In which she is defective.

*Malef.* Welcome, girl!  
My joy, my comfort, my delight, my all,  
Why dost thou come to greet my victory  
In such a sable habit? This shew'd well  
When thy father was a prisoner, and sus-  
pected ;  
But now his faith and loyalty are admired,  
Rather than doubted, in your outward gar-  
ments

You are to express the joy you feel within:

Nor should you with more curiousness and  
care

Pace to the temple to be made a bride,  
Than now, when all men's eyes are fixt upon  
you,

You should appear to entertain the honour  
From me descending to you, and in which  
You have an equal share.

*Theoc.* Heaven has my thanks,  
With all humility paid for your fair fortune,  
And so far duty binds me ; yet a little  
To mourn a brother's loss, however wicked,  
The tenderness familiar to our sex  
May, if you please, excuse.

*Malef.* Thou art deceived.  
He, living, was a blemish to thy beauties,  
But in his death gives ornament and lustre  
To thy perfections, but that they are  
So exquisitely rare, that they admit not  
The least addition. Ha ! here's yet a print  
Of a sad tear on thy cheek ; how it takes  
from

Our present happiness ! with a father's lips,  
A loving father's lips, I'll kiss it off,  
The cause no more remember'd.

*Theoc.* You forget, sir,  
The presence we are in.

*Malef.* 'Tis well consider'd ;  
And yet, who is the owner of a treasure  
Above all value, but, without offence,  
May glory in the glad possession of it ?  
Nor let it in your excellence beget wonder,  
Or any here, that looking on the daughter,  
I feast myself in the imagination  
Of those sweet pleasures, and allowed de-  
lights,

I tasted from the mother, who still lives  
In this her perfect model ; for she had  
Such smooth and high-arch'd brows, such  
sparkling eyes,

Whose every glance stored Cupid's emptied  
quiver,

Such ruby lips,—and such a lovely bloom,  
Disdaining all adulterate aids of art,  
Kept a perpetual spring upon her face,  
As Death himself lamented, being forced  
To blast it with his paleness : and if now,  
Her brightness dimm'd with sorrow, take  
and please you,

Think, think, young lord, when she appears  
herself,

This veil removed, in her own natural pure-  
ness,

How far she will transport you.

*Beauf. jun.* Did she need it,  
The praise which you (and well deserved)  
give to her,

Must of necessity raise new desires  
In one indebted more to years ; to me

Your words are but as oil pour'd on a fire,  
That flames already at the height.

*Malef.* No more ;

I do believe you, and let me from you  
Find so much credit ; when I make her yours,  
I do possess you of a gift, which I  
With much unwillingness part from. My  
good lords,

Forbear your further trouble ; give me leave,  
For on the sudden I am indisposed,  
To retire to my own house, and rest : to-  
morrow,

As you command me, I will be your guest,  
And having deck'd my daughter like herself,  
You shall have further conference.

*Beauf. sen.* You are master  
Of your own will ; but fail not, I'll expect  
you.

*Malef.* Nay, I will be excused ; I must  
part with you.

[*To young Beaufort and the rest.*]

My dearest Theocrine, give me thy hand,  
I will support thee.

*Theoc.* You gripe it too hard, sir.

*Malef.* Indeed I do, but have no further  
end in it

But love and tenderness, such as I may  
challenge,

And you must grant. Thou art a sweet  
one ; yes,  
And to be cherish'd.

*Theoc.* May I still deserve it !

[*Exeunt several ways.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—*A Banqueting-room in  
Beaufort's House.*

*Enter Beaufort senior, and Steward.*

*Beauf. sen.* Have you been careful ?

*Stew.* With my best endeavours.

Let them bring stomachs, there's no want  
of meat, sir.

Portly and curious viands are prepared,  
To please all kinds of appetites.

*Beauf. sen.* 'Tis well.

I love a table furnish'd with full plenty,  
And store of friends to eat it : but with this  
caution,

I would not have my house a common inn,  
For some men that come rather to devour  
me,

Than to present their service. At this time,  
too,

It being a serious and solemn meeting,  
I must not have my board pester'd with  
shadows,

That, under other men's protection, break in  
Without invitation.

*Stew.* With your favour, then,  
You must double your guard, my lord, for  
on my knowledge,  
There are some so sharp set, not to be kept  
out

By a file of musketeers : and 'tis less danger,  
I'll undertake, to stand at push of pike,  
With an enemy in a breach, that under-  
mined too,

And the cannon playing on it, than to stop  
One harpy, your perpetual guest, from en-  
trance,

When the dresser, the cook's drum, thun-  
ders, Come on,

The service will be lost else !

*Beauf. sen.* What is he ?

*Stew.* As tall a trencherman, that is most  
certain,

As e'er demolish'd pye-fortification  
As soon as batter'd ; and if the rim of his  
belly

Were not made up of a much tougher stuff  
Than his buff jerkin, there were no defence  
Against the charge of his guts : you needs  
must know him,

He's eminent for his eating.

*Beauf. sen.* O, Belgarde !

*Stew.* The same ; one of the admiral's  
cast captains,

Who swear, there being no war, nor hope  
of any,

The only drilling is to eat devoutly,  
And to be ever drinking—that's allow'd of,  
But they know not where to get it, there's  
the spite on't.

*Beauf. sen.* The more their misery ; yet,  
if you can,

For this day put him off.

*Stew.* It is beyond

The invention of man.

*Beauf. sen.* No :—say this only,

[*Whispers to him.*]

And as from me ; you apprehend me ?

*Stew.* Yes, sir.

*Beauf. sen.* But it must be done gravely.

*Stew.* Never doubt me, sir.

*Beauf. sen.* We'll dine in the great room,  
but let the music

And banquet be prepared here. [*Exit.*]

*Stew.* This will make him

Lose his dinner at the least, and that will  
vex him.

As for the sweetmeats, when they are trod  
under foot,

Let him take his share with the pages and  
the lackies,

Or scramble in the rushes.

*Enter Belgarde.*

*Belg.* 'Tis near twelve ;  
I keep a watch within me never misses.—  
Save thee, master steward !

*Belg.* You are most welcome, sir.

*Belg.* Has thy lord slept well to-night ?  
I come to enquire.

I had a foolish dream, that, against my will,  
Carried me from my lodging, to learn only  
How he's disposed.

*Stew.* He's in most perfect health, sir.

*Belg.* Let me but see him feed heartily at  
dinner,

And I'll believe so too ; for from that ever  
I make a certain judgment.

*Stew.* It holds surely  
In your own constitution.

*Belg.* And in all men's,  
'Tis the best symptom ; let us lose no time,  
Delay is dangerous.

*Stew.* Troth, sir, if I might,  
Without offence, deliver what my lord has  
Committed to my trust, I shall receive it  
As a special favour.

*Belg.* We'll see it, and discourse,  
As the proverb says, for health sake, after  
dinner,

Or rather after supper ; willingly then  
I'll walk a mile to hear thee.

*Stew.* Nay, good sir,  
I will be brief and pithy.

*Belg.* Prithce be so.

*Stew.* He bid me say, of 'all his guests,  
that he  
Stands most affected to you, for the freedom  
And plainness of your manners. He ne'er  
observed you

To twirl a dish about, you did not like of,  
All being pleasing to you ; or to take  
A say of venison, or stale fowl, by your  
nose,

Which is a solecism at another's table ;  
But by strong eating of them, did confirm  
They never were delicious to your palate,  
But when they were mortified, as the Hugonot  
says,

And so your part grows greater ; nor do you  
Find fault with the sauce, keen hunger being  
the best,

Which ever, to your much praise, you bring  
with you ;

Nor will you with impertinent relations,  
Which is a master-piece when meat's before  
you,

Forget your teeth, to use your nimble tongue,  
But do the feat you come for.

*Belg.* Be advised,  
And end your jeering ; for, if you proceed,

You'll feel, as I can eat I can be angry ;  
And beating may ensue.

*Stew.* I'll take your counsel,  
And roundly come to the point : my lord  
much wonders,

That you, that are a courtier as a soldier,  
In all things else, and every day can vary  
Your actions and discourse, continue constant  
To this one suit.

*Belg.* To one ! 'tis well I have one,  
Unpaw'd, in these days ; every cast com-  
mander

Is not blest with the fortune, I assure you.  
But why this question ? does this offend him ?

*Stew.* Not much ; but he believes it is the  
reason

You ne'er presume to sit above the salt ;  
And therefore, this day, our great admiral,  
With other states, being invited guests,  
He does entreat you to appear among them,  
In some fresh habit.

*Belg.* This staff shall not serve  
To beat the dog off ; these are soldier's gar-  
ments,

And so by consequence grow contemptible.  
*Stew.* It has stung him. [*Aside.*

*Belg.* I would I were acquainted with the  
players,

In charity they might furnish me : but  
there is

No faith in brokers ; and for believing tailors,  
They are only to be read of, but not seen ;  
And sure they are confined to their own hells,  
And there they live invisible. Well, I must not  
Be fubb'd off thus ; pray you, report my service  
To the lord governor ; I will obey him :

And though my wardrobe's poor, rather  
than lose

His company at this feast, I will put on  
The richest suit I have, and fill the chair  
That makes me worthy of. [*Exit.*

*Stew.* We are shut of him,  
He will be seen no more here : how my  
fellows

Will bless me for his absence ! he had  
starved them,

Had he staid a little longer. Would he  
could,

For his own sake, shift a shirt ! and that's  
the utmost

Of his ambition : adieu, good captain. [*Exit.*

SCENE II.—*The same.*

*Enter Beaufort senior, and Beaufort junior.*

*Beauf. sen.* 'Tis a strange fondness.

*Beauf. jun.* 'Tis beyond example.

His resolution to part with his estate,  
To make her dower the weightier, is nothing ;

But to observe how curious he is  
In his own person, to add ornament  
To his daughter's ravishing features, is the  
wonder.

I sent a page of mine in the way of courtship  
This morning to her, to present my service,  
From whom I understand all. There he  
found him

Solicitous in what shape she should appear ;  
This gown was rich, but the fashion stale ;  
the other

Was quaint, and neat, but the stuff not rich  
enough :

Then does he curse the tailor, and in rage  
Falls on her shoemaker, for wanting art  
To express in every circumstance the form  
Of her most delicate foot ; then sits in council  
With much deliberation, to find out  
What tire would best adorn her ; and one  
chosen,

Varying in his opinion, he tears off,  
And stamps it under foot ; then tries a second,  
A third, and fourth, and satisfied at length,  
With much ado, in that, he grows again  
Perplex'd and troubled where to place her  
jewels,

To be most mark'd, and whether she should  
wear

This diamond on her forehead, or between  
Her milkwhite paps, disputing on it both  
ways.

Then taking in his hand a rope of pearl,  
(The best of France,) he seriously considers,  
Whether he should dispose it on her arm,  
Or on her neck ; with twenty other trifles,  
Too tedious to deliver.

*Beauf. sen.* I have known him  
From his first youth, but never yet observed,  
In all the passages of his life and fortunes,  
Virtues so mixed with vices : valiant the  
world speaks him,

But with that, bloody ; liberal in his gifts too,  
But to maintain his prodigal expense,  
A fierce extortioner ; an impotent lover  
Of women for a flash, but, his fires quench'd,  
Hating as deadly : the truth is, I am not  
Ambitious of this match ; nor will I cross you  
In your affections.

*Beauf. jun.* I have ever found you  
(And 'tis my happiness) a loving father.

[*Loud music.*

And careful of my good :—by the loud music,  
As you gave order, for his entertainment,  
He's come into the house. Two long hours  
since,

The colonels, commissioners, and captains,  
To pay him all the rites his worth can  
challenge,

Went to wait on him hither.

*Enter* Malefort, Montaigne, Chamont, La-  
nour, Montreville, Theocrine, Usher,  
Page, and Waiting-women.

*Beauf. sen.* You are most welcome,  
And what I speak to you, does from my heart  
Disperse itself to all.

*Malef.* You meet, my lord,  
Your trouble.

*Beauf. sen.* Rather, sir, increase of honour,  
When you are pleased to grace my house.

*Beauf. jun.* The favour  
Is doubled on my part, most worthy sir,  
Since your fair daughter, my incomparable  
mistress,  
Deigns us her presence.

*Malef.* View her well, brave Beaufort,  
But yet at distance ; you hereafter may  
Make your approaches nearer, when the  
priest

Hath made it lawful : and were not she mine,  
I durst aloud proclaim it, Hymen never  
Put on his saffron-colour'd robe, to change  
A barren virgin name, with more good omens  
Than at her nuptials. Look on her again,  
Then tell me if she now appear the same,  
That she was yesterday.

*Beauf. sen.* Being herself,  
She cannot but be excellent ; these rich  
And curious dressings, which in others might  
Cover deformities, from her take lustre,  
Nor can add to her.

*Malef.* You conceive her right,  
And in your admiration of her sweetness,  
You only can deserve her. Blush not, girl,  
Thou art above his praise, or mine ; nor can  
Obsequious Flattery, though she should use  
Her thousand oil'd tongues to advance thy  
worth,

Give aught, (for that's impossible,) but take  
from

Thy more than human graces ; and even then,  
When she hath spent herself with her best  
strength,

The wrong she has done thee shall be so  
apparent,

That, losing her own servile shape and name,  
She will be thought Detraction : but I  
Forget myself ; and something whispers to me,  
I have said too much.

*Mont.* I know not what to think on't,  
But there's some mystery in it, which I fear  
Will be too soon discover'd.

*Malef.* I much wrong  
Your patience, noble sir, by too much hug-  
ging

My proper issue, and, like the foolish crow,  
Believe my black brood swans.

*Beauf. sen.* There needs not, sir,

The least excuse for this ; nay, I must have  
Your arm, you being the master of the feast,  
And this the mistress.

*Theoc.* I am any thing

That you shall please to make me.

*Beauf. jun.* Nay, 'tis yours,  
Without more compliment.

*Mont.* Your will's a law, sir.

[*Loud music.* *Exeunt* Beaufort senior,  
Malefort, Theocrine, Beaufort junior,  
Montaigne, Chamont, Lanour, Montreville.

*Ush.* Would I had been born a lord !

1 *Wom.* Or I a lady !

*Page.* It may be you were both begot in  
court,

Though bred up in the city ; for your  
mothers,

As I have heard, loved the lobby ; and  
there, nightly,

Are seen strange apparitions : and who  
knows

But that some noble faun, heated with wine,  
And cloy'd with partridge, had a kind of  
longing

To trade in sprats ? this needs no exposition  
:—

But can you yield a reason for your wishes ?

*Ush.* Why, had I been born a lord, I had  
been no servant.

1 *Wom.* And whereas now necessity  
makes us waiters,

We had been attended on.

2 *Wom.* And might have slept then

As long as we pleased, and fed when we  
had stomachs,

And worn new clothes, nor lived as now, in  
hope

Of a cast gown, or petticoat.

*Page.* You are fools,

And ignorant of your happiness. Ere I was  
Sworn to the pantofole, I have heard my tutor

Prove it by logic, that a servant's life  
Was better than his masters ; and by that

I learn'd from him, if that my memory fail  
not,

I'll make it good.

*Ush.* Proceed, my little wit

*In decimo sexto.*

*Page.* Thus then : From the king

To the beggar, by gradation, all are ser-  
vants ;

And you must grant, the slavery is less

To study to please one, than many.

*Ush.* True.

*Page.* Well then ; and first to you, sir :  
you complain

You serve one lord, but your lord serves a  
thousand,

Besides his passions, that are his worst  
masters ;

You must humour him, and he is bound to  
sooth

Every grim sir above him : if he frown,  
For the least neglect you fear to lose your  
place ;

But if, and with all slavish observation,  
From the minion's self, to the groom of his  
close-stool,

He hourly seeks not favour, he is sure  
To be eased of his office, though perhaps he  
bought it.

Nay, more ; that high disposer of all such  
That are subordinate to him, serves and fears  
The fury of the many-headed monster,

The giddy multitude : and as a horse  
Is still a horse, for all his golden trappings,

So your men of purchased titles, at their  
best, are

But serving-men in rich liveries.

*Ush.* Most rare infant !

Where learn'd'st thou this morality ?

*Page.* Why, thou dull pate,

As I told thee, of my tutor.

2 *Wom.* Now for us, boy.

*Page.* I am cut off :—the governor.

*Enter* Beaufort senior and Beaufort junior ;  
Servants setting forth a banquet.

*Beauf. sen.* Quick, quick, sirs.

See all things perfect.

*Serv.* Let the blame be ours else.

*Beauf. sen.* And, as I said, when we are  
at the banquet,

And high in our cups, for 'tis no feast with-  
out it,

Especially among soldiers ; Theocrine  
Being retired, as that's no place for her,

Take you occasion to rise from the table,  
And lose no opportunity.

*Beauf. jun.* 'Tis my purpose ;

And if I can win her to give her heart,

I have a holy man in readiness

To join our hands ; for the admiral, her  
father,

Repents him of his grant to me, and seems  
So far transported with a strange opinion

Of her fair features, that, should we defer it,  
I think, ere long, he will believe, and  
strongly,

The dauphin is not worthy of her : I

Am much amazed with't.

*Beauf. sen.* Nay, dispatch there, fellows.

[*Exeunt* Beaufort senior and Beau-  
fort junior.

*Serv.* We are ready, when you please.

Sweet forms, your pardon !

It has been such a busy time, I could not

Tender that ceremonious respect  
Which you deserve; but now, the great  
work ended,

I will attend the less, and with all care  
Observe and serve you.

*Page.* This is a penn'd speech,  
And serves as a perpetual preface to  
A dinner made of fragments.

*Ush.* We wait on you. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same. A Banquet set forth.*

*Loud music. Enter Beaufort senior, Malefort, Montaigne, Chamont, Lanour, Beaufort junior, Montreville, and Servants.*

*Beauf. sen.* You are not merry, sir.

*Malef.* Yes, my good lord,  
You have given us ample means to drown  
all cares:—

And yet I nourish strange thoughts, which  
I would

Most willingly destroy. [*Aside.*]

*Beauf. sen.* Pray you, take your place.

*Beauf. jun.* And drink a health; and let  
it be, if you please,

To the worthiest of women.—Now observe  
him.

*Malef.* Give me the bowl; since you do  
me the honour,

I will begin it.

*Cham.* May we know her name, sir?

*Malef.* You shall; I will not choose a  
foreign queen's,

Nor yet our own, for that would relish of  
Tame flattery; nor do their height of title,  
Or absolute power, confirm their worth and  
goodness,

These being heaven's gifts, and frequently  
conferr'd

On such as are beneath them; nor will I  
Name the king's mistress, howsoever she  
In his esteem may carry it: but if I,  
As wine gives liberty, may use my freedom,  
Not sway'd this way or that, with confidence,  
(And I will make it good on any equal,)  
If it must be to her whose outward form  
Is better'd by the beauty of her mind,  
She lives not that with justice can pretend  
An interest to this so sacred health,  
But my fair daughter. He that only doubts it,  
I do pronounce a villain: this to her, then.

[*Drinks.*]

*Mont.* What may we think of this?

*Beauf. sen.* It matters not.

*Lan.* For my part, I will sooth him, rather  
than

Draw on a quarrel.

*Cham.* It is the safest course;  
And one I mean to follow.

*Beauf. jun.* It has gone round, sir. [*Exit.*]

*Malef.* Now you have done her right; if  
there be any  
Worthy to second this, propose it boldly,  
I am your pledge.

*Beauf. sen.* Let's pause here, if you please,  
And entertain the time with something else.  
Music there! in some lofty strain; the song  
too  
That I gave order for; the new one, call'd  
*The Soldier's Delight.*

[*Music and a Song.*]

*Enter Belgarde in armour, a case of  
carbines by his side.*

*Belg.* Who stops me now?  
Or who dares only say that I appear not  
In the most rich and glorious habit that  
Renders a man complete? What court so  
set off

With state and ceremonious pomp, but, thus  
Accoutred, I may enter? Or what feast,  
Though all the elements at once were  
ransack'd

To store it with variety transcending  
The curiousness and cost on Trajan's birth-  
day;

(Where princes only, and confederate kings,  
Did sit as guests, served and attended on  
By the senators of Rome,) at which a soldier,  
In this his natural and proper shape,  
Might not, and boldly, fill a seat, and by  
His presence make the great solemnity  
More honour'd and remarkable?

*Beauf. sen.* 'Tis acknowledged;  
And this a grace done to me unexpected.

*Mont.* But why in armour?

*Malef.* What's the mystery?  
Pray you, reveal that.

*Belg.* Soldiers out of action,  
That very rare \* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \* but, like unbidden guests,  
Bring their stools with them, for their own  
defence,

At court should feed in guantlets; they may  
have

Their fingers cut else: there your carpet  
knights,

That never charged beyond a mistress' lips,  
Are still most keen, and valiant. But to you,  
Whom it does most concern, my lord, I will  
Address my speech, and, with a soldier's  
freedom,

In my reproof, return the bitter scoff  
You threw upon my poverty: you contemn'd  
My coarser outside, and from that concluded  
(As by your groom you made me under-  
stand)

I was unworthy to sit at your table,  
 Among these tissues and embroideries,  
 Unless I changed my habit : I have done it,  
 And shew myself in that which I have worn  
 In the heat and fervour of a bloody fight ;  
 And then it was in fashion, not as now,  
 Ridiculous and despised. This hath past  
 through  
 A wood of pikes, and everyone aim'd at it,  
 Yet scorn'd to take impression from their  
 fury :

With this, as still you see it, fresh and new,  
 I've charged through fire that would have  
 singed your sables,  
 Black fox, and ermines, and changed the  
 proud colour

Of scarlet, though of the right Tyrian die.—  
 But now, as if the trappings made the man,  
 Such only are admired that come adorn'd  
 With what's no part of them. This is mine  
 own,  
 My richest suit, a suit I must not part from,  
 But not regarded now : and yet remember,  
 'Tis we that bring you in the means of feasts,  
 Banquets, and revels, which, when you  
 possess,  
 With barbarous ingratitude you deny us  
 To be made sharers in the harvest, which  
 Our sweat and industry reap'd, and sow'd  
 for you.

The silks you wear, we with our blood spin  
 for you ;  
 This massy plate, that with the ponderous  
 weight  
 Does make your cupboards crack, we (un-  
 affrighted  
 With tempests, or the long and tedious way,  
 Or dreadful monsters of the deep, that wait  
 With open jaws still ready to devour us,)  
 Fetch from the other world. Let it not then,  
 In after ages, to your shame be spoken,  
 That you, with no relenting eyes, look on  
 Our wants that feed your plenty : or con-  
 sume,  
 In prodigal and wanton gifts on drones,  
 The kingdom's treasure, yet detain from us  
 The debt that with the hazard of our lives,  
 We have made you stand engaged for ; or  
 force us,  
 Against all civil government, in armour  
 To require that, which with all willingness  
 Should be tendered ere demanded.

*Beauf. sen.* I commend  
 This wholesome sharpness in you, and  
 prefer it  
 Before obsequious tameness ; it shews lovely :  
 Nor shall the rain of your good counsel  
 fall  
 Upon the barren sands, but spring up fruit,

Such as you long have wish'd for. And the  
 rest  
 Of your profession, like you, discontented  
 For want of means, shall, in their present  
 payment,  
 Be bound to praise your boldness : and  
 hereafter  
 I will take order you shall have no cause,  
 For want of change, to put your armour on,  
 But in the face of an enemy ; not as now,  
 Among your friends. To that which is due  
 to you,  
 To furnish you like yourself, of mine own  
 bounty  
 I'll add five hundred crowns.

*Cham.* I, to my power,  
 Will follow the example.

*Mont.* Take this, captain,  
 'Tis all my present store ; but when you  
 please,  
 Command me further.

*Lan.* I could wish it more.

*Belg.* This is the luckiest jest ever came  
 from me.

Let a soldier use no other scribe to draw  
 The form of his petition. This will speed  
 When your thrice-humble supplications,  
 With prayers for increase of health and  
 honours  
 To their grave lordships, shall, as soon as  
 read,  
 Be pocketed up, the cause no more re-  
 member'd :

When this dumb rhetoric [*Aside.*]—Well, I  
 have a life,  
 Which I, in thankfulness for your great  
 favours,  
 My noble lords, when you please to com-  
 mand it,  
 Must never think mine own.—Broker, be  
 happy,  
 These golden birds fly to thee. [*Exit.*

*Beauf. sen.* You are dull, sir,  
 And seem not to be taken with the passage  
 You saw presented.

*Malef.* Passage ! I observed none,  
 My thoughts were elsewhere busied. Ha !  
 she is  
 In danger to be lost, to be lost for ever,  
 If speedily I come not to her rescue,  
 For so my genius tells me.

*Montr.* What chimeras  
 Work on your fantasy ?  
*Malef.* Fantasies ! they are truths.  
 Where is my Theocrine ? you have plotted  
 To rob me of my daughter ; bring me to her,  
 Or I'll call down the saints to witness for me,  
 You are inhospitable.

*Beauf. sen.* You amaze me.

Your daughter's safe, and now exchanging  
courtship

With my son, her servant. Why do you hear  
this

With such distracted looks, since to that end  
You brought her hither?

*Malef.* 'Tis confess'd I did;

But now, pray you, pardon me; and, if you  
please,

Ere she delivers up her virgin fort,  
I would observe what is the art he uses

In planting his artillery against it:

She is my only care, nor must she yield,

But upon noble terms.

*Beauf. sen.* 'Tis so determined.

*Malef.* Yet I am jealous.

*Mont.* Overmuch, I fear.

What passions are these? [*Aside.*]

*Beauf. sen.* Come, I will bring you

Where you, with these, if they so please,  
may see

The love-scene acted.

*Montr.* There is something more

Than fatherly love in this. [*Aside.*]

*Mont.* We wait upon you. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Another Room in Beaufort's  
House.*

*Enter Beaufort junior, and Theocrine.*

*Beauf. jun.* Since then you meet my flames  
with equal ardour,

As you profess, it is your bounty, mistress,  
Nor must I call it debt; yet 'tis your glory,  
That your excess supplies my want, and  
makes me

Strong in my weakness, which could never be,  
But in your good opinion.

*Theoc.* You teach me, sir,

What I should say; since from your sun of  
favour,

I, like dim Phœbe, in herself obscure,  
Borrow that light I have.

*Beauf. jun.* Which you return

With large increase, since that you will o'er-  
come,

And I dare not contend, were you but pleased  
To make what's yet divided one.

*Theoc.* I have

Already in my wishes; modesty

Forbids me to speak more.

*Beauf. jun.* But what assurance,

But still without offence, may I demand,  
That may secure me that your heart and  
tongue

Join to make harmony?

*Theoc.* Choose any,

Suiting your love, distinguished from lust,  
To ask, and mine to grant.

*Enter at a distance Beaufort senior, Male-  
fort, Montreville, and the rest.*

*Beauf. sen.* Yonder they are.

*Malef.* At distance too! 'tis yet well.

*Beauf. jun.* I may take then

This hand, and with a thousand burning  
kisses,

Swear 'tis the anchor to my hopes?

*Theoc.* You may, sir.

*Malef.* Somewhat too much.

*Beauf. jun.* And this done, view myself

In these true mirrors?

*Theoc.* Ever true to you, sir:

And may they lose the ability of sight,

When they seek other object!

*Malef.* This is more

Than I can give consent to.

*Beauf. jun.* And a kiss

Thus printed on your lips, will not distaste you?

*Malef.* Her lips!

*Montr.* Why, where should he kiss? are  
you distracted?

*Beauf. jun.* Then, when this holy man  
hath made it lawful—

[*Brings in a Priest.*]

*Malef.* A priest so ready too! I must  
break in.

*Beauf. jun.* And what's spoke here is re-  
gister'd above;

I must engross those favours to myself  
Which are not to be named.

*Theoc.* All I can give,

But what they are I know not.

*Beauf. jun.* I'll instruct you.

*Malef.* O how my blood boils!

*Montr.* Pray you, contain yourself;

Methinks his courtship's modest.

*Beauf. jun.* Then being mine,

And wholly mine, the river of your love  
To kinsmen and allies, nay, to your father,  
(Howe'er out of his tenderness he admires  
you,)

Must in the ocean of your affection

To me, be swallow'd up, and want a name,  
Compared with what you owe me.

*Theoc.* 'Tis most fit, sir.

The stronger bond that binds me to you, must  
Dissolve the weaker.

*Malef.* I am ruin'd, if

I come not fairly off.

*Beauf. sen.* There's nothing wanting  
But your consent.

*Malef.* Some strange invention aid me!

This! yes, it must be so. [*Aside.*]

*Montr.* Why do you stagger,  
When what you seem'd so much to wish, is  
offer'd,

Both parties being agreed too?



*Beauf. sen.* I'll not court  
A grant from you, nor do I wrong your  
daughter,

Though I say my son deserves her.

*Malef.* 'Tis far from  
My humble thoughts to undervalue him  
I cannot prize too high : for howsoever  
From my own fond indulgence I have sung  
Her praises with too prodigal a tongue,  
That tenderness laid by, I stand confirm'd,  
All that I fancied excellent in her,  
Balanced with what is really his own,  
Holds weight in no proportion.

*Montr.* New turnings!

*Beauf. sen.* Whither tends this?

*Malef.* Had you observed, my lord,  
With what a sweet gradation he woo'd,  
As I did punctually, you cannot blame her,  
Though she did listen with a greedy ear  
To his fair modest offers : but so great  
A good as then flow'd to her, should have been  
With more deliberation entertain'd,  
And not with such haste swallow'd ; she shall  
first

Consider seriously what the blessing is,  
And in what ample manner to give thanks  
for't,

And then receive it. And though I shall think  
Short minutes years, till it be perfected,  
I will defer that which I most desire ;  
And so must she, till longing expectation,  
That heightens pleasure, makes her truly  
know

Her happiness, and with what outstretch'd  
arms

She must embrace it.

*Beauf. jun.* This is curiousness  
Beyond example.

*Malef.* Let it then begin  
From me : in what's mine own I'll use my will,  
And yield no further reason. I lay claim to  
The liberty of a subject. [*Rushes forward  
and seizes Theoc.*]—Fall not off,  
But be obedient, or by the hair  
I'll drag thee home. Censure me as you please,  
I'll take my own way.—O, the inward fires  
That, wanting vent, consume me!

[*Exit with Theocrine.*]

*Montr.* 'Tis most certain  
He's mad, or worse.

*Beauf. sen.* How worse?

*Montr.* Nay, there I leave you ;  
My thoughts are free.

*Beauf. jun.* This I foresaw.

*Beauf. sen.* Take comfort,  
He shall walk in clouds, but I'll discover him :  
And he shall find and feel, if he excuse not,  
And with strong reasons, this gross injury,  
I can make use of my authority. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Malefort's House.*

*Enter Malefort.*

What flames are these my wild desires fan  
in me?

The torch that feeds them was not lighted at  
Thy altars, Cupid : vindicate thyself,  
And do not own it ; and confirm it rather,  
That this infernal brand, that turns me  
cinders,

Was by the snake-hair'd sisters thrown into  
My guilty bosom. O that I was ever  
Accurs'd in having issue ! my son's blood,  
(That like the poison'd shirt of Hercules  
Grows to each part about me,) which my hate  
Forced from him with much willingness, may  
admit

Some weak defence ; but my most impious love  
To my fair daughter Theocrine, none ;  
Since my affection (rather wicked lust)  
That does pursue her, is a greater crime  
Than any detestation, with which  
I should afflict her innocence. With what  
cunning

I have betray'd myself, and did not feel  
The scorching heat that now with fury rages !  
Why was I tender of her? cover'd with  
That fond disguise, this mischief stole upon  
me.

I thought it no offence to kiss her often,  
Or twine mine arms about her softer neck,  
And by false shadows of a father's kindness  
I long deceived myself : but now the effect  
Is too apparent. How I strove to be  
In her opinion held the worthiest man  
In courtship, form, and feature ! envying him  
That was prefer'd before me ; and yet then  
My wishes to myself were not discover'd.  
But still my fires increased, and with delight  
I would call her mistress, willingly forgetting  
The name of daughter, choosing rather she  
Should style me servant, than, with reverence,  
father :

Yet, waking, I ne'er cherish'd obscene hopes,  
But in my troubled slumbers often thought  
She was too near to me, and then sleeping  
blush'd

At my imagination ; which pass'd,  
(My eyes being open not condemning it,)  
I was ravis'd with the pleasure of the dream.  
Yet, spite of these temptations, I have reason  
That pleads against them, and commands  
me to

Extinguish these abominable fires :  
And I will do it ; I will send her back  
To him that loves her lawfully. Within  
there !

*Enter Theocrine.*

*Theoc.* Sir, did you call?

*Malef.* I look no sooner on her,  
But all my boasted power of reason leaves me,  
And passion again usurps her empire.—  
Does none else wait me?

*Theoc.* I am wretched, sir,  
Should any owe more duty.

*Malef.* This is worse  
Than disobedience; leave me.

*Theoc.* On my knees, sir,  
As I have ever squared my will by yours,  
And liked and loath'd with your eyes, I be-  
seech you

To teach me what the nature of my fault is,  
That hath incens'd you; sure 'tis one of  
weakness

And not of malice, which your gentler temper,  
On my submission, I hope, will pardon:  
Which granted by your piety, if that I,  
Out of the least neglect of mine hereafter,  
Make you remember it, may I sink ever  
Under your dread command, sir.

*Malef.* O my stars!  
Who can but doat on this humility,  
That sweetens—Lovely in her tears!—  
The fetters

That seem'd to lessen in their weight but now,  
By this grow heavier on me. [*Aside.*]

*Theoc.* Dear sir—

*Malef.* Peace!  
I must not hear thee.

*Theoc.* Nor look on me?

*Malef.* No,  
Thy looks and words are charms.

*Theoc.* May they have power then  
To calm the tempest of your wrath! Alas,  
sir,

Did I but know in what I give offence,  
In my repentance I would show my sorrow  
For what is past, and, in my care hereafter,  
Kill the occasion, or cease to be:  
Since life, without your favour, is to me  
A load I would cast off.

*Malef.* O that my heart  
Were rent in sunder, that I might expire,  
The cause in my death buried! yet I know  
not—

With such prevailing oratory 'tis begg'd  
from me,

That to deny thee would convince me to  
Have suck'd the milk of tigers; rise, and I,  
But in a perplex'd and mysterious method,  
Will make relation: That which all the world  
Admires and cries up in thee for perfections,  
Are to unhappy me foul blemishes,

And mulcts in nature. If thou hadst been  
horn

Deform'd and crooked in the features of  
Thy body, as the manners of thy mind;  
Moor-lipp'd, flat-nosed, dim-eyed, and  
beetle-brow'd,

With a dwarf's stature to a giant's waist;  
Sour-breath'd, with claws for fingers on thy  
hands,

Splay-footed, gouty-legg'd, and over all  
A loathsome leprosy had spread itself,  
And made thee shunn'd of human fellow-  
ships;

I had been blest.

*Theoc.* Why, would you wish a monster  
(For such a one, or worse, you have de-  
scribed)

To call you father?

*Malef.* Rather than as now,  
(Though I had drown'd thee for it in the sea,)  
Appearing, as thou dost, a new Pandora,  
With Juno's fair cow-eyes, Minerva's brow,  
Aurora's blushing cheeks, Hebe's fresh  
youth,

Venus' soft paps, with Thetis' silver feet.

*Theoc.* Sir, you have liked and loved  
them, and oft forced,

With your hyperboles of praise pour'd on  
them,

My modesty to a defensive red,  
Strew'd o'er that paleness, which you then  
were pleas'd

To style the purest white.

*Malef.* And in that cup  
I drank the poison I now feel dispersed  
Through every vein and artery. Wherefore  
art thou

So cruel to me? This thy outward shape  
Brought a fierce war against me, not to be  
By flesh and blood resisted: but to leave me  
No hope of freedom, from the magazine  
Of thy mind's forces, treacherously thou  
drew'st up

Auxiliary helps to strengthen that  
Which was already in itself too potent.  
Thy beauty gave the first charge, but thy duty,  
Seconded with thy care and watchful studies  
To please, and serve my will, in all that might  
Raise up content in me, like thunder brake  
through

All opposition; and, my ranks of reason  
Disbanded, my victorious passions fell  
To bloody execution, and compell'd me  
With willing hands to tie on my own chains,  
And, with a kind of flattering joy, to glory  
In my captivity.

*Theoc.* I, in this you speak, sir,  
Am ignorance itself.

*Malef.* And so continue;  
For knowledge of the arms thou bear'st  
against me,

Would make thee curse thyself, but yield no aids

For thee to help me : and 'twere cruelty  
In me to wound that spotless innocence,  
How'er it make me guilty. In a word,  
Thy pluriy of goodness is thy ill ;  
Thy virtues vices, and thy humble lowness  
Far worse than stubborn sullenness and pride ;  
Thy looks, that ravish all beholders else,  
As killing as the basilisk's, thy tears,  
Express'd in sorrow for the much I suffer,  
A glorious insultation, and no sign  
Of pity in thee ; and to hear thee speak  
In thy defence, though but in silent action,  
Would make the hurt, already deeply fester'd,  
Incurable : and therefore, as thou wouldst not  
By thy presence raise fresh furies to torment  
me,

I do conjure thee by a father's power,  
(And 'tis my curse I dare not think it lawful  
'To sue unto thee in a nearer name,)  
Without reply to leave me.

*Theoc.* My obedience  
Never learn'd yet to question your commands,  
But willingly to serve them ; yet I must,  
Since that your will forbids the knowledge of  
My fault, lament my fortune. [*Exit.*]

*Malef.* O that I  
Have reason to discern the better way,  
And yet pursue the worse ! When I look  
on her,

I burn with heat, and in her absence freeze  
With the cold blasts of jealousy, that another  
Should e'er taste those delights that are  
denied me ;

And which of these afflictions brings less  
torture,

I hardly can distinguish : Is there then  
No mean ? no ; so my understanding tells me,  
And that by my cross fates it is determined  
That I am both ways wretched.

*Enter Usher and Montreville.*

*Ush.* Yonder he walks, sir,  
In much vexation : he hath sent my lady,  
His daughter, weeping in ; but what the  
cause is,  
Rests yet in supposition.

*Montr.* I guess at it,  
But must be further satisfied ; I will sift him  
In private, therefore quit the room.

*Ush.* I am gone, sir. [*Exit.*]  
*Malef.* Ha ! who disturbs me ? Montre-  
ville ! your pardon.

*Montr.* Would you could grant one to  
yourself ! I speak it

With the assurance of a friend, and yet,  
Before it be too late, make reparation  
Of the gross wrong your indiscretion offer'd

To the governor and his son ; nay, to yourself ;  
For there begins my sorrow.

*Malef.* Would I had  
No greater cause to mourn, than their dis-  
pleasure !  
For I dare justify——

*Montr.* We must not do  
All that we dare. We're private, friend. I  
observed

Your alterations with a stricter eye,  
Perhaps, than others ; and, to lose no time  
In repetition, your strange demeanour  
To your sweet daughter.

*Malef.* Would you could find out  
Some other theme to treat of !

*Montr.* None but this ;  
And this I'll dwell on ; how ridiculous,  
And subject to construction——

*Malef.* No more !  
*Montr.* You made yourself, amazes me,  
and if

The frequent trials interchanged between us  
Of love and friendship, be to their desert  
Esteem'd by you, as they hold weight with me,  
No inward trouble should be of a shape  
So horrid to yourself, but that to me  
You stand bound to discover it, and unlock  
Your secret'st thoughts ; though the most  
innocent were

Loud crying sins.

*Malef.* And so, perhaps, they are :  
And therefore be not curious to learn that  
Which, known, must make you hate me.

*Montr.* Think not so.  
I am yours in right and wrong ; nor shall you  
find

A verbal friendship in me, but an active ;  
And here I vow, I shall no sooner know  
What the disease is, but, if you give leave,  
I will apply a remedy. Is it madness ?  
I am familiarly acquainted with  
A deep-read man, that can with charms and  
herbs

Restore you to your reason : or, suppose  
You are bewitch'd,—he with more potent  
spells

And magical rites shall cure you. Is't  
heaven's anger ?

With penitence and sacrifice appease it.—  
Beyond this, there is nothing that I can  
Imagine dreadful : in your fame and fortunes  
You are secure ; your impious son removed  
too,

That render'd you suspected to the state ;  
And your fair daughter——

*Malef.* Oh ! press me no further.

*Montr.* Are you wrung there ! Why,  
what of her ? hath she  
Made shipwreck of her honour, or conspired

Against your life? or seal'd a contract with  
The devil of hell, for the recovery of  
Her young Inamorato?

*Malef.* None of these;

And yet, what must increase the wonder  
in you,

Being innocent in herself, she hath wounded  
me;

But where, enquire not. Yet, I know not how  
I am persuaded, from my confidence

Of your vow'd love to me, to trust you with  
My dearest secret; pray you chide me for it,

But with a kind of pity, not insulting

On my calamity.

*Montr.* Forward.

*Malef.* This same daughter—

*Montr.* What is her fault?

*Malef.* She is too fair to me.

*Montr.* Ha! how is this?

*Malef.* And I have looked upon her

More than a father should, and languish to  
Enjoy her as a husband.

*Montr.* Heaven forbid it!

*Malef.* And this is all the comfort you  
can give me!

Where are your promised aids, your charms,  
your herbs,

Your deep-read scholar's spells and magic  
rites?

Can all these disenchant me? No, I must be  
My own physician, and upon myself  
Practise a desperate cure.

*Montr.* Do not contemn me:

Enjoin me what you please, with any hazard  
I'll undertake it. What means have you  
practised

To quench this hellish fire?

*Malef.* All I could think on,

But to no purpose; and yet sometimes  
absence

Does yield a kind of intermission to

The fury of the fit.

*Montr.* See her no more, then.

*Malef.* 'Tis my last refuge; and 'twas my  
intent,

And still 'tis, to desire your he'p.

*Montr.* Command it.

*Malef.* Thus then: you have a fort, of  
which you are

The absolute lord, whither, I pray you, bear  
her:

And that the sight of her may not again  
Nourish those flames, which I feel something  
lessen'd,

By all the ties of friendship I conjure you,  
And by a solemn oath you must confirm it,  
That though my now calm'd passions should  
rage higher

Than ever heretofore, and so compel me

Once more to wish to see her; though I use  
Persuasions mix'd with threatenings, (nay,  
add to it,

That I, this failing, should with hands held  
up thus,

Kneel at your feet, and bathe them with my  
tears,)

Prayers or curses, vows or imprecations,  
Only to look upon her, though at distance,  
You still must be obdurate.

*Montr.* If it be

Your pleasure, sir, that I shall be unmoved,  
I will endeavour.

*Malef.* You must swear to be  
Inexorable, as you would prevent  
The greatest mischief to your friend, that fate  
Could throw upon him.

*Montr.* Well, I will obey you.

But how the governor will be answer'd yet,  
And 'tis material, is not consider'd.

*Malef.* Leave that to me. I'll presently  
give order

How you shall surprise her; be not frighted  
with

Her exclamations.

*Montr.* Be you constant to  
Your resolution, I will not fail  
In what concerns my part.

*Malef.* Be ever bless'd for't! [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE II.—*A Street.*

*Enter Beaufort junior, Chamont, and  
Lanour.*

*Cham.* Not to be spoke with, say you?

*Beauf. jun.* No.

*Lan.* Nor you

Admitted to have conference with her?

*Beauf. jun.* Neither.

His doors are fast lock'd up, and solitude  
Dwells round about them, no access allow'd  
To friend or enemy; but—

*Cham.* Nay, be not moved, sir;

Let his passion work, and, like a hot-rein'd  
horse,

'Twill quickly tire itself.

*Beauf. jun.* Or in his death,  
Which, for her sake, till now I have forborn,  
I will revenge the injury he hath done to  
My true and lawful love.

*Lan.* How does your father,

The governor, relish it?

*Beauf. jun.* Troth, he never had  
Affection to the match; yet in his pity  
To me, he's gone in person to his house,  
Nor will he be denied; and if he find not  
Strong and fair reasons, Malefort will hear  
from him

In a kind he does not look for.

*Cham.* In the mean time,  
Pray you put on cheerful looks.

*Enter Montaigne.*

*Beauf. jun.* Mine suit my fortune.

*Lan.* O, here's Montaigne.

*Mont.* I never could have met you  
More opportunely. I'll not stale the jest  
By my relation; but if you will look on  
The malecontent Belgarde, newly rigg'd up,  
With the train that follows him, 'twill be an  
object

Worthy of your noting.

*Beauf. jun.* Look you the comedy  
Make good the prologue, or the scorn will  
dwell

Upon yourself.

*Mont.* I'll hazard that; observe now.

*Belgarde comes out of his house in a gallant  
habit; stays at the door with his sword  
drawn.*

*Several voices within.* Nay, captain! glo-  
rious captain!

*Belg.* Fall back, rascals!

Do you make an owl of me? this day I will  
Receive no more petitions.—

Here are bills of all occasions, and all sizes!  
If this be the pleasure of a rich suit, would

I were

Again in my buff jerkin, or my armour!  
Then I walk'd securely by my creditors' noses,  
Not a dog mark'd me; every officer shunn'd  
me,

And not one lousy prison would receive me:  
But now, as the ballad says, *I am turn'd  
gallant,*

There does not live that thing I owe a sous to,  
But does torment me. A faithful cobbler told  
me,

With his awl in his hand, I was behindhand  
with him

For setting me upright, and bade me look  
to myself.

A scempstress too, that traded but in socks,  
Swore she would set a serjeant on my back  
For a borrow'd shirt: my pay, and the  
benevolence

The governor and the states bestow'd upon  
me,

The city cormorants, my money-mongers,  
Have swallow'd down already; they were  
sums,

I grant,—but that I should be such a fool,  
Against my oath, being a cashier'd captain,  
To pay debts, though grown up to one and  
twenty,

Deserves more reprehension, in my judg-  
ment,

Than a shopkeeper, or a lawyer that lends  
money,

In a long dead vacation.

*Mont.* How do you like

His meditation?

*Cham.* Peace! let him proceed.

*Belg.* I cannot now go on the score for  
shame,

And where I shall begin to pawn—ay, marry,  
That is consider'd timely! I paid for  
This train of yours, dame Estridge, fourteen  
crowns,

And yet it is so light, 'twill hardly pass

For a tavern reckoning, unless it be,  
To save the charge of painting, nail'd on a  
post,

For the sign of the feathers. Pox upon the  
fashion,

That a captain cannot think himself a captain,  
If he wear not this, like a fore-horse! yet it  
is not

Staple commodity: these are perfumed too—  
O' the Roman wash, and yet a stale red  
herring

Would fill the belly better, and hurt the head-  
less:

And this is Venice gold; would I had it again  
In French crowns in my pocket? O you com-  
manders,

That, like me, have no dead pays, nor can  
cozen

The commissary at a muster, let me stand

For an example to you! as you would

Enjoy your privileges, *videlicet,*

To pay your debts, and take your lechery  
gratis;

To have your issue warm'd by others fires;  
To be often drunk, and swear, yet pay no  
forfeit

To the poor, but when you share with one  
another;

With all your other choice immunities:

Only of this I seriously advise you,

Let courtiers trip like courtiers, and your  
lords

Of dirt and dunghills mete their woods and  
acres,

In velvets, satins, tissues; but keep you

Constant to cloth and shamoos.

*Mont.* Have you heard

Of such a penitent homily?

*Belg.* I am studying now

Where I shall hide myself till the rumour of  
My wealth and bravery vanish: let me see,  
There is a kind of vaulting-house not far  
off,

Where I used to spend my afternoons, among  
Suburb she-gamesters; and yet, now I think  
on't,

I have crack'd a ring or two there, which they made

Others to soldier : No——

*Enter a Bawd, and two Courtezans, with two Children.*

*1 Court.* O ! have we spied you !

*Bawd.* Upon him without ceremony ! now's the time,

While he's in the paying vein.

*2 Court.* Save you, brave captain !

*Beauf. jun.* 'Slight, how he stares ! they are worse than she-wolves to him.

*Belg.* Shame me not in the streets ; I was coming to you.

*1 Court.* O, sir, you may in public pay for the fiddling

You had in private.

*2 Court.* We hear you are full of crowns, sir.

*1 Court.* And therefore, knowing you are open-handed,

Before all be destroy'd, I'll put you in mind, sir,

Of your young heir here.

*2 Court.* Here's a second, sir,

That looks for a child's portion.

*Bawd.* There are reckonings

For muscadine and eggs too, must be thought on.

*1 Court.* We have not been hasty, sir.

*Bawd.* But staid your leisure :

But now you are ripe, and loaden with fruit——

*2 Court.* 'Tis fit you should be pull'd ; here's a boy, sir,

Pray you, kiss him ; 'tis your own, sir.

*1 Court.* Nay, buss this first,

It hath just your eyes ; and such a promising nose,

That, if the sign deceive me not, in time

'Twill prove a notable striker, like his father.

*Belg.* And yet you laid it to another.

*1 Court.* True,

While you were poor ; and it was policy ;

But she that has variety of fathers,

And makes not choice of him that can maintain it,

Ne'er studied Aristotle.

*Lan.* A smart quean !

*Belg.* Why, braches, will you worry me ?

*2 Court.* No, but ease you

Of your golden burthen ; the heavy carriage may

Bring you to a sweating sickness.

*Belg.* Very likely ;

I foam all o'er already.

*1 Court.* Will you come off, sir ?

*Belg.* Would I had ne'er come on ! Hear me with patience,

Or I will anger you. Go to, you know me ;

And do not vex me further : by my sins,

And your diseases, which are certain truths,

Whate'er you think, I am not master, at

This instant, of a livre.

*2 Court.* What, and in

Such a glorious suit !

*Belg.* The liker, wretched things,

To have no money.

*Bawd.* You may pawn your clothes, sir.

*1 Court.* Will you see your issue starve ?

*2 Court.* Or the mothers beg ?

*Belg.* Why, you unconscionable strumpets, would you have me,

Transform my hat to double clouts and biggins ?

My corslet to a cradle ? or my belt

To swaddlebands ? or turn my cloak to blankets ?

Or to sell my sword and spurs, for soap and candles ?

Have you no mercy ? what a chargeable devil

We carry in our breeches !

*Beauf. jun.* Now 'tis time

To fetch him off. [*They come forward.*]

*Enter Beaufort senior.*

*Mont.* Your father does it for us.

*Bawd.* The governor !

*Beauf. sen.* What are these ?

*1 Court.* An it like your lordship,

Very poor spinsters.

*Bawd.* I am his nurse and laundress.

*Belg.* You have nurs'd and launder'd me, hell take you for it !

Vanish !

*Cham.* Do, do, and talk with him hereafter.

*1 Court.* 'Tis our best course.

*2 Court.* We'll find a time to fit him.

[*Exeunt Bawd and Courtezans.*]

*Beauf. sen.* Why in this heat, Belgarde ?

*Belg.* You are the cause of 't.

*Beauf. sen.* Who, I ?

*Belg.* Yes, your pied livery and your gold

Draw these vexations on me ; pray you strip me,

And let me be as I was : I will not lose

The pleasures and the freedom which I had

In my certain poverty, for all the wealth

Fair France is proud of.

*Beauf. sen.* We at better leisure

Will learn the cause of this.

*Beauf. jun.* What answer, sir,

From the admiral ?

*Beauf. sen.* None ; his daughter is removed

To the fort of Montreville, and he himself

In person fled, but where, is not discover'd :

I could tell you wonders, but the time denies me

Fit liberty. In a word, let it suffice  
The power of our great master is contemn'd,  
The sacred laws of God and man profaned ;  
And if I sit down with this injury,  
I am unworthy of my place, and thou  
Of my acknowledgment : draw up all the  
troops ;

As I go, I will instruct you to what purpose.  
Such as have power to punish, and yet spare,  
From fear or from connivance, others ill,  
Though not in act, assist them in their will.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT V.

SCENE I.—*A Street near Malefort's House.*

*Enter Montreville and Servants, with Theocrine, Page, and Waiting-women.*

*Montr.* Bind them, and gag their mouths  
sure ; I alone

Will be your convoy.

1 *Wom.* Madam !

2 *Wom.* Dearest lady !

*Page.* Let me fight for my mistress.

*Serv.* 'Tis in vain,

Little cockerel of the kind.

*Montr.* Away with them,

And do as I command you.

[*Exeunt Servants with Page and  
Waiting-women.*]

*Theoc.* Montreville,

You are my father's friend ; nay more, a  
soldier,

And if a right one, as I hope to find you,  
Though in a lawful war you had surprised  
A city, that bow'd humbly to your pleasure,  
In honour you stand bound to guard a virgin  
From violence ; but in a free estate,  
Of which you are a limb, to do a wrong  
Which noble enemies never consent to,  
Is such an insolence—

*Montr.* How her heart beats !

Much like a partridge in a sparrow's foot,  
That with a panting silence does lament  
The fate she cannot fly from !—Sweet, take  
comfort,

You are safe, and nothing is intended to you,  
But love and service.

*Theoc.* They came never clothed

In force and outrage. Upon what assurance  
(Remembering only that my father lives,  
Who will not tamely suffer the disgrace,)  
Have you presumed to hurry me from his  
house,

And, as I were not worth the waiting on,  
To snatch me from the duty and attendance  
Of my poor servants ?

*Montr.* Let not that afflict you,  
You shall not want observance ; I will be  
Your page, your woman, parasite, or fool,  
Or any other property, provided  
You answer my affection.

*Theoc.* In what kind ?

*Montr.* As you had done young Beaufort's.

*Theoc.* How !

*Montr.* So, lady ;

Or, if the name of wife appear a yoke  
Too heavy for your tender neck, so I  
Enjoy you as a private friend or mistress,  
'Twill be sufficient.

*Theoc.* Blessed angels guard me !

What frontless impudence is this ? what devil  
Hath, to thy certain ruin, tempted thee  
To offer me this motion ? by my hopes  
Of after joys, submission nor repentance  
Shall expiate this foul intent.

*Montr.* Intent !

'Tis more, I'll make it act.

*Theoc.* Ribald, thou darest not :

And if (and with a fever to thy soul)  
Thou but consider that I have a father,  
And such a father, as, when this arrives at  
His knowledge, as it shall, the terror of  
His vengeance, which as sure as fate must  
follow,

Will make thee curse the hour in which I  
taught thee

To nourish these bad hopes ;—and 'tis my  
wonder

Thou darest forget how tender he is of me,  
And that each shadow of wrong done to me,  
Will raise in him a tempest not to be  
But with thy heart-blood calm'd : this, when

I see him—

*Montr.* As thou shalt never.

*Theoc.* Wilt thou murder me ?

*Montr.* No, no, 'tis otherwise determined,  
fool.

The master which in passion kills his slave  
That may be useful to him, does himself  
The injury : know, thou most wretched  
creature,

That father thou presumest upon, that father,  
That, when I sought thee in a noble way,  
Denied thee to me, fancying in his hope  
A higher match, from his excess of dotage,  
Hath in his bowels kindled such a flame  
Of impious and most unnatural lust,  
That now he fears his furious desires  
May force him to do that, he shakes to  
think on.

*Theoc.* O me, most wretched !

*Montr.* Never hope again

To blast him with those eyes : their golden  
beams

Are unto him arrows of death and hell,

But unto me divine artillery.  
 And therefore, since what I, so long in vain  
 Pursued, is offer'd to me, and by him  
 Given up to my possession; do not flatter  
 Thyself with an imaginary hope,  
 But that I'll take occasion by the forelock,  
 And make use of my fortune. As we walk,  
 I'll tell thee more.

*Theoc.* I will not stir.

*Montr.* I'll force thee.

*Theoc.* Help, help!

*Montr.* In vain.

*Theoc.* In me my brother's blood  
 Is punish'd at the height.

*Montr.* The coach there!

*Theoc.* Dear sir—

*Montr.* Tears, curses, prayers, are alike  
 to me;

I can, and must enjoy my present pleasure,  
 And shall take time to mourn for it at leisure.  
 [*He bears her off.*]

SCENE II.—*A Space before the Fort.*

*Enter* Malefort.

I have play'd the fool, the gross fool, to believe  
 The bosom of a friend will hold a secret,  
 Mine own could not contain; and my industry  
 In taking liberty from my innocent daughter,  
 Out of false hopes of freedom to myself,  
 Is, in the little help it yields me, punish'd.  
 She's absent, but I have her figure here;  
 And every grace and rarity about her,  
 Are by the pencil of my memory,  
 In living colours painted on my heart.  
 My fires too, a short interim closed up,  
 Break out with greater fury. Why was I,  
 Since 'twas my fate, and not to be declined,  
 In this so tender-conscienced? Say I had  
 Enjoy'd what I desired, what had it been  
 But incest? and there's something here that  
 tells me

I stand accountable for greater sins  
 I never check'd at. Neither had the crime  
 Wanted a precedent: I have read in story,  
 Those first great heroes, that, for their brave  
 deeds,

Were in the world's first infancy styled gods,  
 Freely enjoy'd what I denied myself.  
 Old Saturn, in the golden age, embraced  
 His sister Ops, and, in the same degree,  
 The Thunderer Juno, Neptune Thetis, and,  
 By their example, after the first deluge,  
 Deucalion Pyrrha. Universal nature,  
 As every day 'tis evident, allows it  
 To creatures of all kinds: the gallant horse  
 Covers the mare to which he was the sire;  
 The bird with fertile seed gives new increase  
 To her that hatch'd him: why should envious  
 man then

Brand that close act, which adds proximity  
 To what's most near him, with the abhorred  
 title

Of incest? or our later laws forbid,  
 What by the first was granted? Let old men,  
 That are not capable of these delights,  
 And solemn superstitious fools, prescribe  
 Rules to themselves; I will not curb my  
 freedom,

But cons'antly go on, with this assurance,  
 I but walk in a path which greater men  
 Have trod before me. Ha! this is the fort:  
 Open the gate! Within, there!

*Enter two Soldiers.*

*1 Sold.* With your pardon  
 We must forbid your entrance.

*Malef.* Do you know me?

*2 Sold.* Perfectly, my lord.

*Malef.* I am [your] captain's friend.

*1 Sold.* It may be so; but till we know his  
 pleasure,  
 You must excuse us.

*2 Sold.* We'll acquaint him with

Your waiting here.

*Malef.* Waiting, slave! he was ever  
 By me commanded.

*1 Sold.* As we are by him.

*Malef.* So punctual! pray you then, in  
 my name entreat

His presence.

*2 Sold.* That we shall do. [*Exeunt Sold.*]

*Malef.* I must use

Some strange persuasions to work him to  
 Deliver her, and to forget the vows,  
 And horrid oaths I, in my madness, made him  
 Take to the contrary: and may I get her  
 Once more in my possession, I will bear her  
 Into some close cave or desert, where we'll end  
 Our lusts and lives together.

*Enter Montreville and Soldiers, upon the  
 Walls.*

*Montr.* Fail not, on  
 The forfeit of your lives, to execute  
 What I command. [*Exeunt Soldiers.*]

*Malef.* Montreville! how is't friend?

*Montr.* I am glad to see you wear such  
 cheerful looks;

The world's well alter'd.

*Malef.* Yes, I thank my stars:

But methinks thou art troubled.

*Montr.* Some light cross,

But of no moment.

*Malef.* So I hope: beware  
 Of sad and impious thoughts; you know  
 how far

They wrought on me.

*Montr.* No such come near me, sir.



I have, like you, no daughter, and much wish

You never had been curs'd with one.

*Malef.* Who, I?

Thou art deceived, I am most happy in her.

*Montr.* I am glad to hear it.

*Malef.* My incestuous fires

To'ards her are quite burnt out ; I love her now

As a father, and no further.

*Montr.* Fix there then

Your constant peace, and do not try a second Temptation from her.

*Malef.* Yes, friend, though she were

By millions of degrees more excellent In her perfections ; nay, though she could borrow

A form angelical to take my frailty,

It would not do : and therefore, Montreville,

My chief delight next her, I come to tell thee,

The governor and I are reconciled, And I confirm'd, and with all possible speed, To make large satisfaction to young Beaufort,

And her, whom I have so much wrong'd ; and for

Thy trouble in her custody, of which I'll now discharge thee, there is nothing in My nerves or fortunes, but shall ever be At thy devotion.

*Montr.* You promise fairly,

Nor doubt I the performance ; yet I would not

Hereafter be reported to have been The principal occasion of your falling Into a relapse : or but suppose, out of The easiness of my nature, and assurance You are firm and can hold out, I could consent ;

You needs must know there are so many lets That make against it, that it is my wonder You offer me the motion ; having bound me, With oaths and imprecations, on no terms, Reasons, or arguments, you could propose, I ever should admit you to her sight, Much less restore her to you.

*Malef.* Are we soldiers,

And stand on oaths !

*Montr.* It is beyond my knowledge

In what we are more worthy, than in keeping Our words, much more our vows.

*Malef.* Heaven pardon all !

How many thousands, in our heat of wine, Quarrels, and play, and in our younger days, In private I may say, between ourselves, In points of love, have we to answer for, Should we be scrupulous that way ?

*M ntr.* You say well :

And very aptly call to memory Two oaths, against all ties and rites of friendship,

Brought by you to me.

*Malef.* No more of that.

*Montr.* Yes, 'tis material, and to the purpose :

The first (and think upon't) was, when I brought you

As a visitant to my mistress then, (the mother Of this same daughter,) whom, with dreadful words,

Too hideous to remember, you swore deeply For my sake never to attempt ; yet then, Then, when you had a sweet wife of your own, I know not with what arts, philtres, and charms

(Unless in wealth and fame you were above me)

You won her from me ; and, her grant obtain'd,

A marriage with the second waited on The burial of the first, that to the world Brought your dead son : this I sat tamely down by,

Wanting, indeed, occasion and power To be at the height revenged.

*Malef.* Yet this you seem'd Freely to pardon.

*Montr.* As perhaps I did.

Your daughter Theocrine growing ripe, (Her mother too deceased,) and fit for marriage,

I was a suitor for her, had your word, Upon your honour, and our friendship made Authentical, and ratified with an oath, She should be mine : but vows with you being like

To your religion, a nose of wax To be turn'd every way, that very day The governor's son but making his approaches Of courtship to her, the wind of your ambition For her advancement, scatter'd the thin sand In which you wrote your full consent to me, And drew you to his party. What hath pass'd since,

You bear a register in your own bosom, That can at large inform you.

*Malef.* Montreville,

I do confess all that you charge me with To be strong truth, and that I bring a cause Most miserably guilty, and acknowledge That though your goodness made me mine own judge,

I should not shew the least compassion Or mercy to myself. O, let not yet My foulness taint your pureness, or my falsehood

Divert the torrent of your loyal faith !  
My ills, if not return'd by you, will add  
Lustre to your much good ; and to o'ercome  
With noble sufferance, will express your  
strength,

And triumph o'er my weakness. If you  
please too,

My black deeds being only known to you,  
And, in surrendering up my daughter, buried,  
You not alone make me your slave, (for I  
At no part do deserve the name of friend,)  
But in your own breast raise a monument  
Of pity to a wretch, on whom with justice  
You may express all cruelty.

*Montr.* You much move me.

*Malef.* O that I could but hope it ! To  
revenge

An injury, is proper to the wishes  
Of feeble women, that want strength to act it :  
But to have power to punish, and yet pardon,  
Peculiar to princes. See ! these knees,

[*Kneels.*

That have been ever stiff to bend to heaven,  
To you are supple. Is there aught beyond  
this

That may speak my submission? or can pride  
(Though I well know it is a stranger to you)  
Desire a feast of more humility,  
To kill her growing appetite?

*Montr.* I required not

To be sought to this poor way ; yet 'tis so far  
A kind of satisfaction, that I will  
Dispense a little with those serious oaths  
You made me take : your daughter shall  
come to you,

I will not say, as you deliver'd her,  
But, as she is, you may dispose of her  
As you shall think most requisite. [*Exit.*

*Malef.* His last words

Are riddles to me. Here the lion's force  
Would have proved useless, and, against  
my nature,

Compell'd me from the crocodile to borrow  
Her counterfeit tears : there's now no turn-  
ing backward.

May I but quench these fires that rage with-  
in me,

And fall what can fall, I am arm'd to bear it !

*Enter Soldiers below, thrusting forth Theo-  
crine ; her garments loose, her hair dishe-  
velled.*

*2 Sold.* You must be packing.

*Theoc.* Hath he robb'd me of  
Mine honour, and denies me now a room  
To hide my shame !

*2 Sold.* My lord the admiral  
Attends your ladyship.

*1 Sold.* Close the port, and leave them :  
[*Exeunt Soldiers.*  
*Malef.* Ha ! who is this ? how alter'd !  
how deform'd !

It cannot be : and yet this creature has  
A kind of a resemblance to my daughter,  
My Theocrinc ! but as different  
From that she was, as bodies dead are, in  
Their best perfections, from what they were  
When they had life and motion.

*Theoc.* 'Tis most true, sir ;  
I am dead indeed to all but misery.  
O come not near me sir, I am infectious :  
To look on me at distance, is as dangerous  
As, from a pinnacle's cloud-kissing spire,  
With giddy eyes to view the deep descent ;  
But to acknowledge me, a certain ruin.  
O, sir !

*Malef.* Speak, Theocrinc, force me not  
To further question ; my fears already  
Have choked my vital spirits.

*Theoc.* Pray you turn away  
Your face and hear me, and with my last  
breath

Give me leave to accuse you : What offence,  
From my first infancy, did I commit,  
That for a punishment you should give up  
My virgin chastity to the treacherous guard  
Of goatish Montreville ?

*Malef.* What hath he done ?

*Theoc.* Abused me, sir, by violence ; and  
this told,

I cannot live to speak more : may the cause  
In you find pardon, but the speeding curse  
Of a ravish'd maid fall heavy, heavy on  
him !—

Beaufort, my lawful love, farewell for ever.  
[*Dies.*

*Malef.* Take not thy flight so soon, im-  
maculate spirit !

'Tis fled already.—How the innocent,  
As in a gentle slumber, pass away !  
But to cut off the knotty thread of life  
In guilty men, must force stern Atropos  
To use her sharp knife often. I would help  
The edge of hers with the sharp point of mine,  
But that I dare not die, till I have rent  
This dog's heart piccemeal. O, that I had  
wings

To scale these walls, or that my hands were  
cannons,

To bore their flinty sides, that I might bring  
The villain in the reach of my good sword !  
The Turkish empire offer'd for his ransom,  
Should not redeem his life. O that my voice  
Were loud as thunder, and with horrid sounds  
Might force a dreadful passage to his ears,  
And through them reach his soul ! Libidinous  
monster !

Foul ravisher ! as thou durst do a deed  
Which forced the sun to hide his glorious face  
Behind a sable mask of clouds, appear,  
And as a man defend it ; or, like me,  
Shew some compunction for it.

*Enter Montreville on the Walls, above.*

*Montr.* Ha, ha, ha !

*Malef.* Is this an object to raise mirth ?

*Montr.* Yes, yes.

*Malef.* My daughter's dead.

*Montr.* Thou hadst best follow her ;

Or, if thou art the thing thou art reported,  
Thou shouldst have led the way. Do tear  
thy hair,  
Like a village nurse, and mourn, while I  
laugh at thee.

Be but a just examiner of thyself,  
And in an equal balance poise the nothing,  
Or little mischief I have done, compared  
With the pond'rous weight of thine : and  
how canst thou

Accuse or argue with me ? mine was a rape,  
And she being in a kind contracted to me,  
The fact may challenge some qualification :  
But thy intent made nature's self run back-  
ward,

And done, had caused an earthquake.

*Enter Soldiers above.*

1 *Sold.* Captain !

*Montr.* Ha !

2 *Sold.* Our outworks are surprised, the  
sentinel slain,

The corps de guard defeated too.

*Montr.* By whom ?

1 *Sold.* The sudden storm and darkness  
of the night

Forbids the knowledge ; make up speedily,  
Or all is lost. [*Exeunt.*]

*Montr.* In the devil's name, whence comes  
this ? [*Exit.*]

[*A storm ; with thunder and lightning.*]

*Malef.* Do, dorage on ! rend open, Æolus,  
Thy brazen prison, and let loose at once  
Thy stormy issue ! Blustring Boreas,  
Aided with all the gales the pilot numbers  
Upon his compass, cannot raise a tempest  
Through the vast region of the air, like that  
I feel within me : for I am possess'd  
With whirlwinds, and each guilty thought  
to me is

A dreadful hurricano. Though this centre  
Labour to bring forth earthquakes, and hell  
open

Her wide-stretch'd jaws, and let out all her  
furies,

They cannot add an atom to the mountain  
Of fears and terrors that each minute threaten  
To fall on my accursed head.—

*Enter the Ghost of young Malefort, naked  
from the waist, full of wounds, leading in  
the Shadow of a Lady, her face leprous.*

Ha ! is't fancy ?

Or hath hell heard me, and makes proof if I  
Dare stand the trial ? Yes, I do ; and now  
I view these apparitions, I feel  
I once did know the substances. For what  
come you ?

Are your aerial forms deprived of language,  
And so denied to tell me, that by signs

[*The Ghosts use various gestures.*]

You bid me ask here of myself ? 'Tis so :  
And there is something here makes answer  
for you.

You come to lauce my sear'd-up conscience ;  
yes,

And to instruct me, that those thunderbolts,  
That hurl'd me headlong from the height of  
glory,

Wealth, honours, worldly happiness, were  
forged

Upon the anvil of my impious wrongs,  
And cruelty to you ! I do confess it ;

And that my lust compelling me to make  
way

For a second wife, I poison'd thee ; and that  
The cause (which to the world is undis-  
cover'd)

That forced thee to shake off thy filial duty  
To me, thy father, had its spring and source  
From thy impatience, to know thy mother,  
That with all duty and obedience served me,  
(For now with horror I acknowledge it,)

Removed unjustly : yet, thou being my son,  
Wert not a competent judge mark'd out by  
heaven

For her revenger, which thy falling by  
My weaker hand confirm'd.— [*Answered still  
by signs.*]—'Tis granted by thee.

Can any penance expiate my guilt,  
Or can repentance save me ?—

[*The Ghosts disappear.*]

They are vanish'd !

What's left to do then ? I'll accuse my fate,  
That did not fashion me for nobler uses :  
For if those stars, cross to me in my birth,  
Had not denied their prosperous influence  
to it,

With peace of conscience, like to innocent  
men,

I might have ceased to be, and not as now,  
To curse my cause of being—

[*He is kill'd with a flash of lightning.*]

*Enter Belgarde, with Soldiers.*

*Belg.* Here's a night

To season my silks ! Buff-jerkin, now I miss  
thee :

Thou hast endured many foul nights, but never

One like to this. How fine my feather looks now!

Just like a capon's tail stol'n out of the pen, And hid in the sink; and yet 't had been dishonour

To have charged without it.—Wilt thou never cease?

'Is the petard, as I gave directions, fasten'd On the portcullis?

1 *Sold.* It hath been attempted By divers, but in vain.

*Belg.* These are your gallants, That at a feast take the first place, poor I Hardly allow'd to follow; marry, in These foolish businesses they are content That I shall have precedence; I much thank Their manners, or their fear. Second me, soldiers;

They have had no time to undermine, or if They have, it is but blowing up, and fetching A caper or two in the air; and I will do it, Rather than blow my nails here.

2 *Sold.* O brave captain! [*Exeunt.*]

*An Alarum; noise and cries within. After a flourish, enter Beaufort senior, Beaufort junior, Montaigne, Chamont, Lanour, Belgarde, and Soldiers, with Montreville prisoner.*

*Montr.* Racks cannot force more from me than I have

Already told you: I expect no favour; I have cast up my accoimt.

*Beauf. sen.* Take you the charge Of the fort, Belgarde; your dangers have deserved it.

*Belg.* I thank your excellence: this will keep me safe yet

From being pull'd by the sleeve, and bid remember

The thing I wot of.

*Beauf. jun.* All that have eyes to weep, Spare one tear with me. Theocrine's dead.

*Mont.* Her father too lies breathless here, I think

Struck dead with thunder.

*Cham.* 'Tis apparent: how His carcass smells!

*Lan.* His face is alter'd to Another colour.

*Beauf. jun.* But here's one retains Her native innocence, that never yet Call'd down heaven's anger.

*Beauf. sen.* 'Tis in vain to mourn For what's past help.—We will refer, bad man,

Your sentence to the king. May we make use of

This great example, and learn from it, that

There cannot be a want of power above, To punish murder, and unlawful love!

[*Exeunt.*]



# The Duke of Milan.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Ludovico Sforza, *supposed duke of Milan.*

Francisco, *his especial favourite.*

Tiberio, } *lords of his council.*

Stephano, }

Graccho, *a creature of Mariana.*

Julio, } *courtiers.*

Giovanni, }

Charles, *the Emperor.*

Pescara, *an imperialist, but a friend to*

*Sforza.*

Hernando, } *captains to the Emperor.*

Medina, }

Alphonso, }

*Three Gentlemen.*

*Fiddlers.*

*An Officer.*

*Two Doctors. Two Couriers.*

*Marcella, the dutchess, wife to Sforza.*

*Isabella, mother to Sforza.*

*Mariana, wife to Francisco, and sister to*

*Sforza.*

*Eugenia, sister to Francisco.*

*A Gentlewoman.*

*Guards, Servants, Attendants.*

SCENE,—*for the first and second acts, in Milan; during part of the third, in the Imperial Camp near Pavia; the rest of the play, in Milan, and its neighbourhood.*

### ACTI.

SCENE I.—*Milan. An outer Room in the Castle.*

*Enter Graccho, Julio, and Giovanni, with Flaggons.*

*Grac.* Take every man his flaggon: give the oath

To all you meet; I am this day the state-drunkard,

I am sure against my will; and if you find A man at ten that's sober, he's a traitor, And, in my name, arrest him.

*Jul.* Very good, sir:

But, say he be a sexton?

*Grac.* If the bells

Ring out of tune, as if the street were burning,

And he cry, 'Tis rare music! bid him sleep: 'Tis a sign he has ta'en his liquor; and if you meet

An officer preaching of sobriety, Unless he read it in Geneva print, Lay him by the heels.

*Jul.* But think you 'tis a fault To be found sober?

*Grac.* It is capital treason:

Or, if you mitigate it, let such pay Forty crowns to the poor: but give a pension To all the magistrates you find singing catches,

Or their wives dancing; for the courtiers reeling,

And the duke himself, I dare not say distemper'd,

But kind, and in his tottering chair carousing, They do the country service. If you meet One that eats bread, a child of ignorance, And bred up in the darkness of no drinking, Against his will you may initiate him

In the true posture; though he die in the taking

His drench, it skills not: what's a private man, For the public honour! We've nought else to think on.

And so, dear friends, copartners in my travails,

Drink hard; and let the health run through the city,

Until it reel again, and with me cry,

Long live the dutchess!

*Enter Tiberio and Stephano.*

*Jul.* Here are two lords;—what think you? Shall we give the oath to them?

*Grac.* Fie! no: I know them, You need not swear them; your lord, by his patent,

Stands bound to take his rouse. Long live the dutchess!

[*Exeunt Grac. Jul. and Gio.*

*Steph.* The cause of this? but yesterday the court

Wore the sad livery of distrust and fear; No smile, not in a buffoon to be seen,

Or common jester: the Great Duke himself

Had sorrow in his face ! which, waited on  
By his mother, sister, and his fairest dutchess,  
Dispersed a silent mourning through all  
Milan ;

As if some great blow had been given the  
state,

Or were at least expected.

*Tib.* Stephano,

I know as you are noble, you are honest,  
And capable of secrets of more weight  
Than now I shall deliver. If that Sforza,  
The present duke, (though his whole life  
hath been

But one continued pilgrimage through  
dangers,

Affrights, and horrors, which his fortune,  
guided

By his strong judgment, still hath overcome,  
Appears now shaken, it deserves no wonder :  
All that his youth hath labour'd for, the  
harvest

Sown by his industry ready to be reap'd too,  
Being now at stake ; and all his hopes con-  
firm'd,

Or lost for ever.

*Steph.* I know no such hazard :

His guards are strong and sure, his coffers  
full ;

The people well affected ; and so wisely  
His provident care hath wrought, that  
though war rages

In most parts of our western world, there is  
No enemy near us.

*Tib.* Dangers, that we see

To threaten ruin, are with ease prevented ;  
But those strike deadly, that come unex-  
pected :

The lightning is far off, yet, soon as seen,  
We may behold the terrible effects  
That it produceth. But I'll help your know-  
ledge,

And make his cause of fear familiar to you.  
The wars so long continued between

The emperor Charles, and Francis the  
French king,

Have interess'd, in either's cause, the most  
Of the Italian princes ; among which, Sforza,  
As one of greatest power, was sought by  
both ;

But with assurance, having one his friend,  
The other lived his enemy.

*Steph.* 'Tis true :

And 'twas a doubtful choice.

*Tib.* But he, well knowing,

And hating too, it seems, the Spanish pride,  
Lent his assistance to the king of France :

Which hath so far incensed the emperor,  
That all his hopes and honours are embark'd  
With his great patron's fortune.

*Steph.* Which stands fair,  
For aught I yet can hear.

*Tib.* But should it change,  
The duke's undone. They have drawn to  
the field

Two royal armies, full of fiery youth ;  
Of equal spirit to dare, and power to do :  
So near intrench'd, that 'tis beyond all hope  
Of human counsel they can e'er be severed,  
Until it be determined by the sword,  
Who hath the better cause : for the success,  
Concludes the victor innocent, and the van-  
quish'd

Most miserably guilty. How uncertain  
The fortune of the war is, children know ;  
And, it being in suspense, on whose fair tent  
Wing'd Victory will make her glorious stand,  
You cannot blame the duke, though he  
appear

Perplex'd and troubled.

*Steph.* But why, then,

In such a time, when every knee should bend  
For the success and safety of his person,  
Are these loud triumphs? in my weak opinion,  
They are unseasonable.

*Tib.* I judge so too ;

But only in the cause to be excused.  
It is the dutchess' birthday, once a year  
Solemnized with all pomp and ceremony ;  
In which the duke is not his own, but hers :  
Nay, every day, indeed, he is her creature,  
For never man so doated ;—but to tell  
The tenth part of his fondness to a stranger,  
Would argue me of fiction.

*Steph.* She's, indeed,

A lady of most exquisite form.

*Tib.* She knows it,

And how to prize it.

*Steph.* I ne'er heard her tainted

In any point of honour.

*Tib.* On my life,

She's constant to his bed, and well deserves  
His largest favours. But, when beauty is  
Stamp'd on great women, great in birth and  
fortune,

And blown by flatterers greater than it is  
'Tis seldom unaccompanied with pride ;  
Nor is she that way free : presuming on  
The duke's affection, and her own desert,  
She bears herself with such a majesty,  
Looking with scorn on all as things beneath  
her,

That Sforza's mother, that would lose no  
part

Of what was once her own, nor his fair sister,  
A lady too acquainted with her worth,  
Will brook it well ; and howsoe'er their hate  
Is smother'd for a time, 'tis more than fear'd  
It will at length break out.

*Steph.* He in whose power it is,  
Turn all to the best!

*Tib.* Come, let us to the court;  
We there shall see all bravery and cost,  
That art can boast of.

*Steph.* I'll bear you company. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Francisco, Isabella, and Mariana.*

*Mari.* I will not go; I scorn to be a spot  
In her proud train.

*Isab.* Shall I, that am his mother,  
Be so indulgent, as to wait on her  
That owes me duty?

*Fran.* 'Tis done to the duke,  
And not to her: and, my sweet wife, re-  
member,  
And, madam, if you please, receive my  
counsel,

As Sforza is your son, you may command  
him;

And, as a sister, you may challenge from  
him

A brother's love and favour: but, this  
granted,

Consider he's the prince, and you his sub-  
jects,

And not to question or contend with her  
Whom he is pleased to honour. Private  
men

Prefer their wives; and shall he, being a  
prince,

And blest with one that is the paradise  
Of sweetness and of beauty, to whose charge  
The stock of women's goodness is given up,  
Not use her like herself?

*Isab.* You are ever forward  
To sing her praises.

*Mari.* Others are as fair;  
I am sure, as noble.

*Fran.* I detract from none,  
In giving her what's due. Were she deform'd,  
Yet being the dutchess, I stand bound to  
serve her;

But, as she is, to admire her. Never wife  
Met with a purer heat her husband's fervour;  
A happy pair, one in the other blest!

She confident in herself he's wholly hers,  
And cannot seek for change; and he secure,  
That 'tis not in the power of man to tempt her.

And therefore to contest with her, that is  
The stronger and the better part of him,  
Is more than folly: you know him of a nature  
Not to be played with; and, should you forget  
To obey him as your prince, he'll not re-  
member

The duty that he owes you.

*Isab.* 'Tis but truth:  
Come, clear our brows, and let us to the  
banquet;

But not to serve his idol.

*Mari.* I shall do  
What may become the sister of a prince;  
But will not stoop beneath it.

*Fran.* Yet, be wise;  
Soar not too high, to fall; but stoop to rise. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—*A State Room in the same.*

*Enter three Gentlemen, setting forth a  
banquet.*

1 *Gent.* Quick, quick, for love's sake I let  
the court put on

Her choicest outside: cost and bravery  
Be only thought of.

2 *Gent.* All that may be had  
To please the eye, the ear, taste, touch, or  
smell,

Are carefully provided.

3 *Gent.* There's a masque:  
Have you heard what's the invention?

1 *Gent.* No matter:  
It is intended for the dutchess' honour;  
And if it give her glorious attributes,  
As the most fair, most virtuous, and the rest,  
'Twill please the duke [Loud music]. They  
come.

3 *Gent.* All is in order.

*Flourish.* *Enter Tiberio, Stephano, Fran-  
cisco, Sforza, Marcella, Isabella, Mariana,  
and Attendants.*

*Sfor.* You are the mistress of the feast—  
sit here,

O my soul's comfort! and when Sforza bows  
Thus low to do you honour, let none think  
The meanest service they can pay my love,  
But as a fair addition to those titles

They stand possess of. Let me glory in  
My happiness, and mighty kings look pale  
With envy, while I triumph in mine own.

O mother, look on her! sister, admire her!  
And, since this present age yields not a  
woman

Worthy to be her second, borrow of  
Times past, and let imagination help,  
Of those canonized ladies Sparta boasts of,  
And, in her greatness, Rome was proud to  
owe,

To fashion one; yet still you must confess,  
The phoenix of perfection ne'er was seen,  
But in my fair Marcella.

*Fran.* She's, indeed,  
The wonder of all times.

*Tib.* Your excellence,

Though I confess, you give her but her own,  
Forces her modesty to the defence  
Of a sweet blush.

*Sfor.* It need not, my Marcella ;  
When most I strive to praise thee, I appear  
A poor detractor : for thou art, indeed,  
So absolute in body and in mind,  
That, but to speak the least part to the  
height,

Would ask an angel's tongue, and yet then  
end  
In silent admiration !

*Isab.* You still court her,  
As if she were a mistress, not your wife.

*Sfor.* A mistress, mother ! she is more  
to me,

And every day deserves more to be sued to.  
Such as are cloy'd with those they have  
embraced,

May think their wooing done : no night  
to me

But is a bridal one, where Hymen lights  
His torches fresh and new ; and those de-  
lights,

Which are not to be clothed in airy sounds,  
Enjoy'd, beget desires as full of heat,  
And jovial fervour, as when first I tasted  
Her virgin fruit.—Blest night ! and be it  
number'd

Amongst those happy ones, in which a  
blessing

Was, by the full consent of all the stars,  
Conferr'd upon mankind.

*Marc.* My worthiest lord !  
The only object I behold with pleasure,—  
My pride, my glory, in a word, my all !  
Bear witness, heaven, that I esteem myself  
In nothing worthy of the meanest praise  
You can bestow, unless it be in this,  
That in my heart I love and honour you.  
And, but that it would smell of arrogance,  
To speak my strong desire and zeal to serve  
you,

I then could say, these eyes yet never saw  
The rising sun, but that my vows and prayers  
Were sent to heaven for the prosperity  
And safety of my lord : nor have I ever  
Had other study, but how to appear  
Worthy your favour ; and that my embraces  
Might yield a fruitful harvest of content  
For all your noble travail, in the purchase  
Of her that's still your servant : By these  
lips,

Which, pardon me, that I presume to  
kiss—

*Sfor.* O swear, for ever swear !

*Marc.* I ne'er will seek  
Delight but in your pleasure : and desire,  
When you are sated with all earthly glories,

And age and honours make you fit for  
heaven,

That one grave may receive us.

*Sfor.* 'Tis believed,  
Believed, my blest one.

*Mari.* How she winds herself  
Into his soul !

*Sfor.* Sit all.—Let others feed  
On those gross cates, while Sforza banquets  
with

Immortal viands ta'en in at his eyes.  
I could live ever thus.—Command the eunuch  
To sing the ditty that I last composed,

*Enter a Courier.*

In praise of my Marcella.—From whence ?

*Cour.* From Pavia, my dread lord.

*Sfor.* Speak, is all lost ?

*Cour.* [*Delivers a letter.*] The letter will  
inform you. [*Exit.*]

*Fran.* How his hand shakes,  
As he receives it !

*Mari.* This is some allay

To his hot passion.

*Sfor.* Though it bring death, I'll read it :

*May it please your excellence to understand, that the very hour I wrote this, I heard a bold defiance delivered by a herald from the emperor, which was cheerfully received by the king of France. The battailes being ready to join, and the vanguard committed to my charge, enforces me to end abruptly.*

*Your Highness's humble servant.*

GASPERO.

*Ready to join !—By this, then, I am nothing,  
Or my estate secure.* [*Aside.*]

*Marc.* My lord.

*Sfor.* To doubt,

Is worse than to have lost ; and to despair,  
Is but to antedate those miseries  
That must fall on us ; all my hopes depending  
Upon this battle's fortune. In my soul,  
Methinks, there should be that imperious  
power,

By supernatural, not usual means,  
T' inform me what I am. The cause con-  
sider'd,

Why should I fear ? The French are bold  
and strong,

Their numbers full, and in their councils  
wise ;

But then, the haughty Spaniard is all fire,  
Hot in his executions ; fortunate

In his attempts ; married to victory :—

Ay, there it is that shakes me. [*Aside.*]

*Fran.* Excellent lady,  
This day was dedicated to your honour ;



One gale of your sweet breath will easily  
Disperse these clouds; and, but yourself,  
there's none

That dare speak to him.

*Marc.* I will run the hazard.—

My lord!

*Sfor.* Ha!—pardon me, Marcelia, I am  
troubled;

And stand uncertain, whether I am master  
Of aught that's worth the owning.

*Marc.* I am yours, sir;

And I have heard you swear, I being safe,  
There was no loss could move you. This  
day, sir,

Is by your gift made mine. Can you revoke  
A grant made to Marcelia? your Marcelia?—  
For whose love, nay, whose honour, gentle  
sir,

All deep designs, and state-affairs deferr'd,  
Be, as you purposed, merry.

*Sfor.* Out of my sight!

[*Throws away the letter.*]

And all thoughts that may strangle mirth  
forsake me.

Fall what can fall, I dare the worst of fate:  
Though the foundation of the earth should  
shrink,

The glorious eye of heaven lose his splen-  
dour,

Supported thus, I'll stand upon the ruins,  
And seek for new life here. Why are you  
sad?

No other sports! by heaven, he's not my  
friend,

That wears one furrow in his face. I was told  
There was a masque.

*Fran.* They wait your highness' pleasure,  
And when you please to have it.

*Sfor.* Bid them enter:

Come, make me happy once again. I am  
rapt—

'Tis not to-day, to-morrow, or the next,  
But all my days, and years, shall be em-  
ploy'd

To do thee honour.

*Marc.* And my life to serve you.

[*A horn without.*]

*Sfor.* Another post! Go hang him, hang  
him, I say;

I will not interrupt my present pleasures,  
Although his message should import my  
head:

Hang him, I say.

*Marc.* Nay, good sir, I am pleased  
To grant a little intermission to you;  
Who knows but he brings news we wish to  
hear,

To heighten our delights.

*Sfor.* As wise as fair!

*Enter another Courier.*

From Gaspero?

*Cour.* That was, my lord.

*Sfor.* How! dead?

*Cour.* [*Delivers a letter.*] With the de-  
livery of this, and prayers,  
To guard your excellency from certain dan-  
gers,

He ceased to be a man.

[*Exit.*]

*Sfor.* All that my fears  
Could fashion to me, or my enemies wish,  
Is fallen upon me.—Silence that harsh music;  
'Tis now unseasonable: a tolling bell,  
As a sad harbinger to tell me, that  
This pamper'd lump of flesh must feast the  
worms,

Is fitter for me:—I am sick.

*Marc.* My lord!

*Sfor.* Sick to the death, Marcelia. Remove  
These signs of mirth; they were ominous,  
and but usher'd

Sorrow and ruin.

*Marc.* Bless us, heaven!

*Isab.* My son.

*Marc.* What sudden change is this?

*Sfor.* All leave the room;

I'll bear alone the burden of my grief,  
And must admit no partner. I am yet  
Your prince, where's your obedience?—Stay,  
Marcelia;

I cannot be so greedy of a sorrow,

In which you must not share.

[*Exeunt Tiberio, Stephano, Francisco,  
Isabella, Mariana, and Attendants.*]

*Marc.* And cheerfully

I will sustain my part. Why look you pale?  
Where is that wonted constancy and cou-  
rage,

That dared the worst of fortune? where is  
*Sforza,*

To whom all dangers that fright common  
men,

Appear'd but panic terrors? why do you  
eye me

With such fix'd looks? Love, counsel, duty,  
service,

May flow from me, not danger.

*Sfor.* O, Marcelia!

It is for thee I fear; for thee, thy *Sforza*  
Shakes like a coward: for myself, unmoved,  
I could have heard my troops were cut in  
pieces,

My general slain, and he, on whom my hopes  
Of rule, of state, of life, had their depen-  
dence,

The king of France, my greatest friend,  
made prisoner

To so proud enemies,

*Marc.* Then you have just cause  
To shew you are a man.

*Sfor.* All this were nothing,  
Though I add to it, that I am assured,  
For giving aid to this unfortunate king,  
The emperor, incens'd, lays his command  
On his victorious army, flesh'd with spoil,  
And bold of conquest, to march up against  
me,

And seize on my estates : suppose that done  
too,

The city ta'en, the kennels running blood,  
The ransack'd temples falling on their saints :  
My mother, in my sight, toss'd on their pikes,  
And sister ravish'd ; and myself bound fast  
In chains, to grace their triumph ; or what  
else

An enemy's insolence could load me with,  
I would be Sforza still. But, when I think  
That my Marcelia, to whom all these  
Are but as atoms to the greatest hill,  
Must suffer in my cause, and for me suffer !  
All earthly torments, nay, even those the  
damn'd

Howl for in hell, are gentle strokes, com-  
pared

To what I feel, Marcelia.

*Marc.* Good sir, have patience :  
I can as well partake your adverse fortune,  
As I thus long have had an ample share  
In your prosperity. 'Tis not in the power  
Of fate to alter me ; for while I am,  
In spite of it, I'm yours.

*Sfor.* But should that will  
To be so [be] forced, Marcelia ; and I live  
To see those eyes I prize above my own,  
Dart favours, though compell'd, upon an-  
other ;

Or those sweet lips, yielding immortal nectar,  
Be gently touch'd by any but myself ;  
Think, think, Marcelia, what a cursed thing  
I were, beyond expression !

*Marc.* Do not feed  
Those jealous thoughts ; the only blessing  
that  
Heaven hath bestow'd on us, more than on  
beasts,

Is, that 'tis in our pleasure when to die.  
Besides, were I now in another's power,  
There are so many ways to let out life,  
I would not live, for one short minute, his ;  
I was born only yours, and I will die so.

*Sfor.* Angels reward the goodness of this  
woman !

*Enter Francisco.*

All I can pay is nothing.—Why, uncall'd  
for ?

*Fran.* It is of weight, sir, that makes me  
thus press

Upon your privacies. Your constant friend,  
The marquis of Pescara ; tired with haste,  
Hath business that concerns your life and  
fortunes,  
And with speed, to impart.

*Sfor.* Wait on him hither.

[*Exit Francisco.*]

And, dearest, to thy closet. Let thy prayers  
Assist my councils.

*Marc.* To spare imprecations  
Against myself, without you I am nothing.

[*Exit.*]

*Sfor.* The marquis of Pescara ! a great  
soldier ;

And, though he serv'd upon the adverse  
party,

Ever my constant friend.

*Re-enter Francisco with Pescara.*

*Fran.* Yonder he walks,  
Full of sad thoughts.

*Pesc.* Blame him not, good Francisco,  
He hath much cause to grieve ; would I  
might end so,

And not add this,—to fear !

*Sfor.* My dear Pescara ;  
A miracle in these times ! a friend, and  
happy,

Cleaves to a falling fortune !

*Pesc.* If it were  
As well in my weak power, in act, to raise it,  
As 'tis to bear a part of sorrow with you,  
You then should have just cause to say,  
Pescara

Look'd not upon your state, but on your  
virtues,

When he made suit to be writ in the list  
Of those you favour'd.—But my haste for-  
bids

All compliment ; thus, then, sir, to the pur-  
pose :

The cause that, unattended, brought me  
hither,

Was not to tell you of your loss, or danger ;  
For fame hath many wings to bring ill  
tidings,

And I presume you've heard it ; but to give  
you

Such friendly counsel, as, perhaps, may make  
Your sad disaster less.

*Sfor.* You are all goodness ;  
And I give up myself to be disposed of,  
As in your wisdom you think fit.

*Pesc.* Thus, then, sir :  
To hope you can hold out against the em-  
peror,

Were flattery in yourself, to your undoing :

Therefore, the safest course that you can take,

Is, to give up yourself to his discretion,  
Before you be compell'd; for, rest assured,  
A voluntary yielding may find grace,  
And will admit defence, at least, excuse:  
But, should you linger doubtful, till his powers

Have seized your person and estates perforce,  
You must expect extremes.

*Sfor.* I understand you;  
And I will put your counsel into act,  
And speedily. I only will take order  
For some domestical affairs, that do  
Concern me nearly, and with the next sun  
Ride with you: in the mean time, my best friend,

Pray take your rest.

*Pesc.* Indeed, I have travell'd hard;  
And will embrace your counsel. [*Exit.*

*Sfor.* With all care,  
Attend my noble friend. Stay you, Francisco.  
You see how things stand with me?

*Fran.* To my grief:  
And if the loss of my poor life could be  
A sacrifice to restore them as they were,  
I willingly would lay it down.

*Sfor.* I think so;  
For I have ever found you true and thankful,

Which makes me love the building I have raised

In your advancement; and repent no grace  
I have conferr'd upon you. And, believe me,  
Though now I should repeat my favours to you,

The titles I have given you, and the means  
Suitable to your honours; that I thought you  
Worthy my sister and my family,  
And in my dukedom made you next myself;  
It is not to upbraid you; but to tell you  
I find you are worthy of them, in your love  
And service to me.

*Fran.* Sir, I am your creature;  
And any shape, that you would have me wear,

I gladly will put on.

*Sfor.* Thus, then, Francisco:  
I now am to deliver to your trust  
A weighty secret; of so strange a nature,  
And 'twill, I know, appear so monstrous to you,

That you will tremble in the execution,  
As much as I am tortured to command it:  
For 'tis a deed so horrid, that, but to hear it,  
Would strike into a ruffian flesh'd in murders,

Or an odourate hangman, soft compassion;  
And yet, Francisco, of all men the dearest,

And from me most deserving, such my state—  
And strange condition is, that thou alone  
Must know the fatal service, and perform it.

*Fran.* These preparations, sir, to work on a stranger,

Or to one unacquainted with your bounties—  
Might appear useful; but to me they are  
Needless impertinencies: for I dare do  
Whate'er you dare command.

*Sfor.* But you must swear it;  
And put into the oath all joys or torments  
That fright the wicked, or confirm the good;  
Not to conceal it only, that is nothing,  
But, whensoever my will shall speak, Strike—  
now!

To fall upon't like thunder.

*Fran.* Minister  
The oath in any way or form you please,  
I stand resolved to take it.

*Sfor.* Thou must do, then,  
What no malevolent star will dare to look  
on,  
It is so wicked: for which men will curse  
thee

For being the instrument; and the blest  
angels

Forsake me at my need, for being the author:

For 'tis a deed of night, of night, Francisco!  
In which the memory of all good actions  
We can pretend to, shall be buried quick:  
Or, if we be remember'd, it shall be  
To fright posterity by our example,  
That have outgone all precedents of villains:  
That were before us; and such as succeed—  
Though taught in hell's black school, shall  
ne'er come near us.—

Art thou not shaken yet?

*Fran.* I grant you move me:  
But to a man confirm'd—

*Sfor.* I'll try your temper:  
What think you of my wife?

*Fran.* As a thing sacred;  
To whose fair name and memory I pay  
gladly

These signs of duty.  
*Sfor.* Is she not the abstract

Of all that's rare, or to be wish'd in woman?  
*Fran.* It were a kind of blasphemy to  
dispute it:

But to the purpose, sir.

*Sfor.* Add too, her goodness,  
Her tenderness of me, her care to please me—  
Her unsuspected chastity, ne'er equal'd;  
Her innocence, her honour:—O, I am lost  
In the ocean of her virtues and her graces,  
When I think of them!

*Fran.* Now I find the end  
Of all your conjurations; there's some service

To be done for this sweet lady. If she have enemies,

That she would have removed——

*Sfor.* Alas ! Francisco,

Her greatest enemy is her greatest lover ;

Yet, in that hatred, her idolater.

One smile of hers would make a savage tame ;

One accent of that tongue would calm the seas,

Though all the winds at once strove there for empire.

Yet I, for whom she thinks all this too little,

Should I miscarry in this present journey,

From whence it is all number to a cipher,

I ne'er return with honour, by thy hand

Must have her murder'd.

*Fran.* Murder'd !—She that loves so,

And so deserves to be beloved again !

And I, who sometimes you were pleased to favour,

Pick'd out the instrument !

*Sfor.* Do not fly off :

What is decreed can never be recall'd ;

'Tis more than love to her, that marks her out

A wish'd companion to me in both fortunes :

And strong assurance of thy zealous faith,

That gives up to thy trust a secret, that

Racks should not have forced from me. O, Francisco !

There is no heaven without her ; nor a hell, Where she resides. I ask from her but justice,

And what I would have paid to her, had sickness,

Or any other accident, divorced

Her purer soul from her unspotted body.

The slavish Indian princes, when they die,

Are cheerfully attend'd to the fire,

By the wife and slave that, living, they loved best,

To do them service in another world :

Nor will I be less honour'd, that love more.

And therefore trifle not, but, in thy looks,

Express a ready purpose to perform

What I command ; or, by Marcellia's soul,

This is thy latest minute.

*Fran.* 'Tis not fear

Of death, but love to you, makes me embrace it ;

But for mine own security, when 'tis done,

What warrant have I ? If you please to sign one,

I shall, though with unwillingness and horror, Perform your dreadful charge.

*Sfor.* I will, Francisco :

But still remember, that a prince's secrets

Are balm conceal'd ; but poison, if discover'd.

I may come back ; then this is but a trial To purchase thee, if it were possible, A nearer place in my affection :—but I know thee honest.

*Fran.* 'Tis a character

I will not part with.

*Sfor.* I may live to reward it. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*The same. An open space before the Castle.*

*Enter Tiberio and Stephano.*

*Steph.* How ! left the court ?

*Tib.* Without guard or retinue

Fitting a prince.

*Steph.* No enemy near, to force him

To leave his own strengths, yet deliver up

Himself, as 'twere, in bonds, to the discretion

Of him that hates him ! 'tis beyond example.

You never heard the motives that induced him

To this strange course ?

*Tib.* No, those are cabinet councils,

And not to be communicated, but

To such as are his own, and sure. Alas !

We fill up empty places, and in public

Are taught to give our suffrages to that

Which was before determined ; and are safe so.

Signior Francisco (upon whom alone His absolute power is, with all strength, conferr'd,

During his absence) can with ease resolve you :

To me they are riddles.

*Steph.* Well, he shall not be

My *Œdipus* ; I'll rather dwell in darkness.

But, my good lord Tiberio, this Francisco

Is, on the sudden, strangely raised.

*Tib.* O sir,

He took the thriving course ; he had a sister,

A fair one too, with whom, as it is rumour'd,

The duke was too familiar ; but she, cast off,

(What promises soever past between them,)

Upon the sight of this, forsook the court,

And since was never seen. To smother this,

As honours never fail to purchase silence,

Francisco first was graced, and, step by step,

Is raised up to this height.

*Steph.* But how is

His absence born ?

*Tib.* Sadly, it seems, by the dutchess ;

For since he left the court,

For the most part she hath kept her private

chamber,

No visitants admitted. In the church,

She hath been seen to pay her pure devotions,

Season'd with tears ; and sure her sorrow's true,

Or deeply counterfeited ; pomp, and state,  
And bravery cast off : and she, that lately  
Rivall'd Poppæa in her varied shapes,  
Or the Egyptian queen, now, widow-like,  
In sable colours, as her husband's dangers  
Strangled in her the use of any pleasure,  
Mourns for his absence.

*Steph.* It becomes her virtue,  
And does confirm what was reported of her.

*Tib.* You take it right : but, on the other side,

The darling of his mother, Mariana,  
As there were an antipathy between  
Her and the dutchess' passions ; and as  
She'd no dependence on her brother's fortune,

She ne'er appear'd so full of mirth.

*Steph.* 'Tis strange.

*Enter Graccho with Fiddlers.*

But see ! her favourite, and accompanied,  
To your report.

*Grac.* You shall scrape, and I will sing  
A scurvy ditty to a scurvy tune,  
Repine who dares.

*Fid.* But if we should offend,  
The dutchess having silenced us ; and these lords

Stand by to hear us.—

*Grac.* They in name are lords  
But I am one in power : and, for the dutchess,  
But yesterday we were merry for her pleasure,  
We now 'll be for my lady's.

*Tib.* Signior Graccho.

*Grac.* A poor man, sir, a servant to the princess ;

But you, great lords and counsellors of state,  
Whom I stand bound to reverence.

*Tib.* Come ; we know  
You are a man in grace.

*Grac.* Fie ! no : I grant,  
I bear my fortunes patiently ; serve the princess,

And have access at all times to her closet,  
Such is my impudence ! when your grave lordships

Are masters of the modesty to attend  
Three hours, nay sometimes four ; and then bid wait

Upon her the next morning.

*Steph.* He derides us.

*Tib.* Pray you, what news is stirring ?  
you know all.

*Grac.* Who, I ? alas ! I've no intelligence  
At home nor abroad ; I only sometimes guess  
The change of the times : I should ask of  
your lordships,

Who are to keep their honours, who to lose them ;

Who the dutchess smiled on last, or on whom frown'd,

You only can resolve me ; we poor waiters  
Deal, as you see, in mirth, and foolish fiddles :  
It is our element ; and—could you tell me  
What point of state 'tis that I am commanded  
To muster up this music, on mine honesty,  
You should much befriend me.

*Steph.* Sirrah, you grow saucy.

*Tib.* And would be laid by the heels.

*Grac.* Not by your lordships,  
Without a special warrant ; look to your own stakes ;

Were I committed, here come those would bail me :

Perhaps, we might change places too.

*Enter Isabella, and Mariana ; Graccho whispers the latter.*

*Tib.* The princess !  
We must be patient.

*Steph.* There is no contending.

*Tib.* See, the informing rogue !

*Steph.* That we should stoop  
To such a mushroom !

*Mari.* Thou dost mistake ; they durst not  
Use the least word of scorn, although provoked,

To anything of mine.—Go, get you home,  
And to your servants, friends, and flatterers,  
number

How many descents you're noble :—look to  
your wives too ;

The smooth-chinned courtiers are abroad.

*Tib.* No way to be a freeman !

[*Exeunt Tiberio and Stephano.*]

*Grac.* Your Excellence hath the best gift  
to dispatch

These arras pictures of nobility,  
I ever read of.

*Mari.* I can speak sometimes.

*Grac.* And cover so your bitter pills with  
sweetness

Of princely language to forbid reply,  
They are greedily swallow'd.

*Isab.* But the purpose, daughter,  
That brings us hither ? Is it to bestow  
A visit on this woman, that, because  
She only would be thought truly to grieve  
The absence and the dangers of my son,  
Proclaims a general sadness ?

*Mari.* If to vex her

May be interpreted to do her honour,  
She shall have many of them. I'll make use  
Of my short reign : my lord now governs all ;  
And she shall know that her idolater,

My brother, being not by now to protect her,  
I am her equal.

*Grac.* Of a little thing,  
It is so full of gall! A devil of this size,  
Should they run for a wager to be spiteful,  
Gets not a horse-head of her. [*Aside.*]

*Mari.* On her birthday,  
We were forced to be merry, and now she's  
musty,

We must be sad, on pain of her displeasure :  
We will, we will ! this is her private chamber,  
Where, like an hypocrite, not a true turtle,  
She seems to mourn her absent mate ; her  
servants

Attending her like mutes : but I'll speak to  
her,

And in a high key too.—Play anything  
That's light and loud enough but to torment  
her,

And we will have rare sport.

[*Music and a song.*]

*Marcellia appears at a window above, in  
black.*

*Isab.* She frowns as if  
Her looks could fright us.

*Mari.* May it please your greatness,  
We heard that your late physic hath not  
work'd ;  
And that breeds melancholy, as your doctor  
tells us :

To purge which, we, that are born your  
highness' vassals,

And are to play the fool to do you service,  
Present you with a fit of mirth. What think  
you

Of a new antic ?

*Isab.* 'Twould shew rare in ladies.

*Mari.* Being inteded for so sweet a  
creature,

Were she but pleased to grace it.

*Isab.* Fie ! she will,  
Be it ne'er so mean ; she's made of courtesy.

*Mari.* The mistress of all hearts. One  
smile, I pray you,

On your poor servants, or a fiddler's fee ;  
Coming from those fair hands, though but a  
ducat,

We will enshrine it as a holy relic.

*Isab.* 'Tis wormwood, and it works.

*Marc.* If I lay by

My fears and griefs, in which you should be  
sharers,

If dotting age could let you but remember,  
You have a son ; or frontless impudence,  
You are a sister ; and, in making answer  
To what was most unfit for you to speak,  
Or me to hear, borrow of my just anger—

*Isab.* A set speech, on my life.

*Mari.* Penn'd by her chaplain.

*Marc.* Yes, it can speak, without instruc-  
tion speak,  
And tell your want of manners, that you are  
rude,  
And saucily rude, too.

*Grac.* Now the game begins.

*Marc.* You durst not, else, on any hire or  
hope,

Remembering what I am, and whose I am,  
Put on the desperate boldness, to disturb  
The least of my retirements.

*Mari.* Note her, now.

*Marc.* For both shall understand, though  
the one presume  
Upon the privilege due to a mother,  
The duke stands now on his own legs, and  
needs

No nurse to lead him.

*Isab.* How, a nurse !

*Marc.* A dry one,  
And useless too :—but I am merciful,  
And dotage signs your pardon.

*Isab.* I defy thee ;

Thee, and thy pardons, proud one !

*Marc.* For you, puppet—

*Mari.* What of me, pine-tree ?

*Marc.* Little you are, I grant,  
And have as little worth, but much less wit ;  
You durst not else, the duke being wholly  
mine,

His power and honour mine, and the alle-  
giance,

You owe him as a subject, due to me—

*Mari.* To you ?

*Marc.* To me : and therefore, as a vassal,  
From this hour learn to serve me, or you'll  
feel

I must make use of my authority,  
And, as a princess, punish it.

*Isab.* A princess !

*Mari.* I had rather be a slave unto a  
Moor,

Than know thee for my equal.

*Isab.* Scornful thing !

Proud of a white face.

*Mari.* Let her but remember  
The issue in her leg.

*Isab.* The charge she puts

The state to, for perfumes.

*Mari.* And howsoe'er

She seems, when she's made up, as she's  
herself,

She stinks above the ground. O that I  
could reach you !

The little one you scorn so, with her nails  
Would tear your painted face, and scratch  
those eyes out.

Do but come down.

*Marc.* Were there no other way,  
But leaping on thy neck, to break my own,  
Rather than be outbraved thus.

[*She retires.*]

*Grac.* Forty ducats  
Upon the little hen ; she's of the kind,  
And will not leave the pit. [*Aside.*]

*Mari.* That it were lawful  
To meet her with a poniard and a pistol !  
But these weak hands shall shew my spleen—

*Re-enter Marcellia below.*

*Marc.* Where are you,  
You modicum, you dwarf !

*Mari.* Here, giantess, here.

*Enter Francisco, Tiberio, Stephano, and  
Guards.*

*Fran.* A tumult in the court !

*Mari.* Let her come on.

*Fran.* What wind hath raised this tem-  
pest ?

Sever them, I command you. What's the  
cause ?

Speak, Mariana.

*Mari.* I am out of breath ;  
But we shall meet, we shall.—And do you  
hear, sir !

Or right me on this monster, (she's three feet  
Too-high for a woman,) or ne'er look to have  
A quiet hour with me.

*Isab.* If my son were here,  
And would endure this, may a mother's curse  
Pursue and overtake him !

*Fran.* O forbear :

In me he's present, both in power and will ;  
And, madam, I much grieve that, in his ab-  
sence,

There should arise the least distaste to move  
you ;

It being his principal, nay, only charge,  
To have you in his absence, served and  
honour'd,

As when himself perform'd the willing office.

*Mari.* This is fine, i' faith.

*Grac.* I would I were well off !

*Fran.* And therefore, I beseech you,  
madam, frown not,

Till most unwittingly he hath deserved it,  
On your poor servant ; to your excellence  
I ever was and will be such ; and lay  
The duke's authority, trusted to me,  
With willingness at your feet.

*Mari.* O base !

*Isab.* We are like

To have an equal judge !

*Fran.* But, should I find  
That you are touch'd in any point of honour,

Or that the least neglect is fall'n upon you,  
I then stand up a prince.

*Fid.* Without reward,

Pray you dismiss us.

*Grac.* Would I were five leagues hence !

*Fran.* I will be partial

To none, not to myself ;  
Be you but pleased to shew me my offence,  
Or if you hold me in your good opinion,  
Name those that have offended you.

*Isab.* I am one,  
And I will justify it.

*Mari.* Thou art a base fellow,

To take her part.

*Fran.* Remember, she's the dutchess.

*Marc.* But used with more contempt, than  
if I were

A peasant's daughter ; baited, and hooted at,  
Like to a common strumpet ; with loud  
noises

Foreed from my prayers ; and my private  
chamber,

Which with all willingness, I would make  
my prison

During the absence of my lord, denied me :  
But if he e'er return—

*Fran.* Were you an actor  
In this lewd comedy ?

*Mari.* Ay, marry was I ;  
And will be one again.

*Isab.* I'll join with her,  
Though you repine at it.

*Fran.* Think not, then, I speak,  
For I stand bound to honour, and to serve  
you ;

But that the duke, that lives in this great  
lady,

For the contempt of him in her, commands  
you

To be close prisoners.

*Isab. Mari.* Prisoners !

*Fran.* Bear them hence ;

This is your charge, my lord Tiberio,  
And, Stephano, this is yours.

*Marc.* I am not cruel,  
But pleased they may have liberty.

*Isab.* Pleased, with a mischief !

*Mari.* I'll rather live in any loathsome  
dungeon,

Than in a paradise at her entreaty :  
And, for you, upstart—

*Steph.* There is no contending.

*Tib.* What shall become of these ?

*Fran.* See them well whip'd,  
As you will answer it.

*Tib.* Now, signior Graeccho,

What think you of your greatness ?

*Grac.* I preach patience,  
And must endure my fortune.

r *Fid.* I was never yet  
At such a hunt's-up, nor was so rewarded.

[*Exeunt all but Francisco and Marcelia.*

*Fran.* Let them first know themselves,  
and how you are

To be served and honour'd ; which, when  
they confess,

You may again receive them to your favour :  
And then it will shew nobly.

*Marc.* With my thanks

The duke shall pay you his, if he return  
To bless us with his presence.

*Fran.* There is nothing

That can be added to your fair acceptance ;  
That is the prize, indeed ; all else are blanks,  
And of no value. As, in virtuous actions,  
The undertaker finds a full reward,  
Although conferr'd upon unthankful men ;  
So, any service done to so much sweetness,  
However dangerous, and subject to  
An ill construction, in your favour finds  
A wish'd, and glorious end.

*Marc.* From you, I take this  
As loyal duty ; but, in any other,  
It would appear gross flattery.

*Fran.* Flattery, madam !

You are so rare and excellent in all things,  
And raised so high upon a rock of goodness,  
As that vice cannot reach you ; who but  
looks on

This temple, built by nature to perfection,  
But must bow to it ; and out of that zeal,  
Not only learn to adore it, but to love it ?

*Marc.* Whither will this fellow ? [*Aside.*

*Fran.* Pardon, therefore, madam,

if an excess in me of humble duty,  
Teach me to hope, and though it be not in  
The power of man to merit such a blessing,  
My piety, for it is more than love,  
May find reward.

*Marc.* You have it in my thanks ;

And, on my hand, I am pleased that you  
shall take

A full possession of it : but, take heed  
That you fix here, and feed no hope beyond  
it ;

If you do, it will prove fatal.

*Fran.* Be it death,

And death with torments tyrants ne'er  
found out,

Yet I must say, I love you.

*Marc.* As a subject ;

And 'twill become you.

*Fran.* Farewell, circumstance !

And since you are not pleased to understand  
me,

But by a plain and usual form of speech ;  
All superstitious reverence laid by,  
I love you as a man, and, as a man,

I would enjoy you. Why do you start, and  
fly me ?

I am no monster, and you but a woman,  
A woman made to yield, and by example  
Told it is lawful : favours of this nature  
Are, in our age, no miracles in the greatest ;  
And, therefore, lady——

*Marc.* Keep off !—O you Powers !——  
Libidinous beast ! and, add to that, un-  
thankful !

A crime, which creatures wanting reason  
fly from.

Are all the princely bounties, favours,  
honours,  
Which, with some prejudice to his own  
wisdom,

Thy lord and raiser hath conferr'd upon  
thee,

In three days' absence buried ? Hath he  
made thee,

A thing obscure, almost without a name,  
The envy of great fortunes ? Have I graced  
thee,

Beyond thy rank, and entertain'd thee, as  
A friend, and not a servant ? and is this,  
This impudent attempt to taint mine  
honour,

The fair return of both our ventured favours !  
*Fran.* Hear my excuse.

*Marc.* The devil may plead mercy,  
And, with as much assurance, as thou yield  
one.

Burns lust so hot in thee ? or is thy pride  
Grown up to such a height, that, but a  
princess,

No woman can content thee ; and, add to it,  
His wife and princess, to whom thou art tied  
In all the bonds of duty ?—Read my life,  
And find one act of mine so loosely carried,  
That could invite a most self-loving fool,  
Set off with all that fortune could throw on  
him,

To the least hope to find way to my favour ;  
And what's the worst mine enemies could  
wish me,

I'll be thy strumpet.

*Fran.* 'Tis acknowledged, madam,  
That your whole course of life hath been a  
pattern

For chaste and virtuous women. In your  
beauty,

Which I first saw, and loved, as a fair  
crystal,

I read your heavenly mind, clear and un-  
tainted ;

And while the duke did prize you to your  
value,

Could it have been in man to pay that duty,  
I well might envy him, but durst not hope



To stop you in your full career of goodness:  
But now I find that he's fall'n from his fortune,

And, howsoever he would appear doting,  
Grown cold in his affection; I presume,  
From his most barbarous neglect of you,  
To offer my true service. Nor stand I bound,

To look back on the courtesies of him,  
That, of all living men, is most unthankful.

*Marc.* Unheard-of impudence!

*Fran.* You'll say I am modest,  
When I have told the story. Can he tax me,

That have received some worldly trifles  
from him,

For being ungrateful; when he, that first  
tasted,

And hath so long enjoy'd, your sweet embraces,

In which all blessings that our frail condition  
Is capable of, are wholly comprehended,  
As cloy'd with happiness, contemns the giver

Of his felicity; and, as he reach'd not  
The masterpiece of mischief which he aims  
at,

Unless he pay those favours he stands bound  
to,

With fell and deadly hate!—You think he  
loves you

With unexampled fervour; nay, dotes on  
you,

As there were something in you more than  
woman:

When, on my knowledge, he long since  
hath wish'd

You were among the dead;—and I, you  
scorn so,

Perhaps, am your preserver.

*Marc.* Bless me, good angels,

Or I am blasted! Lies so false and wicked,  
And fashion'd to so damnable a purpose,

Cannot be spoken by a human tongue.  
My husband hate me! give thyself the lie,

False and accurs'd! Thy soul, if thou hast  
any,

Can witness, never lady stood so bound  
To the unfeign'd affection of her lord,

As I do to my Sforza. If thou wouldst work  
Upon my weak credulity, tell me, rather,

That the earth moves; the sun and stars  
stand still;

The ocean keeps nor floods nor ebbs; or  
that

There's peace between the lion and the  
lamb;

Or that the ravenous eagle and the dove  
Keep in one aerie, and bring up their young;

Or anything that is averse to nature:  
And I will sooner credit it, than that  
My lord can think of me, but as a jewel,  
He loves more than himself, and all the  
world.

*Fran.* O innocence abused! simplicity  
cozen'd!

It were a sin, for which we have no name,  
To keep you longer in this wilful error.

Read his affection here;—*[Gives her a paper.]*  
—and then observe

How dear he holds you! 'Tis his character,  
Which cunning yet could never counterfeit.

*Marc.* 'Tis his hand, I'm resolv'd of it.  
I'll try

What the inscription is.

*Fran.* Pray you, do so.

*Marc.* *[reads.]* You know my pleasure,  
and the hour of Marcelia's death, which fail  
not to execute, as you will answer the contrary,  
not with your head alone, but with  
the ruin of your whole family. And this,  
written with mine own hand, and signed  
with my privy signet, shall be your sufficient  
warrant.

LODOVICO SFORZA.

I do obey it! every word's a poniard,  
And reaches to my heart. *[Swoons.]*

*Fran.* What have I done?

Madam! for heaven's sake, madam!—O my  
fate!

I'll bend her body: this is yet some pleasure:  
I'll kiss her into a new life. Dear lady!—

She stirs. For the duke's sake, for Sforza's  
sake—

*Marc.* Sforza's! stand off; though dead,  
I will be his,

And even my ashes shall abhor the touch  
Of any other.—O unkind, and cruel!

Learn, women, learn to trust in one another;  
There is no faith in man: Sforza is false,

False to Marcelia!

*Fran.* But I am true,

And live to make you happy. All the pomp,  
State, and observance you had, being his,

Compared to what you shall enjoy, when  
mine,

Shall be no more remember'd. Lose his  
memory,

And look with cheerful beams on your new  
creature;

And know, what he hath plotted for your  
good,

Fate cannot alter. If the emperor  
Take not his life, at his return he dies.

And by my hand: my wife, that is his heir,  
Shall quickly follow:—then we reign alone!

For with this arm I'll swim through seas of blood,  
Or make a bridge, arch'd with the bones of men,

But I will grasp my aims in you, my dearest,  
Dearest, and best of women!

*Marc.* Thou art a villain!

All attributes of arch-villains made into one,  
Cannot express thee. I prefer the hate  
Of Sforza, though it mark me for the grave,  
Before thy base affection. I am yet  
Pure and unspotted in my true love to him;  
Nor shall it be corrupted, though he's  
tainted:

Nor will I part with innocence, because  
He is found guilty. For thyself, thou art  
A thing, that, equal with the devil himself,  
I do detest and scorn.

*Fran.* Thou, then, art nothing:

Thy life is in my power, disdainful woman!  
Think on't, and tremble.

*Marc.* No, though thou wert now

To play thy hangman's part.—Thou well  
may'st be

My executioner, and art only fit  
For such employment; but ne'er hope to have  
The least grace from me. I will never see  
thee,

But as the shame of men: so, with my curses  
Of horror to thy conscience in this life,  
And pains in hell hereafter, I spit at thee;  
And, making haste to make my peace with  
heaven,

Expect thee as my hangman. [*Exit.*]

*Fran.* I am lost

In the discovery of this fatal secret.  
Curs'd hope, that flatter'd me, that wrongs  
could make her

A stranger to her goodness! all my plots  
Turn back upon myself; but I am in,  
And must go on: and, since I have put off  
From the shore of innocence, guilt be now  
my pilot!

Revenge first wrought me; murder's his  
twin brother:

One deadly sin, then, help to cure another!  
[*Exit.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The Imperial Camp, before  
Pavia.*

*Enter Medina, Hernando, and Alphonso.*

*Med.* The spoil, the spoil! 'tis that the  
soldier fights for.

Our victory, as yet, affords us nothing  
But wounds and empty honour. We have  
pass'd

The hazard of a dreadful day, and forced  
A passage with our swords through all the  
dangers

That, page-like, wait on the success of war;  
And now expect reward.

*Hern.* Hell put in

The enemy's mind to be desperate, and hold  
out!

Yieldings and compositions will undo us;  
And what is that way given, for the most part,  
Comes to the emperor's coffers to defray  
The charge of the great action, as 'tis rumour'd:

When, usually, some thing in grace, that  
ne'er heard

The cannon's roaring tongue, but at a tri-  
umph,

Puts in, and for his intercession shares  
All that we fought for; the poor soldier left  
To starve, or fill up hospitals.

*Alph.* But, when

We enter towns by force, and carve our-  
selves,

Pleasure with pillage, and the richest wines  
Open our shrunk-up veins, and pour into  
them

New blood and fervour—

*Med.* I long to be at it;

To see these chuffs, that every day may  
spend

A soldier's entertainment for a year,  
Yet make a third meal of a bunch of raisins;  
These sponges, that suck up a kingdom's  
fat,

Battering like scarabs in the dung of  
peace,

To be squeezed out by the rough hand of  
war;

And all that their whole lives have heap'd  
together,

By cozenage, perjury, or sordid thrift,  
With one gripe to be ravish'd.

*Hern.* I would be tousing

Their fair madonas, that in little dogs,  
Monkeys, and paraquittos, consume thou-  
sands;

Yet, for the advancement of a noble action,  
Repine to part with a poor piece of eight:  
War's plagues upon them! I have seen  
them stop

Their scornful noses first, then seem to  
swoon,

At sight of a buff jerkin, if it were not  
Perfumed, and hid with gold: yet these  
nice wantons,

Spurr'd on by lust, cover'd in some disguise,  
To meet some rough court-stallion, and be  
leap'd,

Durst enter into any common brothel,

Though all varieties of stink contend there ;  
Yet praise the entertainment.

*Med.* I may live

To see the tatter'd st rascals of my troop  
Drag them out of their closets, with a ven-  
geance !

When neither threat'ning, flattering, kneel-  
ing, howling,

Can ransom one poor jewel, or redeem  
Themselves, from their blunt wooing.

*Hern.* My main hope is,

To begin the sport at Milan : there's enough,  
And of all kinds of pleasure we can wish for,  
To satisfy the most covetous.

*Alph.* Every day

We look for a remove.

*Med.* For Lodowick Sforza,

The duke of Milan, I, on mine own know-  
ledge,

Can say thus much : he is too much a soldier,  
Too confident of his own worth, too rich  
too,

And understands too well the emperor hates  
him,

To hope for composition.

*Alph.* On my life,

We need not fear his coming in.

*Hern.* On mine,

I do not wish it : I had rather that,  
To shew his valour, he'd put us to the trouble  
To fetch him in by the ears.

*Med.* The emperor !

*Flourish.* Enter Charles, Pescara, and  
Attendants.

*Charl.* You make me wonder :—nay, it is  
no counsel,

You may partake it, gentlemen : who'd have  
thought,

That he, that scorn'd our proffer'd amity  
When he was sued to, should, ere he be  
summon'd,

(Whether persuaded to it by base fear,  
Or flatter'd by false hope, which, 'tis uncer-  
tain,)

First kneel for mercy ?

*Med.* When your majesty

Shall please to instruct us who it is, we may  
Admire it with you.

*Charl.* Who, but the duke of Milan,

The right hand of the French ! of all that  
stand

In our displeasure, whom necessity  
Compels to seek our favour, I would have  
sworn

Sforza had been the last.

*Hern.* And should he writ so,

In the list of those you pardon. Would his  
city

Had rather held us out a siege, like Troy,  
Than, by a feign'd submission, he should  
cheat you

Of a just revenge ; or us, of those fair glories  
We have sweat blood to purchase !

*Med.* With your honour

You cannot hear him.

*Alph.* The sack alone of Milan

Will pay the army.

*Charl.* I am not so weak,

To be wrought on, as you fear ! nor ignorant  
That money is the sinew of the war ;

And on what terms soever he seek peace,

'Tis in our power to grant it, or deny it :

Yet, for our glory, and to shew him that  
We've brought him on his knees, it is re-  
solved

To hear him as a suppliant. Bring him in ;  
But let him see the effects of our just anger,  
In the guard that you make for him.

[Exit Pescara.

*Hern.* I am now

Familiar with the issue ; all plagues on it !

He will appear in some dejected habit,

His countenance suitable, and, for his order,

A rope about his neck : then kneel and tell

Old stories, what a worthy thing it is

To have the power, and not to use it ; then  
add to that

A tale of king Tigranes, and great Pompey,  
Who said, forsooth, and wisely ! 'twas more

honour

To make a king than kill one ; which, applied  
To the emperor, and himself, a pardon's

granted

To him an enemy ; and we, his servants,

Condemn'd to beggary. [Aside to Med.

*Med.* Yonder he comes ;

But not as you expected.

*Re-enter Pescara with Sforza, strongly  
guarded.*

*Alph.* He looks as if

He would outface his dangers.

*Hern.* I am cozen'd :

A suitor, in the devil's name !

*Med.* Hear him speak.

*Sfor.* I come not, emperor, to invade thy  
mercy,

By fawning on thy fortune ; nor bring with me  
Excuses, or denials. I profess,

And with a good man's confidence, even  
this instant

That I am in thy power, I was thine enemy ;  
Thy deadly and vow'd enemy : one that

wish'd

Confusion to thy person and estates ;

And with my utmost powers, and deepest  
counsels,

Had they been truly follow'd, further'd it.  
Nor will I now, although my neck were under  
The hangman's axe, with one poor syllable  
Confess, but that I honour'd the French king,  
More than thyself, and all men.

*Med.* By Saint Jacques,  
This is no flattery.

*Hern.* There is fire and spirit in't ;  
But not long-lived, I hope,

*Sfor.* Now give me leave,  
My hate against thyself, and love to him  
Freely acknowledged, to give up the reasons  
That make me so affected : In my wants  
I ever found him faithful ; had supplies  
Of men and monies from him ; and my  
hopes,

Quite sunk, were, by his grace, buoy'd up  
again ;

He was, indeed, to me, as my good angel  
To guard me from all dangers. I dare speak,  
Nay, must and will, his praise now, in as  
high

And loud a key, as when he was thy equal.—  
The benefits he sow'd in me, met not  
Unthankful ground, but yielded him his own  
With fair increase, and I still glory in it.

And, though my fortunes, poor, compared  
to his,

And Milan, weigh'd with France, appear as  
nothing,

Are in thy fury burnt, let it be mention'd,  
They served but as small tapers to attend  
The solemn flame at this great funeral ;  
And with them I will gladly waste myself,  
Rather than undergo the imputation  
Of being base, or unthankful.

*Alph.* Nobly spoken !

*Hern.* I do begin, I know not why, to  
hate him

Less than I did.

*Sfor.* If that, then, to be grateful  
For courtesies received, or not to leave  
A friend in his necessities, be a crime  
Amongst you Spaniards, which other nations  
That, like you, aim'd at empire, loved, and  
cherish'd

Where'er they found it, Sforza brings his head  
To pay the forfeit. Nor come I as a slave,  
Pinion'd and fetter'd, in a squalid weed,  
Falling before thy feet, kneeling and howling,  
For a forestall'd remission : that were poor,  
And would but shame thy victory ; for con-  
quest

Over base foes, is a captivity,  
And not a triumph. I ne'er feared to die,  
More than I wish'd to live. When I had  
reach'd

My ends in being a duke, I wore these robes,  
This crown upon my head, and to my side

This sword was girt ; and witness truth,  
that, now

'Tis in another's power, when I shall part  
With them and life together, I'm the same :  
My veins then did not swell with pride ;  
nor now

Shrink they for fear. Know, sir, that Sforza  
stands

Prepared for either fortune.

*Hern.* As I live,

I do begin strangely to love this fellow ;  
And could part with three quarters of my  
share in

The promised spoil, to save him.

*Sfor.* But, if example

Of my fidelity to the French, whose honours,  
Titles, and glories, are now mix'd with yours,  
As brooks, devour'd by rivers, lose their  
names,

Has power to invite you to make him a  
friend,

That hath given evident proof he knows to  
love,

And to be thankful : this my crown, now  
yours,

You may restore me, and in me instruct  
These brave commanders, should your for-  
tune change,

Which now I wish not, what they may  
expect

From noble enemies, for being faithful.

The charges of the war I will defray,

And, what you may, not without hazard,  
force,

Bring freely to you : I'll prevent the cries  
Of murder'd infants, and of ravish'd maids,  
Which in a city sack'd, call on heaven's  
justice,

And stop the course of glorious victories :

And, when I know the captains and the  
soldiers,

That have in the late battle done best service,  
And are to be rewarded, I myself,

According to their quality and merits,

Will see them largely recompensed.—I have  
said,

And now expect my sentence.

*Alph.* By this light,

'Tis a brave gentleman.

*Med.* How like a block

The emperor sits !

*Hern.* He hath deliver'd reasons,

Especially in his purpose to enrich  
Such as fought bravely, (I myself am one,  
I care not who knows it,) as I wonder that  
He can be so stupid. Now he begins to stir :  
Mercy, an't be thy will !

*Charl.* Thou hast so far

Outgone my expectation, noble Sforza,

For such I hold thee ;—and true constancy,  
Raised on a brave foundation, bears such  
palm

And privilege with it, that where we be-  
hold it,

Though in an enemy, it does command us  
To love and honour it. By my future hopes,  
I am glad for thy sake, that in seeking favour,  
Thou did'st not borrow of vice her indirect,  
Crooked, and abject means ; and for mine  
own,

That, since my purposes must now be  
changed

Touching thy life and fortunes, the world  
cannot

Tax me of levity in my settled counsels ;  
I being neither wrought by tempting bribes,  
Nor servile flattery ; but forced into it  
By a fair war of virtue.

*Hern.* This sounds well.

*Charl.* All former passages of hate be  
huried :

For thus with open arms I meet thy love,  
And as a friend embrace it ; and so far  
I am from robbing thee of the least honour,  
That with my hands, to make it sit the faster,  
I set thy crown once more upon thy head ;  
And do not only style thee, Duke of Milan,  
But vow to keep thee so. Yet, not to take  
From others to give only to myself,  
I will not hinder your magnificence  
To my commanders, neither will I urge it ;  
But in that, as in all things else, I leave you  
To be your own disposer.

[*Flourish. Exit with Attendants.*]

*Sfor.* May I live

To seal my loyalty, though with loss of life,  
In some brave service worthy Cæsar's favour,  
And I shall die most happy ! Gentlemen,  
Receive me to your loves ; and, if henceforth  
There can arise a difference between us,  
It shall be in a noble emulation  
Who hath the fairest sword, or dare go  
farthest,

To fight for Charles the emperor.

*Hern.* We embrace you,

As one well read in all the points of honour :  
And there we are your scholars.

*Sfor.* True ; but such

As far outstrip the master. We'll contend  
In love hereafter : in the meantime, pray you,  
Let me discharge my debt, and, as an earnest  
Of what's to come, divide this cabinet :  
In the small body of it there are jewels  
Will yield a hundred thousand pistolets,  
Which honour me to receive.

*Med.* You bind us to you.

*Sfor.* And when great Charles commands  
me to his presence,

If you will please to excuse my abrupt de-  
parture,

Designs that most concern me, next this  
mercy,

Calling me home, I shall hereafter meet you,  
And gratify the favour.

*Hern.* In this, and all things,

We are your servants.

*Sfor.* A name I ever owe you.

[*Exeunt Medina, Hernando, and  
Alphonso.*]

*Pesc.* So, sir ; this tempest is well over-  
blown,

And all things fall out to our wishes : but,  
In my opinion, this quick return,  
Before you've made a party in the court  
Among the great ones, (for these needy  
captains

Have little power in peace,) may beget  
danger,

At least suspicion.

*Sfor.* Where true honour lives,

Doubt hath no being : I desire no pawn  
Beyond an emperor's word, for my assurance.  
Besides, Pescara, to thyself, of all men,  
I will confess my weakness :—though my  
state

And crown's restored me, though I am in  
grace,

And that a little stay might be a step  
To greater honours, I must hence. Alas !  
I live not here ; my wife, my wife, Pescara,  
Being absent, I am dead. Prithee, excuse,  
And do not chide, for friendship's sake, my  
fondness,

But ride along with me ; I'll give you reasons,  
And strong ones, to plead for me.

*Pesc.* Use your own pleasure ;

I'll bear you company,

*Sfor.* Farewell, grief ! I am stored with  
Two blessings most desired in human life,  
A constant friend, an unsuspected wife.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—Milan. *A Room in the Castle.*

*Enter an Officer with Graccho.*

*Offic.* What I did, I had warrant for ; you  
have tasted

My office gently, and for those soft strokes,  
Flea-bitings to the jerks I could have lent  
you,

There does belong a feeling.

*Grac.* Must I pay

For being tormented, and dishonour'd ?

*Offic.* Fie ! no,

Your honour's not impair'd in't. What's the  
letting out

Of a little corrupt blood, and the next way  
too ?

There is no surgeon like me, to take off  
A courtier's itch that's rampant at great  
ladies,

Or turns knave for preferment, or grows  
proud

Of his rich cloaks and suits, though got by  
brokage,

And so forgets his betters.

*Grac.* Very good, sir :

But am I the first man of quality

That e'er came under your fingers ?

*Offic.* Not by a thousand ;

And they have said I have a lucky hand too :

Both men and women of all sorts have bow'd

Under this sceptre. I have had a fellow

That could endite, forsooth, and make fine  
metres

To tinkle in the ears of ignorant madams,

That, for defaming of great men, was sent  
me

Threaddbare and lousy, and in three days  
after,

Discharged by another that set him on. I  
have seen him

Cap à pié gallant, and his stripes wash'd off  
With oil of angels.

*Grac.* 'Twas a sovereign cure.

*Offic.* There was a sectary too, that would  
not be

Conformable to the orders of the church,

Nor yield to any argument of reason,

But still rail at authority, brought to me,

When I had worm'd his tongue, and truss'd  
his haunches,

Grew a fine pulpit man, and was benefited :  
Had he not cause to thank me ?

*Grac.* There was physic

Was to the purpose.

*Offic.* Now, for women, sir,

For your more consolation, I could tell you

Twenty fine stories, but I'll end in one,

And 'tis the last that's memorable.

*Grac.* Prithee, do ;

For I grow weary of thee.

*Offic.* There was lately

A fine she-waiter in the court, that doted

Extremely of a gentleman, that had

His main dependence on a signior's favour

I will not name, but could not compass him  
On any terms. This wanton, at dead mid-  
night,

Was found at the exercise behind the arras,  
With the 'foresaid signior : he got clear off,

But she was seized on, and, to save his  
honour,

Endured the lash ; and, though I made her  
often

Curvet and caper, she would never tell

Who play'd at pushpin with her.

*Grac.* But what follow'd ?

Prithee be brief.

*Offic.* Why this, sir : She deliver'd,  
Had store of crowns assign'd her by her  
patron,

Who forced the gentleman, to save her credit,

To marry her, and say he was the party

Found in Lob's pound : so she, that, before,  
gladly

Would have been his whore, reigns o'er him  
as his wife ;

Nor dares he grumble at it. Speak but  
truth, then,

Is not my office lucky ?

*Grac.* Go, there's for thee ;

But what will be my fortune ?

*Offic.* If you thrive not

After that soft correction, come again.

*Grac.* I thank you, knave.

*Offic.* And then, knave, I will fit you.

[*Exit.*

*Grac.* Whipt like a rogue ! no lighter  
punishment serve

To balance with a little mirth ! 'Tis well ;

My credit sunk for ever, I am now

Fit company only for pages and for footboys,

That have perused the porter's lodge.

*Enter Julio and Giovanni.*

*Giov.* See, Julio,

Yonder the proud slave is. How he looks  
now,

After his castigation !

*Ful.* As he came

From a close fight at sea under the hatches,

With a she-Dunkirk, that was shot before

Between wind and water ; and he hath  
sprung a leak too,

Or I am cozen'd.

*Giov.* Let's be merry with him.

*Grac.* How they stare at me ! am I turn'd  
to an owl ?—

The wonder, gentlemen ?

*Ful.* I read, this morning,

Strange stories of the passive fortitude

Of men in former ages, which I thought

Impossible, and not to be believed :

But now I look on you, my wonder ceases.

*Grac.* The reason, sir ?

*Ful.* Why, sir, you have been whipt,  
Whipt, signior Graccho ; and the whip, I  
take it,

Is to a gentleman, the greatest trial

That may be of his patience.

*Grac.* Sir, I'll call you

To a strict account for this.

*Giov.* I'll not deal with you,

Unless I have a beadle for my second :

And then I'll answer you.

*Jul.* Farewell, poor Graccho.

[*Exeunt* Julio and Giovanni.]

*Grac.* Better and better still. If ever wrongs

Could teach a wretch to find the way to vengeance,

*Enter* Francisco and a Servant.

Hell now inspire me! How, the lord protector!

My judge; I thank him! Whither thus in private?

I will not see him. [*Stands aside.*]

*Fran.* If I am sought for, Say I am indisposed, and will not hear Or suits, or suitors.

*Serv.* But, sir, if the princess Enquire, what shall I answer?

*Fran.* Say, I am rid Abroad to take the air; but by no means Let her know I'm in court.

*Serv.* So I shall tell her. [*Exit.*]

*Fran.* Within there, ladies!

*Enter* a Gentlewoman.

*Gentlew.* My good lord, your pleasure?

*Fran.* Prithee, let me beg thy favour for access

To the dutchess.

*Gentlew.* In good sooth, my lord, I dare not;

She's very private.

*Fran.* Come, there's gold to buy thee A new gown, and a rich one.

*Gentlew.* I once swore

If e'er I lost my maidenhead, it should be With a great lord, as you are; and, I know not how,

I feel a yielding inclination in me, If you have appetite.

*Fran.* Pox on thy maidenhead!

Where is thy lady?

*Gentlew.* If you venture on her, She's walking in the gallery; perhaps, You will find her less tractable.

*Fran.* Bring me to her.

*Gentlew.* I fear you'll have cold entertainment, when

You are at your journey's end; and 'twere discretion

To take a snatch by the way.

*Fran.* Prithee, leave fooling;

My page waits in the lobby; give him sweetmeats;

He is train'd up for his master's ease, And he will cook thee.

[*Exeunt* Fran. and Gentlew.]

*Grac.* A brave discovery beyond my hope, A plot even offer'd to my hand to work on!

If I am dull now, may I live and die The scorn of worms and slaves!—Let me consider:

My lady and her mother first committed, In the favour of the dutchess; and I whipt! That, with an iron pen, is writ in brass On my tough heart, now grown a harder metal.—

And all his bribed approaches to the dutchess. To be conceal'd! good, good. This to my lady Deliver'd, as I'll order it, runs her mad.— But this may prove but courtship! let it be, I care not, so it feed her jealousy. [*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter* Marcelia and Francisco.

*Marc.* Believe thy tears or oaths! can it be hoped,

After a practice so abhorr'd and horrid, Repentance e'er can find thee?

*Fran.* Dearest lady, Great in your fortune, greater in your goodness,

Make a superlative of excellence, In being greatest in your saving mercy.

I do confess, humbly confess my fault, To be beyond all pity; my attempt

So barbarously rude, that it would turn A saint-like patience into savage fury.

But you, that are all innocence and virtue, No spleen or anger in you of a woman,

But when a holy zeal to piety fires you, May, if you please, impute the fault to love.

Or call it beastly lust, for 'tis no better: A sin, a monstrous sin! yet with it many That did prove good men after, have been tempted;

And, though I'm crooked now, 'tis in your power

To make me straight again.

*Marc.* Is't possible

This can be cunning! [*Aside.*]

*Fran.* But, if no submission, Nor prayers can appease you, that you may know

'Tis not the fear of death that makes me sue thus,

But a loath'd detestation of my madness, Which makes me wish to live to have your pardon;

I will not wait the sentence of the duke, Since his return is doubtful, but I myself

Will do a fearful justice on myself, No witness by but you, there being no more—

When I offended. Yet, before I do it, For I perceive in you no signs of mercy,

I will disclose a secret, which dying with me, May prove your ruin.

*Marc.* Speak it ; it will take from  
The burthen of thy conscience.

*Fran.* Thus, then, madam ;  
The warrant by my lord sign'd for your  
death,

Was but conditional ; but you must swear  
By your unspotted truth, not to reveal it,  
Or I end here abruptly.

*Marc.* By my hopes  
Of joys hereafter. On.

*Fran.* Nor was it hate  
That forced him to it, but excess of love.  
*And, if I ne'er return,* (so said great Sforza,)

*No living man deserving to enjoy  
My best Marcelia, with the first new  
That I am dead, (for no man after me  
Must e'er enjoy her,) fail not to kill her—  
But till certain proof*

*Assure thee I am lost,* (these were his words,)  
*Observe and honour her, as if the soul  
Of woman's goodness only dwelt in hers.*

This trust I have abused, and basely  
wrong'd ;

And, if the excell'g pity of your mind  
Cannot forgive it, as I dare not hope it,  
Rather than look on my offended lord,  
I stand resolved to punish it.

[*Draws his sword.*

*Marc.* Hold ! 'tis forgiven,  
And by me freely pardon'd. In thy fair life  
Hereafter, study to deserve this bounty,  
Which thy true penitence, such I believe it,  
Against my resolution hath forced from me.—  
But that my lord, my Sforza, should esteem  
My life fit only as a page, to wait on  
The various course of his uncertain fortunes ;  
Or cherish in himself that sensual hope,  
In death to know me as a wife, afflicts me ;  
Nor does his envy less deserve mine anger,  
Which though, such is my love, I would not  
nourish,

Will slack the ardour that I had to see him  
Return in safety.

*Fran.* But if your entertainment  
Should give the least ground to his jealousy,  
To raise up an opinion I am false,  
You then destroy your mercy. Therefore,  
madam,

(Though I shall ever look on you as on  
My life's preserver, and the miracle  
Of human pity,) would you but vouchsafe,  
In company, to do me those fair graces,  
And favours, which your innocence and  
honour

May safely warrant, it would to the duke,  
I being to your best self alone known guilty,  
Make me appear most innocent.

*Marc.* Have your wishes ;  
And something I may do to try his temper,

At least, to make him know a constant wife  
Is not so slaved to her husband's doting  
humours,

But that she may deserve to live a widow,  
Her fate appointing it.

*Fran.* It is enough ;  
Nay, all I could desire, and will make way  
To my revenge, which shall disperse itself  
On him, on her, and all.

[*Aside and exit.—Shout and flourish.*

*Marc.* What shout is that ?

*Enter Tiberio and Stephano.*

*Tib.* All happiness to the dutchess, that  
may flow

From the duke's new and wish'd return !

*Marc.* He's welcome.

*Steph.* How coldly she receives it !

*Tib.* Observe the encounter.

*Flourish.* *Enter Sforza, Pescara, Isabella,  
Mariana, Graccho, and Attendants.*

*Mari.* What you have told me, Graccho,  
is believed,

And I'll find time to stir in't.

*Grac.* As you see cause ;

I will not do ill offices.

*Sfor.* I have stood

Silent thus long, Marcelia, expecting  
When, with more than a greedy haste, thou  
wouldst

Have flown into my arms, and on my lips  
Have printed a deep welcome. My desires  
To glass myself in these fair eyes, have  
borne me

With more than human speed : nor durst I  
stay

In any temple, or to any saint  
To pay my vows and thanks for my return,  
Till I had seen thee.

*Marc.* Sir, I am most happy

To look upon you safe, and would express  
My love and duty in a modest fashion,  
Such as might suit with the behaviour  
Of one that knows herself a wife, and how  
To temper her desires, not like a wanton  
Fired with hot appetite ; nor can it wrong me  
To love discreetly.

*Sfor.* How ! why, can there be  
A mean in your affections to Sforza ?  
Or any act, though ne'er so loose, that may  
Invite or heighten appetite, appear  
Immodest or uncomely ? Do not move me ;  
My passions to you are in extremes,  
And know no bounds :—come ; kiss me.

*Marc.* I obey you.

*Sfor.* By all the joys of love, she does  
salute me  
As if I were her grandfather ! What witch,



With cursed spells, hath quench'd the  
amorous heat

That lived upon these lips? Tell me,  
Marcelia,

And truly tell me, is't a fault of mine  
That hath begot this coldness? or neglect  
Of others, in my absence?

*Marc.* Neither, sir:

I stand indebted to your substitute,  
Noble and good Francisco, for his care  
And fair observance of me: there was nothing  
With which you, being present, could supply  
me,

That I dare say I wanted.

*Sfor.* How!

*Marc.* The pleasures

That sacred Hymen warrants us, excepted,  
Of which, in troth, you are too great a  
doter;

And there is more of beast in it than man.  
Let us love temperately; things violent last  
not,

And too much dotage rather argues folly  
Than true affection.

*Grac.* Observe but this,

And how she praised my lord's care and  
observance;

And then judge, madam, if my intelligence  
Have any ground of truth.

*Mari.* No more; I mark it.

*Steph.* How the duke stands!

*Tib.* As he were rooted there,  
And had no motion.

*Pesc.* My lord, from whence  
Grows this amazement?

*Sfor.* It is more, dear my friend;

For I am doubtful whether I've a being,  
But certain that my life's a burden to me.  
Take me back, good Pescara, shew me to  
Cæsar

In all his rage and fury; I disclaim  
His mercy: to live now, which is his gift,  
Is worse than death, and with all studied  
torments.

Marcelia is unkind, nay, worse, grown cold  
In her affection; my excess of fervour,  
Which yet was never equall'd, grown dis-  
tasteful.

—But have thy wishes, woman; thou shalt  
know

That I can be myself, and thus shake off  
The fetters of fond dotage. From my sight,  
Without reply; for I am apt to do  
Something I may repent.—[*Exit Marc.*—  
Oh! who would place

His happiness in most accursed woman,  
In whom obsequiousness engenders pride;  
And harshness deadly hatred! From this  
hour

I'll labour to forget there are such creatures;  
True friends be now my mistresses. Clear  
your brows,

And, though my heart-strings crack for't I  
will be

To all a free example of delight.

We will have sports of all kinds, and pro-  
pound

Rewards to such as can produce us new;  
Unsatisfied, though we surfeit in their store;  
And never think of curs'd Marcelia more.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*The same. A Room in the  
Castle.*

*Enter Francisco and Graccho.*

*Fran.* And is it possible thou shouldst  
forget

A wrong of such a nature, and then study  
My safety and content?

*Grac.* Sir, but allow me

Only to have read the elements of courtship,  
Not the abstruse and hidden arts to thrive  
there;

And you may please to grant me so much  
knowledge,

That injuries from one in grace, like you,  
Are noble favours. Is it not grown common,  
In every sect, for those that want, to suffer  
From such as have to give? Your captain  
cast,

If poor, though not thought daring, but ap-  
proved so,

To raise a coward into name, that's rich,  
Suffers disgraces publicly; but receives  
Rewards for them in private.

*Fran.* Well observed.

Put on; we'll be familiar, and discourse  
A little of this argument. That day,  
In which it was first rumour'd, then con-  
firm'd,

Great Sforza thought me worthy of his  
favour,

I found myself to be another thing;  
Not what I was before. I passed then  
For a pretty fellow, and of pretty parts too,  
And was perhaps received so; but, once  
raised,

The liberal courtiers made me master of  
Those virtues which I ne'er knew in myself:

If I pretended to a jest, 'twas made one  
By their interpretation; if I offer'd  
To reason of philosophy, though absurdly,  
They had helps to save me, and without a  
blush

Would swear that I, by nature, had more knowledge,

Than others could acquire by any labour :  
Nay, all I did, indeed, which in another  
Was not remarkable, in me shew'd rarely.

*Grac.* But then they tasted of your bounty.

*Fran.* True :

They gave me those good parts I was not born to,

And, by my intercession, they got that  
Which, had I cross'd them, they durst not  
have hoped for.

*Grac.* All this is oracle : and shall I, then,  
For a foolish whipping, leave to honour  
him,

That holds the wheel of fortune ? no ; that  
savours

Too much of the ancient freedom. Since  
great men

Receive disgraces and give thanks, poor  
knaves

Must have nor spleen, nor anger. Though  
I love

My limbs as well as any man, if you had  
now

A humour to kick me lame into an office,  
Where I might sit in state and undo others,  
Stood I not bound to kiss the foot that  
did it ?

Though it seem strange, there have been  
such things seen

In the memory of man,

*Fran.* But to the purpose,

And then, that service done, make thine  
own fortunes.

My wife, thou say'st, is jealous I am too  
familiar with the dutchess.

*Grac.* And incensed

For her commitment in her brother's ab-  
sence ;

And by her mother's anger is spurr'd on  
To make discovery of it. This her purpose

Was trusted to my charge, which I declined  
As much as in me lay ; but, finding her  
Determinately bent to undertake it,

Though breaking my faith to her may de-  
stroy

My credit with your lordship, I yet thought,  
Though at my peril, I stood bound to re-  
veal it.

*Fran.* I thank thy care, and will deserve  
this secret,

In making thee acquainted with a greater,  
And of more moment. Come into my  
bosom,

And take it from me : Canst thou think,  
dull Graccho,

My power and honours were conferr'd upon  
me,

And, add to them, this form, to have my  
pleasures

Confined and limited ? I delight in change,  
And sweet variety ; that's my heaven on  
earth,

For which I love life only. I confess,  
My wife pleased me a day, the dutchess,  
two,

(And yet I must not say I have enjoy'd her,)  
But now I care for neither : therefore,  
Graccho,

So far I am from stopping Mariana  
In making her complaint, that I desire thee  
To urge her to it.

*Grac.* That may prove your ruin ;  
The duke already being, as 'tis reported,  
Doubtful she hath play'd false.

*Fran.* There thou art cozen'd ;  
His dotage, like an ague, keeps his course,  
And now 'tis strongly on him. But I lose  
time,

And therefore know, whether thou wilt or  
no,

Thou art to be my instrument ; and, in spite  
Of the old saw, that says, It is not safe  
On any terms to trust a man that's wrong'd,  
I dare thee to be false.

*Grac.* This is a language,  
My lord, I understand not.

*Fran.* You thought, sirrah,  
To put a trick on me for the relation  
Of what I knew before, and, having won  
Some weighty secret from me, in revenge  
To play the traitor. Know, thou wretched  
thing,

By my command thou wert whipt ; and  
every day

I'll have thee freshly tortured, if thou miss  
In the least charge that I impose upon thee.  
Though what I speak, for the most part, is  
true :

Nay, grant thou hadst a thousand witnesses  
To be deposed they heard it, 'tis in me  
With one word, such is Sforza's confidence  
Of my fidelity not to be shaken,  
To make all void, and ruin my accusers.

Therefore look to't ; bring my wife hotly on  
To accuse me to the duke—I have an end  
in't,

Or think what 'tis makes man most mise-  
rable,

And that shall fall upon thee. Thou wert  
a fool

To hope, by being acquainted with my  
courses,

To curb and awe me ; or that I should live  
Thy slave, as thou didst saucily divine :

For prying in my counsels, still live mine.

[Exit.

*Grac.* I am caught on both sides. This 'tis for a puiſne  
In policy's Protean ſchool, to try concluſions  
With one that bath commenced, and gone  
out doctor.  
If I diſcover what but now he bragg'd of,  
I ſhall not be believed : if I fall off  
From him, his threats and actions go to-  
gether,  
And there's no hope of ſafety. Till I get  
A plummet that may ſound his deepeſt  
counſels,  
I muſt obey and ſerve him : Want of ſkill  
Now makes me play the rogue againſt my  
will. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*Another Room in the ſame.*

*Enter* Marcelia, Tiberio, Stephano, and  
Gentlewoman.

*Marc.* Command me from his ſight, and  
with ſuch ſcorn  
As he would rate his ſlave !  
*Tib.* 'Twas in his fury.

*Steph.* And he repents it, madam.

*Marc.* Was I born  
To obſerve his humours ! or, becauſe he  
dotes,  
Muſt I run mad ?

*Tib.* If that your Excellence  
Would pleaſe but to receive a feeling know-  
ledge  
Of what he ſuffers, and how deep the leaſt  
Unkindneſs wounds from you, you would  
excuse  
His haſty language.

*Steph.* He hath paid the forfeit  
Of his offence, I'm ſure, with ſuch a ſorrow,  
As, if it had been greater, would deſerve  
A full remiſſion.

*Marc.* Why, perhaps, he bath it ;  
And I ſtand more afflicted for his abſence,  
'Than he can be for mine :—ſo, pray you,  
tell him.

But, till I have digeſted ſome ſad thoughts,  
And reconciled paſſions that are at war  
Within myſelf, I purpoſe to be private :  
And have you care, unleſs it be Francisco',  
That no man be admitted.

[*Exit Gentlewoman.*]

*Tib.* How ! Francisco ?

*Steph.* He, that at every ſtage keeps  
livery miſtreſſes ;  
The ſtallion of the ſtate !

*Tib.* They are things above us,  
And ſo no way concern us.

*Steph.* If I were  
The duke, (I freely muſt confeſs my weak-  
neſs,)

*Enter* Francisco.

I ſhould wear yellow breeches. Here he  
comes.

*Tib.* Nay, ſpare your labour, lady, we  
know our duty,  
And quit the room.

*Steph.* Is this her privacy !  
Though with the hazard of a check, perhaps,  
This may go to the duke.

[*Exeunt* Tiberio and Stephano.

*Marc.* Your face is full  
Of fears and doubts : the reaſon ?

*Fran.* O, beſt madam,  
They are not counterfeit. I, your poor  
convert,

That only wiſh to live in ſad repentance,  
To mourn my deſperate attempt of you,  
That have no ends nor aims, but that your  
goodneſs

Might be a witneſs of my penitence,  
Which ſeen, would teach you how to love  
your mercy,  
Am robb'd of that laſt hope. The duke,  
the duke,

I more than fear, hath found that I am guilty.

*Marc.* By my unſpotted honour, not from  
me ;

Nor have I with him changed one ſyllable,  
Since his return, but what you heard.

*Fran.* Yet malice  
Is eagle eyed, and would ſee that which is  
not ;

And jealousy's too apt to build upon  
Unſure foundations.

*Marc.* Jealousy !

*Fran.* [*Aside.*] It takes.

*Marc.* Who dares but only think I can  
be tainted ?

But for him, though almoſt on certain proof,  
To give it bearing, not belief, deſerves  
My hate for ever.

*Fran.* Whether grounded on  
Your noble, yet chaste favours ſhewn unto  
me ;

Or her imprisonment, for her contempt  
To you, by my command, my frantic wife  
Hath put it in his head.

*Marc.* Have I then lived

So long, now to be doubted ? Are my favours  
The themes of her diſcourſe ? or what I do,  
That never trod in a ſuſpected path,  
Subject to baſe conſtruction ? Be un-  
daunted ;

For now, as of a creature that is mine,  
I riſe up your protectreſs : all the grace  
I hitherto have done you, was beſtow'd  
With a ſhut hand ; it ſhall be now more free,  
Open, and liberal. But let it not,

Though counterfeited to the life, teach you  
To nourish saucy hopes.

*Fran.* May I be blasted,

When I prove such a monster!

*Marc.* I will stand then

Between you and all danger. He shall know,  
Suspicion overturns what confidence builds;  
And he that dares but doubt when there's no  
ground,

Is neither to himself nor others sound.

[*Exit.*

*Fran.* So, let it work! Her goodness,  
that denied

My service, branded with the name of lust,  
Shall now destroy itself; and she shall find,  
When he's a suitor, that brings cunning  
arm'd

With power, to be his advocates, the denial  
Is a disease as killing as the plague,  
And chastity a clue that leads to death.

Hold but thy nature, duke, and be but rash  
And violent enough, and then at leisure  
Repent; I care not.

And let my plots produce this long'd-for birth,  
In my revenge I have my heaven on earth.

[*Exit.*

SCENE III.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Sforza, Pescara, and three Gentlemen.*

*Pesc.* You promised to be merry.

1 *Gent.* There are pleasures,  
And of all kinds, to entertain the time.

2 *Gent.* Your excellence vouchsafing to  
make choice

Of that which best affects you.

*Sfor.* Hold your prating.

Learn manners too; you are rude.

3 *Gent.* I have my answer,

Before I ask the question.

[*Aside.*

*Pesc.* I must borrow

The privilege of a friend, and will; or else  
I am like these, a servant, or, what's worse,  
A parasite to the sorrow Sforza worships  
In spite of reason.

*Sfor.* Pray you, use your freedom;

And so far, if you please, allow me mine,  
To hear you only; not to be compell'd  
To take your moral potions. I am a man,  
And, though philosophy, your mistress, rage  
for't,

Now I have cause to grieve I must be sad;  
And I dare shew it.

*Pesc.* Would it were bestow'd

Upon a worthier subject!

*Sfor.* Take heed, friend.

You rub a sore, whose pain will make me  
mad;

And I shall then forget myself and you.

Lance it no further.

*Pesc.* Have you stood the shock  
Of thousand enemies, and outfaced the  
auger

Of a great emperor, that vow'd your ruin,  
Though by a desperate, a glorious way,  
That had no precedent? are you return'd  
with honour,

Loved by your subjects? does your fortune  
court you,

Or rather say, your courage does command  
it?

Have you given proof, to this hour of your  
life,

Prosperity, that searches the best temper,  
Could never puff you up, nor adverse fate  
Deject your valour? Shall, I say, these  
virtues,

So many and so various trials of  
Your constant mind, be buried in the frown  
(To please you, I will say so) of a fair  
woman?

—Yet I have seen her equals.

*Sfor.* Good Pescara,

This language in another were profane;

In you it is unmanually.—Her equal!

I tell you as a friend, and tell you plainly,  
(To all men else my sword should make  
reply,)

Her goodness does disdain comparison,

And, but herself, admits no parallel.

But you will say she's cross; 'tis fit she  
should be,

When I am foolish; for she's wise, Pescara,  
And knows how far she may dispose her  
bounties,

Her honour safe; or, if she were averse,

'Twas a prevention of a greater sin

Ready to fall upon me; for she's not igno-  
rant,

But truly understands how much I love her,  
And that her rare parts do deserve all honour.  
Her excellence increasing with her years  
too,

I might have fallen into idolatry,

And, from the admiration of her worth,  
Been taught to think there is no Power  
above her;

And yet I do believe, had angels sexes,  
The most would be such women, and as-  
sume

No other shape, when they were to appear  
In their full glory.

*Pesc.* Well, sir, I'll not cross you,

Nor labour to diminish your esteem,

Hereafter, of her. Since your happiness,

As you will have it, has alone dependence

Upon her favour, from my soul I wish you

A fair atonement.

*Sfor.* Time, and my submission,

*Enter Tiberio and Stephano.*

May work her to it.—O! you are well returned;

Say, am I blest? hath she vouchsafed to hear you?

Is there hope left that she may be appeas'd? Let her propound, and gladly I'll subscribe To her conditions.

*Tib.* She, sir, yet is froward, And desires respite, and some privacy.

*Steph.* She was harsh at first; but, ere we parted, seem'd not Implacable.

*Sfor.* There's comfort yet: I'll ply her Each hour with new ambassadors of more honours,

Titles, and eminence: my second self, Francisco, shall solicit her.

*Steph.* That a wise man, And what is more, a prince that may command,

Should sue thus poorly, and treat with his wife,

As she were a victorious enemy, At whose proud feet, himself, his state, and country,

Basely begg'd mercy!

*Sfor.* What is that you mutter?

I'll have thy thoughts.

*Steph.* You shall. You are too fond, And feed a pride that's swollen too big already,

And surfeits with observance.

*Sfor.* O my patience!

My vassal speak thus?

*Steph.* Let my head answer it, If I offend. She, that you think a saint, I fear, may play the devil.

*Pesc.* Well said, old fellow. [*Aside.*]

*Steph.* And he that hath so long engross'd your favours,

Though to be named with reverence, lord Francisco,

Who, as you purpose, shall solicit for you, I think's too near her.

[*Sforza lays his hand on his sword.*]

*Pesc.* Hold, sir! this is madness.

*Steph.* It may be they confer of joining lordships;

I'm sure he's private with her.

*Sfor.* Let me go,

I scorn to touch him; he deserves my pity, And not my anger. Dotard! and to be one

Is thy protection, else thou durst not think

That love to my Marcellia hath left room

In my full heart for any jealous thought:— That idle passion dwell with thick-skinn'd

tradesmen,

The undeserving lord, or the unable! Lock up thy own wife, fool, that must take physic

From her young doctor, physic upon her back,

Because thou hast the palsy in that part That makes her active. I could smile to think

What wretched things they are that dare be jealous

Were I match'd to another Messaline, While I found merit in myself to please her, I should believe her chaste, and would not seek

To find out my own torment; but, alas! Enjoying one that, but to me, 's a Dian, I am too secure.

*Tib.* This is a confidence Beyond example.

*Enter Graccho, Isabella, and Mariana.*

*Grac.* There he is— now speak, Or be for ever silent.

*Sfor.* If you come To bring me comfort, say that you have made My peace with my Marcellia.

*Isab.* I had rather Wait on you to your funeral.

*Sfor.* You are my mother; Or, by her life, you were dead else.

*Mari.* Would you were, To your dishonour! and, since dotage makes you

Wilfully blind, borrow of me my eyes, Or some part of my spirit. Are you all flesh? A lump of patience only? no fire in you?

But do your pleasure:—here your mother was

Committed by your servant, (for I scorn To call him husband,) and myself, your sister,

If that you dare remember such a name, Mew'd up, to make the way open and free

For the adultrous, I am unwilling To say, a part of Sforza.

*Sfor.* Take her head off! She hath blasphemed, and by our law must die.

*Isab.* Blasphemed! for calling of a whore, a whore?

*Sfor.* O hell, what do I suffer!

*Mari.* Or is it treason

For me, that am a subject, to endeavour To save the honour of the duke, and that He should not be a wittol on record?

For by posterity 'twill be believed, As certainly as now it can be proved,

Francisco, the great minion, that sways all, To meet the chaste embraces of the dutchess, Hath leap'd into her bed.

*Sfor.* Some proof, vile creature !  
Or thou hast spoke thy last.

*Mari.* The public fame,  
Their hourly private meetings ; and, e'en  
now,

When, under a pretence of grief or anger,  
You are denied the joys due to a husband,  
And made a stranger to her, at all times  
The door stands open to him. To a Dutch-  
man

This were enough, but to a right Italian  
A hundred thousand witnesses.

*Isab.* Would you have us  
To be her bawds ?

*Sfor.* O the malice  
And envy of base women, that, with horror,  
Knowing their own defects and inward guilt,  
Dare lie, and swear, and damn, for what's  
most false,

To cast aspersions upon one untainted !  
Ye are in your natures devils, and your ends,  
Knowing your reputation sunk for ever,  
And not to be recover'd, to have all  
Wear your black livery. Wretches ! you  
have raised

A monumental trophy to her pureness,  
In this your studied purpose to deprave her :  
And all the shot made by your foul detrac-  
tion,

Falling upon her sure-arm'd innocence,  
Returns upon yourselves ; and, if my love  
Could suffer an addition, I'm so far  
From giving credit to you, this would teach  
me

More to admire and serve her. You are not  
worthy

To fall as sacrifices to appease her ;  
And therefore live till your own envy burst  
you.

*Isab.* All is in vain ; he is not to be moved.

*Mari.* She has bewitch'd him.

*Pesc.* 'Tis so past belief,

To me it shews a fable.

*Enter Francisco, speaking to a Servant  
within.*

*Fran.* On thy life,  
Provide my horses, and without the port  
With care attend me.

*Serv.* [*within.*] I shall, my lord.

*Grac.* He's come.

What gimcrack have we next ?

*Fran.* Great sir.

*Sfor.* Francisco,  
Though all the joys in women are fled from  
me,

In thee I do embrace the full delight  
That I can hope from man.

*Fran.* I would impart,

Please you to lend your ear, a weighty secret,  
I am in labour to deliver to you.

*Sfor.* All leave the room.

[*Exeunt Isab. Mari. and Graccho.*  
Excuse me, good Pescara,  
Ere long I will wait on you.

*Pesc.* You speak, sir,  
The language I should use. [*Exit.*

*Sfor.* Be within call,  
Perhaps we may have use of you.

*Tib.* We shall, sir.  
[*Exeunt Tib. and Steph.*

*Sfor.* Say on, my comfort.

*Fran.* Comfort ! no, your torment,  
For so my fate appoints me. I could curse  
The hour that gave me being.

*Sfor.* What new monsters  
Of misery stand ready to devour me ?  
Let them at once dispatch me.

*Fran.* Draw your sword then,  
And, as you wish your own peace, quickly  
kill me ;

Consider not, but do it.

*Sfor.* Art thou mad ?

*Fran.* Or, if to take my life be too much  
mercy,  
As death, indeed, concludes all human sor-  
rows,

Cut off my nose and ears ; pull out an eye,  
The other only left to lend me light  
To see my own deformities. Why was I  
born

Without some mulct imposed on me by  
nature ?

Would from my youth a loathsome leprosy  
Had run upon this face, or that my breath  
Had been infectious, and so made me  
shunn'd

Of all societies ! Curs'd be he that taught  
me

Discourse or manners, or lent any grace  
That makes the owner pleasing in the eye  
Of wanton women ! since those parts, which  
others

Value as blessings, are to me afflictions,  
Such my condition is.

*Sfor.* I am on the rack :  
Dissolve this doubtful riddle.

*Fran.* That I alone,  
Of all mankind, that stand most bound to  
love you,

And study your content, should be ap-  
pointed,

Not by my will, but forced by cruel fate,  
To be your greatest enemy !—not to hold  
you

In this amazement longer, in a word,  
Your dutchess loves me.

*Sfor.* Loves thee !

*Fran.* Is mad for me,  
Pursues me hourly.

*Sfor.* Oh !

*Fran.* And from hence grew  
Her late neglect of you.

*Sfor.* O women ! women !

*Fran.* I labour'd to divert her by persuasion,  
Then urged your much love to her, and the danger ;

Denied her, and with scorn.

*Sfor.* 'Twas like thyself.

*Fran.* But when I saw her smile, then heard her say,

Your love and extreme dotage, as a cloak,  
Should cover our embraces, and your power  
Fright others from suspicion ; and all favours

That should preserve her in her innocence,  
By lust inverted to be used as bawds ;  
I could not but in duty (though I know  
That the relation kills in you all hope  
Of peace hereafter, and in me 'twill shew  
Both base and poor to rise up her accuser)  
Freely discover it.

*Sfor.* Eternal plagues

Pursue and overtake her ! for her sake,  
To all posterity may he prove a cuckold,  
And, like to me, a thing so miserable  
As words may not express him, that gives trust

To all-deceiving women ! Or, since it is  
The will of heaven, to preserve mankind,  
That we must know and couple with these  
serpents,

No wise man ever, taught by my example,  
Hereafter use his wife with more respect  
Than he would do his horse that does him  
service ;

Base woman being in her creation made  
A slave to man. But, like a village nurse,  
Stand I now cursing and considering, when  
The tamest fool would do !—Within there !

*Stephano,*

*Tiberio,* and the rest !—I will be sudden,  
And she shall know and feel, love in extremes

Abused, knows no degree in hate.

*Enter Tiberio and Stephano.*

*Tib.* My lord.

*Sfor.* Go to the chamber of that wicked woman—

*Steph.* What wicked woman, sir ?

*Sfor.* The devil, my wife.

Force a rude entry, and, if she refuse  
To follow you, drag her hither by the hair,  
And know no pity ; any gentle usage  
To her will call on cruelty from me,

To such as shew it.—Stand you staring ? Go,  
And put my will in act.

*Steph.* There's no disputing.

*Tib.* But 'tis a tempest, on the sudden raised,

Who durst have dream'd of ?

[*Exeunt Tiberio and Stephano.*]

*Sfor.* Nay, since she dares damnation,  
I'll be a fury to her.

*Fran.* Yet, great sir,  
Exceed not in your fury ; she's yet guilty  
Only in her intent.

*Sfor.* Intent, Francisco !  
It does include all fact ; and I might sooner  
Be won to pardon treason to my crown,  
Or one that kill'd my father.

*Fran.* You are wise,  
And know what's best to do :—yet, if you please,

To prove her temper to the height, say only  
That I am dead, and then observe how far  
She'll be transported. I'll remove a little,  
But be within your call.—Now to the up-shot !

Howe'er, I'll shift for one.

[*Aside and exit.*]

*Re-enter Tiberio, Stephano, and Guard  
with Marcella.*

*Marc.* Where is this monster,  
This walking tree of jealousy, this dreamer,  
This horned beast that would be ? Oh ! are  
you here, sir ?

Is it by your commandment or allowance,  
I am thus basely used ? Which of my virtues,  
My labours, services, and cares to please  
you,

For, to a man suspicious and unthankful,  
Without a blush I may be mine own trumpet,  
Invites this barbarous course ? dare you look  
on me

Without a seal of shame ?

*Sfor.* Impudence,

How ugly thou appear'st now ! Thy intent  
To be a whore, leaves thee not blood enough  
To make an honest blush : what had the  
act done ?

*Marc.* Return'd thee the dishonour thou  
deserv'st ;

Though willingly I had given up myself  
To every common lecher.

*Sfor.* Your chief minion,  
Your chosen favourite, your woo'd Francisco,  
Has dearly paid for't ; for, wretch ! know,  
he's dead,  
And by my hand.

*Marc.* The bloodier villain thou !  
But 'tis not to be wonder'd at, thy love

Does know no other object :—thou hast  
kill'd then,

A man I do profess I loved ; a man  
For whom a thousand queens might well be  
rivals.

But he, I speak it to thy teeth, that dares be  
A jealous fool, dares be a murderer,  
And knows no end in mischief.

*Sfor.* I begin now

In this my justice. [*Stabs her.*]

*Mart.* Oh ! I have fool'd myself  
Into my grave, and only grieve for that  
Which, when you know you've slain an  
innocent,

You needs must suffer.

*Sfor.* An innocent ! Let one

Call in Francisco ;—for he lives, vile creature,  
[*Exit Stephano.*]

To justify thy falsehood, and how often,  
With whorish flatteries, thou hast tempted  
him ;

I being only fit to live a stale,  
A bawd and property to your wantonness.

*Re-enter Stephano.*

*Steph.* Signior Francisco, sir, but even now  
Took horse without the ports.

*Marc.* We are both abused,  
And both by him undone. Stay, death, a  
little,

Till I have clear'd me to my lord, and then  
I willingly obey thee.—O, my Sforza !

Francisco was not tempted, but the tempter ;  
And, as he thought to win me, shew'd the  
warrant

That you sign'd for my death.

*Sfor.* Then I believe thee ;

Believe thee innocent too.

*Marc.* But, being contemn'd,  
Upon his knees with tears he did beseech me,  
Not to reveal it ; I, soft-hearted fool,

Judging his penitence true, was won unto it :  
Indeed, the unkindness to be sentenced by  
you,

Before that I was guilty in a thought,  
Made me put on a seeming anger towards you,  
And now—behold the issue ! As I do,

May heaven forgive you ! [*Dies.*]

*Tib.* Her sweet soul has left

Her beauteous prison.

*Steph.* Look to the duke ; he stands

As if he wanted motion.

*Tib.* Grief hath stopp'd

The organ of his speech.

*Steph.* Take up this body,

And call for his physicians.

*Sfor.* O, my heart-strings ! [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*The Milanese. A Room in  
Eugenia's House.*

*Enter Francisco, and Eugenia in male attire.*

*Fran.* Why, could'st thou think, Eugenia,  
that rewards,  
Graces, or favours, though strew'd thick  
upon me,

Could ever bribe me to forget mine honour ?  
Or that I tamely would sit down, before  
I had dried these eyes still wet with showers  
of tears,

By the fire of my revenge ? look up, my  
dearest !

For that proud fair, that, thief-like, stepp'd  
between

Thy promis'd hopes, and robb'd thee of a  
fortune

Almost in thy possession, hath found,  
With horrid proof, his love, she thought her  
glory,

And an assurance of all happiness,  
But hastened her sad ruin.

*Eug.* Do not flatter

A grief that is beneath it ; for, however  
The credulous duke to me proved false and  
cruel,

It is impossible he could be wrought  
To look on her, but with the eyes of dotage,  
And so to serve her.

*Fran.* Such, indeed, I grant,  
The stream of his affection was, and ran  
A constant course, till I, with cunning  
malice—

And yet I wrong my act, for it was justice,  
Made it turn backwards ; and hate, in ex-  
tremes,

(Love banish'd from his heart,) to fill the  
room :

In a word, know the fair Marcelia's dead.

*Eug.* Dead !

*Fran.* And by Sforza's hand. Does it not  
move you ?

How coldly you receive it ! I expected  
The mere relation of so great a blessing,  
Borne proudly on the wings of sweet revenge,

Would have call'd on a sacrifice of thanks,  
And joy not to be bounded or conceal'd.

You entertain it with a look, as if  
You wish'd it were undone.

*Eug.* Indeed I do :

For, if my sorrows could receive addition,  
Her sad fate would increase, not lessen them.

She never injured me, but entertain'd  
A fortune humbly offer'd to her hand,

Which a wise lady gladly would have kneel'd  
for.



Unless you would impute it as a crime,  
 She was more fair than I, and had discretion  
 Not to deliver up her virgin fort,  
 Though strait besieged with flatteries, vows,  
 and tears,  
 Until the church had made it safe and lawful.  
 And had I been the mistress of her judgment  
 And constant temper, skilful in the know-  
 ledge  
 Of man's malicious falsehood, I had never,  
 Upon his hell-deep oaths to marry me,  
 Given up my fair name, and my maiden  
 honour,  
 To his foul lust; nor lived now, being  
 branded  
 In the forehead for his whore, the scorn and  
 shame  
 Of all good women.

*Fran.* Have you then no gall,  
 Anger, or spleen, familiar to your sex?  
 Or is it possible, that you could see  
 Another to possess what was your due,  
 And not grow pale with envy?

*Eug.* Yes, of him  
 That did deceive me. There's no passion,  
 that

A maid so injured ever could partake of,  
 But I have dearly suffer'd. These three years,  
 In my desire and labour of revenge,  
 'Trusted to you, I have endured the throes  
 Of teeming women; and will hazard all  
 Fate can inflict on me, but I will reach  
 Thy heart, false Sforza! You have trifled  
 with me,

And not proceeded with that fiery zeal,  
 I look'd for from a brother of your spirit.  
 Sorrow forsake me, and all signs of grief  
 Farewell for ever! Vengeance, arm'd with  
 fury,

Possess me wholly now!

*Fran.* The reason, sister,  
 Of this strange metamorphosis?

*Eug.* Ask thy fears:  
 Thy base, unmanly fears, thy poor delays,  
 Thy dull forgetfulness equal with death;  
 My wrong, else, and the scandal which can  
 never

Be wash'd off from our house, but in his  
 blood,

Would have stir'd up a coward to a deed  
 In which, though he had fallen, the brave  
 intent

Had crown'd itself with a fair monument  
 Of noble resolution. In this shape  
 I hope to get access; and, then, with shame,  
 Hearing my sudden execution, judge  
 What honour thou hast lost, in being  
 transcended  
 By a weak woman.

*Fran.* Still mine own, and dearer!  
 And yet in this you but pour oil on fire,  
 And offer your assistance where it needs not,  
 And, that you may perceive I lay not fallow,  
 But had your wrongs stamp'd deeply on my  
 heart

By the iron pen of vengeance, I attempted,  
 By whoring her, to cuckold him: that failing,  
 I did begin his tragedy in her death,  
 To which it served as prologue, and will  
 make

A memorable story of your fortunes  
 In my assured revenge: Only, best sister,  
 Let us not lose ourselves in the performance,  
 By your rash undertaking: we will be  
 As sudden as you could wish.

*Eug.* Upon those terms  
 I yield myself and cause to be disposed of  
 As you think fit.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Fran.* Thy purpose?

*Serv.* There's one Graccho,  
 That follow'd you, it seems, upon the track,  
 Since you left Milan, that's importunate  
 To have access, and will not be denied:  
 His haste, he says, concerns you.

*Fran.* Bring him to me. [*Exit Servant.*  
 Though he hath laid an ambush for my life,  
 Or apprehension, yet I will prevent him,  
 And work mine own ends out.

*Enter Graccho.*

*Grac.* Now for my whipping!  
 And if I now outstrip him not, and catch  
 him,  
 And by a new and strange way too, hereafter  
 I'll swear there are worms in my brains.

[*Aside.*

*Fran.* Now, my good Graccho!  
 We meet as 'twere by miracle.

*Grac.* Love, and duty,  
 And vigilance in me for my lord's safety,  
 First taught me to imagine you were here,  
 And then to follow you. All's come forth,  
 my lord,

That you could wish conceal'd. The  
 dutchess' wound,  
 In the duke's rage put home, yet gave her  
 leave

To acquaint him with your practices, which  
 your flight  
 Did easily confirm.

*Fran.* This I expected;  
 But sure you come provided of good counsel,  
 To help in my extremes.

*Grac.* I would not hurt you.

*Fran.* How! hurt me? such another  
 word's thy death;

Why, dar'st thou think it can fall in thy will,  
To outlive what I determine?

*Grac.* How he awes me! [Aside.

*Fran.* Be brief; what brought thee hither?

*Grac.* Care to inform you

You are a condemn'd man, pursued and  
sought for,

And your head rated at ten thousand ducats  
To him that brings it.

*Fran.* Very good.

*Grac.* All passages

Are intercepted, and choice troops of horse  
Scour o'er the neighbour plains; your picture  
sent

To every state confederate with Milan:

That, though I grieve to speak it, in my  
judgment,

So thick your dangers meet, and run upon  
you,

It is impossible you should escape  
Their curious search.

*Eug.* Why, let us then turn Romans,

And, falling by our own hands, mock their  
threats,

And dreadful preparations.

*Fran.* 'T would show nobly;

But that the honour of our full revenge  
Were lost in the rash action. No, Eugenia,  
Graccho is wise, my friend too, not my  
servant,

And I dare trust him with my latest secret.

We would, and thou must help us to perform  
it,

First kill the duke—then, fall what can upon  
us!

For injuries are writ in brass, kind Graccho,  
And not to be forgotten.

*Grac.* He instructs me

What I should do.

[Aside.

*Fran.* What's that?

*Grac.* I labour with

A strong desire to assist you with my service;  
And now I am deliver'd of't.

*Fran.* I told you.—

Speak, my oraculous Graccho.

*Grac.* I have heard, sir,

Of men in debt that, lay'd for by their cre-  
ditors,

In all such places where it could be thought  
They would take shelter, chose, for sanc-  
tuary,

Their lodgings underneath their creditors'  
noses,

Or near that prison to which they were de-  
sign'd,

If apprehended; confident that there

They never should be sought for.

*Eug.* 'Tis a strange one!

*Fran.* But what infer you from it?

*Grac.* This, my lord;

That, since all ways of your escape are  
stopp'd,

In Milan only, or, what's more, in the court,  
Whether it is presumed you dare not come,  
Conceal'd in some disguise, you may live safe.

*Fran.* And not to be discover'd?

*Grac.* But by myself.

*Fran.* By thee! Alas! I know thee honest,  
Graccho,

And I will put thy counsel into act,

And suddenly. Yet, not to be ungrateful

For all thy loving travail to preserve me,

What bloody end see'er my stars appoint,  
Thou shalt be safe, good Graccho.—Who's  
within there?

*Grac.* In the devil's name, what means he!

*Enter Servants.*

*Fran.* Take my friend

Into your custody, and bind him fast:

I would not part with him.

*Grac.* My good lord.

*Fran.* Dispatch:

'Tis for your good, to keep you honest,  
Graccho!

I would not have ten thousand ducats tempt  
you,

Being of a soft and wax-like disposition,

To play the traitor; nor a foolish itch

To be revenged for your late excellent whip-  
ping,

Give you the opportunity to offer

My head for satisfaction. Why, thou fool!

I can look through and through thee; thy  
intent

Appear to me as written in thy forehead,

In plain and easy characters: and but that

I scorn a slave's base blood should rust that  
sword

That from a prince expects a scarlet dye,

Thou now wert dead; but live, only to pray

For good success to crown my undertakings;

And then, at my return, perhaps, I'll free  
thee,

To make me further sport. Away with him!

I will not hear a syllable.

[*Exeunt Servants with Graccho.*

We must trust

Ourselves, Eugenia; and though we make  
use of

The counsel of our servants, that oil spent,

Like snuffs that do offend, we tread them  
out.—

But now to our last scene, which we'll so  
carry,

That few shall understand how 'twas begun,  
Till all, with half an eye, may see 'tis done.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—Milan. *A Room in the Castle.*

*Enter Pescara, Tiberio, and Stephano.*

*Pesc.* The like was never read of.

*Steph.* In my judgment,  
To all that shall but hear it, 'twill appear  
A most impossible fable.

*Tib.* For Francisco,  
My wonder is the less, because there are  
Too many precedents of unthankful men  
Raised up to greatness, which have after  
studied

The ruin of their makers.

*Steph.* But that melancholy,  
Though ending in distraction, should work  
So far upon a man, as to compel him  
To court a thing that has nor sense nor being,  
Is unto me a miracle.

*Pesc.* 'Troth, I'll tell you,  
And briefly as I can, by what degrees  
He fell into this madness. When, by the care  
Of his physicians, he was brought to life,  
As he had only pass'd a fearful dream,  
And had not acted what I grieve to think on,  
He call'd for fair Marcellia, and being told  
That she was dead, he broke forth in ex-  
tremes,

(I would not say blasphem'd,) and cried  
that heaven,

For all the offences that mankind could do,  
Would never be so cruel as to rob it  
Of so much sweetness, and of so much  
goodness;

That not alone was sacred in herself,  
But did preserve all others innocent,  
That had but converse with her. Then it  
came

Into his fancy that she was accused  
By his mother and his sister; thrice he curs'd  
them,

And thrice his desperate hand was on his  
sword

T'have kill'd them both; but he restrain'd,  
and they

Shunning his fury, spite of all prevention  
He would have turned his rage upon himself;  
When wisely his physicians, looking on  
The dutchess' wound, to stay his ready hand,  
Cried out, it was not mortal.

*Tib.* 'Twas well thought on.

*Pesc.* He easily believing what he wish'd,  
More than a perpetuity of pleasure  
In any object else; flatter'd by hope,  
Forgetting his own greatness, he fell prostrate  
At the doctors' feet, implored their aid, and  
swore,

Provided they recover'd her, he would live  
A private man, and they should share his  
dukedom.

They seem'd to promise fair, and every hour  
Vary their judgments, as they find his fit  
To suffer intermission or extremes:  
For his behaviour since—

*Sfor.* [*within.*] As you have pity  
Support her gently.

*Pes.* Now, be your own witnesses;  
I am prevented.

*Enter Sforza, Isabella, Mariana, Doctors,  
and Servants with the body of Marcellia.*

*Sfor.* Carefully, I beseech you,  
The gentlest touch torments her; and then  
think

What I shall suffer. O you earthly gods,  
You second natures, that from your great  
master,

Who join'd the limbs of torn Hippolitus,  
And drew upon himself the Thunderer's envy,  
Are taught those hidden secrets that restore  
To life death-wounded men! you have a  
patient,

On whom to express the excellence of art,  
Will bind even heaven your debtor, though  
it pleases

To make your hands the organs of a work  
The saints will smile to look on, and good  
angels

Clap their celestial wings to give it plaudits.  
How pale and wan she looks! O pardon me,  
That I presume (dyed o'er with bloody guilt,  
Which makes me, I confess, far, far un-  
worthy)

To touch this snow-white hand. How cold  
it is!

This once was Cupid's fire-brand, and still  
'Tis so to me. How slow her pulses beat too!  
Yet in this temper, she is all perfection,  
And mistress of a heat so full of sweetness,  
The blood of virgins, in their pride of youth,  
Are balls of snow or ice compared unto her.

*Mari.* Is not this strange?

*Isab.* Oh! cross him not, dear daughter;  
Our conscience tells us we have been abused,  
Wrought to accuse the innocent, and with  
him

Are guilty of a fact—

*Enter a Servant, and whispers Pescara.*

*Mari.* 'Tis now past help.

*Pesc.* With me? What is he?

*Serv.* He has a strange aspect;  
A Jew by birth, and a physician  
By his profession, as he says, who, hearing  
Of the duke's frenzy, on the forfeit of  
His life will undertake to render him  
Perfect in every part:—provided that  
Your lordship's favour gain him free access,

And your power with the duke a safe protection,

Till the great work be ended.

*Pesc.* Bring me to him ;

As I find cause, I'll do.

[*Exeunt Pesc. and Serv.*

*Sfor.* How sound she sleeps !

Heaven keep her from a lethargy !—How long

(But answer me with comfort, I beseech you) Does your sure judgment tell you that these lids,

That cover richer jewels than themselves, Like envious night, will bar these glorious suns

From shining on me ?

*1 Doct.* We have given her, sir, A sleepy potion, that will hold her long,

That she may be less sensible of the torment The searching of her wound will put her to.

*2 Doct.* She now feels little ; but, if we should wake her,

To hear her speak would fright both us and you,

And therefore dare not hasten it.

*Sfor.* I am patient. You see I do not rage, but wait your pleasure.

What do you think she dreams of now ? for sure,

Although her body's organs are bound fast, Her fancy cannot slumber.

*1 Doct.* That, sir, looks on Your sorrow for your late rash act, with pity

Of what you suffer for it, and prepares To meet the free confession of your guilt

With a glad pardon.

*Sfor.* She was ever kind ; And her displeasure, though call'd on, short-lived

Upon the least submission. O you Powers, That can convey our thoughts to one another

Without the aid of eyes or ears, assist me ! Let her behold me in a pleasing dream

[*Kneels.*

Thus, on my knees before her ; (yet that duty In me is not sufficient ;) let her see me

Compel my mother, from whom I took life, And this my sister, partner of my being,

To bow thus low unto her ; let her hear us In my acknowledgment freely confess

That we in a degree as high are guilty As she is innocent. Bite your tongues, vile creatures,

And let your inward horror fright your souls, For having belied that pureness, to come near which,

All women that posterity can bring forth Must be, though striving to be good, poor rivals.

And for that dog Francisco, that seduced me, In wounding her, to raise a temple built

To chastity and sweetness, let her know I'll follow him to hell, but I will find him,

And there live a fourth fury to torment him. Then, for this curs'd hand and arm that

guided The wicked steel, I'll have them, joint by joint,

With burning irons sear'd off, which I will eat,

I being a vulture fit to taste such carrion ; Lastly—

*1 Doct.* You are too loud, sir ; you disturb Her sweet repose.

*Sfor.* I am hush'd. Yet give us leave, Thus prostrate at her feet, our eyes bent

downwards, Unworthy, and ashamed, to look upon her,

To expect her gracious sentence.

*2 Doct.* He's past hope.

*1 Doct.* The body too will putrify, and then We can no longer cover the imposture.

*Tib.* Which, in his death, will quickly be discover'd.

I can but weep his fortune.

*Steph.* Yet be careful You lose no minute to preserve him ; time

May lessen his distraction.

*Re-enter Pescara, with Francisco, as a few doctor, and Eugenia disguised as before.*

*Fran.* I am no god, sir, To give a new life to her ; yet I'll hazard

My head, I'll work the senseless trunk t'appear

To him as it had got a second being, Or that the soul, that's fled from't, were call'd

back To govern it again. I will preserve it In the first sweetness, and by a strange

vapour, Which I'll infuse into her mouth, create

A seeming breath ; I'll make her veins run high too,

As if they had true motion.

*Pesc.* Do but this, Till we use means to win upon his passions

T'endure to hear she's dead with some small patience,

And make thy own reward.

*Fran.* The art I use Admits no looker on : I only ask

The fourth part of an hour, to perfect that I boldly undertake.

*Pesc.* I will procure it.

*2 Doct.* What stranger's this ? *Pesc.* Sooth me in all I say ; There's a main end in it.

*Fran.* Beware!

*Eug.* I am warn'd.

*Pesc.* Look up, sir, cheerfully; comfort  
in me  
Flows strongly to you.

*Sfor.* From whence came that sound?  
Was it from my Marcelia? If it were,

[*Rises.*  
I rise, and joy will give me wings to meet it.

*Pesc.* Nor shall your expectation be  
deferr'd

But a few minutes. Your physicians are  
Mere voice, and no performance; I have  
found

A man that can do wonders. Do not hinder  
The dutchess' wish'd recovery, to enquire  
Or what he is, or to give thanks, but leave  
him

To work this miracle.

*Sfor.* Sure, 'tis my good angel.

I do obey in all things: be it death  
For any to disturb him, or come near,  
Till he be pleased to call us. O, be prosper-  
ous,

And make a duke thy bondman!

[*Exeunt all but Francisco and Eugenia.*

*Fran.* 'Tis my purpose;  
If that to fall a long-wish'd sacrifice  
To my revenge can be a benefit.

I'll first make fast the doors;—so!

*Eug.* You amaze me:

What follows now?

*Fran.* A full conclusion

Of all thy wishes. Look on this, Eugenia,  
Even such a thing, the proudest fair on earth  
(For whose delight the elements are ran-  
sack'd,

And art with nature studied to preserve her,)  
Must be, when she is summon'd to appear  
In the court of Death. But I lose time.

*Eug.* What mean you?

*Fran.* Disturb me not.—Your ladyship  
looks pale;

But I, your doctor, have a ceruse for you.—  
See, my Eugenia, how many faces,  
That are adorned in court, borrow these helps,

[*Paints the cheeks.*  
And pass for excellence, when the better part  
Of them are like to this.—Your mouth smells  
sour too,

But here is that shall take away the scent;  
A precious antidote old ladies use,  
When they would kiss, knowing their gums  
are rotten. [*Paints the lips.*

These hands, too, that disdain'd to take a  
touch

From any lip, whose owner writ not lord,  
Are now but as the coarsest earth; but I  
Am at the charge, my bill not to be paid too,

To give them seeming beauty.

[*Paints the hands.*

So! 'tis done.

How do you like my workmanship?

*Eug.* I tremble:  
And thus to tyrannize upon the dead,  
Is most inhuman.

*Fran.* Come we for revenge,  
And can we think on pity! Now to the  
upshot,

And, as it proves, applaud it.—My lord the  
duke!

Enter with joy, and see the sudden change  
Your servant's hand hath wrought.

*Re-enter Sforza and the rest.*

*Sfor.* I live again

In my full confidence that Marcelia may  
Pronounce my pardon. Can she speak yet?

*Fran.* No:

You must not look for all your joys at once;  
That will ask longer time.

*Pesc.* 'Tis wondrous strange!

*Sfor.* By all the dues of love I have had  
from her,

This hand seems as it was when first I  
kiss'd it.

These lips invite too: I could ever feed  
Upon these roses, they still keep their colour  
And native sweetness: only the nectar's  
wanting,

That, like the morning dew in flowery May,  
Preserved them in their beauty.

*Enter Graccho hastily.*

*Grac.* Treason, treason!

*Tib.* Call up the guard.

*Fran.* Graccho! then we are lost.

[*Aside.*

*Enter Guard.*

*Grac.* I am got off, sir Jew; a bribe hath  
done it,

For all your serious charge; there's no  
disguise

Can keep you from my knowledge.

*Sfor.* Speak.

*Grac.* I am out of breath,  
But this is—

*Fran.* Spare thy labour, fool,—Francisco.

*All.* Monster of men!

*Fran.* Give me all attributes  
Of all you can imagine, yet I glory  
To be the thing I was born. I AM Francisco;  
Francisco, that was raised by you, and made  
The minion of the time; the same Francisco,  
That would have whored this trunk, when it  
had life;

And, after, breathed a jealousy upon thee,

As killing as those damps that belch out  
plagues

When the foundation of the earth is shaken :  
I made thee do a deed heaven will not pardon,  
Which was—to kill an innocent.

*Sfor.* Call forth the tortures  
For all that flesh can feel.

*Fran.* I dare the worst.

Only, to yield some reason to the world  
Why I pursued this course, look on this face,  
Made old by thy base falsehood : 'tis Eugenia.

*Sfor.* Eugenia !

*Fran.* Does it start you, sir? my sister,  
Seduced and fool'd by thee : but thou must  
pay

The forfeit of thy falsehood. Does it not  
work yet !—

Whate'er becomes of me, which I esteem not,  
THOU art mark'd for the grave : I've given  
thee poison

In this cup, now observe me, which, thy lust  
Carousing deeply of, made thee forget

Thy vow'd faith to Eugenia.

*Pesc.* O damn'd villain !

*Isab.* How do you, sir?

*Sfor.* Like one

That learns to know in death what punish-  
ment

Waits on the breach of faith. Oh ! now I  
feel

An Ætna in my entrails.—I have lived  
A prince, and my last breath shall be com-  
mand.

—I burn, I burn ! yet ere life be consumed,

Let me pronounce upon this wretch all  
torture

That witty cruelty can invent.

*Pesc.* Away with him !

*Tib.* In all things we will serve you.

*Fran.* Farewell, sister !

Now I have kept my word, torments I scorn :  
I leave the world with glory. They are  
men,

And leave behind them name and memory,  
That, wrong'd, do right themselves before  
they die.

[*Exeunt Guard with Francisco.*

*Steph.* A desperate wretch !

*Sfor.* I come : Death ! I obey thee.

Yet I will not die raging ; for, alas !

My whole life was a frenzy. Good Eugenia,  
In death forgive me.—As you love me, bear  
her

To some religious house, there let her spend  
The remnant of her life : when I am ashes,  
Perhaps she'll be appeased, and spare a  
prayer

For my poor soul. Bury me with Marcellia,  
And let our epitaph be— [Dies.

*Tib.* His speech is stopp'd.

*Steph.* Already dead !

*Pesc.* It is in vain to labour  
To call him back. We'll give him funeral,  
And then determine of the state affairs :  
And learn, from this example, There's no  
trust

In a foundation that is built on lust.

[*Exeunt.*



# The Bondman.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Timoleon, *the general, of Coriuth.*

Archidamus, *prætor of Syracuse.*

Diphilus, *a senator of Syracuse.*

Cleon, *a fat impotent lord.*

Marullo, *the Bondman (i.e. Pisander, a gentleman of Thebes; disguised as a slave.)*

Poliphron, *friend to Marullo; also disguised as a slave.*

Leosthenes, *a gentleman of Syracuse, enamoured of Cleora.*

Asotus, *a foolish lover, and the son of Cleon.*

Timagoras, *the son of Archidamus.*

Gracculo, } *slaves.*

Cimbrio, }

*A Gaoler.*

Cleora, *daughter of Archidamus.*

Corisca, *a proud wanton lady, wife to Cleon.*

Olympia, *a rich widow.*

Timandra, *slave to Cleora (i.e. Statilia, sister to Pisander.)*

Zanthia, *slave to Corisca.*

*Other Slaves, Soldiers, Officers, Senators.*

SCENE,—Syracuse, and the adjacent country.

### ACT I.

SCENE I.—*The Camp of Timoleon, near Syracuse.*

*Enter Timagoras and Leosthenes.*

*Timag.* Why should you droop, Leosthenes, or despair

My sister's favour? What, before, you purchased

By courtship and fair language, in these wars,  
(For from her soul you know she loves a soldier)

You may deserve by action.

*Leost.* Good Timagoras,

When I have said my friend, think all is spoken

That may assure me yours; and pray you believe,

The dreadful voice of war that shakes the city,  
The thundering threats of Carthage, nor their army

Raised to make good those threats, affright not me.—

If fair Cleora were confirm'd his prize,  
That has the strongest arm and sbarpest sword,

I'd court Bellona in her horrid trim,  
As if she were a mistress; and bless fortune,  
That offers my young valour to the proof,  
How much I dare do for your sister's love.

But, when that I consider how averse  
Your noble father, great Archidamus,  
Is, and hath ever been, to my desires,  
Reason may warrant me to doubt and fear,  
What seeds soever I sow in these wars

Of noble courage, his determinate will  
May blast, and give my harvest to another,  
That never toil'd for it.

*Timag.* Prithce, do not nourish  
These jealous thoughts; I am thine, (and pardon me,

Though I repeat it,) thy Timagoras,  
That, for thy sake, when the bold Theban sued,

Far-famed Pisander, for my sister's love,  
Sent him disgraced and discontented home.  
I wrought my father then; and I, that stopp'd not

In the career of my affection to thee,  
When that renowned worthy, that, brought with him

High birth, wealth, courage, as fee'd advocates

To mediate for him; never will consent  
A fool, that only has the shape of man,  
Asotus, though he be rich Cleon's heir,  
Shall bear her from thee.

*Leost.* In that trust I love.

*Timag.* Which never shall deceive you.

*Enter Marullo.*

*Mar.* Sir, the general,  
Timoleon, by his trumpets hath given warning

For a remove.

*Timag.* 'Tis well; provide my horse.

*Mar.* I shall, sir. *(Exit.)*

*Leost.* This slave has a strange aspect.

*Timag.* Fit for his fortune; 'tis a strong-limb'd knave:

My father bought him for my sister's litter.

O pride of women! Coaches are too common—

They surfeit in the happiness of peace,  
And ladies think they keep not state enough,  
If, for their pomp and ease, they are not born  
In triumph on men's shoulders.

*Leost.* Who commands

The Carthaginian fleet!

*Timag.* Gisco's their admiral,  
And 'tis our happiness; a raw young fellow,  
One never train'd in arms, but rather  
fashion'd

To tilt with ladies' lips, than crack a lance;  
Ravish a feather from a mistress' fan,  
And wear it as a favour. A steel helmet,  
Made horrid with a glorious plume, will crack  
His woman's neck.

*Leost.* No more of him.—The motives,  
That Corinth gives us aid?

*Timag.* The common danger;  
For Sicily being afire, she is not safe:  
It being apparent that ambitious Carthage,  
That, to enlarge her empire, strives to fasten  
An unjust gripe on us that live free lords  
Of Syracuse, will not end, till Greece  
Acknowledge her their sovereign.

*Leost.* I am satisfied.  
What think you of our general?

*Timag.* He's a man [*Trumpets within.*]  
Of strange and reserved parts; but a great  
soldier.

His trumpets call us, I'll forbear his character:

To-morrow, in the senate-house, at large  
He will express himself.

*Leost.* I'll follow you. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—Syracuse. *A Room in Cleon's House.*

*Enter Cleon, Corisca, and Graculo.*

*Coris.* Nay, good chuck.

*Cleon.* I've said it; stay at home:  
I cannot brook your gadding; you're a fair  
one,

Beauty invites temptations, and short heels  
Are soon tripp'd up.

*Coris.* Deny me! by my honour,  
You take no pity on me. I shall swoon  
As soon as you are absent; ask my man else,  
You know he dares not tell a lie.

*Grac.* Indeed,  
You are no sooner out of sight, but she  
Does feel strange qualms; then sends for her  
young doctor,

Who ministers physic to her on her back,  
Her ladyship lying as she were entranced:  
(I've peep'd in at the keyhole, and observed  
them:)

And sure his potions never fail to work,

For she's so pleasant in the taking them,  
She tickles again.

*Coris.* And all's to make you merry,  
When you come home.

*Cleon.* You flatter me; I am old,  
And wisdom cries, Beware!

*Coris.* Old! duck. To me

You are a young Adonis.

*Grac.* Well said, Venus!

I am sure she Vulcans him. [*Aside.*]

*Coris.* I will not change thee  
For twenty boisterous young things without  
beards.

These bristles give the gentlest titillations,  
And such a sweet dew flows on them, it cures  
My lips without pomatum. Here's a round  
belly!

'Tis a down pillow to my back; I sleep  
So quietly by it: and this tunable nose,  
Faith, when you hear it not, affords such  
music,

That I curse all night-fiddlers.

*Grac.* This is gross.

Not finds she flouts him! [*Aside.*]

*Coris.* As I live, I am jealous.

*Cleon.* Jealous of me, wife?

*Coris.* Yes; and I have reason;

Knowing how lusty and active a man you  
are.

*Cleon.* Hum, hum!

*Grac.* This is no cunning quean! 'slicht,  
she will make him

To think that, like a stag, he has cast his  
horns,

And is grown young again. [*Aside.*]

*Coris.* You have forgot

What you did in your sleep, and, when you  
waked,

Call'd for a candle.

*Grac.* It was in his sleep;

For, waking, I durst trust my mother with  
him. [*Aside.*]

*Coris.* I long to see the man of war:  
Cleora,

Archidamus' daughter, goes, and rich  
Olympia:

I will not miss the show.

*Cleon.* There's no contending:

For this time I am pleased, but I'll no more  
on't. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The Same. The Senate-house.*

*Enter Archidamus, Cleon, Diphilus, Olympia, Corisca, Cleora, and Zanthia.*

*Archid.* So careless we have been, my  
noble lords,

In the disposing of our own affairs,  
And ignorant in the art of government,  
That now we need a stranger to instruct us.



Yet we are happy that our neighbour Corinth,  
Pitying the unjust gripe Carthage would lay  
On Syracuse, hath vouchsafed to lend us  
Her man of men, Timoleon, to defend  
Our country and our liberties.

*Diph.* 'Tis a favour

We are unworthy of, and we may blush  
Necessity compels us to receive it.

*Archid.* O shame! that we, that are a  
populous nation,  
Engaged to liberal nature, for all blessings  
An island can bring forth; we, that have  
limbs,

And able bodies; shipping, arms, and  
treasure,

The sinews of the war, now we are call'd  
To stand upon our guard, cannot produce  
One fit to be our general.

*Cleon.* I am old and fat;  
I could say something, else.

*Archid.* We must obey

The time and our occasions; ruinous build-  
ings,

Whose bases and foundations are infirm,  
Must use supporters: we are circled round  
With danger; o'er our heads, with sail-  
stretch'd wings,

Destruction hovers, and a cloud of mischief  
Ready to break upon us; no hope left us  
That may divert it, but our sleeping virtue,  
Roused up by brave Timoleon.

*Cleon.* When arrives he?

*Diph.* He is expected every hour.

*Archid.* The braveries

Of Syracuse, among whom my son,  
Timagoras, Leosthenes, and Asotus,  
Your hopeful heir, lord Cleon, two days  
since

Rode forth to meet him, and attend him to  
The city; every minute we expect  
To be bless'd with his presence.

[*Shouts within; then a flourish of  
trumpets.*

*Cleon.* What shout's this?

*Diph.* 'Tis seconded with loud music.

*Archid.* Which confirms

His wish'd-for entrance. Let us entertain  
him

With all respect, solemnity, and pomp,  
A man may merit, that comes to redeem us  
From slavery and oppression.

*Cleon.* I'll lock up

My doors, and guard my gold: these lads  
of Corinth

Have nimble fingers, and I fear them more,  
Being within our walls, than those of  
Carthage;

They are far off.

*Archid.* And, ladies, be it your care

To welcome him and his followers with all  
duty;

For rest resolved, their hands and swords  
must keep you

In that full height of happiness you live;  
A dreadful change else follows.

[*Exeunt Archidamus, Cleon, and  
Diphilus.*

*Olymp.* We are instructed.

*Coris.* I'll kiss him for the honour of my  
country,

With any she in Corinth.

*Olymp.* Were he a courtier,  
I've sweetmeat in my closet shall content  
him,

Be his palate ne'er so curious.

*Coris.* And, if need be,  
I have a couch and a banqueting-house in  
my orchard,

Where many a man of honour has not scorn'd  
To spend an afternoon.

*Olymp.* These men of war,  
As I have heard, know not to court a lady.  
They cannot praise our dressings, kiss our  
hands,

Usher us to our litters, tell love-stories,  
Commend our feet and legs, and so search  
upwards;

A sweet becoming boldness! they are rough,  
Boisterous, and saucy, and at the first sight  
Ruffle and touze us, and, as they find their  
stomachs,

Fall roundly to it.

*Coris.* 'Troth, I like them the better:

I can't endure to have a perfumed sir  
Stand cringing in the hams, licking his lips  
Like a spaniel over a furmenty-pot, and yet  
Has not the boldness to come on, or offer  
What they know we expect.

*Olymp.* We may commend  
A gentleman's modesty, manners, and fine  
language,

His singing, dancing, riding of great horses,  
The wearing of his clothes, his fair com-  
plexion;

Take presents from him, and extol his  
bounty:

Yet, though he observe, and waste his estate  
upon us,

If he be staunch, and bid not for the stock  
That we were born to traffic with; the truth  
is,

We care not for his company.

*Coris.* Musing, Cleora?

*Olymp.* She's studying how to entertain  
these strangers,  
And to engross them to herself.

*Cleo.* No, surely;

I will not cheapen any of their wares,

Till you have made your market ; you will buy,

I know, at any rate.

*Coris.* She has given it you.

*Olymp.* No more ; they come : the first kiss for this jewel.

*Florentine of trumpets.* Enter Timagoras, Leosthenes, Asotus, Timoleon in black, led in by Archidamus, Diphilus, and Cleon ; followed by Marullo, Gracculo, Cimbrio, and other Slaves.

*Archid.* It is your seat : which, with a general suffrage,

[Offering Timoleon the state.

As to the supreme magistrate, Sicily tenders, And prays Timoleon to accept.

*Timol.* Such honours

To one ambitious of rule or titles, Whose heaven on earth is placed in his command,

And absolute power o'er others, would with joy,

And veins swollen high with pride, be entertain'd.

They take not me ; for I have ever loved An equal freedom, and proclaim'd all such As would usurp on others' liberties, Rebels to nature, to whose bounteous blessings

All men lay claim as true legitimate sons : But such as have made forfeit of themselves By vicious courses, and their birthright lost, 'Tis not injustice they are mark'd for slaves, To serve the virtuous. For myself, I know Honours and great employments are great burthens,

And must require an Atlas to support them. He that would govern others, first should be The master of himself, richly endued

With depth of understanding, height of courage,

And those remarkable graces which I dare not

Ascribe unto myself.

*Archid.* Sir, empty men

Are trumpets of their own deserts ; but you, That are not in opinion, but in proof, Really good, and full of glorious parts, Leave the report of what you are to fame ;

Which, from the ready tongues of all good men,

Aloud proclaims you.

*Diph.* Besides, you stand bound, Having so large a field to exercise Your active virtues offer'd you, to impart Your strength to such as need it.

*Timol.* 'Tis confess'd :

And, since you'll have it so, such as I am,

For you, and for the liberty of Greece, I am most ready to lay down my life : But yet consider, men of Syracuse, Before that you deliver up the power, Which yet is yours, to me,—to whom 'tis given ;

To an impartial man, with whom nor threats,

Nor prayers, shall prevail ; for I must steer An even course.

*Archid.* Which is desired of all.

*Timol.* Timophanes, my brother, for whose death

I am tainted in the world, and foully tainted ;

In whose remembrance I have ever worn, In peace and war, this livery of sorrow, Can witness for me how much I detest Tyrannous usurpation. With grief, I must remember it ; for, when no persuasion Could win him to desist from his bad practice,

To change the aristocracy of Corinth Into an absolute monarchy, I chose rather To prove a pious and obedient son

To my country, my best mother, than to lend Assistance to Timophanes, though my brother,

That, like a tyrant, strove to set his foot Upon the city's freedom.

*Timag.* 'Twas a deed

Deserving rather trophies than reproof.

*Leost.* And will be still remember'd to your honour,

If you forsake not us.

*Diph.* If you free Sicily From barbarous Carthage' yoke, it will be said,

In him you slew a tyrant.

*Archid.* But, giving way To her invasion, not vouchsafing us That fly to your protection, aid and comfort, 'Twill be believed, that, for your private ends, You kill'd a brother.

*Timol.* As I then proceed, To all posterity may that act be crown'd

With a deserved applause, or braided with The mark of infamy !—Stay yet ; ere I take This seat of justice, or engage myself

To fight for you abroad, or to reform Your state at home, swear all upon my sword,

And call the gods of Sicily to witness The oath you take, that whatsoever I shall

Propound for safety of your commonwealth, Not circumscribed or bound in, shall by

you Be willingly obey'd.

*Archid.* *Diph.* *Cleon.* So may we prosper, As we obey in all things !

*Timag. Leost. Asot.* And observe  
All your commands as oracles !

*Timol.* Do not repent it. [*Takes the state.*

*Olymp.* He ask'd not our consent.

*Coris.* He's a clown, I warrant him.

*Olymp.* I offer'd myself twice, and yet the  
churl

Would not salute me.

*Coris.* Let him kiss his drum !

I'll save my lips, I rest on it.

*Olymp.* He thinks women

No part of the republic.

*Coris.* He shall find

We are a commonwealth.

*Cleo.* The less your honour.

*Timol.* First, then, a word or two, but  
without bitterness,

(And yet mistake me not, I am no flatterer,)

Concerning your ill government of the state ;

In which the greatest, noblest, and most rich,

Stand, in the first file, guilty.

*Cleon.* Ha ! how's this ?

*Timol.* You have not, as good patriots  
should do, studied

The public good, but your particular ends ;

Factionous among yourselves, preferring such

To offices and honours, as ne'er read

The elements of saving policy ;

But deeply skill'd in all the principles

That usher to destruction.

*Leost.* Sharp !

*Timag.* The better.

*Timol.* Your senate-house, which used  
not to admit

A man, however popular, to stand

At the helm of government, whose youth  
was not

Made glorious by action ; whose experience,  
Crown'd with gray hairs, gave warrant to

his counsels,

Heard and received with reverence, is now  
fill'd

With green heads, that determine of the state

Over their cups, or when their sated lusts

Afford them leisure ; or supplied by those

Who, rising from base arts and sordid thrift,

Are eminent for their wealth, not for their  
wisdom :

Which is the reason that to hold a place

In council, which was once esteem'd an  
honour,

And a reward for virtue, hath quite lost

Lustre and reputation, and is made

A mercenary purchase.

*Timag.* He speaks home.

*Leost.* And to the purpose.

*Timol.* From whence it proceeds,

That the treasure of the city is engross'd

By a few private men, the public cofiers

Hollow with want ; and they, that will not  
spare

One talent for the common good, to feed

The pride and bravery of their wives, con-  
sume,

In plate, in jewels, and superfluous slaves,  
What would maintain an army.

*Coris.* Have at us !

*Olymp.* We thought we were forgot.

*Cleo.* But it appears,

You will be treated of.

*Timol.* Yet, in this plenty,

And fat of peace, your young men ne'e  
were train'd

In martial discipline ; and your ships  
unrigg'd,

Rot in the harbour : no defence prepared,

But thought unuseful ; as if that the gods,

Indulgent to your sloth, had granted you

A perpetuity of pride and pleasure,

No change fear'd or expected. Now you find

That Carthage, looking on your stupid  
sleeps,

And dull security, was invited to

Invalidate your territories.

*Archid.* You have made us see, sir,

To our shame, the country's sickness : now,  
from you,

As from a careful and a wise physician,

We do expect the cure.

*Timol.* Old fester'd sores

Must be lanced to the quick, and cauterized ;

Which born with patience, after I'll apply  
Soft unguents. For the maintenance of the

war,

It is decreed all monies in the hand

Of private men, shall instantly be brought

To the public treasury.

*Timag.* This bites sore.

*Cleon.* The cure

Is worse than the disease ; I'll never yield  
to't :

What could the enemy, though victorious,  
Inflict more on us ? All that my youth hath

toil'd for,

Purchas'd with industry, and preserved with  
care,

Forced from me in a moment !

*Diph.* This rough course

Will never be allow'd of.

*Timol.* O blind men !

If you refuse the first means that is offer'd

To give you health, no hope's left to recover

Your desperate sickness. Do you prize your  
muck

Above your liberties ; and rather choose

To be made bondmen, than to part with that

To which already you are slaves ? Or can it

Be probable in your flattering apprehensions,

You can capitulate with the conquerors,  
And keep that yours which they come to  
possess,

And, while you kneel in vain, will ravish  
from you?

—But take your own ways; brood upon  
your gold.

Sacrifice to your idol, and preserve  
The prey entire, and merit the report  
Of careful stewards: yield a just account  
To your proud masters, who, with whips of  
iron,

Will force you to give up what you conceal,  
Or tear it from your throats: adorn your  
walls

With Persian hangings wrought of gold and  
pearl;

Cover the floors, on which they are to tread,  
With costly Median silks? perfume the  
rooms

With cassia and amber, where they are  
To feast and revel; while, like servile  
grooms,

You wait upon their trenchers: feed their  
eyes

With massy plate, until your cupboards crack  
With the weight that they sustain; set forth  
your wives

And daughters in as many varied shapes  
As there are nations, to provoke their lusts,  
And let them be embraced before your eyes,  
The object may content you! and, to perfect  
Their entertainment, offer up your sons,  
And able men, for slaves; while you, that  
are

Unfit for labour, are spurn'd out to starve,  
Unpitied, in some desert, no friend by,  
Whose sorrow may spare one compassionate  
tear,

In the remembrance of what once you were.  
*Leost.* The blood turns.

*Timag.* Observe how old Cleon shakes,  
As if in picture he had shown him what  
He was to suffer.

*Coris.* I am sick; the man  
Speaks poniards and diseases.

*Olymp.* O my doctor!  
I never shall recover.

*Cleo.* [coming forward.] If a virgin,  
Whose speech was ever yet usher'd with fear;  
One knowing modesty and humble silence  
To be the choicest ornaments of our sex,  
In the presence of so many reverend men  
Struck dumb with terror and astonishment,  
Presume to clothe her thought in vocal  
sounds,

Let her find pardon. First to you, great sir,  
A bashful maid's thanks, and her zealous  
prayers

Wing'd with pure innocence, bearing them  
to heaven,

For all prosperity that the gods can give  
To one whose piety must exact their care,  
Thus low I offer.

*Timol.* 'Tis a happy omen.  
Rise, blest one, and speak boldly. On my  
virtue,

I am thy warrant, from so clear a spring  
Sweet rivers ever flow.

*Cleo.* Then, thus to you,  
My noble father, and these lords, to whom  
I next owe duty: no respect forgotten  
To you, my brother, and these bold young  
men,

(Such I would have them,) that are, or  
should be,

The city's sword and target of defence.  
To all of you I speak; and, if a blush  
Steal on my cheeks, it is shown to reprove  
Your paleness, willingly I would not say,  
Your cowardice or fear: Think you all  
treasure

Hid in the bowels of the earth, or ship-  
wreck'd

In Neptune's wat'ry kingdom, can hold  
weight,

When liberty and honour fill one scale,  
Triumphant Justice sitting on the beam?  
Or dare you but imagine that your gold is  
Too dear a salary for such as hazard  
Their blood and lives in your defence? For  
me,

An ignorant girl, bear witness, heaven! so far  
I prize a soldier, that, to give him pay,  
With such devotion as our flamens offer  
Their sacrifices at the holy altar,  
I do lay down these jewels, will make sale  
Of my superfluous wardrobe, to supply  
The meanest of their wants.

[Lays down her jewels, &c.; the rest  
follow her example.

*Timol.* Brave masculine spirit!

*Diph.* We are shown, to our shame, what  
we in honour  
Should have taught others.

*Archid.* Such a fair example  
Must needs be follow'd.

*Timag.* Ever my dear sister,  
But now our family's glory!

*Leost.* Were she deform'd,  
The virtues of her mind would force a stoic  
To sue to be her servant.

*Cleon.* I must yield;  
And, though my heart-blood part with it, I  
will

Deliver in my wealth.

*Asot.* I would say something;  
But, the truth is, I know not what.

*Timol.* We have money ;  
 And men must now be thought on.  
*Archid.* We can press  
 Of labourers in the country, men inured  
 To cold and heat, ten thousand.  
*Diph.* Or, if need be,  
 Enrol our slaves, lusty and able varlets,  
 And fit for service.  
*Cleon.* They shall go for me ;  
 I will not pay and fight too.  
*Cleo.* How ! your slaves ?  
 O stain of honour !—Once more, sir, your  
 pardon ;  
 And, to their shames, let me deliver what  
 I know in justice you may speak.  
*Timol.* Most gladly :  
 I could not wish my thoughts a better organ  
 Than your tongue, to express them.  
*Cleo.* Are you men !  
 (For age may qualify, though not excuse,  
 The backwardness of these,) able young  
 men !  
 Yet, now your country's liberty's at the  
 stake,  
 Honour and glorious triumph made the  
 garland  
 For such as dare deserve them ; a rich feast  
 Prepared by Victory, of immortal viands,  
 Not for base men, but such as with their  
 swords  
 Dare force admittance, and will be her  
 guests :  
 And can you coldly suffer such rewards  
 To be proposed to labourers and slaves ?  
 While you, that are born noble, to whom  
 these,  
 Valued at their best rate, are next to horses,  
 Or other beasts of carriage, cry aim !  
 Like idle lookers on, till their proud worth  
 Make them become your masters !  
*Timol.* By my hopes,  
 There's fire and spirit enough in this to  
 make  
 Thersites valiant.  
*Cleo.* No ; far, far be it from you :  
 Let these of meaner quality contend  
 Who can endure most labour ; plough the  
 earth,  
 And think they are rewarded when their  
 sweat  
 Brings home a fruitful harvest to their lords ;  
 Let them prove good artificers, and serve  
 you  
 For use and ornament, but not presume  
 To touch at what is noble. If you think  
 them  
 Unworthy to taste of those cates you feed on,  
 Or wear such costly garments, will you grant  
 them,

The privilege and prerogative of great  
 minds,  
 Which you were born to ? Honour won in  
 war,  
 And to be styled preservers of their country,  
 Are titles fit for free and generous spirits,  
 And not for bondmen : had I been born a  
 man,  
 And such ne'er-dying glories made the prize  
 To bold heroic courage, by Diana,  
 I would not to my brother, nay, my father,  
 Be bribed to part with the least piece of  
 honour  
 I should gain in this action !  
*Timol.* She's inspired,  
 Or in her speaks the genius of your country,  
 To fire your blood in her defence : I am  
 rapt  
 With the imagination. Noble maid,  
 Timoleon is your soldier, and will sweat  
 Drops of his best blood, but he will bring  
 home  
 Triumphant conquest to you. Let me wear  
 Your colours, lady ; and though youthful  
 heats,  
 That look no further than your outward  
 form,  
 Are long since buried in me ; while I live,  
 I am a constant lover of your mind,  
 That does transcend all precedents.  
*Cleo.* 'Tis an honour, [*Gives her scarf.*  
 And so I do receive it.  
*Coris.* Plague upon it !  
 She has got the start of us : I could even  
 burst  
 With envy at her fortune.  
*Olymp.* A raw young thing !  
 We have too much tongue sometimes, our  
 husbands say,—  
 And she outstrip us !  
*Leost.* I am for the journey.  
*Timag.* May all diseases sloth and lechery  
 bring,  
 Fall upon him that stays at home !  
*Archid.* Though old,  
 I will be there in person.  
*Diph.* So will I :  
 Methinks I am not what I was ; her words  
 Have made me younger, by a score of years,  
 Than I was when I came hither.  
*Cleon.* I am still  
 Old Cleon, fat and unwieldy ; I shall never  
 Make a good soldier, and therefore desire  
 To be excused at home.  
*Asot.* 'Tis my suit too :  
 I am a gristle, and these spider fingers  
 Will never hold a sword. Let us alone  
 To rule the slaves at home : I can so jerk  
 them—

But in my conscience I shall never prove  
Good justice in the war.

*Timol.* Have your desires ;  
You would be burthens to us, no way  
aids.—

Lead, fairest, to the temple ; first we'll pay  
A sacrifice to the gods for good success :  
For all great actions the wish'd course do  
run,

That are, with their allowance, well begun.

[*Exeunt all but Mar. Grac. and Cimb.*

*Mar.* Stay, Cimbrio and Graculo.

*Cimb.* The business ?

*Mar.* Meet me to-morrow night near to  
the grove,

Neighbouring the east part of the city.

*Grac.* Well.

*Mar.* And bring the rest of our condition  
with you :

I've something to impart may break our  
fettors,

If you dare second me.

*Cimb.* We'll not fail.

*Grac.* A cart-rop

Shall not bind me at home.

*Mar.* Think on't, and prosper. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—*The Same. A Room in Archidamus's House.*

*Enter Archidamus, Timagoras, Leosthenes,  
with gorgets ; and Marullo.*

*Archid.* So, so, 'tis well : how do I look ?  
*Mar.* Most sprightly.

*Archid.* I shrink not in the shoulders ;  
though I'm old

I'm tough, steel to the back ; I have not  
wasted

My stock of strength in feather-beds : here's  
an arm too ;

There's stuff in't, and I hope will use a sword  
As well as any beardless boy of you all.

*Timag.* I'm glad to see you, sir, so well  
prepared

To endure the travail of the war.

*Archid.* Go to, sirrah !

I shall endure, when some of you keep your  
cabins,

For all your flaunting feathers ; nay, Leos-  
thenes,

You are welcome too, all friends and fellows  
now.

*Leost.* Your servant, sir.

*Archid.* Pish ! leave these compliments,  
They stink in a soldier's mouth ; I could be  
merry,

For, now my gown's off, farewell gravity !

And must be bold to put a question to you,  
Without offence, I hope.

*Leost.* Sir, what you please.

*Archid.* And you will answer truly ?

*Timag.* On our words, sir.

*Archid.* Go to, then : I presume you will  
confess

That you are two notorious whoremasters—  
Nay, spare your blushing, I've been wild  
myself,

A smack or so for physic does no harm ;

Nay, it is physic, if used moderately ;

But to lie at rack and manger—

*Leost.* Say we grant this,

For if we should deny't, you will not believe  
us,

What will you infer upon it ?

*Archid.* What you'll groan for,  
I fear, when you come to the test. Old  
stories tell us,

There's a month call'd October, which  
brings in

Cold weather ; there are trenches too, 'tis  
rumour'd,

In which to stand all night to the knees in  
water,

In gallants breeds the toothach ; there's a  
sport too,

Named *lying perdue*, do you mark me ? 'tis  
a game

Which you must learn to play at : now in  
these seasons,

And choice variety of exercises,  
(Nay, I come to you,) and fasts, not for de-  
votion,

Your rambling hunt-smock feels strange al-  
terations ;

And, in a frosty morning, looks as if  
He could with ease creep in a pottle-pot,

Instead of his mistress' placket. Then he  
curses

The time he spent in midnight visitations ;  
And finds what he superfluously parted with,

To be reported good at length, and well  
breath'd,

If but retrieved into his back again,  
Would keep him warmer than a scarlet  
waistcoat,

*Enter Diphilus and Cleora.*

Or an armour lined with fur—O welcome !  
welcome !

You have cut off my discourse ; but I will  
perfect

My lecture in the camp.

*Diph.* Come, we are stay'd for ;  
The general's afire for a remove,

And longs to be in action.

*Archid.* 'Tis my wish too.

We must part—nay, no tears, my best Cleora;  
I shall melt too, and that were ominous.  
Millions of blessings on thee! All that's  
mine

I give up to thy charge; and, sirrah, look  
[To Marullo.  
You with that care and reverence observe her,  
Which you would pay to me.—A kiss; fare-  
well, girl!

*Diph.* Peace wait upon you, fair one!  
[*Exeunt Archidamus, Diphilus, and  
Marullo.*

*Timag.* 'Twere impertinence  
To wish you to be careful of your honour,  
That ever keep in pay a guard about you  
Of faithful virtues: farewell!—Friend, I  
leave you

To wipe our kisses off; I know that lovers  
Part with more circumstance and ceremony:  
Which I give way to. [Exit.

*Leost.* 'Tis a noble favour,  
For which I ever owe you. We are alone;  
But how I should begin, or in what language  
Speak the unwilling word of parting from  
you,

I am yet to learn.  
*Cleo.* And still continue ignorant:  
For I must be most cruel to myself,  
If I should teach you.

*Leost.* Yet it must be spoken,  
Or you will chide my slackness. You have  
fired me

With the heat of noble action to deserve you;  
And the least spark of honour that took life  
From your sweet breath, still fann'd by it  
and cherish'd,

Must mount up in a glorious flame, or I  
Am much unworthy.

*Cleo.* May it not burn here,  
And, as a sear-mark, serve to guide true lovers,  
'Toss'd on the ocean of luxurious wishes,  
Safe from the rocks of lust into the harbour  
Of pure affection? rising up an example  
Which aftertimes shall witness, to our glory,  
First took from us beginning.

*Leost.* 'Tis a happiness  
My duty to my country, and mine honour  
Cannot consent to; besides, add to these,  
It was your pleasure, fortified by persuasion,  
And strength of reason, for the general good,  
That I should go.

*Cleo.* Alas! I then was witty  
To plead against myself; and mine eye, fix'd  
Upon the hill of honour, ne'er descended  
To look into the vale of certain dangers,  
Through which you were to cut your passage  
to it.

*Leost.* I'll stay at home, then.

*Cleo.* No, that must not be;

For so, to serve my own ends, and to gain  
A petty wreath myself, I rob you of  
A certain triumph, which must fall upon you,  
Or Virtue's turn'd a handmaid to blind  
Fortune.

How is my soul divided! to confirm you  
In the opinion of the world, most worthy  
To be beloved, (with me you're at the height,  
And can advance no further,) I must send  
you

To court the goddess of stern war, who, if  
She see you with my eyes, will ne'er return  
you,

But grow enamour'd of you.

*Leost.* Sweet, take comfort!  
And what I offer you, you must vouchsafe me:  
Or I am wretched. All the dangers that  
I can encounter in the war, are trifles;  
My enemies abroad to be contemn'd:  
The dreadful foes, that have the power to  
hurt me,

I leave at home with you.

*Cleo.* With me!

*Leost.* Nay, in you,  
In every part about you, they are arm'd  
To fight against me.

*Cleo.* Where?

*Leost.* There's no perfection  
That you are mistress of, but musters up  
A legion against me, and all sworn  
To my destruction.

*Cleo.* This is strange!

*Leost.* But true, sweet;  
Excess of love can work such miracles!  
Upon this ivory forehead are intrench'd  
Ten thousand rivals, and these suns com-  
mand

Supplies from all the world, on pain to forfeit  
Their comfortable beams; these ruby lips,  
A rich exchequer to assure their pay:  
This hand, Sibylla's golden bough to guard  
them

Through hell, and horror, to the Elysian  
springs:

Which who'll not venture for? and, should  
I name

Such as the virtues of your mind invite,  
Their numbers would be infinite.

*Cleo.* Can you think  
I may be tempted?

*Leost.* You were never proved.  
For me, I have conversed with you no further  
Than would become a brother. I ne'er tuned  
Loose notes to your chaste ears; or brought  
rich presents

For my artillery, to batter down  
The fortress of your honour; nor endeavour'd  
To make your blood run high at solemn  
feasts,

With viands that provoke ; the speeding  
philtres :

I work'd no bawds to tempt you ; never  
practis'd

The cunning and corrupting arts they study,  
That wander in the wild maze of desire ;

Honest simplicity and truth were all

The agents I employ'd ; and when I came

To see you, it was with that reverence

As I beheld the altars of the gods :

And Love, that came along with me, was  
taught

To leave his arrows and his torch behind,  
Quench'd in my fear to give offence.

*Cleo.* And 'twas

That modesty that took me, and preserves  
me,

Like a fresh rose, in mine own natural  
sweetness ;

Which, sullied with the touch of impure  
hands,

Loses both scent and beauty.

*Leost.* But, Cleora,

When I am absent, as I must go from you,  
(Such is the cruelty of my fate,) and leave  
you,

Unguarded, to the violent assaults

Of loose temptations ; when the memory

Of my so many years of love and service

Is lost in other objects ; when you are  
courted

By such as keep a catalogue of their con-  
quests,

Won upon credulous virgins ; when nor  
father

Is here to owe you, brother to advise you,

Nor your poor servant by, to keep such off,

By lust instructed how to undermine,

And blow your chastity up ; when your weak  
senses,

At once assaulted, shall conspire against you,

And play the traitors to your soul, your  
virtue ;

How can you stand ? 'Faith, though you  
fall, and I

The judge, before whom you then stood  
accused,

I should acquit you.

*Cleo.* Will you then confirm

That love and jealousy, though of different  
natures,

Must of necessity be twins ; the younger

Created only to defeat the elder,

And spoil him of his birthright ? 'tis not well.

But being to part, I will not chide, I will not ;

Nor with one syllable or tear, express

How deeply I am wounded with the arrows

Of your distrust : but when that you shall  
hear,

At your return, how I have born myself,  
And what an austere penance I take on me,  
To satisfy your doubts ; when, like a Vestal,  
I shew you, to your shame, the fire still  
burning,

Committed to my charge by true affection,  
The people joining with you in the wonder ;  
When, by the glorious splendour of my suf-  
ferings,

The prying eyes of jealousy are struck blind,  
The monster too that feeds on fears, e'en  
starv'd

For want of seeming matter to accuse me ;

Expect, Leosthenes, a sharp reproof

From my just anger.

*Leost.* What will you do ?

*Cleo.* Obey me,

Or from this minute you are a stranger to  
me ;

And do't without reply. All-seeing sun,

Thou witness of my innocence, thus I close

Mine eyes against thy comfortable light,

Till the return of this distrustful man !

Now bind them sure ;—nay, do't :

[*He binds her eyes with her scarf.*

*If, uncompell'd,*

I loose this knot, until the hands that made it  
Be pleased to untie it, may consuming  
plagues

Fall heavy on me ! pray you guide me to  
your lips.

This kiss, when you come back, shall be a  
virgin

To bid you welcome ; nay, I have not done  
yet :

I will continue dumb, and, you once gone,  
No accent shall come from me. Now to my  
chamber,

My tomb, if you miscarry : there I'll spend  
My hours in silent mourning, and thus much

Shall be reported of me to my glory,

And you confess it, whether I live or die,

My chastity triumphs o'er your jealousy.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*The same. A Room in  
Cleo's House.*

*Enter Asotus, driving in Graculo.*

*Asot.* You slave ! you dog ! down, cur.

*Grac.* Hold, good young master,

For pity's sake !

*Asot.* Now am I in my kingdom :—

Who says I am not valiant ? I begin

To frown again : quake, villain !

*Grac.* So I do, sir !

Your looks are agues to me.

*Asot.* Are they so, sir !

'Slight, if I had them at this bay that flout me,



And say I look like a sheep and an ass, I'd make them

Feel that I am a lion.

*Grac.* Do not roar, sir,

As you are a valiant beast ; but do you know Why you use me thus ?

*Asot.* I'll beat thee a little more,

Then study for a reason. O ! I have it :  
One brake a jest on me, and then I swore,  
(Because I durst not strike him,) when I came home,

That I would break thy head.

*Grac.* Plague on his mirth !

I'm sure I mourn for't.

*Asot.* Remember, too, I charge you,

To teach my horse good manners yet ; this morning,

As I rode to take the air, the untutor'd jade Threw me, and kicked me.

*Grac.* I thank him for't. [*Aside.*

*Asot.* What's that ?

*Grac.* I say, sir, I will teach him to hold his heels,

If you will rule your fingers.

*Asot.* I'll think upon't.

*Grac.* I am bruised to jelly : better be a dog,

Than slave to a fool or coward. [*Aside.*

*Asot.* Here's my mother,

*Enter Corisca and Zanthia.*

She is chastising too : how brave we live,  
That have our slaves to beat, to keep us in breath

When we want exercise !

*Coris.* Careless harlotry, [*Striking her.*

Look to't ; if a curl fall, or wind or sun  
Take my complexion off, I will not leave  
One hair upon thine head.

*Grac.* Here's a second show

Of the family of pride ! [*Aside.*

*Coris.* Fie on these wars !

I'm starv'd for want of action ; not a gamester left

To keep a woman play. If this world last  
A little longer with us, ladies must study  
Some new-found mystery to cool one another,  
We shall burn to cinders else. I have heard  
there have been

Such arts in a long vacation ; would they were

Reveal'd to me ! they have made my doctor,  
too,

Physician to the army : he was used

To serve the turn at a pinch ; but I am now  
Quite unprovided.

*Asot.* My mother-in-law is, sure,

At her devotion.

*Coris.* There are none but our slaves left,

Nor are they to be trusted. Some great women,

Which I could name, in a dearth of visitants,  
Rather than be idle, have been glad to play  
At small game ; but I am so queasy-stomach'd,

And from my youth have been so used to dainties,

I cannot taste such gross meat. Some that are hungry

Draw on their shoemakers, and take a fall

From such as mend mats in their galleries ;

Or when a tailor settles a petticoat on,

Take measure of his hodkin ; fie upon't !

'Tis base ; for my part, I could rather lie with  
A gallant's breeches, and conceive upon  
them,

Than stoop so low.

*Asot.* Fair madam, and my mother.

*Coris.* Leave the last out, it smells rank  
of the country,

And shews coarse breeding ; your true-  
courtier knows not

His niece, or sister, from another woman,

If she be apt and cunning.—I could tempt  
now

This fool, but he will be so long a working !

Then he's my husband's son :—the fitter to

Supply his wants ; I have the way already,

I'll try if it will take.—When were you with

Your mistress, fair Cleora ?

*Asot.* Two days sithence ;

But she's so coy, forsooth, that ere I can  
Speak a penn'd speech I have bought and

studied for her,

Her woman calls her away.

*Coris.* Here's a dull thing !

But better taught, I hope.—Send off your  
man.

*Asot.* Sirrah, begone.

*Grac.* This is the first good turn

She ever did me. [*Aside and exit.*

*Coris.* We'll have a scene of mirth ;

I must not have you shamed for want of  
practice.

I stand here for Cleora, and, do you hear,  
minion,

That you may tell her what her woman  
should do,

Repeat the lesson over that I taught you,

When my young lord came to visit me : if  
you miss

In a syllable or posture—

*Zant.* I am perfect.

*Asot.* Would I were so ! I fear I shall  
be out.

*Coris.* If you are, I'll help you in. Thus  
I walk musing :

You are to enter, and, as you pass by,

Salute my woman ;—be but bold enough,  
You'll speed, I warrant you. Begin.

*Asot.* Have at it—

Save thee, sweetheart ! a kiss.

*Zant.* Venus forbid, sir,

I should presume to taste your honour's lips  
Before my lady.

*Coris.* This is well on both parts.

*Asot.* How does thy lady ?

*Zant.* Happy in your lordship,  
As oft as she thinks on you.

*Coris.* Very good ;

This wench will learn in time.

*Asot.* Does she think of me ?

*Zant.* O, sir ! and speaks the best of you ;  
admires

Your wit, your clothes, discourse ; and  
swears, but that

You are not forward enough for a lord, you  
were

The most complete and absolute man,—I'll  
show

Your lordship a secret.

*Asot.* Not of thine own ?

*Zant.* O ! no, sir,

'Tis of my lady : but, upon your honour,  
You must conceal it.

*Asot.* By all means.

*Zant.* Sometimes

I lie with my lady, as the last night I did ;  
She could not say her prayers for thinking  
of you :

Nay, she talk'd of you in her sleep, and  
sigh'd out,

*O sweet Asotus, sure thou art so backward,  
That I must ravish thee !* and in that fer-

our  
She took me in her arms, threw me upon  
her,

Kiss'd me, and hugg'd me, and then waked,  
and wept,

Because 'twas but a dream.

*Coris.* This will bring him on,

Or he's a block.—A good girl !

*Asot.* I am mad,

Till I am at it.

*Zant.* Be not put off, sir,

With, *Away, I dare not ;—fie, you are im-*  
*modest ;—*

*My brother's up ;—My father will hear.—*  
Shoot home, sir,

You cannot miss the mark.

*Asot.* There's for thy counsel.

This is the fairest interlude—if it prove  
earnest,

I shall wish I were a player.

*Coris.* Now my turn comes.—

I am exceeding sick, pray you send my  
page

For young Asotus, I cannot live without  
him ;

Pray him to visit me ; yet, when he's present,  
I must be strange to him.

*Asot.* Not so, you are caught :

Lo, whom you wish ; behold Asotus here !

*Coris.* You wait well, minion ; shortly I  
shall not speak

My thoughts in my private chamber, but  
they must

Lie open to discovery.

*Asot.* 'Slid, she's angry.

*Zant.* No, no, sir, she but seems so. To  
her again.

*Asot.* Lady, I would descend to kiss your  
hand,

But that 'tis gloved, and civet makes me  
sick ;

And to presume to taste your lip's not safe,  
Your woman by.

*Coris.* I hope she's no observer

Of whom I grace. [*Zanthia looks on a book.*

*Asot.* She's at her book, O rare !

[*Kisses her.*

*Coris.* A kiss for entertainment is suffi-  
cient ;

Too much of one dish cloy's me.

*Asot.* I would serve in

The second course ; but still I fear your  
woman.

*Coris.* You are very cautious.

[*Zanthia seems to sleep.*

*Asot.* 'Slight, she's asleep !

'Tis pity these instructions are not printed ;  
They would sell well to chambermaids. 'Tis  
no time now

To play with my good fortune, and your  
favour ;

Yet to be taken, as they say :—a scout,  
To give the signal when the enemy comes,

[*Exeunt Zanthia.*

Were now worth gold.—She's gone to watch.

A waiter so train'd up were worth a million  
To a wanton city madam.

*Coris.* You are grown conceited.

*Asot.* You teach me. Lady, now your  
cabinet—

*Coris.* You speak as it were yours.

*Asot.* When we are there,

I'll shew you my best evidence. [*Scizing her.*

*Coris.* Hold ! you forget,

I only play Cleora's part.

*Asot.* No matter,

Now we've begun, let's end the act.

*Coris.* Forbear, sir ;

Your father's wife !—

*Asot.* Why, being his heir, I am bound,

Since he can make no satisfaction to you,  
To see his debts paid.

*Re-enter Zanthia running.*

*Zant.* Madam, my lord!

*Coris.* Fall off:

I must trifle with the time too, hell confound it!

*Asot.* Plague on his toothless chaps! he cannot do't

Himself, yet hinders such as have good stomachs.

*Enter Cleon.*

*Cleon.* Where are you, wife? I fain would go abroad,

But cannot find my slaves that bear my litter;

I am tired. Your shoulder, son;—nay, sweet, thy hand, too:

A turn or two in the garden, and then to supper,

And so to bed.

*Asot.* Never to rise, I hope, more. [*Aside.*]  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Grove near the Walls of Syracuse.*

*Enter Marullo and Poliphron. A Table set out with Wine, &c.*

*Mar.* 'Twill take, I warrant thee.

*Poliph.* You may do your pleasure;

But, in my judgment, better to make use of The present opportunity.

*Mar.* No more.

*Poliph.* I am silenced.

*Mar.* More wine; prithee drink hard, friend,

And when we're hot, whatever I propound,

*Enter Cimbrio, Graculo, and other Slaves.*

Second with vehemence.—Men of your words, all welcome!

Slaves use no ceremony; sit down, here's a health.

*Poliph.* Let it run round, fill every man his glass.

*Grac.* We look for no waiters;—this is wine!

*Mar.* The better,

Strong, lusty wine: drink deep, this juice will make us

As free as our lords. [*Drinks.*]

*Grac.* But if they find we taste it,

We are all damn'd to the quarry during life, Without hope of redemption.

*Mar.* Pish! for that

We'll talk anon: another rouse! we lose time; [*Drinks.*]

When our low blood's wound up a little higher,

I'll offer my design; nay, we are cold yet; These glasses contain nothing;—do me right, [*Takes the bottle.*]

As e'er you hope for liberty. 'Tis done bravely;

How do you feel yourselves now?

*Cimb.* I begin

To have strange conundrums in my head.

*Grac.* And I

To loath base water: I would be hang'd in peace now,

For one month of such holidays.

*Mar.* An age, boys,

And yet defy the whip; if you are men, Or dare believe you have souls.

*Cimb.* We are no brokers.

*Grac.* Nor whores, whose marks are out of their mouths, they have none;

They hardly can get salt enough to keep them

From stinking above ground.

*Mar.* Our lords are no gods—

*Grac.* They are devils to us, I am sure.

*Mar.* But subject to

Cold, hunger, and diseases.

*Grac.* In abundance.

Your lord that feels no ach in his chine at twenty,

Forfeits his privilege; how should their surgeons build else,

Or ride on their footcloths?

*Mar.* Equal Nature fashion'd us

All in one mould. The bear serves not the bear,

Nor the wolf the wolf; 'twas odds of strength in tyrants,

That pluck'd the first link from the golden chain

With which that THING OF THINGS bound in the world.

Why then, since we are taught, by their examples,

To love our liberty, if not command,

Should the strong serve the weak, the fair, deform'd ones?

Or such as know the cause of things, pay tribute

To ignorant fools? All's but the outward gloss,

And politic form, that does distinguish us.—Cimbrio, thou art a strong man; if, in place

Of carrying burthens, thou hadst been train'd up

In martial discipline, thou might'st have proved

A general, fit to lead and fight for Sicily,

As fortunate as Timoleon.

*Cimb.* A little fighting

Will serve a general's turn.

*Mar.* Thou, Gracculo,  
Hast fluency of language, quick conceit ;  
And, I think, cover'd with a senator's robe,  
Formally set on the bench, thou wouldst  
appear

As brave a senator.

*Grac.* Would I had lands,  
Or money to buy a place ! and if I did  
not

Sleep on the bench with the drowsiest of  
them, play with my chain,  
Look on my watch, when my guts chimed  
twelve, and wear

A state beard, with my barber's help, rank  
with them

In their most choice peculiar gifts ; degrade  
me,

And put me to drink water again, which, now  
I have tasted wine, were poison !

*Mar.* 'Tis spoke nobly,  
And like a gownman : none of these, I think  
too,

But would prove good burghers.

*Grac.* Hum ! the fools are modest ;  
I know their insides : here's an ill-faced  
fellow,

(But that will not be seen in a dark shop,)  
If he did not in a month learn to outswear,  
In the selling of his wares, the cunning'st  
tradesman

In Syracuse, I have no skill. Here's another,  
Observe but what a cozening look he has !—  
Hold up thy head, man ; if, for drawing  
gallants

Into mortgages for commodities, cheating  
heirs

With your new counterfeit gold thread, and  
gumm'd velvets,

He does not transcend all that went before  
him,

Call in his patent : pass the rest ; they'll all  
make

Sufficient beccos, and, with their brow-  
antlers,

Bear up the cap of maintenance.

*Mar.* Is't not pity, then,  
Men of such eminent virtues should be  
slaves ?

*Cimb.* Our fortune.

*Mar.* 'Tis your folly ; daring men  
Command and make their fates. Say, at  
this instant,

I mark'd you out a way to liberty ;  
Possess'd you of those blessings, our proud  
lords

So long have surfeited in ; and, what is  
sweetest,

Arm you with power, by strong hand to  
revenge

Your stripes, your unregarded toil, the pride  
The insolence of such as tread upon  
Your patient sufferings ; fill your famish'd  
mouths

With the fat and plenty of the land ; redeem  
you

From the dark vale of servitude, and seat  
you

Upon a hill of happiness ; what would you do  
To purchase this, and more ?

*Grac.* Do ! any thing :  
To burn a church or two, and dance by the  
light on't,

Were but a May-game.

*Poliph.* I have a father living ;  
But, if the cutting of his throat could work  
this,

He should excuse me.

*Cimb.* 'Slight ! I would cut mine own,  
Rather than miss it ; so I might but have  
A taste on't, ere I die.

*Mar.* Be resolute men ;  
You shall run no such hazard, nor groan  
under

The burthen of such crying sins.

*Cimb.* The means ?

*Grac.* I feel a woman's longing.

*Poliph.* Do not torment us

With expectation.

*Mar.* Thus, then : Our proud masters,  
And'all the able freemen of the city,  
Are gone unto the wars—

*Poliph.* Observe but that.

*Mar.* Old men, and such as can make no  
resistance,  
Are only left at home—

*Grac.* And the proud young fool,  
My master—if this take, I'll hamper him.

*Mar.* Their arsenal, their treasure's in  
our power,

If we have hearts to seize them. If our lords  
fall

In the present action, the whole country's  
ours ;

Say they return victorious, we have means  
To keep the town against them ; at the worst,

To make our own conditions. Now, if you  
dare

Fall on their daughters and their wives,  
break up

Their iron chests, banquet on their rich beds,  
And carve yourselves of all delights and  
pleasures

You have been barr'd from, with one voice  
cry with me,

Liberty ! liberty !

*All.* Liberty ! liberty !

*Mar.* Go then, and take possession : use  
all freedom ;

But shed no blood. [*Exeunt Slaves.*—So,  
this is well begun ;  
But not to be commended, till't be done.  
[*Exit.*

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The same. A Gallery in  
Archidamus's House.*

*Enter Marullo and Timandra.*

*Mar.* Why, think you that I plot against  
myself ?

Fear nothing, you are safe : these thick-  
skinn'd slaves,

I use as instruments to serve my ends,  
Pierce not my deep designs ; nor shall they  
dare

To lift an arm against you.

*Timand.* With your will.

But turbulent spirits, raised beyond them-  
selves

With ease, are not so soon laid ; they oft  
prove

Dangerous to him that call'd them up.

*Mar.* 'Tis true,

In what is rashly undertook. Long since  
I have considered seriously their natures,  
Proceeded with mature advice, and know  
I hold their will and faculties in more awe  
Than I can do my own. Now, for their  
license,

And riot in the city, I can make

A just defence and use : it may appear too  
A politic prevention of such ills

As might, with greater violence and danger,  
Hereafter be attempted ; though some smart  
for't,

It matters not :—however, I'm resolved ;  
And sleep you with security. Holds Cleora  
Constant to her rash vow ?

*Timand.* Beyond belief ;

To me, that see her hourly, it seems a fable.  
By signs I guess at her commands, and serve  
them

With silence ; such her pleasure is, made  
known

By holding her fair hand thus. She eats little,  
Sleeps less, as I imagine ; once a day  
I lead her to this gallery, where she walks  
Some half a dozen turns, and, having offer'd  
To her absent saint a sacrifice of sighs,  
She points back to her prison.

*Mar.* Guide her hither,

And make her understand the slaves' revolt ;  
And, with your utmost eloquence, enlarge  
Their insolence, and rapes done in the city.  
Forget not too, I am their chief, and tell her  
You strongly think my extreme dotage on her,

As I'm Marullo, caused this sudden uproar,  
To make way to enjoy her.

*Timand.* Punctually

I will discharge my part. [*Exit.*

*Enter Poliphron.*

*Poliph.* O, sir, I sought you :  
You've missed the best sport ! Hell, I think's  
broke loose ;

There's such variety of all disorders,  
As leaping, shouting, drinking, dancing,  
whoring,

Among the slaves ; answer'd with crying,  
howling,

By the citizens and their wives ; such a con-  
fusion,

In a word, not to tire you, as I think,  
The like was never read of.

*Mar.* I share in

The pleasure, though I'm absent. This is  
some

Revenge for my disgrace.

*Poliph.* But, sir, I fear,

If your authority restrain them not,  
They'll fire the city, or kill one another,  
They are so apt to outrage ; neither know I  
Whether you wish it, and came therefore to  
Acquaint you with so much.

*Mar.* I will among them ;  
But must not long be absent.

*Poliph.* At your pleasure. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*The same. A Room in the  
same.*

*Shouts within. Enter Cleora and Timandra.*

*Timand.* They are at our gates : my heart !  
affrights and horrors

Increase each minute. No way left to save  
us,

No flattering hope to comfort us, or means,  
But miracle, to redeem us from base lust  
And lawless rapine ! Are there gods, yet  
suffer

Such innocent sweetness to be made the spoil  
Of brutish appetite ? or since they decree  
To ruin nature's masterpiece, of which  
They have not left one pattern, must they  
choose,

To set their tyranny off, slaves to pollute  
The spring of chastity, and poison it  
With their most loath'd embraces ? and, of  
those,

He that should offer up his life to guard it,  
Marullo, curs'd Marullo, your own bond-  
man,

Purchased to serve you, and fed by your  
favours ?—

Nay, start not : it is he : he, the grand  
captain

Of these libidinous beasts, that have not left  
One cruel act undone, that barbarous conquest

Yet ever practised in a captive city,  
He, doating on your beauty, and to have  
fellows

In his foul sin, hath raised these mutinous  
slaves,

Who have begun the game by violent rapes  
Upon the wives and daughters of their  
lords :

And he, to quench the fire of his base lust,  
By force, comes to enjoy you—do not wring  
Your innocent hands, 'tis bootless ; use the  
means

That may preserve you. 'Tis no crime to  
break

A vow when you are forced to it ; shew your  
face,

And with the majesty of commanding  
beauty,

Strike dead his loose affections : if that fail,  
Give liberty to your tongue, and use en-  
treaties ;

There cannot be a breast of flesh and blood,  
Or heart so made of flint, but must receive  
Impression from your words ; or eyes so  
stern,

But, from the clear reflection of your tears,  
Must melt, and bear them company. Will  
you not

Do these good offices to yourself? poor I,  
then,

Can only weep your fortune : here he comes.

*Enter Marullo, speaking at the door.*

*Mar.* He that advances

A foot beyond this, comes upon my sword :  
You have had your ways, disturb not mine.

*Timand.* Speak gently,  
Her fears may kill her else.

*Mar.* Now Love inspire me !

Still shall this canopy of envious night  
Obscure my suns of comfort? and those  
dainties

Of purest white and red, which I take in at  
My greedy eyes, denied my famish'd  
senses?—

The organs of your hearing yet are open ;  
And you infringe no vow, though you vouch-  
safe

To give them warrant to convey unto  
Your understanding parts the story of  
A tortured and despairing lover, whom  
Not fortune but affection marks your slave :—  
Shake not, best lady ! for believ't, you are  
As far from danger as I am from force :  
All violence I shall offer, tends no further

Than to relate my sufferings, which I dare  
not

Presume to do, till, by some gracious sign,  
You shew you are pleased to hear me.

*Timand.* If you are,  
Hold forth your right hand.

[*Cleora holds forth her right hand.*

*Mar.* So, 'tis done ; and I  
With my glad lips seal humbly on your foot,  
My soul's thanks for the favour : I forbear  
To tell you who I am, what wealth, what  
honours

I made exchange of, to become your ser-  
vant :

And, though I knew worthy Leosthenes  
(For sure he must be worthy, for whose love  
You have endured so much) to be my rival ;  
When rage and jealousy counsell'd me to  
kill him,

Which then I could have done with much  
more ease,

Than now, in fear to grieve you, I dare  
speak it,

Love, seconded with duty, boldly told me  
The man I bated, fair Cleora favour'd :  
And that was his protection. [*Cleora bows.*

*Timand.* See, she bows  
Her head in sign of thankfulness.

*Mar.* He removed by  
The occasion of the war, (my fires increasing  
By being closed and stopp'd up,) frantic  
affection

Prompted me to do something in his absence,  
That might deliver you into my power,  
Which you see is effected : and, even now,  
When my rebellious passions chide my dul-  
ness,

And tell me how much I abuse my fortunes,  
Now it is in my power to bear you hence,  
[*Cleora starts.*

Or take my wishes here, (nay, fear not,  
madam,

True love's a servant, brutish lust a tyrant,)  
I dare not touch those viands that ne'er  
taste well,

But when they're freely offer'd : only thus  
much,

Be pleased I may speak in my own dear  
cause,

And think it worthy your consideration,  
(I have loved truly, cannot say deserved,  
Since duty must not take the name of merit,)

That I so far prize your content, before  
All blessings that my hope can fashion to me,  
That willingly I entertain despair,

And, for your sake, embrace it : for I know,  
This opportunity lost, by no endeavour

The like can be recover'd. To conclude,  
I forget not, that I lose myself to save you :

For what can I expect but death and torture,  
The war being ended? and, what is a task  
Would trouble Hercules to undertake,  
I do deny you to myself, to give you,  
A pure unspotted present, to my rival.  
I have said: If it distaste not, best of virgins,  
Reward my temperance with some lawful  
favour,

Though you condemn my person.

[Cleora kneels, then pulls off her glove,  
and offers her hand to Marullo.]

*Timand.* See, she kneels;

And seems to call upon the gods to pay  
The debt she owes your virtue: to perform  
which,

As a sure pledge of friendship, she vouch-  
safes you

Her fair right hand.

*Mar.* I am paid for all my sufferings.

Now, when you please, pass to your pri-  
vate chamber:

My love and duty, faithful guards, shall  
keep you

From all disturbance; and when you are  
sated

With thinking of Leosthenes, as a fee

Due to my service, spare one sigh for me.

[*Exeunt.* Cleora makes a low courtesy  
as she goes off.]

SCENE III.—*The same.* A Room in  
Cleon's House.

*Enter* Graculo, leading Asotus in an ape's  
habit, with a chain about his neck; Zan-  
thia in Corisca's clothes, she bearing up  
her train.

*Grac.* Come on, sir.

*Asot.* Oh!

*Grac.* Do you grumble? you were ever  
A brainless ass; but if this hold, I'll teach  
you

To come aloft and do tricks like an ape.

Your morning's lesson: if you miss—

*Asot.* O no, sir.

*Grac.* What for the Carthaginians?

[*Asotus makes moppes.*] A good beast.

What for ourself, your lord? [*Dances.*]  
Exceeding well.

There's your reward. [*Gives him an apple.*]  
—Not kiss your paw! So, so, so.

*Zant.* Was ever lady, the first day of her  
honour,  
So waited on by a wrinkled crone? She  
looks now,

Without her painting, curling, and perfumes,  
Like the last day of January; and stinks  
worse

Than a hot brache in the dogdays. Further  
off!

So—stand there like an image; if you stir,  
Till, with a quarter of a look, I call you,  
You know what follows.

*Coris.* O, what am I fallen to!

But 'tis a punishment for my lust and  
pride,

Justly return'd upon me.

*Grac.* How dost thou like

Thy ladyship, Zanthia?

*Zant.* Very well; and bear it

With as much state as your lordship.

*Grac.* Give me thy hand:

Let us, like conquering Romans, walk in  
triumph,

Our captives following; then mount our  
tribunals,

And make the slaves our footstools.

*Zant.* Fine, by Jove!

Are your hands clean, minion?

*Coris.* Yes, forsooth.

*Zant.* Fall off then.

So! now come on; and having made your  
three duties—

Down, I say—are you stiff in the hams?—  
now kneel,

And tie our shoe: now kiss it, and be happy.

*Grac.* This is state, indeed!

*Zant.* It is such as she taught me;

A tickling itch of greatness, your proud ladies  
Expect from their poor waiters: we have  
changed parts;

She does what she forced me to do in her  
reign,

And I must practise it in mine.

*Grac.* 'Tis justice:

O! here come more.

*Enter* Cimbrio, Cleon, Poliphron, and  
Olympia.

*Cimb.* Discover to a drachma,

Or I will famish thee.

*Cleon.* O! I am pined already.

*Cimb.* Hunger shall force thee to cut off  
the brawns

From thy arms and thighs, then broil them  
on the coals

For carbonadoes.

*Poliph.* Spare the old jade, he's founder'd.

*Grac.* Cut his throat then,

And hang him out for a scarecrow.

*Poliph.* You have all your wishes

In your revenge, and I have mine. You see  
I use no tyranny: when I was her slave,

She kept me as a sinner, to lie at her back  
In frosty nights, and fed me high with dainties,

Which still she had in her belly again ere  
morning;

And in requital of those courtesies,

Having made one another free, we are married :

And, if you wish us joy, join with us in A dance at our wedding.

*Grac.* Agreed ; for I have thought of A most triumphant one, which shall express We are lords, and these our slaves.

*Poliph.* But we shall want A woman.

*Grac.* No, here's Jane-of-apes shall serve ; Carry your body swimming.—Where's the music ?

*Poliph.* I have placed it in yon window.

*Grac.* Begin then sprightly.

[*Music, and then a dance.*]

*Enter Marullo behind.*

*Poliph.* Well done on all sides ! I have prepared a banquet ;

Let's drink and cool us.

*Grac.* A good motion.

*Cimb.* Wait here ;

You have been tired with feasting, learn to fast now.

*Grac.* I'll have an apple for jack, and may be some scraps

May fall to your share.

[*Exeunt Grac. Zant. Cimb. Poliph. and Olymp.*]

*Coris.* Whom can we accuse

But ourselves, for what we suffer ? Thou art just,

Thou all-creating Power ! and misery

Instructs me now, that yesterday acknowledged

No deity beyond my lust and pride,

There is a heaven above us, that looks down

With the eyes of justice, upon such as number

Those blessings freely given, in the account

Of their poor merits : else it could not be,

Now miserable I, to please whose palate

The elements were ransack'd, yet complain'd

Of nature, as not liberal enough

In her provision of rarities

To sooth my taste, and pamper my proud flesh,

Should wish in vain for bread.

*Cleon.* Yes, I do wish too,

For what I fed my dogs with.

*Coris.* I, that forgot

I was made of flesh and blood, and thought the silk

Spun by the diligent worm out of their entrails,

Too coarse to clothe me, and the softest down

Too hard to sleep on ; that disdain'd to look

On virtue being in rags, that stopp'd my nose

At those that did not use adulterate arts

To better nature ; that from those that served me

Expected adoration, am made justly

The scorn of my own bondwoman.

*Asot.* I am punish'd,

For seeking to cuckold mine own natural father :

Had I been gelded then, or used myself

Like a man, I had not been transform'd, and forced

To play an overgrown ape.

*Cleon.* I know I cannot

Last long, that's all my comfort. Come, I forgive both :

'Tis in vain to be angry ; let us, therefore, Lament together like friends.

*Mar.* What a true mirror

Were this sad spectacle for secure greatness !

Here they, that never see themselves, but in

The glass of servile flattery, might behold

The weak foundation upon which they build

Their trust in human frailty. Happy are those,

That knowing, in their births, they are subject to

Uncertain change, are still prepared, and arm'd

For either fortune : a rare principle,

And with much labour, learn'd in wisdom's school !

For, as these bondmen, by their actions, shew

That their prosperity, like too large a sail

For their small bark of judgment, sinks them with

A fore-right gale of liberty, ere they reach

The port they long to touch at : so these wretches,

Swollen with the false opinion of their worth,

And proud of blessings left them, not acquired ;

That did believe they could with giant arms

Fathom the earth, and were above their fates,

Those borrow'd helps, that did support them, vanish'd,

Fall of themselves, and by unmanly suffering, Betray their proper weakness, and make known

Their boasted greatness was lent, not their own.

*Cleon.* O for some meat ! they sit long.

*Coris.* We forgot,

When we drew out intemperate feasts till midnight ;

Their hunger was not thought on, nor their watchings ;

Nor did we hold ourselves served to the height,

But when we did exact and force their duties Beyond their strength and power.



*Asot.* We pay for 't now :  
I now could be content to have my head  
Broke with a rib of beef, or, for a coffin,  
Be buried in the dripping-pan.

*Re-enter* Poliphron, Cimbrio, Gracculo,  
Zanthia, and Olympia, drunk and quar-  
relling.

*Cimb.* Do not hold me :  
Not kiss the bride !

*Poliph.* No, sir.

*Cimb.* She's common good,  
And so we'll use her.

*Grac.* We'll have nothing private.

*Mar.* [coming forward.] Hold !

*Zant.* Here's Marullo.

*Olymp.* He's your chief.

*Cimb.* We are equals ;  
I will know no obedience.

*Grac.* Nor superior—

Nay, if you are lion drunk, I will make one ;  
For lightly ever he that parts the fray,  
Goes away with the blows.

*Mar.* Art thou mad too ?

No more, as you respect me.

*Poliph.* I obey, sir.

*Mar.* Quarrel among yourselves !

*Cimb.* Yes, in our wine, sir,  
And for our wenches.

*Grac.* How could we be lords else ?

*Mar.* Take heed ; I've news will cool this  
beat, and make you  
Remember what you were.

*Cimb.* How !

*Mar.* Send off these,  
And then I'll tell you.

[Zanthia beats Corisca.

*Olymp.* This is tyranny,  
Now she offends not.

*Zant.* 'Tis for exercise,  
And to help digestion. What is she good  
for else ?

To me, it was her language.

*Mar.* Lead her off.

And take heed, madam minx, the wheel  
may turn.

Go to your meat, and rest ; and from this  
hour

Remember, he that is a lord to-day,  
May be a slave to-morrow.

*Cleon.* Good morality !

[*Exeunt* Cleon, Asot. Zant. Olymp.  
and Coris.

*Cimb.* But what would you impart ?

*Mar.* What must invite you  
To stand upon your guard, and leave your  
feasting ;  
Or but imagine what it is to be

Most miserable, and rest assured you are so.  
Our masters are victorious.

*All.* How !

*Mar.* Within

A day's march of the city, flesh'd with spoil,  
And proud of conquest ; the armado sunk,  
The Carthaginian admiral, hand to hand,  
Slain by Leostheues.

*Cimb.* I feel the whip  
Upon my back already.

*Grac.* Every man

Seek a convenient tree, and hang himself.

*Poliph.* Better die once, than live an age  
to suffer

New tortures every hour.

*Cimb.* Say, we submit,  
And yield us to their mercy?—

*Mar.* Can you flatter  
Yourselves with such false hopes? Or dare  
you think

That your imperious lords, that never fail'd  
To punish with severity petty slips  
In your neglect of labour, may be won  
To pardon those licentious outrages

Which noble enemies forbear to practise  
Upon the conquer'd? What have you  
omitted,

That may call on their just revenge with  
horror,

And studied cruelty? we have gone too far  
To think now of retiring ; in our courage,  
And daring, lies our safety : if you are not  
Slaves in your abject minds, as in your  
fortunes,

Since to die is the worst, better expose  
Our naked breasts to their keen swords,  
and sell

Our lives with the most advantage, than to  
trust

In a forest'd remission, or yield up  
Our bodies to the furnace of their fury,  
Thrice heated with revenge.

*Grac.* You led us on.

*Cimb.* And 'tis but justice you should  
bring us off.

*Grac.* And we expect it.

*Mar.* Hear then, and obey me ;  
And I will either save you, or fall with you.  
Man the walls strongly, and make good the  
ports ;

Boldly deny their entrance, and rip up  
Your grievances, and what compell'd you to  
This desperate course : if they disdain to bear  
Of composition, we have in our powers  
Their aged fathers, children, and their wives,  
Who, to preserve themselves, must willingly  
Make intercession for us. 'Tis not time  
now

To talk, but do : a glorious end, or freedom,

Is now proposed us ; stand resolved for either,  
And, like good fellows, live or die together.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The Country near Syracuse.  
The Camp of Timoleon.*

*Enter Leosthenes and Timagoras.*

*Timag.* I am so far from envy, I am proud  
You have outstripp'd me in the race of  
honour.

O 'twas a glorious day, and bravely won !  
Your bold performance gave such lustre to  
Timoleon's wise directions, as the army  
Rests doubtful, to whom they stand most  
engaged

For their so great success.

*Leost.* The gods first honour'd,  
The glory be the general's ; 'tis far from me  
To be his rival.

*Timag.* You abuse your fortune,  
To entertain her choice and gracious favours  
With a contracted brow ; plumed Victory  
Is truly painted with a cheerful look,  
Equally distant from proud insolence,  
And base dejection.

*Leost.* O, Timagoras,  
You only are acquainted with the cause  
That loads my sad heart with a hill of lead ;  
Whose ponderous weight, neither my new-  
got honour,  
Assisted by the general applause  
The soldier crowns it with, nor all war's  
glories,

Can lessen or remove : and, would you please,  
With fit consideration, to remember  
How much I wrong'd Cleora's innocence  
With my rash doubts ; and what a grievous  
penance

She did impose upon her tender sweetness,  
To pluck away the vulture, jealousy,  
That fed upon my liver ; you cannot blame  
me,

But call it a fit justice on myself,  
Though I resolve to be a stranger to  
The thought of mirth or pleasure.

*Timag.* You have redeem'd  
The forfeit of your fault with such a ransom  
Of honourable action, as my sister  
Must of necessity confess her sufferings,  
Weigh'd down by your fair merits ; and,  
when she views you,  
Like a triumphant conqueror, carried  
through

The streets of Syracuse, the glad people  
Pressing to meet you, and the senators  
Contending who shall heap most honours on  
you ;

The oxen, crown'd with garlands, led before  
you,

Appointed for the sacrifice ; and the altars  
Smoaking with thankful incense to the gods ;  
The soldiers chanting loud hymns to your  
praise,

The windows fill'd with matrons and with  
virgins,

Throwing upon your head, as you pass by,  
The choicest flowers, and silently invoking  
The queen of love, with their particular vows,  
To be thought worthy of you ; can Cleora  
(Though, in the glass of self-love, she beheld  
Her best deserts) but with all joy acknow-  
ledge,

What she endured was but a noble trial  
You made of her affection ? and her anger,  
Rising from your too amorous cares, soon  
drench'd

In Lethe, and forgotten.

*Leost.* If those glories  
You so set forth were mine, they might plead  
for me ;

But I can lay no claim to the least honour  
Which you, with foul injustice, ravish from  
her.

Her beauty in me wrought a miracle,  
Taught me to aim at things beyond my  
power,

Which her perfections purchased, and gave  
to me

From her free bounties ; she inspired me with  
That valour which I dare not call mine own ;  
And, from the fair reflexion of her mind,  
My soul received the sparkling beams of  
courage.

She, from the magazine of her proper good-  
ness,  
Stock'd me with virtuous purposes ; sent me  
forth

To trade for honour ; and, she being the  
owner

Of the bark of my adventures, I must yield  
her

A just account of all, as fits a factor.

And, howsoever others think me happy,  
And cry aloud, I have made a prosperous  
voyage ;

One frown of her dislike at my return,  
Which, as a punishment for my fault, I  
look for,

Strikes dead all comfort.

*Timag.* Tush ! these fears are needless ;  
She cannot, must not, shall not, be so cruel.  
A free confession of a fault wins pardon,  
But, being seconded by desert, commands it.  
The general is your own, and, sure, my  
father

Repents his harshness ; for myself, I am  
Ever your creature.—One day shall be happy  
In your triumph, and your marriage.

*Leost.* May it prove so,  
With her consent and pardon.

*Timag.* Ever touching  
On that harsh string ! She is your own,  
and you  
Without disturbance seize on what's your  
due. [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Syracuse. *A Room in  
Archidamus's House.*

*Enter Marullo and Timandra.*

*Mar.* She has her health, then ?

*Timand.* Yes, sir ; and as often  
As I speak of you, lends attentive ear  
To all that I deliver ; nor seems tired,  
Though I dwell long on the relation of  
Your sufferings for her, heaping praise on  
praise  
On your unequal'd temperance, and com-  
mand

You hold o'er your affections.

*Mar.* To my wish :

Have you acquainted her with the defeature  
Of the Carthaginians, and with what hon-  
ours

Leosthenes comes crown'd home with ?

*Timand.* With all care.

*Mar.* And how does she receive it ?

*Timand.* As I guess,  
With a seeming kind of joy ; but yet ap-  
pears not

Transported, or proud of his happy fortune.  
But when I tell her of the certain ruin  
You must encounter with at their arrival  
In Syracuse, and that death, with torments,  
Must fall upon you, which you yet repent not,  
Esteeming it a glorious martyrdom,  
And a reward of pure unspotted love,  
Preserved in the white robe of innocence,  
Though she were in your power ; and, still  
spurr'd on

By insolent lust, you rather chose to suffer  
The fruit untasted, for whose glad possession  
You have call'd on the fury of your lord,  
Than that she should be grieved, or tainted  
in

Her reputation—

*Mar.* Doth it work compunction ?

Pities she my misfortune ?

*Timand.* She express'd

All signs of sorrow which, her vow observed,  
Could witness a grieved heart. At the first  
hearing,  
She fell upon her face, rent her fair hair,  
Her hands held up to heaven, and vented  
sighs,

In which she silently seemed to complain  
Of heaven's injustice.

*Mar.* 'Tis enough : wait carefully,  
And, on all watched occasions, continue  
Speech and discourse of me : 'tis time must  
work her.

*Timand.* I'll not be wanting, but still  
strive to serve you. [Exit.]

*Enter Poliphron.*

*Mar.* Now, Poliphron, the news ?

*Poliph.* The conquering army  
Is within ken.

*Mar.* How brook the slaves the object ?

*Poliph.* Cheerfully yet ; they do refuse no  
labour,  
And seem to scoff at danger ; 'tis your  
presence

That must confirm them : with a full consent  
You are chosen to relate the tyranny  
Of our proud masters ; and what you sub-  
scribe to,

They gladly will allow of, or hold out  
To the last man.

*Mar.* I'll instantly among them.

If we prove constant to ourselves, good  
fortune

Will not, I hope, forsake us.

*Poliph.* 'Tis our best refuge. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—*Before the Walls of Syracuse.*

*Enter Timoleon, Archidamus, Diphilus,  
Leosthenes, Timagoras, and Soldiers.*

*Timol.* Thus far we are return'd victorious ;  
crown'd

With wreaths triumphant, (famine, blood,  
and death,

Banish'd your peaceful confines,) and bring  
home

Security and peace. 'Tis therefore fit  
That such as boldly stood the shock of war,  
And with the dear expense of sweat and  
blood

Have purchased honour, should with plea-  
sure reap

The harvest of their toil : and we stand  
bound,

Out of the first file of the best deservers,  
(Though all must be considered to their  
merits,)

To think of you, Leosthenes, that stand,  
And worthily, most dear in our esteem,  
For your heroic valour.

*Archid.* When I look on

The labour of so many men and ages,  
This well-built city, not long since design'd  
To spoil and rapine, by the favour of  
The gods, and you, their ministers, pre-  
served,

I cannot, in my height of joy, but offer  
These tears for a glad sacrifice.

*Diph.* Sleep the citizens?

Or are they overwhelm'd with the excess  
Of comfort that flows to them?

*Leost.* We receive

A silent entertainment.

*Timag.* I long since

Expected that the virgins and the matrons,  
The old men striving with their age, the  
priests,

Carrying the images of their gods before  
them,

Should have met us with procession.—Ha!  
the gates

Are shut against us!

*Archid.* And, upon the walls,

Arm'd men seem to defy us!

*Enter above, on the Walls, Marullo, Poliphron, Cimbrio, Graculo, and other Slaves.*

*Diph.* I should know

These faces: they are our slaves.

*Timag.* The mystery, rascals!

Open the ports, and play not with an anger  
That will consume you.

*Timol.* This is above wonder.

*Archid.* Our bondmen stand against us!

*Grac.* Some such things

We were in man's remembrance. The  
slaves are turn'd

Lords of the town, or so—nay, be not angry:

Perhaps, upon good terms, giving security

You will be quiet men, we may allow you

Some lodgings in our garrets or outhouses:

Your great looks cannot carry it.

*Cimb.* The truth is,

We've been bold with your wives, toy'd with  
your daughters—

*Leost.* O my prophetic soul!

*Grac.* Rifled your chests,

Been busy with your wardrobes.

*Timag.* Can we endure this?

*Leost.* O my Cleora!

*Grac.* A caudle for the gentleman;

He'll die o' the pip else.

*Timag.* Scorn'd too! are you turn'd  
stone?

Hold parley with our bondmen! force our  
entrance,

Then, villains, expect—

*Timol.* Hold! You wear men's shapcs,

And if, like men, you have reason, shew a  
cause

That leads you to this desperate course,  
which must end

In your destruction.

*Grac.* That, as please the Fates;  
But we vouchsafe—Speak, captain.

*Timag.* Hell and furies!

*Archid.* Bay'd by our own curs!

*Cimb.* Take heed you be not worried.

*Poliph.* We are sharp set.

*Cimb.* And sudden.

*Mar.* Briefly thus, then,

Since I must speak for all—Your tyranny  
Drew us from our obedience. Happy those  
times

When lords were styled fathers of families,  
And not imperious masters! when they  
number'd

Their servants almost equal with their sons,  
Or one degree beneath them! when their  
labours

Were cherish'd and rewarded, and a period  
Set to their sufferings; when they did not  
press

Their duties or their wills, beyond the power  
And strength of their performance! all  
things order'd

With such decorum, as wise lawmakers,  
From each well-govern'd private house de-  
riv'd

The perfect model of a commonwealth.

Humanity then lodged in the hearts of men,

And thankful masters carefully provided  
For creatures wanting reason. The noble  
horse,

That, in his fiery youth, from his wide nostrils  
Neigh'd courage to his rider, and brake  
through

Groves of opposed pikes, bearing his lord

Safe to triumphant victory; old or wounded,

Was set at liberty, and freed from service.

The Athenian mules, that from the quarry  
drew

Marble, hew'd for the temples of the gods,

The great work ended, were dismiss'd, and fed  
At the public cost; nay, faithful dogs have  
found

Their sepulchres; but man, to man more  
cruel,

Appoints no end] to the sufferings of his  
slave;

Since pride stepp'd in and riot, and o'return'd  
This goodly frame of concord, teaching  
masters

To glory in the abuse of such as are

Brought under their command; who, grown  
unuseful,

Are less esteem'd than beasts.—This you  
have practis'd,

Practis'd on us with rigour; this hath forced  
us

To shake our heavy yokes off; and, if redress  
Of these just grievances be not granted us,

We'll right ourselves, and by strong hand defend

What we are now possess'd of.

*Grac.* And not leave

One house unfired.

*Cimb.* Or throat uncut of those

We have in our power.

*Poliph.* Nor will we fall alone ;

You shall buy us dearly.

*Timag.* O the gods !

Unheard-of insolence !

*Timol.* What are your demands ?

*Mar.* A general pardon first, for all offences

Committed in your absence. Liberty

To all such as desire to make return

Into their countries ; and, to those that stay,

A competence of land freely allotted

To each man's proper use, no lord acknowledged :

Lastly, with your consent, to choose them wives

Out of your families.

*Timag.* Let the city sink first.

*Leost.* And ruin seize on all, ere we subscribe

To such conditions.

*Archid.* Carthage, though victorious,

Could not have torc'd more from us.

*Leost.* Scale the walls ;

Capitulate after .

*Timol.* He that wins the top first, Shall wear a mural wreath. [*Exeunt.*

*Mar.* Each to his place.

Or death or victory ! Charge them home, and fear not.

[*Exeunt* Marullo and Slaves.

*Re-enter* Timoleon, Archidamus, and Senators.

*Timol.* We wrong ourselves, and we are justly punish'd,

To deal with bondmen, as if we encounter'd An equal enemy.

*Archid.* They fight like devils ;

And run upon our swords, as if their breasts Were proof beyond their armour.

*Re-enter* Leosthenes and Timagoras.

*Timag.* Make a firm stand.

The slaves, not satisfied they have beat us off, Prepare to sally forth.

*Timol.* They are wild beasts,

And to be tamed by policy. Each man take A tough whip in his hand, such as you used

To punish them with, as masters : i. e. your looks

Carry severity and awe ; 'twill fright them

More than your weapons. Savage lions fly from

The sight of fire ; and these, that have forgot That duty you ne'er taught them with your swords,

When, unexpected, they behold those terrors Advanced aloft, that they were made to shake at,

'Twill force them to remember what they are, And stoop to due obedience.

*Archid.* Here they come.

*Enter, from the City,* Cimbrio, Gracculo, and other Slaves.

*Cimb.* Leave not a man alive ; a wound's but a flea-biting,

To what we suffer'd, being slaves.

*Grac.* O, my heart !

Cimbrio, what do we see? the whip ! our masters !

*Timag.* Dare you rebel, slaves !

[*The Senators shake their whips, the Slaves throw away their weapons, and run off.*

*Cimb.* Mercy ! mercy ! where Shall we hide us from their fury ?

*Grac.* Fly, they follow.

O, we shall be tormented !

*Timol.* Enter with them, But yet forbear to kill them : still remember They are part of your wealth ; and being disarm'd,

There is no danger.

*Archid.* Let us first deliver

Such as they have in fetters, and at leisure Determine of their punishment.

*Leost.* Friend, to you

I leave the disposition of what's mine : I cannot think I am safe without your sister. She is only worth my thought ; and, till I see What she has suffer'd, I am on the rack, And Furies my tormentors. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—Syracuse. *A Room in Archidamus's House.*

*Enter* Marullo and Timandra.

*Mar.* I know I am pursued ; nor would I fly

Although the ports were open, and a convoy Ready to bring me off: the baseness of These villains, from the pride of all my hopes, Hath thrown me to the bottomless abyss Of horror and despair : had they stood firm, I could have bought Cleora's free consent With the safety of her father's life, and brother's ;

And forced Leosthenes to quit his claim, And kneel a suitor for me.

*Timand.* You must not think

What might have been, but what must now  
be practised,  
And suddenly resolve.

*Mar.* All my poor fortunes  
Are at the stake, and I must run the hazard.  
Unseen, convey me to Cleora's chamber ;  
For in her sight, if it were possible,  
I would be apprehended : do not enquire  
The reason why, but help me.

[*Knocking within.*  
*Timand.* Make haste,—one knocks.

[*Exit Marullo.*

Jove turn all to the best !

*Enter Leosthenes.*

You are welcome, sir.

*Leost.* Thou giv'st it in a heavy tone.

*Timand.* Alas ! sir,

We have so long fed on the bread of sorrow,  
Drinking the bitter water of afflictions,  
Made loathsome too by our continued fears,  
Comfort's a stranger to us.

*Leost.* Fears ! your sufferings :—

For which I am so overgone with grief,  
I dare not ask, without compassionate tears,  
The villain's name that robbed thee of thy  
honour :

For being train'd up in chastity's cold school,  
And taught by such a mistress as Cleora,  
'Twere impious in me to think Timandra  
Fell with her own consent.

*Timand.* How mean you, fell, sir ?

I understand you not.

*Leost.* I would thou did'st not,

Or that I could not read upon thy face,  
In blushing characters, the story of  
Libidinous rape : confess it, for you stand not  
Accountable for a sin, against whose strength  
Your o'erarmatch'd innocence could make no

resistance ;

Under which odds, I know, Cleora fell too,  
Heaven's help in vain invoked ; the amazed  
sun

Hiding his face behind a mask of clouds,  
Nor daring to look on it ! In her sufferings  
All sorrow's comprehended : what Timandra,  
Or the city, has endured, her loss consider'd,  
Deserves not to be named.

*Timand.* Pray you, do not bring, sir,  
In the chimeras of your jealous fears,  
New monsters to affright us.

*Leost.* O, Timandra,

That I had faith enough but to believe thee !  
I should receive it with a joy beyond  
Assurance of Elysian shades hereafter,  
Or all the blessings, in this life, a mother  
Could wish her children crown'd with—but  
I must not

•Credit impossibilities ; yet I strive

To find out that whose knowledge is a curse,  
And ignorance a blessing. Come, discover  
What kind of look he had that forced thy  
lady,

(Thy ravisher I will enquire at leisure,)  
That when, hereafter, I behold a stranger,  
But near to him in aspect, I may conclude,  
Though men and angels should proclaim him  
honest,

He is a hell bred villain.

*Timand.* You are unworthy  
To know she is preserved, preserved un-  
tainted :

Sorrow, but ill bestow'd, hath only made  
A rape upon her comforts in your absence.  
Come forth, dear madam. [*Leads in Cleora.*

*Leost.* Ha ! [*Kneels.*

*Timand.* Nay, she deserves

The bending of your heart ; that, to content  
you,

Has kept a vow, the breach of which a Vestal,  
Though the infringing it had call'd upon her  
A living funeral, must of force have shrunk at,  
No danger could compel her to dispense  
with

Her cruel penance, though hot lust came  
arm'd

To seize upon her ; when one look or accent  
Might have redeem'd her.

*Leost.* Might ! O do not shew me  
A beam of comfort, and straight take it  
from me.

The means by which she was freed ? speak,  
O speak quickly ;

Each minute of delay's an age of torment ;  
O speak, Timandra.

*Timand.* Free her from her oath ;  
Herself can best deliver it.

*Leost.* O blest office ! [*Unbinds her eyes.*  
Never did galley-slave shake off his chains,  
Or look'd on his redemption from the oar,  
With such true feeling of delight, as now  
I find myself possess'd of.—Now I behold  
True light indeed ; for, since these fairest  
stars,

Cover'd with clouds of your determinate will,  
Denied their influence to my optic sense,  
The splendour of the sun appear'd to me  
But as some little glimpse of his bright beams  
Convey'd into a dungeon, to remember  
The dark inhabitants there, how much they  
wanted.

Open these long shut lips, and strike mine  
ears

With music more harmonious than the spheres  
Yield in their heavenly motions : and if ever  
A true submission for a crime acknowledged,  
May find a gracious hearing, teach your  
tongue,

In the first sweet articulate sounds it utters,  
To sign my wish'd-for pardon.

*Cleo.* I forgive you.

*Leost.* How greedily I receive this! Stay,  
best lady,

And let me by degrees ascend the height  
Of human happiness! all at once deliver'd,  
The torrent of my joys will overwhelm me:—  
So! now a little more; and pray excuse me,  
If, like a wanton epicure, I desire  
The pleasant taste these cates of comfort  
yield me,

Should not too soon be swallow'd. Have  
you not,

By your unspotted truth I do conjure you  
To answer truly, suffer'd in your honour,  
By force, I mean, for in your will I free you,  
Since I left Syracuse?

*Cleo.* I restore

This kiss, so help me goodness! which I  
borrow'd,

When I last saw you.

*Leost.* Miracle of virtue!

One pause more, I beseech you: I am like  
A man whose vital spirits consumed and  
wasted

With a long and tedious fever, unto whom  
Too much of a strong cordial, at once taken,  
Brings death, and not restores him. Yet I  
cannot

Fix here; but must enquire the man to whom  
I stand indebted for a benefit,

Which to requite at full, though in this hand  
I grasp all sceptres the world's empire bows to,  
Would leave me a poor bankrupt. Name  
him, lady;

If of a mean estate, I'll gladly part with  
My utmost fortunes to him; but if noble,  
In thankful duty study how to serve him;  
Or if of higher rank, erect him altars,  
And as a god adore him.

*Cleo.* If that goodness,

And noble temperance, the queen of virtues,  
Bridling rebellious passions, to whose sway,  
Such as have conquer'd nations have lived  
slaves,

Did ever wing great minds to fly to heaven,  
He, that preserved mine honour, may hope  
boldly

To fill a seat among the gods, and shake off  
Our frail corruption.

*Leost.* Forward.

*Cleo.* Or if ever

The Powers above did mask in human shapes,  
To teach mortality, not by cold precepts  
Forgot as soon as told, but by examples,  
To imitate their pureness, and draw near  
To their celestial natures, I believe  
He's more than man.

*Leost.* You do describe a wonder.

*Cleo.* Which will encrease, when you shall  
understand

He was a lover.

*Leost.* Not yours, lady?

*Cleo.* Yes;

Loved me, Leosthenes; nay, more, so doted,  
(If e'er affections scorning gross desires  
May without wrong be styled so,) that he  
durst not,

With an immodest syllable or look,  
In fear it might take from me, whom he made  
The object of his better part, discover  
I was the saint he sued to.

*Leost.* A rare temper!

*Cleo.* I cannot speak it to the worth: all  
praise

I can bestow upon it will appear  
Envious detraction. Not to rack you further,  
Yet make the miracle full, though, of all  
men,

He hated you, Leosthenes, as his rival,  
So high yet he prized my content, that,  
knowing

You were a man I favour'd, he disdain'd not,  
Against himself, to serve you.

*Leost.* You conceal still

The owner of these excellencies.

*Cleo.* 'Tis Marullo,

My father's bondman.

*Leost.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Cleo.* Why do you laugh?

*Leost.* To hear the labouring mountain of  
your praise  
Deliver'd of a mouse.

*Cleo.* The man deserves not

This scorn, I can assure you.

*Leost.* Do you call

What was his duty, merit?

*Cleo.* Yes, and place it

As high in my esteem, as all the honours  
Descended from your ancestors, or the glory,  
Which you may call your own, got in this  
action,

In which, I must confess, you have done  
nobly;

And I could add, as I desired, but that  
I fear 'twould make you proud.

*Leost.* Why, lady, can you

Be won to give allowance, that your slave  
Should dare to love you?

*Cleo.* The immortal gods

Accept the meanest altars, that are raised  
By pure devotions; and sometimes prefer  
An ounce of frankincense, honey or milk,  
Before whole becatombs, or Sabæan gums,  
Offer'd in ostentation.—Are you sick  
Of your old disease? I'll fit you. [*Aside.*]

*Leost.* You seem moved.

*Cleo.* Zealous, I grant, in the defence of virtue.

Why, good Leosthenes, though I endured A penance for your sake, above example; I have not so far sold myself, I take it, To be at your devotion, but I may Cherish desert in others, where I find it. How would you tyrannize, if you stood possess'd of

That which is only yours in expectation, That now prescribe such hard conditions to me?

*Leost.* One kiss, and I am silenced.

*Cleo.* I vouchsafe it;

Yet, I must tell you 'tis a favour that Marullo, when I was his, not mine own, Durst not presume to ask: no; when the city Bow'd humbly to licentious rapes and lust, And when I was, of men and gods forsaken, Deliver'd to his power, he did not press me To grace him with one look or syllable, Or urged the dispensation of an oath Made for your satisfaction:—the poor wretch,

Having related only his own sufferings, And kiss'd my hand, which I could not deny him,

Defending me from others, never since Solicited my favours.

*Leost.* Pray you, end:

The story does not please me.

*Cleo.* Well, take heed

Of doubts and fears;—for know, Leosthenes, A greater injury cannot be offer'd To innocent chastity, than unjust suspicion. I love Marullo's fair mind, not his person; Let that secure you. And I here command you,

If I have any power in you, to stand Between him and all punishment, and oppose

His temperance to his folly; if you fail— No more; I will not threaten. [*Exit.*]

*Leost.* What a bridge

Of glass I walk upon, over a river Of certain ruin, mine own weighty fears Cracking what should support me! and those helps,

Which confidence lends to others, are from me

Ravish'd by doubts, and wilful jealousy. [*Exit.*]

SCENE IV.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter* Timagoras, Cleon, Asotus, Corisca, and Olympia.

*Cleon.* But are you sure we are safe?

*Timag.* You need not fear;

They are all under guard, their fangs pared off:

The wounds their insolence gave you, to be cured

With the balm of your revenge.

*Asot.* And shall I be

The thing I was born, my lord?

*Timag.* The same wise thing.

'Slight, what a beast they have made thee! Africk never

Produced the like.

*Asot.* I think so:—nor the land

Where apes and monkeys grow, like crabs and walnuts,

On the same tree. Not all the catalogue Of conjurers or wise women bound together Could have so soon transform'd me, as my rascal

Did with his whip; for not in outside only, But in my own belief, I thought myself

As perfect a baboon—

*Timag.* An ass thou wert ever.

*Asot.* And would have given one leg, with all my heart,

For good security to have been a man After three lives, or one and twenty years, Though I had died on crutches.

*Cleon.* Never varlets

So triumph'd o'er an old fat man: I was famish'd.

*Timag.* Indeed you are fallen away.

*Asot.* Three years of feeding

On cullises and jelly, though his cooks Lard all he eats with marrow, or his doctors Pour in his mouth restoratives as he sleeps, Will not recover him.

*Timag.* But your ladyship looks

Sad on the matter, as if you had miss'd Your ten-crown amber possets, good to smooth

The cutis, as you call it, and prepare you Active, and high, for an afternoon's encounter

With a rough gamester, on your couch. Fie on't!

You are grown thrifty, smell like other women;

The college of physicians have not sat, As they were used, in counsel, how to fill The crannies in your cheeks, or raise a rampire

With mummy, ceruses, or infants' fat, To keep off age and time.

*Coris.* Pray you, forbear;

I am an alter'd woman.

*Timag.* So it seems;

A part of your honour's ruff stands out of rank too.

*Coris.* No matter, I have other thoughts,



*Timag.* O strange !  
Not ten days since it would have vex'd you  
more

Than the loss of your good name : pity,  
this cure

For your proud itch came no sooner !  
Marry, Olympia

Seems to bear up still.

*Olymp.* I complain not, sir ;  
I have borne my fortune patiently.

*Timag.* Thou wert ever  
An excellent bearer ; so is all your tribe,  
If you may choose your carriage.

*Enter Leosthenes and Diphilus with a  
Guard.*

How now, friend !

Looks our Cleora lovely ?

*Leost.* In my thoughts, sir.

*Timag.* But why this guard ?

*Diph.* It is Timoleon's pleasure :  
The slaves have been examin'd, and confess  
Their riot took beginning from your house ;  
And the first mover of them to rebellion,  
Your slave Marullo.

*[Exeunt Diph. and Guard.*

*Leost.* Ha ! I more than fear.

*Timag.* They may search boldly.

*Enter Timandra, speaking to the Guard  
within.*

*Timand.* You are unmanner'd grooms,  
To pry into my lady's private lodgings ;  
There's no Marullus there.

*Re-enter Diphilus, and Guard with  
Marullo.*

*Timag.* Now I suspect too.  
Where found you him ?

*Diph.* Close hid in your sister's chamber.

*Timag.* Is that the villain's sanctuary ?

*Leost.* This confirms  
All she deliver'd, false.

*Timag.* But that I scorn  
To rust my good sword in thy slavish blood,  
Thou now wert dead.

*Mar.* He's more a slave than fortune  
Or misery can make me, that insults  
Upon unweapon'd innocence.

*Timag.* Prate you, dog !

*Mar.* Curs snap at lions in the toil, whose  
looks

Frighted them, being free.

*Timag.* As a wild beast,  
Drive him before you.

*Mar.* O divine Cleora !

*Leost.* Dar'st thou presume to name her ?

*Mar.* Yes, and love her ;

And may say, have deserved her.

*Timag.* Stop his mouth,  
Load him with irons too.

*[Exit Guard with Marullo.*

*Cleon.* I am deadly sick  
To look on him.

*Asot.* If he get loose, I know it,  
I caper like an ape again : I feel  
The whip already.

*Timand.* This goes to my lady. *[Exit.*

*Timag.* Come, cheer you, sir ; we'll  
urge his punishment

To the full satisfaction of your anger.

*Leost.* He is not worth my thoughts. No  
corner left

In all the spacious rooms of my vex'd heart,  
But is fill'd with Cleora : and the rape  
She has done upon her honour, with my  
wrong,

The heavy burthen of my sorrow's song.

*[Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*The same. A Room in  
Archidamus's House.*

*Enter Archidamus and Cleora.*

*Archid.* 'Thou art thine own disposer.  
Were his honours

And glories centupled, as I must confess,  
Leosthenes is most worthy, yet I will not,  
However I may counsel, force affection.

*Cleo.* It needs not, sir ; I prize him to his  
worth,

Nay, love him truly ; yet would not live  
slaved

To his jealous humours : since, by the hopes  
of heaven,

As I am free from violence, in a thought  
I am not guilty.

*Archid.* 'Tis believed, Cleora ;

And much the rather, our great gods be  
praised for't !

In that I find, beyond my hopes, no sign  
Of riot in my house, but all things order'd,  
As if I had been present.

*Cleo.* May that move you  
To pity poor Marullo !

*Archid.* 'Tis my purpose

To do him all the good I can, Cleora ;  
But this offence, being against the state,  
Must have a public trial. In the mean time,  
Be careful of yourself, and stand engaged  
No further to Leosthenes, than you may  
Come off with honour ; for, being once his  
wife,

You are no more your own, nor mine, but  
must

Resolve to serve, and suffer his commands,

And not dispute them :—ere it be too late,  
Consider it duly. I must to the senate.

[*Exit.*

*Cleo.* I am much distracted : in Leosthenes,

I can find nothing justly to accuse,  
But his excess of love, which I have  
studied

To cure with more than common means ;  
yet still

It grows upon him. And, if I may call  
My sufferings merit, I stand bound to think  
on

Marullo's dangers—though I save his life,  
His love is unrewarded :—I confess,  
Both have deserved me ; yet, of force, must  
be

Unjust to one ; such is my destiny.—

*Enter Timandra.*

How now ! whence flow these tears ?

*Timand.* I have met, madam,  
An object of such cruelty, as would force  
A savage to compassion.

*Cleo.* Speak, what is it ?

*Timand.* Men pity beasts of rapine, if  
o'ermatch'd,  
Though baited for their pleasure ; but these  
monsters,

Upon a man that can make no resistance,  
Are senseless in their tyranny. Let it be  
granted,

Marullo is a slave, he's still a man ;  
A capital offender, yet in justice  
Not to be tortured, till the judge pronounce  
His punishment.

*Cleo.* Where is he ?

*Timand.* Dragg'd to prison  
With more than barbarous violence ; spurn'd  
and spit on  
By the insulting officers, his hands  
Pinion'd behind his back ; loaden with  
fetters :

Yet, with a saint-like patience, he still offers  
His face to their rude buffets.

*Cleo.* O my grieved soul !—

By whose command ?

*Timand.* It seems, my lord your brother's,  
For he's a looker-on : and it takes from  
Honour'd Leosthenes, to suffer it,  
For his respect to you, whose name in vain  
The grieved wretch loudly calls on.

*Cleo.* By Diana,

'Tis base in both ; and to their teeth I'll  
tell them

That I am wrong'd in't. [*Going forth.*

*Timand.* What will you do ?

*Cleo.* In person

Visit and comfort him.

*Timand.* That will bring fuel  
To the jealous fires which burn too hot  
already

In lord Leosthenes.

*Cleo.* Let them consume him !  
I am mistress of myself. Where cruelty  
reigns,

There dwells nor love, nor honour. [*Exit.*

*Timand.* So ! it works.  
Though hitherto I have run a desperate  
course

To serve my brother's purposes, now 'tis fit

*Enter Leosthenes and Timagoras.*

I study mine own ends. They come :—assist  
me

In these my undertakings, Love's great  
patron,

As my intents are honest !

*Leost.* 'Tis my fault :  
Distrust of others springs, Timagoras,

From diffidence in ourselves : but I will strive,  
With the assurance of my worth and merits,  
To kill this monster, jealousy.

*Timag.* 'Tis a guest,  
In wisdom, never to be entertain'd  
On trivial probabilities ; but, when  
He does appear in pregnant proofs, not  
fashion'd

By idle doubts and fears, to be received :  
They make their own horns that are too  
secure,

As well as such as give them growth and being  
From mere imagination. Though I prize  
Cleora's honour equal with mine own,

And know what large additions of power  
This match brings to our family, I prefer  
Our friendship, and your peace of mind so far  
Above my own respects, or hers, that if  
She hold not her true value in the test,  
'Tis far from my ambition, for her cure  
That you should wound yourself.

*Timand.* This argues for me. [*Aside.*

*Timag.* Why she should be so passionate  
for a bondman,

Falls not in compass of my understanding,  
But for some nearer interest : or he raise  
This mutiny, if he loved her, as, you say,  
She does confess he did, but to enjoy,  
By fair or foul play, what he ventured for,  
To me's a riddle.

*Leost.* Pray you, no more ; already  
I have answered that objection, in my strong  
Assurance of her virtue.

*Timag.* 'Tis unfit then,  
That I should press it further.

*Timand.* Now I must  
Make in, or all is lost.

[*Rushes forward distractedly.*

*Timag.* What would Timandra?  
*Leost.* How wild she looks! How is it  
 with thy lady?

*Timag.* Collect thyself, and speak.

*Timand.* As you are noble,  
 Have pity, or love piety.—Oh!

*Leost.* Take breath.

*Timag.* Out with it boldly.

*Timand.* O, the best of ladies,  
 I fear, is gone for ever.

*Leost.* Who, Cleora?

*Timag.* Deliver, how? 'Sdeath, he a man,  
 sir!—Speak.

*Timand.* Take it then in as many sighs  
 as words,

My lady—

*Timag.* What of her?

*Timand.* No sooner heard  
 Marullo was imprison'd, but she fell  
 Into a deadly swoon.

*Timag.* But she recover'd:  
 Say so, or he will sink too; hold, sir; fie!  
 This is unmanly.

*Timand.* Brought again to life,  
 But with much labour, she awhile stood  
 silent,

Yet in that interim vented sighs, as if  
 They labour'd, from the prison of her flesh,  
 To give her grieved soul freedom. On the  
 sudden,

Transported on the wings of rage and sorrow,  
 She flew out of the house, and, unattended,  
 Entered the common prison.

*Leost.* This confirms  
 What but before I fear'd.

*Timand.* There you may find her;  
 And, if you love her as a sister—

*Timag.* Damn her!

*Timand.* Or you respect her safety as a  
 lover,

Procure Marullo's liberty.

*Timag.* Impudence  
 Beyond expression!

*Leost.* Shall I be a bawd  
 To her lust, and my dishonour?

*Timand.* She'll run mad, else,  
 Or do some violent act upon herself;  
 My lord, her father, sensible of her sufferings,  
 Labours to gain his freedom.

*Leost.* O, the devil!  
 Has she bewitch'd him too?

*Timag.* I'll hear no more.  
 Come, sir, we'll follow her; and if no per-  
 suasion

Can make her take again her natural form,  
 Which by lust's powerful spell she has cast off,  
 This sword shall disenchant her.

*Leost.* O my heart-strings!

[*Exeunt* Leosthenes and Timagoras.]

*Timand.* I knew 'twould take. Pardon  
 me, fair Cleora,  
 Though I appear a traitress; which thou  
 wilt do,

In pity of my woes, when I make known  
 My lawful claim, and only seek mine own.  
 [Exit.]

SCENE II.—*A Prison. Marullo discovered  
 in chains.*

*Enter* Cleora and Gaoler.

*Cleo.* There's for your privacy. Stay, un-  
 hind his hands.

*Gaol.* I dare not, madam.

*Cleo.* I will buy thy danger:  
 Take more gold;—do not trouble me with  
 thanks,

I do suppose it done. [Exit Gaoler.]

*Mar.* My better angel  
 Assumes this shape to comfort me, and  
 wisely;

Since, from the choice of all celestial figures,  
 He could not take a visible form so full  
 Of glorious sweetness. [Kneels.]

*Cleo.* Rise. I am flesh and blood,  
 And do partake thy tortures.

*Mar.* Can it be,

That charity should persuade you to descend  
 So far from your own height, as to vouchsafe  
 To look upon my sufferings? How I bless  
 My fetters now, and stand engaged to fortune  
 For my captivity—no, my freedom, rather!  
 For who dare think that place a prison, which  
 You sanctify with your presence? or believe,  
 Sorrow has power to use her sting on him,  
 That is in your compassion arm'd, and made  
 Impregnable, though tyranny raise at once  
 All engines to assault him?

*Cleo.* Indeed virtue,  
 With which you have made evident proofs  
 that you

Are strongly fortified, cannot fall, though  
 shaken

With the shock of fierce temptations; but  
 still triumphs

In spite of opposition. For myself,  
 I may endeavour to confirm your goodness,  
 (A sure retreat, which never will deceive you,)  
 And with unfeigned tears express my sorrow  
 For what I cannot help.

*Mar.* Do you weep for me!  
 O, save that precious balm for nobler uses:  
 I am unworthy of the smallest drop,  
 Which, in your prodigality of pity,  
 You throw away on me. Ten of these pearls  
 Were a large ransom to redeem a kingdom  
 From a consuming plague, or stop heaven's  
 vengeance,

Call'd down by crying sins, though, at that instant,  
In dreadful flashes falling on the roofs  
Of bold blasphemers. I am justly punish'd  
For my intent of violence to such pureness ;  
And all the torments flesh is sensible of,  
A soft and gentle penance.

*Cleo.* Which is ended  
In this your free confession.

*Enter Leosthenes and Timagoras behind.*

*Leost.* What an object  
Have I encountered !

*Timag.* I am blasted too :  
Yet hear a little further.

*Mar.* Could I expire now,  
These white and innocent hands closing my  
eyes thus,

"Twere not to die, but in a heavenly dream  
To be transported, without the help of  
Charon,

To the Elysian shades. You make me bold ;  
And, but to wish such happiness, I fear,  
May give offence.

*Cleo.* No ; for believ't, Marullo,  
You've won so much upon me, that I know  
not

That happiness in my gift, but you may  
challenge.

*Leost.* Are you yet satisfied ?

*Cleo.* Nor can you wish

But what my vows will second, though it were  
Your freedom first, and then in me full power  
To make a second tender of myself,  
And you receive the present. By this kiss,  
From me a virgin bounty, I will practise  
All arts for your deliverance ; and that pur-  
chased ;

In what concerns your further aims, I  
speak it,

Do not despair, but hope—

[*Timagoras and Leosthenes come forward.*

*Timag.* To have the hangman,  
When he is married to the cross, in scorn  
To say *Gods give you joy!*

*Leost.* But look on me,  
And be not too indulgent to your folly ;  
And then, but that grief stops my speech,  
imagine

What language I should use.

*Cleo.* Against thyself :  
Thy malice cannot reach me.

*Timag.* How ?

*Cleo.* No, brother,  
Though you join in the dialogue to accuse  
me :

What I have done, I'll justify ; and these  
favours,

Which, you presume, will taint me in my  
honour,

Though jealousy use all her eyes to spy out  
One stain in my behaviour, or envy  
As many tongues to wound it, shall appear  
My best perfections. For, to the world,  
I can in my defence allege such reasons,  
As my accusers shall stand dumb to hear  
them ;

When in his fetters this man's worth and  
virtues,

But truly told, shall shame your boasted  
glories,

Which fortune claims a share in.

*Timag.* The base villain  
Shall never live to hear it.

[*Draws his sword.*

*Cleo.* Murder ! help !  
Through me, you shall pass to him.

*Enter Archidamus, Diphilus, and Officers.*

*Archid.* What's the matter ?  
On whom is your sword drawn ? are you a  
judge ?

Or else ambitious of the hangman's office,  
Before it be design'd you?—You are bold, too ;  
Unhand my daughter.

*Leost.* She's my valour's prize.

*Archid.* With her consent, not otherwise.

You may urge

Your title in the court ; if it prove good,  
Possess her freely.—Guard him safely off too.

*Timag.* You'll hear me, sir ?

*Archid.* If you have aught to say,  
Deliver it in public ; all shall find  
A just judge of Timoleon.

*Diph.* You must

Of force now use your patience.

[*Exeunt all but Timagoras and Leosthenes.*  
*Timag.* Vengeance rather !

Whirlwinds of rage possess me : you are  
wrong'd

Beyond a Stoic sufferance ; yet you stand  
As you were rooted.

*Leost.* I feel something here,  
That boldly tells me, all the love and service  
I pay Cleora is another's due,  
And therefore cannot prosper.

*Timag.* Melancholy ;

Which now you must not yield to.

*Leost.* 'Tis apparent :

In fact your sister's innocent, however  
Changed by her violent will.

*Timag.* If you believe so,  
Follow the chase still ; and in open court  
Plead your own interest : we shall find the  
judge

Our friend, I fear not.

*Leost.* Something I shall say,  
But what—

*Timag.* Collect yourself as we walk thither.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The Court of Justice.*

*Enter* Timoleon, Archidamus, Cleora, and  
Officers.

*Timol.* 'Tis wondrous strange ! nor can  
it fall within

The reach of my belief, a slave should be  
The owner of a temperance which this age  
Can hardly parallel in freeborn lords,  
Or kings proud of their purple.

*Archid.* 'Tis most true ;  
And, though at first it did appear a fable,  
All circumstances meet to give it credit ;  
Which works so on me, that I am compell'd  
To be a snitor, not to be denied,  
He may have equal hearing.

*Cleo.* Sir, you graced me  
With the title of your mistress ; but my fortune  
Is so far distant from command, that I  
Lay by the power you gave me, and plead  
humbly

For the preserver of my fame and honour.  
And pray you, sir, in charity believe,  
That, since I had ability of speech,  
My tongue has been so much inured to  
truth,

I know not how to lie.

*Timol.* I'll rather doubt  
The oracles of the gods, than question what  
Your innocence delivers ; and, as far  
As justice and mine honour can give way,  
He shall have favour. Bring him in unbound :  
[*Exeunt* Officers.]

And though *Leosthenes* may challenge from  
me,

For his late worthy service, credit to  
All things he can allege in his own cause,  
*Marullo*, so, I think, you call his name,  
Shall find I do reserve one ear for him,

*Enter* *Cleon*, *Asotus*, *Diphilus*, *Olympia*,  
and *Corisca*.

To let in mercy. Sit, and take your places ;  
The right of this fair virgin first determined,  
Your bondmen shall be censured.

*Cleon.* With all rigour,  
We do expect.

*Coris.* Temper'd, I say, with mercy.

*Enter at one door* *Leosthenes* and *Timagoras* ;  
*at the other*, Officers with *Marullo*, and  
*Timandra*.

*Timol.* Your hand, *Leosthenes* : I cannot  
doubt,

You, that have been victorious in the war,

Should, in a combat fought with words,  
come off

But with assured triumph.

*Leost.* My deserts, sir,  
If, without arrogance, I may style them such,  
Arm me from doubt and fear.

*Timol.* 'Tis nobly spoken.  
Nor be thou daunted (howsoe'er thy fortune  
Has mark'd thee out a slave) to speak thy  
merits :

For virtue, though in rags, may challenge  
more

Than vice, set off with all the trim of greatness.

*Mar.* I had rather fall under so just a  
judge,

Than be acquitted by a man corrupt,  
And partial in his censure.

*Archid.* Note his language ;  
It relishes of better breeding than  
His present state dares promise.

*Timol.* I observe it.  
Place the fair lady in the midst, that both,  
Looking with covetous eyes upon the prize  
They are to plead for, may, from the fair  
object,

Teach *Hermes* eloquence.

*Leost.* Am I fallen so low ?  
My birth, my honour, and, what's dearest  
to me,

My love, and, witness of my love, my service,  
So undervalued, that I must contend  
With one, where my excess of glory must  
Make his o'erthrow a conquest? Shall my  
fulness

Supply defects in such a thing, that never  
Knew anything but want and emptiness,  
Give him a name, and keep it such, from  
this

Unequal competition? If my pride,  
Or any bold assurance of my worth,  
Has pluck'd this mountain of disgrace  
upon me,

I am justly punish'd, and submit ; but if  
I have been modest, and esteem'd myself  
More injured in the tribute of the praise,  
Which no desert of mine, prized by self-love,  
Ever exacted, may this cause and minute  
For ever be forgotten ! I dwell long  
Upon mine anger, and now turn to you,  
Ungrateful fair one ; and, since you are such,  
'Tis lawful for me to proclaim myself,  
And what I have deserved.

*Cleo.* Neglect and scorn  
From me, for this proud vaunt.

*Leost.* You nourish, lady,  
Your own dishonour in this harsh reply,  
And almost prove what some hold of your  
sex,

You are all made up of passion : for, if reason

- Or judgment could find entertainment with you,  
 Or that you would distinguish of the objects  
 You look on, in a true glass, not seduced  
 By the false light of your too violent will,  
 I should not need to plead for that which  
 you,  
 With joy, should offer. Is my high birth a  
 blemish?  
 Or does my wealth, which all the vain ex-  
 pense  
 Of women cannot waste, breed loathing in  
 you?  
 The honours I can call mine own, thought  
 scandals?  
 Am I deform'd, or, for my father's sins,  
 Mulcted by nature? If you interpret these  
 As crimes, 'tis fit I should yield up myself  
 Most miserably guilty. But, perhaps,  
 (Which yet I would not credit,) you have  
 seen  
 This gallant pitch the bar, or bear a burthen  
 Would crack the shoulders of a weaker  
 bondman:  
 Or any other boisterous exercise,  
 Assuring a strong back to satisfy  
 Your loose desires, insatiate as the grave.  
*Cleo.* You are foul-mouth'd.  
*Archid.* Ill-manner'd too.  
*Leost.* I speak  
 In the way of supposition, and entreat you,  
 With all the fervour of a constant lover,  
 That you would free yourself from these  
 aspersions,  
 Or any imputation black-tongued slander  
 Could throw on your unspotted virgin white-  
 ness:  
 To which there is no easier way, than by  
 Vouchsafing him your favour; him, to whom,  
 Next to the general, and the gods and  
 fautors,  
 The country owes her safety.  
*Timag.* Are you stupid?  
 'Slight, leap into his arms, and there ask  
 pardon—  
 Oh! you expect your slave's reply; no doubt  
 We shall have a fine oration: I will teach  
 My spaniel to howl in sweeter language,  
 And keep a better method.  
*Archid.* You forget  
 The dignity of the place.  
*Diph.* Silence!  
*Timol.* [to Marullo.] Speak boldly.  
*Mar.* 'Tis your authority gives me a  
 tongue,  
 I should be dumb else; and I am secure,  
 I cannot clothe my thoughts, and just  
 defence,  
 In such an abject phrase, but 'twill appear  
 Equal, if not above my low condition.  
 I need no bombast language stolen from  
 such  
 As make nobility from prodigious terms  
 The hearers understand not; I bring with me  
 No wealth to boast of, neither can I number  
 Uncertain fortune's favours with my merits;  
 I dare not force affection, or presume  
 To censure her discretion, that looks on me  
 As a weak man, and not her fancy's idol.  
 How I have loved, and how much I have  
 suffer'd,  
 And with what pleasure undergone the  
 burthen  
 Of my ambitious hopes, (in aiming at  
 The glad possession of a happiness,  
 The abstract of all goodness in mankind  
 Can at no part deserve,) with my confession  
 Of mine own wants, is all that can plead for  
 me.  
 But if that pure desires, not blended with  
 Foul thoughts, that, like a river, keeps his  
 course,  
 Retaining still the clearness of the spring  
 From whence it took beginning, may be  
 thought  
 Worthy acceptance; then I dare rise up,  
 And tell this gay man to his teeth, I never  
 Durst doubt her constancy, that, like a rock,  
 Beats off temptations, as that mocks the  
 fury  
 Of the proud waves; nor, from my jealous  
 fears,  
 Question that goodness to which, as an altar  
 Of all perfection, he that truly loved  
 Should rather bring a sacrifice of service,  
 Than raze it with the engines of suspicion:  
 Of which, when he can wash an Æthiop  
 white,  
 Leosthenes may hope to free himself;  
 But, till then, never.  
*Timag.* Bold, presumptuous villain!  
*Mar.* I will go further, and make good  
 upon him,  
 I' the pride of all his honours, birth, and  
 fortunes,  
 He's more unworthy than myself.  
*Leost.* Thou liest.  
*Timag.* Confute him with a whip, and,  
 the doubt decided,  
 Punish him with a halter.  
*Mar.* O the gods!  
 My ribs, though made of brass, cannot  
 contain  
 My heart, swollen big with rage. The lie!—  
 a whip!  
 Let fury then disperse these clouds, in which  
 I long have march'd disguised; [*Throws off*  
*his disguise.*] that, when they know

Whom they have injured, they may faint with horror

Of my revenge, which, wretched men ! expect,

As sure as fate, to suffer.

*Leost.* Ha ! Pisander !

*Timag.* 'Tis the bold Theban !

*Asot.* There's no hope for me then :

I thought I should have put in for a share,  
And borne Cleora from them both ; but now,  
This stranger looks so terrible, that I dare not

So much as look on her.

*Pisan.* Now as myself,

Thy equal at thy best, Leosthenes.

For you, Timagoras, praise beaven you were born

Cleora's brother, 'tis your safest armour.

But I lose time,—The base lie cast upon me,  
I thus return ; Thou art a perjured man,  
False, and perfidious, and hast made a tender  
Of love and service to this lady, when  
Thy soul, if thou hast any, can bear witness,  
That thou wert not thine own : for proof of this,

Look better on this virgin, and consider,  
This Persian shape laid by, and she appearing

In a Greekish dress, such as when first you saw her,

If she resemble not Pisander's sister,

One call'd Statilia ?

*Leost.* 'Tis the same ! My guilt  
So chokes my spirits, I cannot deny  
My falsehood, nor excuse it.

*Pisan.* This is she,

To whom thou wert contracted : this the lady,

That, when thou wert my prisoner, fairly taken

In the Spartan war, that, begg'd thy liberty,  
And with it gave herself to thee, ungrateful !

*Statil.* No more, sir, I entreat you : I perceive

True sorrow in his looks, and a consent  
To make me reparation in mine honour ;  
And then I am most happy.

*Pisan.* The wrong done her,

Drew me from Thebes, with a full intent to kill thee :

But this fair object met me in my fury,  
And quite disarm'd me. Being denied to have her,

By you, my lord Archidamus, and not able  
To live far from her ; love, the mistress of  
All quaint devices, prompted me to treat  
With a friend of mine, who, as a pirate,  
sold me

For a slave to you, my lord, and gave my sister,

As a present, to Cleora.

*Timol.* Strange meanders !

*Pisan.* There how I bare myself, needs no relation :

But, if so far descending from the height  
Of my then flourishing fortunes, to the lowest

Condition of a man, to have means only  
To feed my eye with the sight of what I honour'd ;

The dangers too I underwent, the sufferings ;

The clearness of my interest, may deserve  
A noble recompense in your lawful favour ;  
Now 'tis apparent that Leosthenes  
Can claim no interest in you, you may please

To think upon my service.

*Cleo.* Sir, my want

Of power to satisfy so great a debt,  
Makes me accuse my fortune ; but if that,  
Out of the bounty of your mind, you think  
A free surrender of myself full payment,  
I gladly tender it.

*Archid.* With my consent too,  
All injuries forgotten.

*Timag.* I will study,  
In my future service, to deserve your favour,  
And good opinion.

*Leost.* Thus I gladly fee  
This advocate to plead for me.

[*Kissing* Statilia.

*Pisan.* You will find me

An easy judge. When I have yielded reasons

Of your bondmen's falling off from their obedience,

Then after, as you please, determine of me.  
I found their natures apt to mutiny  
From your too cruel usage, and made trial  
How far they might be wrought on ; to instruct you

To look with more prevention and care  
To what they may hereafter undertake  
Upon the like occasions. The hurt's little  
They have committed ; nor was ever cure,  
But with some pain, effected. I confess,  
In hope to force a grant of fair Cleora,  
I urged them to defend the town against you ;

Nor had the terror of your whips, but that  
I was preparing for defence elsewhere,  
So soon got entrance : In this I am guilty ;  
Now, as you please, your censure.

*Timol.* Bring them in ;

And, though you've given me power, I do entreat

Such as have undergone their insolence,  
It may not be offensive, though I study  
Pity, more than revenge.

*Coris.* 'Twill best become you.

*Cleon.* I must consent.

*Asot.* For me, I'll find a time  
To be revenged hereafter.

*Enter* Graculo, Cimbrio, Poliphron, Zan-  
thia, and the other Slaves, with halters  
about their necks.

*Grac.* Give me leave ;  
I'll speak for all.

*Timol.* What canst thou say, to hinder  
The course of justice?

*Grac.* Nothing.—You may see  
We are prepared for hanging, and confess  
We have deserved it : our most humble  
suit is,

We may not twice be executed.

*Timol.* Twice !

How meanest thou ?

*Grac.* At the gallows first, and after in a  
ballad

Sung to some villainous tune. There are  
ten-groat rhymers

About the town, grown fat on these occa-  
sions.

Let but a chapel fall, or a street be fired,  
A foolish lover hang himself for pure love,

Or any such like accident, and, before  
They are cold in their graves, some damu'd  
ditty's made,

Which makes their ghosts walk.—Let the  
state take order

For the redress of this abuse, recording  
'Twas done by my advice, and, for my part,  
I'll cut as clean a caper from the ladder,  
As ever merry Greek did.

*Timol.* Yet I think  
You would shew more activity to delight  
Your master for a pardon.

*Grac.* O ! I would dance,  
As I were all air and fire. [Capers.

*Timol.* And ever be  
Obedient and humble ?

*Grac.* As his spaniel,  
Though he kick'd me for exercise ; and the  
like

I promise for all the rest.

*Timol.* Rise then, you have it.

*All the Slaves.* Timoleon ! Timoleon !

*Timol.* Cease these clamours.

And now, the war being ended to our wishes,  
And such as went the pilgrimage of love,

Happy in full fruition of their hopes,  
'Tis lawful, thanks paid to the Powers  
divine,

To drown our cares in honest mirth and  
wine. [Exeunt.





# The Renegado.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

## ACTORS' NAMES.

Asambeg, <i>viceroy of Tunis</i> . . . . .	John Blancy.
Mustapha, <i>basha of Aleppo</i> . . . . .	John Sumner.
Vitelli, <i>a Venetian gentleman, disguised as a merchant</i> . . . . .	Mich. Bowyer.
Francisco, <i>a Jesuit</i> . . . . .	Wm. Reignalds.
Antonio Grimaldi, the RENEGADO . . . . .	Wm. Allen.
Carazie, <i>an eunuch</i> . . . . .	Wm. Robins.
Gazet, <i>servant to Vitelli</i> . . . . .	Ed. Shakerley.
<i>Aga.</i>	
<i>Capiaga.</i>	
<i>Fanizaries.</i>	
<i>Master.</i>	
<i>Boatswain.</i>	
<i>Sailors.</i>	
<i>A Gaoler. Turks.</i>	
Donusa, <i>niece to Amurath</i> . . . . .	Ed. Rogers.
Paulina, <i>sister to Vitelli</i> . . . . .	Theo. Bourne.
Manto, <i>servant to Donusa,</i>	

## SCENE,—Tunis.

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I.—*A Street near the Bazaar.*

*Enter Vitelli and Gazet.*

*Vitel.* You have hired a shop, then?

*Gaz.* Yes, sir; and our wares,

Though brittle as a maidenhead at sixteen,  
Are safe unladen; not a crystal crack'd,  
Or China dish needs soldering; our choice  
pictures,  
As they came from the workman, without  
blemish:

And I have studied speeches for each piece,  
And, in a thrifty tone, to sell them off,  
Will swear by Mahomet and Termagant,  
That this is mistress to the great duke of  
Florence,

That, niece to old king Pepin, and a third,  
An Austrian princess by her Roman nose,  
Howe'er my conscience tells me they are  
figures

Of bawds and common courtezans in Venice.

*Vitel.* You make no scruple of an oath,  
then?

*Gaz.* Fie, sir!

'Tis out of my indentures; I am bound there,  
To swear for my master's profit, as securely  
As your intelligencer must for his prince,  
That sends him forth an honourable spy,  
To serve his purposes. And, if it be lawful  
In a Christian shopkeeper to cheat his father,

I cannot find but to abuse a Turk  
In the sale of our commodities, must be  
thought

A meritorious work.

*Vitel.* I wonder, sirrah,

What's your religion?

*Gaz.* Troth, to answer truly,  
I would not be of one that should command  
me

To feed upon poor John, when I see pheasants  
And partridges on the table: nor do I like  
The other, that allows us to eat flesh  
In Lent, though it be rotten, rather than be  
Thought superstitious; as your zealous  
cobler,

And learned botcher, preach at Amsterdam,  
Over a hotchpotch. I would not be confined  
In my belief: when all your sects and sectaries  
Are grown of one opinion, if I like it,  
I will profess myself,—in the mean time,  
Live I in England, Spain, France, Rome,

Geneva,

I'm of that country's faith.

*Vitel.* And what in Tunis?

Will you turn Turk here?

*Gaz.* No: so I should lose  
A collop of that part my Doll enjoind me  
To bring home as she left it: 'tis her venture,  
Nor dare I barter that commodity,  
Without her special warrant.

*Vitel.* You are a knave, sir:

Leaving your roguery, think upon my business,

It is no time to fool now.

Remember where you are too : though this mart time

We are allow'd free trading, and with safety,  
Temper your tongue, and meddle not with the Turks,

Their manners, nor religion.

*Gaz.* Take you heed, sir,

What colours you wear. Not two hours since, there landed

An English pirate's whore, with a green apron,

And, as she walked the streets, one of their muftis,

We call them priests at Venice, with a razor  
Cuts it off, petticoat, smock and all, and leaves her

As naked as my nail ; the young fry wondering  
What strange beast it should be. I scaped a scouring—

My mistress's busk point, of that forbidden colour,

Then tied my codpiece ; had I been discover'd,

I had been capon'd.

*Vitel.* And had been well served.

Haste to the shop, and set my wares in order,  
I will not long be absent.

*Gaz.* Though I strive, sir,

To put off melancholy, to which you are ever  
Too much inclined, it shall not hinder me,  
With my best care to serve you. [*Exit.*]

*Enter Francisco.*

*Vitel.* I believe thee.—

O welcome, sir ! stay of my steps in this life,  
And guide to all my blessed hopes hereafter.

What comforts, sir ? Have your endeavours prosper'd ?

Have we tired Fortune's malice with our sufferings ?

Is she at length, after so many frowns,  
Pleased to vouchsafe one cheerful look upon us ?

*Fran.* You give too much to fortune and your passions,

O'er which a wise man, if religious, triumphs.  
That name fools worship ; and those tyrants, which

We arm against our better part, our reason,  
May add, but never take from our afflictions.

*Vitel.* Sir, as I am a sinful man, I cannot  
But like one suffer.

*Fran.* I exact not from you

A fortitude insensible of calamity,  
To which the saints themselves have bow'd  
and shown

They are made of flesh and blood ; all that  
I challenge,

Is manly patience. Will you, that were  
train'd up

In a religious school, where divine maxims  
Scorning comparison with moral precepts,  
Were daily taught you, bear your constancy's trial,

Not like Vitelli, but a village nurse,  
With curses in your mouth, tears in your eyes ?—

How poorly it shows in you.

*Vitel.* I am school'd, sir,  
And will hereafter, to my utmost strength,  
Study to be myself.

*Fran.* So shall you find me  
Most ready to assist you ; neither have I  
Slept in your great occasions : since I left you,  
I have been at the viceroy's court, and press'd,  
As far as they allow, a Christian entrance ;  
And something I have learn'd, that may concern

The purpose of this journey.

*Vitel.* Dear sir, what is it ?

*Fran.* By the command of Asambeg, the viceroy,

The city swells with barbarous pomp and pride,

For the entertainment of stout Mustapha,  
The basha of Aleppo, who in person  
Comes to receive the niece of Amurath,  
The fair Donusa, for his bride.

*Vitel.* I find not

How this may profit us.

*Fran.* Pray you, give me leave.

Among the rest that wait upon the viceroy,  
Such as have, under him, command in Tunis,  
Who, as you've often heard, are all false pirates,

I saw the shame of Venice, and the scorn  
Of all good men, the perjured RENEGADO,  
Antonio Grimaiddi.

*Vitel.* Ha ! his name

Is poison to me.

*Fran.* Yet again ?

*Vitel.* I have done, sir.

*Fran.* This debauch'd villain, whom we  
ever thought

(After his impious scorn done, in St. Mark's,  
To me, as I stood at the holy altar)

The thief that ravish'd your fair sister from you,

The virtuous Paulina, not long since,  
As I am truly given to understand,  
Sold to the viceroy a fair Christian virgin  
On whom, maugre his fierce and cruel nature,  
Asambeg dotes extremely.

*Vitel.* 'Tis my sister :

It must be she, my better angel tells me

'Tis poor Paulina. Farewell all disguises !  
I'll show, in my revenge, that I am noble.

*Fran.* You are not mad ?

*Vitel.* No, sir ; my virtuous anger  
Makes every vein an-artery ; I feel in me  
The strength of twenty men ; and, being  
arm'd

With my good cause, to wreak wrong'd  
innocence,

I dare alone run to the viceroy's court,  
And with this poniard, before his face,  
Dig out Grimaldi's heart.

*Fran.* Is this religious ?

*Vitel.* Would you have me tame now ?  
Can I know my sister

Mew'd up in his seraglio, and in danger  
Not alone to lose her honour, but her soul ;  
The hell-bred villain by too, that has sold  
both

To black destruction, and not haste to send  
him

To the devil, his tutor ? To be patient now,  
Were, in another name, to play the pander  
To the viceroy's loose embraces, and cry aim !  
While he, by force or flattery, compels her  
To yield her fair name up to his foul lust,  
And, after, turn apostata to the faith  
That she was bred in.

*Fran.* Do but give me hearing,

And you shall soon grant how ridiculous  
This childish fury is. A wise man never  
Attempts impossibilities ; 'tis as easy  
For any single arm to quell an army,  
As to effect your wishes. We come hither  
To learn Paulina's fate, and to redeem her :  
Leave your revenge to heaven. I oft have  
told you

Of a relic that I gave her, which has power,  
If we may credit holy men's traditions,  
To keep the owner free from violence :  
This on her breast she wears, and does pre-  
serve

The virtue of it, by her daily prayers.  
So, if she fall not by her own consent,  
Which it were sin to think, I fear no force.  
Be, therefore, patient ; keep this borrow'd  
shape,

Till time and opportunity present us  
With some fit means to see her ; which per-  
form'd,

I'll join with you in any desperate course  
For her delivery.

*Vitel.* You have charm'd me, sir,  
And I obey in all things : pray you, pardon  
The weakness of my passion.

*Fran.* And excuse it.

Be cheerful, man ; for know that good intents  
Are, in the end, crown'd with as fair events

SCENE II.—*A Room in Donusa's Palace.*

*Enter Donusa, Manto, and Carazie.*

*Don.* Have you seen the Christian captive,  
The great basha is so enamour'd of ?

*Mant.* Yes, and it please your excellency,  
I took a full view of her, when she was  
Presented to him.

*Don.* And is she such a wonder,  
As 'tis reported ?

*Mant.* She was drown'd in tears then,  
Which took much from her beauty ; yet, in  
spite

Of sorrow, she appear'd the mistress of  
Most rare perfections ; and, though low of  
stature,

Her well-proportion'd limbs invite affection ;  
And, when she speaks, each syllable is music  
That does enchant the hearers : but your  
highness,

That are not to be parallel'd, I yet never  
Beheld her equal.

*Don.* Come, you flatter me ;  
But I forgive it. We, that are born great,  
Seldom distaste our servants, though they  
give us

More than we can pretend to. I have heard  
That Christian ladies live with much more  
freedom

Than such as are born here. Our jealous  
Turks,

Never permit their fair wives to be seen,  
But at the public bagnios, or the mosques,  
And, even then, veil'd and guarded. Thou,  
Carazie,

Wert born in England ; what's the custom  
there,

Among your women ? Come, be free and  
merry :

I am no severe mistress ; nor hast thou met with  
A heavy bondage.

*Car.* Heavy ! I was made lighter  
By two stone weight, at least, to be fit to  
serve you.

But to your question, madam ; women in  
England,

For the most part, live like queens. Your  
country ladies

Have liberty to hawk, to hunt, to feast,  
To give free entertainment to all comers,  
To talk, to kiss ; there's no such thing known  
there

As an Italian girdle. Your city dame,  
Without leave, wears the breeches, has her  
husband

At as much command as her 'prentice ; and,  
if need be,

Can make him cuckold by her father's cov-

*Car.* She, I assure you, madam,  
Knows nothing but her will; must be allow'd  
Her footmen, her caroch, her ushers, pages,  
Her doctor, chaplains; and, as I have heard,  
They're grown of late so learn'd, that they  
maintain

A strange position, which their lords, with all  
Their wit, cannot confute.

*Don.* What's that, I prithee?

*Car.* Marry, that it is not only fit, but  
lawful,

Your madam there, her much rest and high  
feeding

Duly consider'd, should, to ease her husband,  
Be allow'd a private friend: they have drawn  
a bill

To this good purpose, and, the next assem-  
bly,

Doubt not to pass it.

*Don.* We enjoy no more,

That are o' the Othoman race, though our  
religion

Allows all pleasure. I am dull: some music.  
Take my chapins off. So, a lusty strain.

[*A galliard. Knocking within.*]

Who knocks there?

[*Manto goes to the door, and returns.*]

*Mant.* 'Tis the basha of Aleppo,

Who humbly makes request he may present  
His service to you.

*Don.* Reach a chair. We must

Receive him like ourself, and not depart with  
One piece of ceremony, state, and greatness,  
That may beget respect and reverence

In one that's born our vassal. Now admit  
him.

*Enter Mustapha; he puts off his yellow  
pantofles.*

*Musta.* The place is sacred; and I am to  
enter

The room where she abides, with such de-  
votion

As pilgrims pay at Mecca, when they visit  
The tomb of our great prophet. [*Kneels.*]

*Don.* Rise; the sign

[*Carazie takes up the pantofles.*]

That we vouchsafe your presence.

*Musta.* May those Powers

That raised the Othoman empire, and still  
guard it,

Reward your highness for this gracious favour  
You throw upon your servant! It hath  
pleas'd

The most invincible, mightiest Amurath,  
(To speak his other titles would take from  
him

That in himself does comprehend all great-  
ness,)

To make me the unworthy instrument  
Of his command. Receive, divinest lady,  
[*Delivers a letter.*]

This letter, sign'd by his victorious hand,  
And made authentic by the imperial seal.  
There, when you find me mention'd, far be  
it from you

To think it my ambition to presume  
At such a happiness, which his powerful will,  
From his great mind's magnificence, not my  
merit,

Hath shower'd upon me. But, if your consent  
Join with his good opinion and allowance,

To perfect what his favours have begun,  
I shall, in my obsequiousness and duty,  
Fndeavour to prevent all just complaints,  
Which want of will to serve you may call on me.

*Don.* His sacred majesty writes here, that  
your valour

Against the Persian hath so won upon him,  
That there's no grace or honour in his gift,  
Of which he can imagine you unworthy;  
And, what's the greatest you can hope, or  
aim at,

It is his pleasure you should be received  
Into his royal family—provided,

For so far I am unconfined, that I  
Affect and like your person. I expect not

The ceremony which he uses in  
Bestowing of his daughters and his nieces:

As that he should present you for my slave,  
To love you, if you pleas'd me; or deliver

A poniard, on my least dislike, to kill you.  
Such tyranny and pride agree not with

My softer disposition. Let it suffice,  
For my first answer, that thus far I grace

you: [*Gives him her hand to kiss.*]

Hereafter, some time spent to make enquiry  
Of the good parts and faculties of your mind,  
You shall hear further from me.

*Musta.* Though all torments  
Really suffer'd, or in hell imagined

By curious fiction, in one hour's delay  
Are wholly comprehended; I confess

That I stand bound in duty, not to check at  
Whatever you command, or please to impose,

For trial of my patience.

*Don.* Let us find

Some other subject; too much of one theme  
cloys me:

Is't a full mart?

*Musta.* A confluence of all nations  
Are met together: there's variety, too,  
Of all that merchants traffic for.

*Don.* I know not—

I feel a virgin's longing to descend  
So far from my own greatness, as to be,

Though not a buyer, yet a looker on  
Their strange commodities.

*Musta.* If without a train  
You dare be seen abroad, I'll dismiss mine,  
And wait upon you as a common man,  
And satisfy your wishes.

*Don.* I embrace it.  
Provide my veil; and, at the postern gate,  
Convey us out unseen. I trouble you.

*Musta.* It is my happiness you deign to  
command me. [Exit.]

SCENE III.—*The Bazar.*

*Gazet in his Shop; Francisco and Vitelli  
walking before it.*

*Gaz.* What do you lack? Your choice  
China dishes, your pure Venetian crystal of  
all sorts, of all neat and new fashions, from  
the mirror of the madam, to the private  
utensil of her chambermaid; and curious  
pictures of the rarest beauties of Europe:  
What do you lack, gentlemen?

*Fran.* Take heed, I say; howe'er it may  
appear

Impertinent, I must express my love,  
My advice, and counsel. You are young,  
Vitelli,

And may be tempted; and these Turkish  
dames,  
(Like English mastiffs, that increase their  
fierceness

By being chain'd up,) from the restraint of  
freedom,

If lust once fire their blood from a fair object,  
Will run a course the fiends themselves would  
shake at,

To enjoy their wanton ends.

*Vitel.* Sir, you mistake me:

I am too full of woe, to entertain

One thought of pleasure, though all Europe's  
queens

Kneel'd at my feet, and courted me; much  
less

To mix with such, whose difference of faith  
Must, of necessity, (or I must grant  
Myself neglectful of all you have taught me,)  
Strangle such base desires.

*Fran.* Be constant in

That resolution; I'll abroad again,

And learn, as far as it is possible,

What may concern Paulina. Some two hours  
Shall bring me back. [Exit.]

*Vitel.* All blessings wait upon you!

*Gaz.* Cold doings, sir? a mart do you call  
this? 'sight!

A pudding-wife, or a witch with a thrum cap,  
That sells ale underground to such as come  
To know their fortunes in a dead vacation,  
Have, ten to one, more stirring.

*Vitel.* We must be patient.

*Gaz.* Your seller by retail ought to be  
angry,  
But when he's fingering money.

*Enter Grimaldi, Master, Boatswain, Sailors,  
and Turks.*

*Vitel.* Here are company—  
Defend me, my good angel, [seeing Gri-  
maldi.] I behold

A basilisk!

*Gaz.* What do you lack? what do you lack?  
pure China dishes, clear crystal glasses, a  
dumb mistress to make love to? What do  
you lack, gentlemen?

*Grim.* Thy mother for a bawd; or, if thou  
hast

A handsome one, thy sister for a whore;  
Without these, do not tell me of your trash,  
Or I shall spoil your market.

*Vitel.* —Old Grimaldi!

*Grim.* 'Zounds, wherefore do we put to  
sea, or stand

The raging winds, aloft, or p— upon  
The foamy waves, when they rage most;  
deride

The thunder of the enemy's shot, board boldly  
A merchant's ship for prize, though we behold  
The desperate gunner ready to give fire,  
And blow the deck up? wherefore shake we off  
Those scrupulous rags of charity and con-  
science,

Invented only to keep churchmen warm,  
Or feed the hungry mouths of famish'd  
beggars;

But, when we touch the shore, to wallow in  
All sensual pleasures?

*Mast.* Ay, but, noble captain,  
To spare a little for an after-clap,

Were not improvidence.

*Grim.* Hang consideration!

When this is spent, is not our ship the same,  
Our courage too the same, to fetch in more?  
The earth, where it is fertilest, returns not  
More than three harvests, while the glorious  
sun

Posts through the zodiac, and makes up the  
year:

But the sea, which is our mother, (that em-  
braces

Both the rich Indies in her outstretch'd  
arms,)

Yields every day a crop, if we dare reap it.

No, no, my mates, let tradesmen think of  
thrift,

And usurers hoard up; let our expense  
Be, as our comings in are, without bounds.  
We are the Neptunes of the ocean,  
And such as traffic shall pay sacrifice  
Of their best lading; I will have this canvass

Your boy wears, lined with tissue, and the  
cates

You taste, serv'd up in gold :—Though we  
carouse

The tears of orphans in our Greekish wines,  
The sighs of undone widows paying for  
The music bought to cheer us, ravish'd virgins  
To slavery sold, for coin to feed our riots,  
We will have no compunction.

*Gaz.* Do you hear, sir?

We have paid for our ground.

*Grim.* Hum!

*Gaz.* And hum, too!

For all your big words, get you further off,  
And hinder not the prospect of our shop,  
Or—

*Grim.* What will you do?

*Gaz.* Nothing, sir—but pray  
Your worship to give me handsel.

*Grim.* [*Seizing him.*] By the ears,

Thus, sir, by the ears.

*Mast.* Hold, hold!

*Vitel.* You'll still be prating.

*Grim.* Come, let's be drunk; then each  
man to his whore.

'Slight, how do you look? you had best go  
find a corner

To pray in, and repent : do, do, and cry ;  
It will shew fine in pirates. [*Exit.*]

*Mast.* We must follow,  
Or he will spend our shares.

*Boatsw.* I fought for mine.

*Mast.* Nor am I so precise but I can drab  
too :

We will not sit out for our parts.

*Boatsw.* Agreed.

[*Exeunt Mast. Boatsw. Sailors.*]

*Gaz.* The devil gnaw off his fingers ! If  
he were

In London, among the clubs, up went his  
heels,

Forstriking of a prentice.—What do you lack?  
What do you lack, gentlemen?

1 *Turk.* I wonder how the viceroy can  
endure

The insolence of this fellow.

2 *Turk.* He receives profit

From the prizes he brings in ; and that excuses  
Whatever he commits. Ha ! what are these?

*Enter Mustapha with Donusa veiled.*

1 *Turk.* They seem of rank and quality ;  
observe them.

*Gaz.* What do you lack? see what you  
please to buy ;

Wares of all sorts, most honourable madona.  
*Vitel.* Peace, sirrah, make no noise ;

these are not people

To be jested with.

*Don.* Is this the Christians' custom,  
In the venting their commodities?

*Musta.* Yes, best madam.

But you may please to keep your way, here's  
nothing

But toys and trifles, not worth your observing.

*Don.* Yes, for variety's sake : pray you,  
shew us, friend,

The chiefest of your wares.

*Vitel.* Your ladyship's servant ;

And if, in worth, or title you are more,  
My ignorance plead my pardon !

*Don.* He speaks well.

*Vitel.* Take down the looking-glass. Here  
is a mirror

Steel'd so exactly, neither taking from  
Nor flattering the object it returns

To the beholder, that Narcissus might  
(And never grow enamour'd of himself)

View his fair feature in't.

*Don.* Poetical, too!

*Vitel.* Here China dishes to serve in a  
banquet,

Though the voluptuous Persian sat a guest.  
Here crystal glasses, such as Ganymede

Did fill with nectar to the Thunderer,  
When he drank to Alcides, and received him

In the fellowship of the gods ; true to the  
owners :

Corinthian plate, studded with diamonds,  
Conceal'd oft deadly poison ; this pure metal

So innocent is, and faithful to the mistress  
Or master that possesses it, that, rather

Than hold one drop that's venomous, of itself  
It flies in pieces, and deludes the traitor.

*Don.* How movingly could this fellow  
treat upon

A worthy subject, that finds such discourse  
To grace a trifle !

*Vitel.* Here's a picture, madam ;

The master-piece of Michael Angelo,  
Our great Italian workman ; here's another,

So perfect at all parts, that had Pygmalion  
Seen this, his prayers had been made to

Venus

To have given it life, and his carved ivory  
image

By poets ne'er remember'd. They are, in-  
deed,

The rarest beauties of the Christian world,  
And no where to be equall'd.

*Don.* You are partial

In the cause of those you favour ; I believe  
I instantly could show you one, to theirs

Not much inferior.

*Vitel.* With your pardon, madam,  
I am incredulous.

*Don.* Can you match me this ?

[*Lifts her veil hastily.*]

*Vitel.* What wonder look I on! I'll search above,  
And suddenly attend you. [*Exit.*  
*Don.* Are you amazed!  
I'll bring you to yourself.

[*Throws down the glasses.*

*Musta.* Ha! what's the matter?

*Gaz.* My master's ware!—Weare undone!  
—O strange!

A lady to turn roarer, and break glasses!  
'Tis time to shut up shop then.

*Musta.* You seem moved:  
If any language of these Christian dogs  
Have called your anger on, in a frown shew it,  
And they are dead already.

*Don.* The offence  
Looks not so far. The foolish, paltry fellow,  
Shew'd me some trifles, and demanded of me,  
For what I valued at so many aspers,  
A thousand ducats. I confess he moved me;  
Yet I should wrong myself, should such a  
beggar

Receive least loss from me.

*Musta.* Is it no more?

*Don.* No, I assure you. Bid him bring  
his bill

To-morrow to the palace, and enquire  
For one Donusa; that word gives him passage  
Through all the guard: say, there he shall  
receive

Full satisfaction. Now, when you please.

*Musta.* I wait you.

[*Exit Musta. and Don.*

*Turk.* We must not know them.—Let's  
shift off, and vanish. [*Exit Turks.*

*Gaz.* The swine's-pox overtake you! there's  
a curse

For a Turk, that eats no hog's flesh.

*Re-enter Vitelli.*

*Vitel.* Is she gone?

*Gaz.* Yes: you may see her handywork.

*Vitel.* No matter.

Said she aught else?

*Gaz.* That you should wait upon her,  
And there receive court payment; and, to  
pass

The guards, she bids you only say you come  
To one Donusa.

*Vitel.* How! Remove the wares;  
Do it without reply. The sultan's niece!  
I have heard among the Turks, for any lady  
To shew her face bare, argues love, or speaks  
Her deadly hatred. What should I fear? my  
fortune

Is sunk so low, there cannot fall upon me  
Aught worth my shunning. I will run the  
hazard:

She may be a means to free distress'd  
Paulina—  
Or, if offended, at the worst, to die  
Is a full period to calamity. [*Exit.*

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Donusa's Palace.*

*Enter Carazie and Manto.*

*Car.* In the name of wonder, Manto, what  
hath my lady  
Done with herself, since yesterday?

*Mant.* I know not.

Malicious men report we are all guided  
In our affections by a wandering planet:  
But such a sudden change in such a person,  
May stand for an example, to confirm  
Their false assertion.

*Car.* She's now pettish, froward;

Music, discourse, observance, tedious to her.  
*Mant.* She slept not the last night; and  
yet prevented

The rising sun, in being up before him:  
Call'd for a costly bath, then will'd the rooms  
Should be perfumed; ransack'd her cabinets  
For her choice and richest jewels, and  
appears now

Like Cynthia in full glory, waited on  
By the fairest of the stars.

*Car.* Can you guess the reason,  
Why the aga of the janizaries, and he  
That guards the entrance of the inmost port,  
Were call'd before her?

*Mant.* They are both her creatures,  
And by her grace preferred: but I am  
ignorant

To what purpose they were sent for.

*Enter Donusa.*

*Car.* Here she comes,  
Full of sad thoughts: we must stand further  
off.

What a frown was that!

*Mant.* Forbear.

*Car.* I pity her.

*Don.* What magic hath transform'd me  
from myself?

Where is my virgin pride? how have I lost  
My boasted freedom? what new fire burns up  
My scorched entrails; what unknown desires  
Invade, and take possession of my soul,  
All virtuous objects vanish'd? I, that have  
stood

The shock of fierce temptations, stopp'd  
mine ears

Against all Syren notes lust ever sung,

To draw my bark of chastity (that with  
wonder

Hath kept a constant and an honour'd course)

Into the gulf of a deserved ill-fame,  
Now fall unpitied ; and, in a moment,  
With mine own hands, dig up a grave to bury

The monumental heap of all my years,  
Employ'd in noble actions. O my fate !  
—But there is no resisting. I obey thee,  
Imperious god of love, and willingly  
Put mine own fetters on, to grace thy triumph :

"Twere therefore more than cruelty in thee,  
To use me like a tyrant. What poor means  
Must I make use of now ! and flatter such,  
To whom, till I betray'd my liberty,  
One gracious look of mine would have erected

An altar to my service ! How now,  
Manto !—

My ever careful woman ; and Carazie,  
Thou hast been faithful too.

*Car.* I dare not call

My life mine own, since it is yours, but gladly

Will part with it, whene'er you shall command me ;

And think I fall a martyr, so my death  
May give life to your pleasures.

*Mant.* But vouchsafe

To let me understand what you desire  
Should be effected ; I will undertake it,  
And curse myself for cowardice, if I paused  
To ask the reason why.

*Don.* I am comforted

In the tender of your service, but shall be  
Confirm'd in my full joys, in the performance.

Yet, trust me, I will not impose upon  
But what you stand engaged for to a mistress,

Such as I have been to you. All I ask,  
Is faith and secrecy.

*Car.* Say but you doubt me,

And, to secure you, I'll cut out my tongue ;  
I am libb'd in the breech already.

*Mant.* Do not hinder

Yourself, by these delays.

*Don.* Thus then I whisper

Mine own shame to you.—O that I should blush

To speak what I so much desire to do !  
And, further—[*Whispers, and uses vehement action.*]

*Mant.* Is this all ?

*Don.* Think it not base ;

Although I know the office undergoes  
A coarse construction.

*Car.* Coarse ! 'tis but procuring ;

A smock employment, which has made more knights,

In a country I could name, than twenty years

Of service in the field.

*Don.* You have my ends.

*Mant.* Which say you have arrived at :  
be not wanting

To yourself, and fear not us.

*Car.* I know my burthen ;  
I'll bear it with delight.

*Mant.* Talk not, but do.

[*Exeunt Car. and Mant.*]

*Don.* O love, what poor shifts thou dost  
force us to ! [Exit.]

SCENE II.—*A Court in the same.*

*Enter Aga, Capiaga, and Janizaries.*

*Aga.* She was ever our good mistress, and  
our maker,

And should we check at a little hazard for  
her,

We were unthankful.

*Cap.* I dare pawn my head,  
'Tis some disguised minion of the court,  
Sent from great Amurath, to learn from her  
The viceroy's actions.

*Aga.* That concerns not us ;  
His fall may be our rise : whate'er he be,  
He passes through my guards.

*Cap.* And mine—provided  
He give the word.

*Enter Vitelli.*

*Vitel.* To faint now, being thus far,  
Would argue me of cowardice.

*Aga.* Stand : the word ;  
Or, being a Christian, to press thus far,  
Forfeits thy life.

*Vitel.* Donusa.

*Aga.* Pass in peace.

[*Exeunt Aga and Janizaries.*]

*Vitel.* What a privilege her name bears !  
'Tis wondrous strange ! If the great officer,  
The guardian of the inner port, deny not—

*Cap.* Thy warrant : Speak, or thou art  
dead.

*Vitel.* Donusa.

*Cap.* That protects thee ;

Without fear enter. So :—discharge the  
watch. [*Exeunt Vitelli and Capiaga.*]

SCENE III.—*An outer Room in the same.*

*Enter Carazie and Manto.*

*Car.* Though he hath past the aga and  
chief porter,

This cannot be the man.

*Mant.* By her description,  
I am sure it is.



*Car.* O women, women,  
What are you? A great lady dote upon  
A haberdasher of small wares!

*Mant.* Pish! thou hast none.

*Car.* No; if I had, I might have served  
the turn:

This 'tis to want munition, when a man  
Should make a breach, and enter.

*Enter Vitelli.*

*Mant.* Sir, you are welcome:  
Think what 'tis to be happy, and possess it.

*Car.* Perfume the rooms there, and make  
way. Let music

With choice notes entertain the man the  
princess

Now purposes to honour.

*Vitel.* I am ravish'd. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*A Room of State in the same.*

*A table set forth, with jewels and bags of  
money upon it.*

*Loud music. Enter Donusa, (followed by  
Carazie,) and takes her seat.*

*Don.* Sing o'er the ditty that I last com-  
posed

Upon my love-sick passion: suit your voice  
To the music that's placed yonder, we shall  
hear you

With more delight and pleasure.

*Car.* I obey you. [*Song.*]

*During the song, enter Manto and Vitelli.*

*Vitel.* Is not this Tempe, or the blessed  
shades,

Where innocent spirits reside? or do I dream,  
And this a heavenly vision? Howsoever,  
It is a sight too glorious to behold,  
For such a wretch as I am.

*Car.* He is daunted.

*Mant.* Speak to him, madam; cheer him  
up, or you  
Destroy what you have built.

*Car.* Would I were furnish'd  
With his artillery, and if I stood  
Gaping as he does, hang me. [*Aside.*]

[*Exeunt Carazie and Manto.*]

*Vitel.* That I might  
Ever dream thus! [*Kneels.*]

*Don.* Banish amazement:  
You wake; your debtor tells you so, your  
debtor.

And, to assure you that I am a substance,  
And no aerial figure, thus I raise you.

Why do you shake? my soft touch brings  
no ague;

No biting frost is in this palm; nor are  
My looks like to the Gorgon's head, that  
turn

Men into statues; rather they have power,  
Or I have been abused, where they bestow  
Their influence, (let me prove it truth in you,)  
To give to dead men motion.

*Vitel.* Can this be?

May I believe my senses? Dare I think  
I have a memory, or that you are  
That excellent creature that of late disdain'd  
not

To look on my poor trifles?

*Don.* I am she.

*Vitel.* The owner of that blessed name,  
Donusa,

Which, like a potent charm, although pro-  
nounced

By my profane, but much unworthier,  
tongue,

Hath brought me safe to this forbidden  
place,

Where Christian ne'er yet trod?

*Don.* I am the same.

*Vitel.* And to what end, great lady—par-  
don me,

That I presume to ask, did your command  
Command me hither? Or what am I, to  
whom

You should vouchsafe your favours; nay,  
your angers?

If any wild or uncollected speech,  
Offensively deliver'd, or my doubt

Of your unknown perfections, have displeas'd  
you,

You wrong your indignation to pronounce,  
Yourself, my sentence: to have seen you only,  
And to have touch'd that fortune-making

hand,

Will with delight weigh down all tortures,  
that

A flinty hangman's rage could execute,  
Or rigid tyranny command with pleasure.

*Don.* How the abundance of good flowing  
to thee,

Is wronged in this simplicity! and these  
bounties,

Which all our Eastern kings have kneel'd  
in vain for,

Do, by thy ignorance, or wilful fear,  
Meet with a false construction! Christian,  
know,

(For till thou art mine by a nearer name,  
That title, though abhor'd here, takes not  
from

Thy entertainment) that 'tis not the fashion  
Among the greatest and the fairest dames

This Turkish empire gladly owes and bows to,  
To punish where there's no offence, or nourish

Displeasures against those, without whose  
mercy

They part with all felicity. Prithee, be wise,

And gently understand me ; do not force her,  
That ne'er knew aught but to command, nor  
e'er read

The elements of affection, but from such  
As gladly sued to her, in the infancy  
Of her new-born desires, to be at once  
Importunate and immodest.

*Vitel.* Did I know,

Great lady, your commands ; or, to what  
purpose

This personated passion tends, (since 'twere  
A crime in me deserving death, to think  
It is your own,) I should, to make you sport,  
Take any shape you please to impose upon me ;  
And with joy strive to serve you.

*Don.* Sport ! thou art cruel,

It that thou canst interpret my descent  
From my high birth and greatness, but to be  
A part, in which I truly act myself :

And I must hold thee for a dull spectator,  
If it stir not affection, and invite  
Compassion for my sufferings. Be thou  
taught

By my example, to make satisfaction  
For wrongs unjustly offer'd. Willingly  
I do confess my fault ; I injured thee  
In some poor petty trifles ; thus I pay for  
The trespass I did to thee. Here—receive  
These bags, stuff'd full of our imperial coin ;  
Or, if this payment be too light, take here  
These gems, for which the slavish Indian  
dives

To the bottom of the main : or, if thou scorn  
These as base dross, which take but common  
minds,

But fancy any honour in my gift,  
Which is unbounded as the sultan's power,  
And be possess'd of it.

*Vitel.* I am overwhelm'd

With the weight of happiness you throw  
upon me :

Nor can it fall in my imagination,  
What wrong you e'er have done me ; and  
much less

How, like a royal merchant, to return  
Your great magnificence.

*Don.* They are degrees,

Not ends, of my intended favours to thee.  
These seeds of bounty I yet scatter on  
A glebe I have not tried :—but, be thou  
thankful ;

The harvest is to come.

*Vitel.* What can be added

To that which I already have received,  
I cannot comprehend.

*Don.* The tender of

Myself. Why dost thou start ? and in that  
gift,  
Full restitution of that virgin freedom

Which thou hast robb'd me of. Yet, I  
profess,

I so far prize the lovely thief that stole it,  
That, were it possible thou couldst restore  
What thou unwittingly hast ravish'd from me,  
I should refuse the present.

*Vitel.* How I shake

In my constant resolution ! and my flesh,  
Rebellious to my better part, now tells me,  
As if it were a strong defence of frailty,  
A hermit in a desert, trench'd with prayers,  
Could not resist this battery.

*Don.* Thou an Italian,

Nay more, I know't, a natural Venetian,  
Such as are courtiers born to please fair  
ladies,

Yet come thus slowly on !

*Vitel.* Excuse me, madam :

What imputation soe'er the world  
Is pleas'd to lay upon us, in myself  
I am so innocent, that I know not what 'tis  
That I should offer.

*Don.* By instinct I'll teach thee,  
And with such ease as love makes me to  
ask it.

When a young lady wrings you by the hand,  
thus,

Or with an amorous touch presses your foot,  
Looks babies in your eyes, plays with your  
locks,

Do not you find, without a tutor's help,  
What 'tis she looks for ?

*Vitel.* I am grown already  
Skillful in the mystery.

*Don.* Or, if thus she kiss you,  
Then tastes your lips again— [*Kisses him.*]

*Vitel.* That latter blow  
Has beat all chaste thoughts from me.

*Don.* Say, she points to  
Some private room the sunbeams never  
enter,

Provoking dishes passing by, to heighten  
Declined appetite, active music ushering  
Your fainting steps, the waiters too, as born  
dumb,

Not daring to look on you.

[*Exit, inviting him to follow.*]

*Vitel.* Though the devil  
Stood by, and roar'd, I follow : Now I find  
That virtue's but a word, and no sure guard,  
If set upon by beauty and reward. [*Exit.*]

SCENE V.—*A Hall in Asambeg's Palace.*

*Enter* Aga, Capiaga, Grimaldi, Master,  
Boatswain, and Sailors.

*Aga.* The devil's in him, I think.

*Grim.* Let him be damn'd too.  
I'll look on him, though he stared as wild as  
hell ;

Nay, I'll go near to tell him to his teeth,  
If he mends not suddenly, and proves more  
thankful,

We do him too much service. Were't not  
for shame now,

I could turn honest, and forswear my trade;  
Which, next to being truss'd up at the  
mainyard

By some low country butterbox, I hate  
As deadly as I do fasting, or long grace  
When meat cools on the table.

*Cap.* But take heed;

You know his violent nature.

*Grim.* Let his whores

And catamites know't! I understand my-  
self,

And how unmanly 'tis to sit at home,  
And rail at us, that run abroad all hazards,  
If every week we bring not home new pillage,  
For the fattening his seraglio.

*Enter Asambeg, Mustapha, and Attendants.*

*Aga.* Here he comes.

*Cap.* How terrible he looks!

*Grim.* To such as fear him.

The viceroiy, Asambeg! were he the sultan's  
self

He'll let us know a reason for his fury;  
Or we must take leave, without his allowance,  
To be merry with our ignorance.

*Asam.* Mahomet's hell

Light on you all! You crouch and cringe  
now:—Where

Was the terror of my just frowns, when you  
suffer'd

Those thieves of Malta, almost in our harbour,  
To board a ship, and bear her safely off,  
While you stood idle lookers on?

*Aga.* The odds

In the men and shipping, and the suddenness  
Of their departure, yielding us no leisure  
To send forth others to relieve our own,  
Deterr'd us, mighty sir.

*Asam.* Deterr'd you, cowards!

How durst you only entertain the knowledge  
Of what fear was, but in the not performance  
Of our command? In me great Amurath  
spake;

My voice did echo to your ears his thunder,  
And will'd you, like so many sea-born tritons,  
Arm'd only with the trumpets of your courage,  
To swim up to her, and, like remoras  
Hanging upon her keel, to stay her flight,  
Till rescue, sent from us, had fetch'd you off.  
You think you're safe now. Who durst but  
dispute it,

Or make it questionable, if, this moment,  
I charged you, from yon hanging cliff, that  
glasses

His rugged forehead in the neighbouring lake,  
To throw yourselves down headlong? or, like  
faggots,

To fill the ditches of defended forts,  
While on your backs we march'd up to the  
breach?

*Grim.* What would not I.

*Asam.* Ha!

*Grim.* Yet I dare as much

As any of the sultan's boldest sons,  
Whose heaven and hell hang on his frown  
or smile,

His warlike janizaries.

*Asam.* Add one syllable more,

Thou dost pronounce upon thyself a sentence  
That, earthquake-like, will swallow thee.

*Grim.* Let it open,

I'll stand the hazard: those contemned  
thieves,

Your fellow-pirates, sir, the bold Maltese,  
Whom with your looks you think to quell, at  
Rhodes

Laugh'd at great Solyman's anger: and, if  
treason

Had not delivered them into his power,  
He had grown old in glory as in years,  
At that so fatal siege; or risen with shame;  
His hopes and threats deluded.

*Asam.* Our great prophet!

How have I lost my anger and my power!

*Grim.* Find it, and use it on thy flatterers,  
And not upon thy friends, that dare speak  
truth.

These knights of Malta, but a handful to  
Your armies, that drink rivers up, have stood  
Your fury at the height, and with their  
crosses

Struck pale your horned moons; these men  
of Malta,

Since I took pay from you, I've met and  
fought with

Upon advantage too; yet, to speak truth,  
By the soul of honour, I have ever found them  
As provident to direct, and bold to do,  
As any train'd up in your discipline,  
Ravish'd from other nations.

*Musta.* I perceive

The lightning in his fiery looks; the cloud  
Is broke already. [*Aside.*]

*Grim.* Think not, therefore, sir,  
That you alone are giants, and such pigmies  
You war upon.

*Asam.* Villain! I'll make thee know  
Thou hast blasphemed the Othoman power,  
and safer,

At noonday, might'st have given fire to St.  
Mark's,

Your proud Venetian temple.—Seize upon  
him:

I am not so near reconciled to him,  
To bid him die; that were a benefit  
The dog's unworthy of. To our use con-  
fiscate

All that he stands possess'd of; let him taste  
The misery of want, and his vain riots,  
Like to so many walking ghosts, affright  
him,

Where'er he sets his desperate foot. Who is't  
That does command you?

*Grim.* Is this the reward  
For all my service, and the rape I made  
On fair Paulina?

*Asam.* Drag him hence:—he dies,  
That dallies but a minute.

[*Grimaldi is dragg'd off, his head covered.*]

*Boatsw.* What's become of  
Our shares now, master?

*Must.* Would he had been born dumb!  
The beggar's cure, patience, is all that's  
left us.

[*Exeunt Master, Boatswain, and Sailors.*]

*Musta.* 'Twas but intemperance of speech,  
excuse him;

Let me prevail so far. Fame gives him out  
For a deserving fellow.

*Asam.* At Aleppo,  
I durst not press you so far: give me leave  
To use my own will, and command in Tunis;  
And, if you please, my privacy.

*Musta.* I will see you,  
When this high wind's blown o'er. [*Exit.*]

*Asam.* So shall you find me  
Ready to do you service. Rage, now leave me;  
Stern looks, and all the ceremonious forms  
Attending on dread majesty, fly from  
Transformed Asambeg. Why should I hug  
[*Pulls out a key.*]

So near my heart, what leads me to my prison;  
Where she that is intrall'd, commands her  
keeper,

And robs me of the fierceness I was born  
with?

Stout men quake at my frowns, and, in return,  
I tremble at her softness. Base Grimaldi  
But only named Paulina, and the charm  
Had almost choak'd my fury, ere I could  
Pronounce his sentence. Would, when first

I saw her,  
Mine eyes had met with lightning, and, in  
place

Of hearing her enchanting tongue, the shrieks  
Of mandrakes had made music to my slum-  
bers!

For now I only walk a loving dream,  
And, but to my dishonour, never wake;  
And yet am blind, but when I see the object,  
And madly dote on it. Appear, bright spark  
[*Opens a door; Paulina comes forth.*]

Of all perfection! any simile  
Borrow'd from diamonds, or the fairest stars,  
To help me to express how dear I prize  
Thy unmatched graces, will rise up, and  
chide me

For poor detraction.

*Paul.* I despise thy flatteries:  
Thus spit at them, and scorn them; and  
being arm'd

In the assurance of my innocent virtue,  
I stamp upon all doubts, all fears, all tortures  
Thy barbarous cruelty, or, what's worse, thy  
dotaige,

The worthy parent of thy jealousy,  
Can shower upon me.

*Asam.* If these bitter taunts  
Ravish me from myself, and make me think  
My greedy ears receive angelical sounds;  
How would this tongue, tuned to a loving note,  
Invade, and take possession of my soul,  
Which then I durst not call mine own!

*Paul.* Thou art false,  
Falsar than thy religion. Do but think me  
Something above a beast, nay more, a  
monster

Would fright the sun to look on, and then  
tell me,

If this base usage can invite affection?

If to be mew'd up, and excluded from  
Human society; the use of pleasures;

The necessary, not superfluous duties  
Of servants, to discharge those offices

I blush to name—

*Asam.* Of servants! Can you think  
That I, that dare not trust the eye of heaven  
To look upon your beauties; that deny  
Myself the happiness to touch your pureness,  
Will e'er consent an eunuch, or bought  
handmaid,

Shall once approach you?—There is some-  
thing in you

That can work miracles, or I am cozen'd;  
Dispose and alter sexes, to my wrong,  
In spite of nature. I will be your nurse,  
Your woman, your physician, and your fool;  
Till, with your free consent, which I have  
vow'd

Never to force, you grace me with a name  
That shall supply all these.

*Paul.* What is it?

*Asam.* Your husband.

*Paul.* My hangman, when thou pleasest.

*Asam.* Thus I guard me  
Against your further angers.

[*Leads her to the door.*]

*Paul.* Which shall reach thee,  
Though I were in the centre.

[*Asambeg closes the door upon her, and  
locks it.*]

*Asam.* Such a spirit,  
In such a small proportion, I ne'er read of,  
Which time must alter. Ravish her I dare not ;  
The magic that she wears about her neck,  
I think, defends her :—this devotion paid  
To this sweet saint, mistress of my sour pain,  
'Tis fit I take mine own rough shape again.  
[*Exit.*]

SCENE VI.—*A Street near Donusa's Palace.*

*Enter Francisco and Gazet.*

*Fran.* I think he's lost.

*Gaz.* 'Tis ten to one of that ;

I ne'er knew citizen turn courtier yet,  
But he lost his credit though he saved himself.  
Why, look you, sir, there are so many lobbies,  
Out-offices, and dispartations here,  
Behind these Turkish hangings, that a  
Christian  
Hardly gets off but circumcised.

*Enter Vitelli, richly habited, Carazie, and Manto.*

*Fran.* I am troubled,  
Troubled exceedingly. Ha ! what are these ?  
*Gaz.* One, by his rich suit, should be some  
French ambassador :

For his train, I think they are Turks.

*Fran.* Peace ! be not seen.

*Car.* You are now past all the guards,  
and, undiscover'd,  
You may return.

*Vitel.* There's for your pains ; forget not  
My humblest service to the best of ladies.

*Mant.* Deserve her favour, sir, by making  
haste

For a second entertainment.

[*Exeunt Carazie and Manto.*]

*Vitel.* Do not doubt me ;

I shall not live till then.

*Gaz.* The train is vanish'd :

They have done him some good office, he's  
so free

And liberal of his gold.—Ha ! do I dream,  
Or is this mine own natural master ?

*Fran.* 'Tis he :

But strangely metamorphosed.—You have  
made, sir,

A prosperous voyage ; heaven grant it be  
honest,

I shall rejoice then, too.

*Gaz.* You make him blush,

To talk of honesty :—you were but now  
In the giving vein, and may think of Gazet,  
Your worship's prentice.

*Vitel.* There's gold : he thou free too,  
And master of my shop, and all the wares  
We brought from Venice.

*Gaz.* Rivo ! then.

*Vitel.* Dear sir,

This place affords not privacy for discourse ;  
But I can tell you wonders : my rich habit  
Deserves least admiration ; there is nothing  
That can fall in the compass of your wishes,  
Though it were to redeem a thousand slaves  
From the Turkish gallies, or, at home, to  
erect

Some pious work, to shame all hospitals,  
But I am master of the means.

*Fran.* 'Tis strange.

*Vitel.* As I walk, I'll tell you more.

*Gaz.* Pray you, a word, sir ;  
And then I will put on : I have one boon  
more.

*Vitel.* What is't ? speak freely.

*Gaz.* Thus then : As I am master  
Of your shop and wares, pray you help me  
to some trucking

With your last she-customer ; though she  
crack my best piece,  
I will endure it with patience.

*Vitel.* Leave your prating.

*Gaz.* I may : you have been doing ; we  
will do too.

*Fran.* I am amazed, yet will not blame  
nor chide you,

Till you inform me further : yet must say,  
They steer not the right course, nor traffic  
well,

That seek a passage to reach heaven through  
hell. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT III.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Donusa's Palace.*

*Enter Donusa and Manto.*

*Don.* When said he he would come again ?

*Mant.* He swore,

Short minutes should be tedious ages to  
him,

Until the tender of his second service ;  
So much he seemed transported with the  
first.

*Don.* I'm sure I was. I charge thee, Manto,  
tell me,

By all my favours, and my bounties, truly,  
Whether thou art a virgin, or, like me,  
Hast forfeited that name ?

*Mant.* A virgin, madam,

At my years ! being a waiting-woman, and  
in court too !

That were miraculous. I so long since lost  
That barren burthen, I almost forget  
That ever I was one.

*Don.* And could thy friends

Read in thy face, thy maidenhead gone, that thou

Had'st parted with it?

*Mant.* No, indeed : I past  
For current many years after, till, by fortune,  
Long and continued practice in the sport  
Blew up my deck ; a husband then was found out

By my indulgent father, and to the world  
All was made whole again. What need you  
fear, then,

That, at your pleasure, may repair your  
honour,

Durst any envious or malicious tongue

Presume to taint it ?

*Enter Carazie.*

*Don.* How now ?

*Car.* Madam, the basha  
Humbly desires access.

*Don.* If it had been  
My neat Italian, thou hadst met my wishes.  
Tell him we would be private.

*Car.* So I did,

But he is much importunate.

*Mant.* Best despatch him :  
His lingering here else will deter the other  
From making his approach.

*Don.* His entertainment  
Shall not invite a second visit. Go ;  
Say we are pleased.

*Enter Mustapha.*

*Musta.* All happiness—

*Don.* Be sudden.

'Twas saucy rudeness in you, sir, to press  
On my retirements ; but ridiculous folly  
To waste the time, that might be better spent,  
In complimentary wishes.

*Car.* There's a cooling

For his hot encounter ! *[Aside.*

*Don.* Come you here to stare ?

If you have lost your tongue, and use of  
speech,

Resign your government ; there's a mute's  
place void

In my uncle's court, I hear ; and you may  
work me,

To write for your preferment.

*Musta.* This is strange !

I know not, madam, what neglect of mine  
Has call'd this scorn upon me.

*Don.* To the purpose—

My will's a reason, and we stand not bound  
To yield account to you.

*Musta.* Not of your angers ;  
But with erected ears I should hear from you  
The story of your good opinion of me,  
Confirm'd by love and favours.

*Don.* How deserved ?

I have considered you from head to foot,  
And can find nothing in that wainscot face,  
That can teach me to dote ; nor am I taken  
With your grim aspect, or tadpole-like  
complexion.

Those scars you glory in, I fear to look on ;  
And had much rather hear a merry tale,  
Than all your battles won with blood and  
sweat,

Though you belch forth the stink too in the  
service,

And swear by your mustachios all is true.

You are yet too rough for me : purge and  
take physic,

Purchase perfumers, get me some French  
tailor

To new-create you ; the first shape you were  
made with

Is quite worn out : let your barber wash  
your face too,

You look yet like a bugbear to fright children ;  
Till when I take my leave.—Wait me, Carazie.

*[Exeunt Donusa and Carazie.*

*Musta.* Stay you, my lady's cabinet-key.  
*[Seizes Manto.*

*Mant.* How's this, sir ?

*Musta.* Stay, and stand quietly, or you  
shall fall else,

Not to firk your belly up, flounder-like, but  
never

To rise again. Offer but to unlock

These doors that stop your fugitive tongue,  
(observe me,)

And, by my fury, I'll fix there this bolt

*[Draws his scimitar.*

To bar thy speech for ever. So ! be safe now ;  
And but resolve me, not of what I doubt,

But bring assurance to a thing believed,  
Thou makest thyself a fortune ; not depending

On the uncertain favours of a mistress,  
But art thyself one. I'll not so far question

My judgment and observance, as to ask  
Why I am slighted and contemn'd ; but in

Whose favour it is done ? I, that have read  
The copious volume of all women's falsehood,

Commented on by the heart-breaking groans  
Of abused lovers ; all the doubts wash'd off

With fruitless tears, the spider's cobweb veil  
Of arguments alleged in their defence,

Blown off with sighs of desperate men, and  
they

Appearing in their full deformity ;  
Know that some other hath displanted me,

With her dishonour. Has she given it up ?  
Confirm it in two syllables.

*Mant.* She has.

*Musta.* I cherish thy confession thus, and  
thus ; *[Gives her jewels.*

Be mine. Again I court thee thus, and thus :  
Now prove but constant to my ends.

*Mant.* By all—

*Musta.* Enough ; I dare not doubt thee.

—O land crocodiles,  
Made of Egyptian slime, accursed women !  
But 'tis no time to rail—come, my best  
Manto. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Street.*

*Enter Vitelli and Francisco.*

*Vitel.* Sir, as you are my confessor, you  
stand bound  
Not to reveal whatever I discover  
In that religious way ; nor dare I doubt you.  
Let it suffice you have made me see my follies,  
And wrought, perhaps, compunction ; for I  
would not

Appear an hypocrite. But, when you impose  
A penance on me beyond flesh and blood  
To undergo, you must instruct me how  
To put off the condition of a man :  
Or, if not pardon, at the least, excuse  
My disobedience. Yet, despair not, sir ;  
For, though I take mine own way, I shall do  
Something that may hereafter, to my glory,  
Speak me your scholar.

*Fran.* I enjoin you not

To go, but send.

*Vitel.* That were a petty trial ;  
Not worth one, so long taught, and exercised,  
Under so grave a master. Reverend Fran-  
cisco,

My friend, my father, in that word, my all !  
Rest confident you shall hear something of  
me,

That will redeem me in your good opinion ;  
Or judge me lost for ever. Send Gazet  
(She shall give order that he may have en-  
trance)

To acquaint you with my fortunes. [*Exit.*]

*Fran.* Go, and prosper.

Holy saints guide and strengthen thee !  
however,

As thy endeavours are, so may they find  
Gracious acceptance.

*Enter Gazet, and Grimaldi in rags.*

*Gaz.* Now, you do not roar, sir ;  
You speak not tempests, nor take car-rent  
from

A poor shop-keeper. Do you remember  
that, sir ?

I wear your marks here still.

*Fran.* Can this be possible ?

All wonders are not ceased, then.

*Grim.* Do, abuse me,  
Spit on me, spurn me, pull me by the nose,

Thrust out these fiery eyes, that yesterday  
Would have look'd thee dead.

*Gaz.* O save me, sir !

*Grim.* Fear nothing.

I am tame and quiet ; there's no wrong can  
force me

To remember what I was. I have forgot  
I e'er had ireful fierceness, a steel'd heart,  
Insensible of compassion to others ;  
Nor is it fit that I should think myself  
Worth mine own pity. Oh !

*Fran.* Grows this dejection  
From his disgrace, do you say ?

*Gaz.* Why, he's cashier'd, sir ;  
His ships, his goods, his livery-punks, con-  
fiscate :

And there is such a punishment laid upon  
him !—

The miserable rogue must steal no more,  
Nor drink, nor drab.

*Fran.* Does that torment him ?

*Gaz.* O, sir,  
Should the state take order to bar men of  
acres

From these two laudable recreations,  
Drinking and whoring, how should panders  
purchase,

Or thrifty whores build hospitals ? 'Slid ! if I,  
That, since I am made free, may write myself  
A city gallant, should forfeit two such charters,  
I should be stoned to death, and ne'er be  
pitied

By the liveries of those companies.

*Fran.* You'll be whipt, sir,  
If you bridle not your tongue. Haste to the  
palace,

Your master looks for you.

*Gaz.* My quondam master.  
Rich sons forget they ever had poor fathers ;  
In servants 'tis more pardonable : as a com-  
panion,

Or so, I may consent : but, is there hope,  
sir,

He has got me a good chapwoman ? pray  
you, write

A word or two in my behalf.

*Fran.* Out, rascal !

*Gaz.* I feel some insurrections.

*Fran.* Hence !

*Gaz.* I vanish.

*Grim.* Why should I study a defence or  
comfort,

In whom black guilt and misery, if balanced,  
I know not which would turn the scale ?  
look upward

I dare not ; for, should it but be believed  
That I, died deep in hell's most horrid colours,  
Should dare to hope for mercy, it would leave  
No check or feeling in men innocent,

To catch at sins the devil ne'er taught man-kind yet.

No! I must downward, downward; though repentance

Could borrow all the glorious wings of grace, My mountainous weight of sins would crack their pinions,

And sink them to hell with me.

*Fran.* Dreadful! Hear me,

Thou miserable man.

*Grim.* Good sir, deny not But that there is no punishment beyond Damnation.

*Enter Master and Boatswain.*

*Master.* Yonder he is; I pity him.

*Boatsw.* Take comfort, captain; we live still to serve you.

*Grim.* Serve me! I am a devil already: leave me—

Stand further off, you are blasted else! I have heard

Schoolmen affirm man's body is composed Of the four elements; and, as in league together

They nourish life, so each of them affords Liberty to the soul, when it grows weary Of this fleshy prison. Which shall I make choice of?

The fire? no; I shall feel that hereafter; The earth will not receive me. Should some whirlwind

Snatch me into the air, and I hang there, Perpetual plagues would dwell upon the earth; And those superior bodies, that pour down Their cheerful influence, deny to pass it, Through those vast regions I have infected. The sea? ay, that is justice: there I plough'd up

Mischief as deep as hell: there, there, I'll hide This cursed lump of clay. May it turn rocks, Where plummet's weight could never reach the sands,

And grind the ribs of all such barks as press The ocean's breast in my unlawful course! I haste then to thee; let thy ravenous womb, Whom all things else deny, be now my tomb!

[*Exit.*

*Master.* Follow him, and restrain him.

[*Exit Boatswain.*

*Fran.* Let this stand

For an example to you. I'll provide A lodging for him, and provide such cures To his wounded conscience, as heaven hath lent me.

He's now my second care; and my profession Binds me to teach the desperate to repent, As far as to confirm the innocent. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*A Room in Asambeg's Palace.*

*Enter Asambeg, Mustapha, Aga, and Capiaga.*

*Asam.* Your pleasure?

*Musta.* 'Twill exact your private ear; And, when you have received it, you will think

Too many know it.

*Asam.* Leave the room; but be

Within our call.—

[*Exeunt Aga, and Capiaga.*

Now, sir, what burning secret (With which, it seems, you are turn'd cinders)

bring you,

To quench in my advice or power?

*Musta.* The fire

Will rather reach you.

*Asam.* Me!

*Musta.* And consume both; For 'tis impossible to be put out, But with the blood of those that kindle it: And yet one vial of it is so precious, In being borrow'd from the Othoman spring, That better 'tis, I think, both we should perish,

Than prove the desperate means that must restrain it

From spreading further.

*Asam.* To the point, and quickly:

These winding circumstances in relations, Seldom environ truth.

*Musta.* Truth, Asambeg!

*Asam.* Truth, Mustapha. I said it, and add more,

You touch upon a string that, to my ear, Does sound Donusa.

*Musta.* You then understand

Who 'tis I aim at.

*Asam.* Take heed, Mustapha;

Remember what she is, and whose we are: 'Tis her neglect, perhaps, that you complain of;

And, should you practise to revenge her scorn,

With any plot to taint her in her honour,—

*Musta.* Hear me.

*Asam.* I will be heard first,—there's no tongue

A subject owes, that shall out-thunder mine.

*N. r.* Well, take your way.

*Asam.* I then again repeat it;

If Mustapha dares with malicious breath,

On jealous suppositions, presume

To blast the blossom of Donusa's fame,

Because he is denied a happiness

Which men of equal nay, of more desert,

Have sued in vain for—

*Musta.* More!



*Asam.* More. 'Twas I spake it.  
The basha of Natolia and myself  
Were rivals for her; either of us brought  
More victories, more trophies, to plead for us  
To our great master, than you dare lay claim  
to;

Yet still, by his allowance, she was left  
To her election: each of us owed nature  
As much for outward form and inward worth,  
To make way for us to her grace and favour,  
As you brought with you. We were heard,  
repulsed;

Yet thought it no dishonour to sit down  
With the disgrace, if not to force affection  
May merit such a name.

*Musta.* Have you done yet?

*Asam.* Be, therefore, more than sure the  
ground on which

You raise your accusation, may admit  
No undermining of defence in her:  
For if, with pregnant and apparent proofs,  
Such as may force a judge, more than inclined,  
Or partial in her cause, to swear her guilty,  
You win not me to set off your belief;  
Neither our ancient friendship, nor the rites  
Of sacred hospitality, to which  
I would not offer violence, shall protect you:  
—Now, when you please.

*Musta.* I will not dwell upon  
Much circumstance; yet cannot but profess,  
With the assurance of a loyalty  
Equal to yours, the reverence I owe  
The sultan, and all such his blood makes  
sacred;

That there is not a vein of mine, which yet is  
Unemptied in his service, but this moment  
Should freely open, so it might wash off  
The stains of her dishonour. Could you  
think,

Or, though you saw it, credit your own eyes,  
That she, the wonder and amazement of  
Her sex, the pride and glory of the empire,  
That hath disdain'd you, slighted me, and  
boasted

A frozen coldness, which no appetite  
Or height of blood could thaw; should now  
so far

Be hurried with the violence of her lust,  
As, in it burying her high birth, and fame,  
Basely descend to fill a Christian's arms;  
And to him yield her virgin honour up,  
Nay, sue to him to take it?

*Asam.* A Christian!

*Musta.* Temper

Your admiration:—and what Christian,  
'think you?

No prince disguised, no man of mark, nor  
honour;

No daring undertaker in our service,

But one, whose lips her foot should scorn  
to touch;

A poor mechanic pedlar.

*Asam.* He!

*Musta.* Nay, more;

Whom do you think she made her scout,  
nay bawd,

To find him out, but me? What place  
make choice of

To wallow in her foul and loathsome  
pleasures,

But in the palace? Who the instruments  
Of close conveyance, but the captain of  
Your guard, the aga, and that man of trust,  
The warden of the inmost port?—I'll prove  
this:

And, though I fail to shew her in the act,  
Glued like a neighing gennet to her stallion,  
Your incredulity shall be convinced  
With proofs I blush to think on.

*Asam.* Never yet

This flesh felt such a fever. By the life  
And fortune of great Amurath, should our  
prophet

(Whose name I bow to) in a vision speak  
this,

'Twould make me doubtful of my faith!—  
Lead on;

And, when my eyes and ears are, like yours,  
guilty,

My rage shall then appear; for I will do  
Something—but what, I am not yet de-  
termin'd. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*An outer room in Donusa's  
Palace.*

*Enter Carazie, Manto, and Gazet guilty  
dressed.*

*Car.* They are private to their wishes?

*Mant.* Doubt it not.

*Gaz.* A pretty structure this! a court do  
you call it?

Vaulted and arch'd! O, here has been old  
jumbling

Behind this arras.

*Car.* Prithee let's have some sport

With this fresh codshead.

*Mant.* I am out of tune,

But do as you please.—My conscience!—  
tush! the hope

Of liberty throws that burthen off; I must  
Go watch, and make discovery.

[*Aside, and exit.*]

*Car.* He is musing,  
And will talk to himself; he cannot hold:  
The poor fool's ravish'd.

*Gaz.* I am in my master's clothes,  
They fit me to a hair too; let but any

Indifferent gamester measure us inch by inch,

Or weigh us by the standard, I may pass :  
I have been proved and proved again true metal.

*Car.* How he surveys himself !

*Gaz.* I have heard, that some

Have fooled themselves at court into good fortunes,

That never hoped to thrive by wit in the city,

Or honesty in the country. If I do not  
Make the best laugh at me, I'll weep for myself,

If they give me hearing : 'tis resolved—I'll try

What may be done. By your favour, sir,  
I pray you,

Were you born a courtier ?

*Car.* No, sir ; why do you ask ?

*Gaz.* Because I thought that none could be preferred,

But such as were begot there.

*Car.* O, sir ! many ;

And, howsoe'er you are a citizen born,  
Yet if your mother were a handsome woman,

And ever long'd to see a masque at court,  
It is an even lay, but that you had

A courtier to your father ; and I think so,  
You bear yourself so sprightly.

*Gaz.* It may be ;

But pray you, sir, had I such an itch upon me

To change my copy, is there hope a place  
May be had here for money ?

*Car.* Not without it,

That I dare warrant you.

*Gaz.* I have a pretty stock,

And would not have my good parts undiscover'd :

What places of credit are there ?

*Car.* There's your beglerbeg.

*Gaz.* By no means that ; it comes too near the beggar,

And most prove so, that come there.

*Car.* Or your sanzacke.

*Gaz.* Sauce-jack ! fie, none of that.

*Car.* Your chians.

*Gaz.* Nor that.

*Car.* Chief gardener.

*Gaz.* Out upon't !

'Twill put me in mind my mother was an herb-woman.

What is your place, I pray you ?

*Car.* Sir, an eunuch.

*Gaz.* An eunuch ! very fine, i'faith ; an eunuch !

And what are your employments ?

*Car.* Neat and easy :

In the day, I wait on my lady when she eats,  
Carry her pantofles, bear up her train ;  
Sing her asleep at night, and, when she pleases,

I am her bedfellow.

*Gaz.* How ! her bedfellow ?

And lie with her ?

*Car.* Yes, and lie with her.

*Gaz.* O rare !

I'll be an eunuch, though I sell my shop for't,  
And all my wares.

*Car.* It is but parting with  
Apreicious stone or two : I know the price on't.

*Gaz.* I'll part with all my stones ; and when I am

An eunuch, I'll so toss and touse the ladies——

Pray you help me to a chapman.

*Car.* The court surgeon

Shall do you that favour.

*Gaz.* I am made ! an eunuch !

*Enter Manto.*

*Mant.* Carazie, quit the room.

*Car.* Come, sir ; we'll treat of  
Your business further.

*Gaz.* Excellent ! an eunuch ! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*An inner Room in the same.*

*Enter Donusa and Vitelli.*

*Vitel.* Leave me, or I am lost again : no prayers,

No penitence, can redeem me.

*Don.* Am I grown

Old or deform'd since yesterday ?

*Vitel.* You are still,

(Although the sating of your lust hath sullied  
The immaculate whiteness of your virgin beauties,)

Too fair for me to look on : and, though pureness,

The sword with which you ever fought and conquer'd,

Is ravish'd from you by unchaste desires,  
You are too strong for flesh and blood to

treat with,  
Though iron grates were interpos'd between

us,

To warrant me from treason.

*Don.* Whom do you fear ?

*Vitel.* That human frailty I took from my mother,

That, as my youth increased, grew stronger on me ;

That still pursues me, and, though once recover'd,

In scorn of reason, and, what's more, religion,  
Again seeks to betray me.

*Don.* If you mean, sir,

To my embraces, you turn rebel to  
The laws of nature, the great queen and  
mother

Of all productions, and deny allegiance,  
Where you stand bound to pay it.

*Vitel.* I will stop

Mine ears against these charms, which, if  
Ulysses

Could live again, and hear this second Syren,  
Though bound with cables to his mast, his  
ship too

Fasten'd with all her anchors, this enchant-  
ment

Would force him, in despite of all resistance,  
To leap into the sea, and follow her ;  
Although destruction, with outstretch'd arms,  
Stood ready to receive him.

*Don.* Gentle sir,

Though you deny to hear me, yet vouchsafe  
To look upon me: though I use no language,  
The grief for this unkind repulse will print  
Such a dumb eloquence upon my face,  
As will not only plead but prevail for me.

*Vitel.* I am a coward. I will see and  
hear you,

The trial, else, is nothing; nor the conquest,  
My temperance shall crown me with here-  
after,

Worthy to be remember'd. Up, my virtue!  
And holy thoughts and resolutions arm me  
Against this fierce temptation! give me voice  
Tuned to a zealous anger, to express  
At what an over-value I have purchased  
The wanton treasure of your virgin bounties ;  
That, in their false fruition, heap upon me  
Despair and horror.—That I could with  
that ease

Redeem my forfeit innocence, or cast up  
The poison I received into my entrails,  
From the alluring cup of your enticements,  
As now I do deliver hack the price

[Returns the jewels.

And salary of your lust! or thus unclothe me  
Of sin's gay trappings, the proud livery  
[Throws off his cloak and doublet.

Of wicked pleasure, which but worn and  
heated

With the fire of entertainment and consent,  
Like to Alcides' fatal shirt, tears off  
Our flesh and reputation both together,  
Leaving our ulcerous follies bare and open  
To all malicious censure!

*Don.* You must grant,

If you hold that a loss to you, mine equals,  
If not transcends it. If you then first tasted  
That poison, as you call it, I brought with  
me

A palate unacquainted with the relish  
Of those delights, which most, as I have heard,

Greedily swallow; and then the offence,  
If my opinion may be believed,  
Is not so great: howe'er, the wrong no more,  
Than if Hippolitus and the virgin huntress  
Should meet and kiss together.

*Vitel.* What defences

Can lust raise to maintain a precipice

*Enter Asambeg and Mustapha, above.*

To the abyss of looseness!—but affords not  
The least stair, or the fastening of one foot,  
To reascend that glorious height we fell from.

*Musta.* By Mahomet, she courts him!

[Donusa kneels.

*Asam.* Nay, kneels to him!

Observe, the scornful villain turns away too,  
As glorying in his conquest.

*Don.* Are you marble?

If Christians have mothers, sure they share in  
The tigress' fierceness; for, if you were  
owner

Of human pity, you could not endure  
A princess to kneel to you, or look on  
These falling tears which hardest rocks  
would soften,

And yet remain unmoved. Did you but  
give me

A taste of happiness in your embraces,  
That the remembrance of the sweetness of it  
Might leave perpetual bitterness behind it?  
Or shew'd me what it was to be a wife,  
To live a widow ever?

*Asam.* She has confest it!—

Seize on him, villains.

*Enter Capiaga and Aga, with Janizaries.*

O the Furies!

[Excunt Asambeg and Mustapha above.

*Don.* How!

Are we betray'd?

*Vitel.* The better; I expected  
A Turkish faith.

*Don.* Who am I, that you dare this?

'Tis I that do command you to forbear  
A touch of violence.

*Aga.* We, already, madam,  
Have satisfied your pleasure further than  
We know to answer it.

*Cap.* Would we were well off!  
We stand too far engaged, I fear.

*Don.* For us?

We'll bring you safe off: who dares contra-  
dict

What is our pleasure?

*Re-enter Asambeg and Mustapha, below.*

*Asam.* Spurn the dog to prison.  
I'll answer you anon.

*Vitel.* What punishment

Soe'er I undergo, I am still a Christian.

[Exit Guard with Vitelli.

*Don.* What bold presumption's this?

Under what law

Am I to fall, that set my foot upon  
Your statutes and decrees?

*Musta.* The crime committed,  
Our Alcoran calls death.

*Don.* Tush! who is here,  
That is not Amurath's slave, and so, unfit  
To sit a judge upon his blood?

*Asam.* You have lost,  
And shamed the privilege of it; robb'd me  
too

Of my soul, my understanding, to behold  
Your base unworthy fall from your high  
virtue.

*Don.* I do appeal to Amurath.

*Asam.* We will offer

No violence to your person, till we know  
His sacred pleasure; till when, under guard  
You shall continue here.

*Don.* Shall!

*Asam.* I have said it.

*Don.* We shall remember this.

*Asam.* It ill becomes  
Such as are guilty, to deliver threats  
Against the innocent.

[The Guard leads off Donusa.

I could tear this flesh now,  
But 'tis in vain; nor must I talk, but do.  
Provide a well-mann'd galley for Constanti-  
nople:

Such sad news never came to our great master.  
As he directs, we must proceed, and know  
No will but his, to whom what's ours we owe.

[Exit.

#### ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A Room in Grimaldi's House.

*Enter Master and Boatswain.*

*Mast.* He does begin to eat?

*Boatsw.* A little, master;

But our best hope for his recovery is, that  
His raving leaves him; and those dreadful  
words,

Damnation and despair, with which he ever  
Ended all his discourses, are forgotten.

*Mast.* This stranger is a most religious  
man sure;

And I am doubtful, whether his charity  
In the relieving of our wants, or care  
To cure the wounded conscience of Grimaldi,  
Deserves more admiration.

*Boatsw.* Can you guess

What the reason should be, that we never  
mention

The church, or the high altar, but his  
melancholy

Grows and increases on him?

*Mast.* I have heard him,  
When he gloried to profess himself an atheist,  
Talk often, and with much delight and  
boasting,

Of a rude prank he did ere he turn'd pirate;  
The memory of which, as it appears,  
Lies heavy on him,

*Boatsw.* Pray you, let me understand it.

*Mast.* Upon a solemn day, when the  
whole city

Join'd in devotion, and with barefoot steps  
Passed to St. Mark's, the duke, and the  
whole signiory,

Helping to perfect the religious pomp  
With which they were received; when all  
men else

Were full of tears, and groan'd beneath the  
weight

Of past offences, of whose heavy burthen  
They came to be absolved and freed; our  
captain,

Whether in scorn of those so pious rites  
He had no feeling of, or else drawn to it

Out of a wanton, irreligious madness,  
(I know not which,) ran to the holy man,  
As he was doing of the work of grace,  
And snatching from his hands the sanctified  
means,

Dash'd it upon the pavement.

*Boatsw.* How escaped he,  
It being a deed deserving death with torture?

*Mast.* The general amazement of the people  
Gave him leave to quit the temple, and a  
gondola,

Prepared, it seems, before, brought him  
aboard;

Since which he ne'er saw Venice. The re-  
membrance

Of this, it seems, torments him; aggravated  
With a strong belief he cannot receive pardon  
For this foul fact, but from his hands,  
against whom

It was committed.

*Boatsw.* And what course intends  
His heavenly physician, reverend Francisco,  
To beat down this opinion?

*Mast.* He promised

To use some holy and religious fineness,  
To this good end; and, in the meantime,  
charged me

To keep him dark, and to admit no visitants;  
But on no terms to cross him. Here he comes.

*Enter Grimaldi, with a book.*

*Grim.* For theft, he that restores treble  
the value,

Makes satisfaction ; and, for want of means  
To do so, as a slave must serve it out,  
Till he hath made full payment. There's  
hope left here.

Oh ! with what willingness would I give up  
My liberty to those that I have pillaged ;  
And wash the numbers of my years, though  
wasted

In the most sordid slavery, might equal  
The rapines I have made ; till, with one voice,  
My patient sufferings might exact, from my  
Most cruel creditors, a full remission,  
An eye's loss with an eye, limb's with a limb :  
A sad account !—yet, to find peace within  
here,

Though all such as I have maim'd and dis-  
member'd

In drunken quarrels, or o'ercome with rage,  
When they were given up to my power, stood  
here now,

And cried for restitution ; to appease them,  
I would do a bloody justice on myself :  
Pull out these eyes, that guided me to ravish  
Their sight from others ; lop these legs, that  
bore me

To barbarous violence ; with this hand cut off  
This instrument of wrong, till nought were  
left me

But this poor bleeding limbless trunk, which  
gladly

I would divide among them.—Ha ! what  
think I

*Enter Francisco in a cope, like a Bishop.*

Of petty forfeitures ! In this reverend habit,  
All that I am turn'd into eyes, I look on  
A deed of mine so fiend-like, that repentance,  
Though with my tears I taught the sea new  
tides,

Can never wash off : all my thefts, my rapes,  
Are venial trespasses, compared to what  
I offer'd to that shape, and in a place too,  
Where I stood bound to kneel to t. [*Kneels.*

*Fran.* 'Tis forgiven :

I with his tongue, whom, in these sacred  
vestments,  
With impure hands thou didst offend, pro-  
nounce it.

I bring peace to thee ; see that thou deserve it  
In thy fair life hereafter.

*Grim.* Can it be !

Dare I believe this vision, or hope

A pardon e'er may find me ?

*Fran.* Purchase it

By zealous undertakings, and no more  
'Twill be remembered.

*Grim.* What celestial balm [*Rises.*

I feel now pour'd into my wounded con-  
science !

What penance is there I'll not undergo,  
Though ne'er so sharp and rugged, with  
more pleasure

Thou flesh and blood e'er tasted ! show me  
true Sorrow,

Arm'd with an iron whip, and I will meet  
The stripes she brings along with her, as if  
They were the gentle touches of a hand  
That comes to cure me. Can good deeds  
redeem me ?

I will rise up a wonder to the world,  
When I have given strong proofs how I am  
alter'd.

I, that have sold such as profess'd the faith  
That I was born in, to captivity,  
Will make their number equal, that I shall  
Deliver from the oar ; and win as many  
By the clearness of my actions, to look on  
Their misbelief, and loath it. I will be  
A convoy for all merchants ; and thought  
worthy

To be reported to the world, hereafter,  
The child of your devotion ; nurs'd up,  
And made strong by your charity, to break  
through

All dangers hell can bring forth to oppose me.  
Nor am I, though my fortunes were thought  
desperate,

Now you have reconciled me to myself,  
So void of worldly means, but, in despite  
Of the proud viceroy's wrongs, I can do  
something

To witness of my change : when you please,  
try me,

And I will perfect what you shall enjoin me,  
Or fall a joyful martyr.

*Fran.* You will reap

The comfort of it ; live yet undiscover'd,  
And with your holy meditations strengthen  
Your Christian resolution : ere long,  
You shall hear further from me. [*Exit.*

*Grim.* I'll attend

All your commands with patience ;—come,  
my mates,

I hitherto have lived an ill example,  
And, as your captain, led you on to mischief ;  
But now will truly labour, that good men  
May say hereafter of me, to my glory,  
(Let but my power and means hand with my  
will,)

His good endeavours did weigh down his ill.  
[*Exeunt.*

*Re-enter Francisco, in his usual habit.*

*Fran.* This penitence is not counterfeit :  
howsoever,  
Good actions are in themselves rewarded.  
My travail's to meet with a double crown.

If that Vitelli come off safe, and prove  
Himself the master of his wild affections—

*Enter Gazet.*

O, I shall have intelligence; how now,  
Gazet,

Why these sad looks and tears?

*Gaz.* Tears, sir! I have lost  
My worthy master. Your rich heir seems  
to mourn for

A miserable father, your young widow,  
Following a bedrid husband to his grave,  
Would have her neighbours think she cries  
and roars,

That she must part with such a goodman  
Do-nothing;

When 'tis, because he stays so long above  
ground,

And hinders a rich suitor.—All's come out,  
sir.

We are smok'd for being coney-catchers:  
my master

Is put in prison; his she-customer  
Is under guard too; these are things to weep  
for:—

But mine own loss consider'd, and what a  
fortune

I have had, as they say, snatch'd out of my  
chops,

Would make a man run mad.

*Fran.* I scarce have leisure,  
I am so wholly taken up with sorrow  
For my loved pupil, to enquire thy fate;  
Yet I will hear it.

*Gaz.* Why, sir, I had bought a place,  
A place of credit too, an I had gone through  
with it;

I should have been made an eunuch: there  
was honour

For a late poor prentice! when, upon the  
sudden,

There was such a hurly-burly in the court,  
That I was glad to run away, and carry  
The price of my office with me.

*Fran.* Is that all?

You have made a saving voyage: we must  
think now,

Though not to free, to comfort sad Vitelli;  
My grieved soul suffers for him.

*Gaz.* I am sad too;  
But had I been an eunuch—

*Fran.* Think not on it. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*A Hall in Asambeg's Palace.*

*Enter Asambeg; he unlocks a door, and  
Paulina comes forth.*

*Asam.* Be your own guard: obsequious-  
ness and service  
Shall win you to be mine. Of all restraint

For ever take your leave, no threats shall  
awe you,

No jealous doubts of mine disturb your  
freedom,

No fee'd spies wait upon your steps: your  
virtue,

And due consideration in yourself  
Of what is noble, are the faithful helps  
I leave you, as supporters, to defend you  
From falling basely.

*Paul.* This is wondrous strange:  
Whence flows this alteration?

*Asam.* From true judgment;  
And strong assurance, neither grates of iron,  
Hemm'd in with walls of brass, strict guards,  
high birth,

The forfeiture of honour, nor the fear  
Of infamy or punishment, can stay  
A woman slav'd to appetite, from being  
False, and unworthy.

*Paul.* You are grown satirical  
Against our sex. Why, sir, I durst produce  
Myself in our defence, and from you chal-  
lenge

A testimony that's not to be denied,  
All fall not under this unequal censure.

I, that have stood your flatteries, your  
threats,

Borne up against your fierce temptations;  
scorn'd

The cruel means you practis'd to supplant  
me,

Having no arms to help me to bold out,  
But love of piety, and constant goodness;

If you are unconfirm'd, dare again boldly,  
Enter into the lists, and combat with

All opposites man's malice can bring forth  
To shake me in my chastity, built upon

The rock of my religion.

*Asam.* I do wish  
I could believe you; but, when I shall shew  
you

A most incredible example of  
Your frailty, in a princess, sued and  
sought to

By men of worth, of rank, of eminence;  
courted

By happiness itself, and her cold temper  
Approved by many years; yet she to fall,

Fall from herself, her glories, nay, her safety,  
Into a gulf of shame and black despair;

I think you'll doubt yourself, or, in beholding  
Her punishment, for ever be deterr'd

From yielding basely.

*Paul.* I would see this wonder;

'Tis, sir, my first petition.

*Asam.* And thus granted:

Above, you shall observe all.

[*Exit Paulina.*]

*Enter Mustapha.*

*Musta.* Sir, I sought you,  
And must relate a wonder. Since I studied,  
And knew what man was, I was never  
witness

Of such invincible fortitude as this Christian  
Shews in his sufferings: all the torments that  
We could present him with, to fright his  
constancy,

Confirm'd, not shook it; and those heavy  
chains,

That eat into his flesh, appear'd to him  
Like bracelets made of some loved mistress'  
hairs,

We kiss in the remembrance of her favours.  
I am strangely taken with it, and have lost  
Much of my fury.

*Asam.* Had he suffer'd poorly,  
It had call'd on my contempt; but manly  
patience,

And all-commanding virtue, wins upon  
An enemy. I shall think upon him.—Ha!

*Enter Aga, with a black box.*

So soon return'd! This speed pleads in  
excuse

Of your late fault, which I no more remember.  
What's the grand signior's pleasure?

*Aga.* 'Tis enclosed here.  
The box too that contains it may inform you  
How he stands affected: I am trusted with  
Nothing but this, On forfeit of your head,  
She must have a speedy trial.

*Asam.* Bring her in  
In black, as to her funeral: [*Exit Aga.*] 'tis  
the colour

Her fault wills her to wear, and which, in  
justice,

I dare not pity. Sit, and take your place:  
However in her life she has degenerated,  
May she die nobly, and in that confirm  
Her greatness and high blood!

*Solemn music. Re-enter the Aga, with the  
Capiaga leading in Donusa in black, her  
train borne up by Carazie and Manto. A  
Guard attending. Paulina enters above.*

*Musta.* I now could melt—  
But soft compassion leave me.

*Mant.* I am affrighted  
With this dismal preparation. Should the  
enjoying

Of loose desires find ever such conclusions,  
All women would be Vestals.

*Don.* That you clothe me  
In this sad livery of death, assures me  
Your sentence is gone out before, and I  
Too late am call'd for, in my guilty cause  
To use qualification or excuse—

Yet must I not part so with mine own  
strengths,

But borrow, from my modesty, boldness, to  
Enquire by whose authority you sit  
My judges, and whose warrant digs my grave  
In the frowns you dart against my life?

*Asam.* See here,  
This falsign and warrant! This, brought to  
A general, fighting in the head of his  
Victorious troops, ravishes from his hand  
His even then conquering sword; this,  
shewn unto

The sultan's brothers, or his sons, delivers  
His deadly anger; and, all hopes laid by,  
Commands them to prepare themselves for  
heaven;

Which would stand with the quiet of your soul,  
To think upon, and imitate.

*Don.* Give me leave  
A little to complain; first, of the hard  
Condition of my fortune, which may move  
you,

Though not to rise up intercessors for me,  
Yet, in remembrance of my former life,  
(This being the first spot tainting mine  
honour,)

To be the means to bring me to his presence:  
And then I doubt not, but I could allege  
Such reasons in mine own defence, or plead  
So humbly, (my tears helping,) that it should  
Awake his sleeping pity.

*Asam.* 'Tis in vain.  
If you have aught to say, you shall have  
hearing;

And, in me, think him present.  
*Don.* I would thus then  
First kneel, and kiss his feet; and after, tell  
him

How long I had been his darling; what  
delight

My infant years afforded him; how dear  
He prized his sister in both bloods, my mother:  
That she, like him, had frailty, that to me  
Descends as an inheritance; then to conjure  
him,

By her blest ashes, and his father's soul,  
The sword that rides upon his thigh, his  
right hand

Holding the sceptre and the Othoman fur-  
tune,  
To have compassion on me.

*Asam.* But suppose  
(As I am sure) he would be deaf, what then  
Could you infer?

*Don.* I, then, would thus rise up,  
And to his teeth tell him he was a tyrant,  
A most voluptuous and insatiable epicure  
In his own pleasures; which he hugs so  
dearly,

As proper and peculiar to himself,  
That he denies a moderate lawful use  
Of all delight to others. And to thee,  
Unequal judge, I speak as much, and  
charge thee,

But with impartial eyes to look into  
Thyself, and then consider with what justice  
Thou canst pronounce my sentence. Un-  
kind nature,

To make weak women servants, proud men  
masters!

Indulgent Mahomet, do thy bloody laws  
Call my embraces with a Christian death,  
Having my heat and May of youth, to plead  
In my excuse? and yet want power to punish  
These that, with scorn, break through thy  
cobweb edicts,

And laugh at thy decrees? To tame their  
lusts

There's no religious bit: let her be fair,  
And pleasing to the eye, though Persian,  
Moor,

Idolatress, Turk, or Christian, you are privi-  
leged,

And freely may enjoy her. At this instant,  
I know, unjust man, thou hast in thy power  
A lovely Christian virgin; thy offence  
Equal, if not transcending mine: why, then,  
(We being both guilty,) dost thou not descend  
From that usurp'd tribunal, and with me  
Walk hand in hand to death?

*Asam.* She raves; and we  
Lose time to hear her: Read the law.

*Don.* Do, do;  
I stand resolved to suffer.

*Ag.* [reads.] *If any virgin, of what  
degree, or quality soever, born a natural  
Turk, shall be convicted of corporal loose-  
ness, and incontinence with any Christian,  
she is, by the decree of our great prophet,  
Mahomet, to lose her head.*

*Asam.* Mark that, then tax our justice!  
*Ag.* *Ever provided, That if she, the said  
offender, by any reasons, arguments, or per-  
suasion, can win and prevail with the said  
Christian offending with her, to alter his  
religion, and marry her, that then the win-  
ning of a soul to the Mahometan sect, shall  
acquit her from all shame, disgrace, and  
punishment whatsoever.*

*Don.* I lay hold on that clause, and chal-  
lenge from you

The privilege of the law.

*Musta.* What will you do?

*Don.* Grant me access and means, I'll  
undertake

To turn this Christian Turk, and marry him:  
This trial you cannot deny.

*Musta.* O base!

Can fear to die make you descend so low  
From your high birth, and brand the Otho-  
man line

With such a mark of infamy?

*Asam.* This is worse  
Than the parting with your honour. Better  
suffer

Ten thousand deaths, and without hope to  
have

A place in our great prophet's paradise,  
Than have an act to aftertimes remember'd,  
So foul as this is.

*Musta.* Cheer your spirits, madam;  
To die is nothing, 'tis but parting with  
A mountain of vexations.

*Asam.* Think of your honour:  
In dying nobly, you make satisfaction  
For your offence, and you shall live a story  
Of bold heroic courage.

*Don.* You shall not fool me  
Out of my life: I claim the law, and sue for  
A speedy trial; if I fail, you may  
Determine of me as you please.

*Asam.* Base woman!  
But use thy ways, and see thou prosper in  
them;

For, if thou fall again into my power,  
Thou shalt in vain, after a thousand tortures,  
Cry out for death; that death which now  
thou fleest from.

Unloose the prisoner's chains. Go, lead  
her on,

To try the magic of her tongue. I follow:  
[*Exeunt all but Asambeg.*

I'm on the rack—descend, my best Paulina.  
[*Exit with Paulina.*

### SCENE III.—*A Room in the Prison.*

*Enter Francisco and Gaoler.*

*Fran.* I come not empty-handed; I will  
purchase  
Your favour at what rate you please. There's  
gold.

*Gaol.* 'Tis the best oratory. I will hazard  
A check for your content.—Below, there!

*Vitel.* [below.] Welcome!  
Art thou the happy messenger, that brings  
me

News of my death?

*Gaol.* Your hand. [Plucks up Vitelli.  
*Fran.* Now, if you please,

A little privacy,

*Gaol.* You have bought it, sir;

Enjoy it freely. [Exit.

*Fran.* O, my dearest pupil!  
Witness these tears of joy, I never saw you,  
Till now, look lovely; nor durst I ever glory  
In the mind of any man I had built up



With the hands of virtuous and religious  
precepts,  
Till this glad minute. Now you have made  
good

My expectation of you. By my order,  
All Roman Cæsars, that led kings in chains,  
Fast bound to their triumphant chariots, if  
Compared with that true glory and full lustre  
You now appear in; all their boasted  
honours,

Purchased with blood and wrong, would  
lose their names,

And be no more remember'd!

*Vitel.* This applause,  
Confirm'd in your allowance, joys me more  
Than if a thousand full-cramm'd theatres  
Should clap their eager hands, to witness that  
The scene I act did please, and they ad-  
mire it.

But these are, father, but beginnings, not  
The ends, of my high aims. I grant, to  
have master'd

The rebel appetite of flesh and blood,  
Was far above my strength; and still owe  
for it

To that great Power that lent it: but, when I  
Shall make't apparent the grim looks of Death  
Affright me not, and that I can put off  
The fond desire of life, (that, like a garment,  
Covers and clothes our frailty,) hastening to  
My martyrdom, as to a heavenly banquet,  
To which I was a choice invited guest;  
Then you may boldly say, you did not plough,  
Or trust the barren and ungrateful sands  
With the fruitful grain of your religious  
counsels.

*Fran.* You do instruct your teacher. Let  
the sun

Of your clear life, that lends to good men  
light,

But set as gloriously as it did rise,  
(Though sometimes clouded,) you may write  
*nil ultra*

To human wishes.

*Vitel.* I have almost gain'd  
The end o' the race, and will not faint or  
tire now.

*Re-enter Gaoler with Aga.*

*Aga.* Sir, by your leave,—nay, stay not,  
[*to the Gaoler, who goes out.*] I bring  
comfort.

The viceroy, taken with the constant bearing  
Of your afflictions; and presuming too  
You will not change your temper, does  
command

Your irons should be ta'en off. [*They take  
off his irons.*] Now arm yourself  
With your old resolution; suddenly

You shall be visited. You must leave the  
room too,

And do it without reply.

*Fran.* There's no contending:

Be still thyself, my son.

[*Exeunt Aga and Francisco.*]

*Vitel.* 'Tis not in man

*Enter Donusa, followed at a distance by  
Asambeg, Mustapha, and Paulina.*

To change or alter me.

*Paul.* Whom do I look on?

My brother? 'tis he!—but no more, my  
tongue;

Thou wilt betray all. [*Aside.*]

*Asam.* Let us hear this temptress:

The fellow looks as he would stop his ears  
Against her powerful spells.

*Paul.* He is undone else. [*Aside.*]

*Vitel.* I'll stand the encounter—charge  
me home.

*Don.* I come, sir, [*Bows herself.*]

A beggar to you, and doubt not to find  
A good man's charity, which if you deny,  
You are cruel to yourself; a crime a wise man  
(And such I hold you) would not willingly  
Be guilty of: nor let it find less welcome,  
Though I, a creature you condemn, now  
shew you

The way to certain happiness; nor think it  
Imaginary or fantastical,  
And so not worth the acquiring, in respect  
The passage to it is nor rough nor thorny;  
No steep hills in the way which you must  
climb up,

No monsters to be conquer'd, no enchant-  
ments

To be dissolved by counter charms, before  
You take possession of it.

*Vitel.* What strong poison  
Is wrapp'd up in these sugar'd pills?

*Don.* My suit is,

That you would quit your shoulders of a  
burthen,

Under whose ponderous weight you wilfully  
Have too long groan'd, to cast those fetters  
off,

With which, with your own hands, you  
chain your freedom:

Forsake a severe, nay, imperious mistress,  
Whose service does exact perpetual cares,  
Watchings, and troubles; and give enter-  
tainment

To one that courts you, whose least favours  
are

Variety, and choice of all delights  
Mankind is capable of.

*Vitel.* You speak in riddles.

What burthen, or what mistress, or what fetters,

Are those you point at?

*Don.* Those which your religion,  
The mistress you too long have served, compels you

To bear with slave-like patience.

*Vitel.* Ha!

*Paul.* How bravely

That virtuous anger shews?

*Don.* Be wise, and weigh

The prosperous success of things; if blessings

Are donatives from heaven, (which, you must grant,

Were blasphemy to question,) and that

They are call'd down and pour'd on such as are

Most gracious with the great Disposer of them,

Look on our flourishing empire, if the splendor,

The majesty, and glory of it dim not Your feeble sight; and then turn back, and see

The narrow bounds of yours, yet that poor remnant

Rent in as many factions and opinions As you have petty kingdoms;—and then, if You are not obstinate against truth and reason,

You must confess the Deity you worship Wants care or power to help you.

*Paul.* Hold out now,

And then thou art victorious. [*Aside.*

*Asam.* How he eyes her!

*Musta.* As if he would look through her.

*Asam.* His eyes flame too,

As threatening violence.

*Vitel.* But that I know

The devil, thy tutor, fills each part about thee, And that I cannot play the exorcist

To dispossess thee, unless I should tear Thy body limb by limb, and throw it to The Furies, that expect it; I would now Pluck out that wicked tongue, that hath blasphemed

The great Omnipotency, at whose nod The fabric of the world shakes. Dare you bring

Your juggling prophet in comparison with That most inscrutable and infinite Essence, That made this All, and comprehends his work!—

The place is too profane to mention him Whose only name is sacred. O Donna! How much, in my compassion, I suffer, That thou, on whom this most excelling form,

And faculties of discourse, beyond a woman, Were by his liberal gift conferr'd, shouldst still

Remain in ignorance of him that gave it! I will not foul my mouth to speak the sorceries Of your seducer, his base birth, his whoredoms,

His strange impostures; nor deliver how He taught a pigeon to feed in his car, Then made his credulous followers believe It was an angel, that instructed him In the framing of his Alcoran—pray you, mark me.

*Asam.* These words are death, were he in nought else guilty.

*Vitel.* Your intent to win me

To be of your belief, proceeded from Your fear to die. Can there be strength in that

Religion, that suffers us to tremble At that which every day, nay hour, we haste to?

*Don.* This is unanswerable, and there's something tells me

I err in my opinion.

*Vitel.* Cherish it,

It is a heavenly prompter; entertain This holy motion, and wear on your forehead The sacred badge he arms his servants with; You shall, like me, with scorn look down upon

All engines tyranny can advance to batter Your constant resolution. Then you shall Look truly fair, when your mind's pureness answers

Your outward beauties.

*Don.* I came here to take you, But I perceive a yielding in myself To be your prisoner.

*Vitel.* 'Tis an overthrow, That will outshine all victories. O Donna, Die in my faith, like me; and 'tis a marriage At which celestial angels shall be waiters, And such as have been sainted welcome us: Are you confirm'd?

*Don.* I would be; but the means That may assure me?

*Vitel.* Heaven is merciful, And will not suffer you to want a man To do that sacred office, build upon it.

*Don.* Then thus I spit at Mahomet.

*Asam.* [*coming forward.*] Stop her mouth: In death to turn apostata! I'll not hear One syllable from any.—Wretched creature! With the next rising sun prepare to die.— Yet, Christian, in reward of thy brave courage, Be thy faith right or wrong, receive this favour;

In person I'll attend thee to thy death:

And boldly challenge all that I can give,  
But what's not in my grant, which is—to  
live. [Excunt.

## ACT V.

## SCENE I.—A Room in the Prison.

Enter Vitelli and Francisco.

*Fran.* You are wondrous brave and jocund.

*Vitel.* Welcome, father.

Should I spare cost, or not wear cheerful looks

Upon my wedding day, it were ominous,  
And shew'd I did repent it ; which I dare not,

It being a marriage, howsoever sad  
In the first ceremonies that confirm it,  
That will for ever arm me agaiust fears,  
Repentance, doubts, or jealousies, and bring  
Perpetual comforts, peace of mind, and quiet  
To the glad couple.

*Fran.* I well understand you ;  
And my full joy to see you so resolved  
Weak words cannot express. What is the  
hour

Design'd for this solemnity ?

*Vitel.* The sixth :

Something before the setting of the sun,  
We take our last leave of his fading light,  
And with our scul's eyes seek for beams  
eternal.

Yet there's one scruple with which I am much  
Perplex'd and troubled, which I know you can  
Resolve me of.

*Fran.* What is't ?

*Vitel.* This, sir ; my bride,  
Whom I first courted, and then won, not with  
Looselays, poor flatteries, apish compliments,  
But sacred and religious zeal. yet wants  
The holy badge that should proclaim her fit  
For these celestial nuptials : willing she is,  
I know, to wear it, as the choicest jewel,  
On her fair forehead ; but to you, that well  
Could do that work of grace, I know the  
viceroiy

Will never grant access. Now, in a case  
Of this necessity, I would gladly learn,  
Whether, in me, a layman, without orders,  
It may not be religious and lawful,  
As we go to our deaths, to do that office ?

*Fran.* A question in itself with much  
ease answer'd :

Midwives, upon necessity, perform it ;  
And knights that, in the Holy Land, fought  
for

The freedom of Jerusalem, when full

Of sweat and enemies' blood, have made  
their helmets

The fount, out of which, with their holy hands  
They drew that heavenly liquor ; 'twas ap-  
proved then

By the holy church, nor must I think it now,  
In you, a work less pious.

*Vitel.* You confirm me ;  
I will find a way to do it. In the mean time,  
Your holy vows assist me !

*Fran.* They shall ever  
Be present with you.

*Vitel.* You shall see me act  
This last scene to the life.

*Fran.* And though now fall,  
Rise a bless'd martyr.

*Vitel.* That's my end, my all. [Excunt.

## SCENE II.—A Street.

Enter Grimaldi, Master, Boatswain, and  
Sailors.

*Boatsw.* Sir, if you slip this opportunity,  
Never expect the like.

*Master.* With as much ease now  
We may steal the ship out of the harbour,  
captain,

As ever gallants, in a wanton bravery,  
Have set upon a drunken constable,  
And bore him from a sleepy rug-gown'd  
watch :

Be therefore wise.

*Grim.* I must be honest too.  
And you shall wear that shape, you shall  
observe me,

If that you purpose to continue mine.  
Think you ingratitude can be the parent  
To our unfeign'd repentance ? Do I owe  
A peace within here, kingdoms could not  
purchase,

To my religious creditor, to leave him  
Open to danger, the great benefit  
Never remembered ! no ; though in her  
bottom

We could stow up the tribute of the Turk ;  
Nay, grant the passage safe too ; I will never  
Consent to weigh an anchor up, till he,  
That only must, commands it.

*Boatsw.* This religion  
Will keep us slaves and beggars.

*Master.* The fiend prompts me  
To change my copy : plague upon't ! we  
are seamen ;

What have we to do with't, but for a snatch  
or so,

At the end of a long Lent ?

Enter Francisco.

*Boatsw.* Mum : see who is here.

*Grim.* My father !

*Fran.* My good convert. I am full  
Of serious business which denies me leave  
To hold long conference with you : only  
thus much

Briefly receive ; a day or two, at the most,  
Shall make me fit to take my leave of Tunis,  
Or give me lost for ever.

*Grim.* Days nor years,  
Provided that my stay may do you service,  
But to me shall be minutes.

*Fran.* I much thank you :  
In this small scroll you may in private read  
What my intents are ; and, as they grow ripe,  
I will instruct you further : in the mean time  
Borrow your late distracted looks and gesture ;  
The more dejected you appear, the less  
The viceroy must suspect you.

*Grim.* I am nothing,  
But what you please to have me be.

*Fran.* Farewell, sir.  
Be cheerful, master, something we will do,  
That shall reward itself in the performance ;  
And that's true prize indeed.

*Mast.* I am obedient.

*Boatsw.* And I : there's no contending.

[*Exeunt Grim. Mast. Boatsw. and Sailors.*]

*Fran.* Peace to you all !  
Prosper, thou Great Existence, my en-  
deavours,  
As they religiously are undertaken,  
And distant equally from servile gain,

*Enter Paulina, Carazie, and Manto.*

Or glorious ostentation !—I am heard,  
In this blest opportunity, which in vain  
I long have waited for. I must show myself.  
O, she has found me ! now if she prove right,  
All hope will not forsake us.

*Paul.* Further off ;  
And in that distance know your duties too.  
You were bestow'd on me as slaves to serve me,  
And not as spies to pry into my actions,  
And after, to betray me. You shall find  
If any look of mine be unobserved,  
I am not ignorant of a mistress' power,  
And from whom I receive it.

*Car.* Note this, Manto,  
The pride and scorn with which she enter-  
tains us,

Now we are made hers by the viceroy's gift !  
Our sweet condition'd princess, fair Donusa,  
Rest in her death wait on her ? never used us  
With such contempt. I would he had sent me  
To the gallies, or the gallows, when he  
gave me

To this proud little devil.

*Mant.* I expect  
All tyrannous usage, but I must be patient ;

And though, ten times a day, she tears these  
locks,  
Or makes this face her footstool, 'tis but  
justice.

*Paul.* 'Tis a true story of my fortunes,  
father.

My chastity preserved by miracle,  
Or your devotions for me ; and, believe it,  
What outward pride soe'er I counterfeit,  
Or state, to these appointed to attend me,  
I am not in my disposition alter'd,  
But still your humble daughter, and share  
with you

In my poor brother's sufferings :—all hell's  
torments

Revenge it on accurs'd Grimaldi's soul,  
That, in his rape of me, gave a beginning  
To all the miseries that since have follow'd !

*Fran.* Be charitable, and forgive him,  
gentle daughter.

He's a changed man, and may redeem his  
fault

In his fair life hereafter. You must bear too  
Your forced captivity, for 'tis no better,  
Though you wear golden fetters, and of him,  
Whom death affrights not, learn to hold  
out nobly.

*Paul.* You are still the same good coun-  
sellor.

*Fran.* And who knows,  
(Since what above is purposed, is inscru-  
table,)

But that the viceroys's extreme dotage on you  
May be the parent of a happier birth  
Than yet our hopes dare fashion. Longer  
conference

May prove unsafe for you and me ; however  
(Perhaps for trial) he allows you freedom.—  
[*Delivers a paper.*]

From this learn therefore what you must  
attempt,

Though with the hazard of yourself : heaven  
guard you,

And give Vitelli patience ! then I doubt not  
But he will have a glorious day, since some  
Hold truly,—such as suffer, overcome.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Hall in Asambeg's Palace.*

*Enter Asambeg, Mustapha, Aga, and Capiaga.*

*Asam.* What we commanded, see per-  
form'd ; and fail not

In all things to be punctual.

*Aga.* We shall, sir.

[*Exeunt Aga and Capiaga.*]

*Musta.* 'Tis strange, that you should use  
such circumstance

To a delinquent of so mean condition.

*Asam.* Had he appeared in a more sordid shape

Than disguised greatness ever deign'd to mask in,

The gallant bearing of his present fortune Aloud proclaims him noble.

*Musta.* If you doubt him  
To be a man built up for great employments,  
And, as a cunning spy, sent to explore  
The city's strength or weakness, you by torture

May force him to discover it.

*Asam.* That were base ;  
Nor dare I do such injury to virtue  
And bold assured courage ; neither can I  
Be won to think, but if I should attempt it,  
I shoot against the moon. He that hath stood

The roughest battery, that captivity  
Could ever bring to shake a constant temper ;  
Despised the fawnings of a future greatness,  
By beauty, in her full perfection, tender'd ;  
That hears of death as of a quiet slumber,  
And from the surplusage of his own firmness,  
Can spare enough of fortitude, to assure  
A feeble woman ; will not, Mustapha,  
Be alter'd in his soul for any torments  
We can afflict his body with.

*Musta.* Do your pleasure :  
I only offer'd you a friend's advice,  
But without gall or envy to the man  
That isto suffer. But what do you determine  
Of poor Grimaldi? the disgrace call'd on him,  
I hear, has run him mad.

*Asam.* There weigh the difference  
In the true temper of their minds. The one,  
A pirate, sold to mischiefs, rapes, and all  
That make a slave relentless and obdurate,  
Yet, of himself wanting the inward strengths  
That should defend him, sinks beneath  
compassion

Or pity of a man : whereas this merchant,  
Acquainted only with a civil life ;  
Arm'd in himself, intrench'd and fortified  
With his own virtue, valuing life and death  
At the same price, poorly does not invite  
A favour, but commands us to do him right ;  
Which unto him, and her we both once  
honour'd

As a just debt, I gladly pay ;—they enter.  
Now sit we equal hearers.

*A dreadful music. Enter at one door, the  
Aga, Janizaries, Vitelli, Francisco, and  
Gazet ; at the other, Donusa, (her train  
borne up), Paulina, Carazie, and Manto.*

*Musta.* I shall hear  
And see, sir, without passion ; my wrongs  
arm me.

*Vitel.* A joyful preparation ! To whose  
bounty

Owe we our thanks for gracing thus our  
hymen ?

The notes, though dreadful to the ear, sound  
here

As our epithalamium were sung  
By a celestial choir, and a full chorus  
Assured us future happiness. These that  
lead me

Gaze not with wanton eyes upon my bride,  
Nor for their service are repaid by me  
With jealousies or fears ; nor do they envy  
My passage to those pleasures from which  
death

Cannot deter me. Great sir, pardon me :  
Imagination of the joys I haste to  
Made me forget my duty ; but the form  
And ceremony past, I will attend you,  
And with our constant resolution feast you ;  
Not with coarse cates, forgot as soon as  
tasted,

But such as shall, while you have memory,  
Be pleasing to the palate.

*Fran.* Be not lost  
In what you purpose. [*Exit.*

*Gaz.* Call you this a marriage !  
It differs little from hanging ; I cry at it.

*Vitel.* See, where my bride appears ! in  
what full lustre !

As if the virgins that bear up her train  
Had long contended to receive an honour  
Above their births, in doing her this service.  
Nor comes she fearful to meet those delights,  
Which, once past o'er, immortal pleasures  
follow.

I need not, therefore, comfort or encourage  
Her forward steps ; and I should offer wrong  
To her mind's fortitude, should I but ask  
How she can brook the rough high-going  
sea,

Over whose foamy back our ship, well rigg'd  
With hope and strong assurance, must  
transport us.

Nor will I tell her, when we reach the haven,  
Which tempests shall not hinder, what loud  
welcome

Shall entertain us ; nor commend the place,  
To tell whose least perfection would strike  
dumb

The eloquence of all boasted in story,  
Though join'd together.

*Don.* 'Tis enough, my dearest,  
I dare not doubt you ; as your humble  
shadow,

Lead where you please, I follow.

*Vitel.* One suit, sir,  
And willingly I cease to be a beggar ;  
And that you may with more security hear it,

Know, 'tis not life I'll ask, nor to defer  
Our deaths, but a few minutes.

*Asam.* Speak ; 'tis granted.

*Vitel.* We being now to take our latest  
leave,

And grown of one belief, I do desire  
I may have your allowance to perform it,  
But in the fashion which we Christians use  
Upon the like occasions.

*Asam.* 'Tis allow'd of.

*Vitel.* My service : haste, Gazet, to the  
next spring,  
And bring me of it.

*Gaz.* Would I could as well  
Fetch you a pardon ; I would not run but fly,  
And be here in a moment. [*Exit.*]

*Musta.* What's the mystery  
Of this ? discover it.

*Vitel.* Great sir, I'll tell you.

Each country hath its own peculiar rites :  
Some, when they are to die, drink store of  
wine,

Which, pour'd in liberally, does oft beget  
A bastard valour, with which arm'd, they bear  
The not-to-be declined charge of death  
With less fear and astonishment : others take  
Drugs to procure a heavy sleep, that so  
They may insensibly receive the means  
That casts them in an everlasting slumber ;  
Others—

*Re-enter Gazet, with water.*

O welcome !

*Asam.* Now the use of yours ?

*Vitel.* The clearness of this is a perfect sign  
Of innocence : and as this washes off  
Stains and pollutions from the things we  
wear ;

Thrown thus upon the forehead, it hath  
power

To purge those spots that cleave upon the  
mind, [*Sprinkles it on her face.*]

If thankfully received.

*Asam.* 'Tis a strange custom.

*Vitel.* How do you entertain it, my  
Donusa ?

Feel you no alteration, no new motives,  
No unexpected aids, that may confirm you  
In that to which you were inclined before ?

*Don.* I am another woman ;—till this  
minute

I never lived, nor durst think how to die.  
How long have I been blind ! yet on the  
sudden,

By this blest means, I feel the films of error  
Ta'en from my soul's eyes. O divine phy-  
sician !

That hast bestow'd a sight on me, which  
Death,

Though ready to embrace me in his arms,  
Cannot take from me : let me kiss the hand  
That did this miracle, and seal my thanks  
Upon those lips from whence these sweet  
words vanish'd,

That freed me from the cruellest of prisons,  
Blind ignorance and misbelief. False pro-  
phet !

Impostor Mahomet !—

*Asam.* I'll hear no more,  
You do abuse my favours ; sever them :  
Wretch, if thou hadst another life to lose,  
This blasphemy deserved it ;—instantly  
Carry them to their deaths.

*Vitel.* We part now, blest one,  
To meet hereafter in a kingdom, where  
Hell's malice shall not reach us.

*Paul.* Ha ! ha ! ha !

*Asam.* What means my mistress ?

*Paul.* Who can hold her spleen,  
When such ridiculous follies are presented,  
The scene, too, made religion ? O, my lord,  
How from one cause two contrary effects  
Spring up upon the sudden !

*Asam.* This is strange.

*Paul.* That which hath fool'd her in her  
death, wins me,  
That hitherto have barr'd myself from  
pleasure,

To live in all delight.

*Asam.* There's music in this.

*Paul.* I now will run as fiercely to your  
arms

As ever longing woman did, borne high  
On the swift wings of appetite.

*Vitel.* O devil !

*Paul.* Nay, more ; for there shall be no  
odds betwixt us,  
I will turn Turk.

*Gaz.* Most of your tribe do so,

When they begin in whore. [*Aside.*]

*Asam.* You are serious, lady ?

*Paul.* Serious !—but satisfy me in a suit  
That to the world may witness that I have  
Some power upon you, and to-morrow  
challenge

Whatever's in my gift ; for I will be  
At your dispose.

*Gaz.* That's ever the subscription  
To a damn'd whore's false epistle. [*Aside.*]

*Asam.* Ask this hand,

Or, if thou wilt, the heads of these. I am  
rapt

Beyond myself with joy. Speak, speak,  
what is it ?

*Paul.* But twelve short hours' reprieve  
for this base couple.

*Asam.* The reason, since you hate them ?

*Paul.* That I may

Have time to triumph o'er this wretched woman.

I'll be myself her guardian ; I will feast,  
Adorned in her choice and richest jewels :  
Commit him to what guards you please.

Grant this,

I am no more mine own, but yours.

*Asam.* Enjoy it ;

Repine at it who dares : bear him safe off  
To the black tower, but give him all things  
useful :

The contrary was not in your request ?

*Paul.* I do contemn him.

*Don.* Peace in death denied me !

*Paul.* Thou shalt not go in liberty to thy  
grave ;

For one night a sultana is my slave.

*Musta.* A terrible little tyranness !

*Asam.* No more ;

Her will shall be a law. Till now ne'er happy !  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*A Street.*

*Enter* Francisco, Grimaldi, Master, Boat-  
swain, and Sailors.

*Grim.* Sir, all things are in readiness ;  
the Turks,

That seized upon my ship, stow'd under  
hatches ;

My men resolved and cheerful. Use but  
means

To get out of the ports, we will be ready  
To bring you aboard, and then (heaven be  
but pleased)

This, for the viceroy's fleet !

*Fran.* Discharge your parts ;

In mine I'll not be wanting: Fear not,  
master ;

Something will come along to fraught your  
bark,

That you will have just cause to say you  
never

Made such a voyage.

*Must.* We will stand the hazard.

*Fran.* What's the best hour ?

*Boatsw.* After the second watch.

*Fran.* Enough ; each to his charge.

*Grim.* We will be careful. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*A Room in Asambeg's Palace.*

*Enter* Paulina, Donusa, Carazie, and  
Manto.

*Paul.* Sit, madam, it is fit that I attend  
you ;

And pardon, I beseech you, my rude  
language,

To which the sooner you will be invited,  
When you shall understand, no way was  
left me

To free you from a present execution,  
But by my personating that which never  
My nature was acquainted with.

*Don.* I believe you.

*Paul.* You will, when you shall under-  
stand I may  
Receive the honour to be known unto you  
By a nearer name :—and, not to rack you  
further,

The man you please to favour is my brother ;  
No merchant, madam, but a gentleman  
Of the best rank in Venice.

*Don.* I rejoice in't ;

But what's this to his freedom ? for myself,  
Were he well off, I were secure.

*Paul.* I have

A present means, not plotted by myself,  
But a religious man, my confessor,  
That may preserve all, if we had a servant  
Whose faith we might rely on.

*Don.* She, that's now

Your slave, was once mine ; had I twenty  
lives,

I durst commit them to her trust.

*Mant.* O madam !

I have been false,—forgive me : I'll re-  
deem it

By anything, however desperate,  
You please to impose upon me.

*Paul.* Troth, these tears,

I think, cannot be counterfeit ; I believe  
her,

And, if you please, will try her.

*Don.* At your peril ;

There is no further danger can look towards  
me.

*Paul.* This only then—canst thou use  
means to carry

This bake-meat to Vitelli ?

*Mant.* With much ease ;

I am familiar with the guard ; beside,  
It being known it was I that betray'd him,  
My entrance hardly will of them be ques-  
tion'd.

*Paul.* About it then. Say, that 'twas  
sent to him

From his Donusa ; bid him search the midst  
of it,

He there shall find a cordial.

*Mant.* What I do

Shall speak my care and faith. [*Exit.*]

*Don.* Good fortune with thee !

*Paul.* You cannot eat ?

*Don.* The time we thus abuse

We might employ much better.

*Paul.* I am glad

To hear this from you. As for you, Carazie,  
If our intents do prosper, make choice,  
whether

You'll steal away with your two mistresses,  
Or take your fortune.

*Car.* I'll be gelded twice first ;  
Hang him that stays behind.

*Paul.* I wait you, madam.  
Were but my brother off, by the command  
Of the doting viceroy there's no guard dare  
stay me ;

And I will safely bring you to the place,  
Where we must expect him.

*Don.* Heaven be gracious to us ! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*A Room in the Black Tower.*

*Enter Vitelli, Aga, and Guard, at the door.*

*Vitel.* Paulina to fall off thus ! 'tis to me  
More terrible than death, and, like an earth-  
quake,

TotTERS this walking building, such I am ;  
And in my sudden ruin would prevent,  
By choaking up at once my vital spirits,  
This pompous preparation for my death.

But I am lost ; that good man, good Fran-  
cisco,

Deliver'd me a paper, which till now  
I wanted leisure to peruse. [*Reads the paper.*]

*Aga.* This Christian  
Fears not, it seems, the near approaching sun,  
Whose second rise he never must salute.

*Enter Manto with the baked-meat.*

1 *Guartl.* Who's that ?

2 *Guard.* Stand.

*Aga.* Manto !

*Mant.* Here's the viceroy's ring,  
Gives warrant to my entrance ; yet you may  
Partake of anything I shall deliver.

'Tis but a present to a dying man,  
Sent from the princess that must suffer with  
him.

*Aga.* Use your own freedom.

*Mant.* I would not disturb  
This his last contemplation.

*Vitel.* O, 'tis well !

He has restored all, and I at peace again  
With my Paulina.

*Mant.* Sir, the sad Donusa,  
Grieved for your sufferings, more than for  
her own,

Knowing the long and tedious pilgrimage  
You are to take, presents you with this  
cordial,

Which privately she wishes you should taste  
of ;

And search the middle part, where you  
shall find

Something that hath the operation to  
Make death look lovely.

*Vitel.* I will not dispute

What she commands, but scerve it. [*Exit.*]

*Aga.* Prithee, Manto,  
How hath the unfortunaed priucess spent  
this night,

Under her proud new mistress ?

*Mant.* With such patience  
As it o'ercomes the other's insolence,  
Nay, triumphs o'er her pride. My much  
haste now

Commands me hence ; but, the sad tragedy  
past,

I'll give you satisfaction to the full  
Of all bath pass'd, and a true character  
Of the proud Christian's nature. [*Exit.*]

*Aga.* Break the watch up ;  
What should we fear i' the midst of our own  
strengths ?

'Tis but the basha's jealousy. Farewell,  
soldiers ! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII.—*An upper Room in the same.*

*Enter Vitelli with the baked-meat.*

*Vitel.* There's something more in this  
than means to cloy

A hungry appetite, which I must discover.  
She will'd me search the midst : thus, thus  
I pierce it.

—Ha ! what is this ? a scroll bound up in  
packthread !

What may the mystery be ? [*Reads.*]

*Son, let down this packthread at the west  
window of the castle. By it you shall draw  
up a ladder of ropes, by which you may  
descend : your dearest Donusa with the rest  
of your friends below attend you. Heaven  
prosper you !*

O best of men ! he that gives up himself  
To a true religious friend, leans not upon  
A false deceiving reed, but boldly builds  
Upon a rock ; which now with joy I find  
In reverend Francisco, whose good vows,  
Labours, and watchings, in my hoped-for  
freedom,

Appear a pious miracle. I come,  
I come with confidence ; though the descent  
Were steep as hell, I know I cannot slide,  
Being call'd down by such a faithful guide.  
[*Exit.*]

SCENE VIII.—*A Room in Asambeg's  
Palace.*

*Enter Asambeg, Mustapha, and Janizaries.*

*Asam.* Excuse me, Mustapha, though  
this night to me

Appear as tedious as that treble one  
Was to the world, when Jove on fair Alcmena  
Begot Alcides. Were you to encounter  
Those ravishing pleasures, which the slow-  
paced hours



(To me they are such) bar me from, you would,

With your continued wishes, strive to imp  
New feathers to the broken wings of time,  
And chide the amorous sun, for too long  
dalliance

In Thetis' watery bosom.

*Musta.* You are too violent

In your desires, of which you are yet un-  
certain ;

Having no more assurance to enjoy them,  
Than a weak woman's promise, on which  
wise men

Faintly rely.

*Asam.* Tush ! she is made of truth ;  
And what she says she will do, holds as firm  
As laws in brass, that know no change :

[*A chamber shot off.*]

What's this?

Some new prize brought in, sure—

*Enter Aga hastily.*

Why are thy looks

So ghastly? Villain, speak!

*Aga.* Great sir, hear me,  
Then after, kill me :—we are all betray'd.  
The false Grimaldi, sunk in your disgrace,  
With his confederates, has seized his ship,

And those that guarded it stowed under  
hatches.

With him the condemn'd princess, and the  
merchant,

That, with a ladder made of ropes, descended  
From the black tower, in which he was en-  
closed,

And your fair mistress—

*Asam.* Ha!

*Aga.* With all their train,  
And choicest jewels, are gone safe aboard :  
Their sails spread forth, and with a fore-  
right gale

Leaving our coast, in scorn of all pursuit,  
As a farewell, they shew'd a broadside to us.

*Asam.* No more.

*Musta.* Now note your confidence!

*Asam.* No more.

O my credulity! I am too full  
Of grief and rage to speak. Dull, heavy fool!  
Worthy of all the tortures that the frown  
Of thy incensed master can throw on thee,  
Without one man's compassion! I will  
bide

This head among the desarts, or some cave  
Fill'd with my shame and me; where I alone  
May die without a partner in my moan.

[*Exeunt.*]



# The Parliament of Love.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ,

AS FAR AS THEY APPEAR IN THE REMAINING SCENES OF THIS PLAY.

Charles VIII. *king of France.*  
*Duke of Orleans.*  
*Duke of Nemours.*  
 Chamont, *a nobleman; once guardian to*  
 Bellisant.  
 Philamour, } *counsellors.*  
 Lafort, }  
 Montrose, *a noble gentleman, in love with*  
 Bellisant.  
 Cleremond, *in love with Leonora.*  
 Clarindore, *a wild courtier.*

Perigot, } *wild courtiers.*  
 Novall, }  
 Dinant, *physician to the court.*  
 Bellisant, *a noble lady.*  
 Lamira, *wife to Chamont.*  
 Beaupré, *(supposed Calista,) wife to Clarin-*  
 dore.  
 Leonora.  
 Clarinda, *wife to Dinant.*  
*Other Courtiers, Priest, Officers, Servants,*  
*&c.*

SCENE,—Paris, and the adjacent country.

### ACT I.

SCENE IV.—*A Room in Bellisant's House.*

*Enter Chamont and Bellisant.*

*Cham.* . . . . .

I did discharge the trust imposed upon me,  
 Being your guardian.

*Bell.* 'Tis with truth acknowledged.

*Cham.* The love I then bore to you, and  
 desire

To do you all good offices of a friend,  
 Continues with me, nay, increases, lady;  
 And, out of this assurance, I presume,  
 What, from a true heart, I shall now deliver,  
 Will meet a gentle censure.

*Bell.* When you speak,

Whate'er the subject be, I gladly hear.

*Cham.* To tell you of the greatness of  
 your state,

And from what noble stock you are derived,  
 Were but impertinence, and a common  
 theme,

Since you well know both. What I am to  
 speak of,

Touches you nearer; therefore, give me  
 leave

To say, that, howsoever your great bounties,  
 Continual feasting, princely entertainments,  
 May gain you the opinion of some few

Of a brave generous spirit, (the best harvest  
 That you can hope for from such costly  
 seed,)

You cannot yet, amongst the multitude,

(Since, next unto the princes of the blood,  
 The eyes of all are fix'd on you,) but give  
 Some wounds, which will not close without  
 a scar,

To your fair reputation, and good name;  
 In suffering such a crew of riotous gallants,  
 Not of the best repute, to be so frequent  
 Both in your house and presence: this, 'tis  
 rumour'd,

Little agrees with the curiousness of honour,  
 Or modesty of a maid.

*Bell.* Not to dwell long

Upon my answer, I must thank your good-  
 ness,

And provident care, that have instructed me  
 What my revenues are, by which I measure

How far I may expend; and yet I find not  
 That I begin to waste; nor would I add

To what I now possess. I am myself;  
 And for my fame, since I am innocent here,

This, for the world's opinion!

*Cham.* Take heed, madam.

That [world's] opinion, which you slight,  
 confirms

This lady for immodest, and proclaims  
 Another for a modest; whereas the first

Ne'er knew what loose thoughts were, and  
 the praised second

Had never a cold dream.

*Bell.* I dare not argue:

But what means to prevent this?

*Cham.* Noble marriage.

*Bell.* Pardon me, sir; and do not think I  
 scorn

Your grave advice, which I have ever followed,  
Thought not pleased in it.—

Would you have me match with wealth? I need it not:

Or hunt for honour, and increase of titles?  
In truth, I rest ambitious of no greater  
Than what my father left. Or do you judge  
My blood to run so high, that 'tis not in  
Physic to cool me? I yet feel no such heat:  
But when, against my will, it grows upon me,  
I'll think upon your counsel.

*Cham.* If you resolve, then,  
To live a virgin, you have . . . . .  
To which you may retire, and ha- . . . . .  
To . . . . .  
In . . . . .  
And live cont- . . . . .

*Bell.* What proof  
Should I give of my continence, if I lived  
Not seen, nor seeing any? Spartan Helen,  
Corinthian Lais, or Rome's Messaline,  
So mew'd up, might have died as they were  
born,

By lust untempted: no, it is the glory  
Of chastity to be tempted, tempted home too,  
The honour else is nothing! I would be  
The first example to convince, for liars,  
Those poets, that with sharp and bitter  
rhymes

Proclaim aloud, that chastity has no being,  
But in a cottage: and so confident  
I am in this to conquer, that I will  
Expose myself to all assaults; see masques,  
And hear bewitching sonnets; change dis-  
course

With one that, for experience, could teach  
Ovid

To write, a better way, his *Art of Love*:  
Feed high, and take and give free entertain-  
ment,

Lend Cupid eyes, and new artillery,  
Deny his mother for a deity;  
Yet every burning shot he made at me,  
Meeting with my chaste thoughts, should  
lose their ardour;

Which when I have o'ercome, malicious  
men

Must, to their shame, confess it's possible,  
For a young lady, (some say fair,) at court,  
To keep her virgin honour.

*Cham.* May you prosper  
In this great undertaking! I'll not use  
A syllable to divert you: but must be  
A suitor in another kind.

*Bell.* Whate'er it be,  
'Tis granted.

*Cham.* It is only to accept  
A present from me.

*Bell.* Call you this a suit?

*Cham.* Come in, Calista.

*Enter* Beaupré, *disguised as a Moorish Slave.*

This is one I would  
Bestow upon you.

*Bell.* 'Tis the handsomest,  
I e'er saw of her country; she hath neither  
Thick lips, nor rough curl'd hair.

*Cham.* Her manners, lady,  
Upon my honour, better her good shape:  
She speaks our language too, for being sur-  
prised

In Barbary, she was bestow'd upon  
A pirate of Marseilles, with whose wife  
She lived five years, and learn'd it; there I  
bought her,

As pitying her hard usage; if you please  
'To make her yours, you may.

*Bell.* With many thanks.  
Come hither, pretty one; fear not, you shall  
find me

A gentle mistress.

*Beau.* With my care and service,  
I'll study to preserve you such.

*Bell.* Well answered.  
Come, follow me; we'll instantly to court,  
And take my guests along.

*Chamb.* They wait you, madam.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*A State-room in the Palace.*

*Flourish.* *Enter* Charles, Orleans, Nemours,  
Philamour, and Lafort.

*Char.* What solitude does dwell about our  
court!

Why this dull entertainment? Have I  
march'd

Victorious through Italy, enter'd Rome,  
Like a triumphant conqueror, set my foot  
Upon the neck of Florence, tamed the pride  
Of the Venetians, scourged those petty  
tyrants,

That . . . . . den of the world, to be  
. . . . . home, nay, my house neglected!

(*New Speaker.*) . . . . . the courtiers  
would appear

. . . . . therefore they presumed

(*New Speaker.*) . . . . . the ladies, sir,

. . . . . that glad time  
. . . . . the choice.

*Enter* Bellisant, Leonora, Lamira, Cla-  
rinda, Chanont, Montrose, Cleremond,  
Clarindore, Perigot, Novall, and other  
*Courtiers.*

*Phil.* Here they come.

*Ladies.* All happiness to your majesty!  
*Courtiers.* And victory sit ever on your sword!

*Char.* Our thanks to all.

But wherefore come you in divided troops,  
As if the mistresses would not accept  
Their servants' guardship, or the servants,  
slighted,

Refuse to offer it? You all wear sad looks:  
On Perigot appears not that blunt mirth  
Which his face used to promise; on Montrose

There hangs a heavy dulness; Cleremond  
Droops e'en to death, and Clarindore hath lost

Much of his sharpness; nay, these ladies too,  
Whose sparkling eyes did use to fire the court  
With various inventions of delight,  
Part with their splendour. What's the cause?  
from whence

Proceeds this alteration?

*Peri.* I am troubled

With the toothache, or with love, I know  
not whether;

There is a worm in both.

[*Aside.*

*Clarín.* It is their pride.

*Bell.* Or your unworthiness.

*Cler.* The honour that

The French dames held for courtesy, above  
All ladies of the earth, dwells not in these,  
That glory in their cruelty.

*Leon.* The desert

The chevaliers of France were truly lords of,  
And which your grandsires really did possess,  
At no part you inherit.

*Bell.* Ere they durst

Presume to offer service to a lady,  
In person they perform'd some gallant acts  
The fame of which prepared them gracious  
hearing,

Ere they made their approaches: what coy  
she, then,

Though great in birth, not to be parallel'd  
For nature's liberal bounties, both set off  
With fortune's trappings, wealth; but, with  
delight,

Gladly acknowledged such a man her  
servant,

To whose heroic courage, and deep wisdom,  
The flourishing commonwealth, and thank-  
ful king,

Confess'd themselves for debtors? Whereas,  
now,

If you have travelled Italy, and brought  
home

Some remnants of the language, and can set  
Your faces in some strange and ne'er-seen  
posture,

Dance a lavolta, and be rude and saucy;

Protest, and swear, and damn, (for these are  
acts

That most think grace them,) and then view  
yourselves

In the deceiving mirror of self-love,  
You do conclude there hardly is a woman  
That can be worthy of you.

*Mont.* We would grant

We are not equal to our ancestors  
In noble undertakings, if we thought,  
In us a free confession would persuade you,  
Not to deny your own most wilful errors:  
And where you tax us for unservice, lady,  
I never knew a soldier yet, that could  
Arrive into your favour: we may suffer  
The winter's frost, and scorching summer's  
heat,

When the hot lion's breath singeth the fields,  
To seek out victory; yet, at our return,  
Though honour'd in our manly wounds, well  
taken,

You say they do deform us, and the loss  
Of much blood that way, renders us unfit  
To please you in your chambers.

*Clarín.* I must speak

A little in the general cause: Your beauties  
Are charms that do enchant so . . .

Knowing that we are fastened in your toils;  
In which to struggle, or strive to break out,  
Increases the captivity. Never Circe,  
Sated with such she purpos'd to transform,  
Or cunning Siren, for whose fatal music  
Nought but the hearer's death could satisfy,  
Knew less of pity. Nay, I dare go further,  
And justify your majesty hath lost  
More resolute and brave courageous spirits  
In this same dull and languishing fight of  
love,

Than e'er your wars took from you.

*Char.* No reply:—

This is a cause we will determine of,  
And speedily redress: Tamed Italy,  
With fear, confesses me a warlike king,  
And France shall boast I am a prince of  
love.

Shall we, that keep perpetual parliaments  
For petty suits, or the least injury  
Offer'd the goods or bodies of our subjects,  
Not study a cure for the sickness of the mind,  
Whose venomous contagion hath infected  
Our bravest servants, and the choicest  
beauties

Our court is proud of? These are wounds  
require

A kingly surgeon, and the honour worthy  
By us to be accepted.

*Phil.* It would add

To the rest of your great actions.

*Laf.* But the means  
Most difficult, I fear.

*Cham.* You shall do more, sir,  
If you perform this, than I e'er could read  
The sons of Saturn, that by lot divided  
The government of the air, the sea, and hell,  
Had spirit to undertake.

*Char.* Why, this more fires me ;  
And now partake of my design. With speed  
Erect a place of justice near the court,  
Which we'll have styled, the PARLIAMENT  
OF LOVE :

Here such whose humble service is not con-  
sider'd

By their proud mistresses, freely may com-  
plain ;

And shall have hearing and redress.

*Nov.* O rare !

*Peri.* I like this well.

*Char.* And ladies that are wrong'd  
By such as do profess themselves their ser-  
vants,

May cite them hither, and their cause de-  
liver'd

Or by their own tongues, or fee'd advocates,  
Find sudden satisfaction.

*Nov.* What a rascal

Was I to leave the law ! I might have had  
Clients and clients. Ne'er was such a time  
For any smooth-chinn'd advocate.

*Peri.* They will get the start

Of the ladies' spruce physicians, starve their  
chaplains,

Though never so well timber'd.

*Char.* 'Tis our will,

Nor shall it be disputed. Of this court,  
Or rather, sanctuary of pure lovers,  
My lord of Orleans, and Nemours, assisted  
By the messieurs Philamour and Lafort, are  
judges.

You have worn Venus's colours from your  
youth,

And cannot, therefore, but be sensible  
Of all her mysteries : what you shall deter-  
mine,

In the way of penance, punishment, or  
reward,

Shall . . . the trial ; a month we grant you  
. . . . . amours, which expired,  
. . . . . make your complaints, and be assured  
. . . . . impartial hearing ; this determined,  
. . . . . rest of our affairs. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Clarindore's House.*

*Enter Clarindore, Montrose, Perigot, and  
Novall.*

*Peri.* I do not relish

The last part of the king's speech, though I  
was

Much taken with the first.

*Nov.* Your reason, tutor ?

*Peri.* Why, look you, pupil ; the decree,  
that women

Should not neglect the service of their  
lovers,

But pay them from the exchequer they were  
born with,

Was good and laudable ; they being created  
To be both tractable and tactable,

When they are useful : but to have it order'd,  
All women that have stumbled in the dark,

Or given, by owl-light, favours, should com-  
plain,

Is most intolerable : I myself shall have,  
Of such as trade in the streets, and scaped

my pockets,

Of progress laundresses, and marketwomen,  
When the king's pleasure's known, a thou-  
sand bills

Preferr'd against me.

*Clarín.* This is out of season :

Nothing to madam Bellisant, that, in public,  
Hath so inveigh'd against us.

*Nov.* She's a Fury,

I dare no more attempt her.

*Peri.* I'll not venture

To change six words with her for half her  
state,

Or stay, till she be trimm'd, from wine and  
women,

For any new monopoly.

*Mont.* I will study

How to forget her, shun the tempting poison  
Her looks, and magic of discourse, still offer,

And be myself again : since there's no hope,  
'Twere madness to pursue her.

*Peri.* There are madams

Better brought up, 'tis thought, and wives  
that dare not

Complain inparliament ; there's safe trading,  
pupil :

And, when she finds she is of all forsaken,  
Let my lady Pride repent in vain, and mump,

And envy others' markets.

*Clarín.* May I ne'er prosper

But you are three of the most fainting spirits,  
That ever I conversed with ! You do well

To talk of progress laundresses, punks, and  
beggars ;

The wife of some rich tradesman with three  
teeth,

And twice so many hairs :—truck with old  
ladies,

That nature hath given o'er, that owe their  
doctors

For an artificial life, that are so frozen,

That a sound plague cannot thaw them ;  
but despair,  
I give you over : never hope to take  
A velvet petticoat up, or to commit  
With an Italian cutwork smock, when torn  
too.

*Mont.* And what hopes nourish you ?

*Clarín.* Troth, mine are modest.  
I am only confident to win the lady  
You dare not look on, and now, in the height  
Of her contempt and scorn, to humble her,  
And teach her at what game her mother  
play'd,

When she was got ; and, cloy'd with those  
poor toys,

As I find her obedient and pleasing,  
I may perhaps descend to marry her :  
Then, with a kind of state, I take my chair,  
Command a sudden muster of my servants,  
And, after two or three majestic hums,  
It being known all is mine, peruse my  
writings,

Let out this manor, at an easy rate,  
To such a friend, lend this ten thousand  
crowns,

For the redemption of his mortgaged land,  
Give to each by-blow I know mine, a farm,  
Erect . . . this in conse- . . .

That pleased me in my youth, but now  
grown stale.

These things first ordered by me, and con-  
firm'd

By Bellisant, my wife, I care not much  
If, out of her own lands, I do assign her  
Some pretty jointure.

*Peri.* Talk'st thou in thy sleep ?

*Nov.* Or art thou mad ?

*Clarín.* A little elevated

With the assurance of my future fortune :  
Why do you stare and grin ? I know this  
must be,

And I will lay three thousand crowns, within  
A month I will effect this.

*Mont.* How !

*Clarín.* Give proof

I have enjoy'd fair Bellisant, evident proof  
I have pluck'd her virgin rose, so long pre-  
served,

Not, like a play-trick, with a chain or ring  
Stolen by corruption, but, against her will,  
Make her confess so much.

*Mont.* Impossible.

*Clarín.* Then the disgrace be mine, the  
profit yours.

If that you think her chastity a rock  
Not to be moved or shaken, or hold me  
A flatterer of myself, or overweener,  
Let me pay for my foolery.

*Peri.* I'll engage  
Myself for a thousand.

*Nov.* I'll not out for a second.

*Mont.* I would gladly lose a third part for  
assurance  
No virgin can stand constant long.

*Clarín.* Leave that  
To the trial : let us to a notary,  
Draw the conditions, see the crowns de-  
posited,

And then I will not cry, St. Dennis for me !  
But—Love, blind archer, aid me !

*Peri.* Look you thrive ;

I would not be so jeer'd and hooted at,  
As you will be else.

*Clarín.* I will run the hazard. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in Leonora's House.*

*Enter Leonora and a Servant.*

*Serv.* He will not be denied.

*Leon.* Slave, beat him back.

I feed such whelps !—

*Serv.* Madam, I rattled him,  
Rattled him home.

*Leon.* Rattle him hence, you rascal,  
Or never see me more.

*Enter Cleremond.*

*Serv.* He comes : a sword !  
What would you have me do ? Shall I cry  
murder,

Or raise the constable ?

*Leon.* Hence, you shaking coward !

*Serv.* I am glad I am so got off : here's  
a round sum [*Looking at his money.*]  
For a few bitter words ! Be not shoo'k off,  
sir ;

I'll see none shall disturb you. [*Exit.*]

*Cler.* You might spare  
These frowns, good lady, on me ; they are  
useless,

I am shot through and through with your  
disdain,

And on my heart the darts of scorn so thick,  
That there's no vacant place left to receive.  
Another wound : their multitude is grown  
My best defence, and do confirm me that  
You cannot hurt me further.

*Leon.* Wert thou not  
Made up of impudence, and slaved to folly,  
Did any drop of noble blood remain  
In thy lustful veins, hadst thou or touch, or  
relish,

Of modesty, civility, or manners,  
Or but in thy deformed outside only  
Thou didst retain the essence of a man,

. . . so many . . .  
. . . . .

And loathing to thy person, thou wouldst  
not

Force from a blushing woman that rude  
language,

Thy baseness first made me acquainted with.

*Cler.* Now saint-like patience guard me!

*Leon.* I have heard

Of mountebanks, that to vent their drugs  
and oils,

Have so enured themselves to poison, that  
They could digest a venom'd toad, or spider,

Better than wholesome viands : in the list  
If such I hold thee ; for that bitterness

Of speech, reproof, and scorn, by her deli-  
vered

Whom thou professes to adore, and shake at,  
Which would deter all mankind but thyself,

Do nourish in these saucy hopes, with  
pleasure.

*Cler.* Hear but my just defence.

*Leon.* Yet, since thou art

So spaniel-like affected, and thy dotage

Increases from abuse and injury,  
That way I'll once more feast thee. Of all  
men

I ever saw yet, in my settled judgment,  
Spite of thy barber, tailor, and perfumer,

And thine adulterate and borrow'd helps,  
Thou art the ugliest creature ; and when  
trimm'd up

To the height, as thou imagin'st, in mine  
eyes,

A leper with a clap-dish, (to give notice  
He is infectious,) in respect of thee,

Appears a young Adonis.

*Cler.* You look on me  
In a false glass, madam.

*Leon.* Then thy dunghill mind,  
Suitable to the outside, never yet

Produced one gentle thought, knowing her  
want

Of faculties to put it into act.  
Thy courtship, as absurd as any zany's,

After a practis'd manner ; thy discourse,  
Though full of bombast phrase, never  
brought matter

Worthy the laughing at, much less the  
hearing.—

But I grow weary ; for, indeed, to speak thee,  
Thy ills I mean, and speak them to the full,

Would tire a thousand women's voluble  
tongues,

And twice so many lawyers'—for a farewell,  
I'll sooner clasp an incubus, or hug

A fork'd-tongued adder, than meet thy em-  
braces,

Which, as the devil, I fly from.

*Cler.* Now you have spent  
The utmost of your spleen, I would not say

Your malice, set off to the height with fiction,  
Allow me leave, (a poor request, which judges  
Seldom deny unto a man condemn'd,)

A little to complain : for, being censured,  
Or to extenuate, or excuse my guilt,

Were but to wash an Ethiop. How oft,  
with tears,

When the inhuman porter has forbid  
My entrance by your most severe commands,

Have these eyes wash'd your threshold !  
Did there ever

Come novelty to Paris, rich or rare,  
Which but as soon as known was not pre-  
sented,

How'er with frowns refused ? Have I not  
brought

The braveries of France before your window,  
To fight at barriers, or to break a lance,

Or, in their full career, to take the ring,  
To do you honour ? and then, being refused

To speak my grief, my arms, my impresses,  
The colours that I wore, in a dumb sorrow

Express'd how much I suffer'd in the rigour  
Of your displeasure.

*Leon.* Two months hence I'll have  
The

*Cler.* Stay, best madam,  
I am growing to a period.

*Leon.* Pray you do ;  
I here shall take a nap else, 'tis so pleasing.

*Cler.* Then only this : the voice you now  
contemn,

You once did swear was musical ; you have  
met too

These lips in a soft encounter, and have  
brought

An equal ardour with you : never lived  
A happier pair of lovers. I confess,

After you promised marriage, nothing want-  
ing

But a few days expired, to make me happy,  
My violent impatience of delay

Made me presume, and with some amorous  
force,

To ask a full fruition of those pleasures  
Which sacred Hymen to the world makes.

lawful,  
Before his torch was lighted ; in this only,  
You justly can accuse me.

*Leon.* Dar'st thou think  
That this offence can ever find a pardon,  
Unworthy as thou art !

*Cler.* But you most cruel,  
That, in your studied purpose of revenge,

Cast both divine and human laws behind you,  
And only see their rigour, not their mercy.

Offences of foul shape, by holy writ  
Are warranted remission, provided

That the delinquent undergo the penance

Imposed upon him by his confessor :  
But you, that should be mine, and only can  
Or punish or absolve me, are so far  
From doing me right, that you disdain to  
hear me.

*Leon.* Now I may catch him in my long-  
wish'd toils ;

My hate help me to work it ! [*Aside.*].—To  
what purpose,

Poor and pale spirited man, should I expect  
From thee the satisfaction of a wrong,  
Compared to which, the murder of a brother  
Were but a gentle injury ?

*Cler.* Witness, heaven,

All blessings hoped by good men, and all  
tortures

The wicked shake at, no saint left unsworn  
by,

That, uncompell'd, I here give up myself  
Wholly to your devotion : if I fail

To do whatever you please to command,  
To expiate my trespass to your honour,  
So that, the task perform'd, you likewise  
swear,

First to forgive, and after marry me,  
May I endure more sharp and lingering  
torments

Than ever tyrants found out ! may my friends  
With scorn, not pity, look upon my suffer-  
ings,

And at my last gasp, in the place of hope,  
Sorrow, despair, possess me !

*Leon.* You are caught,

Most miserable fool, but fit to be so ;—  
And 'tis but justice that thou art delivered  
Into her power that's sensible of a wrong,  
And glories to revenge it. Let me study  
What dreadful punishment, worthy my fury,  
I shall inflict upon thee ; all the malice  
Of injured women help me ! Death ? that's  
nothing,

'Tis, to a conscious wretch, a benefit,  
And not a penance ; else, on the next tree,  
For sport's sake I would make thee hang  
thyself.

*Cler.* What have I done ?

*Leon.* What cannot be recall'd,

To row for seven years in the Turkish galleys ?  
A flea-biting ! To be sold to a brothel,  
Or a common bagnio ? that's a trifle too !

Furies,  
The lashes of their whips pierce through the  
mind.

I'll imitate them :—I have it too.

*Cler.* Remember

You are a woman.

*Leon.* I have heard thee boast,

That of all blessings in the earth next me,  
The number of thy trusty, faithful friends,

Made up thy happiness : out of these, I  
charge thee,

And by thine own repeated oaths conjure thee,  
To kill the best deserfer. Do not start ;  
I'll have no other penance. Then to practise,  
To find some means he that deserves thee  
best,

By undertaking something others fly from :  
This done, I am thine.

*Cler.* But hear me.

*Leon.* Not a syllable :  
And till then, never see me. [*Exit.*]

*Cler.* I am lost,  
Foolishly lost and sunk by mine own base-  
ness :

I'll say only,

With a heart-breaking patience, yet not rave,  
Better the devil's than a woman's slave.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*A Room in Bellisant's  
House.*

*Enter Clarindore and Beaupré.*

*Clarin.* Nay, prithee, good Calista—

*Beau.* As I live, sir,

She is determined to be private, and charged  
me,

Till of herself she broke up her retirement,  
Not to admit a visitant.

*Clarin.* Thou art a fool,

And I must have thee learn to know thy  
strength ;

There never was a sure path to the mistress,  
But by her minister's help, which I will pay  
for :

But yet this is but trash ; hark in thine ear—  
By love ! I like thy person, and will make  
Full payment that way ; he thou wise.

*Beau.* Like me, sir !

One of my dark complexion !

*Clarin.* I am serious :

The curtains drawn, and envious light shut  
out,

The soft touch heightens appetite, and takes  
more

Than colour, Venus' dressing, in the day time,  
But never thought on in her midnight revels.

Come, I must have thee mine.

*Beau.* But how to serve you ?

*Clarin.* Be speaking still my praises to thy  
lady,

How much I love and languish for her  
bounties :

You may remember too, how many madams  
Are rivals for me, and, in way of caution,  
Say you have heard, when I was wild, how  
dreadful

My name was to a profess'd courtesan,  
Still asking more than she could give—



*Enter Bellisant.*

*Beau.* My lady!

*Bell.* Be within call:—

[*Aside, to the Servants within.*

How now, Clarindore,

Courting my servant! Nay, 'tis not my envy—  
You now express yourself a complete lover,  
That, for variety's sake, if she be woman,  
Can change discourse with any.

*Clarín.* All are foils

I practise on, but when you make me happy  
In doing me that honour: I desired  
To hear her speak in the Morisco tongue;  
Troth, 'tis a pretty language.

*Bell.* Yes, to dance to:—

Look to those sweetmeats. [*Exit Beaupré.*

*Clarín.* How! by heaven, she aims

To speak with me in private! [*Aside.*

*Bell.* Come, sit down;

Let's have some merry conference.

*Clarín.* In which

It  
That my whole life employ'd to do you  
service,

At no part can deserve.

*Bell.* If you esteem it

At such a rate, do not abuse my bounty,  
Or comment on the granted privacy, further  
Than what the text may warrant; so you shall  
Destroy what I have built.

*Clarín.* I like not this. [*Aside.*

*Bell.* This new-erected Parliament of  
Love,

It seems, has frighted hence my visitants:  
How spend Montrose and Perigot their hours?  
Novall and Cleremond vanish'd in a moment;  
I like your constancy yet.

*Clarín.* That's good again;

She hath restored all: [*Aside.*—Pity them,  
good madam;

The splendour of your house and entertain-  
ment,

Enrich'd with all perfections by yourself,

Is too, too glorious for their dim eyes:

You are above their element; modest fools,

That only dare admire! and bar them from

Comparing of these eyes to the fairest flowers,

Giving you Juno's majesty, Pallas' wit,

Diana's hand, and Thetis' pretty foot;

Or, when you dance, to swear that Venus leads

The Loves and Graces from the Idalian green,

And such hyperboles stolen out of playbooks,

They would stand all day mute, and, as you

were

Some curious picture only to be look'd on,

Presume no further.

*Bell.* Pray you, keep your distance,

And grow not rude.

*Clarín.* Rude, lady! manly boldness  
Cannot deserve that name; I have studied  
you,

And love hath made an easy gloss upon  
The most abstruse and hidden mysteries  
Which you may keep conceal'd. You well  
may praise

A bashful suitor, that is ravish'd with

A feather of your fan, or if he gain

A riband from your shoe, cries out, *Ni!*

*ultra!*

*Bell.* And what would satisfy you?

*Clarín.* Not such poor trifles,

I can assure you, lady. Do not I see

You are gamesome, young, and active? that

you love

A man that, of himself, comes boldly on,

That will not put your modesty to trouble,

To teach him how to feed, when meat's

before him!

That knows that you are flesh and blood, a

creature,

And born with such affections, that, like me,

Now I have opportunity, and your favour,

Will not abuse my fortune? Should I stand

now

Licking my fingers, cry Ah me! then kneel,

And swear you were a goddess, kiss the

skirts

Of your proud garments, when I were gone,

I am sure

I should be kindly laugh'd at for a coxcomb;

The story made the subject of your mirth,

At your next meeting, when you sit in

council,

Among the beauties.

*Bell.* Is this possible?

All due respect forgotten!

*Clarín.* Hang respect!

Are we not alone? See, I dare touch this

hand,

And without adoration unglove it.

A spring of youth is in this palm; here

Cupid,

The moisture turn'd to diamonds, heads his

arrows:

The far-famed English Bath, or German

Spa,

One drop of this will purchase. Shall this

nectar

Run useless, then, to waste? or . . .

these lips,

That open like the morn, breathing perfumes

On such as dare approach them, be un-

touch'd?

They must,—nay, 'tis in vain to make resis-

tance,—

Be often kiss'd and tasted: You seem angry

At . . . I have displeas'd you.

*Bell.* [to the Servants within.] . . .  
And come prepared, as if some Africk monster,  
By force, had broke into my house.

*Enter Servants with drawn swords.*

*Clarín.* How's this?

*Bell.* Circle him round with death, and if  
he stir,

Or but presume to speak, till I allow it,  
His body be the navel to the wheel,  
In which your rapiers, like so many spokes,  
Shall meet and fix themselves.

*Clarín.* Were I off with life,  
This for my wager!

*Bell.* Villain, shake and tremble  
At my just anger! Which, of all my actions,  
Confined in virtuous limits, hath given life  
And birth to this presumption? Hast thou  
ever

Observed in me a wanton look or gesture,  
Not suiting with a virgin? Have I been  
Prodigal in my favours, or given hopes,  
To nourish such attempts? swear, and swear  
truly,

What in thy soul thou think'st of me.

*Clarín.* As of one  
Made up of chastity; and only tried,  
Which I repent, what this might work upon  
you.

*Bell.* The intent deserves not death; but,  
sirrah, know

'Tis in my power to look thee dead.

*Clarín.* 'Tis granted.

*Bell.* I am not so cruel; yet, for this  
insolence,

Forbear my house for ever: if you are hot,  
You, ruffian-like, may force a parting kiss,  
As from a common gamester.

*Clarín.* I am cool:—

She's a virago. [*Aside.*]

*Bell.* Or you may go boast,  
How bravely you came on, to your com-  
panions;

I will not bribe your silence: no reply.—  
Now thrust him headlong out of doors, and  
see

He never more pass my threshold. [*Exit.*]

*Clarín.* This comes of  
My daring: all hell's plagues light on the  
proverb

That says, *Faint heart*—but it is stale.

*Serv.* Pray you walk, sir,  
We must shew you the way else.

*Clarín.* Be not too officious.  
I am no bar for you to try your strength on.—  
Sit quietly by this disgrace I cannot:

Some other course I must be forced to take,  
Not for my wager now, but honour's sake.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Chamont's House.*

*Enter Chamont, Perigot, Novall, Dinant,  
Lamira, and Clarinda.*

*Peri.* 'Twas prince-like entertainment.

*Cham.* You o'erprize it.

*Din.* Your cheerful looks made every dish  
a feast,

And 'tis that crowns a welcome.

*Lam.* For my part,

I hold society and honest mirth  
The greatest blessing of a civil life.

*Cla.* Without good company, indeed, all  
dainties

Lose their true relish, and, like painted  
grapes,

Are only seen, not tasted.

*Nov.* By this light,  
She speaks well, too! I'll have a fling at  
her:

She is no fit electuary for a doctor:  
A coarser julap may well cool his worship;  
This cordial is for gallants. [*Aside.*]

*Cham.* Let me see,  
The night grows old: pray you often be my  
guests.

Such as dare come unto a . . .  
table,

Although not crack'd with curious delicates,  
Have liberty to command it as their own:  
I may do the like with you, when you are  
married.

*Peri.* Yes, 'tis likely,  
When there's no forage to be had abroad,  
Nor credulous husbands left to father chil-  
dren

Of bachelors' begetting; when court wives  
Are won to grant variety is not pleasing,  
And that a friend at a pinch is useless to  
them,

I . . . but till then

*Cham.* You have a merry time of it;—  
But we forget ourselves;—Gallants, good  
night.

Good master doctor, when your leisure  
serves,

Visit my house; when we least need their  
art,

Physicians look most lovely.

*Din.* All that's in me,  
Is at your lordship's service. Monsieur  
Perigot,

Monsieur Novall, in what I may be useful,  
Pray you command me.

*Nov.* We'll wait on you home.

*Din.* By no means, sir; good night.

[*Exeunt all but Novall and Perigot.*]

*Nov.* The knave is jealous.

*Peri.* 'Tis a disease few doctors cure themselves of.

*Nov.* I would he were my patient!

*Peri.* Do but practise

To get his wife's consent, the way is easy.

*Nov.* You may conclude so; for myself, I grant

I never was so taken with a woman,  
Nor ever had less hope.

*Peri.* Be not dejected;

Follow but my directions, she's your own:  
I'll set thee in a course that shall not fail.—  
I like thy choice; but more of that here-  
after:

Adultery is a safe and secret sin;  
The purchase of a maidenhead seldom quits  
The danger and the labour: build on this,  
He that puts home shall find all women  
coming,

The frozen Bellissant ever excepted.

Could you believe the fair wife of Chamont,  
A lady never tainted in her honour,  
Should, at the first assault, (for till this night  
I never courted her,) yield up the fort  
That she hath kept so long?

*Nov.* 'Tis wondrous strange.

What winning language used you?

*Peri.* Thou art a child;

'Tis action, not fine speeches, take a woman.  
Pleasure's their heaven; and he that gives  
assurance

That he hath strength to tame their hot  
desires,

Is the prevailing orator: she but saw me  
Jump over six join'd stools, and after cut  
Some forty capers; tricks that never miss,  
In a magnificent masque, to draw the eyes  
Of all the beauties in the court upon me,  
But straight she wrung my hand, trod on  
my toe,

And said my mistress could not but be happy  
In such an able servant. I replied  
Bluntly, I was ambitious to be hers;  
And she, nor coy, nor shy, straight enter-  
tain'd me:

I begg'd a private meeting, it was granted,  
The time and place appointed.

*Nov.* But remember,

Chamont is your friend.

*Peri.* Now out upon thee, puisne!

As if a man so far e'er loved that title,  
But 'twas much more delight and tickling to  
him,

To hug himself, and say, This is my cuckold!

*Nov.* But did he not observe thee?

*Peri.* Though he did,

As I am doubtful, I will not desist;  
The danger will endear the sport.

*Enter Clarindore.*

*Nov.* Forbear;

Here's Clarindore.

*Peri.* We will be merry with him;  
I have heard his entertainment. Join but  
with me,

And we will jeer this self-opinion'd fool  
Almost to madness.

*Nov.* He's already grown  
Exceeding melancholy, and some say  
That's the first step to frenzy.

*Peri.* I'll upon him.—  
Save you, good monsieur! no reply? grown  
proud

Of your success? it is not well

*Clar.* 'Tis come out; these goslings  
Have heard of my

*Nov.* We gratefully,  
Though we pay for't, your happy entrance to  
The certain favours, nay, the sure possession,  
Of madam Bellissant.

*Clar.* The young whelp too!—

'Tis well, exceeding well.

*Peri.* 'Tis so, with you, sir;  
But bear it modestly, faith it will become you:  
And being arrived at such a lordly revenue,  
As this your happy match instates you with,  
Two thousand crowns from me, and from  
Novall,

Though we almost confess the wager lost,  
Will be a small addition.

*Nov.* You mistake him;  
Nor do I fear, out of his noble nature,  
But that he may be won to license us  
To draw our venture.

*Clar.* Spend your frothy wits,  
Do, do; you snarl, but hurt not.

*Nov.* O, give leave

To losers for to speak.

*Peri.* 'Tis a strange fate  
Some men are born to, and a happy star  
That reign'd at your nativity! it could not  
be else,

A lady of a constancy like a rock,  
Not to be moved, and held impregnable,  
Should yield at the first assault!

*Nov.* 'Tis the reward

Of a brave daring spirit.

*Peri.* Tush! we are dull;

Abuse our opportunities.

*Clar.* Have you done yet?

*Peri.* When he had privacy of discourse,  
he knew

How to use that advantage; did he stand  
Fawning, and crouching? no; he ran up  
boldly,

Told her what she was born to, ruffled her,  
Kiss'd her, and toused her:—all the passages

Are at court already; and, 'tis said, a patent  
Is granted him, if any maid be chaste,  
For him to humble her, and a new name  
given him,

The scornful-virgin tamer.

*Clarín.* I may tame

Your buffoon tongues, if you proceed.

*Nov.* No anger.

I have heard that Bellisant was so taken with  
Your manly courage, that she straight pre-  
pared you

A sumptuous banquet.

*Peri.* Yet his enemies

Report it was a blanket.

*Nov.* Malice! malice!

She was shewing him her chamber too, and  
call'd for

Perfumes, and cambric sheets.

*Peri.* When, see the luck on't!

Against her will, her most unmannerly  
grooms,

For so 'tis rumour'd, took him by the  
shoulders,

And thrust him out of doors.

*Nov.* Faith, sir, resolve us;

How was it? we would gladly know the truth,  
To stop the mouth of calumny.

*Clarín.* Troth, sir, I'll tell you:

One took me by the nose thus,—and a second  
Made bold with me thus—but one word  
more, you shall

Feel new expressions—and so, my gentle  
boobies,

Farewell, and be hang'd. [Exit.]

*Nov.* We have nettled him.

*Peri.* Had we stung him to death, it were  
but justice,

An overweening braggard!

*Nov.* This is nothing

To the doctor's wife.

*Peri.* Come, we'll consult of it,

And suddenly.

*Nov.* I feel a woman's longing

Till I am at it.

*Peri.* Never fear; she's thine own, boy. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II.—A Street.

*Enter Cleremond.*

*Cler.* What have my sins been, heaven?  
yet thy great pleasure

Must not be argued. Was wretch ever bound  
On such a black adventure, in which only

To wish to prosper is a greater curse  
Than to

Of reason, understanding, and true judgment.  
'Twere a degree of comfort to myself

I were stark mad; or, like a beast of prey,  
Prick'd on by griping hunger, all my thoughts

And faculties were wholly taken up  
To cloy my appetite, and could look no  
further:

But I rise up a new example of  
Calamity, transcending all before me;  
And I should gild my misery with false com-  
forts,

If I compared it with an Indian slave's,  
That, with incessant labour to search out  
Some unknown mine, dives almost to the  
centre;

And, if then found, not thank'd of his proud  
master.

But this, if put into an equal scale  
With my unparalleled fortune, will weigh  
nothing;

For from a cabinet of the choicest jewels  
That mankind e'er was rich in, whose least  
gem

All treasure of the earth, or what is hid  
In Neptune's watery bosom, cannot pur-  
chase,

I must seek out the richest, fairest, purest,  
And when by proof 'tis known it holds the  
value,

As soon as found destroy it. O most cruel!  
And yet, when I consider of the many

That have professed themselves my friends,  
and vow'd

Their lives were not their own, when my en-  
gagements

Should summon them to be at my devotion,  
Not one endures the test; I almost grow

Of the world's received opinion, that holds  
Friendship but a mere name, that binds no  
further

Than to the altar—to retire with safety.

Here comes Montrose.

*Enter Montrose and Beaupré.*

What sudden joy transports him?  
I never saw man rapt so.

*Mon.* Purse and all,  
And 'tis too little, though it were cramm'd full  
With crowns of the sun. O blessed, blessed  
paper!

But made so by the touch of her fair hand.  
What shall I answer? Say, I am her creature.

Or, if thou canst find out a word, that may  
Express subjection in an humbler style,

Use it, I priethee; add too, her commands  
Shall be with as much willingness perform'd,

As I in this fold, this, receive her favours.  
*Beau.* I shall return so much.

*Mont.* And that two hours  
Shall bring me to attend her.

*Beau.* With all care  
And circumstance of service from yourself,  
I will deliver it.

*Mont.* I am still your debtor.

[*Exit Beaupré.*

*Cler.* I read the cause now clearly; I'll slip by:

For though, even at this instant, he should prove

Himself, which others' falsehood makes me doubt,

That constant and best friend I go in quest of,  
It were inhuman in their birth to strangle  
His promising hopes of comfort.

*Mont.* Cleremond

Pass by me as a stranger! at a time too  
When I am filled with such excess of joy,  
So swollen and surfeited with true delight,  
That had I not found out a friend, to whom  
I might impart them, and so give them vent,  
In their abundance they would force a pas-  
sage,

And let out life together! Prithee, bear,  
For friendship's sake, a part of that sweet  
burthen

Which I shrink under; and when thou hast  
read

Fair Bellisant subscribed, so near my name  
too,

Observe but that,—thou must, with me,  
confess,

There cannot be room in one lover's heart  
Capacious enough to entertain  
Such multitudes of pleasures.

*Cler.* I joy with you,

Let that suffice, and envy not your blessings;  
May they increase! Farewell, friend.

*Mont.* How! no more?

By the snow white hand that writ these  
characters,

It is a breach to courtesy and manners,  
So coldly to take notice of his good,  
Whom you call friend! See further: here  
she writes

That she is truly sensible of my sufferings,  
And not alone vouchsafes to call me servant,  
But to employ me in a cause that much  
concerns her in her honour; there's a favour!  
Are you yet stupid?—and that, two hours  
hence,

She does expect me in the private walks  
Neighbouring the Louvre: cannot all this  
move you?

I could be angry. A tenth of these bounties  
But promised to you from Leonora,  
To witness my affection to my friend,  
In his behalf had taught me to forget,  
All mine own miseries.

*Cler.* Do not misinterpret

This coldness in me; for alas! Montrose,  
I am a thing so made up of affliction,  
So every way condemn'd, that I conclude

My sorrows are infectious; and my company,  
Like such as have foul ulcers running on them,  
To be with care avoided. May your happiness,  
In the favour of the matchless Bellisant,  
Hourly increase! and—my best wishes guard  
you!

'Tis all that I can give.

*Mont.* You must not leave me.

*Cler.* Indeed I must and will; mine own  
engagements  
Call me away.

*Mont.* What are they? I presume  
There cannot be a secret of that weight,  
You dare not trust me with; and should you  
doubt me,

I justly might complain that my affection  
Is placed unfortunately.

*Cler.* I know you are honest;  
And this is such a business, and requires  
Such sudden execution, that it cannot  
Fall in the compass of your will, or power,  
To do me a friend's office. In a word,  
On terms that near concern me in mine  
honour,

I am to fight the quarrel, mortal too,  
The time some two hours hence, the place  
ten miles

Distant from Paris; and when you shall know  
I yet am unprovided of a second,  
You will excuse my sudden parting from you.  
Farewell, Montrose!

*Mont.* Not so; I am the man  
Will run the danger with you; and must  
tell you,

That, while I live, it was a wrong to seek  
Another's arm to second you. Lead the way;  
My horse stands ready.

*Cler.* I confess 'tis noble,  
For you to offer this, but it were base  
In me to accept it.

*Mont.* Do not scorn me, friend.

*Cler.* No; but admire and honour you;  
and from that  
Serious consideration, must refuse  
The tender of your aid. France knows you  
valiant,

And that you might, in single opposition,  
Fight for a crown; but millions of reasons  
Forbid me your assistance. You forget  
Your own designs; being, the very minute  
I am to encounter with mine enemy,  
To meet your mistress, such a mistress too,  
Whose favour you so many years have sought:  
And will you then, when she vouchsafes  
access,

Nay more, invites you, check at her fair offer?  
Or shall it be repeated, to my shame,  
For my own ends I robb'd you of a fortune  
Princes might envy? Can you even hope

She ever will receive you to her presence,  
If you neglect her now?—Be wise, dear friend,  
And, in your prodigality of goodness,  
Do not undo yourself. Live long and happy,  
And leave me to my dangers.

*Mont.* Cleremond,

I have with patience heard you, and consider'd  
The strength of your best arguments ;  
weigh'd the dangers

I run in mine own fortunes : but again,  
When I oppose the sacred name of friend  
Against those joys I have so long pursued,  
Neither the beauty of fair Bellisant,  
Her wealth, her virtues, can prevail so far,  
In such a desperate case as this, to leave  
you.—

To have it to posterity recorded,  
At such a time as this I proved true gold,  
And current in my friendship, shall be to me  
A thousand mistresses, and such embraces  
As leave no sting behind them ; therefore,  
on :

I am resolved, unless you beat me off,  
I will not leave you.

*Cler.* Oh ! here is a jewel

Fit for the cabinet of the greatest monarch !  
But I of all men miserable——

*Mont.* Come, be cheerful ;

Good fortune will attend us.

*Cler.* That, to me,

To have the greatest blessing, a true friend,  
Should be the greatest curse!—Be yet advised.

*Mont.* It is in vain.

*Cler.* That e'er I should have cause

To wish you had loved less !

*Mont.* The hour draws on :

We'll talk more as we ride.

*Cler.* Of men most wretched ! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Room in Bellisant's House.*

*Enter Bellisant and Beaupré.*

*Bell.* Nay, pray you, dry your eyes, or  
your sad story,

Whose every accent still, methinks, I hear,  
'Twas with such passion, and such grief deliver'd,

Will make mine bear yours company. All  
my fear is,

The rigorous repulse this worst of men,  
False, perjured Clarindore—I am sick to  
name him—

Received at his last visit, will deter him  
From coming again.

*Beau.* No ; he's resolved to venture ;  
And has bribed me, with hazard of your anger,  
To get him access, but in another shape :  
The time prefix'd draws near too.

*Bell.* 'Tis the better. [*Knocking within.*  
One knocks.

*Beau.* I am sure 'tis he.

*Bell.* Convey him in ;

But do it with a face of fear :

[*Exit Beaupré.*

I cannot

Resolve yet with what looks to entertain him.  
You Powers that favour innocence, and  
revenge

Wrongs done by such as scornfully deride  
Your awful names, inspire me !

[*Walks aside.*

*Re-enter Beaupré with Clarindore disguised.*

*Beau.* Sir, I hazard

My service, in this action.

*Clar.* Thou shalt live

To be the mistress of thyself and others,  
If that my projects lit : all's at the stake now ;  
And as the die falls, I am made most bappy,  
Or past expression wretched.

*Bell.* Ha ! who's that ?

What bold intruder usher you ? This rudeness !—

From whence ? what would he ?

*Beau.* He brings letters, madam,

As he says, from lord Chamont.

*Clar.* How her frowns fright me !

*Bell.* From lord Chamont ? Are they of  
such import,

That you, before my pleasure be enquired,  
Dare bring the bearer to my private chamber ?  
No more of this : your packet, sir ?

*Clar.* The letters

Deliver'd to my trust and faith are writ  
In such mysterious and dark characters,  
As will require the judgment of your soul,  
More than your eye, to read and understand  
them.

*Bell.* What riddle's this ? [*Discovering*

*Clar.*—]—Ha ! am I then contemn'd ?

Dare you do this, presuming on my soft  
And gentle nature ?—Fear not, I must shew  
A seeming anger. [*Aside to Beaupré.*—

What new boist'rous courtship,

After your late loose language, and forced  
kiss,

Come you to practise ? I know none be-  
yond it.

If you imagine that you may commit

A rape in mine own house, and that my  
servants

Will stand tame lookers on——

*Clar.* If I bring with me

One thought, but of submission and sorrow,  
Or nourish any hope, but that your goodness  
May please to sign my pardon, may I perish  
In your displeasure ! which, to me, is more

Than fear of hell hereafter. I confess,  
The violence I offered to your sweetness,  
In my presumption, with lips impure,  
To force a touch from yours, a greater crime  
Than if I should have mix'd lascivious flames  
With those chaste fires that burn at Dian's  
altar.

That 'twas a plot of treason to your virtues,  
To think you could be tempted, or believe  
You were not fashion'd in a better mould,  
And made of purer clay, than other women.  
Since you are, then, the phœnix of your time,  
And e'en now, while you bless the earth,  
partake

Of their angelical essence, imitate  
Heaven's aptness to forgive, when mercy's  
sued for,

And once more take me to your grace and  
favour.

*Bell.* What charms are these! What an  
enchanting tongue!

What pity 'tis, one that can speak so well,  
Should, in his actions, be so ill!

*Beau.* Take heed,  
Lose not yourself.

*Bell.* So well, sir, you have pleaded,  
And like an advocate, in your own cause,  
That, though your guilt were greater, I ac-  
quit you,

The fault no more remember'd; and for proof,  
My heart partakes in my tongue, thus seal  
your pardon; [*Kisses him.*]

And with this willing favour (which forced  
from me,  
Call'd on my anger) make atonement with  
you.

*Clarín.* If I dream now, O, may I never  
wake,

But slumber thus ten ages!

*Bell.* Till this minute,  
You ne'er to me look'd lovely.

*Clarín.* How!

*Bell.* Nor have I

E'er seen a man, in my opinion, worthy  
The bounty I vouchsafe you; therefore fix  
here,

And make me understand that you can bear  
Your fortune modestly.

*Clarín.* I find her coming:

This kiss was but the prologue to the play,  
And not to seek the rest, were cowardice.  
Help me, dissimulation! [*Aside.*—Pardon,  
madam,

Though now, when I should put on cheerful  
looks,

In being blest with what I durst not hope for,  
I change the comic scene, and do present  
you

With a most tragic spectacle.

*Bell.* Heaven avert  
This prodigy! What mean you?

*Clarín.* To confirm,  
In death, how truly I have loved. I grant  
Your favours done me, yield this benefit,  
As to make way for me to pass in peace  
To my long rest; what I have tasted from you,  
Informs me only of the much I want:  
For in your pardon, and the kiss vouchsafed  
me,

You did but point me out a fore-right way  
To lead to certain happiness, and then will'd  
me

To move no further. Pray you, excuse me,  
therefore,  
Though I desire to end a lingering torment.  
And, if you please, with your fair hand, to  
make me

A sacrifice to your chastity, I will meet  
The instrument you make choice of, with  
more fervour

Than ever Cæsar did, to hug the mistress,  
He doated on, plumed Victory: but if that  
You do abhor the office, as too full  
Of cruelty, and horror, yet give leave,  
That, in your presence, I myself may be  
Both priest and offering. [*Draws his sword.*]

*Bell.* Hold, hold, frantic man!  
Theshrine of love shall not be bathed in blood.  
Women, though fair, were made to bring  
forth men,

And not destroy them; therefore, hold, I say!  
I had a mother, and she look'd upon me  
As on a true epitome of her youth:  
Nor can I think I am forbid the comfort  
To bring forth little models of myself,  
If heaven be pleased (my nuptial joys per-  
form'd)

To make me fruitful.

*Clarín.* Such celestial music  
Ne'er blest these ears. O! you have argued  
better

For me, than I could for myself.

*Bell.* For you!

What, did I give you hope to be my husband?

*Clarín.* Fallen off again! [*Aside.*]

*Bell.* Yet since you have given sure proof  
Of love and constancy, I'll unmask those  
thoughts,

That long have been conceal'd; I am yours,  
but how?

In an honourable way.

*Clarín.* I were more than base,  
Should I desire you otherwise.

*Bell.* True affection

Needs not a contract: and it were to doubt me,  
To engage me further; yet, my vow expired,  
Which is, to live a virgin for a year,  
Challenge my promise.

*Clarín.* For a year! O, madam! Play not the tyranness; do not give me hopes, And in a moment change them to despair. A year! alas, this body, that's all fire, If you refuse to quench it with your favour, Will in three days be cinders; and your mercy Will come too late then. Dearest lady, marriage

Is part of a ceremony; and a hurtful vow Is in the breach of it better commended, Than in the keeping. O! I burn, I burn; And if you take not pity, I must fly To my last refuge. [*Offers to stab himself.*]

*Bell.* Hold! Say I could yield This night, to satisfy you to the full, And you should swear, until the wedding day, To keep the favours I now grant conceal'd; You would be talking.

*Clarín.* May my tongue rot out, then!

*Bell.* Or boast to your companions of your conquest, And of my easiness.

*Clarín.* I'll endure the rack first.

*Bell.* And, having what you long for, cast me off,

As you did madam Beaupré.

*Clarín.* May the earth

First gape, and swallow me!

*Bell.* I'll press you no further.

Go in, your chamber's ready: if you have A bedfellow, so: but silence I enjoin you, And liberty to leave you when I please: I blush, if you reply.

*Clarín.* Till now ne'er happy! [*Exit.*]

*Beau.* What means your ladyship?

*Bell.* Do not ask, but do

As I direct you: though as yet we tread A rough and thorny way, faint not; the ends I hope to reach shall make a large amends. [*Exeunt.*]

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I.—A Room in Dinant's House.

*Enter Novall and Dinant.*

*Din.* You are welcome first, sir; and that spoke, receive.

A faithful promise, all that art, or long Experience, hath taught me, shall enlarge Themselves for your recovery.

*Nov.* Sir, I thank you,

As far as a weak, sick, and unable man Has power to express; but what wants in my tongue,

My hand (for yet my fingers feel no gout) Shall speak in this dumb language.

[*Gives him his purse.*]

*Din.* You are too magnificent.

*Nov.* Fie! no, sir; health is, sure, a precious jewel, We cannot buy it too dear.

*Din.* Take comfort, sir; I find not, by your urine, nor your pulse, Or any outward symptom, that you are In any certain danger.

*Nov.* Oh! the more my fear: Infirmities that are known are . . . cured,

But when the causes of them are conceal'd, As these of mine are, doctor, they prove mortal:

Howe'er, I'll not forget you while I live, Do but your parts.

*Din.* Sir, they are at your service. I'll give you some preparatives, to instruct me Of your inward temper; then, as I find cause,

Some gentle purge.

*Nov.* Yes, I must purge; I die else: But where, dear doctor, you shall not find out.

This is a happy entrance, may it end well! I'll mount your nightcap, Doddipol. [*Aside.*]

*Din.* In what part, (We are sworn to secrecy, and you must be free,)

Do you find your greatest agony?

*Nov.* Oh! I have Strange motions on the sudden; villainous tumours,

That rise, then fall, then rise again; oh, doctor!

Not to be shewn or named.

*Din.* Then, in my judgment, You had best leave Paris: choose some fresher air;

That does help much in physic.

*Nov.* By no means. Here, in your house, or no where, you must cure me:

The eye of the master fats the horse; and when

His doctor's by, the patient may drink wine In a fit of a burning fever: for your presence Works more than what you minister. Take physic,

Attended on by ignorant grooms, mere strangers

To your directions, I must hazard life, And you your reputation! whereas, sir,

I hold your house a college of your art, And every boy you keep, by you instructed, A pretty piece of a Galenist: then the females,

From your most fair wife to your kitchen drudge,

Are so familiar with your learned courses,



That, to an herb, they know to make thin  
broth ?

Or, when occasion serves, to cheer the heart,  
And such ingredient I shall have most need of,  
How many cocks o' the game make a strong  
cullis,

Or pheasant's eggs a caudle.

*Din.* I am glad

To hear you argue with such strength.

*Enter Clarinda, and whispers Dinant.*

*Nov.* A flash, sir :

But now I feel my fit again.—She is  
Made up of all perfection ; any danger  
That leads to the enjoying so much sweetness  
Is pleasure at the height : I am ravish'd with  
The mere imagination. O happiness !—

[*Aside.*

*Din.* How's this ! One from the duke  
Nemours ?

*Cl.* Yes, sir.

*Din.* 'Tis rank :

The sight of my wife hath forced him to  
forget

To counterfeit : [*Aside.*]—I now guess at  
your sickness,

And if I fit you not—

*Cl.* The gentleman stays you.

*Din.* I come to him presently ; in the  
meantime, wife,

Be careful of this monsieur ; nay, no coyness,  
You may salute him boldly ; his pale lips  
Enchant not in the touch.

*Nov.* Hers do, I'm sure.

*Din.* Kiss him again.

*Cl.* Sir, this is more than modest.

*Din.* Modest ! why, fool, desire is dead  
in him :

Call it a charitable, pious work,  
If it refresh his spirits.

*Nov.* Yes, indeed, sir.

I find great ease in it.

*Din.* Mark that ! and would you

Deny a sick man comfort ? meat's against

. . . . . physick, must be granted too,  
. . . . . wife . . . . . you shall,

In person, wait on him ; nay, hang not off,  
I say you shall : this night, with your own  
hands,

I'll have you air his bed, and when he eats  
Of what you have prepared, you shall sit by  
him,

And, with some merry chat, help to repair  
Decayed appetite ; watch by him when he  
slumbers ;

Nay, play his page's part : more, I durst  
trust you,

Were this our wedding day, you yet a virgin,  
To be his bedfellow ; for well I know

Old Priam's impotence, or Nestor's hernia is  
Herculean activeness, if but compared  
To his debility : put him to his oath,  
He'll swear he can do nothing.

*Nov.* Do ! O no, sir ;

I am past the thought of it.

*Din.* But how do you like

The method I prescribe ?

*Nov.* Beyond expression :

Upon the mere report I do conceive

Hope of recovery.

*Cl.* Are you mad ?

*Din.* Peace, fool.

This night you shall take a cordial to  
strengthen

Your feeble limbs :—'twill cost ten crowns a  
draught.

*Nov.* No matter, sir.

*Din.* To-morrow you shall walk

To see my garden ; then my wife shall show  
you

The choice rooms of my house ; when you  
are weary,

Cast yourself on her couch.

*Nov.* Oh, divine doctor !

What man in health would not be sick, on  
purpose

To be your patient ?

*Din.* Come, sir, to your chamber ;

And now I understand where your disease  
lies,

(Nay, lead him by the hand,) doubt not I'll  
cure you. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*An open part of the Country  
near Paris.*

*Enter Cleremond and Montrose.*

*Cler.* This is the place.

*Mont.* An even piece of ground,  
Without advantage ; but be jocund, friend :  
The honour to have entered first the field,  
However we come off, is ours.

*Cler.* I need not,  
So well I am acquainted with your valour,  
To dare, in a good cause, as much as man,  
Lend you encouragement ; and should I add,  
Your power to do, which Fortune, howe'er  
blind,

Hath ever seconded, I cannot doubt  
But victory still sits upon your sword,  
And must not now forsake you.

*Mont.* You shall see me  
Come boldly up ; nor will I shame your  
cause,

By parting with an inch of ground not  
bought

With blood on my part.

*Cler.* 'Tis not to be question'd :

That which I would entreat, (and pray you grant it,)

Is, that you would forget your usual softness, Your foe being at your mercy; it hath been A custom in you, which I dare not praise, Having disarm'd your enemy of his sword, To tempt your fate, by yielding it again; Then run a second hazard.

*Mont.* When we encounter A noble foe, we cannot be too noble.

*Cler.* That I confess; but he that's now to oppose you,

I know for an archvillain; one that hath lost All feeling of humanity, one that hates Goodness in others, 'cause he's ill himself; A most ungrateful wretch, (the name's too gentle,

All attributes of wickedness cannot reach him,)

Of whom to have deserved, beyond example, Or precedent of friendship, is a wrong Which only death can satisfy.

*Mont.* You describe A monster to me.

*Cler.* True, Montrose, he is so. Afric, though fertile of strange prodigies, Never produced his equal! be wise, therefore, And if he fall into your hands, dispatch him: Pity to him is cruelty. The sad father, That sees his son stung by a snake to death, May, with more justice, stay his vengeful hand,

And let the worm escape, than you vouchsafe him

A minute to repent: for 'tis a slave So sold to hell and mischief; that a traitor To his most lawful prince, a church-robber, A parricide, who, when his garners are Cramm'd with the purest grain, suffers his parents,

Being old, and weak, to starve for want of bread;

Compared to him, are innocent.

*Mont.* I ne'er heard Of such a cursed nature; if long-lived, He would infect mankind: rest you assured, He finds from me small courtesy.

*Cler.* And expect As little from him: blood is that he thirsts for,

Not honourable wounds.

*Mont.* I would I had him Within my sword's length!

*Cler.* Have thy wish: Thou hast!  
[Cleremond draws his sword.]

Nay, draw thy sword, and suddenly; I am That monster, temple-robber, parricide, Ingrateful wretch; friend-hater, or what else Makes up the perfect figure of the devil,

Should he appear like man. Banish amazement,

And call thy ablest spirits up to guard thee From him that's turn'd a Fury. I am made Her minister, whose cruelty but named, Would with more horror strike the pale-cheek'd stars,

Than all those dreadful words which conjurers use,

To fright their damn'd familiars. Look not on me

As I am Cleremond; I have parted with The essence that was his, and entertain'd The soul of some fierce tigress, or a wolf's New-hang'd for human slaughter, and 'tis fit: I could not else be an apt instrument To bloody Leonora.

*Mont.* To my knowledge I never wrong'd her.

*Cler.* Yes, in being a friend To me she hated, my best friend; her malice Would look no lower:—and for being such, By her commands, Montrose, I am to kill thee.

Oh, that thou hadst, like others, been all words, And no performance! or that thou hadst made

Some little stop in thy career of kindness! Why would'st thou, to confirm the name of friend,

Despise the favours of fair Bellisant, And all those certain joys that waited for thee?

Snatch at this fatal offer of a second, Which others fled from?—'Tis in vain to mourn now,

When there's no help; and therefore, good Montrose,

Rouse thy most manly parts, and think thou stand'st now

A champion for more than king or country; Since, in thy fall, goodness itself must suffer. Remember too, the baseness of the wrong . . . friendship; let it edge thy sword, And kill compassion in thee; and forget not I will take all advantages: and so, Without reply have at thee!

[*They fight.* Cleremond falls.]

*Mont.* See, how weak An ill cause is! you are already fallen: What can you look for now?

*Cler.* Fool, use thy fortune: And so he counsels thee, that, if we had Changed places, instantly would have cut thy throat, Or digg'd thy heart out.

*Mont.* In requital of That savage purpose, I must pity you;

Witness these tears, not tears of joy for conquest,

But of true sorrow for your misery.

Live, O live, Cleremond, and, like a man,

Make use of reason, as an exorcist

To cast this devil out, that does abuse you ;

This fiend of false affection.

*Cler.* Will you not kill me ?

You are then more tyrannous than Leonora.

An easy thrust will do it : you had ever

A charitable hand ; do not deny me,

For our old friendship's sake : no ! will't not be ?

There are a thousand doors to let out life ;

You keep not guard of all : and I shall find,

By falling headlong from some rocky cliff,

Poison, or fire, that long rest which your sword

Discourteously denies me. *[Exit.]*

*Mont.* I will follow ;

And something I must fancy, to dissuade him

From doing sudden violence on himself :

That's now my only aim ; and that to me,

Succeeding well, is a true victory. *[Exit.]*

SCENE III.—Paris. *An outer Room in Chamont's House.*

*Enter Chamont disguised, and Dinant.*

*Din.* Your lady tempted too !

*Cham.* And tempted home ;

Summon'd to parley, the fort almost yielded,

Had not I stepp'd in to remove the siege :

But I have countermined his works, and if

You second me, will blow the letcher up,

And laugh to see him caper.

*Din.* Anything :

Command me as your servant, to join with you ;

All ways are honest we take, to revenge us

On these lascivious monkies of the court,

That make it their profession to dishonour

Grave citizens' wives ; nay, those of higher rank,

As 'tis, in yours, apparent. My young rambler,

That thought to cheat me with a feign'd disease,

I have in the toil already ; I have given him,

Under pretence to make him high and active,

A cooler :—I dare warrant it will yield

Rare sport to see it work ; I would your lordship

Could be a spectator.

*Cham.* It is that I aim at :

And might I but persuade you to dispense

A little with your candour, and consent

To make your house the stage, on which we'll act

A comic scene ; in the pride of all their hopes, We'll show these shallow fools sunk-eyed despair,

And triumph in their punishment.

*Din.* My house,

Or whatsoever else is mine, shall serve

As properties to grace it.

*Cham.* In this shape, then,

Leave me to work the rest.

*Din.* Doubt not, my lord,

You shall find all things ready. *[Exit.]*

*Enter Perigot.*

*Cham.* This sorts well With my other purposes. Perigot ! to my wish.

Aid me, invention !

*Peri.* Is the qucan fallen off ?

I hear not from her ?—'tis the hour and place That she appointed.

What have we here ? This fellow has a pimp's face,

And looks as if he wcre her call, her fetch— With me ?

*Cham.* Sir, from the party, The lady you should truck with, the lord's wife

Your worship is to dub, or to make free Of the company of the horners.

*Peri.* Fair Lamira ?

*Cham.* The same, sir.

*Peri.* And how, my honest squire o' dames ? I see

Thou art of her privy council.

*Cham.* Her grant holds, sir.

*Peri.* O rare ! But when ?

*Cham.* Marry, instantly.

*Peri.* But where ?

*Cham.* She hath outgone the cunning of a woman,

In ordering it both privately and securely :

You know Dinant, the doctor ?

*Peri.* Good.

*Cham.* His house

And him she has made at her devotion, sir.

Nay, wonder not ; most of these empirics

Thrive better by connivance in such cases,

Than their lame practice ; framing some distemper,

The fool, her lord—

*Peri.* Lords may be what they please ;

I question not their patent.

*Cham.* Hath consented,

That this night, privately, she shall take a clyster ;

Which he believes the doctor ministers,

And never thinks of you.

*Peri.* A good wench still.

*Cham.* And there, without suspicion—

*Peri.* Excellent!  
I make this lord my cuckold?

*Cham.* True; and write  
The reverend drudging doctor, my copartner,  
And fellow bawd: next year we will have  
him warden  
Of our society.

*Peri.* There! there! I shall burst,  
I am so swollen with pleasure; no more  
talking,

Dear keeper of the vaulting door; lead on.

*Cham.* Charge you as boldly.

*Peri.* Do not fear; I have  
A staff to taint, and bravely.

*Cham.* Save the splinters,  
If it break in the encounter.

*Peri.* Witty rascal! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*A room in Bellisant's House.*

*Enter* Clarindore, Bellisant, and Beaupré.

*Clarin.* Boast of your favours, madam!

*Bell.* Pardon, sir,

My fears, since it is grown a general custom,  
In our hot youth, to keep a catalogue  
Of conquests this way got; nor do they think  
Their victory complete, unless they publish,  
To their disgrace, that are made captives to  
them,

How far they have prevail'd.

*Clarin.* I would have such rascals

First gelded, and then hang'd.

*Bell.* Remember too, sir,

To what extremities your love had brought  
you;

And, since I saved your life, I may, with  
justice,

By silence charge you to preserve mine  
honour;

Which, howsoever to my conscious self  
I am tainted, foully tainted, to the world  
I am free from all suspicion.

*Clarin.* Can you think

I'll do myself that wrong? although I had  
A lawyer's mercenary tongue, still moving,  
    . . . le this precious carcanet, these jewels,  
    . . . of your magnificence, would keep me  
A Pythagorean, and ever silent.

No, rest secure, sweet lady; and excuse  
My sudden and abrupt departure from you;  
And if the fault makes forfeit of your grace,  
A quick return shall ransom and redeem it.

*Bell.* Be mindful of your oaths.

[*Walks aside with Beaupré.*]

*Clarin.* I am got off,

And leave the memory of them behind me.  
Now, if I can find out my scoffing gulls,  
Novall and Perigot, besides my wager,  
Which is already sure, I shall return

Their bitter jests, and wound them with my  
tongue,  
Much deeper than my sword. Oh! but the  
oaths

I have made to the contrary, and her credit,  
Of which I should be tender:—tush! both  
hold

With me an equal value. The wise say,  
That the whole fabric of a woman's lighter  
Than wind or feathers: what is then her  
fame?

A kind of nothing;—not to be preserved  
With the loss of so much money: 'tis sound  
doctrine

And I will follow it. [*Exit.*]

*Bell.* Prithee, be not doubtful;

Let the wild colt run his course.

*Beau.* I must confess

I cannot sound the depth of what you pur-  
pose,

But I much fear—

*Bell.* That he will blab; I know it,  
And that a secret scalds him: that he suffers  
Till he hath vented what I seem to wish  
He should conceal;—but let him, I am  
arm'd for't. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*A Room in Dinant's House.*

*Enter* Chamont, Dinant, Lamira, Clarinda,  
and Servants.

*Cham.* For Perigot, he's in the toil ne'er  
doubt it.

O, had you seen how his veins swell'd with  
lust,

When I brought him to the chamber! how  
he gloried,

And stretch'd his limbs, preparing them for  
action;

And, taking me to be a pander, told me  
'Twas more delight to have a lord his cuckold,

Than to enjoy my lady!—there I left him  
In contemplation, greedily expecting

Lamira's presence; but, instead of her,  
I have prepared him other visitants.—

You know what you have to do?

1 *Serv.* Fear not, my lord,

He shall curvet, I warrant him, in a blanket.

2 *Serv.* We'll discipline him with dog-  
whips, and take off

His rampant edge.

*Cham.* His life; save that—remember,

You cannot be too cruel.

*Din.* For his pupil,

My wife's Inamorato, if cold weeds,  
Removed but one degree from deadly poison,

Have not forgot their certain operation,  
You shall see his courage cool'd; and in  
that temper,

Till he have howl'd himself into my pardon,  
I vow to keep him.

*Nov.* [*within.*] Ho, doctor! master doctor!

*Din.* The game's afoot; we will let slip:  
conceal

Yourselves a little. [*Exeunt all but Dinant.*]

*Enter Novall.*

*Nov.* Oh! a thousand agues  
Play at barley-break in my bones; my blood's  
a pool

On the sudden frozen, and the icicles  
Cut every vein: 'tis here, there, everywhere;  
Oh dear, dear, master doctor!

*Din.* I must seem

Not to understand him; 'twill increase his  
torture.— [*Aside.*]

How do you, sir? has the potion wrought?  
do you feel

An alteration? have your swellings left you?  
Is your blood still rebellious?

*Nov.* Oh, good doctor,  
I am a ghost! I have nor flesh, nor blood,  
Nor heat, nor warmth, about me.

*Din.* Do not dissemble;

I know you are high and jovial.

*Nov.* Jovial! doctor;  
No, I am all amot, as if I had lain  
Three days in my grave already.

*Din.* I will raise you:  
For, look you, sir, you are a liberal patient,  
Nor must I, while you can be such, part with  
you;

'Tis against the laws of our college. Pray  
you, mark me;

I have with curiosity consider'd  
Your constitution to be hot and moist,  
And that at your nativity Jupiter  
And Venus were in conjunction, whence it  
follows,

By necessary consequence, you must be  
A most insatiate lecher.

*Nov.* Oh! I have been,  
I have been, I confess: but now I cannot  
Think of a woman.

*Din.* For your health you must, sir,  
Both think, and see, and touch; you're but  
a dead man else.

*Nov.* That way, I am already.

*Din.* You must take,  
And suddenly ('tis a conceal'd receipt),  
A buxom, juicy wench.

*Nov.* Oh! 'twill not down, sir;  
I have no swallow for't.

*Din.* Now, since I would  
Have the disease as private as the cure,  
(For 'tis a secret,) I have wrought my wife  
To be both physic and physician,  
To give you ease:—will you walk to her?

*Nov.* Oh! doctor,  
I cannot stand; in every sense about me  
I have the palsy, but my tongue.

*Din.* Nay then,  
You are obstinate, and refuse my gentle offer;  
Or else 'tis foolish modesty:—Come hither,  
Come, my Clarinda,

*Re-enter Clarinda.*

'tis not common courtesy;  
Comfort the gentleman.

*Nov.* This is ten times worse.

*Cham.* [*within.*] He does torment him  
rarely.

*Din.* She is not coy, sir.  
What think you, is not this a pretty foot,  
And a clean instep? I will leave the calf  
For you to find and judge of: here's a hand  
too;

Try it, the palm is moist; the youthful blood  
Runs strong in every azure vein: the face too  
Ne'er knew the help of art; and, all together,  
May serve the turn, after a long sea-voyage,  
For the captain's self.

*Nov.* I am a swabber, doctor,  
A bloodless swabber; have not strength  
enough

To cleanse her poop.

*Din.* Fie! you shame yourself,  
And the profession of your rutting gallants,  
That hold their doctors' wives as free for  
them,

As some of us do our apothecaries'!

*Nov.* Good sir, no more.

*Din.* Take her aside; cornute me;  
I give you leave: what should a quacksalve,  
A fellow that does deal with drugs, as I do,  
That has not means to give her choice of  
gowns,

Jewels, and rich embroidered petticoats,  
Do with so fair a bedfellow? she being  
fashion'd

To purge a rich heir's reins, to be the  
mistress

Of a court gallant? Did you not tell her so?

*Nov.* I have betray'd myself! I did, I did.

*Din.* And that rich merchants, advocates,  
and doctors,

Howe'er deserving from the commonwealth,  
On forfeit of the city's charter, were  
Predestined cuckolds?

*Nov.* Oh, some pity, doctor!

I was an heretic, but now converted.

Some little, little respite!

*Din.* No, you town-bull;  
venge all good men's wrongs,  
And now will play the tyrant. To dissect  
thee,

Eat thy flesh off with burning corrosives,

Or write with aquafortis in thy forehead,  
Thy last intent to wrong my bed, were justice ;  
And to do less were foolish pity in me :  
I speak it, ribald !

*Nov.* Perigot ! Perigot !  
Woe to thy cursed counsel.

*Re-enter Chamont and Lamira.*

*Cham.* Perigot !  
Did he advise you to this course ?

*Nov.* He did.

*Cham.* And he has his reward for't.

*Peri.* [*within.*] Will you murder me !

*Serv.* [*within.*] Oncemore, aloft with him.

*Peri.* [*within.*] Murder! murder! murder!

*Re-enter Servants, with Perigot in a blanket.*

*Cham.* What conceal'd bake-meats have  
you there? a present?  
Is it goat's flesh? It smells rank.

1 *Serv.* We have had  
Sweet work of it, my lord.

2 *Serv.* I warrant you 'tis tender,  
It wants no cooking; yet, if you think fit,  
We'll bruise it again.

*Peri.* As you are Christians, spare me !  
I am jelly within already, and without  
Embroidered all o'er with statute lace.  
What would you more ?

*Nov.* My tutor in the gin, too !  
This is some comfort: he is as good as  
drench'd ;

And now we'll both be chaste.

*Cham.* What, is't a cat  
You have encounter'd, monsieur, you are  
scratch'd so ?

My lady, sure, forgot to pare her nails,  
Before your soft embraces.

*Din.* He has ta'en great pains :  
What a sweat he's in !

*Cham.* O ! he's a master-dancer,  
Knows how to caper into a lady's favour :  
One lofty trick more, dear monsieur.

*Nov.* That I had  
But strength enough to laugh at him !  
blanketted like a dog,  
And like a cut-purse whipt ! I am sure that  
now,

He cannot jeer me.

*Peri.* May not a man have leave  
To hang himself !

*Cham.* No ; that were too much mercy.  
Live to be wretched ; live to be the talk  
Of the conduit, and the bakehouse. I will  
have thee

Pictured as thou art now, and thy whole story  
Sung to some villainous tune in a lewd ballad ;  
And make thee so notorious to the world,

That boys in the streets shall hoot at thee :  
come, Lamira,  
And triumph o'er him.—Dost thou see this  
lady,

My wife, whose honour foolishly thou  
thought'st

To undermine, and make a servant to  
Thy brutish lusts, laughing at thy affliction?  
And, as a sign she scorns thee, set her foot  
Upon thy head? Do so :—'Sdeath ! but  
resist,

Once more you caper.

*Peri.* I am at the stake,  
And must endure it.

*Cham.* Spurn him, too.

*Lam.* Troth, sir,  
I do him too much grace.

*Cham.* Now, as a schoolboy  
Does kiss the rod that gave him chastisement,  
To prove thou art a slave, meet, with thy lips,  
This instrument that corrects thee.

*Peri.* Have you done yet ?

*Din.* How like a pair of crest-fallen jades  
they look now !

*Cla.* They are not worth our scorn.

*Peri.* O pupil, pupil !

*Nov.* Tutor, I am drench'd : let us con-  
dole together.

*Cham.* And where's the tickling itch now,  
my dear monsieur,

To say, *This lord's my cuckold!*—I am tired:  
That we had fresh dogs to hunt them !

*Enter Clarindore.*

*Clarind.* . . . . .  
I am acquainted with the story ;  
The doctor's man has told me all.

*Din.* Upon them.

*Peri.* Clarindore ! worst of all :—for him  
to know this,  
Is a second blanketting to me.

*Nov.* I again  
Am drench'd to look on him.

*Clarind.* How is't? nay, bear up ;  
You that commend adultery, I am glad  
To see it thrive so well. Fie, Perigot !  
Dejected? Haply thou wouldst have us  
think,

This is the first time that thou didst curvet,  
And come aloft in a blanket. By St. Dennis !  
Here are shrewd scratches too ; but nothing to  
A man of resolution, whose shoulders  
Are of themselves armour of proof, against  
A bastinado, and will tire ten beadles.

*Peri.* Mock on ; know no mercy.

*Clarind.* Thrifty young men !  
What a charge is saved in wenching ! and  
'tis timely——

A certain wager of three thousand crowns  
Is lost, and must be paid, my pair of puppies:  
The coy dame, Bellisant, hath stoop'd ! bear  
witness

This chain and jewels you have seen her wear.  
The fellow, that her grooms kick'd down  
the stairs,

Hath crept into her bed ; and, to assure you  
There's no deceit, she shall confess so much,  
I have enjoy'd her.

*Cham.* Are you serious ?

*Clarín.* Yes, and glory in it.

*Cham.* Nay then, give over fooling.—  
Thou liest, and art a villain, a base villain,  
To slander her.

*Clarín.* You are a lord, and that  
Bids me forbear you ; but I will make good  
Whatever I have said.

*Cham.* I'll not lose time  
To change words with thee. The king hath  
ordain'd

A Parliament of Love to right her wrongs,  
To which I summon thee. [*Exit.*]

*Clarín.* Your worst : I care not.—Fare-  
well, babions ! [*Exit.*]

*Din.* Here was a sudden change !

Nay, you must quit my house : shog on,  
kind patient,

And, as you like my physic, when you are  
Rampant again, you know I have that can  
cool you.

Nay, monsieur Perigot, help your pupil off  
too,

Your counsel brought him on. Ha ! noreply ?  
Are you struck dumb ? If you are wrong'd,  
complain.

*Peri.* We shall find friends to right us.

*Din.* And I justice,

The cause being heard ; I ask no more.  
Hence ! vanish ! [*Excunt.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—*A Court of Justice.*

*Enter Chamont, Philamour, and Lafort.*

*Phil.* Montrose slain ! and by Cleremond !

*Cham.* 'Tis too true.

*Laf.* But wondrous strange, that any dif-  
ference,

Especially of such a deadly nature,  
Should e'er divide so eminent a friendship.

*Phil.* The miracle is greater, that a lady,  
His most devoted mistress, Leonora,  
Against the usual softness of her sex,  
Should with such violence and heat pursue  
Her amorous servant ; since I'm inform'd  
That he was apprehended by her practice,

And, when he comes to trial for his life,  
She'll rise up his accuser.

*Cham.* So 'tis rumour'd :

And that's the motive that young Cleremond  
Makes it his humble suit, to have his cause  
Decided in the Parliament of Love ;  
For he pretends the bloody quarrel grew  
From grounds that claim a reference to that  
place :

Nor fears he, if you grant him equal hearing,  
But, with unanswerable proof, to render  
The cruel Leonora tainted with  
A guilt beyond his.

*Laf.* The king is acquainted  
Already with the accident ; besides,  
He hath vouchsafed to read divers petitions  
Preferr'd on several causes ; one against  
Monsieur Dinant, his doctor, by Novall ;  
A second, in which madam Bellisant  
Complains 'gainst Clarindore ; there is a  
bill too,

Brought in by Perigot, against your lordship ;  
All which, in person, he resolves to hear,  
'Then, as a judge, to censure.

[*A flourish within.*]

*Phil.* See the form !

Choice musick ushers him.

*Cham.* Let us meet the troop,

And mix with them.

*Phil.* 'Twill poize your expectation.

[*Excunt.*]

*Loud Music.* *Enter Charles followed by Orleans, Nemours, Chamont, Lafort, and Philamour. A Priest with the image of Cupid : then enter Cleremond, Clarindore, Perigot, Novall, Bellisant, Leonora, Beaupré, Lamira, Clarinda, and Officers. Montrose is brought forward on a bier, and placed before the bar.*

*Char.* Let it not seem a wonder, nor beget  
An ill opinion in this fair assembly,  
That here I place this statue ; 'tis not done,  
Upon the forfeit of our grace, that you  
Should, with a superstitious reverence,  
Fall down and worship it : nor can it be  
Presumed, we hope, young Charles, that  
justly holds

The honour'd title of *most Christian King*,  
Would ever nourish such idolatrous thoughts.  
'Tis rather to instruct deceived mankind,  
How much pure Love, that has his birth in  
heaven,

And scorns to be received a guest, but in  
A noble heart prepared to entertain him,  
Is, by the gross misprision of weak men,  
Abused and injured. That celestial fire,  
Which hieroglyphically is described  
In this his bow, his quiver, and his torch,

First warm'd their bloods, and after gave a name

To the old heroic spirits : such as Orpheus, That drew men, differing little then from beasts,

To civil government ; or famed Alcides, The tyrant-queller, that refused the plain And easy path leading to vicious pleasures, And ending in a precipice deep as hell, To scale the ragged cliff, on whose firm top Virtue and Honour, crown'd with wreaths of stars,

Did sit triumphant. But it will be answer'd, (The world decaying in her strength,) that now

We are not equal to those ancient times, And therefore 'twere impertinent and tedious To cite more precedents of that reverend age, But rather to endeavour, as we purpose, To give encouragement, by reward, to such As with their best nerves imitate that old goodness ;

And, with severe correction, to reform The modern vices.—Begin ; read the bills.

*Peri.* Let mine be first, my lord ; 'twas first prefer'd.

*Bell.* But till my cause be heard, our whole sex suffers—

*Off.* Back ! keep back, there !

*Nov.* Prithee, gentle officer, Handle me gingerly, or I fall to pieces, Before I can plead mine.

*Peri.* I am bruised

*Omnes.* Justice ! justice !

*Char.* Forbear these clamours, you shall all be heard.

And, to confirm I am no partial judge, By lottery decide it ; here's no favour.— Whose bill is first, Lafort ?

[The names are drawn.]

*Laf.* 'Tis Cleremond's.

*Char.* The second ?

*Laf.* Perigot's ; the third Novall's.

*Nov.* Our cases are both lamentable, tutor.

*Peri.* And I am glad they shall be heard together ;

We cannot stand asunder.

*Char.* What's the last ?

*Laf.* The injured lady Bellisant's.

*Char.* To the first, then ;

And so proceed in order.

*Phil.* Stand to the bar.

[Cler. comes forward.]

*Leon.* Speak, Cleremond, thy grief, as I will mine.

*Peri.* A confident little pleader ! were I in case,

I would give her a double fee.

*Nov.* So would I, tutor.

*Off.* Silence ! silence !

*Cler.* Should I rise up to plead my innocence,

Though, with the favour of the court, I stood Accited to the world, yea, though the wounds

Of my dead friend, (which, like so many mouths

With bloody tongues, cry out aloud against me,)

By your authority, were closed ; yet here, A not to be corrupted judge, my conscience, Would not alone condemn me, but inflict Such lingering tortures on me, as the hangman,

Though witty in his malice, could not equal. I therefore do confess a guilty cause,

Touching the fact, and, uncompell'd, acknowledgment

Myself the instrument of a crime the sun, Hiding his face in a thick mask of clouds, As frighted with the horror, durst not look on. But if your laws with greater rigour punish Such as invent a mischief, than the organs By whom 'tis put in act, (they truly being The first great wheels by which the lesser move,)

Then stand forth, Leonora ; and I'll prove The white robe of my innocence tainted with But one blackspot of guilt, and even that one By thy hand cast on me ; but thine, dyed o'er, Ten times in grain, in hell's most ugly colours.

*Leon.* The fellow is distracted : see how he raves !

Now as I live, if detestation of His baseness would but give me leave, I should Begin to pity him.

*Cler.* Frontless impudence,

And not to be replied be ! Sir, to you, And these subordinate ministers of yourself, I turn my speech : to her I do repent I e'er vouchsafed a syllable. My birth

Was noble as 'tis ancient, nor let it relish Of arrogance, to say my father's care, With curiousness and cost, did train me up In all those liberal qualities that commend A gentleman : and when the tender down Upon my chin told me I was a man, I came to court ; there youth, ease, and example,

First made me feel the pleasing pangs of love : And there I saw this woman ; saw, and loved her

With more than common ardour : for that deity,

(Such our affection makes him,) whose dread power

. . . the choicest arrow, headed with



Not loose but loyal flames, which aim'd at  
me,

Who came with greedy haste to meet the  
shaft,

. . . ing, that my captive heart was made  
. . . . Love's divine artillery,  
. . . . preserved . . . no relation.

But the shot made at her was not, like mine,  
Of gold, nor of pale lead that breeds disdain;  
Cupid himself disclaims it: I think rather,  
As by the sequel 'twill appear, some Fury  
From burning Acheron snatch'd a sulphur  
brand,

That smok'd with hate, the parent of red  
murder,

And threw it in her bosom. Pardon me,  
Though I dwell long upon the cause that did  
Produce such dire effects; and, to omit,  
For your much patience' sake, the cunning  
trap

In which she caught me, and, with horrid  
oaths,

Embark'd me in a sea of human blood,  
I come to the last scene—

*Leon.* 'Tis time; for this  
Grows stale and tedious.

*Cler.* When, I say, she had,  
To satisfy her fell rage, as a penance,  
Forced me to this black deed, her vow, too,  
given,

That I should marry her, and she conceal  
me;

When to her view I brought the slaughter'd  
body

Of my dear friend, and labour'd with my  
tears

To stir compunction in her, aided too  
By the sad object, which might witness for  
me,

At what an over-rate I had made purchase  
Of her long-wish'd embraces; then, great  
sir,—

But that I had a mother, and there may be  
Some two or three of her . . . sex  
less faulty,

I should affirm she was the perfect image  
Of the devil, her tutor, that had left hell empty,  
To dwell in wicked woman.

*Leon.* Do; rail on.

*Cler.* For not alone she gloried in my  
sufferings,

Forswore what she had vow'd, refused to  
touch me,

Much less to comfort me, or give me harbour;  
But, instantly, ere I could recollect

My scatter'd sense, betray'd me to your  
justice,

Which I submit to; hoping, in your wisdom,  
That as, in me, you lop a limb of murder,

You will, in her, grub up the root. I have  
said, sir.

*Leon.* Much, I confess, but much to little  
purpose.

And though, with your rhetorical flourishes,  
You strive to gild a rotten cause, the touch  
Of reason, fortified by truth, delivered  
From my unletter'd tongue, shall shew it  
dust;

And so to be contemn'd: You have trimm'd up  
All your deservings, should I grant them  
such,

With more care than a maiden of threescore  
Does hide her wrinkles, which, if she en-  
counter

The rain, the wind, or sun, the paint wash'd off,  
Are to dim eyes discover'd. I forbear

The application, and in a plain style  
Come roundly to the matter. 'Tis confess'd,  
This pretty, handsome, gentleman, (for  
thieves

Led to the gallows are held proper men,  
And so I now will call him,) would needs  
make me

The mistress of his thoughts; nor did I  
scorn,

For truth is truth, to grace him as a servant.  
Nay, he took pretty ways to win me too,  
For a court novice; every year I was  
His Valentine, and, in an anagram,  
My name worn in his hat; he made me  
banquets,

As if he thought that ladies, like to flies,  
Were to be caught with sweetmeats; quar-  
rell'd with

My tailor, if my gown were not the first  
Of that edition; beat my shoemaker,  
If the least wrinkle on my foot appear'd,  
As wronging the proportion; and, in time,  
Grew bolder, usher'd me to masques, and  
Or else paid him that wrote them; . . .  
With such a deal of p . . .

And of good rank, are taken with such  
gambols:

In a word, I was so; and a solemn contract  
Did pass betwixt us; and the day appointed,  
That should make our embraces warrantable,  
And lawful to the world: all things so car-  
ried,

As he meant nought but honourable love.

*Char.* A pretty method.

*Phil.* Quaintly, too, deliver'd.

*Leon.* But, when he thought me sure, he  
then gave proof

That foul lust lurk'd in the fair shape of love;  
For, valuing neither laws divine, nor human,  
His credit, nor my fame, with violence born  
On black-sail'd wings of loose and base de-  
sires,

As if his natural parts had quite forsook him,  
And that the pleasures of the marriage bed  
Were to be reaped with no more ceremony  
Than brute beasts couple,—I yet blush to  
speak it,

He tempted me to yield my honour up  
To his libidinous twines; and, like an  
atheist,

Scoff'd at the form and orders of the church;  
Nor ended so, but, being by me reprov'd,  
He offer'd violence; but was prevented.

*Char.* Note, a sudden change.

*Laf.* 'Twas foul in Cleremond.

*Leon.* I, burning then with a most vir-  
tuous anger,

Razed from my heart the memory of his  
name,

Reviled, and spit at him; and knew 'twas  
justice

That I should take those deities he scorn'd,  
Hymen and Cupid, into my protection,  
And be the instrument of their revenge;

And so I cast him off, scorn'd his submission,  
His poor and childish whinings, will'd my  
servants

To shut my gates against him: but, when  
neither

Disdain, hate, or contempt, could free me  
from

His loathsome importunities, (and fired too,  
To wreak mine injured honour,) I took  
gladly

Advantage of his execrable oaths

To undergo what penance I enjoin'd him;

Then, to the terror of all future ribalds,  
That make no difference between love and  
lust,

Imposed this task upon him. I have said,  
too:

Now, when you please, a censure.

*Char.* She has put

The judges to their whisper.

*Nov.* What do you think of these pro-  
ceedings, tutor?

*Peri.* The truth is,

I like not the severity of the court;

Would I were quit, and in an hospital,

I could let fall my suit!

*Nov.* 'Tis still your counsel.

*Char.* We are resolved, and with an  
equal hand

Will hold the scale of justice; pity shall not  
Rob us of strength and will to draw her sword,  
Nor passion transport us: let a priest

And headsmen be in readiness;—do you  
start,

To hear them named? Some little pause  
we grant you,

To take examination of yourselves,

What either of you have deserved, and why  
These instruments of our power are now  
thought useful:

You shall hear more, anon.—

*Cler.* I like not this.

[*Aside.*

*Leon.* A dreadful preparation! I confess  
It shakes my confidence.

[*Aside.*

*Charin.* I presumed this court

Had been in sport erected; but now find,  
With sorrow to the strongest hopes I built on,

That 'tis not safe to be the subject of

The . . . . . of kings.

(*New Speaker.*) To the second cause.

*Laf.* . . . . . Perigot's.

*Nov.* Nay, take me along too;

And, since that our complaints differ not  
much,

Dispatch us both together. I accuse

This devilish doctor.

*Peri.* I, this wicked lord.

*Nov.* 'Tis known I was an able, lusty man,  
Fit to get soldiers to serve my king

And country in the wars; and howsoever

'Tis said I am not valiant of myself,

I was a striker, one that could strike home  
too;

And never did beget a girl, though drunk.

To make this good, I could produce brave  
boys,

That others father, twigs of mine own graft-  
ing,

That loved a drum at four, and ere full ten,  
Fought battles for the parish they were born  
in;

And such by-blows, old stories say, still  
proved

Fortunate captains: now, whereas, in justice,  
I should have had a pension from the state,

For my good service, this ingrateful doctor,  
Having no child, and never like to have one,

Because, in pity of his barrenness,

I plotted how to help him to an heir,

Has, with a drench, so far disabled me,

That the great Turk may trust me with his  
virgins,

And never use a surgeon. Now consider,

If this be not hard measure, and a wrong to  
Little Dan Cupid, if he be the god

Of coupling, as 'tis said; and will undo,

If you give way to this, all younger brothers  
That carry their revenue in their breeches.—

Have I not nick'd it, tutor? [*Aside* to *Peri.*

*Peri.* To a hair, boy:

Our bills shall pass, ne'er fear it. [*Aside.*—  
For my case,

It is the same, sir; my intent as noble

As was my pupil's.

*Cham.* Plead it not again, then:

It takes much from the dignity of the court

But to give audience to such things as these,  
That do, in their defence, condemn themselves,

And need not an accuser. To be short, sir,  
And in a language as far from obscenity,  
As the foul cause will give me leave, be pleased

To know thus much: This hungry pair of  
flesh-flies,

And most inseparable pair of coxcombs,  
Though born of divers mothers, twins in  
baseness,

Were frequent at my table, had free welcome  
And entertainment fit for better men;

In the return of which, this thankful monsieur  
Tempted my wife, seduced her, at the least  
To him it did appear so; which discover'd,  
And with what treacheries he did abuse  
My bounties, treading underneath his feet

All due respect of hospitable rights,  
Or the honour of my family; though the  
intent

Deserved a stab, and at the holy altar,  
I borrow'd so much of your power to right  
me,

As to make him caper.

*Din.* For this gallant, sir,  
I do confess I cool'd him, spoil'd his ram-  
bling;

Would all such as delight in it, were served so!  
And since you are acquainted with the  
motives

That did induce me to it, I forbear  
A needless repetition.

*Cham.* 'Tis not worth it.  
The criminal judge is fitter to take . . .  
Of pleas of this base nature. Be . . .  
An injured lady, for whose wrong . . .  
I see the statue of the god of love  
Drop down tears of compassion, his sad  
mother,

And fair cheek'd Graces, that attend on her,  
Weeping for company, as if that all  
The ornaments upon the Paphian shrine  
Were, with one gripe, by sacrilegious hands,  
Torn from the holy altar: 'tis a cause, sir,  
That justly may exact your best attention;  
Which if you truly understand and censure,  
You not alone shall right the present times,  
But bind posterity to be your debtor.  
Stand forth, dear madam:—

[*Bellisant comes forward.*

Look upon this face,  
Examine every feature and proportion,  
And you with me must grant, this rare piece  
finish'd,

Nature, despairing e'er to make the like,  
Brake suddenly the mould in which 'twas  
fashion'd.

Yet, to increase your pity, and call on  
Your justice with severity, this fair outside  
Was but the cover of a fairer mind.

Think, then, what punishment he must  
deserve,

And justly suffer, that could arm his heart  
With such impenetrable flinty hardness,  
To injure so much sweetness.

*Clarín.* I must stand  
The fury of this tempest, which already  
Sings in my ears.

*Bell.* Great sir, the too much praise  
This lord, my guardian once, has shower'd'  
upon me,

Could not but spring up blushes in my cheeks,  
If grief had left me blood enough to speak  
My humble modesty: and so far I am  
From being litigious, that though I were  
robb'd

Of my whole estate, provided my fair name  
Had been unwounded, I had now been silent,  
But since the wrongs I undergo, if smother'd,  
Would injure our whole sex, I must lay by  
My native bashfulness, and put on boldness,  
Fit to encounter with the impudence

Of this had man, that from his birth hath been  
So far from nourishing an honest thought,  
That the abuse of virgins was his study,  
And daily practice. His forsaking of  
His wife, distressed Beaupré; his lewd wager  
With these, companions like himself, to  
abuse me;

His desperate resolution, in my presence,  
To be his own assassin; to prevent which,  
Foolish compassion forced me to surrender  
The life of life, my honour, I pass over:  
I'll only touch his foul ingratitude,  
To scourge which monster, if your laws  
provide not

A punishment with rigour, they are useless.  
Or if the sword, the gallows, or the wheel,  
Be due to such as spoil us of our goods;  
Perillus's brazen bull, the English rack,  
The German pincers, or the Scotch oil'd-  
boots,

Though join'd together, yet come short of  
torture,

To their full merit, those accursed wretches,  
That steal our reputations, and good names,  
As this base villain has done mine:—  
Forgive me,

If rage provoke me to uncivil language;  
The cause requires it. Was it not enough  
That, to preserve thy life, I lost my honour,  
. . . in recompense of such a gift  
. . . publish it, to my disgrace?

. . . whose means, unfortunate I,  
Whom, but of late, the city, nay, all France,  
Durst bring in opposition for chaste life,

With any woman in the Christian world,  
Am now become a by-word, and a scorn,  
In mine own country.

*Char.* As I live, she moves me.

Is this true, Clariundore?

*Nov.* Oh! 'tis very true, sir;

He brag'd of it to me.

*Peri.* And me.

Nay, since we must be censured, we'll give  
evidence;

'Tis comfort to have fellows in affliction:

You shall not 'scape, fine monsieur.

*Clarín.* Peace, you dog-bolts!—

Sir, I address myself to you, and hope

You have preserv'd one ear for my defence,

The other freely given to my accuser:

This lady, that complains of injury,

If she have any, was herself the cause

That brought it to her; for being young,  
and rich,

And fair too, as you see, and from that proud,

She boasted of her strength, as if it were not

In the power of love to undermine the fort

On which her chastity was strongly raised:

I, that was bred a courtier, and serv'd

Almost my whole life under Cupid's ensigns,

Could not, in justice, but interpret this

As an affront to the great god of love,

And all his followers, if she were not brought

To due obedience: these strong reasons, sir,

Made me to undertake her. How I woo'd,

Or what I swore, it skills not; (since 'tis said,

And truly, Jupiter and Venus smile

At lovers' perjuries;) to be brief, she yielded,

And I enjoy'd her: if this be a crime,

And all such as offend this pleasant way

Are to be punish'd, I am sure you would  
have

Few followers in the court: you are young  
yourself, sir,

And what would you in such a cause?—

*Laf.* Forbear.

*Phil.* You are rude and insolent.

*Clarín.* Good words, gentle judges.

I have no oil'd tongue; and I hope my  
bluntness

Will not offend.

*Char.* But did you boast your conquest  
Got on this lady?

*Clarín.* After victory;

A little glory in a soldier's mouth

Is not uncomely; love being a kind of war  
too:

And what I did achieve, was full of labour  
As his that wins strong towns, and merits  
triumphs.

I thought it could not but take from my  
honour,

(Besides the wager of three thousand crowns

Made sure by her confession of my service,)  
If it had been conceal'd.

*Char.* Who would have thought

That such an impudence could e'er have  
harbour

In the heart of any gentleman? In this,  
Thou dost degrade thyself of all the honours  
Thy ancestors left thee, and, in thy base  
nature,

'Tis too apparent that thou art a peasant.

Boast of a lady's favours! this confirms

Thou art the captain of that

That glory in their sins, and

With name of courtship; such as dare bely

Great women's bounties, and repuls'd and  
scorn'd,

Commit adultery with their good names,

And never touch their persons. I am sorry,

For your sake, madam, that I cannot make

Such reparation for you in your honour

As I desire; for, if I should compel him

To marry you, it were to him a blessing,

To you a punishment; he being so unworthy:

I therefore do resign my place to you;

Be your own judge; whate'er you shall de-  
termine,

By my crown, I'll see perform'd.

*Clarín.* I am in a fine case,

To stand at a woman's mercy. [*Aside.*

*Bell.* Then thus, sir:

I am not bloody, nor bent to revenge;

And study his amendment, not his ruin:

Yet, since you have given up your power to  
me,

For punishment, I do enjoin him to

Marry this Moor.

*Clarín.* A devil! hang me rather.

*Char.* It is not to be alter'd.

*Clarín.* This is cruelty

Beyond expression, . . . I have a wife.

*Cham.* Ay, too good for thee. View her  
well,

And then, this varnish from her face wash'd  
off,

Thou shalt find Beaupré.

*Clarín.* Beaupré!

*Bell.* Yes, his wife, sir,

But long by him with violence cast off:

And in this shape she serv'd me; all my  
studies

Aiming to make a fair atonement for her,

To which your majesty may now constrain  
him.

*Clarín.* It needs not; I receive her, and  
ask pardon

Of her and you.

*Bell.* On both our parts 'tis granted.

This was your bedfellow, and fill'd your  
arms,

When you thought you embraced me ; I am  
yet

A virgin ; nor had ever given consent,  
In my chaste house, to such a wanton passage,  
But that I knew that her desires were lawful.—  
But now no more of personated passion :

This is the man I loved, [*pointing to the  
bier,*] that I loved truly,

However I dissembled ; and, with him,  
Dies all affection in me. So, great sir,  
Resume your seat.

*Char.* An unexpected issue,  
Which I rejoice in. Would 'twere in our  
power

To give a period to the rest, like this,  
And spare our heavy censure ! but the death  
Of good Montrose forbids it. Cleremond,  
Thou instantly shall marry Leonora ;  
Which done, as suddenly thy head cut off,  
And corpse interr'd, upon thy grave I'll build  
A room of eight feet square, in which this  
lady,

For punishment of her cruelty, shall die  
An anchoress.

*Leon.* I do repent, and rather  
Will marry him, and forgive him.

*Clarín.* Bind her to  
Her word, great sir ; Montrose lives ; this a  
plot

To catch this obstinate lady.

*Leon.* I am glad  
To be so cheated.

*Mont.* [*rises from the bier.*] . . . Lady,  
. . . deceived ; do not repent

Your good opinion of me when thought dead.  
Nor let not my neglect to wait upon you,  
Considering what a business of import  
Diverted me, be thought unpardonable.

*Bell.* For my part 'tis forgiven ; and thus  
I seal

*Char.* Nor are we averse  
To your desires ; may you live long, and  
happy :

*Nov.* Mercy to us, great sir.

*Peri.* We will become

Chaste and reform'd men.

*Cham. and Din.* We both are suitors,  
On this submission, for your pardon, sir.

*Cham.* Which we in part will grant : but,  
to deter

Others, by their example, from pursuing  
Unlawful lusts, that think adultery  
A sport to be oft practised ; fix on them  
Two satyrs' heads ; and so, in capital letters  
Their foul intents writ on their breasts, we'll  
have them

Led thrice through Paris ; then, at the court  
gate,

To stand three hours, where Clarindore shall  
make

His recantation for the injury

Done to the lady Bellisant ; and read

A sharp invective, ending with a curse

Against all such as boast of ladies' favours :

Which done, both truly penitent, my doctor

Shall use his best art to restore your strength,

And render Perigot a perfect man.—

So break we up LOVE'S PARLIAMENT,  
which, we hope,

*Being for mirth intended, shall not meet  
with*

*An ill construction ; and if then, fair ladies,*

*You please to approve it, we hope you'll  
invite*

*Your friends to see it stén, with delight.*

[*Exeunt.*]



# The Roman Actor.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.	ACTORS' NAMES.
Domitianus Cæsar . . . . .	J. Lowin.
Paris, the ROMAN ACTOR . . . . .	J. Taylor.
Ælius Lamia,	T. Pollard.
Junius Rusticus,	} Rob. Benfield,
Palphurius Sura,	
Fulcinus,	
Parthenius, Cæsar's freedman . . . . .	R. Sharpe.
Aretinus, Cæsar's spy . . . . .	E. Swanstone.
Stephanos, Domitilla's freedman.	
Æsopus,	} R. Robinson.
Latinus,	
Philargus, a rich miser; father to Parthenius . . . . .	A. Smith.
Ascletrio, an astrologer.	
Sejeius,	} G. Vernon.
Entellus,	
Domitia, wife of Ælius Lamia . . . . .	J. Tompson.
Domitilla, cousin-german to Cæsar . . . . .	I. Hunnieman.
Julia, daughter of Titus . . . . .	W. Trigge.
Cænis, Vespasian's concubine . . . . .	A. Gough.
A Lady.	

*Tribunes, Lictors, Centurions, Soldiers, Hangmen, Servants, Captives.*

SCENE,—Rome.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—*The Theatre. Enter Paris, Latinus, and Æsopus.*

*Æsop.* What do we act to-day?

*Lat.* Agave's frenzy,

With Pentheus' bloody end.

*Par.* It skills not what;

The times are dull, and all that we receive

Will hardly satisfy the day's expense.

The Greeks, to whom we owe the first invention

Both of the buskin'd scene, and humble sock,

That reign in every noble family,

Declaim against us; and our theatre,

Great Pompey's work, that hath given full delight

Both to the eye and ear of fifty thousand

Spectators in one day, as if it were

Some unknown desert, or great Rome unpeopled,

Is quite forsaken.

*Lat.* Pleasures of worse natures

Are gladly entertain'd; and they that shun us,

Practise, in private, sports the stews would blush at.

A litter borne by eight Liburnian slaves,

To buy diseases from a glorious strumpet,  
The most censorious of our Roman geny,  
Nay, of the garded robe, the senators,  
Esteem an easy purchase.

*Par.* Yet grudge us,

That with delight join profit, and endeavour

To build their minds up fair, and on the stage

Decipher to the life what honours wait

On good and glorious actions, and the shame

That treads upon the heels of vice, the salary

Of six *sestertii*.

*Æsop.* For the profit, Paris,

And mercenary gain, they are things beneath us;

Since, while you hold your grace and power with Cæsar,

We, from your bounty, find a large supply,

Nor can one thought of want ever approach us.

*Par.* Our aim is glory, and to leave our names

To aftertime.

*Lat.* And, would they give us leave,

There ends all our ambition.

*Æsop.* We have enemies,  
And great ones too, I fear. 'Tis given out lately,

The consul Aretinus, Cæsar's spy,  
Said at his table, ere a month expired,  
For being gall'd in our last comedy,  
He'd silence us for ever.

*Par.* I expect

No favour from him ; my strong Aventine is,  
That great Domitian, whom we oft have  
cheer'd

In his most sullen moods, will once return,  
Who can repair, with ease, the consul's ruins.

*Lat.* 'Tis frequent in the city, he hath  
subdned

The Catti and the Daci, and, ere long,  
The second time will enter Rome in triumph.

*Enter two Lictors.*

*Par.* Jove hasten it? With us?—I now  
believe

The consul's threats, Æsopus.

*1 Lict.* You are summon'd

To appear to-day in senate.

*2 Lict.* And there to answer

What shall be urged against you.

*Par.* We obey you.

Nay, droop not, fellows ; innocence should  
be bold.

We, that have personated in the scene  
The ancient heroes, and the falls of princes,  
With loud applause ; being to act ourselves,  
Must do it with undoubted confidence.

Whate'er our sentence be, think 'tis in sport :  
And, though condemn'd, let's hear it without  
sorrow,

As if we were to live again to-morrow.

*1 Lict.* 'Tis spoken like yourself.

*Enter Ælius Lamia, Junius Rusticus, and  
Palphurius Sura.*

*Lam.* Whither goes Paris?

*1 Lict.* He's cited to the senate.

*Lat.* I am glad the state is

So free from matters of more weight and  
trouble,

That it has vacant time to look on us.

*Par.* That reverend place, in which the  
affairs of kings

And provinces were determined, to descend  
To the censure of a bitter word, or jest,  
Dropp'd from a poet's pen ! Peace to your  
lordships !

We are glad that you are safe.

[*Exeunt* Lictors, Paris, Latinus, and  
Æsopus.

*Lam.* What times are these !

To what 's Rome fallen ! may we, being  
alone,

Speak our thoughts freely of the prince and  
state,

And not fear the informer ?

*Rust.* Noble Lamia,

So dangerous the age is, and such bad acts  
Are practised every where, we hardly sleep,  
Nay, cannot dream with safety. All our  
actions

Are call'd in question ; to be nobly born  
Is now a crime ; and to deserve too well,  
Held capital treason. Sons accuse their  
fathers,

Fathers their sons ; and, but to win a smile  
From one in grace at court, our chastest  
matrons

Make shipwreck of their honours. To be  
virtuous

Is to be guilty. They are only safe  
That know to sooth the prince's appetite,  
And serve his lusts.

*Sura.* 'Tis true ; and 'tis my wonder,  
That two sons of so different a nature  
Should spring from good Vespasian. We  
had a Titus,

Styl'd, justly, "the Delight of all Man-  
kind,"

Who did esteem that day lost in his life  
In which some one or other tasted not  
Of his magnificent bounties. One that had  
A ready tear, when he was forced to sign  
The death of an offender : and so far  
From pride, that he disdain'd not the con-  
verse

Even of the poorest Roman.

*Lam.* Yet his brother,

Domitian, that now sways the power of things,  
Is so inclined to blood, that no day passes  
In which some are not fasten'd to the hook,  
Or thrown down from the Gemonies. His  
freed men

Scorn the nobility, and he himself,  
As if he were not made of flesh and blood,  
Forgets he is a man.

*Rust.* In his young years,

He shew'd what he would be when grown  
to ripeness :

His greatest pleasure was, being a child,  
With a sharp-pointed bodkin to kill flies,  
Whose rooms now men supply. For his  
escape

In the Vitellian war, he raised a temple  
To Jupiter, and proudly placed his figure  
In the bosom of the god : and, in his edicts,  
He does not blush, or start, to style himself  
(As if the name of emperor were base)  
Great Lord and God Domitian.

*Sura.* I have letters

He's on his way to Rome, and purposes  
To enter with all glory. The flattering senate  
Decrees him divine honours ; and to cross it,  
Were death with studied torments :— for  
my part,

I will obey the time ; it is in vain  
To strive against the torrent.

*Rust.* Let's to the curia,  
And, though unwillingly, give our suffrages,  
Before we are compell'd.

*Lam.* And since we cannot  
With safety use the active, let's make use of  
The passive fortitude, with this assurance,  
That the state, sick in him, the gods to friend,  
Though at the worst, will now begin to mend.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in Lamia's House.*

*Enter Domitia and Parthenius.*

*Dom.* To me this reverence !

*Parth.* I pay it, lady,

As a debt due to her that's Cæsar's mistress:  
For understand with joy, he that commands  
All that the sun gives warmth to, is your  
servant ;

Be not amazed, but fit you to your fortunes.  
Think upon state and greatness, and the  
honours

That wait upon Augusta, for that name  
Ere long, comes to you :—still you doubt  
your vassal—

[*Presents a letter.*]

But, when you've read this letter, writ and  
sign'd

With his imperial hand, you will be freed  
From fear and jealousy; and, I beseech you,  
When all the beauties of the earth bow to  
you,

And senators shall take it for an honour,  
As I do now, to kiss these happy feet ;

[*Kneels.*]

When every smile you give is a preferment,  
And you dispose of provinces to your crea-  
tures,

Think on Parthenius.

*Dom.* Rise. I am transported,  
And hardly dare believe what is assured here.  
The means, my good Parthenius, that  
wrought Cæsar,

Our god on earth, to cast an eye of favour  
Upon his humble handmaid ?

*Parth.* What, but your beauty ?

When nature framed you for her masterpiece,  
As the pure abstract of all rare in woman,  
She had no other ends but to design you  
To the most eminent place. I will not say  
(For it would smell of arrogance, to insinuate  
The service I have done you) with what zeal  
I oft have made relation of your virtues,  
Or how I've sung your goodness, or how  
Cæsar

Was fired with the relation of your story :  
I am rewarded in the act, and happy  
In that my project prosper'd.

*Dom.* You are modest :

And were it in my power, I would be thankful.  
If that, when I was mistress of myself,  
And in my way of youth, pure and untainted,  
The emperor had vouchsafed to seek my  
favours,

I had with joy given up my virgin fort,  
At the first summons, to his soft embraces ;  
But I am now another's, not mine own.  
You know I have a husband :—for my  
honour,

I would not be his strumpet ; and how law  
Can be dispensed with to become his wife,  
To me's a riddle.

*Parth.* I can soon resolve it :  
When power puts in his plea the laws are  
silenced.

The world confesses one Rome, and one  
Cæsar,

And as his rule is infinite, his pleasures  
Are unconfined ; this syllable, his *will*,  
Stands for a thousand reasons.

*Dom.* But with safety,  
Suppose I should consent, how can I do it ?  
My husband is a senator, and of a temper  
Not to be jested with.

*Enter Lamia.*

*Parth.* As if he durst  
Be Cæsar's rival !—here he comes ; with ease  
I will remove this scruple.

*Lam.* How ! so private !  
My own house made a brothel ! [*Aside.*—  
Sir, how durst you,

Though guarded with your power in court,  
and greatness,  
Hold conference with my wife ? As for you,  
minion,

I shall hereafter treat—

*Parth.* You are rude and saucy,  
Nor know to whom you speak.

*Lam.* This is fine, i'faith !  
Is she not my wife ?

*Parth.* Your wife ! But touch her, that  
respect forgotten

That's due to her whom mightiest Cæsar  
favours,

And think what 'tis to die. Not to lose time,  
She's Cæsar's choice : it is sufficient honour  
You were his taster in this heavenly nectar ;  
But now must quit the office.

*Lam.* This is rare !

Cannot a man be master of his wife  
Because she's young and fair, without a  
patent ?

I in my own house am an emperor,  
And will defend what's mine. Where are  
my knaves ?

If such an insolence escape unpunish'd—



*Parth.* In yourself, Lamia—Cæsar hath forgot

To use his power, and I, his instrument,  
In whom, though absent, his authority  
speaks,

Have lost my faculties ! [*Stamps.*]

*Enter a Centurion with Soldiers.*

*Lam.* The guard ! why, am I  
Design'd for death ?

*Dom.* As you desire my favour  
Take not so rough a course.

*Parth.* All your desires  
Are absolute commands : Yet give me leave  
To put the will of Cæsar into act.

Here's a bill of divorce between your lordship  
And this great lady : if you refuse to sign it,  
And so as if you did it uncompell'd,  
Won't by reasons that concern yourself,  
Her honour too untainted, here are clerks,  
Shall in your best blood write it new, till  
torture

Compel you to perform it.

*Lam.* Is this legal ?

*Parth.* Monarchs that dare not do unlaw-  
ful things,  
Yet bear them out, are constables, not kings.  
Will you dispute ?

*Lam.* I know not what to urge  
Against myself, but too much dotage on her,  
Love, and observance.

*Parth.* Set it under your hand,  
That you are impotent, and cannot pay  
The duties of a husband ; or, that you are  
mad ;  
Rather than want just cause, we'll make  
you so.

Dispatch, you know the danger else ;—de-  
liver it,

Nay, on your knee.—Madam, you now are  
free,

And mistress of yourself.

*Lam.* Can you, Domitia,  
Consent to this ?

*Dom.* 'Twould argue a base mind  
To live a servant, when I may command.  
I now am Cæsar's : and yet, in respect  
I once was yours, when you come to the  
palace,

Provided you deserve it in your service,  
You shall find me your good mistress. Wait  
me, Parthenius ;

And now farewell, poor Lamia !  
[*Exeunt all but Lamia.*]

*Lam.* To the gods  
I bend my knees, (for tyranny hath banish'd  
Justice from men,) and as they would deserve  
Their altars, and our vows, humbly invoke  
them,

That this my ravish'd wife may prove as fatal  
To proud Domitian, and her embraces  
Afford him, in the end, as little joy  
As wanton Helen brought to him of Troy !  
[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*The Curia or Senate-house.*

*Enter Lictors, Aretinus, Fulcinus, Rusticus,  
Sura, Paris, Latinus, and Æsopus.*

*Aret.* Fathers conscript, may this our  
meeting be  
Happy to Cæsar and the commonwealth !  
*Lict.* Silence !

*Aret.* The purpose of this frequent senate  
Is, first, to give thanks to the gods of Rome,  
That, for the propagation of the empire,  
Vouchsafes us one to govern it, like themselves.  
In height of courage, depth of understanding,  
And all those virtues, and remarkable graces,  
Which make a prince most eminent, our  
Domitian

Transcends the ancient Romans : I can never  
Bring his praise to a period. What good man,  
That is a friend to truth, dares make it  
doubtful,

That he hath Fabius' staidness, and the  
courage

Of bold Marcellus, to whom Hannibal gave  
The style of Target, and the Sword of Rome?  
But he has more, and every touch more  
Roman ;

As Pompey's dignity, Augustus' state,  
Antony's bounty, and great Julius' fortune,  
With Cato's resolution. I am lost

In the ocean of his virtues : in a word,  
All excellencies of good men meet in him,  
But no part of their vices.

*Rust.* This is no flattery !

*Sura.* Take heed, you'll be observed.

*Aret.* 'Tis then most fit

That we, (as to the father of our country,  
Like thankful sons, stand bound to pay true  
service

For all those blessings that he showers upon  
us,)

Should not connive, and see his government  
Depraved and scandalized by meaner men,  
That to his favour and indulgence owe  
Themselves and being.

*Par.* Now he points at us.

*Aret.* Cite Paris, the tragedian.

*Par.* Here.

*Aret.* Stand forth.

In thee, as being the chief of thy profession,  
I do accuse the quality of treason,  
As libellers against the state and Cæsar.

*Par.* Mere accusations are not proofs, my  
lord ;

In what are we delinquents ?

*Aret.* You are they  
That search into the secrets of the time,  
And, under feign'd names, on the stage,  
present

Actions not to be touch'd at; and traduce  
Persons of rank and quality of both sexes,  
And, with satirical, and bitter jests,  
Make even the senators ridiculous  
To the plebeians.

*Par.* If I free not myself,  
And, in myself, the rest of my profession,  
From these false imputations, and prove  
That they make that a libel which the poet  
Writ for a comedy, so acted too;  
It is but justice that we undergo  
The heaviest censure.

*Aret.* Are you on the stage,  
You talk so boldly?

*Par.* The whole world being one,  
This place is not exempted; and I am  
So confident in the justice of our cause,  
That I could wish Cæsar, in whose great  
name

All kings are comprehended, sat as judge,  
To hear our plea, and then determine of us.—  
If, to express a man sold to his lusts,  
Wasting the treasure of his time and fortunes  
In wanton dalliance, and to what sad end  
A wretch that's so given over does arrive at;  
Deterring careless youth, by his example,  
From such licentious courses; laying open  
The snares of bawds, and the consuming arts  
Of prodigal strumpets, can deserve reproof;  
Why are not all your golden principles,  
Writ down by grave philosophers to instruct

us  
To choose fair virtue for our guide, not  
pleasure,

Condemn'd unto the fire?

*Sura.* There's spirit in this.

*Par.* Or if desire of honour was the base  
On which the building of the Roman empire  
Was raised up to this height; if, to inflame  
The noble youth with an ambitious heat  
T' endure the frosts of danger, nay, of death,  
To be thought worthy the triumphal wreath  
By glorious undertakings, may deserve  
Reward, or favour from the commonwealth;  
Actors may put in for as large a share  
As all the sects of the philosophers:  
They with cold precepts (perhaps seldom  
read)

Deliver, what an honourable thing  
The active virtue is: but does that fire  
The blood, or swell the veins with emulation,  
To be both good and great, equal to that  
Which is presented on our theatres?  
Let a good actor, in a lofty scene,  
Show great Alcides honour'd in the sweat

Of his twelve labours; or a bold Camillus,  
Forbidding Rome to be redeem'd with gold  
From the insulting Gauls; or Scipio,  
After his victories, imposing tribute  
On conquer'd Carthage: if done to the life,  
As if they saw their dangers, and their glories,  
And did partake with them in their rewards,  
All that have any spark of Roman in them,  
The slothful arts laid by, contend to be  
Like those they see presented.

*Rust.* He has put  
The consults to their whisper.

*Par.* But, 'tis urged  
That we corrupt youth, and traduce superiors,  
When do we bring a vice upon the stage,  
That does go off unpunish'd? Do we teach,  
By the success of wicked undertakings,  
Others to tread in their forbidden steps?  
We shew no arts of Lydian panderism,  
Corinthian poisons, Persian flatteries,  
But mulcted so in the conclusion, that  
Even those spectators that were so inclined,  
Go home changed men. And, for traducing  
such

That are above us, publishing to the world  
Their secret crimes, we are as innocent  
As such as are born dumb. When we present  
An heir, that does conspire against the life  
Of his dear parent, numbering every hour  
He lives, as tedious to him; if there be,  
Among the auditors, one whose conscience  
tells him

He is of the same mould,—WE CANNOT  
HELP IT.

Or, bringing on the stage a loose adulteress,  
That does maintain the riotous expense  
Of him that feeds her greedy lust, yet suffers  
The lawful pledges of a former bed  
To starve the while for hunger; if a matron,  
However great in fortune, birth, or titles,  
Guilty of such a foul unnatural sin,

Cry out, 'Tis writ for me,—WE CANNOT  
HELP IT.

Or, when a covetous man's express'd, whose  
wealth

Arithmetic cannot number, and whose lord-  
ships

A falcon in one day cannot fly over;  
Yet he so sordid in his mind, so griping,  
As not to afford himself the necessaries  
To maintain life; if a patrician,  
(Though honour'd with a consulship,) find  
himself

Touch'd to the quick in this,—WE CANNOT  
HELP IT.

Or, when we shew a judge that is corrupt,  
And will give up his sentence, as he favours  
The person, not the cause; saving the guilty,  
If of his faction, and as oft condemning

The innocent, out of particular spleen ;  
If any in this reverend assembly,  
Nay, even yourself, my lord, that are the  
image

Of absent Cæsar, feel something in your  
bosom

That puts you in remembrance of things  
past,

Or things intended,—'TIS NOT IN US TO  
HELP IT.

I have said, my lord : and now, as you find  
cause,

Or censure us, or free us with applause.

*Lat.* Well pleaded, on my life ! I never  
saw him

Act an orator's part before.

*Æsop.* We might have given

Ten double fees to Regulus, and yet

Our cause deliver'd worse. [*A shout within.*]

*Enter Parthenius.*

*Aret.* What shout is that ?

*Parth.* Cæsar, our lord, married to con-  
quest, is

Return'd in triumph.

*Ful.* Let's all haste to meet him.

*Aret.* Break up the court ; we will reserve  
to him

The censure of this cause.

*All.* Long life to Cæsar ! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The Approach to the Capitol.*

*Enter Julia, Cænis, Domitilla, and Domitia.*

*Cænis.* Stand back—the place is mine.

*Ful.* Yours ! Am I not

Great Titus' daughter, and Domitian's niece ?  
Dares any claim precedence ?

*Cænis.* I was more :

The mistress of your father, and, in his  
right,

Claim duty from you.

*Ful.* I confess, you were useful

To please his appetite.

*Dom.* To end the controversy,

For I'll have no contending, I'll be bold  
To lead the way myself.

*Domitil.* You, minion !

*Dom.* Yes ;

And all, ere long, shall kneel to catch my  
favours.

*Ful.* Whence springs this flood of great-  
ness ?

*Dom.* You shall know

Too soon, for your vexation, and perhaps  
Repent too late, and pine with envy, when  
You see whom Cæsar favours.

*Ful.* Observe the sequel.

*Enter Captains with laurels, Domitian in  
his triumphant chariot, Parthenius, Paris,  
Latinus, and Æsopus, met by Aretinus,  
Sura, Lamia, Rusticus, Fulcinus, Soldiers,  
and Captives.*

*Cæs.* As we now touch the height of human  
glory,

Riding in triumph to the capitol,

Let these, whom this victorious arm hath  
made

The scorn of fortune, and the slaves of Rome,  
Taste the extremes of misery. Bear them off

To the common prisons, and there let them  
prove

How sharp our axes are.

[*Exeunt Soldiers with Captives.*]

*Rust.* A bloody entrance ! [*Aside.*]

*Cæs.* To tell you you are happy in your  
prince,

Were to distrust your love, or my desert ;

And either were distasteful : or to boast

How much, not by my deputies, but myself,  
I have enlarged the empire ; or what horrors

The soldier, in our conduct, hath broke  
through,

Would better suit the mouth of Plautus'  
braggart,

Than the adored monarch of the world.

*Sura.* This is no boast ! [*Aside.*]

*Cæs.* When I but name the Daci,  
And gray-eyed Germans, whom I have sub-  
dued,

The ghost of Julius will look pale with envy,  
And great Vespasian's and Titus' triumph,  
(Truth must take place of father and of  
brother,)

Will be no more remember'd. I am above  
All honours you can give me : and the style

Of Lord and God, which thankful subjects  
give me,

Not my ambition, is deserved.

*Aret.* At all parts

Celestial sacrifice is fit for Cæsar,  
In our acknowledgment.

*Cæs.* Thanks, Aretinus ;

Still hold our favour. Now, the god of war,  
And famine, blood, and death, Bellona's  
pages,

Banish'd from Rome to Thrace, in our good  
fortune,

With justice he may taste the fruits of peace,  
Whose sword hath plough'd the ground, and  
reap'd the harvest

Of your prosperity. Nor can I think  
That there is one among you so ungrateful,

Or such an enemy to thriving virtue,  
That can esteem the jewel he holds dearest,

Too good for Cæsar's use.

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A State Room in the Palace.*

*Enter Philargus in rags, and Parthenius.*

*Phil.* My son to tutor me! Know your obedience,

And question not my will.

*Parth.* Sir, were I one,  
Whom want compell'd to wish a full possession

Of what is yours : or had I ever number'd  
Your years, or thought you lived too long,  
with reason

You then might nourish ill opinions of me :  
Or did the suit that I prefer to you  
Concern myself, and aim'd not at your good,  
You might deny, and I sit down with patience,  
And after never press you.

*Phil.* In the name of Pluto,  
What wouldst thou have me do?

*Parth.* Right to yourself ;  
Or suffer me to do it. Can you imagine  
This nasty hat, this tatter'd cloak, rent shoe  
This sordid linen, can become the master  
Of your fair fortunes? whose superfluous  
means,

Though I were burthensome, could clothe  
you in  
The costliest Persian silks, studded with  
jewels,

The spoils of provinces, and every day  
Fresh change of Tyrian purple.

*Phil.* Out upon thee!  
My monies in my coffers melt to hear thee.  
Purple! hence, prodigal! Shall I make my  
mercier,

Or tailor heir, or see my jeweller purchase?  
No, I hate pride.

*Parth.* Yet decency would do well.  
Though, for your outside, you will not be  
alter'd,

Let me prevail so far yet, as to win you  
Not to deny your belly nourishment ;  
Neither to think you've feasted, when 'tis  
cramm'd

With mouldy barley-bread, onions, and leeks,  
And the drink of bondmen, water.

*Phil.* Wouldst thou have me  
Be an Apicius, or a Lucullus,  
And riot out my state in curious sauces?  
Wise nature with a little is contented ;  
And, following her, my guide, I cannot err.

*Parth.* But you destroy her in your want  
of care  
(I blush to see, and speak it) to maintain her  
In perfect health and vigour ; when you suffer,  
Frighted with the charge of physic, rheums,  
catarrhs,

*Sura.* All we possess—

*Lam.* Our liberties—

*Ful.* Our children—

*Par.* Wealth—

*Aret.* And throats,  
Fall willingly beneath his feet.

*Rust.* Base flattery!

What Roman can endure this? [*Aside.*]

*Cæs.* This calls on  
My love to all, which spreads itself among  
you.

The beauties of the time! [*seeing the ladies.*]  
Receive the honour

To kiss the hand which, rear'd up thus,  
holds thunder ;

To you 'tis an assurance of a calm.

Julia, my niece, and Cænis, the delight

Of old Vespasian ; Domitilla, too,

A princess of our blood.

*Rust.* 'Tis strange his pride  
Affords no greater courtesy to ladies

Of such high birth and rank.

*Sura.* Your wife's forgotten.

*Lam.* No, she will be remember'd, fear it  
not ;

She will be graced and greased.

*Cæs.* But, when I look on

Divine Domitia, methinks we should meet

(The lesser gods applauding the encounter)

As Jupiter, the Giants lying dead

On the Phlegrean plain, embraced his Juno.

Lamia, it is your honour that she's mine.

*Lam.* You are too great to be gainsaid.

*Cæs.* Let all

That fear our frown, or do affect our favour,

Without examining the reason why,

Salute her (by this kiss I make it good)

With the title of Augusta.

*Dom.* Still your servant.

*All.* Long live Augusta, great Domitian's  
empress!

*Cæs.* Paris, my hand.

*Par.* [*kissing it.*] The gods still honour  
Cæsar!

*Cæs.* The wars are ended, and, our arms  
laid by,

We are forsoft delights. Command the poets

To use their choicest and most rare invention,

To entertain the time; nor be you careful

To give it action : we'll provide the people

Pleasures of all kinds.—My Domitia, think  
not

I flatter, though thus fond.—On to the capitol:

'Tis death to him that wears a sullen brow.

This 'tis to be a monarch, when alone

He can command all, but is awed by none.

[*Exeunt.*]

The scurf, ach in your bones, to grow upon you,  
And hasten on your fate with too much sparing :

When a cheap purge, a vomit, and good diet,  
May lengthen it. Give me but leave to send  
The emperor's doctor to you.

*Phil.* I'll be borne first,  
Halfrotten, to the fire that must consume me !  
His pills, his cordials, his electuaries,  
His syrups, julaps, bezoar stone, nor his  
Imagined unicorn's horn, comes in my belly ;  
My mouth shall be a draught first, 'tis resolved.

No ; I'll not lessen my dear golden heap,  
Which, every hour increasing, does renew  
My youth and vigor ; but, if lessen'd, then,  
Then my poor heart-strings crack. Let me enjoy it,

And brood o'er't, while I live, it being my life,  
My soul, my all : but when I turn to dust,  
And part from what is more esteem'd, by me,  
Than all the gods Rome's thousand altars smoke to,

Inherit thou my adoration of it,  
And, like me, serve my idol. [*Exit.*]

*Parth.* What a strange torture  
Is avarice to itself ! what man, that looks on  
Such a penurious spectacle, but must  
Know what the fable meant of Tantalus,  
Or the ass whose back is crack'd with curious viands,

Yet feeds on thistles. Some course I must take,  
To make my father know what cruelty  
He uses on himself.

*Enter Paris.*

*Par.* Sir, with your pardon,  
I make bold to enquire the emperor's pleasure ;  
For, being by him commanded to attend,  
Your favour may instruct us what's his will  
Shall be this night presented.

*Parth.* My loved Paris,  
Without my intercession, you well know,  
You may make your own approaches, since  
his ear  
To you is ever open.

*Par.* I acknowledge  
His clemency to my weakness, and, if ever  
I do abuse it, lightning strike me dead !  
The grace he pleases to confer upon me,  
(Without boast I may say so much,) was never  
Employ'd to wrong the innocent, or to incense  
His fury.

*Parth.* 'Tis confess'd : many men owe you  
For provinces they ne'er hoped for ; and  
their lives,  
Forfeited to his anger :—you being absent,  
I could say more.

*Par.* You still are my good patron ;  
And, lay it in my fortune to deserve it,  
You should perceive the poorest of your clients  
To his best abilities thankful.

*Parth.* I believe so.  
Met you my father ?

*Par.* Yes, sir, with much grief,  
To see him as he is. Can nothing work him  
To be himself ?

*Parth.* O, Paris, 'tis a weight  
Sits heavy here ; and could this right hand's  
loss  
Remove it, it should off : but he is deaf  
To all persuasion.

*Par.* Sir, with your pardon,  
I'll offer my advice : I once observed,  
In a tragedy of ours, in which a murder  
Was acted to the life, a guilty hearer,  
Forced by the terror of a wounded conscience,  
To make discovery of that which torture  
Could not wring from him. Nor can it appear  
Like an impossibility, but that  
Your father, looking on a covetous man  
Presented on the stage, as in a mirror,  
May see his own deformity, and loath it.  
Now, could you but persuade the emperor  
To see a comedy we have, that's styled  
*The Cure of Avarice*, and to command  
Your father to be a spectator of it,  
He shall be so anatomized in the scene,  
And see himself so personated, the baseness  
Of a self-torturing miserable wretch  
Truly described, that I much hope the object  
Will work compunction in him.

*Parth.* There's your fee ;  
I ne'er bought better counsel. Be you in  
readiness,  
I will effect the rest.

*Par.* Sir, when you please ;  
We'll be prepar'd to enter.—Sir, the emperor.  
[*Exit.*]

*Enter Cæsar, Aretinus, and Guard.*

*Cæs.* Repine at us !

*Aret.* 'Tis more, or my informers,  
That keep strict watch upon him, are deceived  
In their intelligence : there is a list  
Of malcontents, as Junius Rusticus,  
Palphurius Sura, and this Ælius Lamia,  
That murmur at your triumphs, as mere  
pageants ;  
And, at their midnight meetings, tax your  
justice,

(For so I style what they call tyranny,)  
For Pætus Thrasea's death, as if in him  
Virtue herself were murdered : nor forget  
they

Agrioola, who, for his service done  
In the reducing Britain to obedience,

They dare affirm to be removed with poison  
And he compell'd to write you a coheir  
With his daughter, that his testament might  
stand,

Which, else, you had made void. Then  
your much love

To Julia your niece, censured as incest,  
And done in scorn of Titus, your dead  
brother :

But the divorce Lamia was forced to sign  
To her you honour with Augusta's title,  
Being only named, they do conclude there was  
A Lucrece once, a Collatine, and a Brutus ;  
But nothing Roman left now but, in you,  
The lust of Tarquin.

*Cæs.* Yes, his fire, and scorn  
Of such as think that our unlimited power  
Can be confined. Dares Lamia pretend  
An interest to that which I call mine ;  
Or but remember she was ever his,  
That's now in our possession? Fetch him  
hither. [*Exit* Guard.

I'll give him cause to wish he rather had  
Forgot his own name, than e'er mention'd  
hers.

Shall we be circumscribed? Let such as  
cannot

By force make good their actions, though  
wicked,

Conceal, excuse, or qualify their crimes !  
What our desires grant leave and privilege to,  
Though contradicting all divine decrees,  
Or laws confirm'd by Romulus and Numa,  
Shall be held sacred.

*Aret.* You should, else, take from  
The dignity of Cæsar.

*Cæs.* Am I master  
Of two and thirty legions, that awe  
All nations of the triumphed world,  
Yet tremble at our frown, to yield account  
Of what's our pleasure, to a private man !  
Rome perish first, and Atlas's shoulders  
shrink,

Heaven's fabric fall, (the sun, the moon,  
the stars

Losing their light and comfortable heat,)  
Ere I confess that any fault of mine  
May be disputed !

*Aret.* So you preserve your power,  
As you should, equal and omnipotent here,  
With Jupiter's above.

[*Parthenius kneeling, whispers Cæsar.*

*Cæs.* Thy suit is granted,  
Whate'er it be, Parthenius, for thy service  
Done to Augusta.—Only so? a trifle :  
Command him hither. If the comedy fail  
To cure him, I will minister something to him  
That shall instruct him to forget his gold,  
And think upon himself.

*Parth.* May it succeed well,  
Since my intents are pious ! [*Exit.*

*Cæs.* We are resolved  
What course to take; and, therefore,  
Aretinus,

Enquire no further. Go you to my empress,  
And say I do entreat (for she rules him  
Whom all men else obey) she would  
vouchsafe

The music of her voice at yonder window,  
When I advance my hand, thus. I will  
blend [*Exit* Aretinus.

My cruelty with some scorn, or else 'tis lost.  
Revenge, when it is unexpected, falling  
With greater violence; and hate clothed in  
smiles,

Strikes, and with horror, dead the wretch  
that comes not

Prepared to meet it.—

*Re-enter* Guard with Lamia.

Our good Lamia, welcome.  
So much we owe you for a benefit,  
With willingness on your part conferr'd  
upon us,

That 'tis our study, we that would not live  
Engaged to any for a courtesy,  
How to return it.

*Lam.* 'Tis beneath your fate  
To be obliged, that in your own hand grasp  
The means to be magnificent.

*Cæs.* Well put off;  
But yet it must not do: the empire, Lamia,  
Divided equally, can hold no weight,  
If balanced with your gift in fair Domitia—  
You, that could part with all delights at  
once,

The magazine of rich pleasures being contain'd

In her perfections,—uncompell'd, deliver'd  
As a present fit for Cæsar. In your eyes,  
With tears of joy, not sorrow, 'tis confirm'd  
You glory in your act.

*Lam.* Derided too!

Sir, this is more—

*Cæs.* More than I can requite ;  
It is acknowledged, Lamia. There's no drop  
Of melting nectar I taste from her lip,  
But yields a touch of immortality  
To the blest receiver; every grace and  
feature,

Prized to the worth, bought at an easy rate,  
If purchased for a consulship. Her dis-  
course

So ravishing, and her action so attractive,  
That I would part with all my other senses,  
Provided I might ever see and hear her.  
The pleasures of her bed I dare not trust

The winds or air with ; for that would draw  
down,

In envy of my happiness, a war  
From all the gods upon me.

*Lam.* Your compassion  
To me, in your forbearing to insult  
On my calamity, which you make your sport,  
Would more appease those gods you have  
provoked,

Than all the blasphemous comparisons  
You sing unto her praise.

*Domitia appears at the window.*

*Cæs.* I sing her praise !

'Tis far from my ambition to hope it ;  
It being a debt she only can lay down,  
And no tongue else discharge.

[*He raises his hand. Music above.*

Hark ! I think, prompted

With my consent that you once more should  
hear her,

She does begin. An universal silence  
Dwell on this place ! 'Tis death, with linger-  
ing torments,

To all that dare disturb her.—

A SONG by Domitia.

—Who can hear this,

And fall not down and worship ? In my fancy,  
Apollo being judge, on Latmos' hill  
Fair-hair'd Calliope, on her ivory lute,  
(But something short of this,) sung Ceres'  
praises,

And grisly Pluto's rape on Proserpine.  
The motions of the spheres are out of time,  
Her musical notes but heard. Say, Lamia,  
say,

Is not her voice angelical ?

*Lam.* To your ear :

But I, alas ! am silent.

*Cæs.* Be so ever,

That without admiration canst hear her !  
Malice to my felicity strikes thee dumb,  
And, in thy hope, or wish, to repossess  
What I love more than empire, I pronounce  
thee

Guilty of treason.—Off with his head ! do  
you stare ?

By her that is my patroness, Minerva,  
Whose statue I adore of all the gods,  
If he but live to make reply, thy life  
Shall answer it !

[*The Guard leads off Lamia,  
stopping his mouth.*

My fears of him are freed now ;

And he that lived to upbraid me with my  
wrong,

For an offence he never could imagine,

In wantonness removed.—Descend, my  
dearest ;

Plurality of husbands shall no more  
Breed doubts or jealousies in you : [*Exit*  
*Dom. above.*] 'tis dispatch'd,  
And with as little trouble here, as if  
I had kill'd a fly.

*Enter Domitia, ushered in by Aretinus, her  
train borne up by Julia, Cænis, and Domi-  
tilla.*

Now you appear, and in  
That glory you deserve ! and these, that stoop  
To do you service, in the act much honour'd !  
Julia, forget that Titus was thy father ;  
Cænis, and Domitilla, ne'er remember  
Sabinus or Vespasian. To he slaves  
To her is more true liberty, than to live  
Parthian or Asian queens. As lesser stars,  
That wait on Phœbe in her full of brightness,  
Compared to her, you are. Thus, thus I  
seat you

By Cæsar's side, commanding these, that  
once

Were the adored glories of the time,  
To witness to the world they are your vassals.  
At your feet to attend you.

*Dom.* 'Tis your pleasure,  
And not my pride. And yet, when I consider  
That I am yours, all duties they can pay  
I do receive as circumstances due  
To her you please to honour.

*Re-enter Parthenius with Philargus.*

*Parth.* Cæsar's will  
Commands you hither, nor must you gain-  
say it.

*Phil.* Lose time to see an interlude ! must  
I pay too,

For my vexation ?

*Parth.* Not in the court :

It is the emperor's charge.

*Phil.* I shall endure

My torment then the better.

*Cæs.* Can it be

This sordid thing, Parthenius, is thy father ?  
No actor can express him : I had held  
The fiction for impossible in the scene,  
Had I not seen the substance.—Sirrah, sit  
still,

And give attention ; if you but nod,  
You sleep for ever.—Let them spare the  
prologue,

And all the ceremonies proper to ourself,  
And come to the last act—there, where the  
cure

By the doctor is made perfect. The swift  
minutes

Seem years to me, Domitia, that divorce thee

From my embraces : my desires increasing  
As they are satisfied, all pleasures else  
Are tedious as dull sorrows. Kiss me again :  
If I now wanted heat of youth, these fires,  
In Priam's veins, would thaw his frozen blood,  
Enabling him to get a second Hector  
For the defence of Troy.

*Dom.* You are wanton !

Pray you, forbear. Let me see the play.

*Cæs.* Begin there.

*Enter Paris, like a doctor of physick, and Æsopus : Latinus is brought forth asleep in a chair, a key in his mouth.*

*Æsop.* O master doctor, he is past recovery ;  
A lethargy hath seized him ; and, however  
His sleep resemble death, his watchful care  
To guard that treasure he dares make no  
use of,

*Works strongly in his soul.*

*Par.* What's that he holds  
So fast between his teeth ?

*Æsop.* The key that opens  
His iron chests, cramm'd with accursed gold,  
Rusty with long imprisonment. There's no  
duty

In me, his son, nor confidence in friends,  
That can persuade him to deliver up  
That to the trust of any.

*Phil.* He is the wiser :

We were fashion'd in one mould.

*Æsop.* He eats with it ;  
And when devotion calls him to the temple  
Of Mammon, whom, of all the gods, he  
kneels to,

THAT held thus still, his orisons are paid :  
Nor will he, though the wealth of Rome  
were pawn'd

For the restoring of 't, for one short hour  
Be won to part with it.

*Phil.* Still, still myself !

And if like me he love his gold, no pawn  
Is good security.

*Par.* I'll try if I can force it——

It will not be. His avaricious mind,  
Like men in rivers drown'd, make him  
gripe fast,

To his last gasp, what he in life held dearest ;  
And, if that it were possible in nature,  
Would carry it with him to the other world.

*Phil.* As I would do to hell, rather than  
leave it.

*Æsop.* Is he not dead ?

*Par.* Long since to all good actions,  
Or to himself, or others, for which wise men  
Desire to live. You may with safety pinch  
him,  
Or under his nails stick needles, yet he stirs  
not ;

*Anxious fear to lose what his soul doats on,  
Renders his flesh insensible. We must use  
Some means to rouse the sleeping faculties  
Of his mind ; there lies the lethargy. Take  
a trumpet,*

*And blow it into his ears ; 'tis to no purpose ;  
The roaring noise of thunder cannot wake  
him :—*

*And yet despair not ; I have one trick left yet.*

*Æsop.* What is it ?

*Par.* I will cause a fearful dream  
To steal into his fancy, and disturb it  
With the horror it brings with it, and so free  
His body's organs.

*Dom.* 'Tis a cunning fellow ;  
If he were indeed a doctor, as the play says,  
He should be sworn my servant ; govern  
my slumbers,

And minister to me waking.

*Par.* If this fail, [A chest brought in.  
I'll give him o'er. So ; with all violence  
Rend open this iron chest, for here his life lies  
Bound up in fetters, and in the defence  
Of what he values higher, 'twill return,  
And fill each vein and artery.—Louder yet !  
—'Tis open, and already he begins  
To stir ; mark with what trouble.

[Latinus stretches himself.

*Phil.* As you are Cæsar,  
Defend this honest, thrifty man ! they are  
thieves,

And come to rob him.

*Parth.* Peace ! the emperor frowns.

*Par.* So ; now pour out the bags upon the  
table ;

Remove his jewels, and his bonds.—Again,  
Ring a second golden peal. His eyes are open ;  
He stares as he had seen Medusa's head,  
And were turn'd marble.—Once more.

*Lat.* Murder ! murder !

They come to murder me. My son in the  
plot ?

Thou worse than parricide ! if it be death  
To strike thy father's body, can all tortures  
The Furies in hell practise, be sufficient  
For thee, that dost assassinate my soul ?—  
My gold ! my bonds ! my jewels ! dost thou  
envy

My glad possession of them for a day ;  
Extinguishing the taper of my life  
Consumed unto the snuff ;

*Par.* Seem not to mind him.

*Lat.* Have I, to leave thee rich, denied  
myself

The joys of human being ; scraped and  
hoarded

A mass of treasure, which had Solon seen,  
The Lydian Cræsus had appeared to him  
Poor as the beggar Iruus ? And yet I,



*Solicitous to increase it, when my entrails  
Were clemn'd with heeping a perpetual fast,  
Was deaf to their loud windy cries, as fearing,  
Should I disburse one penny to their use,  
My heir might curse me. And, to save  
expense*

*In outward ornaments, I did expose  
My naked body to the winter's cold,  
And summer's scorching heat : nay, when  
diseases*

*Grew thick upon me, and a little cost  
Had purchased my recovery, I chose rather  
To have my ashes closed up in my urn,  
By hastening on my fate, than to diminish  
The gold my prodigal son, while I am living,  
Carelessly scatters.*

*Æsop. Would you'd dispatch and die  
once !*

*Your ghost should feel in hell, THAT is my  
slave*

*Which was your master.*

*Phil. Out upon thee, varlet !*

*Par. And what then follows all your carke  
and caring,*

*And self-affliction ? When your starved  
trunk is*

*Turn'd to forgotten dust, this hopeful youth  
Urinés upon your monument, né'er remem-  
bering*

*How much for him you suffer'd ; and then  
tells,*

*To the companions of his lusts and riots,  
The hell you did endure on earth, to leave  
him*

*Large means to be an epicure, and to feast  
His senses all at once, a happiness*

*You never granted to yourself. Your gold,  
then,*

*Got with vexation, and preserved with  
trouble,*

*Maintains the public stews, panders, and  
ruffians,*

*That quaff damnations to your memory,  
For living so long here.*

*Lat. It will be so ; I see it—*

*O, that I could redeem the time that's past !  
I would live and die like myself ; and make  
true use*

*Of what my industry purchased.*

*Par. Covetous men,*

*Having one foot in the grave, lament so ever :  
But grant that I by art could yet recover  
Your desperate sickness, lengthen out your  
life*

*A dozen of years ; as I restore your body  
To perfect health, will you with care en-  
deavour*

*To rectify your mind ?*

*Lat. I should so live then,*

*As neither my heir should have just cause to  
think*

*I lived too long, for being close-handed to him,  
Or cruel to myself.*

*Par. Have your desires.*

*Phæbus assisting me, I will repair  
The ruin'd building of your health ; and  
think not*

*You have a son that hates you ; the truth is,  
This means, with his consent, I practised on  
you*

*To this good end : it being a device,  
In you to shew the Cure of Avarice.*

[*Exeunt Paris, Latinus, and Æsopus.*

*Phil. An old fool, to be gull'd thus ! had  
he died*

*As I resolve to do, not to be alter'd,  
It had gone off twanging.*

*Cæs. How approve you, sweetest,  
Of the matter and the actors ?*

*Dom. For the subject,*

*I like it not ; it was filch'd out of Horace.*

*—Nay, I have read the poets :—but the fellow  
That play'd the doctor, did it well, by Venus :  
He had a tuneable tongue, and neat de-  
livery :*

*And yet, in my opinion, he would perform  
A lover's part much better. Prithee, Cæsar,  
For I grow weary, let us see, to-morrow,  
Iphis and Anaxarete.*

*Cæs. Any thing*

*For thy delight, Domitia ; to your rest,  
Till I come to disquiet you : wait upon her.  
There is a business that I must dispatch,  
And I will straight be with you. [*Exeunt.**

*Aret. Dom. Julia, Cænis, and Domitil.*

*Parth. Now, my dread sir,*

*Endeavour to prevail.*

*Cæs. One way or other*

*We'll cure him, never doubt it. Now,  
Philargus,*

*Thou wretched thing, hast thou seen thy  
sordid baseness,*

*And but observed what a contemptible  
creature*

*A covetous miser is ? Dost thou in thyself  
Feel true compunction, with a resolution  
To be a new man ?*

*Phil. This crazed body's Cæsar's ;*

*But for my mind—*

*Cæs. Trifle not with my anger.*

*Canst thou make good use of what was now  
presented ;*

*And imitate, in thy sudden change of life,  
The miserable rich man, that express'd  
What thou art to the life ?*

*Phil. Pray you, give me leave*

*To die as I have lived. I must not part with  
My gold ; it is my life : I am past cure.*

*Cæs.* No ; by Minerva, thou shalt never more  
Feel the least touch of avarice. Take him  
hence,  
And hang him instantly. If there be gold  
in hell,  
Enjoy it :—thine here, and thy life together,  
Is forfeited.

*Phil.* Was I sent for to this purpose?

*Parth.* Mercy for all my service ; Cæsar,  
mercy !

*Cæs.* Should Jove plead for him, 'tis  
resolved he dies,  
And he that speaks one syllable to dissuade  
me ;  
And therefore tempt me not. It is but justice :  
Since such as wilfully would hourly die,  
Must tax themselves, and not my cruelty.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—*A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter Julia, Domitilla, and Stephanos.*

*Ful.* No, Domitilla ; if you but compare  
What I have suffered with your injuries,  
(Though great ones, I confess,) they will  
appear

Like molehills to Olympus.

*Domitil.* You are tender  
Of your own wounds, which makes you lose  
the feeling

And sense of mine. The incest he committed  
With you, and publicly profess'd, in scorn  
Of what the world durst censure, may  
admit

Some weak defence, as being borne head-  
long to it,

But in a many way, to enjoy your beauties :  
Besides, won by his perjuries, that he would  
Salute you with the title of Augusta,  
Your faint denial show'd a full consent,  
And grant to his temptations. But poor I,  
That would not yield, but was with violence  
forced

To serve his lusts, and in a kind Tiberius  
At Capreæ never practis'd, have not here  
One conscious touch to rise up my accuser ;  
I, in my will, being innocent.

*Steph.* Pardon me,

Great princesses, though I presume to tell  
you,

Wasting your time in childish lamentations,  
You do degenerate from the blood you  
spring from :

For there is something more in Rome ex-  
pected

From Titus' daughter, and his uncle's heir,

Than womanish complaints, after such  
wrongs

Which mercy cannot pardon. But you'll say,  
Your hands are weak, and should you but  
attempt

A just revenge on this inhuman monster,  
This prodigy of mankind, bloody Domitian  
Hath ready swords at his command, as well  
As islands to confine you, to remove  
His doubts, and fears, did he but entertain  
The least suspicion you contrived or plotted  
Against his person.

*Ful.* 'Tis true, Stephanos ;  
The legions that sack'd Jerusalem,  
Under my father Titus, are sworn his,  
And I no more remember'd.

*Domitil.* And to lose  
Ourselves by building on impossible hopes,  
Were desperate madness.

*Steph.* You conclude too fast.  
One single arm, whose master does contemn  
His own life, holds a full command o'er his,  
Spite of his guards. I was your bondman,  
lady,

And you my gracious patroness ; my wealth  
And liberty your gift ; and, though no soldier,  
To whom or custom or example makes  
Grim death appear less terrible, I dare die  
To do you service in a fair revenge :  
And it will better suit your births and  
honours

To fall at once, than to live ever slaves  
To his proud empress, that insults upon  
Your patient sufferings. Say but you, *Go on !*  
And I will reach his heart, or perish in  
The noble undertaking.

*Domitil.* Your free offer  
Confirms your thankfulness, which I acknow-  
ledge

A satisfaction for a greater debt  
Than what you stand engaged for ; but I  
must not,

Upon uncertain grounds, hazard so grateful  
And good a servant. The immortal Powers  
Protect a prince, though sold to impious acts,  
And seem to slumber, till his roaring crimes  
Awake their justice ; but then, looking down,  
And with impartial eyes, on his contempt  
Of all religion, and moral goodness,  
They, in their secret judgments, do determine  
To leave him to his wickedness, which sinks  
him,

When he is most secure.

*Ful.* His cruelty  
Increasing daily, of necessity  
Must render him as odious to his soldiers,  
Familiar friends, and freedmen, as it hath  
done

Already to the senate : then forsaken

Of his supporters, and grown terrible  
Even to himself, and her he now so doats on,  
We may put into act what now with safety  
We cannot whisper.

*Steph.* I am still prepared  
To execute, when you please to command  
me :

Since I am confident he deserves much more  
That vindicates his country from a tyrant,  
Than he that saves a citizen.

*Enter Cænis.*

*Jul.* O, here's Cænis.

*Domitil.* Whence come you ?

*Cænis.* From the empress, who seems  
moved

In that you wait no better. Her pride's  
grown  
To such a height, that she disdains the  
service

Of her own women ; and esteems herself  
Neglected, when the princesses of the blood,  
On every coarse employment, are not ready  
To stoop to her commands.

*Domitil.* Where is her Greatness ?

*Cænis.* Where you would little think she  
could descend

To grace the room or persons.

*Jul.* Speak, where is she ?

*Cænis.* Among the players ; where, all  
state laid by,

She does enquire who acts this part, who  
that,

And in what habits ? blames the tirewomen  
For want of curious dressings ;—and, so  
taken

She is with Paris, the tragedian's shape,  
That is to act a lover, I thought once  
She would have courted him.

*Domitil.* In the mean time

How spends the emperor his hours ?

*Cænis.* As ever

He hath done heretofore ; in being cruel  
To innocent men, whose virtues he calls  
crimes.

And, but this morning, if 't be possible,  
He hath outgone himself, having condemn'd,  
At Aretinus his informer's suit,  
Palphurius Sura, and good Junius Rusticus,  
Men of the best repute in Rome for their  
Integrity of life ; no fault objected,  
But that they did lament his cruel sentence  
On Pætus Thræsea, the philosopher,  
Their patron and instructor.

*Steph.* Can Jove see this,  
And hold his thunder !

*Domitil.* Nero and Caligula

Only commanded mischiefs ; but our Cæsar  
Delights to see them.

*Jul.* What we cannot help,  
We may deplore with silence.

*Cænis.* We are call'd for  
By our proud mistress.

*Domitil.* We awhile must suffer.

*Steph.* It is true fortitude to stand firm  
against

All shocks of fate, when cowards faint and die  
In fear to suffer more calamity. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Cæsar and Parthenius.*

*Cæs.* They are then in fetters ?

*Parth.* Yes, sir, but—

*Cæs.* But what ?

I'll have thy thoughts ; deliver them.

*Parth.* I shall, sir :

But still submitting to your god-like pleasure,  
Which cannot be instructed—

*Cæs.* To the point.

*Parth.* Nor let your sacred majesty believe  
Your vassal, that with dry eyes look'd upon  
His father dragged to death by your com-  
mand,

Can pity these, that durst presume to censure  
What you decreed.

*Cæs.* Well ; forward.

*Parth.* 'Tis my zeal

Still to preserve your clemency admired,  
Temper'd with justice, that emboldens me  
To offer my advice. Alas ! I know, sir,  
These bookmen, Rusticus and Palphurius  
Sura,

Deserve all tortures : yet, in my opinion,  
They being popular senators, and cried up  
With loud applauses of the multitude,  
For foolish honesty, and beggarly virtue,  
'Twould relish more of policy, to have them  
Made away in private, with what exquisite  
torments

You please,—it skills not,—than to have them  
drawn

To the Degrees in public ; for 'tis doubted  
That the sad object may beget compassion  
In the giddy rout, and cause some sudden  
uproar

That may disturb you.

*Cæs.* Hence, pale-spirited coward !

Can we descend so far beneath ourself,  
As or to court the people's love, or fear  
Their worst of hate ? Can they, that are as dust  
Before the whirlwind of our will and power,  
Add any moment to us ? Or thou think,  
If there are gods above, or goddesses,  
But wise Minerva, that's mine own, and sure,  
That they have vacant hours to take into  
Their serious protection, or care,  
This many-headed monster ? Mankind lives  
In few, as potent monarchs, and their peers ;

And all those glorious constellations  
That do adorn the firmament, appointed,  
Like grooms, with their bright influence to  
attend

The actions of kings and emperors,  
They being the greater wheels that move  
the less.

Bring forth those condemn'd wretches ;—

[*Exit Parthenius.*]—let me see

One man so lost, as but to pity them,  
And though there lay a million of souls  
Imprison'd in his flesh, my hangmen's hooks  
Should rend it off, and give them liberty.  
Cæsar hath said it.

*Re-enter Parthenius, with Aretinus, and  
Guard ; Executioners dragging in Junius  
Rusticus and Palphurius Sura, bound back  
to back.*

*Aret.* 'Tis great Cæsar's pleasure,  
That with fix'd eyes you carefully observe  
The people's looks. Charge upon any man  
That with a sigh or murmur does express  
A seeming sorrow for these traitors' deaths.  
You know his will, perform it.

*Cæs.* A good bloodhound,  
And fit for my employments.

*Sura.* Give us leave  
To die, fell tyrant.

*Rust.* For, beyond our bodies,  
Thou hast no power.

*Cæs.* Yes ; I'll afflict your souls,  
And force them groaning to the Stygian lake,  
Prepared for such to howl in, that blaspheme  
The power of princes, that are gods on earth.  
Tremble to think how terrible the dream is  
After this sleep of death.

*Rust.* To guilty men  
It may bring terror : not to us, that know  
What 'tis to die, well taught by his example  
For whom we suffer. In my thought I see  
The substance of that pure untainted soul  
Of Thræsea, our master, made a star,  
That with melodious harmony invites us  
(Leaving this dunghill Rome, made hell by  
thee)

To trace his heavenly steps, and fill a sphere  
Above yon crystal canopy.

*Cæs.* Do invoke him  
With all the aids his sanctity of life  
Have won on the rewarders of his virtue ;  
They shall not save you.—Dogs, do you grin?  
torment them.

[*The Executioners torment them, they  
still smiling.*

So, take a leaf of Seneca now, and prove  
If it can render you insensible  
Of that which but begins here. Now an oil,  
Drawn from the Stoic's frozen principles,

Predominant over fire, were useful for you.  
Again, again. You trifle. Not a groan !—  
Is my rage lost ? What cursed charms defend  
them !

Search deeper, villains. Who looks pale, or  
thinks

That I am cruel ?

*Aret.* Over-merciful :  
'Tis all your weakness, sir.

*Parth.* I dare not shew  
A sign of sorrow ; yet my sinews shrink,  
The spectacle is so horrid. [*Aside.*

*Cæs.* I was never  
O'ercome till now. For my sake roar a little,  
And shew you are corporeal, and not turn'd  
Aerial spirits.—Will it not do ? By Pallas,  
It is unkindly done to mock his fury  
Whom the world styles Omnipotent ! I am  
tortured

In their want of feeling torments. Marius'  
story,

That does report him to have sat unmoved,  
When cunning surgeons ripp'd his arteries  
And veins, to cure his gout, compared to this,  
Deserves not to be named. Are they not  
dead ?

If so, we wash an Æthiop.  
*Sura.* No ; we live.

*Rust.* Live to deride thee, our calm pa-  
tience treading

Upon the neck of tyranny. That securely,  
As 'twere a gentle slumber, we endure  
Thy hangman's studied tortures, is a debt  
We owe to grave philosophy, that instructs us  
The flesh is but the clothing of the soul,  
Which growing out of fashion, though it be  
Cast off, or rent, or torn, like ours, 'tis then,  
Being itself divine, in her best lustre.

But unto such as thou, that have no hopes  
Beyond the present, every little scar,  
The want of rest, excess of heat or cold,  
That does inform them only they are mortal,  
Pierce through and through them.

*Cæs.* We will hear no more.

*Rust.* This only, and I give thee warning  
of it :

Though it is in thy will to grind this earth  
As small as atoms, they thrown in the sea  
too,

They shall seem re-collected to thy sense :—  
And, when the sandy building of thy greatness  
Shall with its own weight totter, look to see  
me

As I was yesterday, in my perfect shape ;  
For I'll appear in horror.

*Cæs.* By my shaking  
I am the guilty man, and not the judge,  
Drag from my sight these cursed ominous  
wizards,

That, as they are now, like to double-faced  
Janus,

Which way so'er I look, are Furies to me.  
Away with them! first shew them death,  
then leave

No memory of their ashes. I'll mock Fate.

[*Excute Executioners with  
Rusticus and Sura.*

Shall words fright him victorious armies  
circle?

No, no; & the fever does begin to leave me;

*Enter Domitia, Julia, and Cænis; Stephanos  
following.*

Or, were it deadly, from this living fountain  
I could renew the vigour of my youth,  
And be a second Virbius. O my glory!  
My life! command! my all!

*Dom.* As you to me are.

[*Embracing and kissing.*

I heard you were sad: I have prepared you  
sport

Will banish melancholy. Sirrah, Cæsar,  
(I hug myself for't,) I have been instructing  
The players how to act; and to cut off  
All tedious impertinence, have contracted  
The tragedy into one continued scene.

I have the art of it, and am taken more  
With my ability that way, than all knowledge  
I have but of thy love.

*Cæs.* Thou art still thyself,

The sweetest, wittiest,—

*Dom.* When we are abed

I'll thank your good opinion. Thou shalt see  
Such an Iphis of thy Paris!—and, to humble  
The pride of Domitilla, that neglects me,  
(Howe'er she is your cousin,) I have forced  
her

To play the part of Anaxarete—

You are not offended with it?

*Cæs.* Any thing

That does content thee yields delight to me:  
My faculties and powers are thine.

*Dom.* I thank you:

Prithee let's take our places. Bid them enter  
Without more circumstance.

*After a short flourish, enter Paris as Iphis.*

How do you like

That shape? methinks it is most suitable  
To the aspect of a despairing lover  
The seeming late-fallen, counterfeited tears  
That hang upon his cheeks, was my device.

*Cæs.* And all was excellent.

*Dom.* Now hear him speak.

Iphis. *That she is fair, (and that an  
epithet*

*Too foul to express her,} or descended nobly,  
Or rich, or fortunate, are certain truths*

*In which poor Iphis glories. But that these  
Perfections, in no other virgin found,  
Abused, should nourish cruelty and pride  
In the divinest Anaxarete,*

*Is, to my love-sick, languishing soul, a riddle;  
And with more difficulty to be dissolv'd,  
Than that the monster Sphinx, from the*

*steep rock,  
Offer'd to Cædipus. Imperious Love,  
As at thy everflaming altars Iphis,*

*Thy never-tired votary, hath presented,  
With scalding tears, whole hecatombs of*

*sighs,  
Preferring thy power, and thy Paphian*

*mother's,  
Before the Thunderer's, Neptune's, or Pluto's*

*(That, after Saturn, did divide the world,  
And had the sway of things, yet were com-*

*pell'd  
By thy inevitable shafts to yield,  
And fight under thy ensigns) be auspicious*

*To this last trial of my sacrifice  
Of love and service!*

*Dom.* Does he not act it rarely?  
Observe with what a feeling he delivers

His orisons to Cupid; I am rapt with't.

Iphis. *And from thy never-emptied quiver  
take*

*A golden arrow, to transfix her heart,  
And force her love like me; or cure my wound*

*With a leaden one, that may beget in me  
Hate and forgetfulness of what's now my*

*idol—  
But I call back my prayer; I have blas-*

*phemed  
In my rash wish: 'tis I that am unworthy;  
But she all merit, and may in justice chal-*

*lenge,  
From the assurance of her excellencies,  
Not love but adoration. Yet, bear witness,*

*All-knowing Powers! I bring along with me,  
As faithful advocates to make intercession,  
A loyal heart with pure and holy flames,  
With the foul fires of lust never polluted.*

*And, as I touch her threshold, which with  
tears,*

*My limbs benum'd with cold, I oft have  
wash'd,  
With my glad lips I kiss this earth, grown*

*proud  
With frequent favours from her delicate feet.*

*Dom.* By Cæsar's life he weeps! and I  
forbear

Hardly to keep him company.

Iphis. *Blest ground, thy pardon,  
If I profane it with forbidden steps.*

*I must presume to knock—and yet attempt it  
With such a trembling reverence, as if  
My hands [were now] held up for expiation*

*To the incensed gods to spare a kingdom.  
Within there, ho! something divine come  
forth  
To a distressed mortal.*

*Enter Latinus as a Porter.*

Port. *Ha! Who knocks there?*

Dom. *What a churlish look this knave has!*

Port. *Is't you, sirrah?*

*Are you come to pule and whine? Avaunt,  
and quickly;*

*Dog-whips shall drive you hence, else.*

Dom. *Churlish devil!*

*But that I should disturb the scene, as I live  
I would tear his eyes out.*

Cæs. *'Tis in jest, Domitia.*

Dom. *I do not like such jesting: if he  
were not*

*A flinty-hearted slave, he could not use  
One of his form so harshly. How the toad  
swells*

*At the other's sweet humility!*

Cæs. *'Tis his part:*

*Let them proceed.*

Dom. *A rogue's part will ne'er leave him.*

Iphis. *As you have, gentle sir, the happi-  
ness*

*(When you please) to behold the figure of  
The masterpiece of nature, limn'd to the life,  
In more than human Anaxarete,  
Scorn not your servant, that with suppliant  
hands*

*Takes hold upon your knees, conjuring  
you,*

*As you are a man, and did not suck the milk  
Of wolves, and tigers, or a mother of  
A tougher temper, use some means these eyes,  
Before they are wept out, may see your lady.  
Will you be gracious, sir?*

Port. *Though I lose my place for't,  
I can hold out no longer.*

Dom. *Now he melts,*

*There is some little hope he may die honest.*

Port. *Madam!*

*Enter Domitilla as Anaxarete.*

Anax. *Who calls? What object have we  
here?*

Dom. *Your cousin keeps her proud state  
still; I think*

*I have fitted her for a part.*

Anax. *Did I not charge thee  
I ne'er might see this thing more?*

Iphis. *I am, indeed,*

*What thing you please; a worm that you  
may tread on:*

*Lower I cannot fall to show my duty,  
Till your disdain hath digg'd a grave to  
cover*

*This body with forgotten dust; and, when  
I know your sentence, cruellest of women!  
I'll, by a willing death, remove the object  
That is an eyesore to you.*

Anax. *Wretch, thou dar'st not:  
That were the last and greatest service to me  
Thy dotting love could boast of. What dull  
fool*

*But thou couldst nourish any flattering hope,  
One of my height in youth, in birth and for-  
tune,*

*Could e'er descend to look upon thy lowness,  
Much less consent to make my lord of one  
I'd not accept, though offer'd for my slave?  
My thoughts stoop not so low.*

Dom. *There's her true nature:  
No personated scorn.*

Anax. *I wrong my worth,  
Or to exchange a syllable or look  
With one so far beneath me.*

Iphis. *Yet take heed,  
Take heed of pride, and curiously consider,  
How brittle the foundation is, on which  
You labour to advance it. Niobe,  
Proud of her numerous issue, durst contemn  
Latona's double burthen; but what follow'd?  
She was left a childless mother, and mourn'd  
to marble.*

*The beauty you o'erprize so, time or sickness  
Can change to loath'd deformity; your wealth  
The prey of thieves; queen Hecuba, Troy  
fred,*

*Ulysses' bondwoman: but the love I bring  
you*

*Nor time, nor sickness, violent thieves, nor  
fate,  
Can ravish from you.*

Dom. *Could the oracle  
Give better counsel!*

Iphis. *Say, will you relent yet,  
Revoking your decree that I should die?  
Or, shall I do what you command? resolve;  
I am impatient of delay.*

Anax. *Dispatch then:  
I shall look on your tragedy unmoved,  
Peradventure laugh at it; for it will prove  
A comedy to me.*

Dom. *O devil! devil!  
Iphis. Then thus I take my last leave.  
All the curses*

*Of lovers fall upon you; and, hereafter,  
When any man, like me contemn'd, shall  
study,*

*In the anguish of his soul, to give a name  
To a scornful, cruel mistress, let him only  
Say, This most bloody woman is to me,  
As Anaxarete was to wretched Iphis!—  
Now feast your tyrannous mind, and glory  
in*

*The ruins you have made: for Hymen's bands,  
That should have made us one, this fatal halter*

*For ever shall divorce us: at your gate,  
As a trophy of your pride and my affliction,  
I'll presently hang myself.*

*Dom.* Not for the world—

[Starts from her seat.]

Restrain him, as you love your lives!

*Cæs.* Why are you

Transported thus, Domitia? 'tis a play;  
Or, grant it serious, it at no part merits  
This passion in you.

*Par.* I ne'er purposed, madam,  
To do the deed in earnest; though I bow  
To your care and tenderness of me.

*Dom.* Let me, sir,  
Entreat your pardon; what I saw presented,  
Carried me beyond myself.

*Cæs.* To your place again,  
And see what follows.

*Dom.* No, I am familiar  
With the conclusion; besides, upon the sudden

I feel myself much indisposed.

*Cæs.* To bed then;

I'll be thy doctor.

*Aret.* There is something more  
In this than passion,—which I must find out,  
Or my intelligence freezes.

*Dom.* Come to me, Paris,  
To-morrow, for your reward.

[*Exeunt all but Domitilla and Stephanos.*]

*Steph.* Patroness, hear me;  
Will you not call for your share? Sit down  
with this,  
And, the next action, like a Gaditane  
strumpet,

I shall look to see you tumble!

*Domitil.* Prithee be patient.

I, that have suffer'd greater wrongs, bear  
this;

And that, till my revenge, my comfort is.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I.—*A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter Parthenius, Julia, Domitilla, and Cænis.*

*Parth.* Why, 'tis impossible.—Paris!

*Jul.* You observed not,

As it appears, the violence of her passion,  
When personating Iphis, he pretended,  
For your contempt, fair Anaxarete,  
To hang himself.

*Parth.* Yes, yes, I noted that;

But never could imagine it could work her  
To such a strange intemperance of affection,  
As to doat on him.

*Domitil.* By my hopes, I think not  
That she respects, though all here saw, and  
mark'd it;

Presuming she can mould the emperor's will  
Into what form she likes, though we, and all  
The informers of the world, conspired to  
cross it.

*Cæn.* Then with what eagerness, this  
morning, urging

The want of health and rest, she did entreat  
Cæsar to leave her!

*Domitil.* Who no sooner absent,  
But she calls, *Dwarf!* (so in her scorn she  
styles me,)

*Put on my pantofles; fetch pen and paper,  
I am to write:—*and with distracted looks,  
In her smock, impatient of so short delay  
As but to have a mantle thrown upon her,  
She seal'd—I know not what, but 'twas in-  
dorsed,

*To my loved Paris.*

*Jul.* Add to this, I heard her  
Say, when a page received it, *Let him wait me,  
And carefully, in the walk call'd our Retreat,  
Where Cæsar, in his fear to give offence,  
Unsent for, never enters.*

*Parth.* This being certain,  
(For these are more than jealous supposi-  
tions,)

Why do not you, that are so near in blood,  
Discover it?

*Domitil.* Alas! you know we dare not.  
'Twill be received for a malicious practice,  
To free us from that slavery which her pride  
Imposes on us. But, if you would please  
To break the ice, on pain to be sunk ever,  
We would aver it.

*Parth.* I would second you,  
But that I am commanded with all speed  
To fetch in Ascletrio the Chaldæan;  
Who, in his absence, is condemn'd of treason,  
For calculating the nativity  
Of Cæsar, with all confidence foretelling,  
In every circumstance, when he shall die  
A violent death. Yet, if you could approve  
Of my directions, I would have you speak  
As much to Aretinus, as you have  
To me deliver'd: he in his own nature  
Being a spy, on weaker grounds, no doubt,  
Will undertake it; not for goodness' sake,  
(With which he never yet held correspon-  
dence.)

But to endear his vigilant observings  
Of what concerns the emperor, and a little  
To triumph in the ruins of this Paris,  
That cross'd him in the senate-house.—

*Enter Aretinus.*

Here he comes,

His nose held up; he hath something in the wind,

Or I much err, already. My designs Command me hence, great ladies; but I leave My wishes with you. *[Exit.*

*Aret.* Have I caught your Greatness In the trap, my proud Augusta!

*Domitil.* What is't raps him?

*Aret.* And my fine Roman Actor! Is't even so?

No coarser dish to take your wanton palate, Save that which, but the emperor, none durst taste of!

'Tis very well. I needs must glory in This rare discovery: but the rewards Of my intelligence bid me think, even now, By an edict from Cæsar, I have power To tread upon the neck of slavish Rome, Disposing offices and provinces To my kinsmen, friends, and clients.

*Domitil.* This is more

Than usual with him.

*Jul.* Aretinus!

*Aret.* How!

No more respect and reverence tender'd to me,

But *Aretinus!* 'Tis confess'd that title, When you were princesses, and commanded all,

Had been a favour; but being, as you are, Vassals to a proud woman, the worst bondage, You stand obliged with as much adoration To entertain him, that comes arm'd with strength

To break your fetters, as tann'd galley-slaves Pay such as do redeem them from the oar. I come not to entrap you; but aloud Pronounce that you are manumized: and to make

Your liberty sweeter, you shall see her fall, This empress,—this Domitia,—what you will,—

That triumph'd in your miseries.

*Domitil.* Were you serious,

To prove your accusation I could lend Some help.

*Cæn.* And I.

*Jul.* And I.

*Aret.* No atom to me.—

My eyes and ears are every where; I know all, To the line and action in the play that took her:

Her quick dissimulation to excuse

Her being transported, with her morning passion.

I bribed the boy that did convey the letter,

And, having perused it, made it up again: Your griefs and angers are to me familiar. —That Paris is brought to her, and how far He shall be tempted.

*Domitil.* This is above wonder.

*Aret.* My gold can work much stranger miracles,

Than to corrupt poor waiters. Here, join with me— *[Takes out a petition.*

'Tis a complaint to Cæsar. This is that Shall ruin her, and raise you. Have you set your hands

To the accusation?

*Jul.* And will justify

What we've subscribed to.

*Cæn.* And with vehemence.

*Domitil.* I will deliver it.

*Aret.* Leave the rest to me then.

*Enter Cæsar, with his Guard.*

*Cæs.* Let our lieutenants bring us victory, While we enjoy the fruits of peace at home: And being secured from our intestine foes, (Far worse than foreign enemies,) doubts and fears,

Though all the sky were hung with blazing meteors,

Which fond astrologers give out to be Assured presages of the change of empires, And deaths of monarchs, we, undaunted yet, Guarded with our own thunder, bid defiance To them and fate; we being too strongly arm'd

For them to wound us.

*Aret.* Cæsar!

*Jul.* As thou art

More than a man—

*Cæn.* Let not thy passions be Rebellious to thy reason—

*Domitil.* But receive

*[Delivers the petition.*

This trial of your constancy, as unmoved As you go to or from the capitol, Thanks given to Jove for triumphs.

*Cæs.* Ha!

*Domitil.* Vouchsafe

A while to stay the lightning of your eyes, Poor mortals dare not look on.

*Aret.* There's no vein

Of yours that rises with high rage, but is An earthquake to us.

*Domitil.* And, if not kept closed With more than human patience, in a moment

Will swallow us to the centre.

*Cæn.* Not that we

Repine to serve her, are we her accusers.

*Jul.* But that she's fallen so low.



*Aret.* Which on sure proofs  
We can make good.

*Domitil.* And shew she is unworthy  
Of the least spark of that diviner fire  
You have spark'd upon her.

*Cæs.* I stand doubtful,  
And unresolved what to determine of you.  
In this malicious violence you have offer'd  
To the altar of her truth and pureness to me,  
You have but fruitlessly labour'd to sully  
A white robe of perfection, black-mouth'd  
envy

Could belch no spot on.—But I will put off  
The deity you labour to take from me,  
And argue out of probabilities with you,  
As if I were a man. Can I believe  
That she, that borrows all her light from me,  
And knows to use it, would betray her  
darkness

To your intelligence; and make that ap-  
parent,

Which, by her perturbations in a play,  
Was yesterday but doubted, and find none  
But you, that are her slaves, and therefore  
hate her,

Whose aids she might employ to make way  
for her?

Or Aretinus, whom long since she knew  
To be the cabinet counsellor, nay, the key  
Of Cæsar's secrets? Could her beauty raise  
her

To this unequal'd height, to make her fall  
The more remarkable? or must my desires  
To her, and wrongs to Lamia, be revenged  
By her, and on herself, that drew on both?  
Or she leave our imperial bed to court  
A public actor?

*Aret.* Who dares contradict  
These more than human reasons, that have  
power

To clothe base guilt in the most glorious  
shape

Of innocence?

*Domitil.* Too well she knew the strength  
And eloquence of her patron to defend her,  
And thereupon presuming, fell securely;  
Not fearing an accuser, nor the truth  
Produced against her, which your love and  
favour

Will ne'er discern from falsehood.

*Cæs.* I'll not hear  
A syllable more that may invite a change  
In my opinion of her. You have raised  
A fiercer war within me by this fable,  
Though with your lives you vow to make it  
story,

Than if, and at one instant, all my legions  
Revolted from me, and came arm'd against  
me.

Here in this paper are the swords pre-  
destined

For my destruction; here the fatal stars  
That threaten more than ruin; this the  
Death's head

That does assure me, if she can prove false,  
That I am mortal, which a sudden fever  
Would prompt me to believe, and faintly  
yield to.

But now in my full confidence what she  
suffers,

In that, from any witness but myself,  
I nourish a suspicion she's untrue,  
My toughness returns to me. Lead on,  
monsters,

And, by the forfeit of your lives, confirm  
She is all excellence, as you all baseness;  
Or let mankind, for her fall, boldly swear  
There are no chaste wives now, nor ever  
were. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*A private Walk in the  
Gardens of the Palace.*

*Enter Domitia, Paris, and Servants.*

*Dom.* Say we command, that none pre-  
sume to dare,

On forfeit of our favour, that is life,  
Out of a saucy curiousness, to stand  
Within the distance of their eyes or ears,  
Till we please to be waited on.

[*Exeunt Servants.*

And, sirrah,

Howe'er you are excepted, let it not  
Beget in you an arrogant opinion  
'Tis done to grace you.

*Par.* With my humblest service  
I but obey your summons, and should blush  
else,

To be so near you.

*Dom.* 'Twould become you rather  
To fear the greatness of the grace vouch-  
safed you

May overwhelm you; and 'twill do no less,  
If, when you are rewarded, in your cups  
You boast this privacy.

*Par.* That were, mightiest empress,  
To play with lightning.

*Dom.* You conceive it right.  
The means to kill or save is not alone  
In Cæsar circumscribed; for, if incensed,  
We have our thunder too, that strikes as  
deadly.

*Par.* 'Twould ill become the lowness of  
my fortune,

To question what you can do, but with all  
Humility to attend what is your will,  
And then to serve it.

*Dom.* And would not a secret,

Suppose we should commit it to your trust,  
Scald you to keep it ?

*Par.* Though it rag'd within me  
Till I turn'd cinders, it should ne'er have vent.  
To be an age a dying, and with torture,  
Only to be thought worthy of your counsel,  
Or actuate what you command to me,  
A wretched obscure thing, not worth your  
knowledge,

Were a perpetual happiness.

*Dom.* We could wish  
That we could credit thee, and cannot find  
In reason, but that thou, whom off I have  
seen

To personate a gentleman, noble, wise,  
Faithful, and gainsome, and what virtues else  
The poet pleases to adorn you with ;  
But that (as vessels still partake the odour  
Of the sweet precious liquors they contain'd)  
Thou must be really, in some degree,  
The thing thou dost present.—Nay, do not  
tremble ;

We seriously believe it, and presume  
Our Paris is the volume in which all  
Those excellent gifts the stage hath seen  
him graced with,  
Are curiously bound up.

*Par.* The argument  
Is the same, great Augusta, that I, acting  
A fool, a coward, a traitor, or cold cynic,  
Or any other weak and vicious person,  
Of force I must be such. O, gracious madam,  
How glorious soever, or deform'd,  
I do appear in the scene, my part being  
ended,

And all my borrow'd ornaments put off,  
I am no more, nor less, than what I was  
Before I enter'd.

*Dom.* Come, you would put on  
A wilful ignorance, and not understand  
What 'tis we point at. Must we in plain  
language,

Against the decent modesty of our sex,  
Say that we love thee, love thee to enjoy thee ;  
Or that in our desires thou art preferr'd,  
And Cæsar but thy second ? Thou in justice,  
If from the height of majesty we can  
Lockdown upon thy lowness, and embrace it,  
Art bound with fervor to look up to me.

*Par.* O, madam ! hear me with a patient  
ear,

And be but pleas'd to understand the reasons  
That do deter me from a happiness  
Kings would be rivals for. Can I, that owe  
My life, and all that's mine, to Cæsar's  
bounties,

Beyond my hopes or merits, shower'd upon  
me,

Make payment for them with ingratitude,

Falsehood, and treason ! Though you have  
a shape

Might tempt Hippolitus, and larger power  
To help or hurt than wanton Phædra had,  
Let loyalty and duty plead my pardon,  
Though I refuse to satisfy.

*Dom.* You are coy,  
Expecting I should court you. Let mean  
ladies

Use prayers and entreaties to their creatures  
To rise up instruments to serve their  
pleasures ;

But for Augusta so to lose herself,  
That holds command o'er Cæsar and the  
world,

Were poverty of spirit. Thou must—thou  
shalt :

The violence of my passion knows no mean,  
And in my punishments, and my rewards,  
I'll use no moderation. Take this only,  
As a caution from me ; threadbare chastity  
Is poor in the advancement of her servants,  
But wantonness magnificent ; and 'tis fre-  
quent

To have the salary of vice weigh down  
The pay of virtue. So, without more trifling,  
Thy sudden answer.

*Par.* In what a strait am I brought in !  
Alas ! I know that the denial's death ;  
Nor can my grant, discover'd, threaten  
more.

Yet, to die innocent, and have the glory  
For all posterity to report, that I  
Refused an empress, to preserve my faith  
To my great master ; in true judgment, must  
Show fairer, than to buy a guilty life  
With wealth and honour. 'Tis the base I  
build on :

I dare not, must not, will not.

*Dom.* How ! contemn'd ?  
Since hopes, nor fears, in the extremes, pre-  
vail not,

I must use a mean. [*Aside.*]—Think who  
'tis sues to thee.

Deny not that yet, which a brother may  
Grant to a sister : as a testimony

*Enter* Cæsar, Aretinus, Julia, Domitilla,  
Cænis, and a Guard behind.

I am not scorn'd, kiss me ;—kiss me again :  
Kiss closer. Thou art now my Trojan Paris,  
And I thy Helen.

*Par.* Since it is your will.  
*Cæs.* And I am Menelaus : but I shall be  
Something I know not yet.

*Dom.* Why lose we time  
And opportunity ? These are but salads  
To sharpen appetite : let us to the feast,  
[*Courting Paris wantonly.*]

Where I shall wish that thou wert Jupiter,  
And I Alcmena; and that I had power  
To lengthen out one short night into three,  
And so beget a Hercules.

*Cæs.* [*Comes forward.*] While Amphitritus  
Stands by, and draws the curtains.

*Par.* Oh!— [*Falls on his face.*]

*Dom.* Betray'd!

*Cæs.* No; taken in a net of Vulcan's  
filing,

Where, in myself, the theatre of the gods  
Are sad spectators, not one of them daring  
To witness, with a smile, he does desire  
To be so shamed for all the pleasure that  
You've sold your being for! What shall I  
name thee?

Ingrateful, treacherous, insatiate, all  
Invectives which, in bitterness of spirit,  
Wrong'd men have breathed out against  
wicked women,

Cannot express thee! Have I raised thee  
from

Thy low condition to the height of greatness,  
Command, and majesty, in one base act  
To render me, that was, before I hugg'd  
thee,

An adder, in my bosom, more than man,  
A thing beneath a beast! Did I force these  
Of mine own blood, as handmaids to kneel to  
Thy pomp and pride, having myself no  
thought

But how with benefits to bind thee mine;  
And am I thus rewarded! Not a knee,  
Nor tear, nor sign of sorrow for thy fault?  
Break, stubborn silence: what canst thou  
allege

To stay my vengeance?

*Dom.* This. Thy lust compell'd me  
To be a strumpet, and mine hath return'd it  
In my intent and will, though not in act,  
To cuckold thee.

*Cæs.* O, impudence! take her hence,  
And let her make her entrance into hell,  
By leaving life with all the tortures that  
Flesh can be sensible of. Yet stay. What  
power

Her beauty still holds o'er my soul, that  
wrongs

Of this unparadonable nature cannot teach me  
To right myself, and hate her!—Kill her.—  
Hold!

O that my dotage should increase from that  
Which should breed detestation. By  
Minerva,

If I look on her longer, I shall melt,  
And sue to her, my injuries forgot,  
Again to be received into her favour;  
Could honour yield to it! Carry her to her  
chamber;

Be that her prison, till in cooler blood  
I shall determine of her.

[*Exit Guard with Domitia.*]

*Aret.* Now step I in,  
While he's in this calm mood, for my re-  
ward.—

Sir, if my service hath deserved—

*Cæs.* Yes, yes:  
And I'll reward thee. Thou hast robb'd  
me of

All rest and peace, and been the principal  
means

To make me know that, of which if again  
I could be ignorant of, I would purchase it

*Re-enter Guard.*

With the loss of empire: Strangle him;  
take these hence too,

And lodge them in the dungeon. Could  
your reason,

Dull wretches, flatter you with hope to think  
That this discovery, that hath shower'd  
upon me

Perpetual vexation, should not fall

Heavy on you? Away with them!—stop  
their mouths;

I will hear no reply.

[*Exit Guard with Aretinus, Julia,  
Cænis, and Domitilla.*]

—O, Paris, Paris!

How shall I argue with thee? how begin  
To make thee understand, before I kill thee,  
With what grief and unwillingness 'tis forced  
from me?

Yet, in respect I have favour'd thee, I'll bear  
What thou canst speak to qualify or excuse  
Thy readiness to serve this woman's lust;  
And wish thou couldst give me such satis-  
faction,

As I might bury the remembrance of it.

Look up: we stand attentive.

*Par.* O, dread Cæsar!

To hope for life, or plead in the defence  
Of my ingratitude, were again to wrong you.  
I know I have deserved death; and my  
suit is,

That you would hasten it: yet, that your  
highness,

When I am dead, (as sure I will not live,)  
May pardon me, I'll only urge my frailty,  
Her will, and the temptation of that beauty  
Which you could not resist. How could  
poor I, then,

Fly that which follow'd me, and Cæsar sued  
for?

This is all. And now your sentence.

*Cæs.* Which I know not  
How to pronounce. O that thy fault had been  
But such as I might pardon! if thou hadst

In wantonness, like Nero, fired proud Rome,  
Betray'd an army, butcher'd the whole senate,  
Committed sacrilege, or any crime  
The justice of our Roman laws calls death,  
I had prevented any intercession,  
And freely sign'd thy pardon.

*Par.* But for this,  
Alas ! you cannot, nay, you must not, sir ;  
Nor let it to posterity be recorded,  
That Cæsar, unrevenged, suffer'd a wrong,  
Which, if a private man should sit down  
with it,

Cowards would baffle him.

*Cæs.* With such true feeling  
Thou arguest against thyself, that it  
Works more upon me, than if my Minerva,  
The grand protectress of my life and empire,  
On forfeit of her favour, cried aloud,  
Cæsar, show mercy ! and, I know not how,  
I am inclined to it. Rise. I'll promise  
nothing ;

Yet clear thy cloudy fears, and cherish hopes.  
What we must do, we shall do : we remember  
A tragedy we oft have seen with pleasure,  
Call'd *the False Servant*.

*Par.* Such a one we have, sir.

*Cæs.* In which a great lord takes to his  
protection

A man forlorn, giving him ample power  
To order and dispose of his estate  
In's absence, he pretending then a journey :  
But yet with this restraint that, on no terms,  
(This lord suspecting his wife's constancy,  
She having play'd false to a former husband,)  
The servant, though solicited, should consent,

Though she commanded him to quench her  
flames.

*Par.* That was, indeed, the argument.

*Cæs.* And what

Didst thou play in it !

*Par.* The *False Servant*, sir.

*Cæs.* Thou didst, indeed. Do the players  
wait without ?

*Par.* They do, sir, and prepared to act  
the story

Your majesty mention'd.

*Cæs.* Call them in. Who presents  
The injured lord !

*Enter Æsopus, Latinus, and a Lady.*

*Æsop.* 'Tis my part, sir.

*Cæs.* Thou didst not

Do it to the life ; we can perform it better.  
Off with my robe and wreath : since Nero  
scorn'd not

The public theatre, we in private may  
Disport ourselves. This cloak and hat,  
without

Wearing a beard, or other property,  
Will fit the person.

*Æsop.* Only, sir, a foil,  
The point and edge rebated, when you act,  
To do the murder. If you please to use this,  
And lay aside your own sword.

*Cæs.* By no means.  
In jest nor earnest this parts never from me,  
We'll have but one shortscene—That, where  
the lady

In an imperious way commands the servant  
To be unthankful to his patron : when  
My cue's to enter, prompt me :—Nay, begin,  
And do it sprightly ; though but a new actor,  
When I come to execution, you shall find  
No cause to laugh at me.

*Lat.* In the name of wonder,  
What's Cæsar's purpose !

*Æsop.* There is no contending.

*Cæs.* Why, when ?

*Par.* I am arm'd :  
And, stood grim Death now in my view,  
and his

Inevitable dart aim'd at my breast,  
His cold embraces should not bring an ague  
To any of my faculties, till his pleasures  
Were served and satisfied ; which done,  
Nestor's years

To me would be unwelcome. [*Aside.*

*Lady.* *Must we entreat,*  
*That were born to command ? or court a*  
*servant,*

*That owes his food and clothing to our bounty,*  
*For that, which thou ambitiously shouldst*  
*kneel for ?*

*Urge not in thy excuse, the favours of*  
*Thy absent lord, or that thou stand'st engaged*  
*For thy life to his charity ; nor thy fears*  
*Of what may follow, it being in my power*  
*To mould him any way.*

*Par.* *As you may me,*  
*In what his reputation is not wounded,*  
*Nor I, his creature, in my thankfulness suffer.*  
*I know you're young and fair ; be virtuous too,*  
*And loyal to his bed, that hath advanced you*  
*To the height of happiness.*

*Lady.* *Can my love-sick heart*  
*Be cured with counsel ? or durst reason ever*  
*Offer to put in an exploded plea*  
*In the court of Venus ? My desires admit not*  
*The least delay ; and therefore instantly*  
*Give me to understand what I must trust to :*  
*For, if I am refused, and not enjoy*  
*Those ravishing pleasures from thee, I run*  
*mad for,*

*I'll swear unto my lord, at his return,*  
*(Making what I deliver good with tears,)*  
*That brutishly thou wouldst have forced*  
*from me*

*What I make suit for. And then but imagine  
What 'tis to die, with these words, slave and  
traitor,*

*With burning corsives writ upon thy forehead,*

*And live prepared for't.*

*Par. This he will believe*

*Upon her information, 'tis apparent;*

*And then I'm nothing: and of two extremes,  
Wisdom says, choose the less. [Aside.]—*

*Rather than fall*

*Under your indignation, I will yield:*

*This kiss, and this, confirms it.*

*Æsop. Now, sir, now.*

*Cæs. I must take them at it?*

*Æsop. Yes, sir; be but perfect.*

*Cæs. O villain! thankless villain!—I  
should talk now;*

*But I've forgot my part. But I can do:*

*Thus, thus, and thus! [Stabs Paris.*

*Par. Oh! I am slain in earnest.*

*Cæs. 'Tis true; and 'twas my purpose,  
my good Paris:*

*And yet, before life leave thee, let the honour  
I've done thee in thy death bring comfort to  
thee.*

*If it had been within the power of Cæsar,  
His dignity preserved, he had pardon'd thee:  
But cruelty of honour did deny it.*

*Yet, to confirm I loved thee, 'twas my study,  
To make thy end more glorious, to distinguish*

*My Paris from all others; and in that  
Have shewn my pity. Nor would I let  
thee fall*

*By a centurion's sword, or have thy limbs  
Rent piecemeal by the hangman's hook,  
however*

*Thy crime deserved it: but, as thou didst  
live*

*Rome's bravest actor, 'twas my plot that  
thou*

*Shouldst die in action, and to crown it, die,  
With an applause enduring to all times,  
By our imperial hand.—His soul is freed  
From the prison of his flesh; let it mount  
upward!*

*And for this trunk, when that the funeral pile  
Hath made it ashes, we'll see it enclosed  
In a golden urn; poets adorn his hearse  
With their most ravishing sorrows, and the  
stage*

*For ever mourn him, and all such as were  
His glad spectators, weep his sudden death,  
The cause forgotten in his epitaph.*

*[Sad music; the Players bear off Paris'  
body, Cæsar and the rest following.]*

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the Palace, with  
an image of Minerva.*

*Enter Parthenius, Stephanos, and Guard.*

*Parth. Keep a strong guard upon him,  
and admit not*

*Access to any, to exchange a word  
Or syllable with him, till the emperor pleases  
To call him to his presence.—[Exit Guard.]*

*—The relation*

*That you have made me, Stephanos, of  
these late*

*Strange passions in Cæsar, much amaze me.  
The informer Aretinus put to death  
For yielding him a true discovery*

*Of the empress' wantonness; poor Paris  
kill'd first,*

*And now lamented; and the princesses  
Confined to several islands; yet Augusta,  
The machine on which all this mischief  
moved,*

*Received again to grace!*

*Steph. Nay, courted to it:*

*Such is the impotence of his affection!*

*Yet, to conceal his weakness, he gives out  
The people made suit for her, whom they  
hate more*

*Than civil war or famine. But take heed,  
My lord, that, nor in your consent nor wishes,  
You lend or furtherance or favour to*

*The plot contrived against her: should she  
prove it,*

*Nay, doubt it only, you are a lost man,  
Her power o'er doating Cæsar being now  
Greater than ever.*

*Parth. 'Tis a truth I shake at;*

*And, when there's opportunity—*

*Steph. Say but, Do,*

*I am yours, and sure.*

*Parth. I'll stand one trial more,*

*And then you shall hear from me.*

*Steph. Now observe*

*The fondness of this tyrant, and her pride.*

*[They stand aside.]*

*Enter Cæsar and Domitia.*

*Cæs. Nay, all's forgotten.*

*Dom. It may be, on your part.*

*Cæs. Forgiven too, Domitia:—'tis a  
favour*

*That you should welcome with more cheer-  
ful looks.*

*Can Cæsar pardon what you durst not hope  
for,*

*That did the injury, and yet must sue  
To her, whose guilt is wash'd off by his  
mercy,*

*Only to entertain it?*

*Dom.* I ask'd none ;  
And I should be more wretched to receive  
Remission for what I hold no crime,  
But by a bare acknowledgment, than if,  
By slighting and contemning it, as now,  
I dared thy utmost fury. Though thy  
flatterers

Persuade thee, that thy murders, lusts, and  
rapes,

Are virtues in thee ; and what pleases Cæsar,  
Though never so unjust, is right and lawful ;  
Or work in thee a false belief that thou  
Art more than mortal ; yet I to thy teeth,  
When circled with thy guards, thy rods, thy  
axes,

And all the ensigns of thy boasted power,  
Will say, Domitian, nay, add to it Cæsar,  
Is a weak, feeble man, a bondman to  
His violent passions, and in that my slave ;  
Nay, more my slave than my affections  
made me

To my loved Paris.

*Cæs.* Can I live and hear this ?

Or hear, and not revenge it ? Come, you  
know

The strength that you hold on me, do not  
use it

With too much cruelty ; for though 'tis  
granted

That Lydian Omphale had less command  
O'er Hercules, than you usurp o'er me,  
Reason may teach me to shake off the yoke  
Of my fond dotage.

*Dom.* Never ; do not hope it :

It cannot be. Thou being my beauty's  
captive,

And not to be redeem'd, my empire's larger  
Than thine, Domitian, which I'll exercise

With rigour on thee, for my Paris' death.

And, when I've forced those eyes, now red  
with fury,

To drop down tears, in vain spent to ap-  
pease me,

I know thy fervour such to my embraces,  
Which shall be, though still kneel'd for,  
still denied thee,

That thou with languishment shalt wish my  
actor

Did live again, so thou mightst be his  
second

To feed upon those delicacies, when he's  
sated.

*Cæs.* O my Minerva.

*Dom.* There she is, [*Points to the statue.*]  
invoke her :

She cannot arm thee with ability  
To draw thy sword on me, my power being  
greater :

Or only say to thy centurions,

Dare none of you do what I shake to think on,  
And, in this woman's death, remove the  
Furies

That every hour afflict me ?—Lamia's  
wrongs,

When thy lust forced me from him, are, in  
me,

At the height revenged ; nor would I out-  
live Paris,

But that thy love, increasing with my hate,  
May add unto thy torments ; so, with all  
Contempt I can, I leave thee. [*Exit.*]

*Cæs.* I am lost ;

Nor am I Cæsar. When I first betray'd  
The freedom of my faculties and will  
To this imperious siren, I laid down  
The empire of the world, and of myself,  
At her proud feet. Sleep all my ireful  
powers ?

Or is the magic of my dotage such,  
That I must still make suit to hear those  
charms

That do increase my thralldom ! Wake, my  
anger !

For shame, break through this lethargy, and  
appear

With usual terror, and enable me,  
Since I wear not a sword to pierce her heart,

Nor have a tongue to say this, *Let her die,*  
Though 'tis done with a fever-shaken hand,

[*Pulls out a table-book.*]

To sign her death. Assist me, great  
Minerva,

And vindicate thy votary ! [*writes*] So ; she's  
now

Among the list of those I have proscribed,  
And are, to free me of my doubts and fears,  
To die to-morrow.

*Steph.* That same fatal book  
Was never drawn yet, but some men of rank

Were mark'd out for destruction. [*Exit.*]

*Parth.* I begin

To doubt myself.

*Cæs.* Who waits there ?

*Parth.* [*coming forward.*] Cæsar.

*Cæs.* So !

These, that command arm'd troops, quake  
at my frowns,

And yet a woman slights them. Where's the  
wizard

We charged you to fetch in ?

*Parth.* Ready to suffer

What death you please to appoint him.

*Cæs.* Bring him in.

We'll question him ourself.

*Enter Tribunes, and Guard with  
Asclataro.*

Now, you, that hold

Intelligence with the stars, and dare prefix  
The day and hour in which we are to part  
With life and empire, punctually foretelling  
The means and manner of our violent end ;  
As you would purchase credit to your art,  
Resolve me, since you are assured of us,  
What fate attends yourself ?

*Ascle.* I have had long since  
A certain knowledge, and as sure as thou  
Shalt die to-morrow, being the fourteenth of  
The kalends of October, the hour five ;  
Spite of prevention, this carcass shall be  
Torn and devoured by dogs ;—and let that  
stand

For a firm prediction.

*Cæs.* May our body, wretch,  
Find never nobler sepulchre, if this  
Fall ever on thee ! Are we the great disposer  
Of life and death, yet cannot mock the stars  
In such a trifle ? Hence with the impostor ;  
And having cut his throat, erect a pile,  
Guarded with soldiers, till his cursed trunk  
Be turn'd to ashes : upon forfeit of  
Your life, and theirs, perform it.

*Ascle.* 'Tis in vain ;  
When what I have foretold is made apparent,  
Tremble to think what follows.

*Cæs.* Drag him hence,  
[The Tribunes and Guard bear off Asclataro.  
And do as I command you. I was never  
Fuller of confidence ; for, having got  
The victory of my passions, in my freedom  
From proud Domitia, (who shall cease to live,  
Since she disdains to love,) I rest unmoved :  
And, in defiance of prodigious meteors,  
Chaldeans' vain predictions, jealous fears  
Of my near friends and freedmen, certain hate  
Of kindred and alliance, or all terrors  
The soldiers' doubted faith, or people's rage  
Can bring to shake my constancy, I am  
arm'd.

That scrupulous thing styled conscience is  
sear'd up,  
And I insensible of all my actions,  
For which, by moral and religious fools,  
I stand condemn'd, as they had never been.  
And, since I have subdued triumphant love,  
I will not deify pale captive fear,  
Nor in a thought receive it : for, till thou,  
Wisest Minerva, that from my first youth  
Hast been my sole protectress, dost forsake  
me,  
Not Junius Rusticus' threaten'd apparition,  
Nor what this soothsayer but even now fore-  
told,  
Being things impossible to human reason,  
Shall in a dream disturb me. Bring my  
couch, there :

A sudden but a secure drowsiness

Invites me to repose myself. [*A couch  
brought in.*] Let music,  
With some choice ditty, second it :—[*Exit  
Parthenius.*]—The mean time,  
Rest there, dear book, which open'd, when  
I wake,

[*Lays the book under his pillow.*  
Shall make some sleep for ever.  
[*Music and a song.* *Cæsar sleeps.*

*Re-enter Parthenius and Domitia.*

*Dom.* Write my name  
In his bloody scroll, Parthenius ! the fear's  
idle :

He durst not, could not.

*Parth.* I can assure nothing ;  
But I observed, when you departed from him,  
After some little passion, but much fury,  
He drew it out : whose death he sign'd, I  
know not ;

But in his looks appear'd a resolution  
Of what before he stagger'd at. What he hath  
Determined of is uncertain, but too soon  
Will fall on you, or me, or both, or any,  
His pleasure known to the tribunes and cen-  
turians,

Who never use to enquire his will, but serve it.  
Now, if, out of the confidence of your power,  
The bloody catalogue being still about him,  
As he sleeps you dare peruse it, or remove it,  
You may instruct yourself, or what to suffer,  
Or how to cross it.

*Dom.* I would not be caught  
With too much confidence. By your leave,  
sir. Ha !

No motion !—you lie uneasy, sir,  
Let me mend your pillow.

[*Takes away the book.*

*Parth.* Have you it ?

*Dom.* 'Tis here.

*Cæs.* Oh !

*Parth.* You have waked him : softly,  
gracious madam,  
While we are unknown ; and then consult  
at leisure. [*Exeunt.*

*Dreadful music.* *The Apparitions of* Junius  
Rusticus and Palphurius Sura rise, with  
bloody swords in their hands ; they wave  
them over the head of Cæsar, who seems  
troubled in his sleep, and as if praying to  
the image of Minerva, which they scorn-  
fully seize, and then disappear with it.

*Cæs.* [*startling.*] Defend me, goddess, or  
this horrid dream  
Will force me to distraction ! whither have  
These furies borne thee ? Let me rise and  
follow.

I am bathed o'er with the cold sweat of death,

And am deprived of organs to pursue  
These sacrilegious spirits. Am I at once  
Robb'd of my hopes and being? No, I live—

[Rises distractedly.]

Yes, live, and have discourse, to know myself  
Of gods and men forsaken. What accuser  
Within me cries aloud, I have deserved it,  
In being just to neither? Who dares speak  
this?

Am I not Cæsar?—How! again repeat it?  
Presumptuous traitor, thou shalt die!—  
What traitor?

He that hath been a traitor to himself,  
And stands convicted here. Yet who can sit  
A competent judge o'er Cæsar? Cæsar. Yes,  
Cæsar by Cæsar's sentenced, and must suffer;  
Minerva cannot save him. Ha! where is she?  
Where is my goddess? vanish'd! I am lost  
then.

No; 'twas no dream, but a most real truth,  
That Junius Rusticus and Palphurius Sura,  
Although their ashes were cast in the sea,  
Were by their innocence made up again,  
And in corporeal forms but now appear'd,  
Waving their bloody swords above my head,  
As at their deaths they threaten'd. And  
methought,

Minerva, ravish'd hence, whisper'd that she  
Was, for my blasphemies, disarm'd by Jove,  
And could no more protect me. Yes, 'twas so,  
[Thunder and lightning.]

His thunder does confirm it, against which,  
Howe'er it spare the laurel, this proud wreath

*Enter three Tribunes.*

Is no assurance. Ha! come you resolved  
To be my executioners?

1 *Trib.* Allegiance

And faith forbid that we should lift an arm  
Against your sacred head.

2 *Trib.* We rather sue

For mercy.

3 *Trib.* And acknowledge that in justice  
Our lives are forfeited for not performing  
What Cæsar charged us.

1 *Trib.* Nor did we transgress it

In our want of will or care; for, being but  
men,

It could not be in us to make resistance,  
The gods fighting against us.

*Cæs.* Speak, in what

Did they express their anger? we will hear it,  
But dare not say, undaunted.

1 *Trib.* In brief thus, sir:

The sentence given by your imperial tongue,  
For the astrologer Ascletario's death,  
With speed was put in execution.

*Cæs.* Well.

1 *Trib.* For, his throat cut, his legs bound,  
and his arms

Pinion'd behind his back, the breathless trunk  
Was with all scorn dragg'd to the field of  
Mars,

And there, a pile being raised of old dry wood,  
Smear'd o'er with oil and brimstone, or what  
else

Could help to feed or to increase the fire,  
The carcass was thrown on it; but no sooner  
The stuff, that was most apt, began to flame,  
But suddenly, to the amazement of  
The fearless soldier, a sudden flash  
Of lightning, breaking through the scatter'd  
clouds,

With such a horrid violence forced its passage,  
And, as disdaining all heat but itself,

In a moment quench'd the artificial fire:

And before we could kindle it again,

A clap of thunder follow'd with such noise,

As if then Jove, incensed against mankind,

Had in his secret purposes determined

An universal ruin to the world.

This horror past, not at Deucalion's flood

Such a stormy shower of rain (and yet that  
word is

Too narrow to express it) was e'er seen:

Imagine rather, sir, that with less fury

The waves rush down the cataracts of Nile;

Or that the sea, spouted into the air

By the angry Orc, endangering tall ships

But sailing near it, so falls down again.—

Yet here the wonder ends not, but begins:

For, as in vain we labour'd to consume

The wizard's body, all the dogs of Rome,

Howling and yelling like to famish'd wolves,

Brake in upon us; and though thousands were

Kill'd in th' attempt, some did ascend the pile,

And with their eager fangs seized on the  
carcass.

*Cæs.* But have they torn it?

1 *Trib.* Torn it, and devour'd it.

*Cæs.* I then am a dead man, since all  
predictions

Assure me I am lost. O, my loved soldiers,

Your emperor must leave you! yet, however

I cannot grant myself a short reprieve,

I freely pardon you. The fatal hour

Steals fast upon me: I must die this morning

By five, my soldiers; that's the latest hour

You e'er must see me living.

1 *Trib.* Jove avert it!

In our swords lies your fate, and we will  
guard it.

*Cæs.* O no, it cannot be; it is decreed

Above, and by no strength here to be alter'd.

Let proud mortality but look on Cæsar,

Compass'd of late with armies, in his eyes

Carrying both life and death, and in his arms



Fathoming the earth ; that would be styled  
a God,

And is, for that presumption, cast beneath  
The low condition of a common man,  
Sinking with mine own weight.

1 *Trib.* Do not forsake  
Yourself, we'll never leave you.

2 *Trib.* We'll draw up  
More cohorts of your guard, if you doubt  
treason.

*Cæs.* They cannot save me. The offended  
gods,  
That now sit judges on me, from their envy  
Of my power and greatness here, conspire  
against me.

1 *Trib.* Endeavour to appease them.

*Cæs.* 'Twill be fruitless :  
I am past hope of remission. Yet, could I  
Decline this dreadful hour of five, these  
terrors,

That drive me to despair, would soon fly  
from me :

And could you but till then assure me—

1 *Trib.* Yes, sir ;  
Or we'll fall with you, and make Rome the urn  
In which we'll mix our ashes.

*Cæs.* 'Tis said nobly :  
I am something comforted : howe'er, to die  
Is the full period of calamity. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Another Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* Parthenius, Domitia, Julia, Cænis,  
Domitilla, Stephanos, Sejeius, and En-  
tellus.

*Parth.* You see we are all condemn'd ;  
there's no evasion ;  
We must do, or suffer.

*Steph.* But it must be sudden ;  
The least delay is mortal.

*Dom.* Would I were  
A man, to give it action !

*Domitil.* Could I make my approaches,  
though my stature  
Does promise little, I have a spirit as daring  
As hers that can reach higher.

*Steph.* I will take  
That burthen from you, madam. All the  
art is,

To draw him from the tribunes that attend  
him ;

For, could you bring him but within my  
sword's reach,

The world should owe her freedom from a  
tyrant  
To Stephanos.

*Sej.* You shall not share alone  
The glory of a deed that will endure  
To all posterity.

*Ent.* I will put in  
For a part, myself.

*Parth.* Be resolv'd, and stand close.  
I have conceived a way, and with the hazard  
Of my life I'll practise it, to fetch him hither.  
But then no trifling.

*Steph.* We'll dispatch him, fear not :  
A dead dog never bites.

*Parth.* Thus then at all.

[*Exit ; the rest conceal themselves.*]

*Enter* Cæsar and the Tribunes.

*Cæs.* How slow-paced are these minutes !  
in extremes,

How miserable is the least delay !  
Could I imp feathers to the wings of time,  
Or with as little ease command the sun  
To scourge his coursers up heaven's eastern  
hill,

Making the hour to tremble at, past re-  
calling,

As I can move this dial's tongue to six ;  
My veins and arteries, emptied with fear,  
Would fill and swell again. How do I look ?  
Do you yet see Death about me ?

1 *Trib.* Think not of him ;  
There is no danger : all these prodigies  
That do affright you, rise from natural causes ;  
And though you do ascribe them to yourself,  
Had you ne'er been, had happened.

*Cæs.* 'Tis well said,  
Exceeding well, brave soldier. Can it be,  
That I, that feel myself in health and  
strength,

Should still believe I am so near my end,  
And have my guards about me ? perish all  
Predictions ! I grow constant they are false,  
And built upon uncertainties.

1 *Trib.* This is right ;  
Now Cæsar's heard like Cæsar.

*Cæs.* We will to  
The camp, and having there confirm'd the  
soldier

With a large donative, and increase of pay,  
Some shall—I say no more.

*Re-enter* Parthenius.

*Parth.* All happiness,  
Security, long life, attend upon  
The monarch of the world !

*Cæs.* Thy looks are cheerful.

*Parth.* And my relation full of joy and  
wonder.

Why is the care of your imperial body,  
My lord, neglected, the fear'd hour being  
past,

In which your life was threaten'd ?

*Cæs.* Is't past five ?

*Parth.* Past six, upon my knowledge ;  
and, in justice,  
Your clock-master should die, that hath de-  
ferr'd  
Your peace so long. There is a post new  
lighted,  
That brings assured intelligence, that your  
legions  
In Syria have won a glorious day,  
And much enlarged your empire. I have  
kept him  
Conceal'd, that you might first partake the  
pleasure  
In private, and the senate from yourself  
Be taught to understand how much they owe  
To you and to your fortune.

*Cæs.* Hence, pale fear, then !

Lead me, Parthenius.

1 *Trib.* Shall we wait you ?

*Cæs.* No.

After losses guards are useful. Know your  
distance.

[*Exeunt Cæsar and Parthenius.*

2 *Trib.* How strangely hopes delude men !  
as I live,

The hour is not yet comc.

1 *Trib.* Howe'er, we are

To pay our duties, and observe the sequel.

[*Exeunt Tribunes. Domitia and the  
rest come forward.*

*Dom.* I hear him coming. Be constant.

*Re-enter Cæsar and Parthenius.*

*Cæs.* Where, Parthenius,  
Is this glad messenger ?

*Steph.* Make the door fast.—Here ;  
A messenger of horror.

*Cæs.* How ! betray'd ?

*Dom.* No ; taken, tyrant.

*Cæs.* My Domitia

In the conspiracy !

*Parth.* Behold this book.

*Cæs.* Nay, then I am lost. Yet, though  
I am unarm'd,  
I'll not fall poorly. [*Overthrows Stephanos.*

*Steph.* Help me.

*Ent.* Thus, and thus ! } *They stab*

*Sej.* Are you so long a falling ? } *him.*

*Cæs.* 'Tis done basely. [*Falls, and dies.*

*Parth.* This for my father's death.

*Dom.* This for my Paris.

*Jul.* This for thy incest.

*Domitil.* This for thy abuse  
Of Domitilla. [*They severally stab him.*

*Tribunes.* [*within.*] Force the doors !

*Enter Tribunes.*

O Mars !

What have you done ?

*Parth.* What Rome shall give us thanks for.

*Steph.* Dispatch'd a monster.

1 *Trib.* Yet he was our prince,

However wicked ; and, in you, this murder,—

Which whosoe'er succeeds him will revenge :  
Nor will we, that serv'd under his command,  
Consent that such a monster as thyself,  
(For in thy wickedness Augusta's title  
Hath quite forsook thee,) thou, that wert  
the ground

Of all these mischiefs, shall go hence un-  
punish'd.

Lay hands on her, and drag her to her sen-  
tence.—

We will refer the hearing to the senate,  
Who may at their best leisure censure you.  
Take up his body : he in death hath paid  
For all his cruelties. Here's the difference ;  
Good kings are mourn'd for after life ; but ill,  
And such as govern'd only by their will,  
And not their reason, unlamented fall ;  
No good man's tear shed at their funeral.

[*Exeunt ; the Tribunes bearing the body of  
Cæsar.*



# The Great Duke of Florence.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Cozimo, *duke of Florence.*  
 Giovanni, *nephew to the duke.*  
 Sanazarro, *the duke's favourite.*  
 Carolo Charomonte, *Giovanni's tutor.*  
 Contarino, *secretary to the duke.*  
 Alphonso, }  
 Hippolito, } *counsellors of state.*  
 Hieronimo, }  
 Calandrino, *a merry fellow, servant to Giovanni.*

Bernardo, }  
 Caponi, } *servants to Charomonte.*  
 Pefruchio, }  
*A Gentleman.*  
 Fiorinda, *duchess of Urbin.*  
 Lidia, *daughter to Charomonte.*  
 Calaminta, *servant to Fiorinda.*  
 Petronella, *a foolish servant to Lidia.*  
*Attendants, Servants, &c.*

SCENE,—Partly in Florence, and partly at the residence of Charomonte in the country.

### ACT I.

SCENE I.—*The Country. A Room in Charomonte's House.*

*Enter Charomonte and Contarino.*

*Char.* You bring your welcome with you.

*Cont.* Sir, I find it

In every circumstance.

*Char.* Again most welcome.

Yet, give me leave to wish (and pray you, excuse me,

For I must use the freedom I was born with) The great duke's pleasure had commanded you

To my poor house upon some other service; Not this you are design'd to: but his will Must be obey'd, howe'er it ravish from me The happy conversation of one As dear to me as the old Romans held Their household Lars, whom they believed had power

To bless and guard their families.

*Cont.* 'Tis received so

On my part, signior; nor can the duke But promise to himself as much as may Be hoped for from a nephew. And 'twere weakness

In any man to doubt, that Giovanni, Train'd up by your experience and care In all those arts peculiar and proper

To future greatness, of necessity Must in his actions, being grown a man, Make good the princely education Which he derived from you.

*Char.* I have discharged,

To the utmost of my power, the trust the duke

Committed to me, and with joy perceive The seed of my endeavours was not sown Upon the barren sands, but fruitful glebe, Which yields a large increase: my noble charge,

By his sharp wit, and pregnant apprehension, Instructing those that teach him; making use,

Not in a vulgar and pedantic form, Of what's read to him, but 'tis straight digested,

And truly made his own. His grave discourse,

In one no more indebted unto years, Amazes such as hear him: horsemanship, And skill to use his weapon, are by practice Familiar to him: as for knowledge in Music, he needs it not, it being born with him;

All that he speaks being with such grace deliver'd,

That it makes perfect harmony.

*Cont.* You describe

A wonder to me.

*Char.* Sir, he is no less;

And that there may be nothing wanting that May render him complete, the sweetness of His disposition so wins on all Appointed to attend him, that they are Rivals, even in the coarsest office, who Shall get precedency to do him service; Which they esteem a greater happiness, Than if they had been fashion'd and built up To hold command o'er others.

*Cont.* And what place

Does he now bless with his presence?

*Char.* He is now

Running at the ring, at which he's excellent.  
He does allot for every exercise  
A several hour; for sloth, the nurse of vices,  
And rust of action, is a stranger to him.  
But I fear I am tedious, let us pass,  
If you please, to some other subject, though  
I cannot

Deliver him as he deserves.

*Cont.* You have given him  
A noble character.

*Char.* And how, I pray you,  
{For we, that never look beyond our villas,  
Must be inquisitive,} are state affairs  
Carried in court?

*Cont.* There's little alteration:  
Some rise, and others fall, as it stands with  
The pleasure of the duke, their great dis-  
poser.

*Char.* Does Lodovico Sanazarro hold  
Weight, and grace with him?

*Cont.* Every day new honours  
Are shower'd upon [him, and without the  
envy

Of such as are good men; since all confess  
The service done our master in his wars  
'Gainst Pisa and Sienna may with justice  
Claim what's conferr'd upon him.

*Char.* 'Tis said nobly;  
For princes never more make known their  
wisdom,

Than when they cherish goodness where  
they find it:

They being men, and not gods, Contarino,  
They can give wealth and titles, but no  
virtues;

That is without their power. When they  
advance,

Not out of judgment, but deceiving fancy,  
An undeserving man, howe'er set off  
With all the trim of greatness, state, and  
power,

And of a creature even grown terrible  
To him from whom he took his giant form,  
This thing is still a comet, no true star;  
And when the bounties feeding his false fire  
Begin to fail, will of itself go out,  
And what was dreadful, proves ridiculous.

But in our Sanazarro 'tis not so,  
He being pure and tried gold; and any stamp  
Of grace, to make him current to the world,  
The duke is pleased to give him, will add  
honour

To the great bestower; for he, though  
allow'd

Companion to his master, still preserves  
His majesty in full lustre.

*Cont.* He, indeed,  
At no part does take from it, but becomes  
A partner of his cares, and eases him,

With willing shoulders, of a burthen which  
He should alone sustain.

*Char.* Is he yet married?

*Cont.* No, signior, still a bachelor;  
howe'er

It is apparent that the choicest virgin  
For beauty, bravery, and wealth, in Florence,  
Would, with her parents' glad consent, be  
won,

Were his affection and intent but known,  
To be at his devotion.

*Char.* So I think too.

But break we off—here comes my princely  
charge.

*Enter Giovanni and Calandrino.*

Make your approaches boldly; you will find  
A courteous entertainment. [*Cont. kneels.*

*Giov.* Pray you, forbear

My hand, good signior; 'tis a ceremony  
Not due to me. 'Tis fit we should embrace  
With mutual arms.

*Cont.* It is a favour, sir,  
I grieve to be denied.

*Giov.* You shall o'ercome:

But 'tis your pleasure, not my pride, that  
grants it.

Nay, pray you, guardian, and good sir,  
put on:

How ill it shews to have that reverend head  
Uncover'd to a boy!

*Char.* Your excellence

Must give me liberty to observe the distance  
And duty that I owe you.

*Giov.* Owe me duty!

I do profess (and when I do deny it,  
Good fortune leave me!) you have been to me  
A second father, and may justly challenge,  
For training up my youth in arts and arms,  
As much respect and service, as was due  
To him that gave me life. And did you  
know, sir,

Or will believe from me, how many sleeps  
Good Charomonte hath broken, in his care  
To build me up a man, you must confess  
Chiron, the tutor to the great Achilles,  
Compared with him, deserves not to be named.  
And if my gracious uncle, the great duke,  
Still holds me worthy his consideration,  
Or finds in me aught worthy to be loved,  
That little rivulet flow'd from this spring;  
And so from me report him.

*Cont.* Fame already

Hath fill'd his highness' ears with the true  
story

Of what you are, and how much better'd by  
him.

And 'tis his purpose to reward the travail  
Of this grave sir, with a magnificent hand.

For, though his tenderness hardly could consent

To have you one hour absent from his sight,  
For full three years he did deny himself  
The pleasure he took in you, that you, here,  
From this great master, might arrive unto  
The theory of those high mysteries  
Which you, by action, must make plain in court.

'Tis, therefore, his request, (and that, from him,

Your excellence must grant a strict command,) That instantly (it being not five hours riding) You should take horse and visit him. These his letters

Will yield you further reasons.

[*Delivers a packet.*]

*Cal.* To the court!

Farewell the flower, then, of the country's garland.

This is our sun, and when he's set, we must not expect or spring or summer, but resolve for a perpetual winter.

*Char.* Pray you, observe

[*Giovanni reading the letters.*]

The frequent changes in his face.

*Cont.* As if

His much unwillingness to leave your house Contended with his duty.

*Char.* Now he appears

Collected and resolved.

*Giov.* It is the duke!

The duke, upon whose favour all my hopes  
And fortunes do depend. Nor must I check  
At his commands for any private motives  
That do invite my stay here, though they are  
Almost not to be master'd. My obedience,  
In my departing suddenly, shall confirm  
I am his highness' creature; yet, I hope  
A little stay to take a solemn farewell  
Of all those ravishing pleasures I have tasted  
In this my sweet retirement, from my  
guardian,

And his incomparable daughter, cannot meet  
An ill construction.

*Cont.* I will answer that:

Use your own will.

*Giov.* I would speak to you, sir,

In such a phrase as might express the thanks  
My heart would gladly pay; but—

*Char.* I conceive you:

And something I would say; but I must not do it

In that dumb rhetoric which you make use of;

For I do wish you all—I know not how,  
My toughness melts, and, spite of my discretion,

I must turn woman. [*Embraces Giovanni.*]

*Cont.* What a sympathy  
There is between them!

*Cal.* Were I on the rack,  
I could not shed a tear. But I am mad,  
And, ten to one, shall hang myself for sorrow,  
Before I shift my shirt. But hear you, sir,  
(I'll separate you,) when you are gone, what will

Become of me?

*Giov.* Why, thou shalt to court with me.

[*Takes Char. aside.*]

*Cal.* To see you worried?

*Cont.* Worried, Calandrine!

*Cal.* Yes, sir: for, bring this sweet face to the court,

There will be such a longing 'mong the madams,

Who shall engross it first, nay, fight and scratch for't,

That, if they be not stopp'd, for entertainment  
They'll kiss his lips off. Nay, if you'll scapeso;  
And not be tempted to a further danger,  
These succubæ are so sharp set, that you must  
Give out you are an eunuch.

*Cont.* Have a better

Opinion of court-ladies, and take care  
Of your own stake.

*Cal.* For my stake, 'tis past caring.

I would not have a bird of unclean feathers  
Handsel his lime twig,—and so much for him:  
There's something else that troubles me.

*Cont.* What's that?

*Cal.* Why, how to behave myself in court,  
and tightly.

I have been told the very place transforms  
men,

And that not one of a thousand, that before  
Lived honestly in the country on plain salads,  
But bring him thither, mark me that, and  
feed him

But a month or two with custards and court  
cake-bread,

And he turns knave immediately.—I'd be  
honest;

But I must follow the fashion, or die a beggar.

*Giov.* And, if I ever reach my hopes,  
believe it,

We will share fortunes.

*Char.* This acknowledgement

*Enter Lidia.*

Binds me your debtor ever.—Here comes one  
In whose sad looks you easily may read  
What her heart suffers, in that she is forced  
To take her last leave of you.

*Cont.* As I live,

A beauty without parallel!

*Lid.* Must you go, then,

So suddenly?

*Giov.* There's no evasion, Lidia,  
To gain the least delay, though I would buy it  
At any rate. Greatness, with private men  
Esteem'd a blessing, is to me a curse ;  
And we, whom, for our high births, they  
conclude

The only freemen, are the only slaves.  
Happy the golden mean ! had I been born  
In a poor sordid cottage, not nurs'd up  
With expectation to command a court,  
I might, like such of your condition, sweetest,  
Have ta'en a safe and middle course, and  
not,

As I am now, against my choice, compell'd  
Or to lie grovelling on the earth, or raised  
So high upon the pinnacles of state,  
That I must either keep my height with  
danger,

Or fall with certain ruin.

*Lid.* Your own goodness  
Will be your faithful guard.

*Giov.* O, Lidia !—

*Cont.* So passionate ! [*Aside.*]

*Giov.* For, had I been your equal,  
I might have seen and liked with mine own  
eyes,

And not, as now, with others ; I might still,  
And without observation, or envy,  
As I have done, continued my delights  
With you, that are alone, in my esteem,  
The abstract of society : we might walk  
In solitary groves, or in choice gardens ;  
From the variety of curious flowers  
Contemplate nature's workmanship, and  
wonders :

And then, for change, near to the murmur of  
Some bubbling fountain, I might hear you  
sing,

And, from the well-tuned accents of your  
tongue,

In my imagination conceive  
With what melodious harmony a quire  
Of angels sing above their Maker's praises.  
And then with chaste discourse, as we re-  
turn'd,

Imp feathers to the broken wings of time :—  
And all this I must part from.

*Cont.* You forget  
The haste imposed upon us.

*Giov.* One word more,  
And then I come. And after this, when, with  
Continued innocence of love and service,  
I had grown ripe for Hymeneal joys,  
Embracing you, but with a lawful flame,  
I might have been your husband.

*Lid.* Sir, I was,  
And ever am, your servant ; but it was,  
And 'tis, far from me in a thought to cherish  
Such saucy hopes. If I had been the heir

Of all the globes and sceptres mankind  
bows to,

At my best you had deserved me ; as I am,  
Howe'er unworthy, in my virgin zeal  
I wish you, as a partner of your bed,  
A princess equal to you ; such a one  
That may make it the study of her life,  
With all the obedience of a wife, to please  
you.

May you have happy issue, and I live  
To be their humblest handmaid !

*Giov.* I am dumb,  
And can make no reply.

*Cont.* Your excellence  
Will be benighted.

*Giov.* This kiss, bathed in tears,  
May learn you what I should say.

*Lid.* Give me leave

To wait on you to your horse.

*Char.* And me to bring you  
To the one half of your journey.

*Giov.* Your love puts  
Your age to too much trouble.

*Char.* I grow young,  
When most I serve you.

*Cont.* Sir, the duke shall thank you.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—Florence. *A Room in the  
Palace.*

*Enter* Alphonso, Hippolito, and Hieronimo.

*Alph.* His highness cannot take it ill.

*Hip.* However,  
We with our duties shall express our care  
For the safety of his dukedom.

*Hier.* And our loves

*Enter* Cozimo.

To his person.—Here he comes : present it  
boldly.

[*They kneel, Alphonso tenders a paper.*]

*Coz.* What needs this form ? We are not  
grown so proud

As to disdain familiar conference  
With such as are to counsel and direct us.  
This kind of adoration showed not well  
In the old Roman emperors, who, forgetting  
That they were flesh and blood, would be  
styled gods :

In us to suffer it, were worse. Pray you,  
rise. [*Reads.*]

Still the old suit ! With too much curious-  
ness

You have too often search'd this wound,  
which yields

Security and rest, not trouble to me.  
For here you grieve, that my firm resolution  
Continues me a widower ; and that  
My want of issue to succeed me in

My government, when I am dead, may breed

Distraction in the state, and make the name And family of the Medici, now admired, Contemptible.

*Hip.* And with strong reasons, sir.

*Alph.* For, were you old, and past hope to beget

The model of yourself, we should be silent.

*Hier.* But, being in your height and pride of years,

As you are now, great sir, and having, too, In your possession the daughter of The deceased duke of Urbin, and his heir, Whose guardian you are made; were you but pleased

To think her worthy of you, besides children,

The dukedom she brings with her for a dower

Will yield a large increase of strength and power

To those fair territories which already Acknowledge you their absolute lord.

*Coz.* You press us

With solid arguments, we grant; and, though We stand not bound to yield account to any Why we do this or that, (the full consent Of our subjects being included in our will,) We, out of our free bounties, will deliver The motives that divert us. You well know That, three years since, to our much grief, we lost

Our dutchess; such a dutchess, that the world,

In her whole course of life, yields not a lady That can with imitation deserve

To be her second: in her grave we buried All thoughts of woman: let this satisfy

For any second marriage. Now, whereas You name the heir of Urbin, as a princess

Of great revenues, 'tis confess'd she is so: But for some causes private to ourself,

We have disposed her otherwise. Yet despair not;

For you, ere long, with joy shall understand That in our princely care we have provided

One worthy to succeed us.

*Enter Sanazarro.*

*Hip.* We submit,

And hold the counsels of great Cozimo Oraculous.

*Coz.* My Sanazarro!—Nay,

Forbear all ceremony. You look sprightly, friend,

And promise in your clear aspect some novel That may delight us.

*Sanaz.* O sir, I would not be

The harbinger of aught that might distaste you:

And therefore know (for 'twere a sin to torture Your highness' expectation) your vice-admiral,

By my directions, hath surprised the galleys Appointed to transport the Asian tribute Of the great Turk; a richer prize was never Brought into Florence.

*Coz.* Still my nightingale,

That with sweet accents dost assure me that My spring of happiness comes fast upon me! Embrace me boldly. I pronounce that wretch An enemy to brave and thriving action, That dares believe but in a thought, we are Too prodigal in our favours to this man, Whose merits, though with him we should divide

Our dukedom, still continue us his debtor.

*Hip.* 'Tis far from me.

*Alph.* We all applaud it.

*Coz.* Nay, blush not, Sanazarro, we are proud

Of what we build up in thee; nor can our Election be disparaged, since we have not Received into our bosom and our grace A glorious lazy drone, grown fat with feeding On others' toil, but an industrious bee, That crops the sweet flowers of our enemies, And every happy evening returns Laden with wax and honey to our hive.

*Sanaz.* My best endeavours never can discharge

The service I should pay.

*Coz.* Thou art too modest;

But we will study how to give, and when,

*Enter Giovanni and Contarino.*

Before it be demanded.—Giovanni! My nephew! let me eye thee better, boy. In thee, methinks, my sister lives again; For her love I will be a father to thee, For thou art my adopted son.

*Giov.* Your servant, And humblest subject.

*Coz.* Thy hard travel, nephew, Requires soft rest, and therefore we forbear, For the present, an account how thou hast spent

Thy absent hours. See, signiors, see, our care, Without a second bed, provides you of A hopeful prince. Carry him to his lodgings, And, for his further honour, Sanazarro, With the rest, do you attend him.

*Giov.* All true pleasures Circle your highness!

*Sanaz.* As the rising sun, We do receive you.

*Giov.* May this never set,

But shine upon you ever !

[*Exeunt* Giovanni, Sanazarro, Hieronimo, Alphonso, and Hippolito.

*Coz.* Contarino !

*Cont.* My gracious lord.

*Coz.* What entertainment found you From Carolo de Charomonte ?

*Cont.* Free,

And bountiful. He's ever like himself, Noble and hospitable.

*Coz.* But did my nephew

Depart thence willingly ?

*Cont.* He obey'd your summons

As did become him. Yet it was apparent, But that he durst not cross your will, he would Have sojourn'd longer there, he ever finding Variety of sweetest entertainment.

But there was something else ; nor can I blame His youth, though with some trouble he took leave

Of such a sweet companion.

*Coz.* Who was it ?

*Cont.* The daughter, sir, of signior Carolo, Fair Lidia, a virgin, at all parts,

But in her birth and fortunes, equal to him. The rarest beauties Italy can make boast of, Are but mere shadows to her, she the substance

Of all perfection. And what increases

The wonder, sir, her body's matchless form Is better'd by the pureness of her soul.

Such sweet discourse, such ravishing behaviour,

Such charming language, such enchanting manners,

With a simplicity that shames all courtship, Flow hourly from her, that I do believe

Had Circe or Calypso her sweet graces,

Wandering Ulysses never had remember'd Penelope, or Ithaca.

*Coz.* Be not rapt so.

*Cont.* Your Excellence would be so, had you seen her.

*Coz.* Take up, take up.—But did your observation

Note any passage of affection Between her and my nephew ?

*Cont.* How it should

Be otherwise between them, is beyond

My best imagination. Cupid's arrows

Were useless there ; for, of necessity,

Their years and dispositions do accord so,

They must wound one another.

*Coz.* Umph ! Thou art

My secretary, Contarino, and more skill'd

In politic designs of state, than in

Thy judgment of a beauty ; give me leave,

In this, to doubt it.—Here. Go to my cabinet,

You shall find there letters newly received,

Touching the state of Ubin.

Pray you, with care peruse them : leave the search

Of this to us.

*Cont.* I do obey in all things. [*Exit.*

*Coz.* Lidia ! a diamond so long conceal'd, And never worn in court ! of such sweet feature !

And he on whom I fix my dukedom's hopes Made captive to it ! Umph ! 'tis somewhat strange.

Our eyes are everywhere, and we will make A strict inquiry.—Sanazarro !

*Re-enter* Sanazarro.

*Sanaz.* Sir.

*Coz.* Is my nephew at his rest ?

*Sanaz.* I saw him in bed, sir.

*Coz.* 'Tis well ; and does the princess Florinda,

Nay, do not blush, she is rich Urbin's heir, Continue constant in her favours to you ?

*Sanaz.* Dread sir, she may dispense them as she pleases ;

But I look up to her as on a princess

I dare not be ambitious of, and hope

Her prodigal graces shall not render me

Offender to your highness.

*Coz.* Not a scruple.

He whom I favour, as I do my friend,

May take all lawful graces that become him :

But touching this hereafter. I have now

(And though perhaps it may appear a trifle) Serious employment for thee.

*Sanaz.* I stand ready

For any act you please.

*Coz.* I know it, friend.

Have you ne'er heard of Lidia, the daughter Of Carolo Charomonte ?

*Sanaz.* Him I know, sir,

For a noble gentleman, and my worthy friend ; But never heard of her.

*Coz.* She is deliver'd,

And feelingly to us by Contarino, For a masterpiece in nature. I would have you

Ride suddenly thither to behold this wonder,

But not as sent by us ; that's our first caution :

The second is, and carefully observe it,

That, though you are a bachelor, and endow'd with

All those perfections that may take a virgin,

On forfeit of our favour do not tempt her :

It may be her fair graces do concern us.

Pretend what business you think fit, to gain

Access unto her father's house, and, there,

Make full discovery of her, and return me

A true relation :—I have some ends in it,

With which we will acquaint you.



*Sanaz.* This is, sir,  
An easy task.

*Cos.* Yet one that must exact  
Your secrecy and diligence. Let not  
Your stay be long.

*Sanaz.* It shall not, sir.

*Cos.* Farewell,  
And be, as you would keep our favour,  
careful. [Exeunt.

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*The same. A Room in  
Florinda's House.*

*Enter Florinda and Calaminta.*

*Fior.* How does this dressing shew?

*Calam.* 'Tis of itself

Curious and rare; but, borrowing ornament,  
As it does from your grace, that deigns  
to wear it,  
Incomparable.

*Fior.* Thou flatter'st me.

*Calam.* I cannot,

Your excellence is above it.

*Fior.* Were we less perfect,

Yet, being as we are, an absolute princess,  
We of necessity must be chaste, wise, fair,  
By our prerogative!—yet all these fail  
To move where I would have them. How  
received

Count Sanazarro the rich scarf I sent him  
For his last visit?

*Calam.* With much reverence,  
I dare not say affection. He express'd  
More ceremony in his humble thanks,  
Than feeling of the favour; and appear'd  
Wilfully ignorant, in my opinion,  
Of what it did invite him to.

*Fior.* No matter;

He's blind with too much light. Have you  
not heard

Of any private mistress he's engaged to?

*Calam.* Not any; and this does amaze  
me, madam,  
That he, a soldier, one that drinks rich wines,  
Feeds high, and promises as much as Venus  
Could wish to find from Mars, should in his  
manners

Be so averse to women.

*Fior.* Troth, I know not;

He's man enough, and, if he has a haunt,  
He preys, far off, like a subtle fox.

*Calam.* And that way

I do suspect him: for I learnt last night,  
When the great duke went to rest, attended  
by

One private follower, he took horse; but  
whither

He's rid, or to what end, I cannot guess at,  
But I will find it out.

*Fior.* Do, faithful servant;

*Enter Calandrino.*

We would not be abused.—Who have we  
here?

*Calam.* How the fool stares!

*Fior.* And looks as if he were  
Conning his neck-verse.

*Cal.* If I now prove perfect

In my A B C of courtship, Calandrino  
Is made for ever. I am sent—let me see,  
On a *How d'ye*, as they call't.

*Calam.* What wouldst thou say?

*Cal.* Let me see my notes. These are  
her lodgings; well.

*Calam.* Art thou an ass?

*Cal.* Peace! thou art a court wagtail,  
[Looking on his instructions.

To interrupt me.

*Fior.* He has given it you.

*Cal.* And then say to the illustrious *Fi-  
rin-da*—

I have it. Which is she?

*Calam.* Why this; fop-doodle.

*Cal.* Leave chattering, bull-finch; you  
would put me out,

But 'twill not do.—Then, after you have made  
Your three obeisances to her, kneel and kiss  
The skirt of her gown.—I am glad it is no  
worse.

*Calam.* And why so, sir?

*Cal.* Because I was afraid

That, after the Italian garb, I should  
Have kiss'd her backward.

*Calam.* This is sport unlooked for.

*Cal.* Are you the princess?

*Fior.* Yes, sir.

*Cal.* Then stand fair,

For I am choleric; and do not nip  
A hopeful blossom. Out again:—*Three low*

*Obeisances.*—

*Fior.* I am ready.

*Cal.* I come on, then.

*Calam.* With much formality.

*Cal.* Umph! One, two, three.

[*Makes antic curtesies.*

Thus far I am right. Now for the last.

[*Kisses the skirt of her gown.*]—O, rare!  
She is perfumed all over! Sure great women,  
Instead of little dogs, are privileged  
To carry musk-cats.

*Fior.* Now the ceremony

Is pass'd, what is the substance?

*Cal.* I'll peruse

My instructions, and then tell you.—*Her  
skirt kiss'd,*

*Inform her highness that your lord*—

*Calam.* Who's that?

*Cal.* Prince Giovanni, who entreats your grace,

That he, with your good favour, may have leave

To present his service to you. I think I have nick'd it

For a courtier of the first form.

*Fior.* To my wonder.

*Enter Giovanni and a Gentleman.*

Return unto the prince—but he prevents My answer. Calaminta, take him off; And, for the neat delivery of his message, Give him ten ducats: such rare parts as yours Are to be cherish'd.

*Cal.* We will share: I know

It is the custom of the court, when ten Are promised, five is fair. Fie! fie! the princess

Shall never know it, so you dispatch me quickly,

And bid me not come to-morrow.

*Calam.* Very good, sir.

[*Exeunt Calandrino and Calaminta.*]

*Giov.* Pray you, friend,

Inform the duke I am putting into act What he commanded.

*Gent.* I am proud to be employ'd, sir.

[*Exit.*]

*Giov.* Madam, that, without warrant, I presume

To trench upon your privacies, may argue Rudeness of manners; but the free access Your princely courtesy vouchsafes to all That come to pay their services, gives me hope To find a gracious pardon.

*Fior.* If you please, not

To make that an offence in your construction, Which I receive as a large favour from you, There needs not this apology.

*Giov.* You continue,

As you were ever, the greatest mistress of Fair entertainment.

*Fior.* You are, sir, the master;

And in the country have learnt to outdo All that in court is practised. But why should we

Talk at such distance? You are welcome, sir. We have been more familiar, and since You will impose the province (you should govern)

Of boldness on me, give me leave to say You are too punctual. Sit, sir, and discourse As we were used.

*Giov.* Your excellence knows so well

How to command, that I can never err When I obey you.

*Fior.* Nay, no more of this.

You shall o'ercome; no more, I pray you, sir.—

And what delights, pray you be liberal In your relation, bath the country life Afforded you?

*Giov.* All pleasures, gracious madam, But the happiness to converse with your sweet virtues.

I had a grave instructor, and my hours Design'd to serious studies yielded me Pleasure with profit in the knowledge of What before I was ignorant in; the signior, Carolo de Charomonte, being skilful To guide me through the labyrinth of wild passions, That labour'd to imprison my free soul A slave to vicious sloth.

*Fior.* You speak him well.

*Giov.* But short of his deserts. Then for the time

Of recreation, I was allow'd (Against the form follow'd by jealous parents In Italy) full liberty to partake His daughter's sweet society. She's a virgin Happy in all endowments which a poet Could fancy in his mistress; being herself A school of goodness, where chaste maids may learn,

Without the aid of foreign principles, By the example of her life and pureness, To be as she is, excellent. I but give you A brief epitome of her virtues, which, Dilated on at large, and to their merit, Would make an ample story.

*Fior.* Your whole age,

So spent with such a father, and a daughter, Could not be tedious to you.

*Giov.* True, great princess:

And now, since you have pleased to grant the hearing

Of my time's expense in the country, give me leave

To entreat the favour to be made acquainted What service, or what objects in the court, Have, in your excellency's acceptance, proved Most gracious to you.

*Fior.* I'll meet your demand,

And make a plain discovery. The duke's care

For my estate and person holds the first And choicest place: then, the respect the courtiers

Pay gladly to me, not to be contemn'd. But that which raised in me the most delight, (For I am a friend to valour,) was to hear The noble actions truly reported

Of the brave count Sanazarro. I profess When it hath been, and fervently, deliver'd, How holdly, in the horror of a fight,

Cover'd with fire and smoke, and, as if nature

Had lent him wings, like lightning he hath fallen

Upon the Turkish galleys, I have heard it  
With a kind of pleasur, which hath whisper'd to me,

This worthy must be cherish'd.

*Giov.* 'Twas a bounty

You never can repent.

*Fior.* I glory in it.

And when he did return, (but still with conquest,)

His armour off, not young Antinous  
Appear'd more courtly; all the graces that  
Render a man's society dear to ladies,  
Like pages waiting on him; and it does  
Work strangely on me.

*Giov.* To divert your thoughts,

Though they are fix'd upon a noble subject,  
I am a suitor to you.

*Fior.* You will ask,

I do presume, what I may grant, and then  
It must not be denied.

*Giov.* It is a favour

For which I hope your excellence will thank me.

*Fior.* Nay, without circumstance.

*Giov.* That you would please

To take occasion to move the duke,

That you, with his allowance, may command

This matchless virgin, Lidia, (of whom  
I cannot speak too much,) to wait upon you.  
She's such a one, upon the forfeit of  
Your good opinion of me, that will not  
Be a blemish to your train.

*Fior.* 'Tis rank! he loves her:

But I will fit him with a suit. [*Aside.*—I  
pause not,

As if it bred or doubt or scruple in me  
To do what you desire, for I'll effect it,

And make use of a fair and fit occasion;

Yet, in return, I ask a boon of you,

And hope to find you, in your grant to me,  
As I have been to you.

*Giov.* Command me, madam.

*Fior.* 'Tis near allied to yours. That  
you would be

A suitor to the duke, not to expose,

After so many trials of his faith,

The noble Sanazarro to all dangers,

As if he were a wall to stand the fury

Of a perpetual battery: but now

To grant him, after his long labours, rest

And liberty to live in court; his arms

And his victorious sword and shield hung up  
For monuments.

*Giov.* Umph!—I'll embrace, fair princess,

*Enter Cozimo.*

The soonest opportunity. The duke!

*Coz.* Nay, blush not; we smile on your  
privacy,

And come not to disturb you. You are  
equals,

And, without prejudice to either's honours,  
May make a mutual change of love and  
courtship,

Till you are made one, and with holy rites,  
And we give suffrage to it.

*Giov.* You are gracious.

*Coz.* To ourself in this: but now break  
off; too much

Taken at once of the most curious viands,  
Dulls the sharp edge of appetite. We are  
now

For other sports, in which our pleasure is  
That you shall keep us company.

*Fior.* We attend you. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*The Country. A Hall in  
Charomonte's House.*

*Enter Bernardo, Caponi, and Petruccio.*

*Bern.* Is my lord stirring?

*Cap.* No; he's fast.

*Pet.* Let us take, then,

Our morning draught. Such as eat store of  
beef,

Mutton, and capons, may preserve their  
healths

With that thin composition call'd small beer,  
As, 'tis said, they do in England. But Italians,  
That think when they have supp'd upon an  
olive,

A root, or bunch of raisins, 'tis a feast,  
Must kill those crudities rising from cold herbs,

With hot and lusty wines.

*Cap.* A happiness

Those tramontanes ne'er tasted.

*Bern.* Have they not

Store of wine there?

*Cap.* Yes, and drink more in two hours  
Than the Dutchmen or the Dane in four and  
twenty.

*Pet.* But what is't? French trash, made  
of rotten grapes,

And dregs and lees of Spain, with Welsh  
metheglin,

A drench to kill a horse! But this pure nectar,  
Being proper to our climate, is too fine

To brook the roughness of the sea; the spirit  
Of this begets in us quick apprehensions,

And active executions; whereas their  
Gross feeding makes their understanding

like it:

They can fight, and that's their all.

[*They drink.*

*Enter Sanazarro and Servant.*

*Sanaz.* Security  
Dwells about this house, I think ; the gate's  
wide open,

And not a servant stirring. See the horses  
Set up, and clothed.

*Serv.* I shall, sir. [Exit.

*Sanaz.* I'll make bold  
To press a little further.

*Bern.* Who is this,  
Count Sanazarro?

*Pet.* Yes, I know him. Quickly  
Remove the flaggon.

*Sanaz.* A good day to you, friends.  
Nay, do not conceal your physic ; I approve it,  
And, if you please, will be a patient with you.

*Pet.* My noble lord. [Drinks.

*Sanaz.* A health to yours. [Drinks.] Well  
done !

I see you love yourselves, and I commend you ;  
'Tis the best wisdom.

*Pet.* May it please your honour  
To walk a turn in the gallery, I'll acquaint  
My lord with your being here. [Exit.

*Sanaz.* Tell him I come  
For a visit only. 'Tis a handsome pile this.  
[Exit.

*Cap.* Why here is a brave fellow, and a  
right one ;  
Nor wealth nor greatness makes him proud.

*Bern.* There are  
Too few of them ; for most of our new  
courtiers,

(Whose fathers were familiar with the prices  
Of oil and corn, with when and where to  
vent them,

And left their heirs rich, from their know-  
ledge that way,)

Like gourds shot up in a night, disdain to  
speak

But to cloth of tissue.

*Enter Charomonte in a nightgown,  
Petruccio following.*

*Char.* Stand you prating, knaves,  
When such a guest is under my roof ! See all  
The rooms perfumed. This is the man that  
carries

The sway and swing of the court ; and I  
had rather

Preserve him mine with honest offices,  
than—

But I'll make no comparisons. Bid my  
daughter

Trim herself up to the height ; I know this  
courtier

Must have a smack at her ; and, perhaps,  
by his place,

Expects to wriggle further ; if he does,  
I shall deceive his hopes ; for I'll not taint  
My honour for the dukedom. Which way  
went he ?

*Cap.* To the round gallery.

*Char.* I will entertain him  
As fits his worth and quality, but no further.  
[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—*A Gallery in the same.*

*Enter Sanazarro.*

*Sanaz.* I cannot apprehend, yet I have  
argued

All ways I can imagine, for what reasons  
The great duke does employ me hither ; and,  
What does increase the miracle, I must  
render

A strict and true account, at my return,  
Of Lidia, this lord's daughter, and describe  
In what she's excellent, and where defective.

'Tis a hard task : he that will undergo  
To make a judgment of a woman's beauty,  
And see through all her plasterings and  
paintings,

Had need of Lynceus' eyes, and with more  
ease

May look, like him, through nine mud walls,  
than make

A true discovery of her. But the intents  
And secrets of my prince's heart must be  
Served, and not search'd into.

*Enter Charomonte.*

*Char.* Most noble sir,  
Excuse my age, subject to ease and sloth,  
That with no greater speed I have presented  
My service with your welcome.

*Sanaz.* 'Tis more fit  
That I should ask your pardon, for dis-  
turbing

Your rest at this unseasonable hour.

But my occasions carry me so near  
Your hospitable house, my stay being short  
too,

Your goodness, and the name of friend,  
which you

Are pleased to grace me with, gave me  
assurance

A visit would not offend.

*Char.* Offend, my lord !  
I feel myself much younger for the favour.  
How is it with our gracious master ?

*Sanaz.* He, sir,  
Holds still his wonted greatness, and con-  
fesses

Himself your debtor, for your love and care  
To the prince Giovanni ; and had sent  
Particular thanks by me, had his grace known

The quick dispatch of what I was design'd to  
Would have licensed me to see you.

*Char.* I am rich

In his acknowledgment.

*Sanaz.* Sir, I have heard

Your happiness in a daughter.

*Char.* Sits the wind there? [*Aside.*]

*Sanaz.* Fame gives her out for a rare  
masterpiece.

*Char.* 'Tis a plain village girl, sir, but  
obedient ;

That's her best beauty, sir.

*Sanaz.* Let my desire

To see her, find a fair construction from you :  
I bring no loose thought with me.

*Char.* You are that way,  
My lord, free from suspicion. Her own  
manners,

Without an imposition from me,

I hope, will prompt her to it.

*Enter Lidia and Petronella.*

As she is,

She comes to make a tender of that service  
Which she stands bound to pay.

*Sanaz.* With your fair leave,

I make bold to salute you.

*Lid.* Sir, you have it.

*Petron.* I am her gentlewoman, will he  
not kiss me too?

This is coarse, i'faith. [*Aside.*]

*Char.* How he falls off!

*Lid.* My lord, though silence best becomes  
a maid,

And to be curious to know but what  
Concerns myself, and with becoming dis-  
tance,

May argue me of boldness, I must borrow  
So much of modesty, as to inquire  
Prince Giovanni's health.

*Sanaz.* He cannot want  
What you are pleased to wish him.

*Lid.* Would 'twere so!

And then there is no blessing that can make  
A hopeful and a noble prince complete,  
But should fall on him. O! he was our  
north star,

The light and pleasure of our eyes.

*Sanaz.* Where am I?

I feel myself another thing! Can charms  
Be writ on such pure rubies? her lips melt  
As soon as touch'd! Not those smooth  
gales that glide

O'er happy Araby, or rich Sahæa,  
Creating in their passage gums and spices,  
Can serve for a weak simile to express  
The sweetness of her breath. Such a brave  
stature

Homer bestow'd on Pallas, every limb  
Proportion'd to it!

*Char.* This is strange.—My lord!

*Sanaz.* I crave your pardon, and yours,  
matchless maid,

For such I must report you.

*Petron.* There's no notice

Taken all this while of me. [*Aside.*]

*Sanaz.* And I must add,

If your discourse and reason parallel  
The rareness of your more than human form,  
You are a wonder.

*Char.* Pray you, my lord, make trial ;  
She can speak, I can assure you ; and that  
my presence

May not take from her freedom, I will leave  
you :

For know, my lord, my confidence dares trust  
her

Where, and with whom, she pleases.—  
If he be

Taken the right way with her, I cannot fancy  
A better match ; and, for false play, I know  
The tricks, and can discern them.—Petro-  
nella!

*Petron.* Yes, my good lord.

*Char.* I have employment for you.

[*Exeunt Charomonte and Petronella.*]

*Lid.* What's your will, sir?

*Sanaz.* Madam, you are so large a theme  
to treat of,

And every grace about you offers to me  
Such copiousness of language, that I stand  
Doubtful which first to touch at. If I err,  
As in my choice I may, let me entreat you,  
Before I do offend, to sign my pardon :  
Let this, the emblem of your innocence,  
Give me assurance.

*Lid.* My hand join'd to yours,  
Without this superstition, confirms it.  
Nor need I fear you will dwell long upon me,  
The barrenness of the subject yielding nothing  
That rhetoric, with all her tropes and figures,  
Can amplify. Yet since you are resolved  
To prove yourself a courtier in my praise,  
As I'm a woman (and you men affirm  
Our sex loves to be flatter'd) I'll endure it.

*Enter Charomonte above.*

Now, when you please, begin.

*Sanaz.* [*turning from her.*] Such Læda's  
paps were,—

(Down pillows stiled by Jove,) and their  
pure whiteness

Shames the swan's down, or snow. No heat  
of lust

Swells up her azure veins ; and yet I feel  
That this chaste ice but touch'd fans fire in  
me.

*Lid.* You need not, noble sir, be thus transported,  
Or trouble your invention to express  
Your thought of me : the plainest phrase  
and language

That you can use, will be too high a strain  
For such an humble theme.

*Sanaz.* If the great duke  
Made this his end to try my constant temper,  
Though I am vanquish'd, 'tis his fault, not  
mine :

For I am flesh and blood, and have affections  
Like other men. Who can behold the  
temples,

Or holy altars, but the objects work  
Devotion in him? And I may as well  
Walk over burning iron with bare feet,  
And be unscorch'd, as look upon this beauty  
Without desire, and that desire pursued too,  
Till it be quench'd with the enjoying those  
Delights, which to achieve, danger is nothing,  
And loyalty but a word.

*Lid.* I ne'er was proud ;  
Nor can find I am guilty of a thought  
Deserving this neglect and strangeness from  
you :

Nor am I amorous.

*Sanaz.* Suppose his greatness  
Loves her himself, why makes he choice of me  
To be his agent? It is tyranny  
To call one pinch'd with hunger to a feast,  
And at that instant cruelly deny him  
To taste of what he sees. Allegiance  
Tempted too far is like the trial of  
A good sword on an anvil ; as that often  
Flies in pieces without service to the owner,  
So trust enforced too far proves treachery,  
And is too late repented.

*Lid.* Pray you, sir,  
Or license me to leave you, or deliver  
The reasons which invite you to command  
My tedious waiting on you.

*Char.* As I live,  
I know not what to think on't. Is't his pride,  
Or his simplicity?

*Sanaz.* Whither have my thoughts  
Carried me from myself? In this my dulness,  
I've lost an opportunity—

[*Turns to her ; she falls off.*]

*Lid.* 'Tis true,  
I was not bred in court, nor live a star there ;  
Nor shine in rich embroideries and pearl,  
As they, that are the mistresses of great  
fortunes,

Are every day adorn'd with—

*Sanaz.* Will you vouchsafe  
Your ear, sweet lady?

*Lid.* Yet I may be bold,  
For my integrity and fame, to rank

With such as are more glorious. Though I  
never

Did injury, yet I am sensible  
When I'm contemn'd and scorn'd.

*Sanaz.* Will you please to hear me?  
*Lid.* O the difference of natures ! Giovanni,  
A prince in expectation, when he lived here,  
Stole courtesy from heaven, and would not to  
The meanest servant in my father's house  
Have kept such distance.

*Sanaz.* Pray you, do not think me  
Unworthy of your ear ; it was your beauty  
That turn'd me statue. I can speak, fair lady.

*Lid.* And I can hear. The harshness of  
your courtship

Cannot corrupt my courtesy.

*Sanaz.* Will you hear me,  
If I speak of love?

*Lid.* Provided you be modest ;  
I were uncivil, else.

*Char.* They are come to parley :  
I must observe this nearer. [*He retires.*]

*Sanaz.* You are a rare one,  
And such (but that my haste commands me  
hence)

I could converse with ever. Will you grace me  
With leave to visit you again?

*Lid.* So you,  
At your return to court, do me the favour  
To make a tender of my humble service  
To the prince Giovanni.

*Sanaz.* Ever touching  
Upon that string ! [*Aside.*] And will you  
give me hope  
Of future happiness?

*Lid.* That, as I shall find you :  
The fort that's yielded at the first assault  
Is hardly worth the taking.

*Re-enter Charomonte below.*

*Char.* O, they are at it.

*Sanaz.* She is a magazine of all perfection,  
And 'tis death to part from her, yet I must—  
A parting kiss, fair maid.

*Lid.* That custom grants you.

*Char.* A homely breakfast does attend  
your lordship,  
Such as the place affords.

*Sanaz.* No ; I have feasted  
Already here ; my thanks, and so I leave you :  
I will see you again.—Till this unhappy hour  
I was never lost, and what to do, or say,  
I have not yet determined.

[*Aside and exit.*]

*Char.* Gone so abruptly !  
'Tis very strange.

*Lid.* Under your favour, sir,  
His coming hither was to little purpose,  
For anything I heard from him.

*Char.* Take heed, Lidia!  
I do advise you with a father's love,  
And tenderness of your honour; as I would not  
Have you coarse and harsh in giving entertain-  
ment,

So by no means to be credulous: for great  
men,

Till they have gain'd their ends, are giants in  
Their promises, but, those obtain'd, weak  
pigmies

In their performance. And it is a maxim  
Allow'd among them, so they may deceive,  
They may swear any thing; for the queen of  
love,

As they hold constantly, does never punish,  
But smile, at lovers' perjuries.—Yet be wise  
too,

And when you are sued to in a noble way,  
Be neither nice nor scrupulous.

*Lid.* All you speak, sir,  
I hear as oracles; nor will digress  
From your directions.

*Char.* So shall you keep  
Your fame untainted.

*Lid.* As I would my life, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—Florence. *An Anteroom  
in the Palace.*

*Enter Sanazarro and Servant.*

*Sanaz.* Leave the horses with my grooms;  
but be you careful,  
With your best diligence and speed, to find  
out

The prince, and humbly, in my name, entreat  
I may exchange some private conference with  
him

Before the great duke know of my arrival.

*Serv.* I haste, my lord.

*Sanaz.* Here I'll attend his coming:  
And see you keep yourself, as much as may be,  
Conceal'd from all men else.

*Serv.* To serve your lordship,  
I wish I were invisible. [*Exit.*]

*Sanaz.* I am driven  
Into a desperate strait, and cannot steer  
A middle course; and of the two extremes  
Which I must make election of, I know not  
Which is more full of horror. Never servant  
Stood more engaged to a magnificent master,  
Than I to Cozimo: and all those honours  
And glories by his grace conferr'd upon me,  
Or by my prosperous services deserved,  
If now I should deceive his trust, and make  
A shipwreck of my loyalty, are ruin'd.

And, on the other side, if I discover  
Lidia's divine perfections, all my hopes

In her are sunk, never to be buoy'd up:  
For 'tis impossible, but, as soon as seen,  
She must with adoration be sued to.  
A hermit at his beads but looking on her,  
Or the cold cynic, whom Corinthian Lais  
(Not moved with her lust's blandishments)  
call'd a stone,

At this object would take fire. Nor is the  
dneke

Such an Hippolytus, but that this Phædra,  
But seen, must force him to forsake the  
groves,

And Dian's huntmanship, proud to serve  
under

Venus's soft ensigns. No, there is no way  
For me to hope fruition of my ends,  
But to conceal her beauties;—and how that  
May be effected, is as hard a task  
As with a veil to cover the sun's beams,  
Or comfortable light. Three years the prince  
Lived in her company, and Contarino,  
The secretary, hath possess'd the dneke

What a rare piece she is:—but he's my  
creature,  
And may with ease be frighted to deny  
What he hath said! and, if my long ex-  
perience,

With some strong reasons I have thought  
upon,  
Cannot o'er-reach a youth, my practice-  
yields me

But little profit.

*Enter Giovanni with the Servant.*

*Giov.* You are well return'd, sir.

*Sanaz.* Leave us.—[*Exit Servant.*] When  
that your grace shall know the motives  
That forced me to invite you to this trouble,  
You will excuse my manners.

*Giov.* Sir, there needs not  
This circumstance between us. You are ever  
My noble friend.

*Sanaz.* You shall have further cause  
To assure you of my faith and zeal to serve  
you.

And, when I have committed to your trust  
(Presuming still on your retentive silence)  
A secret of no less importance than  
My honour, nay, my head, it will confirm  
What value you hold with me.

*Giov.* Pray you, believe, sir,  
What you deliver to me shall be lock'd up  
In a strong cabinet, of which you yourself  
Shall keep the key: for here I pawn my  
honour,

Which is the best security I can give yet,  
It shall not be discover'd.

*Sanaz.* This assurance  
Is more than I with modesty could demand

From such a paymaster ; but I must be sudden :

And therefore, to the purpose. Can your Excellence,

In your imagination, conceive On what design, or whither, the duke's will Commanded me hence last night ?

*Giov.* No, I assure you ; And it had been a rudeness to enquire Of that I was not call'd to.

*Sanaz.* Grant me hearing, And I will truly make you understand It only did concern you.

*Giov.* Me, my lord !

*Sanaz.* You, in your present state, and future fortunes ; For both lie at the stake.

*Giov.* You much amaze me.

Pray you, resolve this riddle.

*Sanaz.* You know the duke, If he die issueless, as yet he is, Determines you his heir.

*Giov.* It hath pleased his highness Of to profess so much.

*Sanaz.* But say, he should Be won to prove a second wife, on whom He may beget a son, how, in a moment, With all those glorious expectations, which Render you revered and remarkable, Be in a moment blasted, how'er you are His much-lov'd sister's son !

*Giov.* I must bear it With patience, and in me it is a duty That I was born with ; and 'twere much unfit

For the receiver of a benefit To offer, for his own ends, to prescribe Laws to the giver's pleasure.

*Sanaz.* Sweetly answer'd, And like your noble self. This your rare temper

So wins upon me, that I would not live (If that by honest arts I can prevent it) To see your hopes made frustrate. And but think

How you shall be transform'd from what you are,

Should this (as heaven avert it !) ever happen. It must disturb your peace : for whereas now, Being, as you are, received for the heir apparent,

You are no sooner seen, but wonder'd at ; The signiors making it a business to Enquire how you have slept ; and, as you walk

The streets of Florence, the glad multitude In throngs press but to see you ; and, with joy,

The father, pointing with his finger, tells

His son, This is the prince, the hopeful prince,

That must hereafter rule, and you obey him.—

Great ladies beg your picture, and make love To that, despairing to enjoy the substance.— And, but the last night, when 'twas only rumour'd

That you were come to court, as if you had By sea past hither from another world, What general shouts and acclamations follow'd !

The bells rang loud, the bonfires blazed, and such

As loved not wine, carousing to your health, Were drunk, and blush'd not at it. And is this

A happiness to part with ?

*Giov.* I allow these

As flourishes of fortune, with which princes Are often sooth'd ; but never yet esteem'd them

For real blessings.

*Sanaz.* Yet all these were paid To what you may be, not to what you are ; For if the Great Duke but shew to his servants

A son of his own, you shall, like one obscure, Pass unregarded.

*Giov.* I confess, command Is not to be contemn'd, and if my fate Appoint me to it, as I may, I'll bear it With willing shoulders. But, my lord, as yet, You've told me of a danger coming towards me,

But have not named it.

*Sanaz.* That is soon deliver'd. Great Cozimo, your uncle, as I more Than guess, for 'tis no frivolous circumstance That does persuade my judgment to believe it, Purposes to be married.

*Giov.* Married, sir ! With whom, and on what terms ? pray you, instruct me.

*Sanaz.* With the fair Lidia.

*Giov.* Lidia !

*Sanaz.* The daughter

Of signior Charomonte.

*Giov.* Pardon me

Though I appear incredulous ; for, on My knowledge, he ne'er saw her.

*Sanaz.* That is granted : But Contarino hath so sung her praises, And given her out for such a masterpiece, That he's transported with it, sir :—and love Steals sometimes through the ear into the heart,

As well as by the eye. The duke no sooner



Heard her described, but I was sent in post  
To see her, and return my judgment of her.

*Giov.* And what's your censure?

*Sanaz.* 'Tis a pretty creature.

*Giov.* She's very fair.

*Sanaz.* Yes, yes, I have seen worse faces.

*Giov.* Her limbs are neatly form'd.

*Sanaz.* She bath a waist

Indeed sized to love's wish.

*Giov.* A delicate hand too.

*Sanaz.* Then for a leg and foot—

*Giov.* And there I leave you,  
For I presumed no further.

*Sanaz.* As she is, sir,

I know she wants no gracious part that may  
Allure the duke; and, if he only see her,  
She is his own; he will not be denied,  
And then you are lost; yet, if you'll second me,  
(As you have reason, for it most concerns you,)  
I can prevent all yet.

*Giov.* I would you could,  
A noble way.

*Sanaz.* I will cry down her beauties;  
Especially the beauties of her mind,  
As much as Contarino hath advanced them;  
And this, I hope, will breed forgetfulness,  
And kill affection in him: but you must join  
With me in my report, if you be question'd.

*Giov.* I never told a lie yet; and I hold it  
In some degree blasphemous to dispraise  
What's worthy admiration: yet, for once,  
I will dispraise a little, and not vary  
From your relation.

*Sanaz.* Be constant in it.

*Enter* Alphonso.

*Alph.* My lord, the duke hath seen your  
man, and wonders

*Enter* Cozimo, Hippolito, Contarino, and  
Attendants.

You come not to him. See, if his desire  
To have conference with you hath not  
brought him hither  
In his own person!

*Coz.* They are comely coursers,  
And promise swiftness.

*Cont.* They are, of my knowledge,  
Of the best race in Naples.

*Coz.* You are, nephew,  
As I hear, an excellent horseman, and we  
like it:

'Tis a fair grace in a prince. Pray you, make  
trial  
Of their strength and speed; and, if you  
think them fit

For your employment, with a liberal hand  
Reward the gentleman that did present them  
From the viceroy of Naples.

*Giov.* I will use  
My best endeavour, sir.

*Coz.* Wait on my nephew.

[*Exit* Giovanni, Alphonso,  
Hippolito, and Attendants.

Nay, stay you, Contarino:—be within call;  
It may be we shall use you.

[*Exit* Contarino.

You have rode hard, sir,  
And we thank you for it: every minute seems  
Irkesome, and tedious to us, till you have  
Made your discovery. Say, friend, have you  
seen

This phoenix of our age?

*Sanaz.* I have seen a maid, sir;  
But, if that I have judgment, no such wonder  
As she was deliver'd to you.

*Coz.* This is strange.

*Sanaz.* But certain truth. It may be, she  
was look'd on

With admiration in the country, sir;  
But, if compared with many in your court,  
She would appear but ordinary.

*Coz.* Contarino  
Reports her otherwise.

*Sanaz.* Such as ne'er saw swans,  
May think crows beautiful.

*Coz.* How is her behaviour?

*Sanaz.* 'Tis like the place she lives in.

*Coz.* How her wit,

Discourse, and entertainment?

*Sanaz.* Very coarse;

I would not willingly say poor, and rude:  
But, had she all the beauties of fair women,  
The dullness of her soul would fright me  
from her.

*Coz.* You are curious, sir. I know not  
what to think on't.— [Aside.  
Contarino!

*Re-enter* Contarino.

*Cont.* Sir.

*Coz.* Where was thy judgment, man,  
To extol a virgin Sanazarro tells me  
Is nearer to deformity?

*Sanaz.* I saw her,  
And curiously perused her; and I wonder  
That she, that did appear to me, that know  
What beauty is, not worthy the observing,  
Should so transport you.

*Cont.* Troth, my lord, I thought then—

*Coz.* Thought! Didst thou not affirm it?

*Cont.* I confess, sir,

I did believe so then; but now, I hear  
My lord's opinion to the contrary,  
I am of another faith: for 'tis not fit  
That I should contradict him. I am dim, sir;  
But he's sharp-sighted.

*Sanaz.* This is to my wish. [Aside.

*Coz.* We know not what to think of this ;  
yet would not

*Re-enter* Giovanni, Hippolito, and  
Alphonso.

Determine rashly of it. [*Aside*].—How do you  
like

My nephew's horsemanship ?

*Hip.* In my judgment, sir,  
It is exact and rare.

*Alph.* And, to my fancy,  
He did present great Alexander mounted  
On his Bucephalus.

*Coz.* You are right courtiers,  
And know it is your duty to cry up  
All actions of a prince.

*Sanaz.* Do not betray  
Yourself, you're safe ; I have done my part.  
[*Aside to Giovanni.*]

*Giov.* I thank you ;  
Nor will I fail.

*Coz.* What's your opinion, nephew,  
Of the horses ?

*Giov.* Two of them are, in my judgment,  
The best I ever back'd ; I mean the roan, sir,  
And the brown bay : but for the chesnut-  
colour'd,

Though he be full of metal, hot, and fiery,  
He treads weak in his pasterus.

*Coz.* So : come nearer ;  
This exercise hath put you into a sweat ;  
Take this and dry it : and now I command you  
To tell me truly what's your censure of  
Charomonte's daughter, Lidia.

*Giov.* I am, sir,  
A novice in my judgment of a lady ;  
But such as 'tis, your grace shall have it freely.  
I would not speak ill of her, and am sorry,  
If I keep myself a friend to truth, I cannot  
Report her as I would, so much I owe  
Her reverend father ; but I'll give you, sir,  
As near as I can, her character in little.  
She's of a goodly stature, and her limbs  
Not disproportion'd ; for her face, it is  
Far from deformity ; yet they flatter her,  
That style it excellent : her manners are  
Simple and innocent ; but her discourse  
And wit deserve my pity, more than praise :  
At the best, my lord, she is a handsome  
picture,

And, that said, all is spoken.

*Coz.* I believe you :  
I ne'er yet found you false.

*Giov.* Nor ever shall, sir.—  
Forgive me, matchless Lidia ! too much love,  
And jealous fear to lose thee, do compel me,  
Against my will, my reason, and my know-  
ledge,

To be a poor detractor of that beauty,

Which fluent Ovid, if he lived again,  
Would want words to express. [*Aside.*]

*Coz.* Pray you, make choice of  
The richest of our furniture for these horses,  
[*To Sanazarro.*]

And take my nephew with you ; we in this  
Will follow his directions.

*Giov.* Could I find now  
The princess Fiorinda, and persuade her  
To be silent in the suit that I moved to her,  
All were secure.

*Sanaz.* In that, my lord, I'll aid you.

*Coz.* We will be private ; leave us.  
[*Exeunt all but Cozimo.*]  
All my studies

And serious meditations aim no further  
Than this young man's good. He was my  
sister's son,

And she was such a sister, when she lived,  
I could not prize too much ; nor can I better  
Make known how dear I hold her memory,  
Than in my cherishing the only issue  
Which she hath left behind her. Who's that ?

*Enter* Fiorinda.

*Fior.* Sir.

*Coz.* My fair charge ! you are welcome to  
us.

*Fior.* I have found it, sir.

*Coz.* All things go well in Urbino.

*Fior.* Your gracious care to me, an orphan,  
frees me

From all suspicion that my jealous fears  
Can drive into my fancy.

*Coz.* The next summer,  
In our own person, we will bring you thither,  
And seat you in your own.

*Fior.* When you think fit, sir.  
But in the meantime, with your highness'  
pardon,

I am a suitor to you.

*Coz.* Name it, madam,  
With confidence to obtain it.

*Fior.* That you would please  
To lay a strict command on Charomonte,  
To bring his daughter Lidia to the court :  
And pray you, think, sir, that 'tis not my  
purpose

To employ her as a servant, but to use her  
As a most wish'd companion.

*Coz.* Ha ! your reason ?

*Fior.* The hopeful prince, your nephew,  
sir, hath given her

To me for such an abstract of perfection  
In all that can be wish'd for in a virgin,  
As beauty, music, ravishing discourse,  
Quickness of apprehension, with choice  
manners

And learning too, not usual with women,

That I am much ambitious (though I shall  
Appear but as a foil to set her off)

To be by her instructed, and supplied  
In what I am defective.

*Coz.* Did my nephew  
Seriously deliver this?

*Fior.* I assure your grace,  
With zeal and vehemency; and, even when,  
With his best words, he strived to set her  
forth,

(Though the rare subject made him eloquent,  
He would complain, all he could say came  
short

Of her deservings.

*Coz.* Pray you have patience.

[*Walks aside.*]

This was strangely carried.—Ha! are we  
trifled with?

Dare they do this? Is Cozimo's fury, that  
Of late was terrible, grown contemptible?  
Well; we will clear our brows, and under-  
mine

Their secret works, though they have digg'd  
like moles,

And crush them with the tempest of my wrath  
When I appear most calm. He is unfit  
To command others, that knows not to use it,  
And with all rigour: yet my stern looks  
shall not

Discover my intents: for I will strike  
When I begin to frown.—You are the  
mistress

Of that you did demand.

*Fior.* I thank your highness;  
But speed in the performance of the grant  
Doubles the favour, sir.

*Coz.* You shall possess it  
Sooner than you expect:—  
Only be pleased to be ready when my secre-  
tary

Waits on you to take the fresh air. My  
nephew,

And my bosom friend, so to cheat me! 'tis  
not fair. [*Aside.*]

*Re-enter Giovanni and Sanazarro.*

*Sanaz.* Where should this princess be?  
nor in her lodgings,  
Nor in the private walks, her own retreat,  
Which she so much frequented!

*Giov.* By my life,  
She's with the duke! and I much more than  
fear

Her forwardness to prefer my suit hath  
ruin'd

What with such care we built up.

*Coz.* Have you furnish'd  
Those coursers, as we will'd you?

*Sanaz.* There's no sign  
Of anger in his looks.

*Giov.* They are complete, sir.

*Coz.* 'Tis well: to your rest. Soft sleeps  
wait on you, madam.

To-morrow, with the rising of the sun,  
Be ready to ride with us.—They with more  
safety

Had trod on fork-tongued adders, than pro-  
voked me. [*Aside and exit.*]

*Fior.* I come not to be thank'd, sir, for  
the speedy

Performance of my promise touching Lidia:  
It is effected.

*Sanaz.* We are undone. [*Aside.*]

*Fior.* The duke

No sooner heard me with my best of lan-  
guage

Describe her excellencies, as you taught me,  
But he confirm'd it.—You look sad, as if  
You wish'd it were undone.

*Giov.* No, gracious madam,  
I am your servant for't.

*Fior.* Be you as careful  
For what I moved to you.—Count Sanazarro,  
Now I perceive you honour me, in vouch-  
safing

To wear so slight a favour.

*Sanaz.* 'Tis a grace  
I am unworthy of.

*Fior.* You merit more,  
In prizing so a trifle. Take this diamond;  
I'll second what I have begun; for know,  
Your valour hath so won upon me, that  
'Tis not to be resisted: I have said, sir,  
And leave you to interpret it. [*Exit.*]

*Sanaz.* This to me  
Is wormwood. 'Tis apparent we are taken  
In our own noose. What's to be done?

*Giov.* I know not.  
And 'tis a punishment justly fallen upon me,  
For leaving truth, a constant mistress, that  
Ever protects her servants, to become

A slave to lies and falsehood. What excuse  
Can be made to the duke, what mercy hope  
for,

Our packing being laid open?

*Sanaz.* 'Tis not to  
Be question'd but his purposed journey is  
To see fair Lidia.

*Giov.* And to divert him  
Impossible.

*Sanaz.* There's now no looking backward.  
*Giov.* And which way to go on with safety,  
not

To be imagined.

*Sanaz.* Give me leave: I have  
An embryo in my brain, which, I despair  
not,

May be brought to form and fashion, provided

You will be open-breasted.

*Giov.* 'Tis no time now,  
Our dangers being equal, to conceal  
A thought from you.

*Sanaz.* What power hold you o'er Lidia?  
Do you think that, with some hazard of her  
life,

She would prevent your ruin?

*Giov.* I presume so:

If, in the undertaking it, she stray not  
From what becomes her innocence; and to  
that

'Tis far from me to press her: I myself  
Will rather suffer.

*Sanaz.* 'Tis enough; this night  
Write to her by your servant Calandrino,  
As I shall give directions; my man

*Enter Calandrino, fantastically dressed.*

Shall bear him company. Sec, sir, to my wish  
He does appear; but much transform'd  
from what

He was when he came hither.

*Cal.* I confess

I am not very wise, and yet I find  
A fool, so he be parcel knave, in court  
May flourish and grow rich.

*Giov.* Calandrino.

*Cal.* Peace!

I am in contemplation.

*Giov.* Do not you know me?

*Cal.* I tell thee, no; on forfeit of my place,  
I must not know myself, much less my father,  
But by petition; that petition lined too  
With golden birds, that sing to the tune of  
profit,

Or I am deaf.

*Giov.* But you've your sense of feeling.

[*Offering to strike him.*]

*Sanaz.* Nay, pray you, forbear.

*Cal.* I have all that's requisite

To the making up of a signior: my spruce  
ruff,

My hooded cloak, long stocking, and paned  
hose,

My case of toothpicks, and my silver fork,  
To convey an olive neatly to my mouth;—

And, what is all in all, my pockets ring  
A golden peal. O that the peasants in the  
country,

My quondam fellows, but saw me as I am,  
How they would admire and worship me!

*Giov.* As they shall;

For instantly you must thither.

*Cal.* My grand signior,  
Vouchsafe a beso la manos, and a cringe  
Of the last edition.

*Giov.* You must ride post with letters  
This night to Lidia.

*Cal.* An it please your grace,  
Shall I use my coach, or footcloth mule?

*Sanaz.* You widgeon,  
You are to make all speed; think not of  
pomp.

*Giov.* Follow for your instructions, sirrah.

*Cal.* I have

One suit to you, my good lord.

*Sanaz.* What is't?

*Cal.* That you would give me  
A subtle court-charm, to defend me from  
The infectious air of the country.

*Giov.* What's the reason?

*Cal.* Why, as this court-air taught me  
knavish wit,  
By which I am grown rich, if that again  
Should turn me fool and honest, vain hopes  
farewell!

For I must die a beggar.

*Sanaz.* Go to, sirrah.

You'll be whipt for this.

*Giov.* Leave fooling, and attend us.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The Country. *A Hall in  
Charomonte's House.*

*Enter Charomonte, and Lidia.*

*Char.* Daughter, I have observed, since  
the prince left us,  
(Whose absence I mourn with you,) and the  
visit

Count Sanazarro gave us, you have nourish'd  
Sad and retired thoughts, and parted with  
That freedom and alacrity of spirit  
With which you used to cheer me.

*Lid.* For the count, sir,

All thought of him does with his person die;  
But I confess ingenuously, I cannot  
So soon forget the choice and chaste delights,  
The courteous conversation of the prince,  
And without stain, I hope, afforded me  
When he made this house a court.

*Char.* It is in us

To keep it so without him. Want we know  
not,  
And all we can complain of, heaven be  
praised for't,  
Is too much plenty; and we will make use of

*Enter Caponi, Bernardo, Petruccio, and  
other Servants.*

All lawful pleasures. How now, fellows!  
when

Shall we have this lusty dance?

*Cap.* In the afternoon, sir.  
 'Tis a device, I wis, of my own making,  
 And such a one as shall make your signior-  
 ship know  
 I have not been your butler for nothing, but  
 Have crotchets in my head. We'll trip it  
 tightly,  
 And make my sad young mistress merry  
 again,  
 Or I'll forswear the cellar.  
*Bern.* If we had  
 Our fellow Calandrino here, to dance  
 His part, we were perfect.  
*Pet.* O! he was a rare fellow;  
 But I fear the court hath spoil'd him.  
*Cap.* When I was young,  
 I could have cut a caper on a pinnacle;  
 But now I'm old and wise.—Keep your  
 figure fair,  
 And follow but the sample I shall set you,  
 The duke himself will send for us, and laugh  
 at us;  
 And that were credit.

*Enter Calandrino.*

*Lid.* Who have we here?  
*Cal.* I find  
 What was brawn in the country, in the court  
 grows tender.  
 'The bots on these jolting jades! I am bruised  
 to jelly.  
 A coach for my money! and that the courtes-  
 ans know well;  
 Their riding so makes them last three years  
 longer  
 Than such as are hacknied.  
*Char.* Calandrino! 'tis he.  
*Cal.* Now to my postures.—Let my hand  
 have the honour  
 To convey a kiss from my lips to the cover of  
 Your foot, dear signior.  
*Char.* Fie! you stoop too low, sir.  
*Cal.* The hem of your vestment, lady:  
 your glove is for princes;  
 Nay, I have conn'd my distances.  
*Lid.* 'Tis most courtly.  
*Cap.* Fellow Calandrino!  
*Cal.* Signior de Caponi,  
 Grand botelier of the mansion.  
*Bern.* How is't, man?  
 [*Claps him on the shoulder.*]  
*Cal.* Be not so rustic in your salutations,  
 Signior Bernardo, master of the accounts.  
 Signior Petruccio, may you long continue  
 Your function in the chamber!  
*Cap.* When shall we learn  
 Such gambols in our villa?  
*Lid.* Sure he's mad.

*Char.* 'Tis not unlike, for most of such  
 mushrooms are so.  
 What news at court?  
*Cal.* *Basta!* they are mysteries,  
 And not to be reveal'd. With your favour,  
 signior;  
 I am, in private, to confer awhile  
 With this signora: but I'll pawn my honour,  
 That neither my terse language, nor my habit,  
 Howe'er it may convince, nor my new shrugs,  
 Shall render her enamour'd.  
*Char.* Take your pleasure;  
 A little of these apish tricks may pass,  
 Too much is tedious. [*Exit.*]  
*Cal.* The prince, in this paper,  
 Presents his service. Nay, it is not courtly  
 To see the seal broke open; so I leave you.—  
 Signiors of the villa, I'll descend to be  
 Familiar with you.  
*Cap.* Have you forgot to dance?  
*Cal.* No, I am better'd.  
*Pet.* Will you join with us?  
*Cal.* As I like the project.  
 Let me warm my brains first with the richest  
 grape,  
 And then I'm for you.  
*Cap.* We will want no wine.  
 [*Exeunt all but Lidia.*]  
*Lid.* That this comes only from the best  
 of princes,  
 With a kind of adoration does command me  
 To entertain it; and the sweet contents  
 That are inscribed here by his hand must be  
 Much more than musical to me. All the service  
 Of my life at no part can deserve this favour.  
 O what a virgin longing I feel on me  
 To unrip the seal, and read it! yet, to break  
 What he hath fastened, rashly, may appear  
 A saucy rudeness in me.—I must do it,  
 (Nor can I else learn his commands, or serve  
 them,)  
 But with such reverence, as I would open  
 Some holy writ, whose grave instructions  
 beat down  
 Rebellious sins, and teach my better part  
 How to mount upward.—So, [*opens the  
 letter*] 'tis done, and I  
 With eagle's eyes will curiously peruse it.  
 [*Reads.*]  
*Chaste Lidia, the favours are so great  
 On me by you conferr'd, that to entreat  
 The least addition to them, in true sense  
 May argue me of blushless impudence.  
 But, such are my extremes, if you deny  
 A further grace, I must unpitied die.  
 Haste cuts off circumstance. As you're ad-  
 mired  
 For beauty, the report of it hath fired*

*The duke my uncle, and, I fear, you'll prove,*

*Not with a sacred, but unlawful love.*

*If he see you as you are, my hopes for light*

*Is changed into an everlasting night ;*

*How to prevent it, if your goodness find,*

*You save two lives, and me you ever bind,*

*The honourer of your virtues,*

GIOVANNI.

Were I more deaf than adders, these sweet charms

Would through my ears find passage to my soul,

And soon enchant it. To save such a prince, Who would not perish ? virtue in him must suffer,

And piety be forgotten. The duke's lust, Though it raged more than Tarquin's, shall not reach me.

All quaint inventions of chaste virgins aid me ! My prayers are heard ; I have't. The duke ne'er saw me—

Or, if that fail, I am again provided— But for the servants !—They will take what form

I please to put upon them. Giovanni,

Be safe ; thy servant Lidia assures it.

Let mountains of afflictions fall on me,

Their weight is easy, so I set thee free.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Cozimo, Giovanni, Sanazarro, Charomonte, and Attendants.*

*Sanaz.* Are you not tired with travel, sir ?

*Coz.* No, no ;

I am fresh and lusty.

*Char.* This day shall be ever

A holiday to me, that brings my prince

Under my humble roof. [*Weeps.*]

*Giov.* See, sir, my good tutor

Sheds tears for joy.

*Coz.* Dry them up, Charomonte ;

And all forbear the room, while we exchange Some private words together.

*Giov.* O, my lord,

How grossly have we overshot ourselves !

*Sanaz.* In what, sir ?

*Giov.* In forgetting to acquaint

My guardian with our purpose : all that Lidia

Can do avails us nothing, if the duke

Find out the truth from him.

*Sanaz.* 'Tis now past help,

And we must stand the hazard :—hope the best, sir.

[*Exeunt* Giovanni, Sanazarro, and Attendants.

*Char.* My loyalty doubted, sir !

*Coz.* 'Tis more. Thou hast Abused our trust, and in a high degree Committed treason.

*Char.* Treason ! 'Tis a word My innocence understands not. Were my breast

Transparent, and my thoughts to be discern'd,

Not one spot shall be found to taint the candour

Of my allegiance : and I must be bold

To tell you, sir, (for he that knows no guilt Can know no fear,) 'tis tyranny to o'ercharge

An honest man ; and such, till now, I've lived,

And such, my lord, I'll die.

*Coz.* Sir, do not flatter

Yourself with hope, these great and glorious words,

Which every guilty wretch, as well as you, That's arm'd with impudence, can with ease deliver,

And with as full a mouth, can work on us : Nor shall gay flourishes of language clear

What is in fact apparent.

*Char.* Fact ! what fact ?

You, that know only what it is, instruct me, For I am ignorant.

*Coz.* This, then, sir : We gave up, On our assurance of your faith and care, Our nephew Giovanni, nay, our heir In expectation, to be train'd up by you As did become a prince.

*Char.* And I discharg'd it :

Is this the treason ?

*Coz.* Take us with you, sir.

And, in respect we knew his youth was prone

To women, and that, living in our court, He might make some unworthy choice,

before His weaker judgment was confirm'd, we did

Remove him from it ; constantly presuming, You, with your best endeavours, rather would

Have quench'd those heats in him, than light a torch,

As you have done, to his looseness.

*Char.* I ! my travail

Is ill-requited, sir ; for, by my soul,

I was so curious that way, that I granted Access to none could tempt him ; nor did

ever One syllable, or obscene accent, touch

His ear, that might corrupt him.

*Coz.* No ! Why, then,

With your allowance, did you give free way To all familiar privacy between

My nephew and your daughter ? Or why did you

(Had you no other ends in't but our service)

Read to them, and together, as they had  
been

Scholars of one form, grammar, rhetoric,  
Philosophy, story, and interpret to them  
The close temptations of lascivious poets?  
Or wherefore, for we still had spies upon you,  
Was she still present, when, by your advice,  
He was taught the use of his weapon, horse-  
manship,

Wrestling, nay, swimming, but to fan in her  
A hot desire of him? and then, forsooth,  
His exercises ended, cover'd with

A fair pretence of recreation for him,  
(When Lidia was instructed in those graces  
That add to beauty,) he, brought to admire  
her,

Must bear her sing, while to her voice her  
hand

Made ravishing music; and, this applauded,  
dance

A light lavolta with her.

*Char.* Have you ended

All you can charge me with?

*Coz.* Nor stopt you there,

But they must unattended walk into

The silent groves, and hear the amorous  
birds

Warbling their wanton notes; here, a sure  
shade

Of barren sicamores, which the all-seeing sun  
Could not pierce through; near that, an  
arbour hung

With spreading eglantine; there, a bubbling  
spring

Watering a bank of hyacinths and lilies;  
With all allurements that could move to lust.

And could this, Charomonte, (should I grant  
They had been equals both in birth and  
fortune,)

Become your gravity? nay, 'tis clear as air,  
That your ambitious hopes to match your  
daughter

Into our family, gave connivance to it:

And this, though not in act, in the intent  
I call high treason.

*Char.* Hear my just defence, sir;

And, though you are my prince, it will not  
take from

Your greatness, to acknowledge with a blush,  
In this my accusation you have been

More sway'd by spleen, and jealous suppo-  
sitions,

Than certain grounds of reason. You had  
a father,

(Blest be his memory!) that made frequent  
proofs

Of my loyalty and faith, and, would I boast  
The dangers I have broke through in his  
service,

I could say more. Nay, you yourself, dread  
sir,

Whenever I was put unto the test,  
Found me true gold, and not adulterate  
metal;

And am I doubted now?

*Coz.* This is from the purpose.

*Char.* I will come to it, sir: Your grace  
well knew,

Before the prince's bappy presence made  
My poor house rich, the chiefest blessing  
which

I gloried in, though now it prove a curse,  
Was an only daughter. Nor did you com-  
mand me,

As a security to your future fears,  
To cast her off: which had you done,  
howe'er

She was the light of my eyes, and comfort of  
My feeble age, so far I prized my duty

Above affection, she now had been

A stranger to my care. But she is fair!

Is that her fault, or mine? Did ever father  
Hold beauty in his issue for a blemish?

Her education and her manners tempt too!

If these offend, they are easily removed:

You may, if you think fit, before my face,

In recompense of all my watchings for you,

With burning corrosives transform her to

An ugly leper; and, this done, to taint

Her sweetness, prostitute her to a brothel.

This I will rather suffer, sir, and more,

Than live suspected by you.

*Coz.* Let not passion

Carry you beyond your reason.

*Char.* I am calm, sir;

Yet you must give me leave to grieve I find

My actions misinterpreted. Alas! sir,

Was Lidia's desire to serve the prince

Call'd an offence? or did she practise to

Seduce his youth, because with her best zeal

And fervour she endeavoured to attend him?

'Tis a hard construction. Though she be  
my daughter,

I may thus far speak her: from her infancy

She was ever civil, her behaviour nearer

Simplicity than craft; and malice dares not

Affirm, in one loose gesture, or light language,

She gave a sign she was in thought unchaste.

I'll fetch her to you, sir; and but look on her

With equal eyes, you must in justice grant

That your suspicion wrongs her.

*Coz.* It may be;

But I must have stronger assurance of it

Than passionate words: and, not to trifle

time,

As we came unexpected to your house,

We will prevent all means that may pre-  
pare her

How to answer that, with which we come to charge her.

And howsoever it may be received  
As a foul breach to hospitable rites,  
On thy allegiance and boasted faith,  
Nay, forfeit of thy head, we do confine thee  
Close prisoner to thy chamber, till all doubts  
Are clear'd, that do concern us.

*Char.* I obey, sir,  
And wish your grace had followed my hearse  
To my sepulchre, my loyalty unsuspected,  
Rather than now—but I am silent, sir,  
And let that speak my duty. [*Exit.*]

*Coz.* If this man  
Be false, disguised treachery ne'er put on  
A shape so near to truth. Within, there!

*Re-enter Giovanni and Sanazarro, ushering in Petronella. Calandrino and others setting forth a banquet.*

*Sanaz.* Sir.

*Coz.* Bring Lidia forth.

*Giov.* She comes, sir, of herself,  
To present her service to you.

*Coz.* Ha! this personage  
Cannot invite affection.

*Sanaz.* See you keep state.

*Petron.* I warrant you.

*Coz.* The manners of her mind  
Must be transcendent, if they can defend  
Her rougher outside. May we with your  
liking

Salute you, lady?

*Petron.* Let me wipe my mouth, sir,  
With my cambric handkerchief, and then  
have at you.

*Coz.* Can this be possible?

*Sanaz.* Yes, sir; you will find her  
Such as I gave her to you.

*Petron.* Will your dukeship  
Sit down and eat some sugar-plums? Here's  
a castle

Of march-pane too; and this quince-mar-  
malade was

Of my own making; all summ'd up together,  
Did cost the setting on: and here is wine too,  
As good as e'er was tapp'd. I'll be your  
taster,

For I know the fashion. [*Drinks all off.*—  
Now you must do me right, sir;

You shall nor will nor choose.

*Giov.* She's very simple.

*Coz.* Simple! 'tis worse. Do you drink  
thus often, lady?

*Petron.* Still when I am thirsty, and eat  
when I am hungry:

Such junkets come not every day. Once  
more to you,

With a heart and a half, i'faith.

*Coz.* Pray you, pause a little;  
If I hold your cards, I shall pull down the  
side;

I am not good at the game,  
*Petron.* Then I'll drink for you.

*Coz.* Nay, pray you stay: I'll find you out  
a pledge

That shall supply my place; what think you of  
This complete signior? You are a Juno,  
And in such state must feast this Jupiter:  
What think you of him?

*Petron.* I desire no better.

*Coz.* And you will undertake this service  
for me?

You are good at the sport.

*Cal.* Who, I? a piddler, sir.

*Coz.* Nay, you shall sit enthroned, and  
drink

As you were a duke.

*Cal.* If your grace will have me,  
I'll eat and drink like an emperor.

*Coz.* Take your place then:

[*Calandrino takes the Duke's chair.*]

We are amazed.

*Giov.* This is gross: nor can the imposture  
But be discover'd.

*Sanaz.* The duke is too sharp-sighted,  
To be deluded thus.

*Cal.* Nay, pray you eat fair,  
Or divide, and I will choose. Cannot you use  
Your fork, as I do? Gape, and I will feed  
you. [*Feeds her.*]

Gape wider yet; this is court-like.

*Petron.* To choke daws with:—  
I like it not.

*Cal.* But you like this?

*Petron.* Let it come, boy. [*They drink.*]

*Coz.* What a sight is this! We could be  
angry with you.

How much you did belie her when you told us  
She was only simple! this is barbarous rude-  
ness,

Beyond belief.

*Giov.* I would not speak her, sir,  
Worse than she was.

*Sanaz.* And I, my lord, chose rather  
To deliver her better parted than she is,  
Than to take from her.

*Enter Caponi, with his fellow Servants for the dance.*

*Cap.* Ere I'll lose my dance,  
I'll speak to the purpose. I am, sir, no  
prologue;

But in plain terms must tell you, we are  
provided

Of a lusty hornpipe.

*Coz.* Prithee, let us have it,  
For we grow dull.



*Cap.* But to make up the medley,  
For it is of several colours, we must borrow  
Your grace's ghost here.

*Cal.* Pray you, sir, depose me ;  
It will not do else. I am, sir, the engine  
[Rises, and resigns his chair.  
By which it moves.

*Petron.* I will dance with my duke too ;  
I will not out.

*Coz.* Begin then.—[They dance.]—There's  
more in this,  
Than yet I have discover'd. Some *Cædipus*  
Resolve this riddle.

*Petron.* Did I not foot it roundly. [Falls.

*Coz.* As I live, stark drunk ! away with her.

We'll reward you,  
[Exeunt Servants with Petronella.

When you have cool'd yourselves in the cellar.

*Cap.* Heaven preserve you !

*Coz.* We pity Charomonte's wretched  
fortune  
In a daughter, nay, a monster. Good old  
man !—

The place grows tedious ; our remove shall be  
With speed : we'll only, in a word or two,  
Take leave, and comfort him.

*Sanaz.* 'Twill rather, sir,  
Increase your sorrow, that you know his  
shame ;

Your grace may do it by letter.

*Coz.* Who sign'd you  
A patent to direct us ? Wait our coming  
In the garden.

*Giov.* All will out.

*Sanaz.* I more than fear it.

[Exeunt Giovanni and Sanazarro.

*Ooz.* These are strange chimeras to us :  
what to judge of't,

Is past our apprehension. One command  
Charomonte to attend us.

[Exit an Attendant.  
Can it be

That Contarino could be so besotted,  
As to admire this prodigy ! or her father  
To doat upon it ! Or does she personate,  
For some ends unknown to us, this rude be-  
haviour,

Which, in the scene presented, would appear  
Ridiculous and impossible !—O, you are  
welcome.

*Enter Charomonte.*

We now acknowledge the much wrong we  
did you

In our unjust suspicion. We have seen  
The wonder, sir, your daughter.

*Char.* And have found her  
Such as I did report her. What she wanted

In courtship, was, I hope, supplied in civil  
And modest entertainment.

*Coz.* Pray you, tell us,  
And truly, we command you—Did you never  
Observe she was given to drink ?

*Char.* To drink, sir !

*Coz.* Yes, nay more, to be drunk ?

*Char.* I had rather see her buried.

*Coz.* Dare you trust your own eyes, if you  
find her now

More than distemper'd ?

*Char.* I will pull them out, sir,  
If your grace can make this good. And if  
you please

To grant me liberty, as she is I'll fetch her,  
And in a moment.

*Coz.* Look you do, and fail not,  
On the peril of your head.

*Char.* Drunk !—She disdains it. [Exit.

*Coz.* Such contrarieties were never read of.  
Charomonte is no fool ; nor can I think  
His confidence built on sand. We are abused,  
'Tis too apparent.

*Re-enter Charomonte with Lidia.*

*Lid.* I am indisposed, sir :  
And that life you once tender'd, much en-  
danger'd

In forcing me from my chamber.

*Char.* Here she is, sir ;  
Suddenly sick, I grant ; but, sure, not drunk ;  
Speak to my lord the duke.

*Lid.* All is discover'd. [A'needs.

*Coz.* Is this your only daughter ?

*Char.* And my heir, sir ;  
Nor keep I any woman in my house  
(Unless for sordid offices) but one  
I do maintain, trimm'd up in her cast habits,  
To make her sport : and she, indeed, loves  
wine,

And will take too much of it ; and, perhaps,  
for mirth,  
She was presented to you.

*Coz.* It shall yield

Nosport to the contrivers. 'Tis too plain now.  
Her presence does confirm what Contarino  
Deliver'd of her ; nor can sickness dim  
The splendour of her beauties : being her-  
self, then,

She must exceed his praise.

*Lid:* Will your grace hear me ?

I'm faint, and can say little.

*Coz.* Here are accents

Whose every syllable is musical !

Pray you, let me raise you, and awhile rest  
here.

False Sanazarro, treacherous Giovanni !  
But stand we talking !—

*Char.* Here's a storm soon raised.

*Coz.* As thou art our subject, Charomonte, swear

To act what we command.

*Char.* That is an oath I long since took.

*Coz.* Then, by that oath we charge thee, Without excuse, denial, or delay, To apprehend, and suddenly, Sanazarro, And our ingrateful nephew. We have said it.

Do it without reply, or we pronounce thee, Like them, a traitor to us. See them guarded In several lodgings, and forbid access To all, but when we warrant. Is our will Heard sooner than obey'd?

*Char.* These are strange turns ; But I must not dispute them. *[Exit.]*

*Coz.* Be severe in't.—  
O my abused lenity ! from what height Is my power fall'n !

*Lid.* O me most miserable ! That, being innocent, makes others guilty. Most gracious prince——

*Coz.* Pray you rise, and then speak to me.

*Lid.* My knees shall first be rooted in this earth,

And, Myrrha-like, I'll grow up to a tree, Dropping perpetual tears of sorrow, which Harden'd by the rough wind, and turn'd to amber,

Unfortunate virgins like myself shall wear ; Before I'll make petition to your greatness, But with such reverence, my hands held up thus,

As I would do to heaven. You princes are As gods on earth to us, and to be sued to With such humility, as his deputies May challenge from their vassals.

*Coz.* Here's that form Of language I expected ; pray you, speak : What is your suit ?

*Lid.* That you would look upon me As an humble thing, that millions of degrees Is placed beneath you : for what am I, dread sir,

Or what can fall in the whole course of my life,

That may be worth your care, much less your trouble ?

As the lowly shrub is to the lofty cedar, Or a molehill to Olympus, if compared, I am to you, sir. Or, suppose the prince, (Which cannot find belief in me,) forgetting The greatness of his birth and hopes, hath thrown

An eye of favour on me, in me punish, That am the cause, the rashness of his youth, Shall the queen of the inhabitants of the air, The eagle, that bears thunder on her wings,

In her angry mood destroy her hopeful young, For suffering a wren to perch too near them? Such is our disproportion.

*Coz.* With what fervour She pleads against herself !

*Lid.* For me, poor maid, I know the prince to be so far above me, That my wishes cannot reach him. Yet I am So much his creature, that, to fix him in Your wonted grace and favour, I'll abjure His sight for ever, and betake myself To a religious life, (where in my prayers I may remember him,) and ne'er see man

more, But my ghostly father. Will you trust me, sir ?

In truth I'll keep my word ; or, if this fail, A little more of fear what may befall him Will stop my breath for ever.

*Coz.* Had you thus argued *[Raises her.]* As you were yourself, and brought as advocates

Your health and beauty, to make way for you, No crime of his could put on such a shape But I should look with the eyes of mercy on it. What would I give to see this diamond In her perfect lustre, as she was before The clouds of sickness dimm'd it ! Yet, take comfort ;

And, as you would obtain remission for His treachery to me, cheer your drooping spirits,

And call the blood again into your cheeks, And then plead for him ; and in such a habit As in your highest hopes you would put on, If we were to receive you for our bride.

*Lid.* I'll do my best, sir.

*Coz.* And that best will be A crown of all felicity to me. *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*The same. An upper Chamber in Charomonte's House.*

*Enter Sanazarro.*

*Sanaz.* 'Tis proved in me : the curse of human frailty, Adding to our afflictions, makes us know What's good ; and yet our violent passions force us

To follow what is ill. Reason assured me It was not safe to shave a lion's skin ; And that to trifle with a sovereign was To play with lightning : yet imperious beauty, Treading upon the neck of understanding, Compell'd me to put off my natural shape Of loyal duty, to disguise myself In the adulterate and cobweb-mask

Of disobedient treachery. Where is now  
My borrow'd greatness, or the promised lives  
Of following courtiers echoing my will?  
In a moment vanish'd! Power that stands  
not on

Its proper base, which is peculiar only  
To absolute princes, falls or rises with  
Their frown or favour. The great duke,  
my master,

(Who almost changed me to his other self,)  
No sooner takes his beams of comfort from  
me,

But I, as one unknown, or unregarded,  
Unpitied suffer. Who makes intercession  
To thy mercy for me, now? who does re-  
member

The service I have done him? not a man:  
And such as spake no language but my lord  
The favourite of Tuscany's grand duke,  
Deride my madness.—Ha! what noise of  
horses?

[*He looks out at the back window.*]

A goodly troop! This back part of my prison  
Allows me liberty to see and know them.

Contarino! yes, 'tis he, and Lodovico:  
And the dutchess Fiorinda, Urbin's heir,  
A princess I have slighted: yet I wear  
Her favours; and, to teach me what I am,  
She whom I scorn'd can only mediate for me.  
This way she makes, yet speak to her I dare  
not:

And how to make suit to her is a task  
Of as much difficulty.—Yes, thou blessed  
pledge

[*Takes off the ring.*]

Of her affection, aid me! This supplies  
The want of pen and ink; and this, of paper.

[*Takes a pane of glass.*]

It must be so; and I in my petition  
Concise and pithy.

SCENE II.—*The Court before Charo-  
monte's House.*

*Enter Contarino leading in Fiorinda, Al-  
phonso, Hippolito, Hieronimo, and Cala-  
minta.*

*Fior.* 'Tis a goodly pile, this.

*Hier.* But better by the owner.

*Alph.* But most rich

In the great states it covers.

*Fior.* The duke's pleasure

Commands us hither.

*Cont.* Which was laid on us

To attend you to it.

*Hip.* Signior Charomonte,

To see your excellence his guest, will think  
Himself most happy.

*Fior.* Tie my shoe.—[*The pane falls  
down.*—] What's that?

A pane thrown from the window, no wind  
stirring!

*Calam.* And at your feet too fall'n:—  
there's something writ on't.

*Cont.* Some courtier, belike, would have  
it known

He wore a diamond.

*Calam.* Ha! it is directed

To the princess Fiorinda.

*Fior.* We will read it.

[*Reads.*]

*He, whom you pleased to favour, is cast down  
Past hope of rising, by the great duke's frown,  
If, by your gracious means, he cannot have  
A pardon;—and that got, he lives your slave.  
Of men the most distressed,*

SANAZARRO.

Of me the most beloved; and I will save thee,  
Or perish with thee. Sure, thy fault must be  
Of some prodigious shape, if that my prayers  
And humble intercession to the duke

*Enter Cozimo and Charomonte.*

Prevail not with him. Here he comes; delay  
Shall not make less my benefit.

*Coz.* What we purpose

Shall know no change, and therefore move  
me not:

We were made as properties, and what we  
shall

Determine of them cannot be call'd rigour,  
But noble justice. When they proved disloyal,  
They were cruel to themselves. The prince  
that pardons

The first affront offer'd to majesty,

Invites a second, rendering that power

Subjects should tremble at, contemptible.

Ingratitude is a monster, Carolo,

To be strangled in the birth, not to be  
cherish'd.

Madam, you're happily met with.

*Fior.* Sir, I am

An humble suitor to you; and the rather  
Am confident of a grant, in that your grace,  
When I made choice to be at your devotion,  
Vow'd to deny me nothing.

*Coz.* To this minute

We have confirm'd it. What's your boon?

*Fior.* It is, sir,

That you, in being gracious to your servant,  
The ne'er sufficiently praised Sanazarro,  
That now under your heavy displeasure  
suffers,

Would be good unto yourself. His services,  
So many, and so great, (your storm of fury  
Calm'd by your better judgment,) must in-  
form you

Some little slip, for sure it is no more,

From his loyal duty, with your justice cannot

Make foul his fair deservings. Great sir,  
therefore,  
Look backward on his former worth, and  
turning  
Your eye from his offence, what 'tis I know  
not,

And, I am confident, you will receive him  
Once more into your favour.

*Coz.* You say well,  
You are ignorant in the nature of his fault ;  
Which when you understand, as we'll instruct  
you,

Your pity will appear a charity,  
It being conferr'd on an unthankful man,  
To be repented. He's a traitor, madam,  
To you, to us, to gratitude ; and in that  
All crimes are comprehended.

*Fior.* If his offence  
Aim'd at me only, whatso'er it is,  
'Tis freely pardon'd.

*Coz.* This compassion in you  
Must make the colour of his guilt more ugly.  
The honours we have hourly heap'd upon  
him,

The titles, the rewards, to the envy of  
The old nobility, as the common people,  
We now forbear to touch at, and will only  
Insist on his gross wrongs to you. You were  
pleas'd,

Forgetting both yourself and proper great-  
ness,

To favour him, nay, to court him to embrace  
A happiness, which, on his knees, with joy  
He should have sued for. Who repined not at  
The grace you did him? yet, in recompense  
Of your large bounties, the disloyal wretch  
Makes you a stale ; and, what he might be  
by you

Scorn'd and derided, gives himself up wholly  
To the service of another. If you can  
Bear this with patience, we must say you  
have not

The bitterness of spleen, or ireful passions  
Familiar to women. Pause upon it,  
And when you seriously have weigh'd his  
carriage,

Move us again, if your reason will allow it,  
His treachery known : and then, if you con-  
tinue

An advocate for him, we, perhaps, because  
We would deny you nothing, may awake  
Our sleeping mercy. Carolo !

*Char.* My lord. [*They talk aside.*]  
*Fior.* To endure a rival that were equal to  
me,

Cannot but speak my poverty of spirit ;  
But an inferior, more : yet true love must not  
Know or degrees, or distances. Lidia may be  
As far above me in her form, as she

Is in her birth beneath me ; and what I  
In Sanazarro liked, he loves in her.  
But, if I free him now, the benefit  
Being done so timely, and confirming too  
My strength and power, my soul's best-  
faculties being

Bent wholly to preserve him, must supply me  
With all I am defective in, and bind him  
My creature ever. It must needs be so,  
Nor will I give it o'er thus.

*Coz.* Does our nephew  
Bear his restraint so constantly, as you  
Deliver it to us ?

*Char.* In my judgment, sir,  
He suffers more for his offence to you,  
Than in his fear of what can follow it.  
For he is so collected, and prepared  
To welcome that you shall determine of him,  
As if his doubts and fears were equal to him.  
And sure he's not acquainted with much  
guilt,

That more laments the telling one untruth,  
Under your pardon still, for 'twas a fault, sir,  
Than others, that pretend to conscience, do  
Their crying secret sins.

*Coz.* No more ; this gloss  
Defends not the corruption of the text :  
Urge it no more.

[*Charomonte and the others talk aside.*]  
*Fior.* I once more must make bold, sir,  
To trench upon your patience. I have  
Consider'd my wrongs duly : yet that cannot  
Divert my intercession for a man  
Your grace, like me, once favour'd. I am  
still

A suppliant to you, that you would vouchsafe  
The hearing his defence, and that I may,  
With your allowance, see and comfort him.  
Then, having heard all that he can allege  
In his excuse, for being false to you,  
Censure him as you please.

*Coz.* You will o'ercome ;  
There's no contending with you. Pray you,  
enjoy

What you desire, and tell him, he shall have  
A speedy trial ; in which, we'll forbear  
To sit a judge, because our purpose is  
To rise up his accuser.

*Fior.* All increase  
Of happiness wait on Cozimo I

[*Exeunt Fiorinda and Calaminta.*]  
*Alph.* Was it no more ?

*Char.* My honour's pawn'd for it.

*Cont.* I'll second you.

*Hip.* Since it is for the service and the  
safety

Of the hopeful prince, fall what can fall,  
I'll run

The desperate hazard.

*Hier.* He's no friend to virtue  
That does decline it.

[*They all come forward and kneel.*]

*Coz.* Ha! what sue you for?  
Shall we be ever troubled? Do not tempt  
That anger may consume you.

*Char.* Let it, sir:  
The loss is less, though innocents we perish,  
Than that your sister's son should fall, un-  
heard,

Under your fury. Shall we fear to entreat  
That grace for him, that are your faithful  
servants,

Which you vouchsafe the count, like us a  
subject?

*Coz.* Did not we vow, till sickness had  
forsook

Thy daughter Lidia, and she appear'd  
In her perfect health and beauty to plead for  
him,

We were deaf to all persuasion?

*Char.* And that hope, sir,  
Hath wrought a miracle. She is recover'd,  
And, if you please to warrant her, will bring  
The penitent prince before you.

*Coz.* To enjoy  
Such happiness, what would we not dis-  
pense with?

*Alph. Hip. Hier.* We all kneel for the  
prince.

*Cont.* Nor can it stand  
With your mercy, that are gracious to  
strangers,

To be cruel to your own.

*Coz.* But art thou certain  
I shall behold her at the best?

*Char.* If ever  
She was handsome, as it fits not me to say so,  
She is now much better'd.

*Coz.* Rise; thou art but dead  
If this prove otherwise. Lidia, appear  
And feast an appetite almost pined to death  
With longing expectation to behold  
Thy excellencies: thou, as beauty's queen,  
Shalt censure the detractors. Let my nephew  
Be led in triumph under her command;  
We'll have it so; and Sanazarro tremble  
To think whom he hath slander'd. We'll  
retire

Ourselves a little, and prepare to meet  
A blessing, which imagination tells us  
We are not worthy of: and then come  
forth,

But with such reverence, as if I were  
Myself the priest, the sacrifice my heart,  
To offer at the altar of that goodness  
That must or kill or save me. [*Exit.*]

*Char.* Are not these  
Strange gambols in the duke!

*Alph.* Great princes have,  
Like meaner men, their weakness.

*Hip.* And may use it  
Without control or check.

*Cont.* 'Tis fit they should:  
Their privilege were less else, than their  
subjects'.

*Hier.* Let them have their humours; there's  
no crossing them. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A State-room in the same.*

*Enter Fiorinda, Sanazarro, and Calaminta.*

*Sanaz.* And can it be, your bounties  
should fall down

In showers on my ingratitude, or the wrongs  
Your greatness should revenge, teach you to  
pity?

What retribution can I make, what service  
Pay to your goodness, that, in some pro-  
portion,

May to the world express I would be thankful?  
Since my engagements are so great, that all  
My best endeavours to appear your creature  
Can but proclaim my wants, and what I owe  
To your magnificence.

*Fior.* All debts are discharged  
In this acknowledgment: yet, since you  
please

I shall impose some terms of satisfaction  
For that which you profess yourself oblig'd  
for,

They shall be gentle ones, and such as will not,  
I hope, afflict you.

*Sanaz.* Make me understand,  
Great princess, what they are, and my  
obedience

Shall, with all cheerful willingness, subscribe  
To what you shall command.

*Fior.* I will bind you to  
Make good your promise. First, I then  
enjoin you

To love a lady, that, a noble way,  
Truly affects you; and that you would take  
To your protection and care the dukedom  
Of Urbino, which no more is mine, but yours.  
And that, when you have full possession of  
My person as my fortune, you would use me,  
Not as a princess, but instruct me in  
The duties of an humble wife, for such,  
The privilege of my birth no more re-  
member'd,

I will be to you. This consented to,  
All injuries forgotten, on your lips  
I thus sign your *quietus*.

*Sanaz.* I am wretched,  
In having but one life to be employ'd  
As you please to dispose it. And, believe it,  
If it be not already forfeited  
To the fury of my prince, as 'tis your gift,

With all the faculties of my soul I'll study,  
In what I may to serve you.

*Fior.* I am happy

*Enter Giovanni, and Lidia.*

In this assurance. What sweet lady's this?

*Sanaz.* 'Tis Lidia, madam, she —

*Fior.* I understand you.

Nay, blush not; by my life, she is a rare one!  
And, if I were your judge, I would not  
blame you

To like and love her. But, sir, you are  
mine now;

And I presume so on your constancy,  
That I dare not be jealous.

*Sanaz.* All thoughts of her  
Are in your goodness buried.

*Lid.* Pray you, sir,

Be comforted; your innocence should not  
know

What 'tis to fear; and if that you but look on  
The guards that you have in yourself, you  
cannot.

The duke's your uncle, sir, and, though a  
little

Incensed against you, when he sees your  
sorrow,

He must be reconciled. What rugged Tartar,  
Or cannibal, though bath'd in human gore,  
But, looking on your sweetness, would forget  
His cruel nature, and let fall his weapon,  
Though then aim'd at your throat?

*Giov.* O Lidia,

Of maids the honour, and your sex's glory!  
It is not fear to die, but to lose you,

That brings this fever on me. I will now  
Discover to you, that which, till this minute,  
I durst not trust the air with. Ere you knew  
What power the magic of your beauty had,  
I was enchanted by it, liked, and loved it,  
My fondness still increasing with my years;  
And, flattered by false hopes, I did attend  
Some blessed opportunity to move

The duke with his consent to make you mine:  
But now, such is my star-cross'd destiny,  
When he beholds you as you are, he cannot  
Deny himself the happiness to enjoy you.

And I as well in reason may entreat him  
To give away his crown, as to part from  
A jewel of more value, such you are.

Yet, howsoever, when you are his dutchess,  
And I am turn'd into forgotten dust,  
Pray you, love my memory:—I should say  
more,

But I'm cut off.

*Enter Cozimo, Charomonte, Contarino,  
Hieronimo, Hippolito, and Alphonso.*

*Sanaz.* The duke! That countenance,  
once,

When it was clothed in smiles, shew'd like  
an angel's,

But, now 'tis folded up in clouds of fury,  
'Tis terrible to look on.

*Lid.* Sir,

*Coz.* A while

Silence your musical tongue, and let me feast  
My eyes with the most ravishing object that  
They ever gazed on. There's no miniature  
In her fair face, but is a copious theme  
Which would, discours'd at large of, make  
a volume.

What clear arch'd brows! what sparkling  
eyes! the lilies

Contending with the roses in her cheeks,  
Who shall most set them off. What ruby  
lips!—

Or unto what can I compare her neck,  
But to a rock of crystal! every limb  
Proportion'd to love's wish, and in their  
neatness

Add lustre to the riches of her habit,  
Not borrow from it.

*Lid.* You are pleased to shew, sir,  
The fluency of your language, in advancing  
A subject much unworthy.

*Coz.* How! unworthy?

By all the vows which lovers offer at  
The Cyprian goddess' altars, eloquence  
Itself presuming, as you are, to speak you,  
Would be struck dumb!—And what have  
you deserved then,

[*Giovanni and Sanazarro kneel.*

(Wretches, you kneel too late,) that have  
endeavour'd

To spout the poison of your black detraction  
On this immaculate whiteness? was it malice  
To her perfections? or—

*Fior.* Your highness promised  
A gracious hearing to the count.

*Lid.* And prince too;

Do not make void so just a grant.

*Coz.* We will not:

Yet, since their accusation must be urged,  
And strongly, ere their weak defence have  
hearing,

We seat you here, as judges, to determine  
Of your gross wrongs and ours.

[*Sits the Ladies in the chairs of state.*

And now, remembering  
Whose deputies you are, be neither sway'd  
Or with particular spleen, or foolish pity,  
For neither can become you.

*Char.* There's some hope yet,  
Since they have such gentle judges.

*Coz.* Rise, and stand forth, then,  
And hear, with horror to your guilty souls,  
What we will prove against you. Could this  
princess,

Thou enemy to thyself, [*To Sanazarro.*]  
stoop her high flight

Of towering greatness to invite thy lowness  
To look up to it, and with nimble wings  
Of gratitude couldst thou forbear to meet it?  
Were her favours boundless in a noble way,  
And warranted by our allowance, yet,  
In thy acceptance, there appear'd no sign  
Of a modest thankfulness?

*Fior.* Pray you forbear

To press that further; 'tis a fault we have  
Already heard, and pardon'd.

*Coz.* We will then

Pass over it, and briefly touch at that  
Which does concern ourself, in which both  
being

Equal offenders, what we shall speak points  
Indifferently at either. How we raised thee,  
Forgetful Sanazarro! of our grace,

To a full possession of power and honours,  
It being too well known, we'll not remember.  
And what thou wert, rash youth, in expecta-  
tion, [*To Giovanni.*]

And from which headlong thou hast thrown  
thyself,

Not Florence, but all Tuscany can witness,  
With admiration. To assure thy hopes,  
We did keep constant to a widowed bed,  
And did deny ourself those lawful pleasures  
Our absolute power and height of blood  
allow'd us;

Made both, the keys that open'd our heart's  
secrets,

And what you spake, believed as oracles:

But you, in recompense of this, to him

That gave you all, to whom you owed your  
being,

With treacherous lies endeavour'd to con-  
ceal

This jewel from our knowledge, which ourself  
Could only lay just claim to.

*Giov.* 'Tis most true, sir.

*Sanaz.* We both confess a guilty cause.

*Coz.* Look on her.

Is this a beauty fit to be embraced

By any subject's arms? can any tire

Become that forehead, but a diadem?

Or, should we grant your being false to us

Could be excused, your treachery to her,

In seeking to deprive her of that greatness  
(Her matchless form consider'd) she was  
born to,

Must ne'er find pardon. We have spoken,  
ladies,

Like a rough orator, that brings more truth

Than rhetoric to make good his accusation;  
And now expect your sentence.

[*The Ladies descend from the state.*]

*Lid.* In your birth, sir,

You were mark'd out the judge of life and  
death,

And we, that are your subjects, to attend,  
With trembling fear, your doom.

*Fior.* We do resign

This chair, as only proper to yourself.

*Giov.* And, since in justice we are lost,  
we fly

Unto your saving mercy. [*All kneeling.*]

*Sanaz.* Which sets off

A prince, much more than rigour.

*Char.* And becomes him,

When 'tis express'd to such as fell by weak-  
ness,

That being a twin-born brother to affection,  
Better than wreaths of conquest.

*Hier. Hip. Cont. Alph.* We all speak  
Their language, mighty sir.

*Coz.* You know our temper,

And therefore with more boldness venture  
on it:

And, would not our consent to your demands  
Deprive us of a happiness hereafter

Ever to be despair'd of, we, perhaps,

Might hearken nearer to you; and could  
wish

With some qualification, or excuse,

You might make less the mountains of your  
crimes,

And so invite our clemency to feast with  
you.

But you, that knew with what impatience

Of grief we parted from the fair Clarinda,

Our dutchess, (let her memory still be  
sacred!)

And with what imprecations on ourself

We vowed, not hoping e'er to see her equal,  
Ne'er to make trial of a second choice.

If nature framed not one that did excel her,  
As this maid's beauty prompts us that she

does:—

And yet, with oaths then mix'd with tears,  
upon

Her monument we swore our eye should  
never

Again be tempted;—'tis true, and those vows  
Are register'd above, something here tells  
me.—

Carolo, thou heardst us swear.

*Char.* And swear so deeply,

That if all women's beauties were in this,

(As she's not to be named with the dead  
dutchess.)

Nay, all their virtues bound up in one story,  
(Of which mine is scarce an epitome,)

If you should take her as a wife, the weight

Of your perjuries would sink you. If I durst,  
I had told you this before.

*Coz.* 'Tis strong truth, Carolo:

And yet, what was necessity in us,  
Cannot free them from treason.

*Char.* There's your error ;  
The prince, in care to have you keep your  
vows  
Made unto heaven, vouchsafed to love my  
daughter.

*Lid.* He told me so, indeed, sir.

*Fior.* And the count  
Averr'd as much to me.

*Coz.* You all conspire,  
To force our mercy from us.

*Char.* Which given up,  
To aftertimes preserves you unforsworn :  
An honour which will live upon your tomb,  
When your greatness is forgotten.

*Coz.* Though we know  
All this is practice, and that both are false :  
Such reverence we will pay to dead Clarinda,  
And to our serious oaths, that we are  
pleas'd

With our own hand to blind our eyes, and  
not

Know what we understand. Here, Giovanni,  
We pardou thee ; and take from us, in this,  
More than our dukedom : love her. As I  
part

With her, all thoughts of women fly fast  
from us !

Sanazarro, we forgive you : in your service  
To this princess, merit it. Yet let not  
others

That are in trust and grace, as you have been,  
By the example of our lenity,  
Presume upon their sovereign's clemency.

*Enter Calandrino and Petronella.*

*All.* Long live great Cozimo !

*Cal.* Sure the duke is  
In the giving vein, they are so loud. Come  
on, spouse ;  
We have heard all, and we will have our  
boon too.

*Coz.* What is it ?

*Cal.* That your grace, in remembrance of  
My share in a dance, and that I play'd your  
part,  
When you should have drunk hard, would  
get this signior's grant

To give this damsel to me in the church,  
For we are contracted. In it you shall do  
Your dukedom pleasure.

*Coz.* How ?

*Cal.* Why the whole race  
Of such as can act naturally fools' parts,  
Are quite worn out ; and they that do survive,  
Do only zany us : and we will bring you,  
If we die not without issue, of both sexes  
Such chopping mirth-makers, as shall pre-  
serve

Perpetual cause of sport, both to your grace  
And your posterity ; that sad melancholy  
Shall ne'er approach you.

*Coz.* We are pleas'd in it,  
And will pay her portion.—[*Comes forward.*

*May the passage prove,  
Of what's presented, worthy of your love,  
And favour, as was aim'd ; and we have all  
That can in compass of our wishes fall.*

[*Exeunt.*





# The Maid of Honour.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Roberto, <i>king of Sicily.</i>	Roderigo, } <i>captains to Gonzaga.</i>
Ferdinand, <i>duke of Urbin.</i>	Jacomo, }
Bertoldo, <i>the king's natural brother, a knight of Malta.</i>	Druso, } <i>captains to duke Ferdinand.</i>
Gonzaga, <i>a knight of Malta, general to the dutchess of Sienna.</i>	Livio, }
Astutio, <i>a counsellor of state.</i>	Father Paulo, <i>a priest, Camiola's confessor.</i>
Fulgentio, <i>the minion of Roberto.</i>	Ambassador from the duke of Urbin.
Adorni, <i>a follower of Camiola's father.</i>	A Bishop.
Signior Sylli, <i>a foolish self-lover.</i>	A Page.
Antonio, } <i>two rich heirs city-bred.</i>	Aurelia, <i>dutchess of Sienna.</i>
Gasparo, }	Camiola, <i>th. MAID OF HONOUR.</i>
Perio, <i>a colonel to Gonzaga.</i>	Clarinda, <i>her woman.</i>
	Scout, Soldiers, Gaoler, Attendants, Servants, &c.

SCENE,—Partly in Sicily, and partly in the Siennese.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—Palermo. *A State-room in the Palace.*

*Enter Astutio and Adorni.*

*Ador.* Good day to your lordship.

*Ast.* Thanks, Adorni.

*Ador.* May I presume to ask if the ambassador

Employ'd by Ferdinand, the Duke of Urbin,  
Hath audience this morning?

*Enter Fulgentio.*

*Ast.* 'Tis uncertain;

For, though a counsellor of state, I am not  
Of the cabinet council: but there's one, if  
he please,

That may resolve you.

*Ador.* I will move him.—Sir!

*Ful.* If you've a suit, shew water, I am  
blind else.

*Ador.* A suit; yet of a nature not to prove  
The quarry that you hawk for; if your words  
Are not like Indian wares, and every scruple  
To be weigh'd and rated, one poor syllable,  
Vouchsafed in answer of a fair demand,  
Cannot deserve a fee.

*Ful.* It seems you are ignorant,  
I neither speak nor hold my peace for  
nothing;

And yet, for once, I care not if I answer  
One single question, gratis.

*Ador.* I much thank you.

Hath the ambassador audience, sir, to-day?  
*Ful.* Yes.

*Ador.* At what hour?

*Ful.* I promised not so much.

A syllable you begg'd, my charity gave it;  
Move me no further. [*Exit.*]

*Ast.* This you wonder at:

With me, 'tis usual.

*Ador.* Pray you, sir, what is he?

*Ast.* A gentleman, yet no lord. He hath  
some drops

Of the king's blood running in his veins,  
derived

Some ten degrees off. His revenue lies  
In a narrow compass, the king's ear; and  
yields him

Every hour a fruitful harvest. Men may talk  
Of three crops in a year in the Fortunate  
Islands,

Or profit made by wool; but, while there  
are suitors,

His sheepshearing, nay, shaving to the quick,  
Is in every quarter of the moon, and constant.

In the time of trussing a point, he can undo,  
Or make a man: his play or recreation,

Is to raise this up, or pull down that; and,  
though

He never yet took orders, makes more  
bishops

In Sicily, than the pope himself.

*Enter Bertoldo, Gasparo, Antonio, and  
a Servant.*

*Ador.* Most strange!

*Ast.* The presence fills. He in the Malta  
habit

Is the natural brother of the king—a by-blow.

*Ador.* I understand you.

*Gasp.* Morrow to my uncle.

*Ant.* And my late guardian :—but at length I have

The reins in my own hands.

*Ast.* Pray you, use them well,  
Or you'll too late repent it.

*Bert.* With this jewel

Presented to Camiola, prepare

This night, a visit for me. [*Exit Servant.*] I shall have

Your company, gallants, I perceive, if that  
The king will hear of war.

*Ant.* Sir, I have horses

Of the best breed in Naples, fitter far  
To break a rank than crack a lance ; and are,  
In their career, of such incredible swiftness,  
They outstrip swallows.

*Bert.* And such may be useful  
To run away with, should we be defeated :  
You are well provided, signior.

*Ant.* Sir, excuse me ;

All of their race, by instinct, know a coward,  
And scorn the burthen : they come on, like  
lightning ;

Founder'd in a retreat.

*Bert.* By no means back them ;  
Unless you know your courage sympathize  
With the daring of your horse.

*Ant.* My lord, this is bitter.

*Gasp.* I will raise me a company of foot ;  
And, when at push of pike I am to enter  
A breach, to shew my valour, I have bought  
me

An armour cannon proof.

*Bert.* You will not leap, then,  
O'er an outwork in your shirt ?

*Gasp.* I do not like  
Activity that way.

*Bert.* You had rather stand  
A mark to try their muskets on ?

*Gasp.* If I do

No good, I'll do no hurt.

*Bert.* 'Tis in you, signior,  
A Christian resolution, and becomes you !  
But I will not discourage you.

*Ant.* You are, sir,

A knight of Malta, and, as I have heard,  
Have serv'd against the Turk.

*Bert.* 'Tis true.

*Ant.* Pray you, shew us  
The difference between the city valour,  
And service in the field.

*Bert.* 'Tis somewhat more  
Than roaring in a tavern or a brothel,  
Or to steal a constable from a sleeping watch,  
Then burn their halberds ; or, safe guarded  
by  
Your tenants' sons, to carry away a May-pole

From a neighbour village. You will not find  
there,

Your masters of dependencies, to take up  
A drunken brawl, or, to get you the names  
Of valiant chevaliers, fellows that will be,  
For a cloak with thrice-dyed velvet, and a  
cast suit

Kick'd down the stairs. A knave with half  
a breech there,

And no shirt, (being a thing superfluous  
And worn out of his memory,) if you bear not  
Yourselves both in, and upright, with a  
provant sword

Will slash your scarlets and your plush a  
new way ;

Or, with the hilts, thunder about your ears  
Such music as will make your worshups dance  
To the doleful tune of *Lachrymæ*.

*Gasp.* I must tell you

In private, as you are my princely friend,  
I do not like such fiddlers.

*Bert.* No ! they are useful  
For your imitation ; I remember you,  
When you came first to the court, and  
talk'd of nothing

But your rents and your entradas, ever  
chiming

The golden bells in your pockets ; you be-  
lieved

The taking of the wall as a tribute due to  
Your gaudy clothes ; and could not walk at  
midnight

Without a causeless quarrel, as if men  
Of coarser outsides were in duty bound  
To suffer your affronts : but, when you had  
been

Cudgell'd well twice or thrice, and from the  
doctrine

Made profitable uses, you concluded  
The sovereign means to teach irregular heirs  
Civility, with conformity of manners,  
Were two or three sound beatings.

*Ant.* I confess

They did much good upon me.

*Gasp.* And on me :

The principles that they read were sound.

*Bert.* You'll find

The like instructions in the camp.

*Ast.* The king !

*A flourish.* Enter Roberto, Fulgentio,  
Ambassadors, and Attendants.

*Rob.* [*ascends the throne.*] We sit prepared  
to hear.

*Amb.* Your majesty  
Hath been long since familiar, I doubt not,  
With the desperate fortunes of my lord ; and  
pity

Of the much that your confederate hath suffer'd,

You being his last refuge, may persuade you Not alone to compassionate, but to lend Your royal aids to stay him in his fall To certain ruin. He, too late, is conscious That his ambition to encroach upon His neighbour's territories, with the danger of His liberty, nay, his life, hath brought in question

His own inheritance : but youth, and heat Of blood, in your interpretation, may Both plead and mediate for him. I must grant it

An error in him, being denied the favours Of the fair princess of Sienna, (though He sought her in a noble way,) to endeavour To force affection, by surprisal of Her principal seat, Sienna.

*Rob.* Which now proves The seat of his captivity, not triumph : Heaven is still just.

*Amb.* And yet that justice is To be with mercy temper'd, which heaven's deputies

Stand bound to minister. The injured dutchess,

By reason taught, as nature could not, with The reparation of her wrongs, but aim at A brave revenge ; and my lord feels, too late, That innocence will find friends. The great Gonzaga,

The honour of his order, (I must praise Virtue, though in an enemy,) he whose fights And conquests hold one number, rallying up Her scatter'd troops, before we could get time

To victual or to man the conquer'd city, Sat down before it ; and, presuming that 'Tis not to be relieved, admits no parley, Our flags of truce hung out in vain : nor will he Lend an ear to composition, but exacts, With the rendering up the town, the goods and lives

Of all within the walls, and of all sexes, To be at his discretion.

*Rob.* Since injustice In your duke meets this correction, can you press us,

With any seeming argument of reason, In foolish pity to decline his dangers, To draw them on ourself? Shall we not be Warn'd by his harms? The league proclaim'd between us,

Bound neither of us further than to aid Each other, if by foreign force invaded ; And so far in my honour I was tied.

But since, without our counsel, or allowance,

He hath ta'en arms ; with his good leave, he must

Excuse us if we steer not on a rock We see and may avoid. Let other monarchs Contend to be made glorious by proud war, And, with the blood of their poor subjects, purchase

Increase of empire, and augment their cares In keeping that which was by wrongs extorted,

Gilding unjust invasions with the trim Of glorious conquests ; we, that would be known

The father of our people, in our study And vigilance for their safety, must not change Their ploughshares into swords, and force them from

The secure shade of their own vines, to be Scorch'd with the flames of war : or, for our sport,

Expose their lives to ruin.

*Amb.* Will you, then, In his extremity, forsake your friend ?

*Rob.* No ; but preserve ourself.

*Bert.* Cannot the beams Of honour thaw your icy fears ?

*Rob.* Who's that ?

*Bert.* A kind of brother, sir, howe'er your subject ;

Your father's son, and one who blushes that You are not heir to his brave spirit and vigour, As to his kingdom.

*Rob.* How's this !

*Bert.* Sir, to be His living chronicle, and to speak his praise, Cannot deserve your anger.

*Rob.* Where's your warrant

For this presumption ?

*Bert.* Here, sir, in my heart : Let sycophants, that feed upon your favours, Style coldness in you caution, and prefer Your ease before your honour ; and conclude, To eat and sleep supinely is the end Of human blessings : I must tell you, sir, Virtue, if not in action, is a vice ;

And, when we move not forward, we go backward :

Nor is this peace, the nurse of drones and cowards,

Our health, but a disease.

*Gasp.* Well urged, my lord.

*Anf.* Perfect what is so well begun.

*Amb.* And bind

My lord your servant.

*Rob.* Hair-brain'd fool ! what reason

Canst thou infer to make this good ?

*Bert.* A thousand, Not to be contradicted. But consider

Where your command lies : 'tis not, sir, in France,

Spain, Germany, Portugal, but in Sicily ;  
An island, sir. Here are no mines of gold  
Or silver to enrich you ; no worm spins  
Silk in her womb, to make distinction  
Between you and a peasant in your habits ;  
No fish lives near our shores, whose blood  
can dye

Scarlet or purple ; all that we possess,  
With beasts we have in common : nature did  
Design us to be warriors, and to break  
through

Our ring, the sea, by which we are environ'd ;  
And we by force must fetch in what is  
wanting,

Or precious to us. Add to this, we are  
A populous nation, and increase so fast,  
That, if we by our providence are not sent  
Abroad in colonies, or fall by the sword,  
Not Sicily, though now it were more fruitful  
Than when 'twas styled the Granary of great  
Rome,

Can yield our numerous fry bread : we must  
starve,

Or eat up one another.

*Ador.* The king hears

With much attention.

*Ast.* And seems moved with what  
Bertoldo hath delivered.

*Bert.* May you live long, sir,  
The king of peace, so you deny not us  
The glory of the war ; let not our nerves  
Shrink up with sloth, nor, for want of em-  
ployment,

Make younger brothers thieves : it is their  
swords, sir,

Must sow and reap their harvest. If examples  
May move you more than arguments, look  
on England,

The empress of the European isles,  
And unto whom alone ours yields precedence:  
When did she flourish so, as when she was  
The mistress of the ocean, her navies  
Putting a girdle round about the world?

When the Iberian quaked, her worthies  
named ;

And the fair flower-de-luce grew pale, set by  
The red rose and the white ! Let not our  
armour

Hung up, or our unrigg'd armada, make us  
Ridiculous to the late poor snakes our  
neighbours,

Warm'd in our bosoms, and to whom again  
We may be terrible ; while we spend our  
hours

Without variety, confined to drink,

Dice, cards, or whores. Rouse us, sir, from  
the sleep

Of idleness, and redeem our mortgaged  
honours.

Your birth, and justly, claims my father's  
kingdom ;

But his heroic mind descends to me :  
I will confirm so much.

*Ador.* In his looks he seems

To break ope Janus' temple.

*Ast.* How these younglings

Take fire from him !

*Ador.* It works an alteration

Upon the king.

*Ant.* I can forbear no longer :

War, war, my sovereign !

*Ful.* The king appears  
Resolv'd, and does prepare to speak.

*Rob.* Think not

Our counsel's built upon so weak a base,  
As to be overturn'd, or shaken, with  
Tempestuous winds of words. As I, my lord,  
Before resolv'd you, I will not engage

My person in this quarrel ; neither press

My subjects to maintain it : yet, to shew

My rule is gentle, and that I have feeling  
O' your master's sufferings, since these  
gallants, weary

Of the happiness of peace, desire to taste

The bitter sweets of war, we do consent

That, as adventurers and volunteers,

No way compell'd by us, they may make trial  
Of their boasted valours.

*Bert.* We desire no more.

*Rob.* 'Tis well ; and, but my grant in this,  
expect not

Assistance from me. Govern, as you please,  
The province you make choice of ; for, I vow

By all things sacred, if that thou miscarry

In this rash undertaking, I will hear it

No otherwise than as a sad disaster,

Fallen on a stranger : nor will I esteem

That man my subject, who, in thy extremes,  
In purse or person aids thee. Take your  
fortune :

You know me ; I have said it. So, my lord,  
You have my absolute answer.

*Amb.* My prince pays,

In me, his duty.

*Rob.* Follow me, Fulgentio,

And you, Astutio.

[*Flourish.* *Exeunt* Roberto, Fulgen-  
tio, Astutio, and Attendants.

*Gasp.* What a frown he threw,

At his departure, on you !

*Bert.* Let him keep

His smiles for his state catamite, I care not.

*Ant.* Shall we aboard to-night ?

*Amb.* Your speed, my lord,

Doubles the benefit.

*Bert.* I have a business

Requires dispatch ; some two hours hence  
I'll meet you. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II.—*The same. A Room in  
Camiola's House.*

*Enter Signior Sylli, walking fantastically,  
followed by Camiola and Clarinda.*

*Cam.* Nay, signior, this is too much  
ceremony,

In my own house.

*Syl.* What's gracious abroad,  
Must be in private practised.

*Clar.* For your mirth's sake  
Let him alone ; he has been all this morning  
In practise with a peruked gentleman-usher,  
To teach him his true amble, and his postures,

*[Sylli walking by, and practising.]*  
When he walks before a lady.

*Syl.* You may, madam,  
Perhaps, believe that I in this use art,  
To make you dote upon me, by exposing  
My more than most rare features to your view :  
But I, as I have ever done, deal simply ;  
A mark of sweet simplicity, ever noted  
In the family of the Syllis. Therefore, lady,  
Look not with too much contemplation on  
me ;

If you do, you are in the suds.

*Cam.* You are no barber ?

*Syl.* Fie, no ! not I ; but my good parts  
have drawn

More loving hearts out of fair ladies' bellies,  
Than the whole trade have done teeth.

*Cam.* Is't possible ?

*Syl.* Yes, and they live too : marry, much  
condoling

The scorn of their Narcissus, as they call me,  
Because I love myself—

*Cam.* Without a rival.

What philters or love-powders do you use,  
To force affection ? I see nothing in  
Your person but I dare look on, yet keep  
My own poor heart still.

*Syl.* You are warn'd—be arm'd ;  
And do not lose the hope of such a husband,  
In being too soon enamour'd.

*Clar.* Hold in your head,  
Or you must have a martingal.

*Syl.* I have sworn

Never to take a wife, but such a one,  
O may your ladyship prove so strong ! as can  
Hold out a month against me.

*Cam.* Never fear it ;

Though your best taking part, your wealth,  
were trebled,

I would not woo you. But since in your pity  
You please to give me caution, tell me what  
Temptations I must fly from.

*Syl.* The first is,

That you never hear me sing, for I'm a Syren :  
If you observe, when I warble, the dogs howl,  
As ravish'd with my ditties ; and you will  
Run mad to hear me.

*Cam.* I will stop my ears,  
And keep my little wits.

*Syl.* Next, when I dance,  
And come aloft thus, *[capers.]* cast not a  
sheep's eye

Upon the quivering of my calf.

*Cam.* Proceed, sir.

*Syl.* But on no terms, for 'tis a main point,  
dream not

O' th' strength of my back, though it will  
bear a burthen

With any porter.

*Cam.* I mean not to ride you.

*Syl.* Nor I your little ladyship, till you have  
Perform'd the covenants. Be not taken with  
My pretty spider-fingers, nor my eyes,  
That twinkle on both sides.

*Cam.* Was there ever such  
A piece of motley heard of ! *[A knocking  
within.]* Who's that ? *[Exit Clarinda.]*

You may spare

The catalogue of my dangers.

*Syl.* No, good madam ;

I have not told you half.

*Cam.* Enough, good signior ;

If I eat more of such sweetmeats, I shall  
surfeit.—

*Re-enter Clarinda.*

Who is't ?

*Clar.* The brother of the king.

*Syl.* Nay, start not.

The brother of the king ! is he no more ?  
Were it the king himself, I'd give him leave  
To speak his mind to you, for I am not  
jealous ;

And, to assure your ladyship of so much,  
I'll usher him in, and, that done—hide my-  
self. *[Aside, and exit.]*

*Cam.* Camiola, if ever, now be constant :  
This is, indeed, a suitor, whosesweet presence,  
Courtship, and loving language, would have  
stagger'd

The chaste Penelope ; and, to increase  
The wonder, did not modesty forbid it,  
I should ask that from him he sues to me for :  
And yet my reason, like a tyrant, tells me  
I must nor give nor take it.

*Re-enter Sylli with Bertoldo.*

*Syl.* I must tell you,  
You lose your labour. 'Tis enough to prove it,  
Signior Sylli came before you ; and you know,  
First come first serv'd : yet you shall have my  
countenance

To parley with her, and I'll take special care  
That none shall interrupt you.

*Bert.* You are courteous.

*Syl.* Come, wench, wilt thou hear wisdom?

*Clar.* Yes, from you, sir.

[*They walk aside.*]

*Bert.* If forcing this sweet favour from your  
lips,

[*Kisses her.*]

Fair madam, argue me of too much boldness,  
When you are pleased to understand I take  
A parting kiss, if not excuse, at least  
'Twill qualify the offence.

*Cam.* A parting kiss, sir!

What nation, envious of the happiness  
Which Sicily enjoys in your sweet presence,  
Can buy you from her? or what climate yield  
Pleasures transcending those which you enjoy  
here,

Being both beloved and honour'd; the north-  
star

And guider of all hearts; and, to sum up  
Your full account of happiness in a word,  
The brother of the king?

*Bert.* Do you, alone,

And with an unexampled cruelty,  
Enforce my absence, and deprive me of  
Those blessings which you, with a polish'd  
phrase,

Seem to insinuate that I do possess,  
And yet tax me as being guilty of  
My wilful exile? What are titles to me,  
Or popular suffrage, or my nearness to  
The king in blood, or fruitful Sicily,  
Though it confess'd no sovereign but myself,  
When you, that are the essence of my being,  
The anchor of my hopes, the real substance  
Of my felicity, in your disdain,  
Turn all to fading and deceiving shadows?

*Cam.* You tax me without cause.

*Bert.* You must confess it.

But answer love with love, and seal the con-  
tract

In the uniting of our souls, how gladly  
(Though now I were in action, and assured,  
Following my fortune, that plumed Victory  
Would make her glorious stand upon my  
tent)

Would I put off my armour, in my heat  
Of conquest, and, like Antony, pursue  
My Cleopatra! Will you yet look on me,  
With an eye of favour?

*Cam.* Truth bear witness for me,

That, in the judgment of my soul, you are  
A man so absolute, and circular,  
In all those wish'd-for rarities that may  
take

A virgin captive, that, though at this instant  
All scepter'd monarchs of our western world  
Were rivals with you, and Camiola worthy

Of such a competition, you alone  
Should wear the garland.

*Bert.* If so, what diverts

Your favour from me?

*Cam.* No mulct in yourself,  
Or in your person, mind, or fortune.

*Bert.* What then?

*Cam.* The consciousness of mine own  
wants: alas! sir,

We are not parallels; but, like lines divided,  
Can ne'er meet in one centre. Your birth, sir,  
Without addition, were an ample dowry  
For one of fairer fortunes; and this shape,  
Were you ignoble, far above all value:  
To this so clear a mind, so furnish'd with  
Harmonious faculties moulded from heaven,  
That though you were Thersites in your  
features,

Of no descent, and Irus in your fortunes,  
Ulysses-like, you'd force all eyes and ears  
To love, but seen; and, when heard, wonder  
at

Your matchless story: but all these bound up  
Together in one volume!—give me leave,  
With admiration to look upon them;  
But not presume, in my own flattering hopes,  
I may or can enjoy them.

*Bert.* How you ruin

What you would seem to build up! I know no  
Disparity between us; you're an heir,  
Sprung from a noble family; fair, rich, young,  
And every way my equal.

*Cam.* Sir, excuse me;

One aerie with proportion ne'er discloses  
The eagle and the wren:—tissue and frieze  
In the same garment, monstrous! But  
suppose

That what's in you excessive were diminish'd,  
And my desert supplied; the stronger bar,  
Religion, stops our entrance: you are, sir,  
A knight of Malta, by your order bound  
To a single life; you cannot marry me;  
And, I assure myself, you are too noble  
To seek me, though my frailty should consent,  
In a base path.

*Bert.* A dispensation, lady,

Will easily absolve me.

*Cam.* O take heed, sir!

When what is vow'd to heaven is dispens'd  
with,  
To serve our ends on earth, a curse must  
follow,  
And not a blessing.

*Bert.* Is there no hope left me?

*Cam.* Nor to myself, but is a neighbour to  
Impossibility. True love should walk  
On equal feet; in us it does not, sir:  
But rest assured, excepting this, I shall be  
Devoted to your service.

*Bert.* And this is your  
Determinate sentence?

*Cam.* Not to be revoked.

*Bert.* Farewell then, fairest cruel! all  
thoughts in me

Of women perish. Let the glorious light  
Of noble war extinguish Love's dim taper,  
That only lends me light to see my folly:  
Honour, be thou my ever-living mistress,  
And fond affection, as thy bond-slave, serve  
thee!

*Cam.* How soon my sun is set, he being  
absent,

Never to rise again! What a fierce battle  
Is fought between my passions!—methinks  
We should have kiss'd at parting.

*Syl.* I perceive

He has his answer: now must I step in  
To comfort her. [*comes forward.*] You have  
found, I hope, sweet lady,

Some difference between a youth of my pitch,  
And this bugbear Bertoldo: men are men,  
The king's brother is no more; good parts  
will do it,

When titles fail. Despair not; I may be  
In time entreated.

*Cam.* Be so now, to leave me.—

Lights for my chamber. O my heart!

[*Exit Camiola and Clarinda.*]

*Syl.* She now,

I know, is going to bed, to ruminate  
Which way to glut herself upon my person:  
But, for my oath's sake, I will keep her  
hungry;

And, to grow full myself, I'll straight—to  
supper. [*Exit.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—*The same. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter Roberto, Fulgentio, and Astutio.*

*Rob.* Embark'd to-night, do you say?

*Ful.* I saw him aboard, sir.

*Rob.* And without taking of his leave?

*Ast.* 'Twas strange!

*Rob.* Are we grown so contemptible?

*Ful.* 'Tis far

From me, sir, to add fuel to your anger,  
That, in your ill opinion of him, burns  
Too hot already; else, I should affirm,  
It was a gross neglect.

*Rob.* A wilful scorn

Of duty and allegiance; you give it  
Too fair a name: but we shall think on't.

Can you

Guess what the numbers were, that follow'd  
him

In his desperate action?

*Ful.* More than you think, sir.  
All ill-affected spirits in Palermo,  
Or to your government or person, with  
The turbulent swordmen, such whose po-  
verty forced them

To wish a change, are gone along with him;  
Creatures devoted to his undertakings,  
In right or wrong: and, to express their zeal  
And readiness to serve him, ere they went,  
Profanely took the sacrament on their knees,  
To live and die with him.

*Rob.* O most impious!  
Their loyalty to us forgot?

*Ful.* I fear so.

*Ast.* Unthankful as they are!

*Ful.* Yet this deserves not  
One troubled thought in you, sir; with your  
pardon,

I hold that their remove from hence makes  
more

For your security than danger.

*Rob.* True;

And, as I'll fashion it, they shall feel it too.  
Astutio, you shall presently be dispatch'd  
With letters, writ and sign'd with our own  
hand,

To the dutchess of Sienna, in excuse  
Of these forces sent against her. If you spare  
An oath, to give it credit, that we never  
Consented to it, swearing for the king,  
Though false, it is no perjury.

*Ast.* I know it.

They are not fit to be state agents, sir,  
That without scruple 'of their conscience,  
cannot

Be prodigal in such trifles.

*Ful.* Right, Astutio.

*Rob.* You must, beside, from us take  
some instructions,

To be imparted, as you judge them useful,  
To the general Gonzaga. Instantly  
Prepare you for your journey.

*Ast.* With the wings

Of loyalty and duty. [*Exit.*]

*Ful.* I am bold

To put your majesty in mind—

*Rob.* Of my promise,  
And aids, to further you in your amorous  
project

To the fair and rich Camiola? there's my ring;  
Whatever you shall say that I entreat,  
Or can command by power, I will make good.

*Ful.* Ever your majesty's creature.

*Rob.* Venus prove  
Propitious to you! [*Exit.*]

*Ful.* All sorts to my wishes:  
Bertoldo was my hindrance; he removed,  
I now will court her in the conqueror's style;  
"Come, see, and overcome."—Boy!

*Enter Page.*

*Page.* Sir ; your pleasure ?

*Ful.* Haste to Camiola ; bid her prepare  
An entertainment suitable to a fortune  
She could not hope for. Tell her, I vouchsafe  
To honour her with a visit.

*Page.* 'Tis a favour  
Will make her proud.

*Ful.* I know it.

*Page.* I am gone, sir.

[*Exit.*

*Ful.* Entreaties fit not me ; a man in grace  
May challenge awe and privilege, by his  
place. [*Exit.*

SCENE II.—*The same. A Room in  
Camiola's House.*

*Enter Adorni, Sylli, and Clarinda.*

*Ador.* So melancholy, say you !

*Clar.* Never given  
To such retirement.

*Ador.* Can you guess the cause ?

*Clar.* If it hath not its birth and being  
from

The brave Bertoldo's absence, I confess  
'Tis past my apprehension.

*Syl.* You are wide,  
The whole field wide. I, in my understanding,  
Pity your ignorance ; yet, if you will  
Swear to conceal it, I will let you know  
Where her shoe wrings her.

*Clar.* I vow, signior,  
By my virginity.

*Syl.* A perilous oath,  
In a waiting-woman of fifteen ! and is, indeed,  
A kind of nothing.

*Ador.* I'll take one of something,  
If you please to minister it.

*Syl.* Nay, you shall not swear :  
I had rather take your word ; for, should  
you vow,

D—n me, I'll do this!—you are sure to  
break.

*Ador.* I thank you, signior ; but resolve us.

*Syl.* Know, then,  
Here walks the cause. She dares not look  
upon me ;

My beauties are so terrible and enchanting,  
She cannot endure my sight.

*Ador.* There I believe you.

*Syl.* But the time will come, be comforted,  
when I will

Put off this vizard of unkindness to her,  
And shew an amorous and yielding face :

And, until then, though Hercules himself  
Desire to see her, he had better eat

His club, than pass her threshold ; for I  
will be

Her Cerberus, to guard her.

*Ador.* A good dog !

*Clar.* Worth twenty porters.

*Enter Page.*

*Page.* Keep you open house here ?  
No groom to attend a gentleman ! O, I  
spy one.

*Syl.* He means not me, I am sure.

*Page.* You, sirrah sheep's-head,  
With a face cut on a cat-stick, do you hear ?  
You, yeoman fewerer, conduct me to  
The lady of the mansion, or my poniard  
Shall disembogue thy soul.

*Syl.* O terrible ! *disembogue!*  
I talk'd of Hercules, and here is one  
Bound up in *decimo sexto.*

*Page.* Answer, wretch.

*Syl.* Pray you, little gentleman, be not so  
furious :

The lady keeps her chamber.

*Page.* And we present,  
Sent in an embassy to her ! but here is  
Her gentlewoman. Sirrah ! hold my cloak,  
While I take a leap at her lips : do it, and  
neatly ;

Or, having first tripp'd up thy heels, I'll  
make

Thy back my footstool. [*Kisses Clarinda.*

*Syl.* Tamberlane in little !  
Am I turn'd Turk ! What an office am I  
put to !

*Clar.* My lady, gentle youth, is indis-  
posed.

*Page.* Though she were dead and buried,  
only tell her,

The great man in the court, the brave Ful-  
gentio,

Descends to visit her, and it will raise her  
Out of the grave for joy.

*Enter Fulgentio.*

*Syl.* Here comes another !

The devil, I fear, in his holiday clothes.

*Page.* So soon !

My part is at an end then. Cover my  
shoulders ;

When I grow great, thou shalt serve me.

*Ful.* Are you, sirrah,  
An implement of the house ? [*To Sylli.*

*Syl.* Sure he will make  
A jointstool of me !

*Ful.* Or, if you belong [*To Ador.*  
To the lady of the place, command her  
hither.

*Ador.* I do not wear her livery, yet ac-  
knowledge

A duty to her ; and as little bound  
To serve your preemptory will, as she is



To obey your summons. 'Twill become you, sir,

To wait her leisure; then, her pleasure known,

You may present your duty.

*Ful.* Duty! Slave,

I'll teach you manners.

*Ador.* I'm past learning; make not

A tumult in the house.

*Ful.* Shall I be braved thus?

*Syl.* O, I am dead! and now I swoon. [*They draw.*

*Clar.* Help! murder! [*Falls on his face.*

*Page.* Recover, sirrah; the lady's here.

*Enter Camiola.*

*Syl.* Nay, then

I am alive again, and I'll be valiant.

*Cam.* What insolence is this? [*Rises.*  
Adorni, hold,

Hold, I command you.

*Ful.* Saucy groom!

*Cam.* Not so, sir;

However, in his life, he had dependence

Upon my father, he's a gentleman,

As well born as yourself. Put on your hat.

*Ful.* In my presence, without leave!

*Syl.* He has mine, madam.

*Cam.* And I must tell you, sir, and in plain language,

How'er your glittering outside promise gentry,

The rudeness of your carriage and behaviour  
Speaks you a coarser thing.

*Syl.* She means a clown, sir;

I am her interpreter, for want of a better.

*Cam.* I am a queen in mine own house;  
nor must you

Expect an empire here.

*Syl.* Sure, I must love her

Before the day, the pretty soul's so valiant.

*Cam.* What are you? and what would  
you with me?

*Ful.* Proud one,

When you know what I am, and what I  
came for,

And may, on your submission, proceed to,  
You, in your reason, must repent the coarseness

Of my entertainment.

*Cam.* Why, fine man? what are you?

*Ful.* A kinsman of the king's.

*Cam.* I cry you mercy,

For his sake, not your own. But grant you  
are so,

'Tis not impossible but a king may have

A fool to his kinsman,—no way meaning  
you, sir.

*Ful.* You have heard of Fulgentio?

*Cam.* Long since, sir;

A suit-broker in court. He has the worst  
Report among good men I ever heard of,  
For bribery and extortion: in their prayers,  
Widows and orphans curse him for a canker  
And caterpillar in the state. I hope, sir,  
You are not the man; much less employ'd  
by him,

As a smock-agent to me.

*Ful.* I reply not

As you deserve, being assured you know me;  
Pretending ignorance of my person, only  
To give me a taste of your wit: 'tis well, and  
courtly;

I like a sharp wit well.

*Syl.* I cannot endure it;

Nor any of the Syllis.

*Ful.* More; I know too,

This harsh induction must serve as a foil  
To the well-tuned observance and respect  
You will hereafter pay me, being made  
Familiar with my credit with the king,  
And that (contain your joy) I deign to love  
you.

*Cam.* Love me! I am not rapt with it.

*Ful.* Hear't again;

I love you honestly: now you admire me.

*Cam.* I do, indeed; it being a word so  
seldom

Heard from a courtier's mouth. But, pray  
you, deal plainly,

Since you find me simple; what might be  
the motives

Inducing you to leave the freedom of  
A bachelor's life, on your soft neck to wear  
The stubborn yoke of marriage; and, of all  
The beauties in Palermo, to choose me,  
Poor me? that is the main point you must  
treat of.

*Ful.* Why, I will tell you. Of a little thing  
You are a pretty peat, indifferent fair too;  
And, like a new-rigg'd ship, both tight and  
yare,

Well truss'd to bear: virgins of giant size  
Are sluggards at the sport; but, for my  
pleasure,

Give me a neat well-timber'd gamester like  
you;

Such need no spurs,—the quickness of your  
eye

Assures an active spirit.

*Cam.* You are pleasant, sir;

Yet I presume that there was one thing in me,  
Unmention'd yet, that took you more than all  
Those parts you have remember'd.

*Ful.* What?

*Cam.* My wealth, sir.

*Ful.* You are in the right ; without that, beauty is

A flower worn in the morning, at night trod on :

But beauty, youth, and fortune meeting in you,

I will vouchsafe to marry you.

*Cam.* You speak well ;

And, in return, excuse me, sir, if I Deliver reasons why, upon no terms, I'll marry you : I fable not.

*Syl.* I am glad

To hear this ; I began to have an ague.

*Ful.* Come, your wise reasons.

*Cam.* Such as they are, pray you take them :

First, I am doubtful whether you are a man, Since, for your shape, trimm'd up in a lady's dressing,

You might pass for a woman ; now I love To deal on certainties : and, for the fairness Of your complexion, which you think will take me,

The colour, I must tell you, in a man, Is weak and faint, and never will hold out, If put to labour : give me the lovely brown, A thick curl'd hair of the same dye, broad shoulders,

A brawny arm full of veins, a leg without An artificial calf ;—I suspect yours ; But let that pass.

*Syl.* She means me all this while,

For I have every one of those good parts ; O Sylli ! fortunate Sylli !

*Cam.* You are moved, sir.

*Ful.* Fie ! no ; go on.

*Cam.* Then, as you are a courtier, A graced one too, I fear you have been too forward ;

And so much for your person. Rich you are, Devilish rich, as 'tis reported, and sure have The aids of Satan's little fiends to get it ; And what is got upon his back, must be Spent, you know where ;—the proverb's stale—One word more, And I have done.

*Ful.* I'll ease you of the trouble, Coy and disdainful !

*Cam.* Save me, or else he'll beat me.

*Ful.* No, your own folly shall ; and, since you put me

To my last charm, look upon this, and tremble. [*Shews the king's ring.*]

*Cam.* At the sight of a fair ring ! the king's, I take it ?

I have seen him wear the like : if he hath sent it,

As a favour, to me—

*Ful.* Yes, 'tis very likely, His dying mother's gift, prized at his crown !

By this he does command you to be mine ; By his gift you are so :—you may yet re-deem all.

*Cam.* You are in a wrong account still. Though the king may

Dispose of my life and goods, my mind's mine own,

And never shall be yours. The king, heaven bless him !

Is good and gracious, and, being in himself Abstemious from base and goatish looseness,

Will not compel, against their wills, chaste maidens

To dance in his minion's circles. I believe,

Forgetting it when he wash'd his hands, you stole it,

With an intent to awe me. But you are cozen'd ;

I am still myself, and will be.

*Ful.* A proud haggard,

And not to be reclaim'd ! which of your grooms,

Your coachman, fool, or footman, ministers Night-physic to you ?

*Cam.* You are foul-mouth'd.

*Ful.* Much fairer

Than thy black soul ; and so I will proclaim thee.

*Cam.* Were I a man, thou durst not speak this.

*Ful.* Heaven

So prosper me, as I resolve to do it

To all men, and in every place : scorn'd by A tit of ten-pence !

[*Exeunt Fulgentio and Page.*]

*Syl.* Now I begin to be valiant :

Nay, I will draw my sword. O for a brother ! Do a friend's part ; pray you, carry him the length of t'.

I give him three years and a day to match my Toledo,

And then we'll fight like dragons.

*Ador.* Pray, have patience.

*Cam.* I may live to have vengeance : my Bertoldo

Would not have heard this.

*Ador.* Madam—

*Cam.* Pray you, spare

Your language. Prithee fool, and make me merry. [*To Sylli.*]

*Syl.* That is my office ever.

*Ador.* I must do, Not talk ; this glorious gallant shall hear from me. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The Siennese. A Camp before the Walls of Sienna.*

*Chambers shot off: a flourish as to an Assault: after which, enter Gonzaga, Pierio, Roderigo, Jacomo, and Soldiers.*

*Gonz.* Is the breach made assaultable?

*Pier.* Yes, and the moat  
Fill'd up; the cannoner hath done his parts;  
We may enter six abreast.

*Rod.* There's not a man  
Dares shew himself upon the wall.

*Jac.* Defeat not  
The soldiers' hoped-for spoil.

*Pier.* If you, sir,  
Delay the assault, and the city be given up  
To your discretion, you in honour cannot  
Use the extremity of war,—but, in  
Compassion to them, you to us prove cruel.

*Jac.* And an enemy to yourself.

*Rod.* A hindrance to  
The brave revenge you have vow'd.

*Gonz.* Temper your heat,  
And lose not, by too sudden rashness, that  
Which, be but patient, will be offer'd to you.  
Security ushers ruin; proud contempt  
Of an enemy three parts vanquish'd, with  
desire

And greediness of spoil, have often wrested  
A certain victory from the conqueror's gripe.  
Discretion is the tutor of the war,  
Valour the pupil; and, when we command  
With lenity, and our direction's follow'd  
With cheerfulness, a prosperous end must  
crown

Our works well undertaken.

*Rod.* Ours are finish'd—

*Pier.* If we make use of fortune.

*Gonz.* Her false smiles  
Deprive you of your judgments. The con-  
dition

Of our affairs exacts a double care,  
And, like bifronted Janus, we must look  
Backward, as forward: though a flattering  
calm

Bids us urge on, a sudden tempest raised,  
Not feared, much less expected, in our rear,  
May foully fall upon us, and distract us  
To our confusion.—

*Enter a Scout, hastily.*

Our scout! what brings  
Thy ghastly looks, and sudden speed?

*Scout.* The assurance  
Of a new enemy.

*Gonz.* This I foresaw and fear'd.  
What are they, know'st thou?

*Scout.* They are, by their colours,

Sicilians, bravely mounted, and the brightness  
Of their rich armours doubly gilded with  
Reflection of the sun.

*Gonz.* From Sicily?—

The king in league! no war proclaim'd  
'tis foul:

But this must be prevented, not disputed.  
Ha, how is this? your estridge plumes, that  
but

Even now, like quills of porcupines, seem'd  
to threaten

The stars, drop at the rumour of a shower,  
And, like to captive colours, sweep the earth!  
Bear up; but in great dangers, greater minds  
Are never proud. Shall a few loose troops,  
untrain'd

But in a customary ostentation,  
Presented as a sacrifice to your valours,  
Cause a dejection in you?

*Pier.* No dejection.

*Rod.* However startled, where you lead  
we'll follow.

*Gonz.* 'Tis bravely said. We will not stay  
their charge,

But meet them man to man, and horse  
horse.

*Pierio*, in our absence hold our place,  
And with our foot men, and those sickly  
troops,

Prevent a sally: I in mine own person,  
With part of the cavallery, will bid  
These hunters welcome to a bloody break-  
fast:—

But I lose time.

*Pier.* I'll to my charge. [Exit.

*Gonz.* And we  
To ours: I'll bring you on.

*Jac.* If we come off,  
It's not amiss; if not, my state is settled.  
[Exeunt. Alarum within.

SCENE IV.—*The Same. The Citadel of Sienna.*

*Enter Ferdinand, Druso, and Livio, on the Walls.*

*Fer.* No aids from Sicily! Hath hope  
forsook us;  
And that vain comfort to affliction, pity,  
By our vow'd friend denied us? we can nor  
live

Nor die with honour: like beasts in a toil,  
We wait the leisure of the bloody hunter,  
Who is not so far reconciled unto us,  
As in one death to give a period  
To our calamities; but in delaying,  
The fate we cannot fly from, starv'd with  
wants,

We die this night, to live again to-morrow,  
And suffer greater torments.

*Dru.* There is not  
Three days provision for every soldier,  
At an ounce of bread a day, left in the city.

*Liv.* To die the beggar's death, with  
hunger made

Anatomies while we live, cannot but crack  
Our heart-strings with vexation.

*Fer.* Would they would break,  
Break altogether! How willingly, like Cato,  
Could I tear out my bowels, rather than  
Look on the conqueror's insulting face;  
But that religion, and the horrid dream  
To be suffer'd in the other world, denies it!

*Enter a Soldier.*

What news with thee?

*Sold.* From the turret of the fort,  
By the rising clouds of dust, through which,  
like lightning,

The splendour of bright arms sometimes  
brake through,

I did descry some forces making towards us;  
And, from the camp, as emulous of their glory,  
The general, (for I know him by his horse,)  
And bravely seconded, encounter'd them.  
Their greetings were too rough for friends;  
their swords,

And not their tongues, exchanging cour-  
tesies.

By this the main battalies are join'd;  
And, if you please to be spectators of  
The horrid issue, I will bring you where,  
As in a theatre, you may see their fates  
In purple gore presented.

*Fer.* Heaven, if yet  
Thou art appeas'd for my wrong done to  
Aurelia,

Take pity of my miseries! Lead the way,  
friend. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE V.—*The same. A Plain near the  
Camp.*

*A long Charge: after which, a Flourish for  
victory; then enter Gonzaga, Jacomo, and  
Roderigo wounded; Bertoldo, Gasparo,  
and Antonio Prisoners. Officers and  
Soldiers.*

*Gonz.* We have them yet, though they  
cost us dear. This was  
Charged home, and bravely follow'd. Be  
to yourselves

*[To Jacomo and Roderigo.]*  
True mirrors to each other's worth; and,  
looking

With noble emulation on his wounds,  
*[Points to Bert.]*

The glorious livery of triumphant war,  
Imagine these with equal grace appear

Upon yourselves. The bloody sweat you  
have suffer'd

In this laborious, nay, toilsome harvest,  
Yields a rich crop of conquest; and the spoil,  
Most precious balsam to a soldier's hurts,  
Will ease and cure them. Let me look upon  
*[Gasparo and Antonio are brought  
forward.]*

The prisoners' faces. Oh, how much trans-  
form'd

From what they were! O Mars! were these  
toys fashion'd

To undergo the burthen of thy service?  
The weight of their defensive armour bruised  
Their weak effeminate limbs, and would  
have forced them,

In a hot day, without a blow to yield.

*Ant.* This insultation shews not manly in  
you.

*Gonz.* To men I had forborne it; you  
are women,

Or, at the best, loose carpet-knights. What  
fury

Seduced you to exchange your ease in court,  
For labour in the field? perhaps, you thought  
To charge, through dust and blood, an  
armed foe,

Was but like graceful running at the ring  
For a wanton mistress' glove; and the en-  
counter,

A soft impression on her lips:—but you  
Are gaudy butterflies, and I wrong myself  
In parling with you.

*Gasp. Væ victis!* now we prove it.

*Rod.* But here's one fashion'd in another  
mould,

And made of tougher metal.

*Gonz.* True; I owe him  
For this wound bravely given.

*Bert.* O that mountains

Were heap'd upon me, that I might expire,  
A wretch no more remember'd! *[Aside.]*

*Gonz.* Look up, sir;

To be o'ercome deserves no shame. If you  
Had fallen ingloriously, or could accuse

Your want of courage in resistance, 'twere  
To be lamented: but, since you perform'd

As much as could be hoped for from a man,  
(Fortune his enemy,) you wrong yourself

In this dejection. I am honour'd in  
My victory over you; but to have these

My prisoners, is, in my true judgment, rather  
Captivity than a triumph: you shall find

Fair quarter from me, and your many  
wounds,

Which I hope are not mortal, with such care  
I look'd to and cured, as if your nearest friend

Attended on you.

*Bert.* When you know me better,

You will make void this promise : can you call me

Into your memory ?

*Gonz.* The brave Bertoldo !  
A brother of our order ! By St. John,  
Our holy patron, I am more amazed,  
Nay, thunderstruck with thy apostacy,  
And precipice from the most solemn vows  
Made unto heaven, when this, the glorious badge

Of our Redeemer, was conferr'd upon thee  
By the great master, than if I had seen  
A reprobate Jew, an atheist, Turk, or Tartar,  
Baptized in our religion !

*Bert.* This I look'd for ;  
And am resolv'd to suffer.

*Gonz.* Fellow-soldiers,  
Behold this man, and, taught by his example,  
Know that 'tis safer far to play with lightning,

Than trifle in things sacred. In my rage

I shed these at the funeral of his virtue,  
Faith, and religion :—why, I will tell you ;  
He was a gentleman so train'd up and fashion'd

For noble uses, and his youth did promise  
Such certainties, more than hopes, of great achievements,

As—if the Christian world had stood opposed  
Against the Othoman race, to try the fortune  
Of one encounter,—this Bertoldo had been,  
For his knowledge to direct, and matchless courage

To execute, without a rival, by  
The votes of good men, chosen general ;  
As the prime soldier, and most deserving  
Of all that wear the cross : which now, in justice,

I thus tear from him.

*Bert.* Let me die with it  
Upon my breast.

*Gonz.* No ; by this thou wert sworn,  
On all occasions, as a knight, to guard  
Weak ladies from oppression, and never  
To draw thy sword against them ; whereas thou,

In hope of gain or glory, when a princess,  
And such a princess as Aurelia is,  
Was dispossess'd by violence, of what was  
Her true inheritance ; against thine oath  
Hast, to thy uttermost, labour'd to uphold  
Her falling enemy. But thou shalt pay  
A heavy forfeiture, and learn too late,  
Valour employ'd in an ill quarrel, turns  
To cowardice, and Virtue then puts on  
Foul Vice's visor. This is that which cancels  
All friendship's bands between us.—Bear them off ;

I will hear no reply : and let the ransom  
Of these, for they are yours, be highly rated.  
In this I do but right, and let it be  
Styl'd justice, and not wilful cruelty.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The same. A Camp before the Walls of Sienna.*

*Enter Gonzaga, Astutio, Roderigo, and Jacomo.*

*Gonz.* What I have done, sir, by the law of arms

I can and will make good.

*Ast.* I have no commission

To expostulate the act. These letters speak  
The king my master's love to you, and his  
Vow'd service to the dutchess, on whose person

I am to give attendance.

*Gonz.* At this instant,  
She's at Fienza : you may spare the trouble  
Of riding thither : I have advertised her  
Of our success, and on what humble terms  
Sienna stands : though presently I can  
Possess it, I defer it, that she may  
Enter her own, and, as she please, dispose of  
The prisoners and the spoil.

*Ast.* I thank you, sir.

In the mean time, if I may have your license,  
I have a nephew, and one once my ward,  
For whose liberties and ransomes I would gladly

Make composition.

*Gonz.* They are, as I take it,  
Call'd Gasparo and Antonio.

*Ast.* The same, sir.

*Gonz.* For them, you must treat with these : but, for Bertoldo,  
He is mine own ; if the king will ransom him,  
He pays down fifty thousand crowns ; if not,  
He lives and dies my slave.

*Ast.* Pray you, a word : [*Aside to Gonz.*]  
The king will rather thank you to detain him,  
Than give one crown to free him.

*Gonz.* At his pleasure.

I'll send the prisoners under guard : my business

Calls me another way.

[*Exit.*]

*Ast.* My service waits you.

Now, gentlemen, do not deal like merchants  
with me,

But noble captains ; you know, in great minds,

*Posse et nolle, nobile.*

*Rod.* Pray you, speak  
Our language.

*Jac.* I find not, in my commission,  
An officer's bound to speak or understand  
More than his mother-tongue.

*Rod.* If he speak that  
After midnight, 'tis remarkable.

*Ast.* In plain terms, then,  
Antonio is your prisoner; Gasparo, yours.

*Jac.* You are in the right.

*Ast.* At what sum do you rate  
Their several ransomes?

*Rod.* I must make my market  
As the commodity cost me.

*Ast.* As it cost you!

You did not buy your captainship? your  
desert,

I hope, advanced you.

*Rod.* How! It well appears

You are no soldier. Desert in these days!  
Desert may make a serjeant to a colonel,

And it may hinder him from rising higher;  
But, if it ever get a company,

A company, pray you mark me, without  
money,

Or private service done for the general's  
mistress,

With a commendatory epistle from her,  
I will turn lanceprezado.

*Jac.* Pray you observe, sir:

I serv'd two prenticeships, just fourteen years,  
Trailing the puissant pike, and half so long  
Had the right-hand file; and I fought well,  
'twas said, too:

But I might have serv'd, and fought, and  
serv'd till doomsday,

And ne'er have carried a flag, but for the  
legacy

A bucksome widow of threescore bequeath'd  
me;

And that too, my back knows, I labour'd  
hard for,

But was better paid.

*Ast.* You are merry with yourselves:

But this is from the purpose.

*Rod.* To the point then.

Prisoners are not ta'en every day; and, when  
We have them, we must make the best use  
of them.

Our pay is little to the port we should bear,  
And that so long a coming, that 'tis spent  
Before we have it, and hardly wipes off  
scores

At the tavern and the ordinary.

*Jac.* You may add, too,

Our sport ta'en up on trust.

*Rod.* Peace, thou smock vermin!

Discover commanders' secrets!—In a word,  
sir,

We have inquired, and found our prisoners  
rich:

Two thousand crowns apiece our companies  
cost us;

And so much each of us will have, and that  
In present pay.

*Jac.* It is too little: yet,  
Since you have said the word, I am content;  
But will not go a gazet less.

*Ast.* Since you are not  
To be brought lower, there is no evading;  
I'll be your paymaster.

*Rod.* We desire no better.

*Ast.* But not a word of what's agreed be-  
tween us,

Till I have school'd my gallants.

*Jac.* I am dumb, sir.

*Enter a Guard with Bertoldo, Antonio, and  
Gasparo, in irons.*

*Bert.* And where removed now? hath the  
tyrant found out

Worse usage for us?

*Ant.* Worse it cannot be.

My greyhound has fresh straw, and scraps,  
in his kennel;

But we have neither.

*Gasp.* Did I ever think

To wear such garters on silk stockings? or  
That my too curious appetite, that turn'd  
At the sight of godwits, pheasant, partridge,  
quails,

Larks, woodcocks, calver'd salmon, as  
coarse diet,

Would leap at a mouldy crust?

*Ant.* And go without it,

So oft as I do? Oh! how have I jeer'd  
The city entertainment! A huge shoulder  
Of glorious fat ram-mutton, seconded  
With a pair of tame cats or conies, a crab-  
tart,

With a worthy loin of veal, and valiant capon,  
Mortified to grow tender!—these I scorn'd,  
From their plentiful horn of abundance,  
though invited:

But now I could carry my own stool to a  
tripe,  
And call their chitterlings charity, and bless  
the founder.

*Bert.* O that I were no further sensible  
Of my miseries than you are! you, like  
beasts,

Feel only stings of hunger, and complain not  
But when you're empty: but your narrow  
souls

(If you have any) cannot comprehend  
How insupportable the torments are,  
Which a free and noble soul, made captive,  
suffers.

Most miserable men!—and what am I,  
then,

- That envy you? Fetters, though made of gold,  
Express base thralldom : and all delicacies  
Prepared by Median cooks for epicures,  
When not our own, are bitter ; quilts fill'd high  
With gossamere and roses, cannot yield  
The body soft repose, the mind kept waking  
With anguish and affliction.  
*Ast.* My good lord—  
*Bert.* This is no time nor place for flattery, sir :  
Pray you, style me as I am, a wretch forsaken  
Of the world, as myself.  
*Ast.* I would it were  
In me to help you.  
*Bert.* If that you want power, sir,  
Lip-comfort cannot cure me. Pray you, leave me  
To mine own private thoughts. [*Walks by.*  
*Ast.* [*Comes forward.*] My valiant nephew!  
And my more than warlike ward ! I am glad to see you,  
After your glorious conquests. Are these chains,  
Rewards for your good service ? if they are  
You should wear them on your necks, since they are massy,  
Like aldermen of the war.  
*Ant.* You jeer us too !  
*Gasp.* Good uncle, name not, as you are a man of honour,  
That fatal word of war ; the very sound of it  
Is more dreadful than a cannon.  
*Ant.* But redeem us  
From this captivity, and I'll vow hereafter  
Never to wear a sword, or cut my meat  
With a knife that has an edge or point ; I'll starve first.  
*Gasp.* I will cry broom, or cat's-meat, in Palermo ;  
Turn porter, carry burthens, anything,  
Rather than live a soldier.  
*Ast.* This should have  
Been thought upon before. At what price, think you,  
Your two wise heads are rated ?  
*Ant.* A calf's head is  
More worth than mine ; I'm sure it has more brains in't,  
Or I had ne'er come here.  
*Rod.* And I will eat it  
With bacon, if I have not speedy ransome.  
*Ant.* And a little garlick too, for your own sake, sir :  
'Twill boil in your stomach else.  
*Gasp.* Beware of mine,
- Or the horns may choak you ; I am married, sir.  
*Ant.* You shall have my row of houses near the palace.  
*Gasp.* And my villa ; all—  
*Ant.* All that we have.  
*Ast.* Well, have more wit hereafter ; for this time,  
You are ransomed.  
*Jac.* Off with their irons.  
*Rod.* Do, do :  
If you are ours again, you know your price.  
*Ant.* Pray you dispatch us : I shall ne'er believe  
I am a free man, till I set my foot  
In Sicily again, and drink Palermo,  
And in Palermo too.  
*Ast.* The wind sits fair,  
You shall aboard to-night : with the rising sun  
You may touch upon the coast. But take your leaves  
Of the late general first.  
*Gasp.* I will be brief.  
*Ant.* And I. My lord, heaven keep you !  
*Gasp.* Yours, to use  
In the way of peace ; but as your soldiers, never.  
*Ant.* A pox of war ! no more of war.  
[*Exeunt* Rod. Jac. Ant. and Gasp.]  
*Bert.* Have you  
Authority to loose their bonds, yet leave  
The brother of your king, whose worth disdains  
Comparison with such as these, in irons ?  
If ransom may redeem them, I have lands,  
A patrimony of mine own, assign'd me  
By my deceased sire, to satisfy  
Whate'er can be demanded for my freedom.  
*Ast.* I wish you had, sir ; but the king,  
who yields  
No reason for his will, in his displeasure  
Hath seized on all you had ; nor will Gonzaga,  
Whose prisoner now you are, accept of less  
Than fifty thousand crowns.  
*Bert.* I find it now,  
That misery never comes alone. But, grant  
The king is yet inexorable, time  
May work him to a feeling of my sufferings.  
I have friends that swore their lives and fortunes were  
At my devotion, and, among the rest,  
Yourself, my lord, when forfeited to the law  
For a foul murder, and in cold blood done,  
I made your life my gift, and reconciled you  
To this incensed king, and got your pardon.  
—Beware ingratitude. I know you are rich,  
And may pay down the sum.  
*Ast.* I might, my lord ;  
But pardon me.

*Bert.* And will Astutio prove, then,  
To please a passionate man, (the king's no  
more,)

False to his maker, and his reason, which  
Commands more than I ask? O summer-  
friendship,

Whose flattering leaves, that shadow'd us in  
our

Prosperity, with the least gust drop off  
In the autumn of adversity! How like  
A prison is to a grave! when dead, we are  
With solemn pomp brought thither, and our  
heirs,

Masking their joy in false, dissembled tears,  
Weep o'er the herse; but earth no sooner  
covers

The earth brought thither, but they turn  
away,

With inward smiles, the dead no more re-  
member'd :

So, enter'd in a prison—

*Ast.* My occasions  
Command me hence, my lord.

*Bert.* Pray you, leave me, do ;  
And tell the cruel king, that I will wear  
These fetters till my flesh and they are one  
Incorporated substance. [*Exit Astutio.*] In  
myself,

As in a glass, I'll look on human frailty,  
And curse the height of royal blood : since I,  
In being born near to Jove, am near his  
thunder.

Cedars once shaken with a storm, their own  
Weight grubs their roots out.—Lead me  
where you please ;

I am his, not fortune's martyr, and will die  
The great example of his cruelty.

[*Exit guarded.*]

SCENE II.—Palermo. *A Grove near  
the Palace.*

*Enter Adorni.*

*Ador.* He undergoes my challenge, and  
contemns it,

And threatens me with the late edict made  
'Gainst duellists,—the altar cowards fly to.  
But I, that am engaged, and nourish in me  
A higher aim than fair Camiola dreams of,  
Must not sit down thus. In the court I  
dare not

Attempt him ; and in public, he's so guarded,  
With a herd of parasites, clients, fools, and  
suitsors,

That a musket cannot reach him :—my  
designs

Admit of no delay. This is her birthday,  
Which, with a fit and due solemnity,  
Camiola celebrates : and on it, all such  
As love or serve her usually present

A tributary duty. I'll have something  
To give, if my intelligence prove true,  
Shall find acceptance. I am told, near this  
grove

Fulgentio, every morning, makes his markets  
With his petitioners ; I may present him  
With a sharp petition!—Ha! 'tis he : my  
fate

Be ever bless'd for't!

*Enter Fulgentio and Page.*

*Ful.* Command such as wait me  
Not to presume, at the least for half an hour,  
To press on my retirements.

*Page.* I will say, sir,  
You are at your prayers.

*Ful.* That will not find belief ;  
Courtiers have something else to do :—be  
gone, sir. [*Exit Page.*]

Challenged! 'tis well ; and by a groom! still  
better.

Was this shape made to fight? I have a  
tongue yet,

Howe'er no sword, to kill him ; and what way,  
This morning I'll resolve of. [*Exit.*]

*Ador.* I shall cross

Your resolution, or suffer for you.

[*Exit following him.*]

SCENE III.—*The same. A Room in  
Camiola's House.*

*Enter Camiola, followed by Servants with  
Presents ; Sylli, and Clarinda.*

*Syl.* What are all these?

*Clar.* Servants with several presents,  
And rich ones too.

1 *Serv.* With her best wishes, madam,  
Of many such days to you, the lady Petula  
Presents you with this fan.

2 *Serv.* This diamond,  
From your aunt Honoria.

3 *Serv.* This piece of plate  
From your uncle, old Vicentio, with your  
arms  
Graven upon it.

*Cam.* Good friends, they are too  
Munificent in their love and favour to me.  
Out of my cabinet return such jewels  
As this directs you :—[*To Clarinda.*]—for  
your pains ; and yours ;  
Nor must you be forgotten.

[*Gives them money.*]

Honour me

With the drinking of a health.

1 *Serv.* Gold, on my life!

2 *Serv.* She scorns to give base silver.

3 *Serv.* Would she had been  
Born every month in the year!

1 *Serv.* Month! every day.



2 *Serv.* Shew such another maid.

3 *Serv.* All happiness wait you !

*Clar.* I'll see your will done.

[*Exeunt Sylli, Clarinda, and Servants.*

*Enter Adorni wounded.*

*Cam.* How, Adorni wounded !

*Ador.* A scratch got in your service, else not worth

Your observation : I bring not, madam, In honour of your birthday, antique plate, Or pearl, for which, the savage Indian dives Into the bottom of the sea ; nor diamonds Hewn from steep rocks with danger. Such as give

To those that have, what they themselves want, aim at

A glad return with profit : yet, despise not

My offering at the altar of your favour ;

Nor let the lowness of the giver lessen

The height of what's presented ; since it is

A precious jewel, almost forfeited,

And dimm'd with clouds of infamy, redeem'd,

And, in its natural splendour, with addition

Restored to the true owner.

*Cam.* How is this ?

*Ador.* Not to hold you in suspense, I bring you, madam,

Your wounded reputation cured, the sting Of virulent malice, festering your fair name, Pluck'd ont and trod on. That proud man, that was

Denied the honour of your bed, yet durst,

With his untrue reports, strumpet your fame,

Compell'd by me, hath given himself the lie,

And in his own blood wrote it :—you may read

Fulgentio subscribed. [*Offering a paper.*

*Cam.* I am amazed !

*Ador.* It does deserve it, madam. Common service

Is fit for hinds, and the reward proportion'd

To their conditions : therefore, look not on me

As a follower of your father's fortunes, or

One that subsists on yours :—you frown ! my service

Merits not this aspect.

*Cam.* Which of my favours,

I might say bounties, hath begot and nourish'd

This more than rude presumption ? Since you had

An itch to try your desperate valour, wherefore

Went you not to the war ? Couldst thou suppose

My innocence could ever fall so low

As to have need of thy rash sword to guard it Against malicious slander ? O how much

Those ladies are deceived and cheated, when The clearness and integrity of their actions Do not defend themselves, and stand secure On their own bases ! Such as in a colour Of seeming service give protection to them, Betray their own strengths. Malice scorn'd,

puts out

Itself ; but argued, gives a kind of credit

To a false accusation. In this, your

Most memorable service, you believed

You did me right ; but you have wrong'd me more

In your defence of my undoubted honour,

Than false Fulgentio could.

*Ador.* I am sorry what was

So well intended is so ill received ;

*Re-enter Clarinda.*

Yet, under your correction, you wish'd

Bertoldo had been present.

*Cam.* True, I did :

But he and you, sir, are not parallels,

Nor must you think yourself so.

*Ador.* I am what

You'll please to have me.

*Cam.* If Bertoldo had

Punish'd Fulgentio's insolence, it had shewn

His love to her whom, in his judgment, he

Vouchsafed to make his wife ; a height, I hope,

Which you dare not aspire to. The same actions

Suit not all men alike ; but I perceive

Repentance in your looks. For this time, leave me ;

I may forgive, perhaps forget, your folly :

Conceal yourself till this storm be blown over.

You will be sought for ; yet, if my estate

Can hinder it, shall not suffer in my service. [*Gives him her hand to kiss.*

*Ador.* This is something yet, though I miss'd the mark I shot at.

[*Aside, and exit.*

*Cam.* This gentleman is of a noble temper ; And I too harsh, perhaps, in my reproof :

Was I not, Clarinda ?

*Clar.* I am not to censure

Your actions, madam ; but there are a thousand

Ladies, and of good fame, in such a cause

Would be proud of such a servant.

*Cam.* It may be ;

*Enter a Servant.*

Let me offend in this kind. Why, uncall'd for ?

*Serv.* The signiors, madam, Gasparo and Antonio,

Selected friends of the renown'd Bertoldo,  
Put ashore this morning.

*Cam.* Without him?

*Serv.* I think so.

*Cam.* Never think more then.

*Serv.* They have been at court,

Kiss'd the king's hand; and, their first duties  
done

To him, appear ambitious to tender

To you their second service.

*Cam.* Wait them hither. [*Exit Servant.*]

Fear, do not rack me! Reason, now, if ever,  
Haste with thy aids, and tell me, such a  
wonder

As my Bertoldo is, with such care fashion'd,  
Must not, nay, cannot, in heaven's providence

*Enter Antonio and Gasparo.*

So soon miscarry!—pray you, forbear; ere  
you take

The privilege, as strangers, to salute me,  
(Excuse my manners,) make me first under-  
stand

How it is with Bertoldo.

*Gasp.* The relation

Will not, I fear, deserve your thanks.

*Ant.* I wish

Some other should inform you.

*Cam.* Is he dead?

You see, though with some fear, I dare  
enquire it.

*Gasp.* Dead! Would that were the worst;  
a debt were paid then,

Kings in their birth owe nature.

*Cam.* Is there aught

More terrible than death?

*Ant.* Yes, to a spirit

Like his; cruel imprisonment, and that

Without the hope of freedom.

*Cam.* You abuse me:

The royal king cannot, in love to virtue,  
(Though all springs of affection were dried  
up,)

But pay his ransome.

*Gasp.* When you know what 'tis,

You will think otherwise: no less will do it  
Than fifty thousand crowns.

*Cam.* A petty sum,

The price weigh'd with the purchase: fifty  
thousand!

To the king 'tis nothing. He that can spare  
more

To his minion for a masque, cannot but  
ransome

Such a brother at a million. You wrong

The king's magnificence.

*Ant.* In your opinion;

But 'tis most certain: he does not alone

In himself refuse to pay it, but forbids  
All other men.

*Cam.* Are you sure of this?

*Gasp.* You may read

The edict to that purpose, publish'd by him;  
That will resolve you.

*Cam.* Possible! pray you, stand off.

If I do not mutter treason to myself,  
My heart will break; and yet I will not  
curse him;

He is my king. The news you have deli-  
ver'd

Makes me weary of your company; we'll  
salute

When we meet next. I'll bring you to the  
door.

Nay, pray you, no more compliments.

*Gasp.* One thing more,

And that's substantial: let your Adorni  
Look to himself.

*Ant.* The king is much incensed  
Against him for Fulgentio.

*Cam.* As I am,

For your slowness to depart.

*Both.* Farewell, sweet lady.

[*Exeunt Gasparo and Antonio.*]

*Cam.* O more than impious times! when  
not alone

Subordinate ministers of justice are  
Corrupted and seduced, but kings themselves,  
The greater wheels by which the lesser move,  
Are broken, or disjointed! could it be, else,  
A king, to sooth his politic ends, should so  
far

Forsake his honour, as at once to break  
The adamant chains of nature and religion,  
To bind up atheism, as a defence

To his dark counsels? Will it ever be,  
That to deserve too much is dangerous,  
And virtue, when too eminent, a crime?

Must she serve fortune still, or, when  
stripp'd of

Her gay and glorious favours, lose the  
beauties

Of her own natural shape? O, my Bertoldo,  
Thou only sun in honour's sphere, how soon  
Art thou eclipsed and darken'd! not the  
nearness

Of blood prevailing on the king; nor all  
The benefits to the general good dispens'd,  
Gaining a retribution! But that

To owe a courtesy to a simple virgin  
Would take from the deserving, I find in me

Some sparks of fire, which, fann'd with  
honour's breath,

Might rise into a flame, and in men darken  
Their usurp'd splendour. Ha! my aim is  
high,

And, for the honour of my sex, to fall so,

Can never prove inglorious.—'Tis resolv'd :  
Call in Adorni.

*Clar.* I am happy in  
Such an employment, madam. [*Exit.*]

*Cam.* He's a man,  
I know, that at a reverent distance loves me ;  
And such are ever faithful. What a sea  
Of melting ice I walk on ! what strange  
censures

Am I to undergo ! but good intents  
Deride all future rumours.

*Re-enter Clarinda with Adorni.*

*Ador.* I obey  
Your summons, madam.

*Cam.* Leave the place, Clarinda ;  
One woman, in a secret of such weight,  
Wise men may think too much : [*Exit*  
Clarinda.] nearer, Adorni.

I warrant it with a smile.

*Ador.* I cannot ask  
Safer protection ; what's your will ?

*Cam.* To doubt  
Your ready desire to serve me, or prepare you  
With the repetition of former merits,  
Would, in my diffidence, wrong you : but I  
will,

And without circumstance, in the trust that I  
Impose upon you, free you from suspicion.

*Ador.* I foster none of you.

*Cam.* I know you do not.  
You are, Adorni, by the love you owe me—

*Ador.* The surest conjuration.

*Cam.* Take me with you,—  
Love born of duty ; but advance no further.  
You are, sir, as I said, to do me service,  
To undertake a task, in which your faith,  
Judgment, discretion—in a word, your all  
That's good, must be engaged ; nor must  
you study,

In the execution, but what may make  
For the ends I aim at.

*Ador.* They admit no rivals.

*Cam.* You answer well. You have heard  
of Bertoldo's

Captivity, and the king's neglect ; the great-  
ness

Of his ransom ; fifty thousand crowns,  
Adorni ;

Two parts of my estate !

*Ador.* To what tends this ? [*Aside.*]

*Cam.* Yet I so love the gentleman, for to  
you

I will confess my weakness, that I purpose  
Now, when he is forsaken by the king,  
And his own hopes, to ransom him, and  
receive him

Into my bosom, as my lawful husband—  
Why change you colour ?

*Ador.* 'Tis in wonder of  
Your virtue, madam.

*Cam.* You must, therefore, to  
Sienna for me, and pay to Gonzaga  
This ransom for his liberty ; you shall  
Have bills of exchange along with you.

Let him swear  
A solemn contract to me ; for you must be  
My principal witness, if he should—but why  
Do I entertain these jealousies ? You will  
do this ?

*Ador.* Faithfully, madam—but not live  
long after. [*Aside.*]

*Cam.* One thing I had forgot : besides  
his freedom,

He may want accommodations ; furnish him  
According to his birth : and from Camiola  
Deliver this kiss, printed on your lips,

[*Kisses him.*  
Seal'd on his hand. You shall not see my  
blushes :

I'll instantly dispatch you. [*Exit.*]

*Ador.* I am half  
Hang'd out o' the way already.—Was there  
ever

Poor lover so employ'd against himself,  
To make way for his rival ? I must do it.  
Nay, more, I will. If loyalty can find  
Recompense beyond hope or imagination,  
Let it fall on me in the other world,  
As a reward, for in this I dare not hope it.  
[*Exit.*]

#### ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*The Siennese. A Camp before  
the Walls of Sienna*

*Enter Gonzaga, Pierio, Roderigo, and  
Jacomio.*

*Gonz.* You have seized upon the citadel,  
and disarm'd  
All that could make resistance ?

*Pier.* Hunger had  
Done that, before we came ; nor was the  
soldier

Compell'd to seek for prey ; the famish'd  
wretches,

In hope of mercy, as a sacrifice offer'd  
All that was worth the taking.

*Gonz.* You proclaim'd,  
On pain of death, no violence should be  
offer'd

To any woman ?

*Rod.* But it needed not ;  
For famine had so humbled them, and ta'en off  
The care of their sex's honour, that there  
was not

So coy a beauty in the town, but would,

For half a mouldy biscuit, sell herself  
To a poor bisognion, and without shrieking.

*Gonz.* Where is the duke of Urbin?

*Jac.* Under guard,  
As you directed.

*Gonz.* See the soldiers set

In rank and file, and, as the dutchess passes,  
Bid them veil their ensigus; and charge  
them on their lives,

Not to cry *Whores!*

*Jac.* The devil cannot fright them  
From their military license. Though they  
know

They are her subjects, and will part with  
being,

To do her service; yet, since she's a woman,  
They will touch at her breech with their  
tongues; and that is all

That they can hope for.

[*A shout, and a general cry within,*  
*Whores! whores!*

*Gonz.* O the devil! they are at it.

Hell stop their brawling throats. Again!  
make up,

And cudgel them into jelly.

*Rod.* To no purpose,  
Though their mothers were there, they  
would have the same name for them.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*The same. Another Part of  
the Camp.*

*Loud music. Enter* Roderigo, Jacomo,  
Pierio, Gonzaga, and Aurelia *under a  
Canopy. Astutio presents her with letters.*

*Gonz.* I do beseech your highness not to  
ascribe,  
To the want of discipline, the barbarous  
rudeness

Of the soldier, in his profanation of  
Your sacred name and virtues.

*Aurel.* No, lord general;

I've heard my father say oft, 'twas a custom  
Usual in the camp; nor are they to be  
punish'd

For words, that have, in fact, deserved so  
well:

Let the one excuse the other.

*All.* Excellent princess!

*Aurel.* But for these aids from Sicily sent  
against us,

To blast our spring of conquest in the bud;  
I cannot find, my lord ambassador,

How we should entertain't but as a wrong,  
With purpose to detain us from our own,  
How'er the king endeavours, in his letters,  
To mitigate the affront.

*Ast.* Your grace hereafter  
May hear from me such strong assurances

Of his unlimited desires to serve you,  
As will, I hope, drown in forgetfulness  
The memory of what's past.

*Aurel.* We shall take time  
To search the depth of 't further, and pro-  
ceed

As our council shall direct us.

*Gonz.* We present you  
With the keys of the city; all lets are remov'd,  
Your way is smooth and easy; at your feet  
Your proudest enemy falls.

*Aurel.* We thank your valours:  
A victory without blood is twice achieved,  
And the disposeure of it, to us tender'd,  
The greatest honour. Worthy captains,  
thanks!

My love extends itself to all.

*Gonz.* Make way there.

[*A Guard drawn up; Aurelia passes  
through them. Loud music.*  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*Sienna. A Room in the  
Prison.*

*Bertoldo is discovered in fetters, reading.*

*Bert.* 'Tis here determined, (great ex-  
amples, arm'd

With arguments, produced to make it good,)  
That neither tyrants, nor the wrested laws,  
The people's frantic rage, sad exile, want,  
Nor that which I endure, captivity,  
Can do a wise man any injury.  
Thus Seneca, when he wrote, thought.—But  
then

Felicity courted him; his wealth exceeding  
A private man's; happy in the embraces  
Of his chaste wife Paulina; his house full  
Of children, clients, servants, flattering  
friends,

Soothing his lip-positions; and created  
Prince of the senate, by the general voice,  
At his new pupil's suffrage; then, no doubt,  
He held, and did believe, this. But no sooner  
The prince's frowns and jealousies had thrown  
him

Out of security's lap, and a centurion  
Had offer'd him what choice of death he  
pleas'd,

But told him, die he must; when straight the  
armour

Of his so boasted fortitude fell off,

[*Throws away the book.*

Complaining of his frailty. Can it then  
Be censured womanish weakness in me, if,  
Thus clogg'd with irons, and the period  
To close up all calamities denied me,  
Which was presented Seneca, I wish  
I ne'er had being; at least, never knew

What happiness was ; or argue with heaven's justice,

Tearing my locks, and, in defiance, throwing  
Dust in the air ? or, falling on the ground,  
thus

With my nails and teeth to dig a grave, or  
rend

The bowels of the earth, my step-mother,  
And not a natural parent ? or thus practise  
To die, and, as I were insensible,  
Believe I had no motion? [*Falls on his face.*]

*Enter Gonzaga, Adorni, and Gaoler.*

*Gonz.* There he is :

I'll not enquire by whom his ransome's paid,  
I am satisfied that I have it ; nor allege

One reason to excuse his cruel usage,  
As you may interpret it ; let it suffice

It was my will to have it so. He is yours now,  
Dispose of him as you please. [*Exit.*]

*Ador.* Howe'er I hate him,

As one preferr'd before me, being a man,  
He does deserve my pity. Sir!—he sleeps:—  
Or is he dead? would he were a saint in  
heaven!

'Tis all the hurt I wish him. But, I was not  
Born to such happiness [*Aside.*] *Kneels by  
him.*—no, he breathes—come near,

And, if 't be possible, without his feeling,  
Take off his irons.—[*His irons taken off.*]—  
So ; now leave us private.

[*Exit Gaoler.*]

He does begin to stir ; and, as transported  
With a joyful dream, how he stares ! and  
feels his legs,

As yet uncertain whether it can be  
True or fantastical.

*Bert.* [*rising.*] Ministers of mercy,  
Mock not calamity. Ha ! 'tis no vision !  
Or, if it be, the happiest that ever  
Appear'd to sinful flesh ! Who's here? his face  
Speaks him Adorni ;—but some glorious  
angel,

'Concealing its divinity in his shape,  
Hath done this miracle, it being not an act  
For wolfish man. Resolve me, if thou  
look'st for

Bent knees in adoration ?

*Ador.* O forbear, sir !

I am Adorni, and the instrument  
Of your deliverance ; but the benefit  
You owe another.

*Bert.* If he has a name,  
As soon as spoken, 'tis writ on my heart  
I am his bondman.

*Ador.* To the shame of men,

This great act is a woman's.

*Bert.* The whole sex

For her sake must be deified. How I wander

In my imagination, yet cannot  
Guess who this phoenix should be !

*Ador.* 'Tis Camiola.

*Bert.* Pray you, speak't again ; there's music  
in her name.

Once more, I pray you, sir.

*Ador.* Camiola,

The MAID OF HONOUR.

*Bert.* Curs'd atheist that I was,  
Only to doubt it could be any other ;  
Since she alone, in the abstract of herself,  
That small but ravishing substance, com-  
prehends

Whatever is, or can be wish'd, in the  
Idea of a woman ! O what service,  
Or sacrifice of duty, can I pay her,  
If not to live and die her charity's slave,  
Which is resolved already !

*Ador.* She expects not

Such a dominion o'er you : yet, ere I  
Deliver her demands, give me your hand :  
On this, as she enjoin'd me, with my lips  
I print her love and service, by me sent you.

*Bert.* I am o'erwhelmed with wonder !

*Ador.* You must now,

Which is the sum of all that she desires,  
By a solemn contract bind yourself, when she  
Requires it, as a debt due for your freedom,  
To marry her.

*Bert.* This does engage me further ;  
A payment ! an increase of obligation.  
To marry her !—'twas my *nit ultra* ever :  
The end of my ambition. O that now  
The holy man, she present, were prepared  
To join our hands, but with that speed my  
heart

Wishes mine eyes might see her !

*Ador.* You must swear this.

*Bert.* Swear it ! Collect all oaths and im-  
precations,

Whose least breach is damnation, and those  
Minister'd to me in a form more dreadful ;  
Set heaven and hell before me, I will take  
them :

False to Camiola ! never.—Shall I now  
Begin my vows to you ?

*Ador.* I am no churchman ;

Such a one must file it on record : you are  
free ;

And, that you may appear like to yourself,  
(For so she wish'd,) here's gold, with which  
you may

Redeem your trunks and servants, and  
whatever

Of late you lost. I have found out the captain  
Whose spoil they were ; his name is Roderigo.

*Bert.* I know him.

*Ador.* I have done my parts.

*Bert.* So much, sir,

As I am ever yours for't. Now, methinks,  
I walk in air ! Divine Camiola—

But words cannot express thee : I'll build to  
thee

An altar in my soul, on which I'll offer  
A still-increasing sacrifice of duty. [*Exit.*

*Ador.* What will become of me now is  
apparent.

Whether a poniard or a halter he  
The nearest way to hell, (for I must thither,  
After I've kill'd myself,) is somewhat doubtful.  
This Roman resolution of self-murder,  
Will not hold water at the high tribunal,  
When it comes to be argued ; my good Genius  
Prompts me to this consideration. He  
That kills himself to avoid misery, fears it,  
And, at the best, shews but a bastard valour.  
This life's a fort committed to my trust,  
Which I must not yield up till it be forced :  
Nor will I. He's not valiant that dares die,  
But he that boldly bears calamity. [*Exit.*

SCENE IV.—*The same. A State-room  
in the Palace.*

*A Flourish. Enter* Pierio, Roderigo,  
Jacomo, Gonzaga, Aurelia, Ferdinand,  
Astutio, and Attendants.

*Aurel.* A seat here for the duke. It is  
our glory

To overcome with courtesies, not rigour ;  
The lordly Roman, who held it the height  
Of human happiness to have kings and queens  
To wait by his triumphant chariot-wheels,  
In his insulting pride, deprived himself  
Of drawing near the nature of the gods,  
Best known for such, in being merciful.

Yet, giv' me leave, but still with gentle  
language,

And with the freedom of a friend, to tell you,  
To seek by force, what courtship could not  
win,

Was harsh, and never taught in Love's mild  
school.

Wise poets feign that Venus' coach is drawn  
By doves and sparrows, not by bears and  
tigers.

I spare the application.

*Fer.* In my fortune,

Heaven's justice hath confirm'd it ; yet,  
great lady,

Since my offence grew from excess of love,  
And not to be resisted, having paid, too,  
With loss of liberty, the forfeiture  
Of my presumption, in your clemency  
It may find pardon.

*Aurel.* You shall have just cause  
To say it hath. The charge of the long siege  
Defray'd, and the loss my subjects have sus-  
tain'd

Made good, since so far I must deal with  
caution,

You have your liberty.

*Fer.* I could not hope for  
Gentler conditions.

*Aurel.* My lord Gonzaga,  
Since my coming to Sienna, I've heard much  
of

Your prisoner, brave Bertoldo.

*Gonz.* Such an one,

Madam, I had.

*Ast.* And have still, sir, I hope.

*Gonz.* Your hopes deceive you. He is  
ransomed, madam.

*Ast.* By whom, I pray you, sir ?

*Gonz.* You had best enquire

Of your intelligencer : I am no informer.

*Ast.* I like not this. [*Aside.*

*Aurel.* He is, as 'tis reported,  
A goodly gentleman, and of noble parts ;  
A brother of your order.

*Gonz.* He was, madam,  
Till he, against his oath, wrong'd you, a  
princess,

Which his religion bound him from.

*Aurel.* Great minds,

For trial of their valours, oft maintain  
Quarrels that are unjust, yet without malice ;  
And such a fair construction I make of him :  
I would see that brave enemy.

*Gonz.* My duty

Commands me to seek for him.

*Aurel.* Pray you do ;

And bring him to our presence.

[*Exit* Gonzaga.

*Ast.* I must blast

His entertainment. [*Aside.*] May it please  
your excellency,

He is a man debauch'd, and, for his riots,  
Cast off by the king my master ; and that, I  
hope, is

A crime sufficient.

*Fer.* To you, his subjects,

That like as your king likes.

*Aurel.* But not to us ;

We must weigh with our own scale.

*Re-enter* Gonzaga, with Bertoldo, richly  
habited, and Adorni.

This is he, sure.

How soon mine eye had found him ! what a  
port

He bears ! how well his bravery becomes  
him !

A prisoner ! nay, a princely suitor, rather !  
But I'm too sudden. [*Aside.*

*Gonz.* Madam, 'twas his suit,  
Unsent for, to present his service to you,  
Ere his departure.

*Aurel.* With what majesty  
He bears himself ! [Aside.]

*Ast.* The devil, I think, supplies him.  
Ransomed, and thus rich too !

*Aurel.* You ill deserve  
[Bertoldo kneeling, kisses her hand.]  
The favour of our hand—we are not well,  
Give us more air. [Descends suddenly.]

*Gonz.* What sudden qualm is this ?

*Aurel.* — That lifted yours against me.

*Bert.* Thus, once more,  
I sue for pardon.

*Aurel.* Sure his lips are poison'd,  
And through these veins force passage to  
my heart,

Which is already seized on. [Aside.]

*Bert.* I wait, madam,  
To know what your commands are ; my de-  
signs

Exact me in another place.

*Aurel.* Before

You have our license to depart ! If manners,  
Civility of manners, cannot teach you  
To attend our leisure, I must tell you, sir,  
That you are still our prisoner ; nor had you  
Commission to free him.

*Gonz.* How's this, madam ?

*Aurel.* You were my substitute, and  
wanted power,  
Without my warrant, to dispose of him :  
I will pay back his ransom ten times over,  
Rather than quit my interest.

*Bert.* This is  
Against the law of arms.

*Aurel.* But not of love. [Aside.]

Why, hath your entertainment, sir, been  
such,  
In your restraint, that, with the wings of fear,  
You would fly from it ?

*Bert.* I know no man, madam,  
Enamour'd of his fetters, or delighting  
In cold or hunger, or that would in reason  
Prefer straw in a dungeon, before  
A down-bed in a palace.

*Aurel.* How !—Come nearer :  
Was his usage such ?

*Gonz.* Yes ; and it had been worse,  
Had I forseen this.

*Aurel.* O thou mis-shaped monster !  
In thee it is confirm'd, that such as have  
No share in nature's bounties, know no pity  
To such as have them. Look on him with  
my eyes,

And answer, then, whether this were a man  
Whose cheeks of lovely fulness should be  
made

A prey to meagre famine? or these eyes,  
Whose every glance store Cupid's emptied  
quiver,

To be dimm'd with tedious watching? or  
these lips,

These ruddy lips, of whose fresh colour  
cherries

And roses were but copies, should grow pale  
For want of nectar? or these legs, that bear  
A burthen of more worth than is supported  
By Atlas' wearied shoulders, should be  
cramp'd

With the weight of iron? O, I could dwell  
ever

On this description !

*Bert.* Is this in derision,  
Or pity of me ?

*Aurel.* In your charity  
Believe me innocent. Now you are my  
prisoner,

You shall have fairer quarter? you will shame.  
The place where you have been, should you  
now leave it,

Before you are recover'd. I'll conduct you  
To more convenient lodgings, and it shall be  
My care to cherish you. Repine who dare ;  
It is our will. You'll follow me ?

*Bert.* To the centre,  
Such a Sybilla guiding me.

[Exeunt Aurelia, Bertoldo, and  
Attendants.]

*Gonz.* Who speaks first ?

*Fer.* We stand as we had seen Medusa's  
head.

*Pier.* I know not what to think, I am so  
amazed.

*Rod.* Amazed ! I am thunderstruck.

*Jac.* We are enchanted,  
And this is some illusion.

*Ador.* Heaven forbid !  
In dark despair it shews a beam of hope :

Contain thy joy, Adorni. [Aside.]

*Ast.* Such a princess,  
And of so long-experienced reserv'dness,  
Break forth, and on the sudden, into flashes  
Of more than doubted looseness !

*Gonz.* They come again,  
Smiling, as I live ! his arm circling her waist.  
I shall run mad :—Some fury hath possess'd  
her.

If I speak, I may be blasted. Ha ! I'll  
mumble

A prayer or two, and cross myself, and then,  
Though the devil fart fire, have at him.

*Re-enter Bertoldo, and Aurelia.*

*Aurel.* Let not, sir,  
The violence of my passion nourish in you  
An ill opinion ; or, grant my carriage  
Out of the road and garb of private women  
'Tis still done with decorum. As I am

A princess, what I do is above censure,  
And to be imitated.

*Bert.* Gracious madam,  
Vouchsafe a little pause ; for I am so rapt  
Beyond myself, that, till I have collected  
My scatter'd faculties, I cannot tender  
My resolution.

*Aurel.* Consider of it,  
I will not be long from you.

[*Bertoldo walks by musing.*]

*Gonz.* Pray I cannot,  
This cursed object strangles my devotion :  
I must speak, or I burst.—Pray you, fair lady,  
If you can, in courtesy direct me to  
The chaste Aurelia.

*Aurel.* Are you blind ? who are we ?

*Gonz.* Another kind of thing. Her blood  
was govern'd

By her discretion, and not ruled her reason :  
The reverence and majesty of Juno  
Shined in her looks, and, coming to the camp,  
Appear'd a second Pallas. I can see  
No such divinities in you : if I,  
Without offence, may speak my thoughts,  
you are,

As 'twere, a wanton Hélen.

*Aurel.* Good ! ere long  
You shall know me better.

*Gonz.* Why, if you are Aurelia,  
How shall I dispose of the soldier ?

*Ast.* May it please you  
To hasten my dispatch ?

*Aurel.* Prefer your suits  
Unto Bertoldo ; we will give him hearing,  
And you'll find him your best advocate.

[*Exit.*]

*Ast.* This is rare !

*Gonz.* What are we come to ?

*Rod.* Grown up in a moment  
A favourite !

*Ferd.* He does take state already.

*Bert.* No, no ; it cannot be :—yet, but  
Camiola,

There is no step between me and a crown.  
Then my ingratitude ! a sin in which  
All sins are comprehended ! Aid me, Virtue,  
Or I am lost.

*Gonz.* May it please your excellence—  
Second me, sir.

*Bert.* Then my so horrid oaths,  
And hell-deep imprecations made against it !  
*Ast.* The king, your brother, will thank  
you for the advancement  
Of his affairs.

*Bert.* And yet who can hold out  
Against such batteries as her power and  
greatness

Raise up against my weak defences !

*Gonz.* Sir,

*Re-enter Aurelia.*

Do you dream waking ? 'Slight, she's here  
again !

Walks she on woollen feet !

*Aurel.* You dwell too long  
In your deliberation, and come  
With a cripple's pace to that which you  
should fly to.

*Bert.* It is confess'd : yet why should I,  
to win

From you, that hazard all to my poor nothing,  
By false play send you off a loser from me ?  
I am already too, too much engaged  
To the king my brother's anger ; and who  
knows

But that his doubts and politic fears, should  
you

Make me his equal, may draw war upon  
Your territories ? Were that breach made up,  
I should with joy embrace what now I fear  
To touch but with due reverence.

*Aurel.* That biderance  
Is easily removed. I owe the king  
For a royal visit, which I straight will pay  
him ;

And having first reconciled you to his favour,  
A dispensation shall meet with us.

*Bert.* I am wholly yours.

*Aurel.* On this book seal it.

*Gonz.* What, hand and lip too ! then the  
bargain's sure.—

You have no employment for me ?

*Aurel.* Yes, Gonzaga ;

Provide a royal ship.

*Gonz.* A ship ! St. John,  
Whither are we bound now ?

*Aurel.* You shall know hereafter.

My lord, your pardon, for my too much  
trenching

Upon your patience.

*Ador.* Camiola ! [*Aside to Bertolda.*]

*Aurel.* How do you ?

*Bert.* Indisposed ; but I attend you.

[*Exeunt all but Adorni.*]

*Ador.* The heavy curse that waits on per-  
jury,

And foul ingratitude, pursue thee ever !  
Yet why from me this ? in his breach of  
faith

My loyalty finds reward : what poisons him,  
Proves mithridate to me. I have perform'd  
All she commanded, punctually ; and now,  
In the clear mirror of my truth, she may  
Behold his falsehood. O that I had wings  
To bear me to Palermo ! This once known,  
Must change her love into a just disdain,  
And work her to compassion of my pain.

[*Exit.*]



SCENE V.—Palermo. *A Room in Camiola's House.*

*Enter Sylli, Camiola, and Clarinda, at several doors.*

*Syl.* Undone ! undone !—poor I, that  
whilome was  
The top and ridge of my house, am, on the  
sudden,

Turn'd to the pitifullest animal  
O' the lineage of the Syllis !

*Cam.* What's the matter ?

*Syl.* The king—break, girdle, break !

*Cam.* Why, what of him ?

*Syl.* Hearing how far you deoted on my  
person,  
Growing envious of my happiness, and  
knowing

His brother, nor his favourite, Fulgentio,  
Could get a sheep's eye from you, I being  
present,

Is come himself a suitor, with the awl  
Of his authority to bore my nose,  
And take you from me—Oh, oh, oh !

*Cam.* Do not roar so :

The king !

*Syl.* The king. Yet loving Sylli is not  
So sorry for his own, as your misfortune ;  
If the king should carry you, or you bear him,  
What a loser should you be ! He can but  
make you

A queen, and what a simple thing is that,  
To the being my lawful spouse ! the world  
can never

Afford you such a husband.

*Cam.* I believe you.

But how are you sure the king is so inclined ?  
Did not you dream this ?

*Syl.* With these eyes I saw him  
Dismiss his train, and lighting from his  
coach,

Whispering Fulgentio in the ear.

*Cam.* If so,

I guess the business.

*Syl.* It can be no other,

But to give me the bob, that being a matter  
Of main importance. Yonder they are ; I  
dare not

*Enter Roberto, and Fulgentio.*

Be seen, I am so desperate : if you forsake me,  
Send me word, that I may provide a willow  
garland,

To wear when I drown myself. O Sylli, Sylli !  
[*Exit crying.*]

*Ful.* It will be worth your pains, sir, to  
observe

The constancy and bravery of her spirit.

Though great men tremble at your frowns,  
I dare

Hazard my head, your majesty, set off  
With terror, cannot fright her.

*Rob.* May she answer

My expectation !

[*Aside.*]

*Ful.* There she is.

*Cam.* My knees thus

Bent to the earth, while my vows are sent  
upward

For the safety of my sovereign, pay the duty  
Due for so great an honour, in this favour  
Done to your humblest handmaid.

*Rob.* You mistake me ;

I come not, lady, that you may report

The king, to do you honour, made your house  
(He being there) his court ; but to correct  
Your stubborn disobedience. A pardon

For that, could you obtain it, were well  
purchased

With this humility.

*Cam.* A pardon, sir !

Till I am conscious of an offence,

I will not wrong my innocence to beg one.

What is my crime, sir ?

*Rob.* Look on him I favour,

By you scorn'd and neglected.

*Cam.* Is that all, sir ?

*Rob.* No, minion ; though that were too  
much. How can you

Answer the setting on your desperate bravo  
To murder him ?

*Cam.* With your leave, I must not kneel,  
sir,

While I reply to this : but thus rise up

In my defence, and tell you, as a man,

(Since, when you are unjust, the deity,

Which you may challenge as a king, parts  
from you,)

'Twas never read in holy writ, or moral,

That subjects on their loyalty, were obliged

To love their sovereign's vices ; your grace,  
sir,

To such an undeserver is no virtue.

*Ful.* What think you now, sir ?

*Cam.* Say, you should love wine,

You being the king, and, 'cause I am your  
subject,

Must I be ever drunk ? Tyrants, not kings,

By violence, from humble vassals force

The liberty of their souls. I could not love  
him ;

And to compel affection, as I take it,

Is not found in your prerogative.

*Rob.* Excellent virgin !

How I admire her confidence !

[*Aside.*]

*Cam.* He complains

O, wrong done him : but, be no more a king,

Unless you do me right. Burn your decrees,

And of your laws and statutes make a fire  
To thaw the frozen numbness of delinquents,  
If he escape unpunish'd. Do your edicts  
Call it death in any man that breaks into  
Another's house, to rob him, though of trifles;  
And shall Fulgentio, your Fulgentio, live,  
Who hath committed more than sacrilege,  
In the pollution of my clear fame,  
By his malicious slanders?

*Rob.* Have you done this?

Answer truly, on your life.

*Ful.* In the heat of blood,

Some such thing I reported.

*Rob.* Out of my sight!

For I vow, if by true penitence thou win not  
This injured virgin to sue out thy pardon,  
Thy grave is digg'd already.

*Ful.* By my own folly

I have made a fair hand of 't.

[*Aside, and exit.*]

*Rob.* You shall know, lady,

While I wear a crown, justice shall use her  
sword

To cut offenders off, though nearest to us.

*Cam.* Ay, now you shew whose deputy  
you are:

If now I bathe your feet with tears, it cannot  
Be censured superstition.

*Rob.* You must rise;

Rise in our favour and protection ever.

[*Kisses her.*]

*Cam.* Happy are subjects, when the prince  
is still

Guided by justice, not his passionate will.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*The same. A Room in  
Camiola's House.*

*Enter Camiola and Sylli.*

*Cam.* You see how tender I am of the  
quiet  
And peace of your affection, and what great  
ones

I put off in your favour.

*Syl.* You do wisely,

Exceeding wisely; and when I have said,

I thank you for't, be happy.

*Cam.* And good reason,

In having such a blessing.

*Syl.* When you have it;

But the bait is not yet ready. Stay the time,  
While I triumph by myself. King, by your  
leave,

I have wiped your royal nose without a  
napkin;

You may cry, *Willow, willow!* for your  
brother,

I'll only say, *Go by!* for my fine favourite,  
He may graze where he please; his lips may  
water

Like a puppy's o'er a furmenty pot, while Sylli,  
Out of his two-leaved cherry-stone dish,  
drinks nectar!

I cannot hold out any longer; heaven for-  
give me!

'Tis not the first oath I have broke; I must  
take

A little for a preparative.

[*Offers to kiss and embrace her.*]

*Cam.* By no means.

If you forswear yourself, we shall not prosper:  
I'll rather lose my longing.

*Syl.* Pretty soul!

How careful it is of me! let me buss yet  
Thy little dainty foot for't: that, I'm sure, is  
out of my oath.

*Cam.* Why, if thou canst dispense with't  
So far, I'll not be scrupulous; such a favour  
My amorous shoe-maker steals.

*Syl.* O most rare leather!

[*Kisses her shoe often.*]

I do begin at the lowest, but in time

I may grow higher.

*Cam.* Fie! you dwell too long there:

Rise, prithee rise.

*Syl.* O, I am up already.

*Enter Clarinda, hastily.*

*Cam.* How I abuse my hours!—What  
news with thee, now?

*Clar.* Off with that gown, 'tis mine; mine  
by your promise:

Signior Adorni is return'd! now upon en-  
trance!

Off with it, off with it, madam!

*Cam.* Be not so hasty:

When I go to bed, 'tis thine.

*Syl.* You have my grant too;

But, do you hear, lady, though I give way  
to this,

You must hereafter ask my leave, before

You part with things of moment.

*Cam.* Very good;

When I'm yours I'll be govern'd.

*Syl.* Sweet obedience!

*Enter Adorni.*

*Cam.* You are well return'd.

*Ador.* I wish that the success

Of my service had deserved it.

*Cam.* Lives Bertoldo?

*Ador.* Yes, and return'd with safety.

*Cam.* 'Tis not then

In the power of fate to add to, or take from

My perfect happiness ; and yet—he should  
Have made me his first visit.

*Ador.* So I think too ;

But he—

*Syl.* Durst not appear, I being present ;  
That's his excuse, I warrant you.

*Cam.* Speak, where is he ?

With whom ? who hath deserved more from  
him ? or

Can be of equal merit ? I in this  
Do not except the king.

*Ador.* He's at the palace,  
With the dutchess of Sienna. One coach  
brought them hither,  
Without a third : he's very gracious with her ;  
You may conceive the rest.

*Cam.* My jealous fears  
Make me to apprehend.

*Ador.* Pray you dismiss  
Signior Wisdom, and I'll make relation to you  
Of the particulars.

*Cam.* Servant, I would have you  
To haste unto the court.

*Syl.* I will outrun  
A footman for your pleasure.

*Cam.* There observe  
The dutchess' train, and entertainment.

*Syl.* Fear not ;  
I will discover all that is of weight,  
To the liveries of her pages and her footmen.  
This is fit employment for me. [*Exit.*]

*Cam.* Gracious with  
The dutchess ! sure, you said so ?

*Ador.* I will use  
All possible brevity to inform you, madam,  
Of what was trusted to me, and discharged  
With faith and loyal duty.

*Cam.* I believe it ;  
You ransomed him, and supplied his wants—  
imagine

That is already spoken ; and what vows  
Of service he made to me, is apparent ;  
His joy of me, and wonder too, perspicuous ;  
Does not your story end so ?

*Ador.* Would the end  
Had answered the beginning !—In a word,  
Ingratitude and perjury at the height  
Cannot express him.

*Cam.* Take heed.

*Ador.* Truth is arm'd,  
And can defend itself. It must out, madam :  
I saw (the presence full) the amorous dutchess  
Kiss and embrace him ; on his part ac-  
cepted

With equal ardour ; and their willing hands  
No sooner join'd, but a remove was publish'd,  
And put in execution.

*Cam.* The proofs are  
Too pregnant. O Bertoldo !

*Ador.* He's not worth  
Your sorrow, madam.

*Cam.* Tell me, when you saw this,  
Did not you grieve, as I do now to hear it ?

*Ador.* His precipice from goodness raising  
mine,  
And serving as a foil to set my faith off,  
I had little reason.

*Cam.* In this you confess  
The devilish malice of your disposition.  
As you were a man, you stood bound to  
lament it ;

And not, in flattery of your false hopes,  
To glory in it. When good men pursue  
The path mark'd out by virtue, the blest saints  
With joy look on it, and seraphic angels  
Clap their celestial wings in heavenly plau-  
dits,

To see a scene of grace so well presented,  
The fiends, and men made up of envy,  
mourning.

Whereas now, on the contrary, as far  
As their divinity can partake of passion,  
With me they weep, beholding a fair temple,  
Built in Bertoldo's loyalty, turn'd to ashes  
By the flames of his inconstancy, the damn'd  
Rejoicing in the object.—'Tis not well  
In you, Adorni.

*Ador.* What a temper dwells  
In this rare virgin ! [*Aside.*] Can you pity  
him,

That hath shewn none to you ?

*Cam.* I must not be  
Cruel by his example. You, perhaps,  
Expect now I should seek recovery  
Of what I have lost, by tears, and with bent  
knees

Beg his compassion. No ; my towering  
virtue,

From the assurance of my merit, scorns  
To stoop so low. I'll take a nobler course,  
And, confident in the justice of my cause,  
The king his brother, and new mistress,  
judges,

Ravish him from her arms. You have the  
contract,

In which he swore to marry me ?

*Ador.* 'Tis here, madam.

*Cam.* He shall be, then, against his will,  
my husband ;

And when I have him, I'll so use him !—  
Doubt not,

But that, your honesty being unquestion'd,  
This writing, with your testimony, clears all.

*Ador.* And buries me in the dark mists of  
error.

*Cam.* I'll presently to court ; pray you,  
give order

For my caroch.

*Ador.* A cart for me were fitter,  
To hurry me to the gallows.

[*Aside, and exit.*]

*Cam.* O false men!  
Inconstant! perjured! My good angel help  
me,  
In these my extremities!

*Re-enter Sylli.*

*Syl.* If you e'er will see brave sight,  
Lose it not now. Bertoldo and the dutchess  
Are presently to be married: there's such  
pomp,

And preparation!

*Cam.* If I marry, 'tis  
This day, or never.

*Syl.* Why, with all my heart;  
Though I break this, I'll keep the next oath  
I make,

And then it is quit.

*Cam.* Follow me to my cabinet;  
You know my confessor, father Paulo?

*Syl.* Yes: shall he  
Do the feat for us?

*Cam.* I will give in writing  
Directions to him, and attire myself  
Like a virgin bride; and something I will do,  
That shall deserve men's praise, and wonder  
too.

*Syl.* And I, to make all know I am not  
shallow,

Will have my points of cochineal and yellow.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The Same. A State-room in  
the Palace.*

*Loud music. Enter Roberto, Bertoldo,  
Aurelia, Ferdinand, Astutio, Gonzaga,  
Roderigo, Jacomo, Pierio, a Bishop, and  
Attendants.*

*Rob.* Had our division been greater,  
madam,

Your clemency, the wrong being done to you,  
In pardon of it, like the rod of concord,  
Must make a perfect union.—Once more,  
With a brotherly affection, we receive you  
Into our favour; let it be your study  
Hereafter to deserve this blessing, far  
Beyond your merit.

*Bert.* As the princess' grace  
To me is without limit, my endeavours,  
With all obsequiousness to serve her plea-  
sures,

Shall know no bounds: nor will I, being  
made

Her husband, e'er forget the duty that  
I owe her as a servant,

*Aurel.* I expect not  
But fair equality, since I well know,

If that superiority be due,  
'Tis not to me. When you are made my  
consort,

All the prerogatives of my high birth can-  
cell'd,

I'll practice the obedience of a wife,  
And freely pay it. Queens themselves, if they  
Make choice of their inferiors, only aiming  
To feed their sensual appetites, and to reign  
Over their husbands, in some kind commit  
Authorized whoredom; nor will I be guilty,  
In my intent of such a crime.

*Gonz.* This done,  
As it is promised, madam, may well stand for  
A precedent to great women: but, when once  
The griping hunger of desire is cloy'd,  
And the poor fool advanced, brought on his  
knees,

Most of your eagle breed, I'll not say all,  
Ever excepting you, challenge again  
What, in hot blood, they parted from.

*Aurel.* You are ever  
An enemy of our sex; but you, I hope, sir,  
Have better thoughts.

*Bert.* I dare not entertain  
An ill one of your goodness.

*Rob.* To my power  
I will enable him, to prevent all danger  
Envy can raise against your choice. One  
word more  
Touching the articles.

*Enter Fulgentio, Camiola, Sylli, and Adorni.*

*Ful.* In you alone  
Lie all my hopes; you can or kill or save me;  
But pity in you will become you better  
(Though I confess in justice 'tis denied me)  
Than too much rigour.

*Cam.* I will make your peace  
As far as it lies in me; but must first  
Labour to right myself.

*Aurel.* Or add or alter  
What you think fit; in him I have my all:  
Heaven make me thankful for him!

*Rob.* On to the temple.

*Cam.* Stay, royal sir; and as you are a  
king,  
Erect one here, in doing justice to  
An injured maid.

*Aurel.* How's this?

*Bert.* O, I am blasted!

*Rob.* I have given some proof, sweet lady,  
of my promptness

To do you right, you need not, therefore,  
doubt me;

And rest assured, that, this great work dis-  
patch'd,

You shall have audience, and satisfaction  
To all you can demand.

*Cam.* To do me justice  
 Exacts your present care, and can admit  
 Of no delay. If, ere my cause be heard,  
 In favour of your brother you go on, sir,  
 Your sceptre cannot right me. He's the man,  
 The guilty man, whom I accuse; and you  
 Stand bound in duty, as you are supreme,  
 To be impartial. Since you are a judge,  
 As a delinquent look on him, and not  
 As on a brother: Justice painted blind,  
 Infers her ministers are obliged to hear  
 The cause, and truth, the judge, determine  
 of it:

And not sway'd or by favour or affection,  
 By a false gloss, or wrested comment, alter  
 The true intent and letter of the law.

*Rob.* Nor will I, madam.

*Aurel.* You seem troubled, sir.

*Gonz.* His colour changes too.

*Cam.* The alteration

Grows from his guilt. The goodness of my  
 cause

Begets such confidence in me, that I bring  
 No hired tongue to plead for me, that with  
 gay

Rhetorical flourishes may palliate  
 That which, stripp'd naked, will appear de-  
 form'd.

I stand here mine own advocate; and my  
 truth,

Deliver'd in the plainest language, will  
 Make good itself; nor will I, if the king  
 Give suffrage to it, but admit of you,  
 My greatest enemy, and this stranger prince,  
 To sit assistants with him.

*Aurel.* I ne'er wrong'd you.

*Cam.* In your knowledge of the injury, I  
 believe it;

Nor will you, in your justice, when you are  
 Acquainted with my interest in this man,  
 Which I lay claim to.

*Rob.* Let us take our seats.

What is your title to him?

*Cam.* By this contract,  
 Seal'd solemnly before a reverend man,  
 [Presents a paper to the king.]

I challenge him for my husband.

*Syl.* Ha! was I

Sent for the friar for this? O Sylli! Sylli!  
 Some cordial, or I faint.

*Rob.* This writing is  
 Authentical.

*Aurel.* But, done in heat of blood,  
 Charm'd by her flatteries, as no doubt, he was,  
 To be dispens'd with.

*Fer.* Add this, if you please,  
 The distance and disparity between  
 Their births and fortunes.

*Cam.* What can Innocence hope for,

When such as sit her judges are corrupted!  
 Disparity of birth or fortune, urge you?  
 Or Syren charms? or, at his best, in me  
 Wants to deserve him? Call some few days  
 back,

And, as he was, consider him, and you  
 Must grant him my inferior. Imagine  
 You saw him now in fetters, with his honour,  
 His liberty lost; with her black wings Despair  
 Circling his miseries, and this Gonzaga  
 Trampling on his afflictions; the great sum  
 Proposed for his redemption; the king  
 Forbidding payment of it; his near kinsmen,  
 With his protesting followers and friends,  
 Falling off from him; by the whole world  
 forsaken;

Dead to all hope, and buried in the grave  
 Of his calamities; and then weigh duly  
 What she deserv'd, whose merits now are  
 doubted,

That, as his better angel, in her bounties  
 Appear'd unto him, his great ransom paid,  
 His wants, and with a prodigal hand, sup-  
 plied;

Whether, then, being my manumised slave,  
 He owed not himself to me?

*Aurel.* Is this true?

*Rob.* In his silence 'tis acknowledged.

*Gonz.* If you want

A witness to this purpose, I'll depose it.

*Cam.* If I have dwelt too long on my  
 deservings

To this unthankful man, pray you pardon me;  
 The cause required it. And though now I add  
 A little, in my painting to the life  
 His barbarous ingratitude, to deter  
 Others from imitation, let it meet with  
 A fair interpretation. This serpent,  
 Frozen to numbness, was no sooner warm'd  
 In the bosom of my pity and compassion,  
 But, in return, he ruin'd his preserver,  
 The prints the irons bad made in his flesh  
 Still ulcerous; but all that I had done,  
 My benefits, in sand or water written,  
 As they had never been, no more re-  
 member'd!

And on what ground, but his ambitious hopes.  
 To gain this dutchess' favour?

*Aurel.* Yes; the object,  
 Look on it better, lady, may excuse.  
 The change of his affection.

*Cam.* The object!

In what? forgive me, modesty, if I say  
 You look upon your form in the false glass  
 Offlattery and self-love, and that deceives you.  
 That you were a dutchess, as I take it, was not  
 Character'd on your face; and, that not seen,  
 For other feature, make all these, that arc  
 Experienced in women, judges of them,

And, if they are not parasites, they must grant,

For beauty without art, though you storm at it,

I may take the right-hand file.

*Gonz.* Well said, i' faith!

I see fair women on no terms will yield

Priority in beauty.

*Cam.* Down, proud heart!

Why do I rise up in defence of that,

Which, in my cherishing of it, hath undone me!

No, madam, I recant,—you are all beauty,

Goodness, and virtue; and poor I not worthy

As a foil to set you off: enjoy your conquest;

But do not tyrannize. Yet, as I am, In my lowness, from your height you may look on me,

And, in your suffrage to me, make him know

That, though to all men else I did appear

The shame and scorn of women, he stands bound

To hold me as the masterpiece.

*Rob.* By my life,

You have shewn yourself of such an abject temper,

So poor and low-condition'd, as I grieve for Your nearness to me.

*Fer.* I am changed in my

Opinion of you, lady; and profess

The virtues of your mind an ample fortune

For an absolute monarch.

*Gonz.* Since you are resolved

To damn yourself, in your forsaking of

Your noble order for a woman, do it

For this. You may search through the world, and meet not

With such another phoenix.

*Aurel.* On the sudden

I feel all fires of love quench'd in the water Of my compassion.—Make your peace; you have

My free consent; for here I do disclaim

All interest in you: and, to further your Desires, fair maid, composed of worth and

honour,

The dispensation procured by me,

Freeing Bertoldo from his vow, makes way To your embraces.

*Bert.* Oh, how have I stray'd,

And wilfully, out of the noble track

Mark'd me by virtue! till now, I was never Truly a prisoner. To excuse my late

Captivity, I might allege the malice Of fortune; you, that conquer'd me, confessing

Courage in my defence was no way wanting.

But now I have surrender'd up my strengths Into the power of Vice, and on my forehead

Branded, with mine own hand, in capital letters,

DISLOYAL, and INGRATEFUL. Though barr'd from

Human society, and hiss'd into

Some desert ne'er yet haunted with the curses

Of men and women, sitting as a judge

Upon my guilty self, I must confess

It justly falls upon me; and one tear,

Shed in compassion of my sufferings, more

Thau I can hope for.

*Cam.* This compunction

For the wrong that you have done me, though you should

Fix here, and your true sorrow move no further,

Will, in respect I loved once, make these eyes Two springs of sorrow for you.

*Bert.* In your pity

My cruelty shews more monstrous: yet I am not,

Though most ingrateful, grown to such a height

Of impudence, as, in my wishes only,

To ask your pardon. If, as now I fall

Prostrate before your feet, you will vouchsafe

To act your own revenge, treading upon me

As a viper eating through the bowels of

Your benefits, to whom, with liberty,

I owe my being, 'twill take from the burthen That now is insupportable.

*Cam.* Pray you, rise;

As I wish peace and quiet to my soul,

I do forgive you heartily: yet, excuse me,

Though I deny myself a blessing that,

By the favour of the dutchess, seconded

With your submission, is offer'd to me;

Let not the reason I allege for't grieve you,

You have been false once.—I have done: and if,

When I am married, as this day I will be,

As a perfect sign of your atonement with me,

You wish me joy, I will receive it for

Full satisfaction of all obligations

In which you stand bound to me.

*Bert.* I will do it,

And, what's more, in despite of sorrow, live

To see myself undone, beyond all hope

To be made up again.

*Syl.* My blood begins

To come to my heart again.

*Cam.* Pray you, signior Sylli,

Call in the holy friar: he's prepared

For finishing the work.

*Syl.* I knew I was

The man: heaven make me thankful!

*Rob.* Who is this?

*Ast.* His father was the banker of Palermo,

And this the heir of his great wealth ; his wisdom

Was not hereditary.

*Syl.* Though you know me not,  
Your majesty owes me a round sum ; I have  
A seal or two to witness ; yet, if you please  
To wear my colours, and dance at my  
wedding,

I'll never sue you.

*Rob.* And I'll grant your suit.

*Syl.* Gracious madonna, noble general,  
Brave captains, and my quondam rivals, wear  
them, [Gives them favours.

Since I am confident you dare not harbour  
A thought but that way current. [Exit.

*Aurel.* For my part

I cannot guess the issue.

*Re-enter Sylli with Father Paulo.*

*Syl.* Do your duty ;

And with all speed you can, you may dis-  
patch us.

*Paul.* Thus, as a principal ornament to  
the church,

I seize her.

*All.* How !

*Rob.* So young, and so religious !

*Paul.* She has forsook the world.

*Syl.* And Sylli too !

I shall run mad.

*Rob.* Hence with the fool !—[*Sylli is thrust  
off.*—Proceed, sir.

*Paul.* Look on this MAID OF HONOUR, now  
Truly honour'd in her vow

*She spurs to heaven : vain delight*

*By day, or pleasure of the night*

*She no more thinks of. This fair hair*

*(Favours for great kings to wear)*

*Must now be shorn ; her rich array*

*Changed into a homely gray :*

*The dainties with which she was fed,*

*And her proud flesh pampered,*

*Must not be tasted ; from the spring,*

*For wine, cold water we will bring ;*

*And with fasting mortify*

*The feasts of sensuality.*

*Her jewels, beads ; and she must look*

*Not in a glass, but holy book,*

*To teach her the ne'er-erring way*

*To immortality. O may*

*She, as she purposes to be*

*A child new-born to piety,*

*Persever in it, and good men,*

*With saints and angels, say, Amen !*

*Cam.* This is the marriage ! this the port  
to which

My vows must steer me ! Fill my spreading  
sails

With the pure wind of your devotions for me,  
That I may touch the secure haven, where  
Eternal happiness keeps her residence,  
Temptations to frailty never entering !

I am dead to the world, and thus dispose  
Of what I leave behind me ; and, dividing

My state into three parts, I thus bequeath it :

The first to the fair nunnery, to which

I dedicate the last and better part

Of my frail life ; a second portion

To pious uses ; and the third to thee,

Adorni, for thy true and faithful service.

And, ere I take my last farewell, with hope

To find a grant, my suit to you is, that

You would, for my sake, pardon this young

man,

And to his merits love him, and no further.

*Rob.* I thus confirm it,

[Gives his hand to Fulgentio.

*Cam.* And, as e'er you hope,

[To Bertoldo.

Like me, to be made happy, I conjure you

To reassume your order ; and in fighting

Bravely against the enemies of our faith,

Redeem your mortgaged honour.

*Gonz.* I restore this :

[Gives him the white cross.

Once more brothers in arms.

*Bert.* I'll live and die so.

*Cam.* To you my pious wishes ! And, to end

All differences, great sir, I beseech you

To be an arbitrator, and compound

The quarrel long continuing between

The duke and dutchess.

*Rob.* I will take it into

My special care.

*Cam.* I am then at rest. Now, father,

Conduct me where you please.

[Exit Paulo and Camiola.

*Rob.* She well deserves

Her name, THE MAID OF HONOUR ! May

she stand,

To all posterity, a fair example

For noble maids to imitate ! Since to live

In wealth and pleasure's common, but to

part with

Such poison'd baits is rare ; there being

nothing

Upon this stage of life to be commended,

Though well begun, till it be fully ended.

[Flourish. Exit.

# The Picture.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

## ACTORS' NAMES.

Ladislaus, <i>king of Hungary</i> . . . . .	R. Benfield.
Ferdinand, <i>general of the army</i> . . . . .	R. Sharpe.
Eubulus, <i>an old counsellor</i> . . . . .	J. Lowin.
Mathias, <i>a knight of Bohemia</i> . . . . .	J. Taylor.
Ubaldo, } <i>wild courtiers</i> . . . . .	{ T. Pollard.
Ricardo, }	{ E. Swanstone.
Julio Baptista, <i>a great scholar</i> . . . . .	W. Pen.
Hilario, <i>servant to Sophia</i> . . . . .	J. Shancke.
<i>Two Boys, representing Apollo and Pallas.</i>	
<i>Two Couriers.</i>	
<i>A Guide.</i>	
<i>Servants to the queen.</i>	
<i>Servants to Mathias.</i>	
Honoriam, <i>the queen</i> . . . . .	J. Thomson.
Sophia, <i>wife to Mathias</i> . . . . .	J. Hunnieman.
Acanthe, } <i>maids of honour</i> . . . . .	{ A. Goffe.
Sylvia, }	{
Corisca, <i>Sophia's woman</i> . . . . .	W. Trigge.
<i>Maskers, Attendants, Officers, Captains, &amp;c.</i>	

SCENE,—Partly in Hungary, and partly in Bohemia.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—*The Frontiers of Bohemia.*

*Enter Mathias, Sophia, Corisca, Hilario, with other Servants.*

*Math.* Since we must part, Sophia, to pass further

Is not alone impertinent, but dangerous.

We are not distant from the Turkish camp Above five leagues, and who knows but some party

Of his Timariots, that scour the country, May fall upon us?—be now, as thy name, Truly interpreted, hath ever spoke thee, Wise, and discreet; and to thy understanding Marry thy constant patience.

*Soph.* You put me, sir, To the utmost trial of it.

*Math.* Nay, no melting;

Since the necessity that now separates us, We have long since disputed, and the reasons Forcing me to it, too oft wash'd in tears.

I grant that you, in birth, were far above me, And great men, my superiors, rivals for you; But mutual consent of heart, as hands, Join'd by true love, hath made us onc, and equal:

Nor is it in me mere desire of fame, Or to be cried up by the public voice,

For a brave soldier, that puts on my armour: Such airy tumours take not me. You know How narrow our demians are, and what's more,

Having as yet no charge of children on us, We hardly can subsist.

*Soph.* In you alone, sir, I have all abundance.

*Math.* For my mind's content, In your own language I could answer you. You have been an obedient wife, a right one; And to my power, though short of your desert,

I have been ever an indulgent husband. We have long enjoy'd the sweets of love, and though

Not to satiety, or loathing, yet We must not live such dotards on our pleasures,

As still to hug them, to the certain loss Of profit and preferment. Competent means Maintains a quiet bed; want breeds dissension,

Even in good women.

*Soph.* Have you found in me, sir, Any distaste, or sign of discontent, For want of what's superfluous?

*Math.* No, Sophia; Nor shalt thou ever have cause to repent



Thy constant course in goodness, if heaven  
bless

My honest undertakings. 'Tis for thee  
That I turn soldier, and put forth, dearest,  
Upon this sea of action, as a factor,  
To trade for rich materials to adorn  
Thy noble parts, and shew them in full lustre.  
I blush that other ladies, less in beauty  
And outward form, but in the harmony  
Of the soul's ravishing music, the same age  
Not to be named with thee, should so out-  
shine thee

In jewels, and variety of wardrobes ;  
While you, to whose sweet innocence both  
Indies

Compared are of no value, wanting these,  
Pass unregarded.

*Soph.* If I am so rich, or—  
In your opinion, why should you borrow  
Additions for me ?

*Math.* Why ! I should be censured  
Of ignorance, possessing such a jewel  
Above all price, if I forbear to give it  
The best of ornaments : therefore, *Sophia*,  
In few words know my pleasure, and obey  
me,

As you have ever done. To your discretion  
I leave the government of my family,  
And our poor fortunes ; and from these com-  
mand

Obedience to you, as to myself :  
To the utmost of what's mine, live plenti-  
fully ;

And, ere the remnant of our store be spent,  
With my good sword I hope I shall reap for  
you

A harvest in such full abundance, as  
Shall make a merry winter.

*Soph.* Since you are not  
To be diverted, sir, from what you purpose,  
All arguments to stay you here are useless :  
Go when you please, sir. Eyes, I charge  
you waste not

One drop of sorrow ; look you heard all up  
Till in my widow'd bed I call upon you,  
But then be sure you fail not. You blest  
angels,

Guardians of human life, I at this instant  
Forbear t'invoke you : at our parting, 'twere  
To personate devotion. My soul  
Shall go along with you, and, when you are  
Circled with death and horror, seek and  
find you ;

And then I will not leave a saint unsued to  
For your protection. To tell you what  
I will do in your absence, would shew  
poorly ;

My actions shall speak for me : 'twere to  
doubt you,

To beg I may hear from you ; where you are  
You cannot live obscure, nor shall one post,  
By night or day, pass unexamined by me.—  
If I dwell long upon your lips, consider,

[*Kisses him.*

After this feast, the gripping fast that follows,  
And it will be excusable ; pray turn from me.  
All that I can, is spoken. [*Exit.*

*Math.* Follow your mistress.

Forbear your wishes for me ; let me find them,  
At my return, in your prompt will to serve  
her.

*Hil.* For my part, sir, I will grow lean  
with study

To make her merry.

*Coris.* Though you are my lord,  
Yet being her gentlewoman, by my place  
I may take my leave ; your hand, or, if you  
please

To have me fight so high, I'll not be coy,  
But stand a-tip-toe for't.

*Math.* O, farewell, girl ! [*Kisses her.*

*Hil.* A kiss well begg'd, *Corisca*.

*Coris.* 'Twas my fee ;  
Love, how he melts ! I cannot blame my  
lady's

Unwillingness to part with such marmalade  
lips.

There will be scrambling for them in the  
camp ;

And were it not for my honesty, I could  
wish now

I were his leaguer laundress ; I would find  
Soap of mine own, enough to wash his linen,  
Or I would strain hard for't.

*Hil.* How the mammet twitters !

Come, come ; my lady stays for us.

*Coris.* Would I had been

Her ladyship the last night !

*Hil.* No more of that, wench.

[*Exeunt Hilario, Corisca, and the rest.*

*Math.* I am strangely troubled, yet why I  
should nourish

A fury here, and with imagined food,  
Having no real grounds on which to raise  
A building of suspicion she was ever  
Or can be false hereafter. I in this

But foolishly enquire the knowledge of  
A future sorrow, which, if I find out,  
My present ignorance were a cheap purchase,  
Though with my loss of being. I have al-  
ready

Dealt with a friend of mine, a general  
scholar,

One deeply read in nature's hidden secrets,  
And, though with much unwillingness, have  
won him

To do as much as art can, to resolve me  
My fate that follows—To my wish, he's come.

*Enter Baptista.*

Julio Baptista, now I may affirm  
Your promise and performance walk  
together ;

And therefore, without circumstance, to the  
point :

Instruct me what I am.

*Bapt.* I could wish you had  
Made trial of my love some other way.

*Math.* Nay, this is from the purpose.

*Bapt.* If you can

Proportion your desire to any mean,  
I do pronounce you happy ; I have found  
By certain rules of art, your matchless wife  
Is to this present hour from all pollution  
Free, and untainted.

*Math.* Good.

*Bapt.* In reason, therefore,  
You should fix here, and make no further  
search

Of what may fall hereafter.

*Math.* O, Baptista,

'Tis not in me to master so my passions ;  
I must know further, or you have made good  
But half your promise. While my love stood  
by,

Holding her upright, and my presence was  
A watch upon her, her desires being met  
too

With equal ardour from me, what one proof  
Could she give of her constancy, being un-  
tempted ?

But when I am absent, and my coming back  
Uncertain, and those wanton heats in women,  
Not to be quench'd by lawful means, and she  
The absolute disposer of herself,  
Without control or curb ; nay, more, invited  
By opportunity, and all strong temptations,  
If then she hold out—

*Bapt.* As, no doubt, she will.

*Math.* Those doubts must be made cer-  
tainities, Baptista,

By your assurance ; or your boasted art  
Deserves no admiration. How you trifle,  
And play with my affliction ! I am on  
The rack, till you confirm me.

*Bapt.* Surc, Mathias,

I am no god, nor can I dive into  
Her hidden thoughts, or know what her  
intents are ;

That is denied to art, and kept conceal'd  
E'en from the devils themselves : they can  
but guess,

Out of long observation, what is likely ;  
But positively to fortel that shall be,  
You may conclude impossible. All I can,  
I will do for you ; when you are distant from  
her

A thousand leagues, as if you then were with  
her,

You shall know truly when she is solicited,  
And how far wrought on.

*Math.* I desire no more.

*Bapt.* Take then this little model of Sophia,  
With more than human skill limn'd to the  
life ;

[*Gives him a picture.*

Each line and lineament of it, in the drawing,  
So punctually observed, that, had it motion,  
In so much 'twere herself.

*Math.* It is, indeed,

An admirable piece ! but if it have not  
Some hidden virtue that I cannot guess at,  
In what can it advantage me ?

*Bapt.* I'll instruct you :

Carry it still about you, and as oft  
As you desire to know how she's affected,  
With curious eyes peruse it : while it keeps.

The figure it now has, entire and perfect,  
She is not only innocent in fact,  
But unattempted ; but if once it vary  
From the true form, and what's now white  
and red

Incline to yellow, rest most confident  
She's with all violence courted, but uncon-  
quer'd ;

But if it turn all black, 'tis an assurance  
The fort, by composition or surprise,  
Is forced, or with her free consent sur-  
render'd.

*Math.* How much you have engaged me  
for this favour,

The service of my whole life shall make good.

*Bapt.* We will not part so, I'll along with  
you,

And it is needful : with the rising sun,  
The armies meet ; yet, ere the fight begin,  
In spite of opposition, I will place you  
In the head of the Hungarian general's troop,  
And near his person.

*Math.* As my better angel,  
You shall direct and guide me.

*Bapt.* As we ride  
I'll tell you more.

*Math.* In all things I'll obey you.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—Hungary. *Alba Regalis.*  
*A State-room in the Palace.*

*Enter Ubaldo and Ricardo.*

*Ric.* When came the post ?

*Ubald.* The last night.

*Ric.* From the camp ?

*Ubald.* Yes, as 'tis said, and the letter  
writ and sign'd

By the general, Ferdinand.

*Ric.* Nay, then, sans question,  
It is of moment.

*Ubald.* It concerns the lives  
Of two great armies.

*Ric.* Was it cheerfully  
Received by the king?

*Ubald.* Yes ; for being assured  
The armies were in view of one another,  
Having proclaim'd a public fast and prayer  
For the good success, [he] dispatch'd a gen-  
tleman

Of his privy chamber to the general  
With absolute authority from him,  
To try the fortune of a day.

*Ric.* No doubt then  
The general will come on, and fight it  
bravely.

Heaven prosper him ! This military art,  
I grant to be the noblest of professions ;  
And yet, I thank my stars for't, I was never  
Inclined to learn it : since this bubble honour  
(Which is, indeed, the nothing soldiers fight  
for,)

With the loss of limbs or life, is, in my  
judgment,  
Too dear a purchase.

*Ubald.* Give me our court warfare :  
The danger is not great in the encounter  
Of a fair mistress.

*Ric.* Fair and sound together  
Do very well, Ubaldo ; but such are,  
With difficulty, to be found out ; and when  
they know

Their value, prized too high. By thy own  
report,

Thou wast at twelve a gamester, and since  
that,  
Studied all kinds of females, from the night-  
trader

I' the street, with certain danger to thy pocket,  
To the great lady in her cabinet ;  
That spent upon thee more in cullises,  
To strengthen thy weak back, than would  
maintain

Twelve Flanders mares, and as many  
running horses :

Besides apothecaries and surgeons' bills,  
Paid upon all occasions, and those frequent.

*Ubald.* You talk, Ricardo, as if yet you  
were

A novice in those mysteries.

*Ric.* By no means ;

My doctor can assure the contrary :  
I lose no time. I have felt the pain and  
pleasure,

As he that is a gamester, and plays often,  
Must sometimes be a loser.

*Ubald.* Wherefore, then,  
Do you envy me ?

*Ric.* It grows not from my want,  
Nor thy abundance ; but being, as I am,

The likelier man, and of much more ex-  
perience,

My good parts are my curses : there's no  
beauty,

But yields ere it be summon'd ; and, as  
nature

Had sign'd me the monopoly of maidenheads,  
There's none can buy till I have made my  
market.

Satiety cloy's me ; as I live, I would part  
with

Half my estate, nay, travel o'er the world,  
To find that only phoenix in my search,  
That could hold out against me.

*Ubald.* Be not rapt so ;  
You may spare that labour. As she is a  
woman,

What think you of the queen ?

*Ric.* I dare not aim at  
The petticoat royal, that is still excepted :  
Yet, were she not my king's, being the ab-  
stract,

Of all that's rare, or to be wish'd in woman,  
To write her in my catalogue, having en-  
joy'd her,

I would venture my neck to a halter—but  
we talk of

Impossibilities : as she hath a beauty  
Would make old Nestor young ; such  
majesty

Draws forth a sword of terror to defend it,  
As would fright Paris, though the queen of  
love

Vow'd her best furtherance to him.

*Ubald.* Have you observed  
The gravity of her language, mix'd with  
sweetness ?

*Ric.* Then, at what distance she reserves  
herself,

When the king himself makes his approaches  
to her—

*Ubald.* As she were still a virgin, and his  
life

But one continued wooing.

*Ric.* She well knows  
Her worth, and values it.

*Ubald.* And so far the king is  
Indulgent to her humours, that he forbears  
The duty of a husband, but when she calls  
for't.

*Ric.* All his imaginations and thoughts  
Are buried in her ; the loud noise of war  
Cannot awake him.

*Ubald.* At this very instant,  
When both his life and crown are at the  
stake,

He only studies her content, and when  
She's pleas'd to show herself, music and  
masques

Are with all care and cost provided for her.

*Ric.* This night she promised to appear.

*Ubald.* You may

Believe it by the diligence of the king,  
As if he were her harbinger.

*Enter Ladislans, Eubulus, and Attendants with perfumes.*

*Ladis.* These rooms

Are not perfumed, as we directed,

*Eubu.* Not, sir!

I know not what you would have; I am  
sure the smোক

Cost treble the price of the whole week's  
provision

Spent in your majesty's kitchens.

*Ladis.* How I scorn

Thy gross comparison! When my Honoria,  
The amazement of the present time, and envy

Of all succeeding ages, does descend

To sanctify a place, and in her presence

Makes it a temple to me, can I be

Too curious, much less prodigal to receive  
her?

But that the splendour of her beams of beauty  
Hath struck thee blind—

*Eubu.* As dotage hath done you.

*Ladis.* Dotage? O blasphemy! is it in me  
To serve her to her merit? Is she not

The daughter of a king?

*Eubu.* And you the son

Of ours, I take it; by what privilege else,  
Do you reign over us? for my part, I know not

Where the disparity lies.

*Ladis.* Her birth, old man,

Old in the kingdom's service, which protects  
thee,

Is the least grace in her: and though her  
beauties

Might make the Thunderer a rival for her,

They are but superficial ornaments,

And faintly speak her: from her heavenly  
mind,

Were all antiquity and fiction lost,

Our modern poets could not, in their fancy,  
But fashion a Minerva far transcending

The imagined one whom Homer only dreamt  
of.

But then add this, she's mine, mine, Eubulus!  
And though she knows one glance from her

fair eyes

Must make all gazers her idolaters,

She is so sparing of her influence

That, to shun superstition in others,

She shoots her powerful beams only at me.

And can I, then, whom she desires to hold

Her kingly captive above all the world,

Whose nations and empires, if she pleased,

She might command as slaves, but gladly pay  
The humble tribute of my love and service,  
Nay, if I said of adoration, to her,  
I did not err?

*Eubu.* Well, since you hug your fetters,  
In Love's name wear them! You are a king,  
and that

Concludes you wise: your will a powerful  
reason,

Which we, that are foolish subjects, must  
not argue.

And what in a mean man I should call folly,  
Is in your majesty remarkable wisdom:

But for me, I subscribe.

*Ladis.* Do, and look up,

Upon this wonder.

*Loud music. Enter Honoria in state, under a Canopy; her train borne up by Sylvia and Acanthe.*

*Ric.* Wonder! It is more, sir.

*Ubald.* A rapture, an astonishment.

*Ric.* What think you, sir?

*Eubu.* As the king thinks; that is the  
surest guard

We courtiers ever lie at.—Was prince ever  
So drown'd in dotage? Without spectacles

I can see a handsome woman, and she is so:  
But yet to admiration look not on her.

Heaven, how he fawns! and, as it were his  
duty,

With what assured gravity she receives it!  
Her hand again! O she at length vouchsafes

Her lip, and as he had sucked nectar from it,  
How he's exalted! Women in their natures

Affect command; but this humility

In a husband and a king, marks her the way  
To absolute tyranny.

[*The king seats her on his throne.*

So! Juno's placed

In Jove's tribunal: and, like Mercury,  
(Forgetting his own greatness,) he attends

For her employments. She prepares to  
speak;

What oracles shall we hear now? [*Aside.*

*Hon.* That you please, sir,

With such assurances of love and favour,  
To grace your handmaid, but in being

yours, sir,

A matchless queen, and one that knows  
herself so,

Binds me in retribution to deserve

The grace conferr'd upon me.

*Ladis.* You transcend

In all things excellent: and it is my glory,  
Your worth weigh'd truly, to depose myself

From absolute command, surrendering up  
My will and faculties to your disposal:

And here I vow, not for a day or year,

But my whole life, which I wish long, to serve you,

That whatsoever I, in justice, may Exact from these my subjects, you from me May boldly challenge: and when you require it,

In sign of my subjection, as your vassal, Thus I will pay my homage.

*Hon.* O forbear, sir!

Let not my lips envy my robe; on them Print your allegiance often: I desire No other fealty.

*Ladis.* Gracious sovereign!  
Boundless in bounty!

*Eubn.* Is not here fine fooling!  
He's questionless, bewitch'd. Would I were gelt,

So that would disenchant him! though I forfeit

My life for't, I must speak.—By your good leave, sir— [*Passing before the king.*]

I have no suit to you, nor can you grant one, Having no power: you are like me, a subject, Her more than serene majesty being present. And I must tell you, 'tis ill manners in you, Having deposed yourself, to keep your baton, And not stand bare, as we do, being no king, But a fellow-subject with us. Gentlemen-ushers,

It does belong to your place, see it reform'd; He has given away his crown, and cannot challenge

The privilege of his bonnet.

*Ladis.* Do not tempt me.

*Eubn.* Tempt you! in what? in following your example?

If you are angry, question me hereafter, As Ladislaus should do Eubulus, On equal terms. You were of late my sovereign,

But weary of it, I now bend my knee To her divinity, and desire a boon From her more than magnificence.

*Hon.* Take it freely.

Nay, be not moved; for our mirth's sake let us hear him.

*Eubn.* 'Tis but to ask a question: Have you ne'er read

The story of Semiramis and Ninus?

*Hon.* Not as I remember.

*Eubn.* I will then instruct you, And 'tis to the purpose: This Ninus was a king,

And such an impotent loving king as this was, But now he's none; this Ninus (pray you observe me)

Doted on this Semiramis, a smith's wife; (I must confess, there the comparison holds not,

You are a king's daughter, yet, under your correction,

Like her, a woman;) this Assyrian monarch, Of whom this is a pattern, to express His love and service, seated her, as you are, In his regal throne, and bound by oath his nobles,

Forgetting all allegiance to himself, One day to be her subjects, and to put In execution whatever she

Pleased to impose upon them:—pray you command him

To minister the like to us, and then You shall hear what follow'd.

*Ladis.* Well, sir, to your story.

*Eubn.* You have no warrant, stand by; let me know

Your pleasure, goddess.

*Hon.* Let this nod assure you.

*Eubn.* Goddess-like, indeed! as I live, a pretty idol!

She knowing her power, wisely made use of it; And fearing his inconstancy, and repentance Of what he had granted, (as, in reason, madam,

You may do his,) that he might never have Power to recall his grant, or question her For her short government, instantly gave order

To have his head struck off.

*Ladis.* Is't possible?

*Eubn.* The story says so, and commends her wisdom

For making use of her authority.

And it is worth your imitation, madam: He loves subjection, and you are no queen, Unless you make him feel the weight of it. You are more than all the world to him, and that

He may be so to you, and not seek change, When his delights are sated, mew him up In some close prison, (if you let him live, Which is no policy,) and there diet him As you think fit, to feed your appetite; Since there ends his ambition.

*Ubald.* Devilish counsel!

*Ric.* The king's amazed.

*Ubald.* The queen appears, too, full Of deep imaginations; Eubulus Hath put both to it.

*Ric.* Now she seems resolved: I long to know the issue.

[*Honoria descends from the throne.*]

*Hon.* Give me leave, Dear sir, to reprehend you for appearing Perplex'd with what this old man, out of envy Of your unequal graces shower'd upon me, Hath, in his fabulous story, saucily Applied to me. Sir, that you only nourish

One doubt Honoria dares abuse the power  
With which she is invested by your favour ;  
Or that she ever can make use of it  
To the injury of you, the great bestower,  
Takes from your judgment. It was your  
delight

To seek to me with more obsequiousness  
Than I desired : and stood it with my duty  
Not to receive what you were pleased to  
offer?

I do but act the part you put upon me,  
And though you make me personate a queen,  
And you my subject, when the play, your  
pleasure,

Is at a period, I am what I was  
Before I enter'd, still your humble wife,  
And you my royal sovereign.

*Ric.* Admirable !

*Hon.* I have heard of captains taken more  
with dangers

Than the rewards ; and if, in your approaches  
To those delights which are your own, and  
freely,

To heighten your desire, you make the pas-  
sage

Narrow and difficult, shall I prescribe you,  
Or blame your fondness ? or can that swell  
me

Beyond my just proportion ?

*Ubald.* Above wonder !

*Ladis.* Heaven make me thankful for such  
goodness !

*Hon.* Now, sir,

The state I took to satisfy your pleasure,  
I change to this humility ; and the oath  
You made to me of homage, I thus cancel,  
And seat you in your own.

[*Leads the king to the throne.*]

*Ladis.* I am transported  
Beyond myself.

*Hon.* And now, to your wise lordship :  
Am I proved a Semiramis ? or hath  
My Ninus, as maliciously you made him,  
Cause to repent the excess of favour to me,  
Which you call dotage ?

*Ladis.* Answer, wretch !

*Eubu.* I dare, sir,

And say, however the event may plead  
In your defence, you had a guilty cause ;  
Nor was it wisdom in you, I repeat it,  
To teach a lady, humble in herself,  
With the ridiculous dotage of a lover,  
To be ambitious.

*Hon.* Eubulus, I am so ;

'Tis rooted in me ; you mistake my temper.  
I do profess myself to be the most  
Ambitious of my sex, but not to hold  
Command over my lord ; such a proud torrent  
Would sink me in my wishes : not that I

Am ignorant how much I can deserve,  
And may with justice challenge.

*Eubu.* This I look'd for ;  
After this seeming humble ebb, I knew  
A gushing tide would follow. [*Aside.*]

*Hon.* By my birth,  
And liberal gifts of nature, as of fortune,  
From you, as things beneath me, I expect  
What's due to majesty, in which I am  
A sharer with your sovereign.

*Eubu.* Good again !

*Hon.* And as I am most eminent in place,  
In all my actions I would appear so.

*Ladis.* You need not fear a rival.

*Hon.* I hope not ;  
And till I find one, I disdain to know  
What envy is.

*Ladis.* You are above it, madam.

*Hon.* For beauty without art, discourse,  
and free

From affectation, with what graces else  
Can in the wife and daughter of a king  
Be wish'd, I dare prefer myself, as—

*Eubu.* I

Blush for you, lady. Trumpet your own  
praises !

This spoken by the people had been heard  
With honour to you. Does the court afford  
No oil-tongued parasite, that you are forced  
To be your own gross flatterer ?

*Ladis.* Be dumb,  
Thou spirit of contradiction !

*Hon.* The wolf

But barks against the moon, and I condemn it.  
The mask you promised.

[*A horn sounded within.*]

*Ladis.* Let them enter.

*Enter a Courier.*

How !

*Eubu.* Here's one, I fear, unlook'd for.

*Ladis.* From the camp ?

*Cour.* The general, victorious in your  
fortune,

Kisses your hand in this, sir.

[*Delivers a letter.*]

*Ladis.* That great Power,  
Who at his pleasure does dispose of battles,  
Be ever praised for't ! Read, sweet, and  
partake it :

The Turk is vanquish'd, and with little loss  
Upon our part, in which our joy is doubled.

*Eubu.* But let it not exalt you ; bear it, sir,  
With moderation, and pay what you owe  
for't.

*Ladis.* I understand thee, Eubulus. I'll  
not now  
Enquire particulars.—[*Exit Courier.*].—Our  
delights deferr'd,

With reverence to the temples ; there we'll  
tender  
Our souls' devotions to his dread might,  
Who edged our swords, and taught us how  
to fight. [Exeunt.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—Bohemia. *A Hall in Mathias' House.*

*Enter Hilario and Corisca.*

*Hil.* You like my speech ?

*Coris.* Yes, if you give it action  
In the delivery.

*Hil.* If ! I pity you.

I have play'd the fool before ; this is not the  
first time,

Nor shall be, I hope, the last.

*Coris.* Nay, I think so too.

*Hil.* And if I put her not out of her  
dumps with laughter,  
I'll make her howl for anger.

*Coris.* Not too much

Of that, good fellow Hilario : our sad lady  
Hath drank too often of that bitter cup ;  
A pleasant one must restore her. With what  
patience

Would she endure to hear of the death of  
my lord ;

That, merely out of doubt he may miscarry,  
Afflicts herself thus ?

*Hil.* Umph ! 'tis a question

A widow only can resolve. There be some  
That in their husband's sicknesses have wept  
Their pottle of tears a day ; but being once  
certain

At midnight he was dead, have in the morning  
Dried up their handkerchiefs, and thought no  
more on't.

*Coris.* Tush, she is none of that race ; if  
her sorrow

Be not true and perfect, I, against my sex,  
Will take my oath woman ne'er wept in  
earnest.

She has made herself a prisoner to her  
chamber,

Dark as a dungeon, in which no beam  
Of comfort enters. She admits no visits ;  
Eats little, and her nightly music is  
Of sighs and groans, tuned to such harmony  
Of feeling grief, that I, against my nature,  
Am made one of the consort. This hour only  
She takes the air, a custom every day  
She solemnly observes, with greedy hopes,  
From some that pass by, to receive assurance  
Of the success and safety of her lord.

Now, if that your device will take——

*Hil.* Ne'er fear it :

I am provided cap-à-pié, and have  
My properties in readiness.

*Soph.* [within.] Bring my veil, there.

*Coris.* Begone, I hear her coming.

*Hil.* If I do not

Appear, and, what's more, appear perfect,  
hiss me. [Exit.]

*Enter Sophia.*

*Soph.* I was flatter'd once, I was a star,  
but now

Turn'd a prodigious meteor, and, like one,  
Hang in the air between my hopes and fears ;  
And every hour, the little stuff burnt out  
That yields a waning light to dying comfort,  
I do expect my fall, and certain ruin.

In wretched things more wretched is delay ;  
And Hope, a parasite to me, being un-  
mask'd,

Appears more horrid than Despair, and my  
Distraction worse than madness. Even my  
prayers,

When with most zeal sent upward, are pull'd  
down

With strong imaginary doubts and fears,  
And in their sudden precipice o'erwhelm me.  
Dreams and fantastic visions walk the round  
About my widow'd bed, and every slumber's  
Broken with loud alarms : can these be then  
But sad presages, girl ?

*Coris.* You make them so,  
And antedate a loss shall ne'er fall on you.  
Such pure affection, such mutual love,  
A bed, and undefiled on either part,  
A house without contention, in two bodies  
One will and soul, like to the rod of concord,  
Kissing each other, cannot be short-lived,  
Or end in barrenness.—If all these, dear  
madam,

(Sweet in your sadness,) should produce no  
fruit,

Or leave the age no models of yourselves,  
To witness to posterity what you were ;  
Succeeding times, frighted with the example,  
But hearing of your story, would instruct  
Their faires issue to meet sensually,  
Like other creatures, and forbear to raise  
True Love, or Hymen, altars.

*Soph.* O Corisca,

I know thy reasons are like to thy wishes ;  
And they are built upon a weak foundation,  
To raise me comfort. Ten long days are past,  
Ten long days, my Corisca, since my lord  
Embark'd himself upon a sea of danger,  
In his dear care of me. And if his life  
Had not been shipwreck'd on the rock of  
war,

His tenderness of me (knowing how much  
I languish for his absence) had provided

Some trusty friend, from whom I might receive

Assurance of his safety.

*Coris.* Ill news, madam,  
Are swallow-wing'd, but what's good walks  
on crutches :

With patience expect it, and, ere long,  
No doubt you shall hear from him.

[*A horn without.*]

*Soph.* Ha ! What's that ?

*Coris.* The fool has got a sowgelder's  
horn. [*Aside.*] A post,  
As I take it, madam.

*Soph.* It makes this way still ;  
Nearer and nearer.

*Coris.* From the camp, I hope.

*Enter one disguised as a Courier, with a  
horn ; followed by Hilario, in antic  
armour, with long white hair and beard.*

*Soph.* The messenger appears, and in  
strange armour.

Heaven ! if it be thy will—

*Hil.* It is no boot

To strive ; our horses tired, let's walk on  
foot :

And that the castle, which is very near us,  
To give us entertainment, may soon hear us,  
Blow lustily, my lad, and drawing nigh-a,  
Ask for a lady which is cleped Sophia.

*Coris.* He names you, madam.

*Hil.* For to her I bring,

Thus clad in arms, news of a pretty thing,  
By name Mathias. [*Exit Courier.*]

*Soph.* From my lord ? O sir,  
I am Sophia, that Mathias' wife.  
So may Mars favour you in all your battles,  
As you with speed unload me of the burthen  
I labour under, till I am confirm'd  
Both where and how you left him !

*Hil.* If thou art,

As I believe, the pigsney of his heart,  
Know he's in health, and what's more, full  
of glee ;

And so much I was will'd to say to thee.

*Soph.* Have you no letters from him ?

*Hil.* No more words.

In the camp we use no pens, but write with  
swords :

Yet, as I am enjoin'd, by word of mouth  
I will proclaim his deeds from north to south ;  
But tremble not, while I relate the wonder,  
Though my eyes like lightning shine, and my  
voice thunder.

*Soph.* This is some counterfeit braggart.

*Coris.* Hear him, madam.

*Hil.* The rear march'd first, which fol-  
low'd by the van,  
And wing'd with the battalia, no man

Durst stay to shift a shirt, or louse himself ;  
Yet, ere the armies join'd, that hopeful elf,  
Thy dear, thy dainty duckling, bold Mathias,  
Advanced, and stared like Hercules or  
Goliath.

A hundred thousand Turks, it is no vaunt,  
Assail'd him ; every one a Termagaunt :  
But what did he, then ! with his keen-edge  
spear

He cut and carbonaded them : here and  
there

Lay legs and arms ; and, as 'tis said trulee  
Of Bevis, some he quarter'd all in three.

*Soph.* This is ridiculous.

*Hil.* I must take breath ;

Then, like a nightingale, I'll sing his death.

*Soph.* His death !

*Hil.* I am out.

[*Aside to Coris.*]

*Coris.* Recover, dunder-head.

*Hil.* How he escaped, I should have  
sung, not died ;

For, though a knight, when I said so, I lied.  
Weary he was, and scarce could stand up-  
right,

And looking round for some courageous  
knight

To rescue him, as one perplex'd in woe,

He call'd to me, Help, help, Hilario !

My valiant servant, help !

*Coris.* He has spoil'd all.

*Soph.* Are you the man of arms, then ?

I'll make bold

To take off your martial beard, you had  
fool's hair

Enough without it. Slave ! how durst thou  
make

Thy sport of what concerns me more than  
life,

In such an antic fashion ? Am I grown  
Contemptible to those I feed ? you, minion,

Had a hand in it too, as it appears ;

Your petticoat serves for bases to this  
warrior.

*Coris.* We did it for your mirth.

*Hil.* For myself, I hope,

I have spoke like a soldier.

*Soph.* Hence, you rascal !

I never but with reverence name my lord,  
And can I hear it by thy tongue profaned,  
And not correct thy folly ? but you are  
Transform'd, and turn'd knight-errant ;  
take your course,

And wander where you please ; for here I vow  
By my lord's life, (an oath I will not break,)

Till his return, or certainty of his safety,

My doors are shut against thee. [*Exit.*]

*Coris.* You have made

A fine piece of work on't ! How do you like  
the quality ?



You had a foolish itch to be an actor,  
And may stroll where you please.

*Hil.* Will you buy my share?

*Coris.* No, certainly; I fear I have already  
Too much of mine own: I'll only, as a  
damsel,  
(As the books say,) thus far help to disarm  
you;

And so, dear Don Quixote, taking my leave,  
I leave you to your fortune. *[Exit.]*

*Hil.* Have I sweat

My brains out for this quaint and rare in-  
vention,

And am I thus rewarded? I could turn  
Tragedian, and roar now, but that I fear  
'Twould get me too great a stomach, having  
no meat

To pacify colon: What will become of me?  
I cannot beg in armour, and steal I dare not:  
My end must be to stand in a corn field,  
And fright away the crows, for bread and  
cheese;

Or find some hollow tree in the highway,  
And there, until my lord return, sell switches:  
No more Hilario, but Dolorio now,  
I'll weep my eyes out, and be blind of purpose  
To move compassion; and so I vanish.

*[Exit.]*

SCENE II.—*Alba Regalis. An ante-room  
in the Palace.*

*Enter Eubulus, Ubald, Ricardo, and  
others.*

*Eubu.* Are the gentlemen sent before, as  
it was order'd

By the king's direction, to entertain  
The general?

*Ric.* Long since; they by this have met  
him,

And given him the *bienvenu*.

*Eubu.* I hope I need not  
Instruct you in your parts.

*Ubal.* How! us, my lord!

Fear not; we know our distances and degrees  
To the very inch where we are to salute him.

*Ric.* The state were miserable, if the  
court had none

Of her own breed, familiar with all garbs  
Gracious in England, Italy, Spain, or France;  
With form and punctuality to receive  
Stranger ambassadors: for the general,  
He's a mere native, and it matters not  
Which way we do accost him.

*Ubal.* 'Tis great pity

That such as sit at the helm provide no  
better

For the training up of the gentry. In my  
judgment

An academy erected, with large pensions

To such as in a table could set down  
The congees, cringes, postures, methods,  
phrase,

Proper to every nation—

*Ric.* O, it were

An admirable piece of work!

*Ubal.* And yet rich fools

Throw away their charity on hospitals

For beggars and lame soldiers, and ne'er  
study

The due regard to compliment and courtship,  
Matters of more import; and are indeed  
The glories of a monarchy!

*Eubu.* These, no doubt,

Are state points, gallants, I confess; but, sure,  
Our court needs no aids this way, since it is  
A school of nothing else. There are some  
of you

Whom I forbear to name, whose coining  
heads

Are the mints of all new fashions, that have  
done

More hurt to the kingdom by superfluous  
bravery,

Which the foolish gentry imitate, than a war,  
Or a long famine; all the treasure, by

This foul excess, is got into the merchant,  
Embroiderer, silkman, jeweller, tailor's hand,  
And the third part of the land too, the  
nobility

Engrossing titles only.

*Ric.* My lord, you are bitter.

*[A trumpet.]*

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* The general is alighted, and now  
enter'd.

*Ric.* Were he ten generals, I am prepared,  
And know what I will do.

*Eubu.* Pray you what, Ricardo?

*Ric.* I'll fight at compliment with him.

*Ubal.* I'll charge home too.

*Eubu.* And that's a desperate service; if  
you come off well.

*Enter Ferdinand, Mathias, Baptista, and  
Captains.*

*Ferd.* Captain, command the officers to  
keep

The soldier, as he march'd, in rank and file,  
Till they hear further from me.

*[Exeunt Captains.]*

*Eubu.* Here's one speaks  
In another key; this is no canting language  
Taught in your academy.

*Ferd.* Nay, I will present you  
To the king myself.

*Math.* A grace beyond my merit.

*Ferd.* You undervalue what I cannot set  
Too high a price on.

*Eubu.* With a friend's true heart,  
I gratulate your return.

*Ferd.* Next to the favour  
Of the great king, I am happy in your  
friendship.

*Ubald.* By courtship, coarse on both sides!  
*Ferd.* Pray you, receive  
This stranger to your knowledge; on my  
credit,  
At all parts he deserves it.

*Eubu.* Your report  
Is a strong assurance to me.—Sir, most  
welcome.

*Math.* This said by you, the reverence of  
your age

Commands me to believe it.

*Ric.* This was pretty;  
But second me now.—I cannot stoop too  
low

To do your excellence that due observance  
Your fortune claims.

*Eubu.* He ne'er thinks on his virtue!  
*Ric.* For being, as you are, the soul of  
soldiers,

And bulwark of Bellona—

*Ubald.* The protection  
Both of the court and king—

*Ric.* And the sole minion  
Of mighty Mars—

*Ubald.* One that with justice may  
Increase the number of the worthies—

*Eubu.* Heyday!  
*Ric.* It being impossible in my arms to  
circle

Such giant worth—  
*Ubald.* At distance we presume

To kiss your honour'd gauntlet.

*Eubu.* What reply now  
Can he make to this foppery?

*Ferd.* You have said,  
Gallants, so much, and hitherto done so little,  
That, till I learn to speak, and you to do,  
I must take time to thank you.

*Eubu.* As I live,  
Answer'd as I could wish. How the fops  
gape now!

*Ric.* This was harsh and scurvy.  
*Ubald.* We will be revenged  
When he comes to court the ladies, and  
laugh at him.

*Eubu.* Nay, do your offices gentlemen,  
and conduct

The general to the presence.

*Ric.* Keep your order.

*Ubald.* Make way for the general.  
[*Exeunt all but Eubulus.*

*Eubu.* What wise man,

That, with judicious eyes, looks on a soldier,  
But must confess that fortune's swing is more  
O'er that profession, than all kinds else  
Of life pursued by man? They, in a state,  
Are but as surgeons to wounded men,  
E'en desperate in their hopes: While pain  
and anguish

Make them blaspheme, and call in vain for  
death,

Their wives and children kiss the surgeon's  
knees,

Promise him mountains, if his saving hand  
Restore the tortured wretch to former  
strength:

But when grim death, by *Æsculapius'* art,  
Is frighted from the house, and health appears

In sanguine colours on the sick man's face,  
All is forgot; and, asking his reward,

He's paid with curses, often receives wounds  
From him whose wounds he cured: so  
soldiers,

Thought of more worth and use, meet the  
same fate,

As it is too apparent. I have observ'd,  
When horrid Mars, the touch of whose rough  
hand

With palsies shakes a kingdom, hath put on  
His dreadful helmet, and with terror fills

The place where he, like an unwelcome guest,  
Resolves to revel, how the lords of her, like

The tradesman, merchant, and litigious  
pleader,

And such like scarabs bred in the dung of  
peace,

In hope of their protection, humbly offer  
Their daughters to their beds, heirs to their  
service,

And wash with tears their sweat, their dust,  
their scars:

But when those clouds of war, that menaced  
A bloody deluge to the affrighted state,

Are, by their breath, dispersed, and over-  
blown,

And famine, blood, and death, Bellona's  
pages,

Whipt from the quiet continent to Thrace;  
Soldiers, that, like the foolish hedge-sparrow,

To their own ruin, hatch this cuckoo, peace,  
Are straight thought burthensome; since

want of means,  
Growing from want of action, breeds con-  
tempt:

And that, the worst of ills, falls to their lot,  
Their service, with the danger, soon forgot.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* The queen, my lord, hath made  
choice of this room,  
To see the masque.

*Eubu.* I'll be a looker on :  
My dancing days are past.

*Loud music.* Enter *Ubaldo, Ricardo, Ladislaus, Ferdinand, Honoria, Mathias, Sylvia, Acanthe, Baptista, Captains, and others.* As they pass, a Song in praise of war.

*Ladis.* This courtesy  
To a stranger, my *Honoria*, keeps fair rank  
With all your rarities. After your travail,  
Look on our court delights ; but first, from  
your

Relation, with erected ears, I'll hear  
The music of your war, which must be sweet,  
Ending in victory.

*Ferd.* Not to trouble  
Your majesties with description of a battle  
Too full of horror for the place, and to  
Avoid particulars, which should I deliver,  
I must trench longer on your patience, than  
My manners will give way to ;—in a word, sir,  
It was well fought on both sides, and almost  
With equal fortune, it continuing doubtful  
Upon whose tents plumed *Victory* would take  
Her glorious stand. Impatient of delay,  
With the flower of our prime gentlemen, I  
charged

Their main battalia, and with their assistance  
Brake in ; but, when I was almost assured  
That they were routed, by a stratagem  
Of the subtle Turk, who opened his gross  
body,

And rallied up his troops on either side,  
I found myself so far engaged, for I  
Must not conceal my errors, that I knew not  
Which way with honour to come off.

*Eubu.* I like  
A general that tells his faults, and is not  
Ambitious to engross unto himself  
All honour, as some have, in which, with  
justice,  
They could not claim a share.

*Ferd.* Being thus hemm'd in,  
Their scimitars rag'd among us ; and, my  
horse

Kill'd under me, I every minute looked for  
An honourable end, and that was all  
My hope could fashion to me : circled thus  
With death and horror, as one sent from  
heaven,

This man of men, with some choice horse,  
that follow'd

His brave example, did pursue the track  
His sword cut for them, and, but that I see  
him

Already blush to hear what he, being present,  
I know would wish unspoken, I should say,  
sir,

By what he did, we boldly may believe  
All that is writ of *Hector*.

*Math.* General,  
Pray spare these strange hyperboles.

*Eubu.* Do not blush  
To hear a truth ; here are a pair of monsieurs,  
Had they been in your place, would have run  
away,

And ne'er changed countenance.  
*Ubald.* We have your good word still.

*Eubu.* And shall, while you deserve it.  
*Ladis.* Silence ; on.

*Ferd.* He, as I said, like dreadful lightning  
thrown  
From *Jupiter's* shield, dispersed the armed  
gire

With which I was environed ; horse and man  
Shrunk under his strong arm : more, with  
his looks

Frighted, the valiant fled, with which en-  
couraged,

*Mysoldiers*, (like young eaglets preying under  
The wings of their fierce dam,) as if from him  
They took both spirit and fire, bravely came  
on.

By him I was remounted, and inspired  
With treble courage ; and such as fled before  
Boldly made head again ; and, to confirm  
them,

It suddenly was apparent, that the fortune  
Of the day was ours ; each soldier and com-  
mander

Perform'd his part ; but this was the great  
wheel

By which the lesser moved : and all rewards  
And signs of honour, as the civic garland,  
The mural wreath, the enemy's prime horse,  
With the general's sword, and armour, (the  
old honours

With which the Romans crown'd their several  
leaders,)

To him alone are proper.

*Ladis.* And they shall  
Deservedly fall on him. Sit ; 'tis our plea-  
sure.

*Ferd.* Which I must serve, not argue.

*Hon.* You are a stranger,  
But, in your service for the king, a native.  
And, though a free queen, I am bound in duty  
To cherish virtue wheresoe'er I find it :  
This place is yours.

*Math.* It were presumption in me  
To sit so near you.

*Hon.* Not, having our warrant.

[*Music within.*  
*Ladis.* Let the masquers enter : by the  
preparation,

'Tis a French brawl, an apish imitation  
Of what you really perform in battle :

And Pallas, bound up in a little volume,  
Apollo, with his lute, attending on her,  
Serve for the induction.

*Enter Masquers, &c.: Pallas, accompanied  
by Apollo on the lute.*

*Though we contemplaie to express  
The glory of your happiness,  
That, by your powerful arm, have been  
So true a victor, that no sin  
Could ever taint you with a blame  
To lessen your deserved fame.*

*Or, though we contend to set  
Your worth in the full height, or get  
Celestial singers crown'd with bays,  
With flourishes to dress your praise :  
You know your conquest ; but your story  
Lives in your triumphant glory.*

[A Dance.

*Ladis.* Our thanks to all.  
To the banquet that's prepared to entertain  
them :

[*Exeunt Masquers, Apollo, and Pallas.*

What would my best Honoria?

*Hon.* May it please

My king, that I, who, by his suffrage, ever  
Have had power to command, may now  
entreat

An honour from him.

*Ladis.* Why should you desire  
What is your own? what'er it be, you are  
The mistress of it.

*Hon.* I am happy in

Your grant : my suit, sir, is, that your com-  
manders,

Especially this stranger, may, as I,  
In my discretion, shall think good, receive  
What's due to their deserts.

*Ladis.* What you determine  
Shall know no alteration.

*Eubu.* The soldier

Is like to have good usage, when he depends  
Upon her pleasure ! Are all the men so bad,  
'That, to give satisfaction, we must have  
A woman treasurer? Heaven help all !

*Hon.* With you, sir, [To Mathias.

I will begin, and, as in my esteem  
You are most eminent, expect to have  
What's fit for me to give, and you to take.  
The favour in the quick dispatch being  
double,

Go fetch my casket, and with speed.

[*Exit Acanthe.*

*Eubu.* The kingdom

Is very bare of money, when rewards  
Issue from the queen's jewel-house. Give  
him gold

And store, no question the gentleman wants it.

Good madam, what shall he do with a hoop  
ring,  
And a spark of diamond in it? though you  
take it,

*Re-enter Acanthe with a Casket.*

For the greater honour, from your majesty's  
finger,

'Twill not increase the value. He must  
purchase

Rich suits, the gay caparison of courtship,  
Revel and feast, which, the war ended, is  
A soldier's glory ; and 'tis fit that way  
Your bounty should provide for him.

*Hon.* You are rude,

And by your narrow thoughts proportion  
mine.

What I will do now shall be worth the envy  
Of Cleopatra. Open it ; see here

[*Honoria descends from the state.*

The lapidary's idol ! Gold is trash,  
And a poor salary fit for grooms ; wear these,  
As studded stars in your armour, and make  
the sun

Look dim with jealousy of a greater light  
Than his beams gild the day with : when it is  
Exposed to view, call it Honoria's gift,  
The queen Honoria's gift, that loves a soldier ;  
And, to give ornament and lustre to him,  
Parts freely with her own ! Yet, not to take  
From the magnificence of the king, I will  
Dispense his bounty too, but as a page  
To wait on mine ; for other tosses, take  
A hundred thousand crowns :—your hand,  
dear sir— [Takes off the king's signet.

And this shall be thy warrant.

*Eubu.* I perceive

I was cheated in this woman : now she is  
In the giving vein to soldiers, let her be proud,  
And the king dote, so she go on, I care not.

*Hon.* This done, our pleasure is, that all  
arrearages

Be paid unto the captains, and their troops ;  
With a large donative, to increase their zeal  
For the service of the kingdom.

*Eubu.* Better still :

Let men of arms be used thus, if they do not  
Charge desperately upon the cannon's mouth,  
Though the devil roar'd, and fight like  
dragons, hang me !

Now they may drink sack : but small beer,  
with a passport

To beg with as they travel, and no money,  
Turns their red blood to buttermilk.

*Hon.* Are you pleased, sir,

With what I have done ?

*Ladis.* Yes, and thus confirm it,

With this addition of mine own : You have,  
sir,

From our loved queen received some recompense

For your life hazarded in the late action ;  
And, that we may follow her great example  
In cherishing valour, without limit ask  
What you from us can wish.

*Math.* If it be true,

Dread sir, as 'tis affirm'd, that every soil,  
Where he is well, is to a valiant man  
His natural country, reason may assure me  
I should fix here, where blessings beyond  
hope,

From you, the spring, like rivers, flow unto  
me.

If wealth were my ambition, by the queen  
I am made rich already, to the amazement  
Of all that see, or shall hereafter read  
The story of her bounty ; if to spend  
The remnant of my life in deeds of arms,  
No region is more fertile of good knights,  
From whom my knowledge that way may be  
better'd,

Than this your warlike Hungary ; if favour,  
Or grace in court could take me, by your  
grant,

Far, far, beyond my merit, I may make  
In yours a free election ; but, alas ! sir,  
I am not mine own, but by my destiny  
(Which I cannot resist) forced to prefer  
My country's smoke, before the glorious fire  
With which your bounties warm me. All I  
ask, sir,

Though I cannot be ignorant it must relish  
Of foul ingratitude, is your gracious license  
For my departure.

*Ladis.* Whither ?

*Math.* To my own home, sir,  
My own poor home ; which will, at my re-  
turn,

Grow rich by your magnificence. I am here  
But a body without a soul ; and, till I find it  
In the embraces of my constant wife,  
And, to set off that constancy, in her beauty  
And matchless excellences, without a rival,  
I am but half myself.

*Hon.* And is she then

So chaste and fair as you infer ?

*Math.* O, madam,

Though it must argue weakness in a rich man,  
To shew his gold before an armed thief,  
And I, in praising of my wife, but feed  
The fire of lust in others to attempt her ;  
Such is my full-sail'd confidence in her virtue,  
Though in my absence she were now besieged  
By a strong army of lascivious wooers,  
And every one more expert in his art,  
Than those that tempted chaste Penelope ;  
Though they raised batteries by prodigal  
gifts,

By amorous letters, vows made for her ser-  
vice,

With all the engines wanton appetite  
Could mount to shake the fortress of her  
honour,

Here, here is my assurance she holds out,  
[*Kisses the picture.*]

And is impregnable.

*Hon.* What's that ?

*Math.* Her fair figure.

*Ladis.* As I live, an excellent face !

*Hon.* You have seen a better.

*Ladis.* I ever except yours :—nay, frown  
not, sweetest,

The Cyprian queen, compared to you, in my  
Opinion, is a negro. As you order'd,  
I'll see the soldiers paid ; and, in my absence,  
Pray you use your powerful arguments, to  
stay

This gentleman in our service.

*Hon.* I will do

My parts.

*Ladis.* On to the camp.

[*Exeunt Ladislaus, Ferdinand, Eubu-  
lus, Baptista, and Officers.*]

*Hon.* I am full of thoughts,

And something there is here I must give  
form to,

Though yet an embryo : [*Aside.*] You,  
signiors,

Have no business with the soldier, as I  
take it,

You are for other warfare ; quit the place,  
But be within call.

*Ric.* Employment, on my life, boy !

*Ubaldo.* If it lie in our road, we are made  
for ever.

[*Exeunt Ubaldo and Ricardo.*]

*Hon.* You may perceive the king is no  
way tainted

With the disease of jealousy, since he leaves  
me

Thus private with you.

*Math.* It were in bim, madam,

A sin unpardonable to distrust such pureness,  
Though I were an Adonis.

*Hon.* I presume

He neither does nor dares : and yet the story  
Delivered of you by the general,  
With your heroic courage, which sinks deeply  
Into a knowing woman's heart, besides  
Your promising presence, might beget some  
scruple

In a meaner man ; but more of this hereafter.  
I'll take another theme now, and conjure you  
By the honours you have won, and by the  
love

Sacred to your dear wife, to answer truly  
To what I shall demand.

*Math.* You need not use Charms to this purpose, madam.

*Hon.* Tell me, then, Being yourself assured 'tis not in man To sully with one spot th' immaculate whiteness

Of your wife's honour, if you have not, since The Gordian of your love was tied by marriage, Play'd false with her?

*Math.* By the hopes of mercy, never.

*Hon.* It may be, not frequenting the converse

Of handsome ladies, you were never tempted, And so your faith's untried yet.

*Math.* Surely, madam, I am no woman-hater; I have been Received to the society of the best And fairest of our climate, and have met with No common entertainment, yet ne'er felt The least heat that way.

*Hon.* Strange! and do you think still, The earth can show no beauty that can drench In Lethe all remembrance of the favour You now bear to your own?

*Math.* Nature must find out Some other mould to fashion a new creature Fairer than her Pandora, ere I prove Guilty, or in my wishes or my thoughts, To my Sophia.

*Hon.* Sir, consider better; Not one in our whole sex?

*Math.* I am constant to My resolution.

*Hon.* But dare you stand The opposition, and bind yourself By oath for the performance?

*Math.* My faith else Had but a weak foundation.

*Hon.* I take hold Upon your promise, and enjoin your stay For one month here.

*Math.* I am caught! [*Aside.*]

*Hon.* And if I do not Produce a lady, in that time, that shall Make you confess your error, I submit Myself to any penalty you shall please To impose upon me: in the mean space, write

To your chaste wife, acquaint her with your fortune:

The jewels that were mine you may send to her,

For better confirmation. I'll provide you Of trusty messengers: but how far distant is she?

*Math.* A day's hard riding.

*Hon.* There is no retiring; I'll bind you to your word.

*Math.* Well, since there is No way to shun it, I will stand the hazard, And instantly make ready my dispatch: Till then, I'll leave your majesty. [*Exit.*]

*Hon.* How I burst With envy, that there lives, besides myself, One fair and loyal woman! 'twas the end Of my ambition to be recorded The only wonder of the age, and shall I Give way to a competitor? Nay more, To add to my affliction, the assurances That I placed in my beauty have deceived me: I thought one amorous glance of mine could bring

All hearts to my subjection; but this stranger, Unmoved as rocks, contemns me. But I cannot

Sit down so with mine honour: I will gain A double victory, by working him To my desire, and taint her in her honour, Or lose myself: I have read that sometime poison

Is useful.—To supplant her, I'll employ, With any cost, Ubaldo and Ricardo, Two noted courtiers, of approved cunning In all the windings of lust's labyrinth; And in corrupting him, I will outgo Nero's Poppæa: if he shut his ears Against my Syren notes, I'll boldly swear, Ulysses lives again; or that I have found A frozen cynic, cold in spite of all Allurements; one whom beauty cannot move, Nor softest blandishments entice to love. [*Exit.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—Bohemia. *A Space near the Entrance of Mathias' House.*

*Enter Hilario, with a pitcher of water, and a wallet.*

*Hil.* Thin, thin provision! I am dieted Like one set to watch hawks; and, to keep me waking, My croaking guts make a perpetual larum. Here I stand centinel; and, though I fright Beggars from my lady's gate, in hope to have A greater share, I find my commons mend not.

I look'd this morning in my glass, the river, And there appear'd a fish call'd a poor John, Cut with a lenten face, in my own likeness; And it seem'd to speak, and say, *Good morrow, cousin!*

No man comes this way but has a fling at me: A surgeon passing by, ask'd at what rate I would sell myself; I answered, For what use?

To make, said he, a living anatomy,  
And set thee up in our hall, for thou art  
transparent

Without dissection; and, indeed, he had  
reason:

For I am scour'd with this poor purge to  
nothing.

They say that hunger dwells in the camp;  
but till

My lord returns, or certain tidings of him,  
He will not part with me:—but sorrow's dry,  
And I must drink howsoever.

*Enter Ubaldo, Ricardo, and a Guide.*

*Guide.* That's her castle,  
Upon my certain knowledge.

*Ubaldo.* Our horses held out

To my desire. I am afire to be at it.

*Ric.* Take the jades for thy reward;  
before I part hence,  
I hope to be better carried. Give me the  
cabinet:

So; leave us now.

*Guide.* Good fortune to you, gallants!

[*Exit.*]

*Ubaldo.* Being joint agents, in a design of  
trust too,

For the service of the queen, and our own  
pleasure,

Let us proceed with judgment.

*Ric.* If I take not  
This fort at the first assault, make me an  
eunuch;

So I may have precedence,

*Ubaldo.* On no terms.  
We are both to play one prize; he that  
works best

In the searching of this mine, shall carry it,  
Without contention.

*Ric.* Make you your approaches  
As I directed.

*Ubaldo.* I need no instruction;  
I work not on your auvil. I'll give fire  
With mine own iinstock; if the powder be  
dank,

The devil rend the touch-hole! Who have  
we here?

What skeleton's this?

*Ric.* A ghost! or the image of famine!  
Where dost thou dwell?

*Hil.* Dwell, sir! my dwelling is  
In the highway: that goodly house was once  
My habitation, but I am banish'd,  
And cannot be call'd home till news arrive  
Of the good knight Mathias.

*Ric.* If that will  
Restore thee, thou art safe.

*Ubaldo.* We come from him,  
With presents to his lady.

*Hil.* But are you sure  
He is in health?

*Ric.* Never so well: conduct us  
To the lady.

*Hil.* Though a poor snake, I will leap  
Out of my skin for joy. Break, pitcher,  
break!

And wallet, late my cupboard, I bequeath thee  
To the next beggar; thou, red herring, swim  
To the Red Sea again: methinks I am already  
Knuckle deep in the fleshpots; and, though  
waking, dream  
Of wine and plenty!

*Ric.* What's the mystery  
Of this strange passion?

*Hil.* My belly, gentlemen,  
Will not give me leave to tell you; when I  
have brought you

To my lady's presence, I am disenchanted:  
There you shall know all. Follow; if I  
outstrip you,

Know I run for my belly.

*Ubaldo.* A mad fellow. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in Mathias' House.*

*Enter Sophia and Corisca.*

*Soph.* Do not again delude me.

*Coris.* If I do,

Send me a grazing with my fellow, Hilario.  
I stood as you commanded, in the turret,  
Observing all that pass'd by; and even now,  
I did discern a pair of cavaliers,  
For such their outside spoke them, with  
their guide,

Dismounting from their horses; they said  
something

To our hungry centinel, that made him caper  
And frisk in the air for joy: and, to confirm  
this,

See, madam, they're in view.

*Enter Hilario, Ubaldo, and Ricardo.*

*Hil.* News from my lord!  
Tidings of joy! these are no counterfeits,  
But knights indeed. Dear madam, sign my  
pardon,

That I may feed again, and pick up my  
crumbs;

I have had a long fast of it.

*Soph.* Eat, I forgive thee.

*Hil.* O comfortable words! *Eat, I forgive thee!*

And if in this I do not soon obey you,  
And ram in to the purpose, billet me again  
In the highway. Butler and cook, be ready.  
For I enter like a tyrant. [*Exit.*]

*Ubaldo.* Since mine eyes  
Were never happy in so sweet an object,

Without inquiry, I presume you are  
The lady of the house, and so salute you.

*Ric.* This letter, with these jewels, from  
your lord,

Warrant my boldness, madam.

[*Delivers a letter and a casket.*]

*Ubald.* In being a servant  
To such rare beauty, you must needs deserve  
This courtesy from a stranger.

[*Salutes Corisca.*]

*Ric.* You are still  
Beforehand with me. Pretty one, I descend  
To take the height of your lip; and, if I miss  
In the altitude, hereafter, if you please,  
I will make use of my Jacob's staff.

[*Salutes Corisca.*]

*Coris.* These gentlemen  
Have certainly had good breeding, as it ap-  
pears

By their neat kissing, they hit me so pat on  
the lips,

At the first sight.

[*In the interim, Sophia reads the letter,  
and opens the casket.*]

*Soph.* Heaven, in thy mercy, make me  
Thy thankful handmaid for this boundless  
blessing,

In thy goodness shower'd upon me!

*Ubald.* I do not like  
This simple devotion in her; it is seldom  
Practised among my mistresses.

*Ric.* Or mine.  
Would they kneel to I know not who, for  
the possession

Of such inestimable wealth, before  
They thank'd the bringers of it? the poor  
lady

Does want instruction, but I'll be her tutor,  
And read her another lesson.

*Soph.* If I have  
Shewn want of manners, gentlemen, in my  
slowness

To pay the thanks I owe you for your travail,  
To do my lord and me, howe'er unworthy  
Of such a benefit, this noble favour,  
Impute it, in your clemency, to the excess  
Of joy that overwhelm'd me.

*Ric.* She speaks well.

*Ubald.* Polite and courtly.

*Soph.* And howe'er it may  
Increase the offence, to trouble you with more  
Demands touching my lord, before I have  
Invited you to taste such as the coarseness  
Of my poor house can offer; pray you connive  
On my weak tenderness, though I entreat  
To learn from you something he hath, it  
may be,

In his letter left unmention'd.

*Ric.* I can only

Give you assurance that he is in health,  
Graced by the king and queen.

*Ubald.* And in the court  
With admiration look'd on.

*Ric.* You must therefore  
Put off these widow's garments, and appear  
Like to yourself.

*Ubald.* And entertain all pleasures  
Your fortune marks out for you.

*Ric.* There are other  
Particular privacies, which on occasion  
I will deliver to you.

*Soph.* You oblige me  
To your service ever.

*Ric.* Good! *your service*; mark that.

*Soph.* In the mean time, by your good  
acceptance make

My rustic entertainment relish of  
The curiousness of the court.

*Ubald.* Your looks, sweet madam,  
Cannot but make each dish a feast.

*Soph.* It shall be

Such, in the freedom of my will to please you.  
I'll shew you the way: this is too great an  
honour,

From such brave guests, to me so mean an  
hostess. [*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*Alba Regalis. An Outer-  
room in the Palace.*

*Enter Acanthe, and four or five Servants  
with visors.*

*Acan.* You know your charge; give it  
action, and expect  
Rewards beyond your hopes.

1 *Serv.* If we but eye them,

They are ours, I warrant you.

2 *Serv.* May we not ask why

We are put upon this?

*Acan.* Let that stop your mouth;

[*Gives them money.*]  
And learn more manners, groom. 'Tis upon  
the hour

In which they use to walk here: when you  
have them

In your power, with violence carry them to  
the place

Where I appointed; there I will expect you:  
Be bold and careful. [*Exit.*]

*Enter Mathias and Baptista.*

1 *Serv.* These are they.

2 *Serv.* Are you sure?

1 *Serv.* Am I sure I am myself?

2 *Serv.* Seize on him strongly; if he have  
but means

To draw his sword, 'tis ten to one we smart  
for't:

Take all advantages.



*Math.* I cannot guess  
What her intents are ; but her carriage was  
As I but now related.

*Bapt.* Your assurance  
In the constancy of your lady is the armour  
That must defend you. Where's the picture ?

*Math.* Here,  
And no way alter'd.

*Bapt.* If she be not perfect,  
There is no truth in art.

*Math.* By this, I hope,  
She hath received my letters.

*Bapt.* Without question :  
These courtiers are rank riders, when they are  
To visit a handsome lady.

*Math.* Lend me your ear.  
One piece of her entertainment will require  
Your dearest privacy.

*1 Serv.* Now they stand fair ;  
Upon them. [*They rush forward.*]

*Math.* Villains !  
*1 Serv.* Stop their mouths. We come not  
To try your valours : kill him, if he offer  
To open his mouth. We have you : 'tis in  
vain

To make resistance. Mount them, and away.  
[*Exeunt with Mathias and Baptista.*]

SCENE IV.—*A Gallery in the same.*

*Enter Servants with lights, Ladislaus, Ferdinand, and Eubulus.*

*Ladis.* 'Tis late. Go to your rest ; but  
do not envy  
The happiness I draw near to.

*Eubu.* If you enjoy it  
The moderate way, the sport yields, I confess,  
A pretty titillation ; but too much of't  
Will bring you on your knees. In my  
younger days

I was myself a gamester ; and I found  
By sad experience, there is no such soaker  
As a young spongy wife ; she keeps a thousand  
Horse-leeches in her box, and the thieves  
will suck out

Both blood and marrow ! I feel a kind of  
cramp

In my joints, when I think on't : but it may  
be queens,

And such a queen as yours is has the heart—  
*Ferd.* You take leave  
To talk, my lord.

*Ladis.* He may, since he can do nothing.  
*Eubu.* If you spend this way too much of  
your royal stock,

Ere long we may be puefellows.

*Ladis.* The door shut !  
Knock gently ; harder. So, here comes her  
woman.

Take off my gown.

*Enter Acanthe.*

*Acan.* My lord, the queen by me  
This night desires your pardon.

*Ladis.* How, Acanthe !  
I come by her appointment ; 'twas her grant ;  
The motion was her own.

*Acan.* It may be, sir ;  
But by her doctors sbe is since advised,  
For her health's sake, to forbear,

*Eubu.* I do not like  
This physical lechery, the old downright  
way

Is worth a thousand on't.

*Ladis.* Prithee, Acanthe,  
Mediate for me. [*Offering her a ring.*]

*Eubu.* O the fiends of hell !  
Would any man bribe his servant, to make  
way

To his own wife ? if this be the court state,  
Shame fall on such as use it !

*Acan.* By this jewel,  
This night I dare not move her, but to-morrow

I will watch all occasions.

*Ladis.* Take this,  
To be mindful of me.

*Eubu.* 'Slight, I thought a king  
Might have ta'en up any woman at the  
king's price ;

And must he buy his own, at a dearer rate  
Than a stranger in a brothel ?

*Ladis.* What is that  
You mutter, sir ?

*Eubu.* No treason to your honour :  
I'll speak it out, though it anger you ; if you  
pay for

Your lawful pleasure in some kind, great sir,  
What do you make the queen ? cannot you  
clicket

Without a fee, or when she has a suit  
For you to grant ? [*Ladis. draws his sword.*]

*Ferd.* O hold, sir !

*Ladis.* Off with his head !

*Eubu.* Do, when you please ; you but blow  
out a taper

That would light your understanding, and,  
in care of't,

Is burnt down to the socket. Be as you are, sir,  
An absolute monarch : it did shew more king-  
like

In those libidinous Cæsars, that compell'd  
Matrons and virgins of all ranks to bow  
Unto their ravenous lusts ; and did admit  
Of more excuse than I can urge for you,  
That slave yourself to the imperious humour  
Of a proud beauty.

*Ladis.* Out of my sight !

*Eubu.* I will, sir,

Give way to your furious passion ; but when  
reason

Hath got the better of it, I much hope  
The counsel that offends now will deserve  
Your royal thanks. Tranquillity of mind  
Stay with you, sir !—I do begin to doubt  
There's something more in the queen's  
strangeness than  
Is yet disclosed ; and I will find it out,  
Or lose myself in the search.

[*Aside, and exit.*

*Ferd.* Sure he is honest,  
And from your infancy hath truly served  
you :

Let that plead for him ; and impute this  
harshness

To the frowardness of his age.

*Ladis.* I am much troubled,  
And do begin to stagger. Ferdinand, good  
night !

To-morrow visit us. Back to our own  
lodgings. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Acanthe and the visored Servants, with  
Mathias and Baptista blindfolded.*

*Acan.* You have done bravely. Lock this  
in that room,

There let him ruminate ; I'll anon unhood  
him : [*They carry off Baptista.*

The other must stay here. As soon as I  
Have quit the place, give him the liberty  
And use of his eyes ; that done, disperse  
yourselves

As privately as you can : but, on your lives,  
No word of what hath pass'd. [*Exit.*

*1 Serv.* If I do, sell  
My tongue to a tripe-wife. Come, unbind  
his arms :

You are now at your own disposure ; and  
however

We used you roughly, I hope you will find  
here

Such entertainment as will give you cause  
To thank us for the service : and so I leave  
you. [*Exeunt Servants.*

*Math.* If I am in a prison, 'tis a neat one.  
What *(Edipus)* can resolve this riddle ? Ha !  
I never gave just cause to any man

Basely to plot against my life :—But what is  
Become of my true friend ? for him I suffer  
More than myself.

*Acan.* [*within.*] Remove that idle fear ;  
He's safe as you are.

*Math.* Whosoe'er thou art,  
For him I thank thee. I cannot imagine  
Where I should be : though I have read the  
tales

Of errant-knighthood, stuff'd with the rela-  
tions

Of magical enchantments ; yet I am not  
So sottishly credulous to believe the devil  
Hath that way power. [*Music above.*] Ha !  
music ?

*The blushing rose, and purple flower,  
' Let grow too long, are soonest blasted ;  
Dainty fruits, though sweet, will sour,  
And rot in ripeness, left untasted.  
Yet here is one more sweet than these :  
The more you taste the more she'll please.*

*Beauty that's enclosed with ice,  
Is a shadow chaste as rare ;  
Then how much those sweets entice,  
That have issue full as fair !  
Earth cannot yield, from all her powers,  
One equal for dame Venus' bowers.*

A song too ! certainly, be it he or she  
That owes this voice, it hath not been ac-  
quainted

With much affliction. Whosoe'er you are  
That do inhabit here, if you have bodies,  
And are not mere aerial forms, appear,

*Enter Honoria masked.*

And make me know your end with me.  
Most strange !

What have I conjured up ? sure, if this be  
A spirit, it is no damn'd one. What a  
shapc's here !

Then, with what majesty it moves ! If Juno  
Were now to keep her state among the gods,  
And Hercules to be made again her guest,  
She could not put on a more glorious habit,  
Though her handmaid, Iris, lent her various  
colours,

Or old Oceanus ravish'd from the deep  
All jewels shipwreck'd in it. As you have  
Thus far made known yourself, if that your  
face

Have not too much divinity about it  
For mortal eyes to gaze on, perfect what  
You have begun, with wonder and amaze-  
ment

To my astonish'd senses.

[*Honoria unmaskes.*

How ! the queen !

[*Kneels.*

*Hon.* Rise, sir, and hear my reasons, in  
defence

Of the rape (for so you may conceive) which I,  
By my instruments, made upon you. You,  
perhaps,

May think what you have suffer'd for my  
lust

Is a common practice with me ; but I call  
Those ever-shining lamps, and their great  
Maker,

As witnesses of my innocence : I ne'er  
look'd on

A man but your best self, on whom I ever  
(Except the king) vouchsafed an eye of  
favour.

*Math.* The king, indeed, and only such a  
king,

Deserves your rarities, madam ; and, but he,  
'Twere giant-like ambition in any,  
In his wishes only, to presume to taste  
The nectar of your kisses ; or to feed  
His appetite with that ambrosia, due  
And proper to a prince ; and, what binds  
more,

A lawful husband. For myself, great queen,  
I am a thing obscure, disfigure'd of  
All merit, that can raise me higher than,  
In my most humble thankfulness for your  
bounty,

To hazard my life for you ; and, that way,  
I am most ambitious.

*Hon.* I desire no more

Than what you promise. If you dare expose  
Your life, as you profess, to do me service,  
How can it be better employ'd than in  
Preserving mine ? which only you can do,  
'And must do, with the danger of your own,  
A desperate danger too ! If private men  
Can brook no rivals in what they affect,  
But to the death pursue such as invade  
What law makes their inheritance ; the king,  
To whom you know I am dearer than his  
crown,

His health, his eyes, his after hopes, with all  
His present blessings, must fall on that man,  
Like dreadful lightning, that is won by  
prayers,

Threats, or rewards, to stain his bed, or make  
His hoped-for issue doubtful !

*Math.* If you aim

At what I more than fear you do, the reasons  
Which you deliver, should, in judgment,  
rather

Deter me, than invite a grant, with my  
Assured ruin.

*Hon.* True ; if that you were

Of a cold temper, one whom doubt, or fear,  
In the most horrid forms they could put on,  
Might teach to be ingrateful. Your denial  
To me, that have deserved so much, is more,  
If it can have addition.

*Math.* I know not

What your commands are.

*Hon.* Have you fought so well

Among arm'd men, yet cannot guess what  
lists

You are to enter, when you are in private  
With a willing lady : one, that, to enjoy  
Your company this night, denied the king

Access to what's his own ? If you will press  
me

To speak in plainer language—

*Math.* Pray you, forbear ;

I would I did not understand too much !  
Already, by your words, I am instructed  
To credit that, which, not confirm'd by you,  
Had bred suspicion in me of untruth,  
Though an angel had affirm'd it. But suppose  
That, cloy'd with happiness, which is ever  
built

On virtuous chastity, in the wantonness  
Of appetite, you desire to make trial  
Of the false delights proposed by vicious  
lust ;

Among ten thousand, every way more able  
And apter to be wrought on, such as owe you  
Obedience, being your subjects, why should  
you

Make choice of me, a stranger ?

*Hon.* Though yet reason

Was ne'er admitted in the court of love,  
I'll yield you one unanswerable. As I urged,  
In our last private conference, you have  
A pretty promising presence ; but there are  
Many, in limbs and feature, who may take,  
'That way, the right-hand file of you : besides,  
Your May of youth is past, and the blood  
spent

By wounds, though bravely taken, renders  
you

Disabled for love's service : and that valour  
Sct off with better fortune, which, it may be,  
Swells you above your bounds, is not the hook  
That hath caught me, good sir. I need no  
champion,

With his sword, to guard my honour or my  
beauty ;

In both I can defend myself, and live  
My own protection.

*Math.* If these advocates,

The best that can plead for me, have no  
power,

What can you find in me else, that may  
tempt you,

With irrecoverable loss unto yourself,  
To be a gainer from me ?

*Hon.* You have, sir,

A jewel of such matchless worth and lustre,  
As does disdain comparison, and darkens  
All that is rare in other men ; and that,  
I must or win or lessen.

*Math.* You hear more

Amazement on me : What am I possess'd of  
That you can covet ? make me understand it,  
If it have a name.

*Hon.* Yes, an imagined one ;

But is, in substance, nothing ; being a gar-  
ment

Worn out of fashion, and long since given o'er  
By the court and country : 'tis your loyalty  
And constancy to your wife ; 'tis that I dote  
on,

And does deserve my envy ; and that jewel,  
Or by fair play or foul, I must win from you.

*Math.* These are mere contraries. If you  
love me, madam,

For my constancy, why seek you to destroy  
it ?

In my keeping it preserve me worth your  
favour.

Or, if it be a jewel of that value,  
As you with labour'd rhetoric would per-  
suade me,

What can you stake against it ?

*Hon.* A queen's fame,  
And equal honour.

*Math.* So, whoever wins,  
Both shall be losers.

*Hon.* That is that I aim at :

Yet on the die I lay my youth, my beauty,  
This moist palm, this soft lip, and those  
delights

Darkness should only judge of. [*Kisses  
him.*] Do you find them

Infectious in the trial, that you start,  
As frightened with their touch ?

*Math.* Is it in man

To resist such strong temptations ?

*Hon.* He begins

To waver. [*Aside.*]

*Math.* Madam, as you are gracious,  
Grant this short night's deliberation to me ;  
And, with the rising sun, from me you shall  
Receive full satisfaction.

*Hon.* Though extremes

Hate all delay, I will deny you nothing.  
This key will bring you to your friend ; you  
are safe both ;

And all things useful that could be prepared  
For one I love and honour, wait upon you.  
Take counsel of your pillow, such a fortune  
As with affection's swiftest wings flies to you,  
Will not be often tender'd. [*Exit.*]

*Math.* How my blood

Rebels ! I now could call her back—and yet  
There's something stays me : if the king  
had tender'd

Such favours to my wife, 'tis to be doubted  
They had not been refused : but, being a  
man,

I should not yield first, or prove an example,  
For her defence, of frailty. By this, sans  
question,

She's tempted too ; and here I may examine.

[*Looks on the picture.*]

How she holds out. She's still the same,  
the same

Pure crystal rock of chastity. Perish all  
Allurements that may alter me ! The snow  
Of her sweet coldness hath extinguish'd quite  
The fire that but even now began to flame :  
And I by her confirm'd,—rewards nor titles,  
Nor certain death from the refused queen,  
Shall shake my faith ; since I resolve to be  
Loyal to her, as she is true to me. [*Exit.*]

SCENE VI.—Bohemia. *A Gallery in  
Mathias' House.*

*Enter Ubaldo and Ricardo.*

*Ubaldo.* What we spake on the voley be-  
gins to work ;

We have laid a good foundation.

*Ric.* Build it up,

Or else 'tis nothing : you have by lot the  
honour

Of the first assault ; but, as it is condition'd,  
Observe the time proportion'd : I'll not part  
with

My share in the achievement ; when I  
whistle,

Or hem, fall off.

*Enter Sophia.*

*Ubaldo.* She comes. Stand by, I'll watch  
My opportunity. [*They walk aside.*]

*Soph.* I find myself

Strangely distracted with the various stories ;  
Now well, now ill, then doubtfully, by my  
guests

Deliver'd of my lord : and, like poor beggars  
That in their dreams find treasure, by re-  
flection

Of a wounded fancy, make it questionable  
Whether they sleep or not ; yet, tickled with  
Such a fantastic hope of happiness,  
Wish they may never wake. In some such  
measure,

Incredulous of what I see and touch,  
As 'twere a fading apparition, I  
Am still perplex'd, and troubled ; and when  
most

Confirm'd 'tis true, a curious jealousy  
To be assured, by what means, and from  
whom,

Such a mass of wealth was first deserv'd,  
then gotten,

Cunningly steals into me. I have practis'd,  
For my certain resolution, with these courtiers,  
Promising private conference to either,  
And, at this hour :—if in search of the truth,  
I hear, or say, more than becomes my virtue,  
Forgive me, my Mathias.

*Ubaldo.* Now I make in.—

[*Comes forward.*]

Madam, as you commanded, I attend  
Your pleasure.

*Soph.* I must thank you for the favour.

*Ubald.* I am no ghostly father; yet, if you have

Some scruples touching your lord, you would be resolved of, I am prepared.

*Soph.* But will you take your oath, To answer truly?

*Ubald.* On the hem of your smock, if you please :

A vow I dare not break, it being a book I would gladly swear on.

*Soph.* To spare, sir, that trouble, I'll take your word, which, in a gentleman, Should be of equal value. Is my lord, then, In such grace with the queen?

*Ubald.* You should best know, By what you have found from him, whether he can

Deserve a grace or no.

*Soph.* What grace do you mean?

*Ubald.* That special grace, if you will have it, he

Labour'd so hard for between a pair of sheets,

Upon your wedding night, when your ladyship

Lost—you know what.

*Soph.* Fie! be more modest, Or I must leave you.

*Ubald.* I would tell a truth As cleanly as I could, and yet the subject Makes me run out a little.

*Soph.* You would put, now, A foolish jealousy in my head, my lord Hath gotten a new mistress.

*Ubald.* One! a hundred; But under seal I speak it: I presume Upon your silence, it being for your profit. They talk of Hercules' fifty in a night, 'Twas well; but yet to yours he was a piddler:

Such a soldier and a courtier never came To Alba Regalis; the ladies run mad for him,

And there is such contention among them, Who shall engross him wholly, that the like Was never heard of.

*Soph.* Are they handsome women?

*Ubald.* Fie! no; coarse mammetts: and what's worse, they are old too, Some fifty, some threescore, and they pay dear for't,

Believing that he carries a powder in his breeches

Will make them young again; and these suck shrewdly.

*Ric.* [whistles.] Sir, I must fetch you off.

[Aside.]

*Ubald.* I could tell you wonders

Of the cures he has done, but a business of import

Calls me away; but, that dispatch'd, I will Be with you presently. [Walks aside.]

*Soph.* There is something more, In this, than bare suspicion.

*Ric.* [comes forward.] Save you, lady; Now you look like yourself! I have not look'd on

A lady more complete, yet have seen a madam

Wear a garment of this fashion, of the same stuff too,

One just of your dimensions:—Sat the wind there, boy!

*Soph.* What lady, sir?

*Ric.* Nay, nothing; and methinks I should know this ruby: very good! 'tis the same.

This chain of orient pearl, and this diamond too,

Have been worn before; but much good may they do you!

Strength to the gentleman's back! he toil'd hard for them,

Before he got them.

*Soph.* Why, how were they gotten?

*Ric.* Not in the field with his sword, upon my life;

He may thank his close stiletto.—[Ubaldo hems.]—Plague upon it!

Run the minutes so fast? [Aside.]—Pray you, excuse my manners;

I left a letter in my chamber window, Which I would not have seen on any terms; fie on it,

Forgetful as I am! but I'll straight attend you. [Walks aside.]

*Soph.* This is strange. His letters said these jewels were

Presented him by the queen, as a reward For his good service, and the trunks of clothes,

That followed them this last night, with haste made up

By his direction. [Ubald. comes forward.] I was telling you Of wonders, madam.

*Soph.* If you are so skilful, Without premeditation answer me; Know you this gown, and these rich jewels?

*Ubald.* Heaven, How things will come out! But that I should offend you,

And wrong my more than noble friend, your husband,

(For we are sworn brothers,) in the discovery Of his nearest secrets, I could—

*Soph.* By the hope of favour  
That you have from me, out with it.

*Ubaldo.* 'Tis a potent spell  
I cannot resist: Why, I will tell you, madam,  
And to how many several women you are  
Beholding for your bravery. This was  
The wedding gown of Paulina, a rich  
strumpet,

Worn but a day, when she married old Gon-  
zaga,

And left off trading.

*Soph.* O my heart!

*Ubaldo.* This chain  
Of pearl, was a great widow's, that invited  
Your lord to a masque, and the weather  
proving foul,  
He lodged in her house all night, and merry  
they were;

But how he came by it, I know not.

*Soph.* Perjured man!

*Ubaldo.* This ring was Julietta's, a fine piece,  
But very good at the sport: this diamond  
Was madam Acanthe's, given him for a song  
Prick'd in a private amour, as she said,  
When the queen ask'd for't; and she heard  
him sing too,

And danced to his hornpipe, or there are  
liars abroad.

There are other toys about you, the same  
way purchased;

But, parallel'd with these, not worth the re-  
lation.

You are happy in a husband, never man  
Made better use of his strength: would you  
have him waste

His body away for nothing? if he holds out,  
There's not an embroider'd petticoat in the  
court,

But shall be at your service.

*Soph.* I commend him,  
It is a thriving trade; but pray you leave me  
A little to myself.

*Ubaldo.* You may command  
Your servant, madam.—[*Walks aside.*]  
—She's stung unto the quick, lad.

*Ric.* I did my part: if this potion work  
not, hang me!

Let her sleep as well as she can to-night, to-  
morrow

We'll mount new batteries.

*Ubaldo.* And till then leave her.

[*Exeunt Ubaldo and Ricardo.*]

*Soph.* You Powers, that take into your  
care the guard

Of innocence, aid me! for I am a creature  
So forfeited to despair, hope cannot fancy  
A ransom to redeem me. I begin

To waver in my faith, and make it doubtful,  
Whether the saints, that were canonized for

Their holiness of life, sinn'd not in secret;  
Since my Mathias is fallen from his virtue,  
In such an open fashion. Could it be, else,  
That such a husband, so devoted to me,  
So vow'd to temperance, for lascivious hire  
Should prostitute himself to common harlots!  
Old and deform'd too! Was't for this he

left me,  
And on a feign'd pretence, for want of means  
To give me ornament?—or to bring home  
Diseases to me? Suppose these are false,  
And lustful goats; if he were true and right,  
Why stays he so long from me, being made  
rich,

And that the only reason why he left me?  
No, he is lost; and shall I wear the spoils  
And salaries of lust! they cleave unto me,  
Like Nessus' poison'd shirt: no, in my rage,  
I'll tear them off, and from my body wash  
The venom with my tears. Have I no spleen,  
Nor anger of a woman? shall he build  
Upon my ruins, and I, unrevenged,  
Deplore his falsehood? no; with the same  
trash

For which he had dishonour'd me, I'll pur-  
chase

A just revenge: I am not yet so much  
In debt to years, nor so mis-shaped, that all  
Should fly from my embraces: Chastity,  
Thou only art a name, and I renounce thee!  
I am now a servant to voluptuousness.  
Wantons of all degrees and fashions,  
welcome!

You shall be entertain'd; and, if I stray,  
Let him condemn himself, that led the way.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*Alba Regalis. A Room in  
the Palace.*

*Enter Mathias and Baptista.*

*Bapt.* We are in a desperate strait; there's  
no evasion,  
Nor hope left to come off, but by your yield-  
ing

To the necessity; you must feign a grant  
To her violent passion, or—

*Math.* What, my Baptista?

*Bapt.* We are but dead else.

*Math.* Were the sword now heaved up,  
And my neck upon the block, I would not buy  
An hour's reprieve with the loss of faith and  
virtue,

To be made immortal here. Art thou a  
scholar,

Nay, almost without parallel, and yet fear  
To die, which is inevitable! You may urge

The many years that, by the course of nature,  
We may travel in this tedious pilgrimage,  
And hold it as a blessing ; as it is,  
When innocence is our guide : yet know,  
Baptista,

Our virtues are preferr'd before our years,  
By the great Judge : to die untainted in  
Our fame and reputation is the greatest ;  
And to lose that, can we desire to live ?  
Or shall I, for a momentary pleasure,  
Which soon comes to a period, to all times  
Have breach of faith and perjury remember'd  
In a still-living epitaph ? no, Baptista,  
Since my Sophia will go to her grave  
Unspotted in her faith, I'll follow her  
With equal loyalty :—*[Takes out the picture.]*

But look on this,  
Your own great work, your masterpiece, and  
then,  
She being still the same, teach me to  
alter !—

Ha ! sure I do not sleep ! or, if I dream,  
This is a terrible vision ! I will clear  
My eyesight ; perhaps melancholy makes me  
See that which is not.

*Bapt.* It is too apparent.  
I grieve to look upon't : besides the yellow,  
That does assure she's tempted, there are  
lines  
Of a dark colour, that disperse themselves  
O'er every miniature of her face, and those  
Confirm—

*Math.* She is turn'd whore !

*Bapt.* I must not say so.

Yet, as a friend to truth, if you will have me  
Interpret it,—in her consent and wishes  
She's false, but not in fact yet.

*Math.* Fact, Baptista !

Make not yourself a pander to her looseness,  
In labouring to palliate what a visor  
Of impudence cannot cover. Dide'er woman,  
In her will, decline from chastity, but found  
means,

To give her hot lust fuel ? It is more  
Impossible in nature for gross bodies,  
Descending of themselves, to hang in the air ;  
Or with my single arm to underprop  
A falling tower ; nay, in its violent course  
To stop the lightning, than to stay a woman  
Hurried by two furies, lust and falsehood,  
In her full career to wickedness !

*Bapt.* Pray you, temper  
The violence of your passion.

*Math.* In extremes  
Of this condition, can it be in man  
To use a moderation ? I am thrown,  
From a steep rock, headlong into a gulph  
Of misery, and find myself past hope,  
In the same moment that I apprehend

That I am falling : and this, the figure of  
My idol, few hours since, while she continued  
In her perfection, that was late a mirror,  
In which I saw miraculous shapes of duty,  
Staid manners, with all excellency a husband  
Could wish in a chaste wife, is on the sudden  
Turn'd to a magical glass, and does present  
Nothing but horns and horror.

*Bapt.* You may yet,  
And 'tis the best foundation, build up comfort  
On your own goodness.

*Math.* No, that hath undone me ;  
For now I hold my temperance a sin  
Worse than excess, and what was vice, a  
virtue.

Have I refused a queen, and such a queen,  
Whose ravishing beauties at the first sight  
had tempted

A hermit from his beads, and changed his  
prayers

To amorous sonnets, to preserve my faith  
Inviolatè to thee, with the hazard of  
My death with torture, since she could inflict  
No less for my contempt ; and have I met  
Such a return from thee ! I will not curse thee,  
Nor, for thy falsehood, rail against the sex ;  
'Tis poor, and common : I'll only with wise  
men,

Whisper unto myself, howe'er they seem,  
Nor present, nor past times, nor the age to  
come,

Hath heretofore, can now, or ever shall,  
Produce one constant woman.

*Bapt.* This is more  
Than the satirists wrote against them.

*Math.* There's no language  
That can express the poison of these aspics,  
These weeping crocodiles, and all too little  
That hath been said against them. But I'll  
mould

My thoughts into another form ; and, if  
She can outlive the report of what I have done,  
This hand, when next she comes within my  
reach,  
Shall be her executioner.

*Enter Honoria and Acanthe.*

*Bapt.* The queen, sir.

*Hon.* Wait our command at distance :—  
*[Exit Acanthe.]*—Sir, you too, have  
Free liberty to depart.

*Bapt.* I know my manners,  
And thank you for the favour. *[Exit.]*

*Hon.* Have you taken  
Good rest in your new lodgings ? I expect  
now

Your resolute answer : but advise maturely  
Before I hear it.

*Math.* Let my actions, madam,

For no words can dilate my joy, in all  
You can command, with cheerfulness to  
serve you,

Assure your highness ; and, in sign of my  
Submission, and contrition for my error,  
My lips, that but the last night shunn'd the  
touch

Of yours as poison, taught humility now,  
Thus on your foot, and that too great an  
honour

For such an undeserver, seal my duty.  
A cloudy mist of ignorance, equal to  
Cimmerian darkness, would not let me see,  
then,

What now, with adoration and wonder,  
With reverence I look up to : but those fogs  
Dispersed and scatter'd by the powerful  
beams

With which yourself, the sun of all perfection,  
Vouchsafe to cure my blindness ; like a  
suppliant,

As low as I can kneel, I humbly beg  
What you once pleased to tender.

*Hon.* This is more  
Than I could hope ! [*Aside.*—What find  
you so attractive

Upon my face, in so short time to make  
This sudden metamorphosis ? pray you,  
rise ;

I, for your late neglect, thus sign your pardon.  
*[Kisses him.]*

Ay, now you kiss like a lover, and not as  
brothers

Coldly salute their sisters.

*Math.* I am turn'd  
All spirit and fire.

*Hon.* Yet, to give some allay  
To this hot fervour, 'twere good to remember

The king, whose eyes and ears are every-  
where ;

With the danger too that follows, this dis-  
cover'd.

*Math.* Danger ! a bugbear, madam ; let  
[me] ride once

Like Phaeton in the chariot of your favour,  
And I contemn Jove's thunder ; though the  
king,

In our embraces stood a looker on,  
His hangman, and with studied cruelty,  
ready

To drag me from your arms, it should not  
fright me

From the enjoying that a single life is  
Too poor a price for. O, that now all vigour  
Of my youth were re-collected for an hour,  
That my desire might meet with yours, and  
draw

The envy of all men, in the encounter,

Upon my head ! I should—but we lose  
time—

Be gracious, mighty queen.

*Hon.* Pause yet a little :

The bounties of the king, and, what weighs  
more,

Your boasted constancy to your matchless  
wife,

Should not so soon be shaken.

*Math.* The whole fabric,  
When I but look on you, is in a moment  
O'erturn'd and ruin'd ; and, as rivers lose  
Their names when they are swallow'd by  
the ocean,

In you alone all faculties of my soul  
Are wholly taken up ; my wife and king,  
At the best, as things forgotten.

*Hon.* Can this be ?

I have gain'd my end now. [*Aside.*

*Math.* Wherefore stay you, madam ?

*Hon.* In my consideration what a nothing  
Man's constancy is.

*Math.* Your beauties make it so

In me, sweet lady.

*Hon.* And it is my glory :

I could be coy now, as you were, but I  
Am of a gentler temper ; howsoever,  
And in a just return of what I have suffer'd  
In your disdain, with the same measure  
grant me

Equal deliberation : I ere long

Will visit you again ; and when I next

Appear, as conquer'd by it, slave-like wait  
On my triumphant beauty. [*Exit.*

*Math.* What a change  
Is here beyond my fear ! but by thy false-  
hood,

Sophia, not her beauty, is't denied me  
To sin but in my wishes ? what a frown,

In scorn, at her departure, she threw on me !  
I am both ways lost ; storms of contempt

and scorn

Are ready to break on me, and all hope  
Of shelter doubtful : I can neither be  
Disloyal, nor yet honest ; I stand guilty  
On either part ; at the worst, Death will end  
all ;

And he must be my judge to right my wrong,  
Since I have loved too much, and lived too  
long. [*Exit.*

SCENE II.—Bohemia. *A Room in Ma-  
thias's House.*

*Enter Sophia, with a book and a paper.*

*Soph.* Nor custom, nor example, nor vast  
numbers

Of such as do offend, make less the sin.  
For each particular crime a strict account  
Will be exacted ; and that comfort which



The damn'd pretend, fellows in misery,  
Takes nothing from their torments: every  
one,

Must suffer, in himself, the measure of  
His wickedness. If so, as I must grant,  
It being unrefutable in reason,  
Howe'er my lord offend, it is no warrant  
For me to walk in his forbidden paths:  
What penance then can expiate my guilt,  
For my consent (transported then with  
passion)

To wantonness? the wounds I give my fame,  
Cannot recover his; and, though I have fed  
These courtiers with promises and hopes,  
I am yet in fact untainted; and I trust,  
My sorrow for it, with my purity,  
And love to goodness for itself, made  
powerful,

Though all they have alleged prove true or  
false,

Will be such exorcisms as shall command  
This Fury, jealousy, from me? What I have  
Determined touching them, I am resolved  
To put in execution. Within, there!

*Enter Hilario, Corisca, with other Servants.*

Where are my noble guests?

*Hil.* The elder, madam,  
Is drinking by himself to your ladyship's  
health,

In muskadine and eggs; and, for a rasher  
To draw his liquor down, he hath got a pie  
Of marrowbones, potatoes, and eringos,  
With many such ingredients; and, 'tis said,  
He hath sent his man in post to the next  
town,

For a pound of ambergris, and half a peck  
Of fishes call'd cantharides.

*Coris.* The younger

Prunes up himself, as if this night he were  
To act a bridegroom's part; but to what  
purpose,

I am ignorance itself.

*Soph.* Continue so.

[*Gives the servants the paper.*]

Let those lodgings be prepared as this di-  
rects you:

And fall not in a circumstance, as you  
Respect my favour.

*1 Serv.* We have our instructions.

*2 Serv.* And punctually will follow them.

[*Exeunt Servants.*]

*Enter Ubaldo.*

*Hil.* Here comes, madam,  
The lord Ubaldo.

*Ubald.* Pretty one, there's gold  
To buy thee a new gown; [*To Coris.*] and  
there's for thee;

Grow fat, and fit for service. [*To Hil.*] I  
am now,

As I should be, at the height, and able to  
Beget a giant. O my better angel!  
In this you shew your wisdom, when you pay  
The lecher in his own coin; shall you sit  
puling,

Like a Patient Grizzle, and belaugbed at? no:  
This is a fair revenge. Shall we to't?

*Soph.* To what, sir?

*Ubald.* The sport you promised.

*Soph.* Could it be done with safety.

*Ubald.* I warrant you; I am sound as a  
bell, a tough

Old blade, and steel to the back, as you  
shall find me

In the trial on your anvil.

*Soph.* So; but how, sir,

Shall I satisfy your friend, to whom, by  
promise,

I am equally erigated?

*Ubald.* I must confess,

The more the merrier; but, of all men living,  
Take heed of him: you may safer run upon  
The mouth of a cannon when it is unlading,  
And come off colder.

*Soph.* How! is he not wholesome?

*Ubald.* Wholesome! I'll tell you, for your  
good: he is

A spittle of diseases, and, indeed,  
More loathsome and infectious; the tub is  
His weekly bath: he hath not drank this  
seven years,

Before he came to your house, but composi-  
tions

Of sassafras and guaicum; and dry mutton  
His daily portion: name what scratch soever  
Can be got by women, and the surgeons  
will resolve you,

At this time, or at that, Ricardo had it.

*Soph.* Bless me from him!

*Ubald.* 'Tis a good prayer, lady.

It being a degree unto the pox,  
Only to mention him: if my tongue burn  
not, hang me,

When I but name Ricardo.

*Soph.* Sir, this caution

Must be rewarded.

*Ubald.* I hope I have marr'd his market.

[*Aside.*]

—But when?

*Soph.* Why, presently; follow my woman,  
She knows where to conduct you, and will  
serve

To-night for a page. Let the waistcoat I  
appointed,

With the cambric shirt perfumed, and the  
rich cap,

Be brought into his chamber.

*Ubaldo.* Excellent lady!  
And a caudle too in the morning.

*Corisca.* I will fit you.

[*Exeunt* Ubaldo and Corisca.]

*Enter* Ricardo.

*Soph.* So hot on the scent! Here comes  
the other beagle.

*Ric.* Take purse and all. [*To* Hilario.]

*Hil.* If this company would come often,  
I should make a pretty term on't.

*Soph.* For your sake

I have put him off; he only begg'd a kiss,  
I gave it, and so parted.

*Ric.* I hope better:—

He did not touch your lips?

*Soph.* Yes, I assure you.

There was no danger in it?

*Ric.* No! eat presently

These lozenges of forty crowns an ounce,  
Or you are undone.

*Soph.* What is the virtue of them?

*Ric.* They are preservatives against stink-  
ing breath,

Rising from rotten lungs.

*Soph.* If so, your carriage

Of such dear antidotes, in my opinion,  
May render yours suspected.

*Ric.* Fie! no; I use them

When I talk with him, I should be poison'd  
else,

But I'll be free with you: he was once a  
creature,

It may be, of God's making, but long since  
He is turn'd to a druggist's shop; the spring  
and fall

Hold all the year with him: that he lives,  
he owes

To art, not nature; she has given him o'er.  
He moves, like the fairy king, on screws and  
wheels,

Made by his doctor's recipes, and yet still  
They are out of joint, and every day repairing.  
He has a regiment of whores he keeps,  
At his own charge, in a lazar-house; but the  
best is,

There's not a nose among them. He's  
acquainted

With the green water, and the spitting pill's  
Familiar to him: in a frosty morning,  
You may thrust him in a pottle-pot; his bones  
Rattle in his skin, like beans tossed in a  
bladder.

If he but hear a coach, the fomentation,  
The friction with fumigation, cannot save  
him

From the chine-evil. In a word, he is  
Not one disease, but all; yet, being my  
friend,

I will forbear his character, for I would not.  
Wrong him in your opinion.

*Soph.* The best is,

The virtues you bestow on him, to me  
Are mysteries I know not; but, however,  
I am at your service. Sirrah, let it be your  
care

To unclothe the gentleman, and with speed;  
delay

Takes from delight.

*Ric.* Good! there's my hat, sword, cloak:  
A vengeance on these buttons! off with my  
doublet,

I dare shew my skin; in the touch you will  
like it better.

Prithee cut my codpiece-points, and, for this  
service,

When I leave them off, they are thine.

*Hil.* I'll take your word, sir.

*Ric.* Dear lady, stay not long.

*Soph.* I may come too soon, sir.

*Ric.* No, no; I am ready now.

*Hil.* This is the way, sir.

[*Exeunt* Hilario and Ricardo.]

*Soph.* I was much to blame to credit their  
reports

Touching my lord, that so traduce each other,  
And with such virulent malice; though I  
presume

They are bad enough; but I have studied  
for them

A way for their recovery.

[*A noise of clapping a door; Ubaldo  
appears above in his shirt.*]

*Ubaldo.* What dost thou mean, wench?

Why dost thou shut the door upon me? Ha!  
My clothes are ta'en away too! shall I starve  
here?

Is this my lodging? I am sure the lady  
talk'd of

A rich cap, a perfum'd shirt, and a waistcoat;  
But here is nothing but a little fresh straw,  
A petticoat for a coverlet, and that torn too,  
And an old woman's biggin, for a night-cap.

*Re-enter* Corisca below.

'Slight, 'tis a prison, or a pigsty. Ha!  
The windows grated with iron! I cannot  
force them,

And if I leap down here, I break my neck:  
I am betray'd. Rogues! Villains! let me out;  
I am a lord, and that's no common title,  
And shall I be used thus?

*Soph.* Let him rave, he's fast;  
I'll parley with him at leisure.

*Ricardo entering with a great noise above,  
as fallen.*

*Ric.* Zounds! have you trapdoors?

*Soph.* The other bird's i'the cage too, let him flutter.

*Ric.* Whither am I fallen? into hell!

*Ubald.* Who makes that noise, there?

Help me, if thou art a friend.

*Ric.* A friend! I am where

I cannot help myself; let me see thy face.

*Ubald.* How, Ricardo! Prithee, throw me Thy cloak, if thou canst, to cover me; I am almost

Frozen to death.

*Ric.* My cloak! I have no breeches;

I am in my shirt, as thou art; and here's nothing

For myself but a clown's cast suit.

*Ubald.* We are both undone.

Prithee, roar a little—Madam!

*Re-enter Hilario below, in Ricardo's clothes.*

*Ric.* Lady of the house!

*Ubald.* Grooms of the chamber!

*Ric.* Gentlewomen! Milkmaids!

*Ubald.* Shall we be murder'd?

*Soph.* No, but soundly punish'd,

To your deserts.

*Ric.* You are not in earnest, madam?

*Soph.* Judge as you find, and feel it; and now hear

What I irrevocably purpose to you.

Being received as guests into my house,

And with all it afforded entertain'd,

You have forgot all hospitable duties;

And, with the defamation of my lord,

Wrought on my woman weakness, in revenge

Of his injuries, as you fashion'd them to me,

To yield my honour to your lawless lust.

*Hil.* Mark that, poor fellows!

*Soph.* And so far you have

Transgress'd against the dignity of men,

Who should, bound to it by virtue, still defend

Chaste ladies' honours, that it was your trade

To make them infamous; but you are caught

In your own toils, like lustful beasts, and

therefore

Hope not to find the usage of men from me:

Such mercy you have forfeited, and shall

suffer

Like the most slavish women.

*Ubald.* How will you use us?

*Soph.* Ease, and excess in feeding, made you wanton.

A pluriſy of ill blood you must let out,

By labour, and spare diet that way got too,

Or perish for hunger. Reach him up that distaff

With the flax upon it; though no Omphale,

Nor you a second Hercules, as I take it,

As you spin well at my command, and please me,

Your wages, in the coarsest bread and water, Shall be proportionable.

*Ubald.* I will starve first.

*Soph.* That's as you please.

*Ric.* What will become of me now?

*Soph.* You shall have gentler work; I have oft observed

You were proud to shew the fineness of your hands,

And softness of your fingers; you should reel well

What he spins, if you give your mind to it, as I'll force you.

Deliver him his materials. Now you know Your penance, fall to work; hunger will teach you:

And so, as slaves to your lust, not me, I leave you. [*Exeunt Sophia and Corisca.*]

*Ubald.* I shall spin a fine thread out now!

*Ric.* I cannot look

On these devices, but they put me in mind

Of rope-makers.

*Hil.* Fellow, think of thy task.

Forget such vanities; my livery there,

Will serve thee to work in.

*Ric.* Let me have my clothes yet;

I was bountiful to thee.

*Hil.* They are past your wearing,

And mine by promise, as all these can witness.

You have no holidays coming, nor will I work

While these, and this lasts; and so, when you

please,

You may shut up your shop windows. [*Exit.*]

*Ubald.* I am faint, And must lie down.

*Ric.* I am hungry too, and cold.

O cursed women!

*Ubald.* This comes of our whoring.

But let us rest as well as we can to-night,

But not o'ersleep ourselves, lest we fast to-morrow. [*They withdraw.*]

SCENE III.—*Alba Regalis. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter Ladislaus, Honoria, Eubulus, Ferdinand, Acanthe, and Attendants.*

*Hon.* Now you know all, sir, with the motives why

I forced him to my lodging.

*Ladis.* I desire

No more such trials, lady.

*Hon.* I presume, sir,

You do not doubt my chastity.

*Ladis.* I would not;

But these are strange inducements.

*Eubu.* By no means, sir.

Why, though he were with violence seized upon,

And still detain'd, the man, sir, being no soldier,  
Nor used to charge his pike when the breach is open,  
There was no danger in't! You must conceive, sir,  
Being religious, she chose him for a chaplain,  
To read old homilies to her in the dark ;  
She's bound to it by her canons.

*Ladis.* Still tormented  
With thy impertinence !

*Hon.* By yourself, dear sir,  
I was ambitious only to o'erthrow  
His boasted constancy in his consent ;  
But for fact, I contemp him : I was never  
Unchaste in thought ; I laboured to give  
proof

What power dwells in this beauty you admire so ;

And when you see how soon it has transform'd him,

And with what superstition he adores it,  
Determine as you please.

*Ladis.* I will look on  
This pageant ; but—

*Hon.* When you have seen and heard, sir,  
The passages which I myself discover'd,  
And could have kept conceal'd, had I meant basely,  
Judge as you please.

*Ladis.* Well, I'll observe the issue.

*Eubu.* How had you ta'en this, general, in your wife ?

*Ferd.* As a strange curiosity ; but queens  
Are privileged above subjects, and 'tis fit, sir.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Mathias and Baptista.*

*Bapt.* You are much alter'd, sir, since the last night,

When the queen left you, and look cheerfully,  
Your dulness quite blown over.

*Math.* I have seen a vision  
This morning, makes it good ; and never was  
In such security as at this instant,  
Fall what can fall : and when the queen  
appears,

Whose shortest absence now is tedious to me,  
Observe the encounter.

*Enter Honoria, Ladislaus, Eubulus, Ferdinand, and Acanthe, with others, appear above.*

*Bapt.* She already is  
Enter'd the lists.

*Math.* And I prepared to meet her.

*Bapt.* I know my duty. [*Going.*]

*Hon.* Not so, you may stay now,  
As a witness of our contract.

*Bapt.* I obey  
In all things, madam.

*Hon.* Where's that reverence,  
Or rather superstitious adoration,  
Which, captive-like, to my triumphant beauty  
You paid last night ? No humble knee, nor  
sign

Of vassal duty ! sure this is the foot,  
To whose proud cover, and then happy in it,  
Your lips were glued ; and that the neck  
then offer'd,

To witness your subjection, to be trod on ;  
Your certain loss of life in the king's anger  
Was then too mean a price to buy my favour ;  
And that false glow-worm fire of constancy  
To your wife, extinguish'd by a greater light  
Shot from our eyes ;—and that, it may be,  
(being

Too glorious to be look'd on,) hath deprived  
you

Of speech and motion : but I will take off  
A little from the splendour, and descend  
From my own height, and in your lowness  
hear you

Plead as a suppliant.

*Math.* I do remember  
I once saw such a woman.

*Hon.* How !

*Math.* And then  
She did appear a most magnificent queen,  
And, what's more, virtuous, though some-  
what darken'd

With pride, and self-opinion.

*Eubu.* Call you this courtship ?

*Math.* And she was happy in a royal  
husband,

Whom envy could not tax, unless it were  
For his too much indulgence to her humours.

*Eubu.* Pray you, sir, observe that touch,  
'tis to the purpose ;

I like the play the better for't.

*Math.* And she lived  
Worthy her birth and fortune ; you retain  
yet

Some part of her angelical form ; but when  
Envy to the beauty of another woman,  
Inferior to hers, one that she never  
Had seen, but in her picture, had dispersed  
Infection through her veins, and loyalty,  
Which a great queen, as she was, should  
have nourish'd,

Grew odious to her—

*Hon.* I am thunderstruck.

*Math.* And lust, in all the bravery it could  
borrow

From majesty, howe'er disguised, had ta'en  
Sure footing in the kingdom of her heart,

The throne of chastity once, how, in a moment,

All that was gracious, great, and glorious in her,

And won upon all hearts, like seeming shadows

Wanting true substance, vanish'd !

*Hon.* How his reasons

Work on my soul !

*Math.* Retire into yourself ;

Your own strengths, madam, strongly mann'd with virtue,

And be but as you were, and there's no office

So base, beneath the slavery that men

Impose on beasts, but I will gladly bow to.

But as you play and juggle with a stranger, Varying your shapes like Thetis, though the beauties

Of all that are by poets' raptures sainted Were now in you united, you should pass Pity'd by me, perhaps, but not regarded.

*Eubu.* If this take not, I am cheated.

*Math.* To slip once,

Is incident, and excused by human frailty ;

But to fall ever, damnable. We were both

Guilty, I grant, in tendering our affection ;

But, as I hope you will do, I repented.

When we are grown up to ripeness, our life is

Like to this [magick] picture. While we run

A constant race in goodness, it retains

The just proportion ; but the journey being

Tedious, and sweet temptation in the way,

That may in some degree divert us from

The road that we put forth in, ere we end

Our pilgrimage, it may, like this, turn yallow,

Or be with blackness clouded : but when we

Find we have gone astray, and labour to

Return unto our never-failing guide,

Virtue, contrition, with unfeigned tears,

The spots of vice wash'd off, will soon restore it

To the first pureness.

*Hon.* I am disenchant'd :

Mercy, O mercy, heavens !

[*Kneels.*]

*Ladis.* I am ravish'd

With what I have seen and heard.

*Ferd.* Let us descend,

And hear the rest below.

*Eubu.* This hath fallen out

Beyond my expectation. [*They retire.*]

*Hon.* How have I wander'd

Out of the track of piety ! and misled

By overweening pride, and flattery

Of fawning sycophants, (the bane of greatness.)

Could never meet till now a passenger,

That in his charity would set me right,

Or stay me in my precipice to ruin.

How ill have I return'd your goodness to me !

The horror, in my thought oft, turns me marble :

But if it may be yet prevented——

*Re-enter* Ladislaus, Eubulus, Ferdinand, Acanthe, and others, below.

O sir,

What can I do to shew my sorrow, or

With what brow ask your pardon ?

*Ladis.* Pray you, rise.

*Hon.* Never, till you forgive me, and receive

Unto your love and favour a changed woman :

My state and pride turn'd to humility, henceforth

Shall wait on your commands, and my obedience

Steer'd only by your will.

*Ladis.* And that will prove

A second and a better marriage to me.

All is forgotten.

*Hon.* Sir, I must not rise yet,

Till, with a free confession of a crime

Unknown to you yet, and a following suit,

Which thus I beg, be granted.

*Ladis.* I melt with you :

'Tis pardon'd, and confirm'd thus.

[*Raises her.*]

*Hon.* Know then, sir,

In malice to this good knight's wife, I practis'd

Ubaldo and Ricardo to corrupt her.

*Bapt.* Thence grew the change of the picture. [*Aside.*]

*Hon.* And how far

They have prevail'd, I am ignorant : now, if you, sir,

For the honour of this good man, may be entreated

To travel thither, it being but a day's journey,

To fetch them off——

*Ladis.* We will put on to-night.

*Bapt.* I, if you please, your harbinger.

*Ladis.* I thank you.

Let me embrace you in my arms ; your service

Done on the Turk, compared with this, weighs nothing.

*Math.* I am still your humble creature.

*Ladis.* My true friend.

*Ferd.* And so you are bound to hold him.

*Eubu.* Such a plant

Imported to your kingdom, and here grafted, Would yield more fruit than all the idle weeds

That suck up your rain of favour.

*Ladis.* In my will

I'll not be wanting. Prepare for our journey.

In act be my Honoria now, not name,  
And to all aftertimes preserve thy fame.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Bohemia. *A Hall in Mathias's House.*

*Enter Sophia, Corisca, and Hilario.*

*Soph.* Are they then so humble?

*Hil.* Hunger and hard labour  
Have tamed them, madam; at the first they  
bellow'd

Like stags ta'en in a toil, and would not work  
For sullenness; but when they found, with-  
out it,

There was no eating, and that, to starve to  
death,

Was much against their stomach; by de-  
grees,

Against their wills, they fell to it.

*Coris.* And now feed on

The little pittance you allow, with gladness.

*Hil.* I do remember that they stopp'd their  
noses

At the sight of beef and mutton, as coarse  
feeding

For their fine palates; but now, their work  
being ended,

They leap at a barley crust, and hold cheese-  
parings,

With a spoonful of pall'd wine pour'd in  
their water,

For festival-exceedings.

*Coris.* When I examine

My spinster's work, he trembles like a  
prentice,

And takes a box on the ear, when I spy faults  
And botches in his labour, as a favour

From a curst mistress.

*Hil.* The other, too, reels well

For his time; and if your ladyship would  
please

To see them for your sport, since they want  
airing,

It would do well, in my judgment; you  
shall hear

Such a hungry dialogue from them!

*Soph.* But suppose,

When they are out of prison, they should  
grow

Rebellious?

*Hil.* Never fear't; I'll undertake

To lead them out by the nose with a coarse  
thread

Of the one's spinning, and make the other  
reel after,

And without grumbling; and when you are  
weary of

Their company, as easily return them.

*Coris.* Dear madam, it will help to drive  
away

Your melancholy.

*Soph.* Well, on this assurance,

I am content; bring them hither.

*Hil.* I will do it

In stately equipage.

[*Exit.*]

*Soph.* They have confess'd, then,

They were set on by the queen, to taint me in  
My loyalty to my lord?

*Coris.* 'Twas the main cause,  
That brought them hither.

*Soph.* I am glad I know it;  
And as I have begun, before I end

I'll at the height revenge it; let us step  
aside,

They come: the object's so ridiculous,

In spite of my sad thoughts, I cannot but  
lend

A forced smile to grace it.

*Re-enter Hilario, with Ubaldo spinning,  
and Ricardo recling.*

*Hil.* Come away:

Work as you go, and lose no time, 'tis  
precious;

You'll find it in your commons.

*Ric.* Commons, call you it!

The word is proper; I have grazed so long  
Upon your commons, I am almost starv'd  
here.

*Hil.* Work harder, and they shall be  
better'd.

*Ubald.* Better'd!

Worse they cannot be: would I might lie  
Like a dog under her table, and serve for a

footstool,

So I might have my belly full of that

Her Iceland cur refuses!

*Hil.* How do you like

Your airing? is it not a favour?

*Ric.* Yes;

Just such a one as you use to a brace of  
greyhounds,

When they are led out of their kennels to  
scumber;

But our case is ten times harder, we have  
nothing

In our bellies to be vented: if you will be

An honest yeoman-fewterer, feed us first,

And walk us after.

*Hil.* Yeoman-fewterer!

Such another word to your governor, and  
you go

Supperless to bed for't.

*Ubald.* Nay, even as you please;

The comfortable names of breakfasts, dinners,

Collations, supper, beverage, are words Worn out of our remembrance.

*Ric.* O for the steam  
Of meat in a cook's shop!

*Ubald.* I am so dry  
I have not spittle enough to wet my fingers  
When I draw my flax from my distaff.

*Ric.* Nor I strength  
To raise my hand to the top of my reeler. Oh!  
I have the cramp all over me.

*Hil.* What do you think  
Were best to apply to it? A cramp-stone,  
as I take it,  
Were very useful.

*Ric.* Oh! no more of stones,  
We have been used too long like hawks  
already.

*Ubald.* We are not so high in our flesh  
now to need casting,  
We will come to an empty fist.

*Hil.* Nay, that you shall not.  
So ho, birds!—*[Holds up a piece of bread.]*—  
How the eyasses scratch and scramble!  
Take heed of a surfeit, do not cast your  
gorges;

This is more than I have commission for;  
be thankful.

*Soph.* Were all that study the abuse of  
women,

Used thus, the city would not swarm with  
cuckolds,

Nor so many tradesmen break.

*Coris.* Pray you, appear now,  
And mark the alteration.

*[Sophia comes forward.]*

*Hil.* To your work,  
My lady is in presence; shew your duties:  
Exceeding well.

*Soph.* How do your scholars profit?

*Hil.* Hold up your heads demurely.  
Prettily,

For young beginners.

*Coris.* And will do well in time,  
If they be kept in awe.

*Ric.* In awe! I am sure  
I quake like an aspen leaf.

*Ubald.* No mercy, lady?

*Ric.* Nor intermission?

*Soph.* Let me see your work:

Fie upon't, what a thread's here! a poor  
cobler's wife

Would make a finer to sew a clown's rent  
startup;

And here you reel as you were drunk.

*Ric.* I am sure

It is not with wine.

*Soph.* O take heed of wine;

Cold water is far better for your healths,  
Of which I am very tender: you had foul  
bodies,

And must continue in this physical diet,  
Till the cause of your disease be ta'en away,  
For fear of a relapse; and that is dangerous:  
Yet I hope already that you are in some  
Degree recover'd, and that way to resolve me,  
Answer me truly; nay, what I propound  
Concerns both; nearer: what would you  
now give,

If your means were in your hands, to lie all  
night

With a fresh and handsome lady?

*Ubald.* How! a lady?

O, I am past it; hunger with her razor  
Hath made me an eunuch.

*Ric.* For a mess of porridge,  
Well sopp'd with a bunch of radish and a  
carrot,

I would sell my barony; but for women, oh!  
No more of women; not a doit for a doxy,  
After this hungry voyage.

*Soph.* These are truly  
Good symptoms; let them not venture too  
much in the air,  
Till they are weaker.

*Ric.* This is tyranny.

*Ubald.* Scorn upon scorn.

*Soph.* You were so

In your malicious intents to me,

*Enter a Servant.*

And therefore 'tis but justice—What's the  
business?

*Serv.* My lord's great friend, signior  
Baptista, madam,  
Is newly lighted from his horse, with certain  
Assurance of my lord's arrival.

*Soph.* How?

And stand I trifling here? Hence with the  
mongrels

To their several kennels; there let them howl  
in private;

I'll be no further troubled.

*[Exeunt Sophia and Servant.]*

*Ubald.* O that ever

I saw this fury!

*Ric.* Or look'd on a woman

But as a prodigy in nature!

*Hil.* Silence;

No more of this.

*Coris.* Methinks you have no cause

To repent your being here.

*Hil.* Have you not learnt,

When your states are spent, your several  
trades to live by,

And never charge the hospital?

*Coris.* Work but tightly,

And we will not use a dish-clout in the house,  
But of your spinning.

*Ubald.* O, I would this hemp  
Were turn'd to a halter!

*Hil.* Will you march?

*Ric.* A soft one,

Good general, I beseech you.

*Ubald.* I can hardly

Draw my legs after me.

*Hil.* For a crutch, you may use

Your distaff; a good wit makes use of all  
things. *[Exit.*

SCENE II.—*A Room in the same.*

*Enter Sophia and Baptista.*

*Soph.* Was he jealous of me?

*Bapt.* There's no perfect love  
Without some touch of't, madam.

*Soph.* And my picture,  
Made by your devilish art, a spy upon  
My actions! I ne'er sat to be drawn,  
Nor had you, sir, commission for't.

*Bapt.* Excuse me;

At his earnest suit I did it.

*Soph.* Very good:—

Was I grown so cheap in his opinion of me?

*Bapt.* The prosperous events that crown  
his fortunes,

May qualify the offence.

*Soph.* Good, the events!—

The sanctuary fools and madmen fly to,  
When their rash and desperate undertakings  
thrive well:

But good and wise men are directed by  
Grave counsels, and with such deliberation  
Proceed in their affairs, that chance has  
nothing

To do with them: howsoe'er, take the pains,  
sir,

To meet the honour (in the king and queen's  
Approaches to my house) that breaks upon  
me;

I will expect them with my best of care.

*Bapt.* To entertain such royal guests—

*Soph.* I know it;

Leave that to me, sir. *[Exit Baptista.*

What should move the queen,  
So given to ease and pleasure, as fame speaks  
her,

To such a journey! or work on my lord,  
To doubt my loyalty, nay, more, to take,  
For the resolution of his fears, a course  
That is by holy writ denied a Christian?

'Twas impious in him, and perhaps the wel-  
come

He hopes in my embraces, may deceive

*[Trumpets sounded.*

His expectation. The trumpets speak

The king's arrival: help, a woman's wit now,

To make him know his fault, and my just  
anger! *[Exit.*

SCENE III.—*A Hall in the Same.*

*A Flourish.* *Enter* Ladislaus, Ferdinand,  
Eubulus, Mathias, Baptista, Honoria, and  
Acanthe, with Attendants.

*Eubu.* Your majesty must be weary.

*Hon.* No, my lord,

A willing mind makes a hard journey easy.

*Math.* Not Jove, attended on by Hermes,  
was

More welcome to the cottage of Philemon,  
And his poor Baucis, than your gracious self,  
Your matchless queen, and all your royal  
train,

Are to your servant and his wife.

*Ladis.* Where is she?

*Hon.* I long to see her as my now-loved  
rival.

*Eubu.* And I to have a smack at her; 'tis  
a cordial

To an old man, better than sack and a toast  
Before he goes to supper.

*Math.* Ha! is my house turn'd

To a wilderness? nor wife nor servants ready,

With all rites due to majesty, to receive

Such unexpected blessings! You assured me

Of better preparation; hath not

The excess of joy transported her beyond

Her understanding?

*Bapt.* I now parted from her,

And gave her your directions.

*Math.* How shall I beg

Your majesties' patience! sure my family's  
drunk,

Or by some witch, in envy of my glory,

A dead sleep thrown upon them.

*Enter* Hilario and Servants.

*Serv.* Sir.

*Math.* But that

The sacred presence of the king forbids it,  
My sword should make a massacre among  
you.

Where is your mistress?

*Hil.* First, you are welcome home, sir:

Then know, she says she's sick, sir.—There's  
no notice

Taken of my bravery! *[Aside.*

*Math.* Sick at such a time!

It cannot be: though she were on her death-  
bed,

And her spirit e'en now departed, here stand  
they

Could call it back again, and in this honour,  
Give her a second being. Bring me to her;

I know not what to urge, or how to redeem



This mortgage of her manners.

[*Exeunt Mathias, Hilario, and Servants.*

*Eubu.* There's no climate  
On the world, I think, where one jade's  
trick or other

Reigns not in women.

*Ferd.* You were ever bitter  
Against the sex.

*Ladis.* This is very strange.

*Hon.* Mean women  
Have their faults, as well as queens.

*Ladis.* O, she appears now.

*Re-enter Mathias with Sophia ; Hilario following.*

*Math.* The injury that you conceive I  
have done you

Dispute hereafter, and in your perverseness  
Wrong not yourself and me.

*Soph.* I am past my childhood,  
And need no tutor.

*Math.* This is the great king,  
To whom I am engaged till death for all  
I stand possess'd of.

*Soph.* My humble roof is proud, sir,  
To be the canopy of so much greatness  
Set off with goodness.

*Ladis.* My own praises flying  
In such pure air as your sweet breath, fair  
lady,

Cannot but please me.

*Math.* This is the queen of queens,  
In her magnificence to me.

*Soph.* In my duty  
I kiss her highness' robe.

*Hon.* You stoop too low  
To her whose lips would meet with yours.

[*Kisses her.*

*Soph.* Howe'er

It may appear preposterous in women,  
So to encounter, 'tis your pleasure, madam,  
And not my proud ambition.—Do you hear,  
sir?

Without a magical picture, in the touch  
I find your print of close and wanton kisses  
On the queen's lips. [*Aside to Mathias.*

*Math.* Upon your life be silent :—  
And now salute these lords.

*Soph.* Since you will have me,  
You shall see I am experienced at the game,  
And can play it tightly.—You are a brave  
man, sir, [*To Ferdinand.*

And do deserve a free and hearty welcome :  
Be this the prologue to it. [*Kisses him.*

*Eubu.* An old man's turn  
Is ever last in kissing. I have lips too,  
However cold ones, madam.

*Soph.* I will warm them  
With the fire of mine. [*Kisses him.*

*Eubu.* And so she has ! I thank you,  
I shall sleep the better all night for't.

*Math.* You express  
The boldness of a wanton courtesan,  
And not a matron's modesty ; take up,  
Or you are disgraced for ever.

[*Aside to Soph.*

*Soph.* How? with kissing  
Feelingly, as you taught me? would you  
have me

Turn my cheek to them, as proud ladies use  
To their inferiors, as if they intended  
Some business should be whisper'd in their  
ear,

And not a salutation? what I do,  
I will do freely; now I am in the humour,  
I'll fly at all: are there any more?

*Math.* Forbear,  
Or you will raise my anger to a height  
That will descend in fury.

*Soph.* Why? you know  
How to resolve yourself what my intents are,  
By the help of Mephostophilus, and your  
picture :

Pray you, look upon't again. I humbly  
thank

The queen's great care of me while you  
were absent.

She knew how tedious 'twas for a young  
wife,

And being for that time a kind of widow,  
To pass away her melancholy hours  
Without good company, and in charity,  
therefore,

Provided for me : out of her own store,  
She cull'd the lords Ubaldo and Ricardo,  
Two principal courtiers for ladies' service,  
To do me all good offices ; and as such  
Employ'd by her, I hope I have received  
And entertain'd them ; nor shall they depart,  
Without the effect arising from the cause  
That brought them hither.

*Math.* Thou dost belie thyself :  
I know that in my absence thou wert honest,  
Howe'er now turn'd monster.

*Soph.* The truth is,  
We did not deal, like you, in speculations  
On cheating pictures ; we knew shadows were  
No substances, and actual performance  
The best assurance. I will bring them  
hither,

To make good in this presence so much for  
me.

Some minutes space I beg your majesties'  
pardon.—

You are moved now :—champ upon this bit  
a little,

Anon you shall have another. Wait me,  
Hilario. [*Exeunt Sophia and Hilario.*]

*Ladis.* How now? turn'd statue, sir!

*Math.* Fly, and fly quickly,

From this cursed habitation, or this Gorgon  
Will make you all as I am. In her tongue  
Millions of adders hiss, and every hair  
Upon her wicked head a snake more dreadful,  
Than that Tisiphone threw on Athamas,  
Which in his madness forced him to dis-  
member

His proper issue. O that ever I  
Reposed my trust in magick, or believed  
Impossibilities! or that charms had power  
To sink and search into the bottomless hell  
Of a false woman's heart!

*Eubu.* These are the fruits  
Of marriage! an old bachelor as I am,  
And, what's more, will continue so, is not  
troubled

With these fine vagaries.

*Ferd.* Till you are resolv'd, sir,  
Forsake not hope.

*Bap.* Upon my life, this is  
Dissimulation.

*Ladis.* And it suits not with  
Your fortitude and wisdom, to be thus  
Transported with your passion.

*Hon.* You were once  
Deceived in me, sir, as I was in you;  
Yet the deceit pleased both.

*Math.* She hath confess'd all;  
What further proof should I ask?

*Hon.* Yet remember  
The distance that is interposed between  
A woman's tongue and her heart; and you  
must grant,  
You build upon no certainties.

*Re-enter Sophia, Corisca, and Hilario, with  
Ubaldo and Ricardo in rags, and spinning  
and reeling, as before.*

*Eubu.* What have we here?

*Soph.* You must come on, and shew your-  
selves.

*Ubald.* The king!

*Ric.* And queen too! would I were as far  
under the earth

As I am above it!

*Ubald.* Some poet will,  
From this relation, or in verse or prose,  
Or both together blended, render us  
Ridiculous to all ages.

*Ladis.* I remember  
This face, when it was in a better plight:  
Are not you Ricardo?

*Hon.* And this thing, I take it,  
Was once Ubaldo.

*Ubald.* I am now I know not what.

*Ric.* We thank your majesty for employ-  
ing us

To this subtle Circe.

*Eubu.* How, my lord! turn'd spinster!

Do you work by the day, or the great?

*Ferd.* Is your theorbo

Turn'd to a distaff, signior? and your voice,  
With which you chanted, *Room for a lusty  
gallant!*

Tuned to the note of *Lachrymæ?*

*Eubu.* Prithee tell me,

For I know thou't free, how oft, and to the  
purpose,

You've been merry with this lady.

*Ric.* Never, never.

*Ladis.* Howsoever, you should say so for  
your credit,

Being the only court-bull.

*Ubald.* O, that ever

I saw this kicking heifer!

*Soph.* You see, madam,

How I have cured your servants, and what  
favours,

They, with their rampant valour, have won  
from me.

You may, as they are physic'd, I presume,  
Trust a fair virgin with them; they have  
learn'd

Their several trades to live by, and paid  
nothing

But cold and hunger for them; and may now  
Set up for themselves, for here I give them  
over.

And now to you, sir; why do you not again  
Peruse your picture, and take the advice  
Of your learned consort? these are the men,  
or none,

That make you, as the Italian says, a *becco*.

*Math.* I know not which way to entreat  
your pardon,

Nor am I worthy of it. My Sophia,  
My best Sophia, here before the king,  
The queen, these lords, and all the lookers on,  
I do renounce my error, and embrace you,  
As the great example to all aftertimes,  
For such as would die chaste and noble wives,  
With reverence to imitate.

*Soph.* Not so, sir;

I yet hold off. However I have purged  
My doubted innocence, the foul aspersions,  
In your unmanly doubts, cast on my honour,  
Cannot so soon be wash'd off.

*Eubu.* Shall we have  
More jigobobs yet!

*Soph.* When you went to the wars,  
I set no spy upon you, to observe  
Which way you wander'd, though our sex by  
nature

Is subject to suspicions and fears ;  
My confidence in your loyalty freed me from  
them.

But, to deal, as you did, against your religion,

With this enchanter, to survey my actions,  
Was more than woman's weakness ; therefore  
know,

And 'tis my boon unto the king, I do  
Desire a separation from your bed ;  
For I will spend the remnant of my life  
In prayer and meditation.

*Math.* O take pity

Upon my weak condition, or I am  
More wretched in your innocence, than if  
I had found you guilty. Have you shewn a  
jewel

Out of the cabinet of your rich mind,  
To lock it up again ?—She turns away.

Will none speak for me ? shame and sin have  
robb'd me

Of the use of my tongue.

*Ladis.* Since you have conquer'd, madam,  
You wrong the glory of your victory,  
If you use it not with mercy.

*Ferd.* Any penance

You please to impose upon him, I dare  
warrant

He will gladly suffer.

*Eubu.* Have I lived to see

But one good woman, and shall we for a  
trifle,

Have her turn nun ? I will first pull down the  
cloister.

To the old sport again, with a good luck to  
you !

'Tis not alone enough that you are good,  
We must have some of the breed of you : will  
you destroy

The kind and race of goodness ? I am converted,

And ask your pardon, madam, for my ill  
opinion

Against the sex ; and shew me but two such  
more,

I'll marry yet, and love them.

*Hon.* She that yet

Ne'er knew what 'twas to bend but to the  
king,

Thus begs remission for him.

*Soph.* O, dear madam,

Wrong not your greatness so.

*Omnes.* We are all suitors.

*U bald.* I do deserve to be heard among  
the rest.

*Ric.* And we have suffer'd for it.

*Soph.* I perceive

There's no resistance : but, suppose I pardon  
What's past, who can secure me he'll be free  
From jealousy hereafter ?

*Math.* I will be

My own security ; go, ride, where you please ;  
Feast, revel, banquet, and make choice with  
whom,

I'll set no watch upon you ; and, for proof  
of it,

This cursed picture I surrender up  
To a consuming fire.

*Bapt.* As I abjure

The practice of my art.

*Soph.* Upon these terms

I am reconciled ; and, for these that have  
paid

The price of their folly, I desire your mercy.

*Ladis.* At your request they have it.

*U bald.* Hang all trades now !

*Ric.* I will find a new one, and that is, to  
live honest.

*Hil.* These are my fees.

*U bald.* Pray you, take them, with a mis-  
chief !

*Ladis.* So, all ends in peace now.

And, to all married men, be this a caution,  
Which they should duly tender as their life,  
Neither to dote too much, nor doubt a wife.

[*Exeunt.*]



# The Emperor of the East.

## PROLOGUE

### AT THE BLACKFRIARS.

*But that imperious custom warrants it,  
Our author with much willingness would omit  
This preface to his new work. He hath found,  
(And suffer'd for't,) many are apt to wound  
His credit in this kind: and, whether he  
Express himself fearful, or peremptory,  
He cannot scape their censures who delight  
To misapply whatever he shall write.  
'Tis his hard fate. And though he will not sue,  
Or basely beg such suffrages, yet, to you,  
Free and ingenious spirits, he doth now,  
In me, present his service, with his vow,  
He hath done his best: and, though he cannot glory  
In his invention, (this work being a story  
Of reverend antiquity,) he doth hope  
In the proportion of it, and the scope,  
You may observe some pieces drawn like one  
Of a steadfast hand; and, with the whiter stone,  
To be marked in your fair censures. More than this  
I am forbid to promise, and it is  
With the most till you confirm it: since we know  
Whate'er the shaft be, archer, or the bow  
From which 'tis sent, it cannot hit the while,  
Unless your approbation guide it right.*

## PROLOGUE

### AT COURT.

*As ever, sir, you lent a gracious ear  
To oppress'd innocence, now vouchsafe to hear  
A short petition. At your feet, in me,  
The poet kneels, and to your majesty  
Appeals for justice. What we now present,  
When first conceived, in his vote and intent,  
Was sacred to your pleasure; in each part,  
With his best of fancy, judgment, language, art,  
Fashion'd and form'd so, as might well, and may  
Deserve a welcome, and no vulgar way.  
He durst not, sir, at such a solemn feast,  
Lard his grave matter with one scurrilous jest;  
But labour'd that no passage might appear,  
But what the queen without a blush might hear:  
And yet this poor work suffered by the rage  
And envy of some Calos of the stage:  
Yet still he hopes this Play, which then was seen  
With sore eyes, and condemn'd out of their spleen,  
May be by you, the supreme judge, set free,  
And raised above the reach of calumny.*

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Theodosius *the younger, the emperor.*  
 Paulinus, *a kinsman to the emperor.*  
 Philanax, *captain of the guard.*  
 Timantus, } *eunuchs of the emperor's cham-*  
 Chrysapius, } *ber.*  
 Gratianus, }  
 Cleon, *a traveller, friend to Paulinus.*  
 Patriarch.  
 Informer.  
 Projector.  
 Master of the Habits and Manners.  
 Minion of the Suburbs.

Countryman.  
 Surgeon.  
 Empiric.  
 Pulcheria, *the protectress, sister to the em-*  
*peror.*  
 Athenais, *a strange virgin, afterwards em-*  
*press, and named Eudocia.*  
 Arcadia, } *the young sisters of the emperor.*  
 Flaccilla, }  
 Officers, Suitors, Attendants, Guards,  
 Huntsman, Executioners, Servants, &c.

## SCENE,—Constantinople.

## CT I.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter Paulinus and Cleon.*

*Paul.* In your six years' travel, friend, no doubt, you have met with Many and rare adventures, and observed The wonders of each climate, varying in The manners and the men; and so return, For the future service of your prince and country,  
 In your understanding better'd.

*Cle.* Sir, I have made of it The best use in my power, and hope my gleanings

After the full crop others reap'd before me, Shall not, when I am call'd on, altogether Appear unprofitable: yet I left The miracle of miracles in our age At home behind me; every where abroad, Fame, with a true though prodigal voice, deliver'd

Such wonders of Pulcheria, the princess, To the amazement, nay, astonishment rather, Of such as heard it, that I found not one, In all the states and kingdoms that I pass'd through,

Worthy to be her second.

*Paul.* She, indeed, is A perfect phoenix, and disdains a rival. Her infant years, as you know, promised much,

But, grown to ripeness, she transcends, and makes

Credulity her debtor. I will tell you, In my blunt way, to entertain the time, Until you have the happiness to see her, How in your absence she hath borne herself, And with all possible brevity; though the subject

Is such a spacious field, as would require

An abstract of the purest eloquence (Derived from the most famous orators The nurse of learning, Athens, shew'd the world)

In that man, that should undertake to be Her true historian.

*Cle.* In this you shall do me A special favour.

*Paul.* Since Arcadius' death, Our late great master, the protection of The prince, his son, the second Theodosius, By a general vote and suffrage of the people, Was to her charge assign'd, with the dispo-

sure Of his so many kingdoms. For his person, She hath so train'd him up in all those arts That are both great and good, and to be wish'd

In an imperial monarch, that the mother Of the Gracchi, grave Cornelia, Rome still boasts of,

The wise Pulcheria but named, must be No more remember'd. She, by her example, Hath made the court a kind of academy, In which true honour is both learn'd and practis'd:

Her private lodgings a chaste nunnery, In which her sisters, as probationers, hear From her, their sovereign abbess, all the precepts

Read in the school of virtue.

*Cle.* You amaze me.

*Paul.* I shall, ere I conclude; for here the wonder

Begins, not ends. Her soul is so immense, And her strong faculties so apprehensive, To search into the depth of deep designs, And of all natures, that the burthen, which To many men were insupportable, To her is but a gentle exercise, Made, by the frequent use, familiar to her.

*Cle.* With your good favour, let me interrupt you.

Being, as she is, in every part so perfect, Methinks that all kings of our eastern world Should become rivals for her.

*Paul.* So they have ;  
But to no purpose. She, that knows her strength

To rule and govern monarchs, scorns to wear  
On her free neck the servile yoke of marriage ;

And for one loose desire, envy itself  
Dares not presume to taint her.' Venus' son  
Is blind indeed when he but gazes on her ;  
Her chastity being a rock of diamonds,  
With which encounter'd, his shafts fly in splinters ;

His flaming torches in the living spring  
Of her perfections quench'd : and, to crown all,

She's so impartial when she sits upon  
The high tribunal, neither sway'd with pity,  
Nor awed by fear, beyond her equal scale,  
That 'tis not superstition to believe  
Astrea once more lives upon the earth,  
Pulcheria's breast her temple.

*Cle.* You have given her  
An admirable character.

*Paul.* She deserves it :  
And, such is the commanding power of virtue,

That from her vicious enemies it compels  
Pæans of praise, as a due tribute to her.

[*Loud music.*]

*Cle.* What means this solemn music ?

*Paul.* Sir, it ushers  
The emperor's morning meditation,  
In which Pulcheria is more than assistant.  
'Tis worth your observation, and you may  
Collect from her expense of time this day,  
How her hours, for many years, have been  
disposed of.

*Cle.* I am all eyes and ears.

*Enter, after a strain of solemn music,*  
Philanax, Timantus, Patriarch, Theodosius,  
Pulcheria, Flaccilla, and Arcadia ;  
*followed by Chrysapius and Gratianus ;*  
Servants, and Officers.

*Pul.* Your patience, sir.

Let those corrupted ministers of the court,  
Which you complain of, our devotions  
ended,

Be cited to appear : for the ambassadors  
Who are importunate to have audience,  
From me you may assure them, that to-morrow

They shall in public kiss the emperor's robe,  
And we in private, with our soonest leisure,

Will give them hearing. Have you especial  
care too,

That free access be granted unto all  
Petitioners. The morning wears.—Pray  
you, on, sir ;

Time lost is ne'er recover'd.

[*Exeunt all but Paulinus and Cleon.*]

*Paul.* Did you note  
The majesty she appears in ?

*Cle.* Yes, my good lord ;  
I was ravish'd with it.

*Paul.* And then, with what speed  
She orders her dispatches, not one daring  
To interpose ; the emperor himself,  
Without reply, putting in act whatever  
She pleased to impose upon him.

*Cle.* Yet there were some,  
That in their sullen looks, rather confess'd  
A forced constraint to serve her, than a will  
To be at her devotion ; what are they ?

*Paul.* Eunuchs of the emperor's chamber,  
that repine

The globe and awful sceptre should give place  
Unto the distaff ; for, as such, they whisper  
A woman's government, but dare not yet  
Express themselves.

*Cle.* From whence are the ambassadors  
To whom she promised audience ?

*Paul.* They are  
Employ'd by divers princes, who desire  
Alliance with our emperor, whose years now,  
As you see, write him man. One would  
advance

A daughter to the honour of his bed ;  
A second, his fair sister : to instruct you  
In the particulars would ask longer time  
Than my own designs give way to. I have  
letters

From special friends of mine, that to my care  
Commend a stranger virgin, whom this  
morning

I purpose to present before the princess :  
If you please, you may accompany me.

*Cle.* I'll wait on you. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter the Informer, with Officers bringing  
in the Projector, the Minion of the Suburbs,  
and the Master of the Habit and Manners.*

*Infor.* Why should you droop, or hang  
your working heads ?

No danger is meant to you ; pray bear up :  
For aught I know, you are cited to receive  
Preferment due to your merits.

*Proj.* Very likely :

In all the projects I have read and practis'd,  
I never found one man compell'd to come,  
Before the seat of justice, under guard,  
To receive honour.

*Infor.* No ! it may be, you are  
The first example. Men of qualities,  
As I have deliver'd you to the protectress,  
Who knows how to advance them, cannot  
conceive

A fitter place to have their virtues publish'd,  
Than in open court. Could you hope that  
the princess,

Knowing your precious merits, will reward  
them

In a private corner ? No ; you know not yet  
How you may be exalted.

*Min.* To the gallows.

*Infor.* Fie !

Nor yet depress'd to the galleys ; in your  
names

You carry no such crimes : your specious titles  
Cannot but take her :—President of the Pro-  
jectors !

What a noise it makes ! The Master of the  
Habit !

How proud would some one country be that  
I know,

To be your first pupil ! Minion of the  
Suburbs,

And now and then admitted to the court,  
And honour'd with the style of Squire of  
Dames !

What hurt is in it ! One thing I must tell you,  
As I am the state-scout, you may think me  
an informer.

*Mast.* They are synonyma.

*Infor.* Conceal nothing from her  
Of your good parts, 'twill be the better for you ;  
Or if you should, it matters not ; she can  
conjure,

And I am her ubiquitous spirit,  
Bound to obey her :—you have my instruc-  
tions ;

Stand by, here's better company.

*Enter Paulinus, Cleon, and Athenais, with  
a petition.*

*Athen.* Can I hope, sir,  
Oppressed innocence shall find protection  
And justice among strangers, when my  
brothers,

Brothers of one womb, by one sire begotten,  
Trample on my afflictions ?

*Paul.* Forget them,  
Remembering those may help you.

*Athen.* They have robb'd me  
Of all means to prefer my just complaint,  
With any promising hope to gain a hearing,  
Much less redress : petitions not sweetened  
With gold, are but unsavory, oft refused ;  
Or, if received, are pocketed, not read.  
A suitor's swelling tears, by the glowing beams

Of choleric authority are dried up  
Before they fall, or, if seen, never pitied.  
What will become of a forsaken maid !  
My flattering hopes are too weak to encounter  
With my strong enemy, despair, and 'tis  
In vain to oppose her.

*Cle.* Cheer her up ; she faints, sir.

*Paul.* This argues weakness ; though  
your brothers were

Cruel beyond expression, and the judges  
That sentenced you, corrupt, you shall find  
here

One of your own fair sex to do you right ;  
Whose beams of justice, like the sun, extend  
Their light and heat to strangers, and are not  
Municipal or confined.

*Athen.* Pray you, do not feed me  
With airy hopes : unless you can assure me  
The great Puicberia will descend to hear  
My miserable story, it were better  
I died without the trouble.

*Paul.* She is bound to it  
By the surest chain, her natural inclination  
To help the afflicted ; nor shall long delays,  
More terrible to miserable suitors  
Than quick denials, grieve you. Dry your  
fair eyes.

This room will instantly be sanctified  
With her bless'd presence ; to her ready hand  
Present your grievances, and rest assured  
You shall depart contented.

*Athen.* You breathe in me  
A second life.

*Infor.* Will your lordship please to hear  
Your servant a few words ?

*Paul.* Away, you rascal !  
Did I ever keep such servants ?

*Infor.* If your honesty  
Would give you leave, it would be for your  
profit.

*Paul.* To make use of an informer ! tell  
me, in what

Can you advantage me ?

*Infor.* In the first tender  
Of a fresh suit never begg'd yet.

*Paul.* What's your suit, sir ?

*Infor.* 'Tis feasible :—here are three ar-  
rant knaves

Discovered by my art.

*Paul.* And thou the archknave :  
The great devour the less.

*Infor.* And with good reason ;  
I must eat one a month, I cannot live else.

*Paul.* A notable cannibal ! but should I  
hear thee,

In what do your knaves concern me ?

*Infor.* In the begging.

Of their estates.

*Paul.* Before they are condemn'd

*Infor.* Yes, or arraign'd : your lordship may speak too late else.

They are your own, and I will be content With the fifth part of a share.

*Paul.* Hence, rogue !

*Infor.* Such rogues

In this kind will be heard and cherish'd too.

Fool that I was, to offer such a bargain

To a spiced-conscience chapman !—but I care not ;

What he disdains to taste, others will swallow.

*Loud Music.* Enter Theodosius, Pulcheria, Arcadia, Flaccilla, Patriarch, Philanax, Timantus, Chrysapius, Gratianus, and Attendants.

*Cle.* They are return'd from the temple.

*Paul.* See, she appears ;

What think you now ?

*Athen.* A cunning painter thus, Her veil ta'en off, and awful sword and balance

Laid by, would picture Justice.

*Pul.* When you please,

You may intend those royal exercises

Suiting your birth and greatness : I will bear The burthen of your cares, and, having purged

The body of your empire of ill humours,

Upon my knees surrender it.

*Chry.* Will you ever

Be awed thus like a boy ?

*Grat.* And kiss the rod

Of a proud mistress ?

*Tim.* Be what you were born, sir.

*Phil.* Obedience and majesty never lodged In the same inn.

*Theod.* No more ; he never learn'd

The right way to command, that stopp'd his ears

To wise directions.

*Pul.* Read o'er the papers

I left upon my cabinet, two hours hence

I will examine you.

*Flac.* We spend our time well !

Nothing but praying and poring on a book.

It ill agrees with my constitution, sister.

*Arcad.* Would I had been born some masquing-lady's woman,

Only to see strange sights, rather than live thus !

*Flac.* We are gone, forsooth ; there is no remedy, sister.

[*Exeunt* Arcadia and Flaccilla.

*Grat.* What hath his eye found out ?

*Tim.* 'Tis fix'd upon

That stranger lady.

*Chry.* I am glad yet, that He dares look on a woman.

[*All this time the Informer is kneeling to Pulcheria, and delivering papers.*

*Theo.* Philanax,

What is that comely stranger ?

*Phil.* A petitioner.

*Chry.* Will you hear her case, and dispatch her in your chamber ?

I'll undertake to bring her.

*Theo.* Bring me to

Some place where I may look on her demeanor :

'Tis a lovely creature !

*Chry.* There's some hope in this yet.

[*Flourish.* *Exeunt* Theodosius, Patriarch, Philanax, Timantus, Chrysapius, and Gratianus.

*Pul.* No ; you have done your parts.

*Paul.* Now opportunity courts you, Prefer your suit.

*Athen.* [*Kneeling.*] As low as misery

Can fall, for proof of my humility, A poor distressed virgin bows her head, And lays hold on your goodness, the last altar Calamity can fly to for protection.

Great minds erect their never-falling trophies

On the firm base of mercy ; but to triumph

Over a suppliant, by proud fortune captived,

Argues a bastard conquest :—'tis to you

I speak, to you, the fair and just Pulcheria,

The wonder of the age, your sex's honour ;

And as such, deign to hear me. As you have

A soul moulded from heaven, and do desire

To have it made a star there, make the means

Of your ascent to that celestial height

Virtue, wing'd with brave action : they draw near

The nature and the essence of the gods,

Who imitate their goodness.

*Pul.* If you were

A subject of the empire, which your habit

In every part denies—

*Athen.* O, fly not to

Such an evasion ! whate'er I am,

Being a woman, in humanity

You are bound to right me. Though the difference

Of my religion may seem to exclude me

From your defence, which you would have confined ;

The moral virtue, which is general,

Must know no limits. By these blessed feet,

That pace the paths of equity, and tread boldly

On the stiff neck of tyrannous oppression,

By these tears by which I bathe them, I conjure you

With pity to look on me !

*Pul.* Pray you, rise ;



And, as you rise, receive this comfort from me.

Beauty, set off with such sweet language, never

Can want an advocate; and you must bring More than a guilty cause if you prevail not. Some business, long since thought upon, dispatch'd,

You shall have hearing, and, as far as justice Will warrant me, my best aids.

*Athen.* I do desire

No stronger guard; my equity needs no favour. [*Walks aside.*]

*Pul.* Are these the men?

*Proj.* We were, an't like your highness, The men, the men of eminence and mark, And may continue so, if it please your grace.

*Mast.* This speech was well projected.

*Pul.* Does your conscience, I will begin with you, whisper unto you What here you stand accused of? Are you named

The President of Projectors?

*Infor.* Justify it, man,

And tell her in what thou'rt useful.

*Proj.* That is apparent;

And if you please, ask some about the court, And they will tell you, to my rare inventions They owe their bravery, perhaps means to purchase,

And cannot live without me. I, alas!

Lend out my labouring brains to use, and sometimes

For a drachma in the pound,—the more the pity

I am all patience, and endure the curses Of many, for the profit of one patron.

*Pul.* I do conceive the rest. What is the second?

*Infor.* The Minion of the Suburbs.

*Pul.* What hath he

To do in Constantinople?

*Min.* I steal in now and then,

As I am thought useful; marry, there I am call'd

The Squire of Dames, or Servant of the Sex, And by the allowance of some sportful ladies, Honour'd with that title.

*Pul.* Spare your character,

You are here decipher'd: stand by with your compeer.

What is the third? a creature I ne'er heard of: The Master of the Manners and the Habit! You have a double office.

*Mast.* In my actions

I make both good; for by my theorems

Which your polite and terser gallants practise, I re-refine the court, and civilize

Their barbarous natures. I have in a table,

With curious punctuality set down, To a hair's breadth, how low a new-stamp'd courtier

May vail to a country gentleman, and by Gradation, to his merchant, mercer, draper, His linen-man, and tailor.

*Pul.* Pray you, discover, This hidden mystery.

*Mast.* If the foresaid courtier (As it may chance sometimes) find not his name

Writ in the citizens' books, with a state hum He may salute them after three days waiting;

But, if he owe them money, that he may Preserve his credit, let him in policy never Appoint a day of payment, so they may hope still:

But, if he be to take up more, his page May attend them at the gate, and usher them Into his cellar, and when they are warm'd with wine,

Conduct them to his bedchamber; and though then

He be under his barber's hands, as soon as seen,

He must start up to embrace them, vail thus low;

Nay, though he call them cousins, 'tis the better,

His dignity no way wrong'd in't.

*Paul.* Here's a fine knave!

*Pul.* Does this rule hold without exception, sirrah, For courtiers in general?

*Mast.* No, dear madam,

For one of the last edition; and for him I have composed a dictionary, in which He is instructed, how, when, and to whom, To be proud or humble; at what times of the year

He may do a good deed for itself, and that is Writ in dominical letters; all days else Are his own, and of those days the several hours

Mark'd out, and to what use.

*Pul.* Shew us your method;

I am strangely taken with it.

*Mast.* 'Twill deserve

A pension, I hope. First, a strong collis In his bed, to heighten appetite; shuttlecock,

To keep him in breath when he rises; tennis courts

Are chargeable, and the riding of great horses

Too boisterous for my young courtier: let the old ones

I think not of, use it; next, his meditation

How to court his mistress, and that he may seem witty,

Let him be furnish'd with confederate jests  
Between him and his friend, that, on occasion,

They may vent them mutually: what his pace and garb

Must be in the presence, then the length of his sword,

The fashion of the hilt—what the blade is  
It matters not, 'twere barbarism to use it.

Unless to shew his strength upon an andiron ;  
So, the sooner broke the better.

*Pul.* How I abuse

This precious time ! Projector, I treat first  
Of you and your disciples ; you roar out,  
All is the king's, his will above his laws ;  
And that fit tributes are too gentle yokes  
For his poor subjects : whispering in his ear,  
If he would have their fear, no man should dare

To bring a salad from his country garden,  
Without the paying gabel ; kill a hen,  
Without excise : and that if he desire

To have his children or his servants wear  
Their heads upon their shoulders, you affirm  
In policy 'tis fit the owner should

Pay for them by the poll ; or, if the prince want

A present sum, he may command a city  
Impossibilities, and for non-performance,  
Compel it to submit to any fine

His officers shall impose. Is this the way  
To make our emperor happy? can the groans  
Of his subjects yield him music? must his thresholds

Be wash'd with widows and wrong'd orphans'  
tears,

Or his power grow contemptible?

*Proj.* I begin

To feel myself a rogue again.

*Pul.* But you are

The squire of dames, devoted to the service  
Of gamesome ladies, the hidden mystery  
Discover'd, their close bawd, thy slavish  
breath

Fanning the fires of lust ; the go-between

This female and that wanton sir ; your art  
Can blind a jealous husband, and, disguised  
Like a milliner or shoemaker, convey

A letter in a pantofle or glove,

Without suspicion, nay, at his table,

In a case of picktooths ; you instruct them  
how

To parley with their eyes, and make the  
temple

A mart of looseness :—to discover all

Your subtle brokages, were to teach in  
public

Those private practices which are, in justice,  
Severely to be punish'd.

*Min.* I am cast :

A jury of my patronesses cannot quit me.

*Pul.* You are master of the manners and  
the habit ;

Rather the scorn of such as would live men,  
And not, like apes, with servile imitation

Study prodigious fashions. You keep  
Intelligence abroad, that may instruct  
Our giddy youth at home what new-found  
fashion

Is now in use, swearing he's most complete  
That first turns monster. Know, villains,  
I can thrust

This arm into your hearts, strip off the flesh  
That covers your deformities, and shew you  
In your own nakedness. Now, though the  
law

Call not your follies death, you are for ever  
Banish'd my brother's court.—Away with  
them ;

I will hear no reply.

[*Exeunt Informer, and Officers with the  
Projector, Minion of the Suburbs, and  
Master of the Habit and Manners.  
Athenais comes forward.*

*Enter above, Theodosius, Philanax, Timan-  
tus, Chrysapius, and Gratianus.*

*Pul.* What think you now?

*Cle.* That I am in a dream ; or that I see  
A second Pallas.

*Pul.* These removed, to you  
I clear my brow. Speak without fear, sweet  
maid,

Since, with a mild aspect, and ready ear,  
I sit prepared to hear you.

*Athen.* Know, great princess,  
My father, though a pagan, was admired  
For his deep search into those hidden studies,  
Whose knowledge is denied to common men :

The motion, with the divers operations  
Of the superior bodies, by his long  
And careful observation were made  
Familiar to him ; all the secret virtues  
Of plants and simples, and in what degree  
They were useful to mankind, he could dis-  
course of :

In a word, conceive him as a prophet honour'd  
In his own country. But being born a man,  
It lay not in him to defer the hour  
Of his approaching death, though long fore-  
told :

In this so fatal hour he call'd before him  
His two sons and myself, the dearest pledges  
Lent him by nature, and with his right hand  
Blessing our several heads, he thus began.

*Chry.* Mark his attention.

*Phil.* Give me leave to mark too.  
*Athen.* If I could leave my understanding  
 to you  
*It were superfluous to make division  
 Of whatsoever else I can bequeath you:  
 But, to avoid contention I allot  
 An equal portion of my possessions  
 To you, my sons; but unto thee, my daughter,  
 My joy, my darling, (pardon me, though I  
 Repeat his words,) if my prophetic soul,  
 Ready to take her flight, can truly guess at  
 Thy future fate, I leave the strange as-  
 surance  
 Of the greatness thou art born to, unto which  
 Thy brothers shall be proud to pay their  
 service:—*  
*Paul.* And all men else, that honour  
 beauty.  
*Theo.* Umph!  
*Athen.* Yet to prepare thee for that certain  
 fortune,  
 And that I may from present wants defend  
 thee,  
 I leave ten thousand crowns:—which said,  
 being call'd  
 To the fellowship of our deities, he expired,  
 And with him all remembrance of the charge  
 Concerning me, left by him to my brothers.  
*Pul.* Did they detain your legacy?  
*Athen.* And still do.  
 His ashes were scarce quiet in his urn,  
 When, in derision of my future greatness,  
 They thrust me out of doors, denying me  
 One short night's harbour.  
*Pul.* Weep not.  
*Athen.* I desire,  
 By your persuasion, or commanding power,  
 The restitution of mine own; or that,  
 To keep my frailty from temptation,  
 In your compassion of me, you would please,  
 I, as an handmaid, may be entertain'd  
 To do the meanest offices to all such  
 As are honour'd in your service.  
*Pul.* Thou art welcome.  
 What is thy name?  
*Athen.* The forlorn Athenais.  
*Pul.* The sweetness of thy innocence  
 strangely takes me.  
*[Takes her up and kisses her.]*  
 Forget thy brothers wrongs; for I will be  
 In my care a mother, in my love a sister to  
 thee;  
 And, were it possible thou couldst be won  
 To be of our belief—  
*Paul.* May it please your excellence,  
 That is an easy task; I, though no scholar,  
 Dare undertake it; clear truth cannot want  
 Rhetorical persuasions.  
*Pul.* 'Tis a work,

My lord, will well become you.—Break up  
 the court:  
 May your endeavours prosper!  
*Paul.* Come, my fair one;  
 I hope, my convert.  
*Athen.* Never: I will die  
 As I was born,  
*Paul.* Better you ne'er had been. *[Exeunt.]*  
*Phil.* What does your majesty think of?  
 —the maid's gone.  
*Theo.* She's wondrous fair, and in her  
 speech appear'd  
 Pieces of scholarship.  
*Chry.* Make use of her learning  
 And beauty together; on my life she will be  
 proud  
 To be so converted.  
*Theo.* From foul lust heaven guard me!  
*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter Philanax, Timantus, Chrysapius,  
 and Gratianus.*

*Phil.* We only talk, when we should do.  
*Tim.* I'll second you;  
 Begin, and when you please.  
*Grat.* Be constant in it.  
*Chry.* That resolution which grows cold  
 to-day,  
 Will freeze to-morrow.  
*Grat.* 'Slight! I think she'll keep him  
 Her ward for ever, to herself engrossing  
 The disposition of all the favours  
 And bounties of the empire.  
*Chry.* We, that, by  
 The nearness of our service to his person,  
 Should raise this man, or pull down that,  
 without  
 Her license hardly dare prefer a suit,  
 Or if we do, 'tis cross'd.  
*Phil.* You are troubled for  
 Your proper ends; my aims are high and  
 bonest,  
 The wrong that's done to majesty I repine at:  
 I love the emperor, and 'tis my ambition  
 To have him know himself, and to that  
 purpose  
 I'll run the hazard of a check.  
*Grat.* And I  
 The loss of my place.  
*Tim.* I will not come behind,  
 Fall what can fall.  
*Chry.* Let us put on sad aspects,  
 To draw him on; charge home, we'll fetch  
 you off,  
 Or lie dead by you.

*Enter Theodosius.*

*Theo.* How's this? clouds in the chamber,  
And the air clear abroad!

*Phil.* When you, our sun,  
Obscure your glorious beams, poor we that  
borrow

Our little light from you, cannot but suffer  
A general eclipse.

*Tim.* Great sir, 'tis true;  
For, till you please to know and be yourself,  
And freely dare dispose of what's your own,  
Without a warrant, we are falling meteors,  
And not fix'd stars.

*Chry.* The pale-faced moon, that should  
Govern the night, usurps the rule of day,  
And still is at the full in spite of nature,  
And will not know a change.

*Theo.* Speak you in riddles?  
I am no Œdipus, but your emperor,  
And as such would be instructed.

*Phil.* Your command  
Shall be obey'd: till now, I never heard you  
Speak like yourself; and may that Power, by  
which

You are so, strike me dead, if what I shall  
Deliver as a faithful subject to you,  
Hath root or growth from malice, or base  
envy

Of your sister's greatness! I could honour  
in her

A power subordinate to yours; but not,  
As 'tis, predominant.

*Tim.* Is it fit that she,  
In her birth your vassal, should command  
the knees

Of such as should not bow but to yourself?

*Grat.* She with security walks upon the  
heads

Of the nobility; the multitude,  
As to a deity, offering sacrifice  
For her grace and favour.

*Chry.* Her proud feet even wearied  
With the kisses of petitioners.

*Grat.* While you,  
To whom alone such reverence is proper,  
Pass unregarded by.

*Tim.* You have not yet,  
Been master of one hour of your whole life.

*Chry.* Your will and faculties kept in more  
awe

Than she can do her own.

*Phil.* And as a bondman,  
(O let my zeal find grace, and pardon from  
you,

That I descend so low,) you are design'd  
To this or that employment, suiting well  
A private man, I grant, but not a prince.  
To be a perfect horseman, or to know

The words of the chase, or a fair man of  
arms,

Or to be able to pierce to the depth,  
Or write a comment on the obscurest poets,  
I grant are ornaments; but your main scope  
Should be to govern men, to guard your  
own,

If not enlarge your empire.

*Chry.* You are built up  
By the curious hand of nature, to revive  
The memory of Alexander, or by  
A prosperous success in your brave actions,  
To rival Cæsar.

*Tim.* Rouse yourself, and let not  
Your pleasures be a copy of her will.

*Phil.* Your pupilage is past, and manly  
actions

Are now expected from you.

*Grat.* Do not lose  
Your subjects' hearts.

*Tim.* What is't to have the means  
To be magnificent, and not exercise  
The boundless virtue?

*Grat.* You confine yourself  
To that which strict philosophy allows of,  
As if you were a private man.

*Tim.* No pomp  
Or glorious shows of royalty rendering it  
Both loved and terrible.

*Grat.* 'Slight! you live, as it  
Begets some doubt, whether you have, or not,  
The abilities of a man.

*Chry.* The firmament  
Hath not more stars than there are several  
beauties

Ambitious, at the height, to impart their  
dear

And sweetest favours to you.

*Grat.* Yet you have not  
Made choice of one, of all the sex, to serve  
you,

In a physical way of courtship.

*Theo.* But that I would not  
Begin the expression of my being a man,  
In blood, or stain the first white robe I wear  
Of absolute power, with a servile imitation  
Of any tyrannous habit, my just anger  
Prompts me to make you, in your sufferings,  
feel,

And not in words to instruct you, that the  
license

Of the loose and saucy language you now  
practised

Hath forfeited your heads.

*Grat.* How's this!

*Phil.* I know not

What the play may prove, but I assure you  
that

I do not like the prologue.

*Theo.* O the miserable  
Condition of a prince; who, though he vary  
More shapes than Proteus, in his mind and  
manners

He cannot win an universal suffrage  
From the many-headed monster, multitude!  
Like Æsop's foolish frogs, they trample on  
him

As a senseless block, if his government be  
easy;

And, if he prove a stork, they croak and rail  
Against him as a tyrant.—I will put off  
That majesty, of which you think I have  
Nor use nor feeling; and in arguing with you,  
Convince you with strong proofs of common  
reason,

And not with absolute power, against which,  
wretches,

You are not to dispute. Dare you, that are  
My creatures, by my prodigal favours  
fashion'd,

Presuming on the nearness of your service,  
Set off with my familiar acceptance,  
Condemn my obsequiousness to the wise  
directions

Of an incomparable sister, whom all parts  
Of our world, that are made happy in the  
knowledge

Of her perfections, with wonder gaze on?  
And yet you, that were only born to eat  
The blessings of our mother earth, that are  
Distant but one degree from beasts, (since  
slaves

Can claim no larger privilege,) that know  
No further than your sensual appetites,  
Or wanton lusts, have taught you, undertake  
To give your sovereign laws to follow that  
Your ignorance marks out to him!

[Walks by.

*Grat.* How were we  
Abused in our opinion of his temper!

*Phil.* We had forgot 'tis found in holy  
writ,

That kings' hearts are inscrutable.

*Tim.* I ne'er read it;  
My study lies not that way.

*Phil.* By his looks,  
The tempest still increases.

*Theo.* Am I grown  
So stupid, in your judgments, that you dare,  
With such security, offer violence  
To sacred majesty? will you not know  
The lion is a lion, though he shew not  
His rending paws, or fill the affrighted air  
With the thunder of his roarings?—You  
bless'd saints,

How am I trench'd on! Is that temperance  
So famous in your cited Alexander,  
Or Roman Scipio, a crime in me?

Cannot I be an emperor, unless  
Your wives and daughters bow to my proud  
lusts?

And, 'cause I ravish not their fairest build-  
ings

And fruitful vineyards, or what is dearest,  
From such as are my vassals, must you con-  
clude

I do not know the awful power and strength  
Of my prerogative? Am I close-handed,  
Because I scatter not among you that  
I must not call mine own? know you, court-  
leeches,

A prince is never so magnificent  
As when he's sparing to enrich a few  
With the injuries of many. Could your  
hopes

So grossly flatter you, as to believe  
I was born and train'd up as an emperor,  
only

In my indulgence to give sanctuary,  
In their unjust proceedings, to the rapine  
And avarice of my grooms?

*Phil.* In the true mirror  
Of your perfections, at length we see  
Our own deformities.

*Tim.* And not once daring  
To look upon that majesty we now slight-  
ed—

*Chry.* With our faces thus glued to the  
carth, we beg

Your gracious pardon.

*Grat.* Offering our necks  
To be trod on, as a punishment for our late  
Presumption, and a willing testimony  
Of our subjection.

*Theo.* Deserve our mercy  
In your better life hereafter; you shall find,  
Though, in my father's life, I held it mad-  
ness

To usurp his power, and in my youth dis-  
dain'd not

To learn from the instructions of my sister,  
I'll make it good to all the world I am  
An emperor; and even this instant grasp  
The sceptre, my rich stock of majesty  
Entire, no scruple wasted.

*Phil.* If these tears  
I drop proceed not from my joy to hear  
this,

May my eyeballs follow them!

*Tim.* I will shew myself,  
By your sudden metamorphosis, transform'd  
From what I was.

*Grat.* And ne'er presume to ask  
What fits not you to give.

*Theo.* Move in that sphere,  
And my light with full beams shall shine  
upon you.

Forbear this slavish courtship, 'tis to me  
In a kind idolatrous.

*Phil.* Your gracious sister.

*Enter Pulcheria and Servant.*

*Pul.* Has he converted her?

*Serv.* And, as such, will  
Present her, when you please.

*Pul.* I am glad of it.

Command my dresser to adorn her with  
The robes that I gave order for.

*Serv.* I shall.

*Pul.* And let those precious jewels I took  
last

Out of my cabinet, if't be possible,  
Give lustre to her beauties; and, that done,  
Command her to be near us.

*Serv.* 'Tis a province

I willingly embrace. [*Exit.*

*Pul.* O my dear sir,

You have forgot your morning task, and  
therefore,

With a mother's love, I come to reprehend  
you;

But it shall be gently.

*Theo.* 'Twill become you, though  
You said, with reverend duty. Know, here-  
after,

If my mother lived in you, howe'er her son,  
Like you she were my subject.

*Pul.* How!

*Theo.* Put off

Amazement; you will find it. Yet I'll hear  
you

At distance, as a sister, but no longer  
As a governess, I assure you.

*Grat.* This is put home.

*Tim.* Beyond our hopes.

*Phil.* She stands as if his words

Had powerful magic in them.

*Theo.* Will you have me

Your pupil ever? the down on my chin  
Confirms I am a man, a man of men,  
The emperor, that knows his strength.

*Pul.* Heaven grant

You know it not too soon!

*Theo.* Let it suffice

My wardship's out. If your design con-  
cerns us

As a man, and not a boy, with our allowance  
You may deliver it.

*Pul.* A strange alteration!

But I will not contend. Be as you wish, sir,  
Your own disposer; unconpelled I cancel  
All bonds of my authority. [*Kneels.*

*Theo.* You in this

Pay your due homage, which perform'd, I  
thus

Embrace you as a sister; [*Raises her.*] no  
way doubting

Your vigilance for my safety as my honour;  
And what you now come to impart, I rest  
Most confident, points at one of them.

*Pul.* At both;

And not alone the present, but the future  
Tranquillity of your mind; since in the  
choice

Of her you are to heat with holy fires,  
And make the consort of your royal bed,  
The certain means of glorious succession,  
With the true happiness of our human being,  
Are wholly comprehended.

*Theo.* How! a wife?

Shall I become a votary to Hymen,  
Before my youth hath sacrificed to Venus?  
'Tis something with the soonest:—yet, to  
shew,

In things indifferent, I am not averse  
To your wise counsels, let me first survey  
Those beauties, that, in being a prince, I  
know

Are rivals for me. You will not confine me  
To your election; I must see, dear sister,  
With mine own eyes.

*Pul.* 'Tis fit, sir. Yet, in this,

You may please to consider, absolute princes  
Have, or should have, in policy, less free will  
Than such as are their vassals: for, you  
must,

As you are an emperor, in this high business  
Weigh with due providence, with whom  
alliance

May be most useful for the preservation  
Or increase of your empire.

*Theo.* I approve not

Such compositions for our moral ends,  
In what is in itself divine, nay, more,  
Decreed in heaven. Yet, if our neighbour  
princes,

Ambitious of such nearness, shall present  
Their dearest pledges to me, (ever reserving  
The caution of mine own content,) I will not  
Contemn their courteous offers.

*Pul.* Bring in the pictures.

[*Two pictures brought in.*

*Theo.* Must I then judge the substances  
by the shadows?

The painters are most envious, if they want  
Good colours for preferment: virtuous ladies  
Love this way to be flattered, and accuse  
The workman of detraction, if he add not  
Some grace they cannot truly call their own.  
Is't not so, Gratianus? you may challenge  
Some interest in the science.

*Grat.* A pretender

To the art, I truly honour, and subscribe  
To your majesty's opinion.

*Theo.* Let me see— [Reads.]  
*Cleanthe, daughter to the king of Epire,*  
*Ætatis suæ, the fourteenth : ripe enough,*  
 And forward too, I assure you. Let me  
 examine

The symmetries. If statuaries could  
 By the foot of Hercules set down punctually  
 His whole dimensions, and the countenance  
 be

The index of the mind, this may instruct me,  
 With the aids of that I've read touching this  
 subject,

What she is inward. The colour of her hair,  
 If it be, as this does promise, pale and faint,  
 And not a glistening white; her brow, so so;  
 The circles of her sight, too much con-  
 tracted;—

Juno's fair cow-eyes by old Homer are  
 Commended to their merit: here's a sharp  
 frost,

In the tip of her nose, which, by the length,  
 assures me

Of storms at midnight, if I fail to pay her  
 The tribute she expects. I like her not:  
 What is the other?

*Chry.* How hath he commenced  
 Doctor in this so sweet and secret art,  
 Without our knowledge?

*Tim.* Some of his forward pages  
 Have robbed us of the honour.

*Phil.* No such matter;  
 He has the theory only, not the practice.

*Theo.* [reads.] *Amasia, sister to the duke*  
*of Athens;*

*Her age eighteen, descended lineally*  
*From Theseus, as by her pedigree*

*Will be made apparent.* Of his lusty kin-  
 dred,

And lose so much time! 'tis strange!—as I  
 live, she hath

A philosophical aspect; there is  
 More wit than beauty in her face; and when  
 I court her, it must be in tropes, and figures,  
 Or she will cry, Absurd! she will have  
 her elenchs

To cut off any fallacy I can hope  
 To put upon her, and expect I should  
 Ever conclude in syllogisms, and those true  
 ones

*In parte et toto:* or she'll tire me with  
 Her tedious elocutions in the praise of  
 The increase of generation, for which  
 Alone, the sport, in her morality,  
 Is good and lawful, and to be often practised  
 For fear of missing. Fie on't! let the race  
 Of Theseus be match'd with Aristotle's:  
 I'll none of her.

*Pul.* You are curious in your choice, sir,  
 And hard to please; yet, if that your consent

May give authority to it, I'll present you  
 With one, that, if her birth and fortunes  
 answer

The rarities of her body and her mind,  
 Detraction durst not tax her.

*Theo.* Let me see her,  
 Though wanting those additions, which we  
 can

Supply from our own store: it is in us  
 To make men rich and noble; but to give  
 Legitimate shapes and virtues does belong  
 To the great Creator of them, to whose  
 bounties

Alone 'tis proper, and in this disdains  
 An emperor for his rival.

*Pul.* I applaud  
 This fit acknowledgment; since princes then  
 Grow less than common men, when they  
 contend

With him, by whom they are so.

*Enter Paulinus, Cleon, and Athenais,*  
*richly habited.*

*Theo.* I confess it.

*Pul.* Not to hold you in suspense, behold  
 the virgin,  
 Rich in her natural beauties, no way bor-  
 rowing

The adulterate aids of art. Peruse her  
 better;

She's worth your serious view.

*Phil.* I am amazed too:  
 I never saw her equal.

*Grat.* How his eye  
 Is fix'd upon her!

*Tim.* And, as she were a fort  
 He'd suddenly surprise, he measures her  
 From the bases to the battlements.

*Chry.* Ha! now I view her better,  
 I know her; 'tis the maid that not long since  
 Was a petitioner; her bravery  
 So alters her, I had forgot her face.

*Phil.* So has the emperor.

*Paul.* She holds out yet,  
 And yields not to the assault.

*Cle.* She's strongly guarded  
 In her virgin blushes.

*Paul.* When you know, fair creature,  
 It is the emperor that honours you  
 With such a strict survey of your sweet parts.  
 In thankfulness you cannot but return  
 Due reverence for the favour.

*Athen.* I was lost

In my astonishment at the glorious object,  
 And yet rest doubtful whether he expects,  
 Being more than man, my adoration,  
 Since sure there is divinity about him:  
 Or will rest satisfied, if my humble knees  
 In duty thus bow to him.

*Theo.* Ha ! it speaks.

*Pul.* She is no statue, sir.

*Theo.* Suppose her one,  
And that she had nor organs, voice, nor heat,  
Most willingly I would resign my empire,  
So it might be to aftertimes recorded  
That I was her Pygmalion ; though, like  
him,  
I doted on my workmanship, without hope  
too

Of having Cytherea so propitious  
To my vows or sacrifice, in her compassion  
To give it life or motion.

*Pul.* Pray you, be not rapt so,  
Nor borrow from imaginary fiction  
Impossible aids : she's flesh and blood, I  
assure you ;

And if you please to honour her in the trial,  
And be your own security, as you'll find  
I fable not, she comes in a noble way  
To be at your devotion.

*Chry.* 'Tis the maid  
I offer'd to your highness ; her changed  
shape

Conceal'd her from you.

*Theo.* At the first I knew her,  
And a second firebrand Cupid brings, to  
kindle

My flames almost put out : I am too cold,  
And play with opportunity.—May I taste  
then

The nectar of her lip ?—[*Kisses her.*]—I do  
not give it

The praise it merits : antiquity is too poor  
To help me with a simile to express her :  
Let me drink often from this living spring,  
To nourish new invention.

*Pul.* Do not surfeit  
In over-greedily devouring that  
Which may without satiety feast you often.  
From the moderation in receiving them,  
The choicest viands do continue pleasing  
To the most curious palates. If you think her  
Worth your embraces, and the sovereign title  
Of the Grecian Empress—

*Theo.* If ! how much you sin,  
Only to doubt it ; the possession of her  
Makes all that was before most precious to  
me,  
Common and cheap : in this you've shewn  
yourself

A provident protectress. I already  
Grow weary of the absolute command  
Of my so numerous subjects, and desire  
No sovereignty but here, and write down  
gladly

A period to my wishes.

*Pul.* Yet, before  
It be too late, consider her condition ;

Her father was a pagan, she herself  
A new-converted Christian.

*Theo.* Let me know  
The man to whose religious means I owe  
So great a debt.

*Paul.* You are advanced too high, sir,  
To acknowledge a beholdingness ; 'tis dis-  
charged,

And I beyond my hopes rewarded, if  
My service please your majesty.

*Theo.* Take this pledge  
Of our assured love. Are there none here  
Have suits to prefer ! on such a day as this  
My bounty's without limit. O my dear-  
est !—

I will not hear thee speak ; whatever in  
Thy thoughts is apprehended, I grant freely :  
Thou wouldst plead thy unworthiness. By  
thyself,

The magazine of felicity, in thy lowness  
Our eastern queens, at their full height, bow  
to thee,

And are, in their best trim, thy foils and  
shadows !

Excuse the violence of my love, which cannot  
Admit the least delay. Command the pa-  
triarch

With speed to do his holy office for us,  
That, when we are made one—

*Pul.* You must forbear, sir ;  
She is not yet baptized.

*Theo.* In the same hour  
In which she is confirmed in our faith,  
We mutually will give away each other,  
And both be gainers ; we'll hear no reply  
That may divert us. On.

*Pul.* You may hereafter  
Please to remember to whose furtherance  
You owe this height of happiness.

*Athen.* As I was  
Your creature when I first petition'd you,  
I will continue so, and you shall find me,  
Though an empress, still your servant.

[*All go off, but Philanax, Gratianus,  
and Timantus.*]

*Grat.* Here's a marriage  
Made up o' the sudden !

*Phil.* I repine not at  
The fair maid's fortune, though I fear the  
princess

Had some peculiar end in't.

*Tim.* Who's so simple  
Only to doubt it ?

*Grat.* It is too apparent ;  
She hath prefer'd a creature of her own,  
By whose means she may still keep to her-  
self

The government of the empire.

*Tim.* Whereas, if



The emperor had espoused some neighbour  
queen,

Pulcheria, with all her wisdom, could not  
Keep her pre-eminence.

*Phil.* Be it as it will,  
'Tis not now to be alter'd. Heaven, I say,  
Turn all to the best!

*Grat.* Are we come to praying again?  
*Phil.* Leave thy profaneness.

*Grat.* Would it would leave me!

I am sure I thrive not by it.

*Tim.* Come to the temple.

*Grat.* Even where you will—I know not  
what to think on't. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter Paulinus and Philanax.*

*Paul.* Nor this, nor the age before us,  
ever look'd on  
The like solemnity.

*Phil.* A sudden fever  
Kept me at home. Pray you, my lord,  
acquaint me

With the particulars.

*Paul.* You may presume  
No pomp nor ceremony could be wanting,  
Where there was privilege to command, and  
means

To cherish rare inventions.

*Phil.* I believe it;  
But the sum of all in brief.

*Paul.* Pray you, so take it:  
Fair Athenais, not long since a suitor,  
And almost in her hopes forsaken, first  
Was christen'd and the emperor's mother's  
name,

Eudocia, as he will'd, imposed upon her:  
Pulcheria, the ever-matchless princess,  
Assisted by her reverend aunt Maria,  
Her godmothers.

*Phil.* And who the masculine witness?

*Paul.* At the new empress' suit, I had the  
honour;

For which I must ever serve her.

*Phil.* 'Twas a grace  
With justice you may boast of.

*Paul.* The marriage follow'd;  
And, as 'tis said, the emperor made hold  
To turn the day to night; for to bed they  
went

As soon as they had dined, and there are  
wagers

Laid by some merry lords, he hath already  
Begot a boy upon her.

*Phil.* That is yet  
To be determined of; but I am certain

A prince, so soon in his disposition alter'd,  
Was never heard nor read of.

*Paul.* But of late,  
Frugal and sparing, now nor bounds nor  
limits

To his magnificent bounties. He affirm'd  
Having received more blessings by his  
empress

Than he could hope, in thankfulness to  
heaven

He cannot be too prodigal to others.  
Whatever's offer'd to his royal hand,  
He signs without perusing it.

*Phil.* I am here

Enjoin'd to free all such as lie for debt,  
The creditors to be paid out of his coffers.

*Paul.* And I all malefactors that are not  
Convicted or for treason or foul murder:  
Such only are excepted.

*Phil.* 'Tis a rare clemency!

*Paul.* Which we must not dispute, but put  
in practice. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Loud Music; Shouts within:* Heaven pre-  
serve the Emperor! Heaven bless the  
Empress! *Then enter in state, the Patri-  
arch, Chrysapius, Paulinus, Theodosius,  
Eudocia, Pulcheria; Arcadia and Flac-  
cilla, bearing up Eudocia's train; followed  
by Philanax, Gratianus, and Timantus.  
Several Suitors present petitions to the  
Emperor, which he seals.*

*Paul.* Sir, by your own rules of philosophy,  
You know things violent last not. Royal  
bounties

Are great and gracious, while they are dis-  
pens'd

With moderation; but, when their excess  
In giving giant-bulks to others, takes from  
A crop beyond their ventures; they lose  
The name of virtues, and, their natures  
changed,

Grow the most dangerous vices.

*Theo.* In this, sister,  
Your wisdom is not circular; they that sow  
In narrow bounds, cannot expect in reason  
A crop beyond their ventures: what I do

Disperse, I lend, and will with usury  
Return unto my heap. I only then

Am rich and happy (though my coffers sound  
With emptiness) when my glad subjects feel  
Their plenty and felicity is my gift;

And they will find, when they with cheer-  
fulness

Supply not my defects, I being the stomach  
To the politic body of the state, the limbs  
Grow suddenly faint and feeble: I could  
urge

Proofs of more fineness in their shape and language,

But none of greater strength.—Dissuade me not ;

What we will, we will do ; yet, to assure you Your care does not offend us, for an hour Be happy in the converse of my best And dearest comfort. May you please to license

My privacy some few minutes ?

*Eud.* License, sir !

I have no will but is derived from yours, And that still waits upon you ; nor can I Be left with such security with any As with the gracious princess, who receives Addition, though she be all excellence, In being styled your sister.

*Theo.* O sweet creature !

Let me be censured fond, and too indulgent, Nay, though they say uxorious, I care not— Her love and sweet humility exact A tribute far above my power to pay Her matchless goodness. Forward.

[*Flourish.* *Exeunt all but Pulcheria, Eudocia, Arcadia, and Flaccilla.*]

*Pul.* Now you find

Your dying father's prophecy, that foretold Your present greatness, to the full accomplish'd,

For the poor aids and furtherance I lent you, I willingly forget.

*Eud.* Even that binds me

To a more strict remembrance of the favour ; Nor shall you, from my foul ingratitude, In any circumstance, ever find cause To upbraid me with your benefit.

*Pul.* I believe so.

Pray you, give us leave :—[*Arcadia and Flaccilla walk aside.*—]—What now I must deliver

Under the deepest seal of secrecy, Though it be for your good, will give assurance

Of what is look'd for, if you not alone Hear, but obey my counsels.

*Eud.* They must be

Of a strange nature, if with zealous speed I put them not in practice.

*Pul.* 'Twere impertinence

To dwell on circumstances, since the wound Requires a sudden cure ; especially Since you, that are the happy instrument Elected to it, though young, in your judgment

Write far above your years, and may instruct Such as are more experienced.

*Eud.* Good madam,

In this I must oppose you ; I am well Acquainted with my weakness, and it will not

Become your wisdom, by which I am raised To this titulary height, that should correct The pride and overweening of my fortune, To play the parasite to it, in ascribing That merit to me, unto which I can Pretend no interest : pray you, excuse My bold simplicity, and to my weight Design me where you please, and you shall find,

In my obedience, I am still your creature.

*Pul.* 'Tis nobly answer'd, and I glory in The building I have raised : go on, sweet lady,

In this your virtuous progress : but to the point.

You know, nor do I envy it, you have Acquired that power which, not long since, was mine,

In governing the emperor, and must use The strength you hold in the heart of his affections,

For his private, as the public preservation, To which there is no greater enemy Than his exorbitant prodigality, Howe'er his sycophants and flatterers call it Royal magnificence ; and though you may Urge what's done for your honour must not be

Curb'd or controll'd by you, you cannot in Your wisdom but conceive, if that the torrent Of his violent bounties be not stopp'd or lessen'd,

It will prove most pernicious. Therefore, madam,

Since 'tis your duty, as you are his wife, To give him saving counsels, and in being Almost his idol, may command him to Take any shape you please, with a powerful hand

To stop him in his precipice to ruin—

*Eud.* Avert it, heaven !

*Pul.* Heaven is most gracious to you, In choosing you to be the instrument Of such a pious work. You see he signs What suit soever is preferr'd, not once Enquiring what it is, yielding himself A prey to all ; I would, therefore, have you, lady,

As I know you will, to advise him, or command him,

As he would reap the plenty of your favours, To use more moderation in his bounties ; And that, before he gives, he would consider The what, to whom, and wherefore.

*Eud.* Do you think

Such arrogance, or usurpation rather, Of what is proper and peculiar To every private husband, and much more

To him, an emperor, can rank with the obedience

And duty of a wife? Are we appointed  
In our creation (let me reason with you)  
To rule, or to obey? or, 'cause he loves me  
With a kind impotence, must I tyrannize  
Over his weakness, or abuse the strength  
With which he arms me, to his wrong? or,  
like

A prostituted creature, merchandize  
Our mutual delight for hire, or to  
Serve mine own sordid ends? In vulgar  
nuptials

Priority is exploded, though there be  
A difference in the parties; and shall I,  
His vassal, from obscurity raised by him  
To this so eminent light, presume t' appoint  
him

To do, or not to do, this, or that? When  
wives

Are well accommodated by their husbands,  
With all things both for use and ornament,  
Let them fix there, and never dare to  
question

Their wills or actions; for myself, I vow,  
Though now my lord would rashly give away  
His sceptre and imperial diadem,  
Or if there could be anything more precious,  
I would not cross it:—but I know this is  
But a trial of my temper, and as such  
I do receive it; or, if t' be otherwise,  
You are so subtle in your arguments,  
I dare not stay to bear them.

[Offers to retire.

*Pul.* Is it even so?

I have power o'er these yet, and command  
their stay,  
To harken nearer to me.

*Arcad.* We are charged  
By the emperor, our brother, to attend  
The empress' service.

*Flac.* You are too mortified, sister,  
(With reverence I speak it,) for young ladies,  
To keep you company. I am so tired  
With your tedious exhortations, doctrines,  
uses,

Of your religious morality,  
That, for my health's sake, I must take the  
freedom

To enjoy a little of those pretty pleasures  
That I was born to.

*Arcad.* When I come to your years,  
I'll do as you do; but, till then, with your  
pardon,

I'll lose no more time. I have not learn'd to  
dance yet,  
Nor sing, but holy hymns, and those to vile  
tunes too;

Nor to discourse, but of schoolmen's opinions.

How shall I answer my suitors, since, I hope,  
Ere long I shall have many, without practice  
To write, and speak, something that's not  
derived

From the fathers of philosophy?

*Flac.* We shall shame

Our breeding, sister, if we should go on thus.

*Arcad.* 'Tis for your credit that we study  
How to converse with men; women with  
women

Yields but a barren argument.

*Flac.* She frowns—

But you'll protect us, madam?

*Eud.* Yes, and love

Your sweet simplicity.

*Arcad.* All young girls are so,

Till they know the way of it.

*Flac.* But, when we are enter'd,

We shall on a good round pace.

*Eud.* I'll leave you, madam.

*Arcad.* And we our duties with you.

[Exit Eudocia, Arcadia, and Flaccilla.

*Pul.* On all hands

Thus slighted! no way left? Am I grown  
stupid

In my invention? can I make no use  
Of the emperor's bounties?—Now 'tis  
thought: within, there!

*Enter an Attendant.*

*Att.* Madam.

*Pul.* It shall be so:—nearer; your ear.  
—Draw a petition to this end.

[Whispers him.

*Att.* Besides

The danger to prefer it, I believe  
'Twill ne'er be granted.

*Pul.* How's this! are you grown,  
From a servant, my director? let me hear  
No more of this. Dispatch; [Exit Atten-  
dant.] I'll master him

At his own weapon.

*Enter Theodosius, Paulinus, Philanax,  
Timantus, and Gratianus.*

*Theo.* Let me understand it,  
If yet there be aught wanting that may  
perfect

A general happiness.

*Paul.* The people's joys

In seas of acclamations flow in,  
To wait on yours.

*Phil.* Their love, with bounty levied,  
Is a sure guard: obedience forced from fear,  
Paper fortification, which, in danger,  
Will yield to the impression of a reed,  
Or of itself fall off.

*Theo.* True, Philanax;

And by that certain compass we resolve  
To steer our bark of government.

*Re-enter Attendant with the petition, which  
he secretly delivers to Pulcheria.*

*Pul.* 'Tis well. [*Kneels.*]

*Theo.* My dearest and my all-deserving  
sister

As a petitioner kneel! It must not be.

Pray you, rise; although your suit were half  
my empire,

'Tis freely granted.

*Pul.* Your alacrity

To give hath made a beggar; yet, before  
My suit is by your sacred hand and seal  
Confirm'd, 'tis necessary you peruse  
The sum of my request.

[*Presents the petition.*]

*Theo.* We will not wrong

Your judgment in conceiving what 'tis fit  
For you to ask, and us to grant, so much,  
As to proceed with caution; give me my  
signet:

With confidence I sign it, and here vow  
By my father's soul, but with your free consent,  
It is irrevocable.

*Tim.* What if she now,  
Calling to memory how often we  
Have crossed her government, in revenge  
hath made

Petition for our heads?

*Grat.* They must even off then;  
No ransom can redeem us.

*Theo.* Let those jewels

So highly rated by the Persian merchants,  
Be bought, and as a sacrifice from us,  
Presented to Eudocia, she being only  
Worthy to wear them. I am angry with  
The irresistible necessity

Of my occasions and important cares,  
That so long keep me from her.

[*Exeunt* Theodosius, Paulinus, Phi-  
lanax, Timantus, and Gratianus.

*Pul.* Go to the empress,

And tell her, on the sudden I am sick,  
And do desire the comfort of a visit,  
If she please to vouchsafe it. From me use  
Your humblest language—[*Exit* Attendant.]  
but, when once I have her

In my possession, I will rise and speak  
In a higher strain: say it raise storms, no  
matter;

Fools judge by the event, my ends are  
honest. [*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter* Theodosius, Timantus, and Philanax.

*Theo.* What is become of her? Can she,  
that carries

Such glorious excellence of light about her,  
Be any where conceal'd?

*Phil.* We have sought her lodgings,  
And all we can learn from the servants, is,  
She, by your majesty's sisters waited on,  
The attendance of her other officers,  
By her express command, denied—

*Theo.* Forbear

Impertinent circumstances,—whither went  
she? speak.

*Phil.* As they guess, to the laurel grove.

*Theo.* So slightly guarded!

What an earthquake I feel in me! and, but  
that

Religion assures the contrary,  
The poets' dreams of lustful fanns and satyrs—  
Would make me fear I know not what.

*Enter* Paulinus.

*Paul.* I have found her,  
An it please your majesty.

*Theo.* Yes, it doth please me:  
But why return'd without her?

*Paul.* As she made

Her speediest approaches to your presence,  
A servant of the princess's, Pulcheria,  
Encounter'd her: what 'twas he whisper'd  
to her

I am ignorant; but hearing it, she started,  
And will'd me to excuse her absence from you  
The third part of an hour.

*Theo.* In this she takes

So much of my life from me: yet, I'll bear it  
With what patience I may, since 'tis her  
pleasure.

Go back, my good Paulinus, and entreat her  
Not to exceed a minute.

*Tim.* Here's strange fondness! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter* Pulcheria and Servants.

*Pul.* You are certain she will come?

*1 Serv.* She is already

*Enter'd* your outward lodgings.

*Pul.* No train with her?

*1 Serv.* Your excellence' sisters only.

*Pul.* 'Tis the better.

See the doors strongly guarded, and deny  
Access to all, but with our special license:  
Why dost thou stay? shew your obedience,  
Your wisdom now is useless.

[*Exeunt* Servants.]

*Enter* Eudocia, Arcadia, and Flaccilla.

*Flac.* She is sick, sure,

Or, in fit reverence to your majesty,  
She had waited you at the door.

*Arcad.* 'Twould hardly be

[*Pulcheria walking by.*]

Excused, in civil manners, to her equal :  
But with more difficulty to you, that are  
So far above her.

*Eud.* Not in her opinion ;  
She hath been too long accustom'd to command,

To acknowledge a superior.

*Arcad.* There she walks.

*Flac.* If she be not sick of the sullens, I see not

The least infirmity in her.

*Eud.* This is strange !

*Arcad.* Open your eyes ; the empress.

*Pul.* Reach that chair :

Now, sitting thus at distance, I'll vouchsafe  
To look upon her.

*Arcad.* How, sister ! pray you, awake ;  
Are you in your wits ?

*Flac.* Grant, heaven, your too much  
learning

Does not conclude in madness !

*Eud.* You entreated

A visit from me.

*Pul.* True, my servant used  
Such language ; but now, as a mistress, I  
Command your service.

*Eud.* Service !

*Arcad.* She's stark mad, sure.

*Pul.* You'll find I can dispose of what's  
mine own,

Without a guardian.

*Eud.* Follow me.—I will see you  
When your frantic fit is o'er.—I do begin  
To be of your belief.

*Pul.* It will deceive you.

Thou shalt not stir from hence :—thus, as  
mine own,

I seize upon thee.

*Flac.* Help, help ! violence  
Offer'd to the empress' person !

*Pul.* 'Tis in vain :

She was an empress once, but, by my gift ;  
Which being abused, I do recall my grant.  
You are read in story ; call to your remem-  
brance

What the great Hector's mother, Hecuba,  
Was to Ulysses, Ilium sack'd.

*Eud.* A slave.

*Pul.* To me thou art so.

*Eud.* Wonder and amazement

Quite overwhelm me : how am I transform'd ?  
How have I lost my liberty ?

[*Knocking within.*

*Pul.* Thou shalt know  
Too soon, no doubt.

*Enter a Servant.*

Who's that, that with such rudeness  
Beats at the door ?

*Serv.* The prince Paulinus, madam ;  
Sent from the emperor, to attend upon  
The gracious empress.

*Arcad.* And who is your slave now ?

*Flac.* Sister, repent in time, and beg a  
pardon

For your presumption.

*Pul.* It is resolved :

From me return this answer to Paulinus,  
She shall not come ; she's mine ; the emperor  
hath

No interest in her. [Exit Servant.

*Eud.* Whatsoe'er I am,

You take not from your power o'er me, to  
yield

A reason for this usage.

*Pul.* Though my will is  
Sufficient, to add to thy affliction,  
Know, wretched thing, 'tis not thy fate, but  
folly,

Hath made thee what thou art : 'tis some  
delight

To urge my merits to one so ungrateful ;  
Therefore with horror hear it. When thou  
wert

Thrust, as a stranger, from thy father's  
house,

Exposed to all calamities that want  
Could throw upon thee, thine own brothers'  
scorn,

And in thy hopes, as by the world, for-  
saken,

My pity the last altar that was left thee,  
I heard thy syren charms, with feeling heard  
them,

And my compassion made mine eyes vie  
tears

With thine, dissembling crocodile ! and  
when queens

Were emulous for thy imperial bed,  
The garments of thy sorrows cast aside,  
I put thee in a shape as would have forced  
Envy from Cleopatra, had she seen thee.

Then, when I knew my brother's blood was  
warm'd

With youthful fires, I brought thee to his  
presence ;

And how my deep designs, for thy good  
plotted,

Succeeded to my wishes, is apparent,  
And needs no repetition.

*Eud.* I am conscious

Of your so many and unequal'd favours ;  
But find not how I may accuse myself  
For any facts committed, that, with justice,  
Can raise your anger to this height against  
me.

*Pul.* Pride and forgetfulness would not  
let thee see that,

Against which now thou canst not close thy eyes.

What injury could be equal to thy late Contempt of my good counsel? When I urged

The emperor's prodigal bounties, and entertained

That you would use your power to give them limits,

Or, at the least, a due consideration Of such as sued, and for what, ere he sign'd it ;

In opposition, you brought against me The obedience of a wife, that ladies were not, Being well accommodated by their lords, To question, but much less to cross, their pleasures ;

Nor would you, though the emperor were resolved

To give away his sceptre, hinder it, Since 'twas done for your honour ; covering, with

False colours of humility, your ambition.

*Eud.* And is this my offence?

*Pul.* As wicked counsel

Is still most hurtful unto those that give it ; Such as deny to follow what is good, In reason, are the first that must repent it. When I please, you shall hear more ; in the mean time,

Thank your own wilful folly, that hath changed you

From an empress to a bondswoman.

*Theo.* [*within.*] Force the doors ; Kill those that dare resist.

*Enter* Theodosius, Paulinus, Philanax, Chrysapius, and Gratianus.

*Eud.* Dear sir, redeem me.

*Flac.* O suffer not, for your own honour's sake,

The empress, you so late loved, to be made A prisoner in the court.

*Arcad.* Leap to his lips, You'll find them the best sanctuary.

*Flac.* And try then, What interest my reverend sister hath To force you from them.

*Theo.* What strange May-game's this ? Though done in sport, how ill this levity Becomes your wisdom ?

*Pul.* I am serious, sir, And have done nothing but what you in honour,

And as you are yourself an emperor, Stand bound to justify.

*Theo.* Take heed ; put not these Strange trials on my patience.

*Pul.* Do not you, sir,

Deny your own act : As you are a man, And stand on your own bottom, 'twill appear A childish weakness to make void a grant Sign'd by your sacred hand and seal, and strengthen'd

With a religious oath, but with my license Never to be recall'd. For some few minutes Let reason rule your passion, and in this  
*[Delivers the deed.]*

Be pleased to read my interest : you will find there,

What you in me call violence, is justice, And that I may make use of what's my own, According to my will. 'Tis your own gift, sir ;

And what an emperor gives, should stand as firm

As the celestial poles upon the shoulders Of Atlas, or his successor in that office, The great Alcides.

*Theo.* Miseries of more weight Than 'tis feign'd they supported, fall upon me.

What hath my rashness done ! In this transaction,

Drawn in express and formal terms, I have Given and consign'd into your hands, to use And observe as you please, my dear Eudocia !

It is my deed, I do confess it is, And, as I am myself, not to be cancell'd : But yet you may shew mercy—and you will, When you consider that there is no beauty So perfect in a creature, but is soil'd With some unbeseeming blemish. You have labour'd

To build me up a complete prince, 'tis granted ;

Yet, as I am a man, like other monarchs I have defects and frailties : my facility To send petitioners with pleased looks from me,

Is all I can be charged with ; and it will Become your wisdom, (since 'tis in your power,)

In charity to provide I fall no further Or in my oath, or honour.

*Pul.* Royal sir, This was the mark I aim'd at, and I glory At the length, you so conceive it : 'twas a weakness

To measure, by your own integrity, The purposes of others. I have shewn you, In a true mirror, what fruit grows upon The tree of hoodwink'd bounty, and what dangers

Precipitation, in the managing Your great affairs, produceth.

*Theo.* I embrace it

As a grave advertisement, and vow hereafter  
Never to sign petitions at this rate.

*Pul.* For mine, see, sir, 'tis cancell'd ;  
on my knees  
I re-deliver what I now begg'd from you.

[*Tears the deed.*]

She is my second gift.

*Theo.* Which if I part from  
Till death divorce us—— [*Kisses Eudocia.*]

*Eud.* So, sir !

*Theo.* Nay, sweet, chide not,  
I am punish'd in thy looks ; defer the rest,  
Till we are more private.

*Pul.* I ask pardon too,  
If, in my personated passion, I  
Appear'd too harsh and rough.

*Eud.* 'Twas gentle language,  
What I was then consider'd.

*Pul.* O, dear madam,  
It was decorum in the scene.

*Eud.* This trial,  
When I was Athenais, might have pass'd,  
But as I am the empress——

*Theo.* Nay, no anger,  
Since all good was intended.

[*Exeunt* Theodosius, Eudocia, Arcadia,  
and Flaccilla.

*Pul.* Building on  
That certain base, I fear not what can follow.

[*Exit.*]

*Paul.* These are strange devices, Philanax.

*Phil.* True, my lord.  
May all turn to the best !

*Grat.* The emperor's looks  
Promised a calm.

*Chry.* But the vex'd empress' frowns  
Presaged a second storm.

*Paul.* I am sure I feel one  
In my leg already.

*Phil.* Your old friend, the gont ?

*Paul.* My former companion, Philanax.

*Chry.* To your rest.

*Paul.* Rest, and forbearing wine, with a  
temperate diet,  
Though many mountebanks pretend the cure  
of't,

I have found my best physicians.

*Phil.* Ease to your lordship. [*Exeunt.*]

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter* Eudocia and Chrysapius.

*Eud.* Make me her property !

*Chry.* Your majesty  
Hath just cause of distaste ; and your re-  
sentment

Of the affront, in the point of honour, cannot  
But meet a fair construction.

*Eud.* I have only

The title of an empress, but the power  
Is by her ravish'd from me : she surveys  
My actions as a governess, and calls  
My not observing all that she directs,  
Folly and disobedience.

*Chry.* Under correction,  
With grief I've long observed it ; and, if you  
Stand pleased to sign my warrant, I'll deliver,  
In my unfeign'd zeal and desire to serve you,  
(Howe'er I run the hazard of my head for't,  
Should it arrive at the knowledge of the  
princess,)

Not alone the reasons why things are thus  
carried,

But give into your hands the power to clip  
The wings of her command.

*Eud.* Your service this way  
Cannot offend me.

*Chry.* Be you pleased to know, then,  
But still with pardon, if I am too bold.  
Your too much sufferance imp's the broken  
feathers

Which carry her to this proud height, in  
which

She with security soars, and still towers o'er  
you :

But if you would employ the strengths you  
hold

In the emperor's affections, and remember  
The orb you move in should admit no star  
else,

You never would confess the managing  
Of state affairs to her alone are proper,  
And you sit by, a looker on.

*Eud.* I would not,  
If it were possible I could attempt  
Her diminution, without a taint  
Of foul ingratitude in myself.

*Chry.* In this  
The sweetness of your temper does abuse  
you ;

And you call that a benefit to yourself,  
Which she, for her own ends, conferr'd  
upon you.

'Tis yielded, she gave way to your advance-  
ment :

But for what cause ? that she might still  
continue

Her absolute sway and swing o'er the whole  
state :

And that she might to her admirers vaunt,  
The empress was her creature, and the giver  
To be preferr'd before the gift.

*Eud.* It may be.

*Chry.* Nay, 'tis most certain : whereas  
would you please

In a true glass to look upon yourself,  
And view, without detraction, your own  
merits,

Which all men wonder at, you would find  
that fate,

Without a second cause, appointed you  
To the supremest honour. For the princess,  
She hath reign'd long enough, and her  
remove

Will make your entrance free to the posses-  
sion

Of what you were born to; and, but once  
resolve

To build upon her ruins, leave the engines  
That must be used to undermine her great-  
ness

To my provision.

*Eud.* I thank your care:

But a design of such weight must not be  
Rashly determined of; it will exact  
A long and serious consultation from me.

In the meantime, Chrysapius, rest assured  
I live your thankful mistress. [*Exit.*]

*Chry.* Is this all?

Will the physic that I minister'd work no  
further?

I have play'd the fool; and, leaving a calm  
port,

Embark'd myself on a rough sea of danger.  
In her silence lies my safety, which how  
can I

Hope from a woman? but the die is thrown,  
And I must stand the hazard. [*Exit.*]

#### SCENE II.—*A Space before the Palace.*

*Enter* Theodosius, Philanax, Timantus,  
Gratianus, and Huntsmen.

*Theo.* Is Paulinus  
So tortured with his gout?

*Phil.* Most miserably.

And it adds much to his affliction, that  
The pain denies him power to wait upon  
Your majesty.

*Theo.* I pity him:—he is  
A wondrous honest man, and what he  
suffers,

I know, will grieve my empress.

*Tim.* He, indeed, is

Much bound to her gracious favour.

*Theo.* He deserves it;  
She cannot find a subject upon whom  
She better may confer it.—Is the stag  
Safe lodged?

*Grat.* Yes, sir, and the hounds and hunts-  
men ready.

*Phil.* He will make you royal sport. He  
is a deer  
Of ten, at the least.

*Enter* a Countryman with an apple.

*Grat.* Whither will this clown?

*Tim.* Stand back.

*Countr.* I would zee the emperor; why  
should you courtiers

Scorn a poor countryman? we zweet at the  
plough

To vill your mouths, you and your curs  
might starve else:

We prune the orchards, and you cranch the  
fruit;

Yet still you're snarling at us.

*Theo.* What's the matter?

*Countr.* I would look on thy zweet face.

*Tim.* Unmannerly swain!

*Countr.* Zwain! though I am a zwain, I  
have a heart yet,

As ready to do service for my liege,

As any princox peacock of you all.

Zookers! had I one of you zingle, with this  
twig

I would soo veeze you.

*Tim.* Will your majesty

Hear his rude language?

*Theo.* Yes, and hold it as

An ornament, not a blemish. O, Timantus,  
Since that dread Power by whom we are,  
disdains not

With an open ear to hear petitions from us;  
Easy access in us, his deputies,

To the meanest of our subjects, is a debt

Which we stand bound to pay.

*Countr.* By my granam's ghost

'Tis a wholesome zaying! our vicar could not  
mend it

In the pulpit on a Zunday.

*Theo.* What's thy suit, friend?

*Countr.* Zute! I would laugh at that. Let

the court beg from thee,  
What the poor country gives: I bring a

present  
To thy good grace, which I can call mine

own,  
And look not, like these gay volk, for a return

Of what they venture. Have I giv'n't you?  
ha!

*Chry.* A perilous knave.

*Countr.* Zee here a dainty apple,

[*Presents the apple.*]

Of mine own grafting; zweet and zound, I  
assure thee.

*Theo.* It is the fairest fruit I ever saw.

Those golden apples in the Hesperian or-  
chards,

So strangely guarded by the watchful dragon  
As they required great Hercules to get them;

Or those with which Hippomenes deceived  
Swift-footed Atalanta, when I look



On this, deserve no wonder. You behold  
The poor man and his present with contentment ;

I to their value prize both : he that could  
So aid weak nature by his care and labour,  
As to compel a crab-tree stock to bear  
A precious fruit of this large size and beauty,  
Would by his industry change a petty village  
Into a populous city, and from that  
Erect a flourishing kingdom. Give the  
fellow,

For an encouragement to his future labours,  
Ten Attic talents.

*Countr.* I will weary heaven  
With my prayers for your majesty. [*Exit.*

*Theo.* Philanax,  
From me present this rarity to the rarest  
And best of women : when I think upon  
The boundless happiness that from her flows  
to me,

In my imagination I am rapt  
Beyond myself : but I forget our hunting.  
To the forest, for the exercise of my body ;  
But for my mind, 'tis wholly taken up  
In the contemplation of her matchless  
virtues. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* Eudocia, Pulcheria, Arcadia, and  
Flaccilla.

*Eud.* You shall know there's a difference  
between us.

*Pul.* There was, I am certain, not long  
since, when you  
Kneel'd a petitioner to me ; then you were  
happy

To be near my feet ; and do you hold it now,  
As a disparagement, that I side you, lady ?

*Eud.* Since you respect me only as I was,  
What I am shall be remember'd.

*Pul.* Does the means  
I practis'd, to give good and saving counsels  
To the emperor, and your new-stamp'd  
majesty,  
Still stick in your stomach ?

*Eud.* 'Tis not yet digested,  
In troth it is not. Why, good governess,  
Though you are held for a grand madam,  
and yourself

The first that overprize it, I ne'er took  
Your words for Delphian oracles, nor your  
actions

For such wonders as you make them :—there  
is one,

When she shall see her time, as fit and able  
To be made partner of the emperor's cares,  
As your wise self, and may with justice  
challenge

A nearer interest.—You have done your visit,  
So, when you please, you may leave me.

*Pul.* I'll not bandy  
Words with your mightiness, proud one ;  
only this,

You carry too much sail for your small bark,  
And that, when you least think upon't, may  
sink you. [*Exit.*

*Flac.* I am glad she's gone.  
*Arcad.* I fear'd she would have read  
A tedious lecture to us.

*Enter* Philanax with the apple.

*Phil.* From the emperor,  
*This rare fruit to the rarest.*

*Eud.* How, my lord !  
*Phil.* I use his language, madam ; and  
that trust,

Which he imposed on me, discharged, his  
pleasure  
Commands my present service. [*Exit.*

*Eud.* Have you seen  
So fair an apple !

*Flac.* Never.  
*Arcad.* If the taste  
Answer the beauty.

*Eud.* Prettyly begg'd :—you should have it,  
But that you eat too much cold fruit, and  
that  
Changes the fresh red in your cheeks to pale-  
ness.

*Enter* a Servant.

I have other dainties for you :—You come  
from

Paulinus ; how is't with that truly noble,  
And honest lord, my witness at the fount,  
In a word, the man to whose bless'd charity  
I owe my greatness ? How is't with him ?

*Serv.* Sprightly  
In his mind ; but, by the raging of his gout,  
In his body much distemper'd ; that you  
pleas'd

To inquire his health, took off much from  
his pain,

His glad looks did confirm it.

*Eud.* Do his doctors  
Give him no hope ?

*Serv.* Little ; they rather fear  
By his continual burning, that he stands  
In danger of a fever.

*Eud.* To him again,  
And tell him that I heartily wish it lay  
In me to ease him ; and from me deliver  
This choice fruit to him ; you may say to that,  
I hope it will prove physical.

*Serv.* The good lord  
Will be o'erjoyed with the favour.

*Eud.* He deserves more. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—*A Room in Paulinus' House.*

Paulinus discovered in a Chair, attended by a Surgeon.

*Surg.* I have done as much as art can do, to stop

The violent course of your fit, and I hope you feel it :

How does your honour ?

*Paul.* At some ease, I thank you ; I would you could assure continuance of it, For the moiety of my fortune.

*Surg.* If I could cure The gout, my lord, without the philosopher's stone

I should soon purchase, it being a disease In poor men very rare, and in the rich The cure impossible. Your many bounties Bid me prepare you for a certain truth, And to flatter you were dishonest.

*Paul.* Your plain dealing Deserves a fee. Would there were many more such Of your profession ! Happy are poor men !

If sick with the excess of heat or cold, Caused by necessitous labour, not loose surfeits,—

They, when spare diet, or kind nature fail To perfect their recovery, soon arrive at Their rest in death : but, on the contrary, The great and noble are exposed as preys To the rapine of physicians ; and they, In lingering out what is remediless, Aim at their profit, not the patient's health. A thousand trials and experiments Have been put upon me, and I forced to pay dear

For my vexation ; but I am resolved (I thank your honest freedom) to be made A property no more for knaves to work on.—

*Enter Cleon with a parchment roll.*

What have you there ?

*Cle.* The triumphs of an artsman O'er all infirmities, made authentical With the names of princes, kings, and emperors,

That were his patients.

*Paul.* Some empiric.

*Cle.* It may be so ; but he swears, within three days

He'll grub up your gout by the roots, and make you able

To march ten leagues a day in complete armour.

*Paul.* Impossible.

*Cle.* Or, if you like not him—

*Surg.* Hear him, my lord, for your mirth ; I will take order

They shall not wrong you.

*Paul.* Usher in your monster.

*Cle.* He is at hand.—March up : now speak for yourself.

*Enter Empiric.*

*Emp.* I come not, right honourable, to your presence, with any base and sordid end of reward ; the immortality of my fame is the white I shoot at : the charge of my most curious and costly ingredients frayed, amounting to some seventeen thousand crowns—a trifle in respect of health—writing your noble name in my catalogue, I shall acknowledge myself amply satisfied.

*Surg.* I believe so.

*Emp.* For your own sake, I most heartily wish that you had now all the diseases, maladies, and infirmities upon you, that were ever remembered by old Galen, Hippocrates, or the later and more admired Paracelsus.

*Paul.* For your good wish, I thank you !

*Emp.* Take me with you, I beseech your good lordship.—I urged it, that your joy, in being certainly and suddenly freed from them, may be the greater, and my not-to-be-paralleled skill the more remarkable. The cure of the gout—a toy, without boast be it said, my cradle-practice : The cancer, the fistula, the dropsy, consumption of lungs and kidneys, hurts in the brain, heart, or liver, are things worthy my opposition ; but in the recovery of my patients I ever overcome them. But to your gout—

*Paul.* Ay, marry, sir, that cured, I shall be apter

To give credit to the rest.

*Emp.* Suppose it done, sir.

*Surg.* And the means you use, I beseech you ?

*Emp.* I will do it in the plainest language, and discover my ingredients. First, my *boteni terebinthina* of Cypris, my manna, *ros cælo*, coagulated with *vetulos oorum*, vulgarly yolks of eggs, with a little cyath or quantity of my potable elixir, with some few scruples of sassafras and guaiacum, so taken every morning and evening, in the space of three days purgeth, cleanseth, and dissipateth the inward causes of the virulent tumour.

*Paul.* Why do you smile ?

*Surg.* When he hath done I will resolve you.

*Emp.* For my exterior applications, I have these balsum-unguentulums, extracted from herbs, plants, roots, seeds, gums, and

a million of other vegetables, the principal of which are, *Ulissipona*, or *serpentaria*, *sophia*, or *herba consolidarum*, *parthenium*, or *comanilla Romana*, *mumia transmarina*, and mixed with my *plumbum philosophorum*, and *mater metallorum*, *cum ossa paraleli*, *est universale medicamentum in podagra*.

*Cle.* A conjuring balsamum!

*Emp.* This applied warm upon the pained place, with a feather of struthio-cameli, or a bird of paradise, which is everywhere to be had, shall expulse this tartarous, viscous, anatheos, and malignant dolor.

*Surg.* An excellent receipt! but does your lordship know what 'tis good for?

*Paul.* I would be instructed.

*Surg.* For the gonorrhœa, or, if you will hear it

In a plainer phrase, the pox.

*Emp.* If it cure his lordship

Of that by the way, I hope, sir, 'tis the better.

My medicine serves for all things, and the pox, sir,

Though falsely named the sciatica, or gout, Is the more catholic sickness.

*Paul.* Hence with the rascal!

Yet hurt him not, he makes me smile, and that

Frees him from punishment.

[*They thrust him off.*]

*Surg.* Such slaves as this  
Render our art contemptible.

*Enter Servant with the apple.*

*Serv.* My good lord.

*Paul.* So soon return'd!

*Serv.* And with this present from

Your great and gracious mistress, with her wishes

It may prove physical to you.

*Paul.* In my heart

I kneel, and thank her bounty. Dear friend Cleon,

Give him the cupboard of plate in the next room,

For a reward.—[*Exeunt Cleon and Servant.*]

—Most glorious fruit! but made  
More precious by her grace and love that sent it:

To touch it only, coming from her hand,  
Makes me forget all pain. A diamond

Of this large size, (though it would buy a kingdom,)

Hewed from the rock, and laid down at my feet,

Nay, though a monarch's gift, will hold no value,

Compared with this—and yet, ere I presume  
To taste it, though, sans question, it is  
Some heavenly restorative, I in duty  
Stand bound to weigh my own unworthiness.  
Ambrosia is food only for the gods,  
And not by human lips to be profaned.  
I may adore it as some holy relic  
Derived from thence, but impious to keep it  
In my possession; the emperor only  
Is worthy to enjoy it.—

*Re-enter Cleon.*

Go, good Cleon,

And (cease this admiration at this object,)

From me present this to my royal master,

I know it will amaze him; and excuse me

That I am not myself the bearer of it.

That I should be lame now, when with wings  
of duty

I should fly to the service of this empress!

Nay, no delays, good Cleon.

*Cle.* I am gone, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter Theodosius, Chrysapius, Timantus,  
and Gratianus.*

*Chry.* Are you not tired, sir?

*Theo.* Tired! I must not say so,

However, though I rode hard. To a huntsman,

His toil is his delight, and to complain  
Of weariness, would shew as poorly in him

As if a general should grieve for a wound

Received upon his forehead, or his breast,

After a glorious victory. Lay by

These accoutrements for the chase.

*Enter Pulcheria.*

*Pul.* You are well return'd, sir,

From your princely exercise.

*Theo.* Sister, to you

I owe the freedom, and the use of all

The pleasures I enjoy: your care provides

For my security, and the burthen, which

I should alone sustain, you undergo,

And, by your painful watchings, yield my  
sleeps

Both sound and sure. How happy am I in

Your knowledge of the art of government!

And, credit me, I glory to behold you

Dispose of great designs, as if you were

A partner, and no subject of my empire.

*Pul.* My vigilance, since it hath well succeeded,

I am confident you allow of—yet it is not  
Approved by all.

*Theo.* Who dares repine at that  
Which hath our suffrage?

*Pul.* One that too well knows  
The strength of her abilities can better  
My weak endeavours.

*Theo.* In this you reflect  
Upon my empress?

*Pul.* True: for, as she is  
The consort of your bed, 'tis fit she share in  
Your cares and absolute power.

*Theo.* You touch a string  
That sounds but harshly to me; and I must  
In a brother's love, advise you, that hereafter  
You would forbear to move it: since she is  
In her pure self a harmony of such sweetness,  
Composed of duty, chaste desires, her beauty  
(Though it might tempt a hermit from his  
beads)

The least of her endowments. I am sorry  
Her holding the first place, since that the  
second

Is proper to yourself, calls on your envy.  
She er! it is impossible in a thought;  
And much more speak or do what may  
offend me.

In other things I would believe you, sister;  
But, though the tongues of saints and angels  
tax'd her,

Of any imperfection, I should be  
Incredulous.

*Pul.* She is yet a woman, sir.

*Theo.* The abstract of what's excellent in  
the sex,  
But to their mulcts and frailties a mere  
stranger;  
I'll die in this belief.

*Enter Cleon with the apple.*

*Cle.* Your humblest servant,  
The lord Paulinus, as a witness of  
His zeal and duty to your majesty,  
Presents you with this jewel.

*Theo.* Ha!

*Cle.* It is  
Preferr'd by him—

*Theo.* Above his honour?

*Cle.* No, sir;  
I would have said his patrimony.

*Theo.* 'Tis the same.

*Cle.* And he entreats, since lameness may  
excuse

His not presenting it himself, from me  
(Though far unworthy to supply his place)  
You would vouchsafe to accept it.

*Theo.* Further off,  
You've told your tale. Stay you for a reward?  
Take that. [*Strikes him.*]

*Pul.* How's this?

*Chry.* I never saw him moved thus.

*Theo.* We must not part so, sir:—a guard  
upon him!

*Enter Guard.*

May I not vent my sorrows in the air,  
Without discovery? Forbear the room!  
[*Exeunt Pul. Chry. Tim. Grat. and  
Guard with Cle.*]

Yet be within call—What an earthquake I  
feel in me!

And on the sudden my whole fabric totters.  
My blood within me turns, and through my  
veins,

Parting with natural redness, I discern it  
Changed to a fatal yellow. What an army  
Of hellish furies, in the horrid shapes  
Of doubts and fears, charge on me! rise to  
my rescue,

Thou stout maintainer of a chaste wife's  
honour,

The confidence of her virtues; be not shaken  
With the wind of vain surmises, much less  
suffer

The devil Jealousy to whisper to me  
My curious observation of that  
I must no more remember. Will't not be?  
Thou uninvited guest, ill-manner'd monster,  
I charge thee, leave me! wilt thou force me  
to

Give fuel to that fire I would put out?  
The goodness of my memory proves my  
mischiefs,

And I would sell my empire, could it pur-  
chase

The dull art of forgetfulness.—Who waits  
there?

*Re-enter Timantus.*

*Tim.* Most sacred sir—

*Theo.* Sacred, as 'tis accus'd,  
Is proper to me. Sirrah, upon your life,  
Without a word concerning this, command  
Eudocia to come to me. [*Exit Tim.*]

Would I had

Ne'er known her by that name, my mother's  
name,

Or that, for her own sake, she had continued  
Poor Athenais still!—No intermission!

Wilt thou so soon torment me? must I read,  
Writ in the table of my memory,

To warrant my suspicion, how Paulinus  
(Though ever thought a man averse to  
women)

First gave her entertainment, made her way  
For audience to my sister?—then I did

Myself observe how he was ravish'd with  
The gracious delivery of her story,

Which was, I grant, the bait that first took  
me, too:—

She was his convert; what the rhetoric was  
He used, I know not; and, since she was  
mine,

In private as in public what a mass  
Of grace and favour hath she heap'd upon  
him!

And, but to-day, this fatal fruit—She's come.

*Re-enter Timantus with Eudocia, Flaccilla,  
and Arcadia.*

Can she be guilty?

*Eud.* You seem troubled, sir;  
My innocence makes me bold to ask the  
cause,

That I may ease you of it. No salute,  
After four long hours' absence!

*Theo.* Prithee, forgive me.— [*Kisses her.*]  
Methinks I find Paulinus on her lips,  
And the fresh nectar that I drew from  
thence

Is on the sudden pall'd.—How have you  
spent

Your hours since I last saw you?

*Eud.* In the converse  
Of your sweet sisters.

*Theo.* Did not Philanax,  
From me deliver you an apple?

*Eud.* Yes, sir;  
Heaven, how you frown! pray you, talk of  
something else,  
Think not of such a trifle.

*Theo.* How, a trifle!  
Does any toy from me presented to you,  
Deserve to be so slighted? do you value  
What's sent, and not the sender? from a  
peasant

It had deserved your thanks.

*Eud.* And meets from you, sir,  
All possible respect.

*Theo.* I prized it, lady,  
At a higher rate than you believe; and would  
not

Have parted with it, but to one I did  
Prefer before myself.

*Eud.* It was, indeed,  
The fairest that I ever saw.

*Theo.* It was;  
And it had virtues in it, my Eudocia,  
Not visible to the eye.

*Eud.* It may be so, sir.

*Theo.* What did you with it?—tell me  
punctually;

I look for a strict account.

*Eud.* What shall I answer? [*Aside.*]

*Theo.* Do you stagger? Ha!

*Eud.* No, sir; I have eaten it.

It had the pleasant'st taste!—I wonder that  
You found it not in my breath.

*Theo.* I'faith, I did not,  
And it was wondrous strange.

*Eud.* Pray you, try again.

*Theo.* I find no scent of't here: you play  
with me;

You have it still?

*Eud.* By your sacred life and fortune,  
An oath I dare not break, I have eaten it.

*Theo.* Do you know how this oath binds?

*Eud.* Too well, to break it.

*Theo.* That ever man, to please his brutish  
sense,

Should slave his understanding to his  
passions,

And, taken with soon-fading white and red,  
Deliver up his credulous ears to hear

The magic of a Syren; and from these  
Believe there ever was, is, or can be,

More than a seeming honesty in bad woman!

*Eud.* This is strange language, sir.

*Theo.* Who waits? Come all.

*Re-enter Pulcheria, Philanax, Chrysapius,  
Gratianus, and Guard.*

Nay, sister, not so near, being of the sex,  
I fear you are infected too.

*Pul.* What mean you?

*Theo.* To shew you a miracle, a prodigy  
Which Afric never equall'd:—Can you  
think

This masterpiece of heaven, this precious-  
vellum,

Of such a purity and virgin whiteness,  
Could be design'd to have perjury and  
whoredom,

In capital letters, writ upon't?

*Pul.* Dear sir.

*Theo.* Nay, add to this, an impudence  
beyond

All prostituted boldness. Art not dead yet?  
Will not the tempests in thy conscience rend  
thee

As small as atoms, that there may no sign  
Be left thou ever wert so? wilt thou live

Till thou art blasted with the dreadful  
lightning

Of pregnant and unanswerable proofs  
Of thy adulterous twines? die yet, that I  
With my honour may conceal it.

*Eud.* Would long since

The Gorgon of your rage had turn'd me-  
marble!

Or, if I have offended—

*Theo.* If!—good angels!

But I am tame; look on this dumb accuser.  
[*Shewing the apple.*]

*Eud.* Oh, I am lost!

*Theo.* Did ever cormorant  
Swallow his prey, and then digest it whole,  
As she hath done this apple? Philanax,  
As 'tis, from me presented it; the good lady

Swore she had eaten it; yet, I know not how,

It came entire into Paulinus' hands,  
And I from him received it, sent in scorn,  
Upon my life, to give me a close touch  
That he was weary of thee. Was there nothing

Left thee to fee him to give satisfaction  
To thy insatiate lust, but what was sent  
As a dear favour from me? How have I sinn'd

In my dotage on this creature! but to her,  
I have lived as I was born, a perfect virgin:  
Nay, more, I thought it not enough to be  
True to her bed, but that I must feed high,  
To strengthen my abilities to cloy  
Her ravenous appetite, little suspecting  
She would desire a change.

*Eud.* I never did, sir.

*Theo.* Be dumb; I will not waste my  
breath in taxing  
Thy base ingratitude. How I have raised thee

Will by the world be, to thy shame, spoke often:

But for that ribald, who held in my empire  
The next place to myself, so bound unto me

By all the ties of duty and allegiance,  
He shall pay dear for't, and feel what it is,  
In a wrong of such high consequence, to pull down

His lord's slow anger on him!—Philanax,  
He's troubled with the gout, let him be cured

With a violent death, and in the other world  
Thank his physician.

*Phil.* His cause unheard, sir?

*Pul.* Take heed of rashness.

*Theo.* Is what I command  
To be disputed?

*Phil.* Your will shall be done, sir:

But that I am the instrument—

*Theo.* Do you murmur?

[*Exit Phil. with Guard.*]

What couldst thou say, if that my license should

Give liberty to thy tongue? [*Eudocia kneeling, points to Theodosius' sword.*] thou wouldst die? I am not

So to be reconciled. See me no more:

The sting of conscience ever gnawing on thee,

A long life be thy punishment! [*Exit.*]

*Flac.* O sweet lady,

How I could weep for her!

*Arcad.* Speak, dear madam, speak.

Your tongue, as you are a woman, while you live

Should be ever moving, at the least, the last part

That stirs about you.

*Pul.* Though I should, sad lady,  
In policy rejoice, you, as a rival  
Of my greatness, are removed, compassion,  
Since I believe you innocent, commands me  
To mourn your fortune; credit me, I will urge

All arguments I can allege that may  
Appease the emperor's fury.

*Arcad.* I will grow too,  
Upon my knees, unless he bid me rise,  
And swear he will forgive you.

*Flac.* And repent too:

All this pother for an apple!

[*Exeunt Pulcheria, Arcadia, and Flaccilla.*  
*Chry.* Hope, dear madam,

And yield not to despair; I am still your servant,

And never will forsake you, though awhile  
You leave the court and city, and give way  
To the violent passions of the emperor.

Repentance, in his want of you, will soon find him:

In the mean time, I'll dispose of you, and omit

No opportunity that may invite him  
To see his error.

*Eud.* Oh! [*Wringing her hands.*]

*Chry.* Forbear, for heaven's sake.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—*A Room in Paulinus' House.*

*Enter Philanax, Paulinus, Guard, and Executioners.*

*Paul.* This is most barbarous! how have you lost

All feeling of humanity, as honour,  
In your consent alone to have me used thus?  
But to be, as you are, a looker on,  
Nay, more, a principal actor in't, (the softness

Of your former life consider'd,) almost turns me

Into a senseless statue.

*Phil.* Would, long since,  
Death, by some other means, had made you one,

That you might be less sensible of what  
You have, or are to suffer!

*Paul.* Am to suffer!

Let such, whose happiness and heaven depend

Upon their present being, fear to part with  
A fort they cannot long hold; mine to me is

A charge that I am weary of, all defences  
By pain and sickness batter'd :—yet take  
heed,

Take heed, lord Philanax, that, for private  
spieen,

Or any false-conceived grudge against me,  
(Since in one thought of wrong to you I am  
Sincerely innocent,) you do not that

My royal master must in justice punish,  
If you pass to your own heart thorough mine ;  
The murder, as it will come out, discover'd.

*Phil.* I murder you, my lord ! heaven  
witness for me,

With the restoring of your health, I wish you  
Long life and happiness : for myself, I am  
Compell'd to put in execution that

Which I would fly from ; 'tis the emperor,  
The high incensed emperor's will, commands  
What I must see perform'd.

*Paul.* The emperor !

Goodness and innocence guard me ! wheels  
nor racks

Can force into my memory the remembrance  
Of the least shadow of offence, with which  
I ever did provoke him. Though beloved,

(And yet the people's love is short and fatal,)  
I never courted popular applause,

Feasted the men of action, or labour'd  
By prodigal gifts to draw the needy soldier,  
The tribunes, or centurions to a faction,  
Of which I would raise up the head against  
him.

I hold no place of strength, fortress, or  
castle,

In my command, that can give sanctuary  
To malcontents, or countenance rebellion.

I have built no palaces to face the court,  
Nor do my followers' braveries shame his  
train ;

And though I cannot blame my fate for want,  
My competent means of life deserve no envy ;  
In what, then, am I dangerous ?

*Phil.* His displeasure

Reflects on none of those particulars  
Which you have mention'd, though some  
jealous princes

In a subject cannot brook them.

*Paul.* None of these !

In what, then, am I worthy his suspicion ?  
But it may, nay it must be, some informer,

To whom my innocence appear'd a crime,  
Hath poison'd his late good opinion of me.

'Tis not to die, but, in the censure of  
So good a master, guilty, that afflicts me.

*Phil.* There is no remedy.

*Paul.* No !—I have a friend yet,  
To whom the state I stand in now deliver'd,  
{Could the strictness of your warrant give  
way to it,}

That, by fair intercession for me, would  
So far prevail, that, my defence unheard,  
I should not, innocent or guilty suffer  
Without a fit distinction.

*Phil.* These false hopes,

My lord, abuse you. What man, when con-  
demn'd,

Did ever find a friend ? or who dares lend  
An eye of pity to that star-cross'd subject  
On whom his sovereign frowns ?

*Paul.* She that dares plead

For innocence without a fee, the empress,  
My great and gracious mistress.

*Phil.* There's your error.

Her many favours, which you hoped should  
make you,

Prove your undoing. She, poor lady, is  
Banish'd for ever from the emperor's pre-  
sence,

And his confirm'd suspicion, to his wrong,  
That you have been over-familiar with her,  
Dooms you to death. I know you under-  
stand me.

*Paul.* Over-familiar !

*Phil.* In sharing with him

Those sweet and secret pleasures of his bed,  
Which can admit no partner.

*Paul.* And is that

The crime for which I am to die ? of all  
My numerous sins, was there not one of  
weight

Enough to sink me, if he borrow'd not

The colour of a guilt I never saw,

To paint my innocence in a deform'd

And monstrous shape ? but that it were  
profane

To argue heaven of ignorance or injustice,  
I now should tax it. Had the stars that  
reign'd

At my nativity such cursed influence,

As not alone to make me miserable,

But, in the neighbourhood of her goodness  
to me,

To force contagion upon a lady,

Whose purer flames were not inferior,

To theirs when they shine brightest ! to die  
for her,

Compared with what she suffers, is a trifle.

By her example warn'd, let all great women  
Hereafter throw pride and contempt on such

As truly serve them, since a retribution

In lawful courtesies is now styled lust ;

And to be thankful to a servant's merits

Is grown a vice, no virtue.

*Phil.* These complaints

Are to no purpose : think on the long flight  
Your better part must make.

*Paul.* She is prepared :

Nor can the freeing of an innocent

From the emperor's furious jealousy hinder her.

—It shall out, 'tis resolved; but to be whisper'd

To you alone. What a solemn preparation Is made here to put forth an inch of taper, In itself almost extinguish'd! mortal poison! The hangman's sword! the halter!

*Phil.* 'Tis left to you To make choice of which you please.

*Paul.* Any will serve To take away my gout and life together. I would not have the emperor imitate Rome's monster, Nero, in that cruel mercy He shew'd to Seneca. When you have discharged

What you are trusted with, and I have given you

Reasons beyond all doubt or disputation, Of the empress' and my innocence; when I am dead,

(Since 'tis my master's pleasure, and high treason

In you not to obey it,) I conjure you, By the hopes you have of happiness hereafter,

Since mine in this world are now parting from me,

That you would win the young man to repentance

Of the wrong done to his chaste wife, Eudocia.

And if perchance he shed a tear for what In his rashness he imposed on his true servant,

So it cure him of future jealousy, 'Twill prove a precious balsamum, and find me

When I am in my grave.—Now, when you please;

For I am ready.

*Phil.* His words work strangely on me, And I would do—but I know not what to think on't. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE II.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter Pulcheria, Flaccilla, Arcadia, Timantus, Gratianus, and Chrysapius.*

*Pul.* Still in his sullen mood? no intermission

Of his melancholy fit?

*Tim.* It rather, madam, Increases, than grows less.

*Grat.* In the next room To his bedchamber we watch'd; for he, by signs,

Gave us to understand he would admit Nor company nor conference.

*Pul.* Did he take No rest, as you could guess?

*Chry.* Not any, madam.

Like a Numidian lion, by the cunning Of the desperate huntsman taken in a toil, And forced into a spacious cage, he walks About his chamber; we might hear him gnash

His teeth in rage, which open'd, hollow groans

And murmurs issued from his lips, like winds Imprison'd in the caverns of the earth Striving for liberty; and sometimes throwing His body on his bed, then on the ground, And with such violence, that we more than fear'd,

And still do, if the tempest of his passions By your wisdom, be not laid, he will commit Some outrage on himself.

*Pul.* His better angel, I hope, will stay him from so foul a mischief: Nor shall my care be wanting.

*Tim.* Twice I heard him Say, *False Eudocia, how much art thou Unworthy of these tears!* then sigh'd, and straight

Roar'd out, *Paulinus! was his gouty age To be prefer'd before my strength and youth?* Then groan'd again, so many ways expressing

The afflictions of a tortured soul, that we, Who wept in vain for what we could not help, Were sharers in his sufferings.

*Pul.* Though your sorrow Is not to be condemn'd, it takes not from The burthen of his miseries: we must practise,

With some fresh object, to divert his thoughts From that they are wholly fix'd on.

*Chry.* Could I gain

The freedom of access, I would present him With this petition.—Will your highness please

To look upon it: you will soon find there What my intents and hopes are.

*Enter Theodosius.*

*Grat.* Ha! 'tis he.

*Pul.* Stand close, And give way to his passions; 'tis not safe To stop them in their violent course, before They have spent themselves.

*Theo.* I play the fool, and am Unequal to myself; delinquents are To suffer, not the innocent. I have done Nothing, which will not hold weight in the scale

Of my impartial justice; neither feel I The worm of conscience upbraiding me



For one black deed of tyranny; wherefore,  
then,  
Should I torment myself? Great Julius  
would not

Rest satisfied that his wife was free from fact,  
But, only for suspicion of a crime,  
Sued a divorce; nor was this Roman rigour  
Censured as cruel: and still the wise Italian,  
That knows the honour of his family  
Depends upon the purity of his bed,  
For a kiss, nay, wanton look, will plough  
up mischief,

And sow the seeds of his revenge in blood.  
And shall I, to whose power the law's a  
servant,

That stand accountable to none, for what  
My will calls an offence, being compell'd,  
And on such grounds, to raise an altar to  
My anger; though, I grant, it is cemented  
With a loose strumpet and adulterer's gore,  
Repent the justice of my fury? No.  
I should not: yet still my excess of love,  
Fed high in the remembrance of her choice  
And sweet embraces, would persuade me  
that

Connivance or remission of her fault,  
Made warrantable by her true submission  
For her offence, might be excusable,  
Did not the cruelty of my wounded honour,  
With an open mouth, deny it.

*Pul.* I approve of  
Your good intention, and I hope 'twill  
prosper.— [*To Chrysapius.*  
He now seems calm: let us, upon our knees,  
Encompass him.—Most royal sir—  
[*They all kneel.*

*Flac.* Sweet brother—

*Arcad.* As you are our sovereign, by the  
ties of nature  
You are bound to be a father in your care  
To us poor orphans.

*Tim.* Shew compassion, sir,  
Unto yourself.

*Grat.* The majesty of your fortune  
Should fly above the reach of grief.

*Chry.* And 'tis  
Impair'd, if you yield to it.

*Theo.* Wherefore pay you  
This adoration to a sinful creature?  
I am flesh and blood, as you are, sensible  
Of heat and cold, as much a slave unto  
The tyranny of my passions, as the meanest  
Of my poor subjects. The proud attributes,  
By oil-tongued flattery imposed upon us,  
As sacred, glorious, high, invincible,  
The deputy of heaven, and in that  
Omnipotent, with all false titles else,  
Coin'd to abuse our frailty, though com-  
pounded,

And by the breath of sycophants applied,  
Cure not the least fit of an ague in us.  
We may give poor men riches, confer  
honours

Or undeservers, raise, or ruin such  
As are beneath us, and, with this puff'd up,  
Ambition would persuade us to forget  
That we are men: but He that sits above us,  
And to whom, at our utmost rate, we are  
But pageant properties, derides our weak-  
ness:

In me, to whom you kneel, 'tis most ap-  
parent.

Can I call back yesterday, with all their aids  
That bow unto my sceptre? or restore  
My mind to that tranquillity and peace  
It then enjoy'd?—Can I make Eudocia  
chaste,

Or vile Paulinus honest?

*Pul.* If I might  
Without offence, deliver my opinion—

*Theo.* What would you say?  
*Pul.* That, on my soul, the empress  
Is innocent.

*Chry.* The good Paulinus guiltless.  
*Grat.* And this should yield you comfort.

*Theo.* In being guilty  
Of an offence far, far transcending that  
They stand condemn'd for! Call you this a  
comfort?

Suppose it could be true,—a corsive rather,  
Not to eat our dead flesh, but putrify  
What yet is sound. Was murder ever held  
A cure for jealousy? or the crying blood  
Of innocence, a balm to take away  
Her festering anguish? As you do desire  
I should not do a justice on myself,  
Add to the proofs by which Paulinus fell,  
And not take from them; in your charity  
Sooner believe that they were false, than I  
Unrighteous in my judgment? subjects' lives  
Are not their prince's tennis-balls, to be  
bandied

In sport away: all that I can endure  
For them, if they were guilty, is an atom  
To the mountain of affliction I pull'd on me,  
Should they prove innocent.

*Chry.* For your majesty's peace,  
I more than hope they were not: the false  
oath

Ta'en by the empress, and for which she  
can

Plead no excuse, convicted her, and yields  
A sure defence for your suspicion of her.  
And yet, to be resolved, since strong doubts  
are

More grievous, for the most part, than to  
know

A certain loss—

*Theo.* 'Tis true, Chrysapius,  
Were there a possible means.

*Chry.* 'Tis offer'd to you,  
If you please to embrace it. Some few  
minutes

Make truce with passion, and but read, and  
follow

What's there projected,—[*Delivers him a  
paper.*—]—you shall find a key

Will make your entrance easy, to discover  
Her secret thoughts; and then, as in your  
wisdom

You shall think fit, you may determine of  
her;

And rest confirm'd, whether Paulinus died  
A villain or a martyr.

*Theo.* It may do,  
Nay, sure it must; yet, howso'er it fall;  
I am most wretched. Which way in my  
wishes

I should fashion the event, I'm so distracted  
I cannot yet resolve of.—Follow me;

Though in my name all names are com-  
prehended,

I must have witnesses in what degree  
I have done wrong, or suffer'd.

*Pul.* Hope the best, sir. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Eudocia in sackcloth, her hair loose.*

[Sings.] *Why art thou slow, thou rest of  
trouble, Death,*

*To stop a wretch's breath,  
That calls on thee, and offers her sad heart  
A prey unto thy dart?*

*I am nor young nor fair; be, therefore,  
bold:*

*Sorrow hath made me old,  
Deform'd and wrinkled; all that I can  
crave,*

*Is, quiet in my grave.  
Such as live happy, hold long life a jewel;  
But to me thou art cruel,*

*If thou end not my tedious misery;  
And I soon cease to be.*

*Strike, and strike home, then; pity unto me,  
In one short hour's delay, is tyranny.*

Thus, like a dying swan, to a sad tune  
I sing my own dirge; would a requiem  
follow,

Which in my penitence I despair not of,  
(This brittle glass of life already broken  
With misery,) the long and quiet sleep  
Of death would be most welcome!—Yet,  
before

We end our pilgrimage, 'tis fit that we  
Should leave corruption and foul sins be-  
hind us.

But with wash'd feet and hands, the heathens  
dare not

Enter their profane temples; and for me  
To hope my passage to eternity  
Can be made easy, till I have shook off  
The burthen of my sins in free confession,  
Aided with sorrow and repentance for them,  
Is against reason. 'Tis not laying by  
My royal ornaments, or putting on  
This garment of humility and contrition,  
The throwing dust and ashes on my head,  
Long fasts to tame my proud flesh, that can  
make

Atonement for my soul; that must be  
humbled,

All outward signs of penitence else are  
useless.

Chrysapius did assure me he would bring me  
A holy man, from whom (having discover'd  
My secret crying sins) I might receive  
Full absolution—and he keeps his word.

*Enter Theodosius disguised as a Friar,  
with Chrysapius.*

Welcome, most reverend sir, upon my knees  
I entertain you.

*Theo.* Noble sir, forbear  
The place; the sacred office that I come for  
[Exit Chrysapius.]

Commands all privacy. My penitent  
daughter,

Be careful, as you wish remission from me,  
That, in confession of your sins, you hide not  
One crime, whose ponderous weight, when  
you would make

Your flights above the firmament, may sink  
you.

A foolish modesty in concealing aught,  
Is now far worse than impudence to profess  
And justify your guilt, be therefore free;  
So may the gates of mercy open to you!

*Eud.* First then, I ask a pardon, for my  
being

Ingrateful to heaven's bounty.

*Theo.* A good entrance.

*Eud.* Greatness comes from above, and I  
raised to it

From a low condition, sinfully forgot  
From whence it came; and, looking on my-  
self

In the false glass of flattery, I received it  
As a debt due to my beauty, not a gift  
Or favour from the emperor.

*Theo.* 'Twas not well.

*Eud.* Pride waited on unthankfulness;  
and no more

Remembering the compassion of the princess,  
And the means she used to make me what I  
was,

Contested with her, and with sore eyes  
seeing

Her greater light as it dimm'd mine, I  
practis'd

To have it quite put out.

*Theo.* A great offence ;

But, on repentance, not unpardonable.  
Forward.

*Eud.* O, father !—what I now must utter,  
I fear, in the delivery will destroy me,  
Before you have absolved me.

*Theo.* Heaven is gracious ;  
Out with it.

*Eud.* Heaven commands us to tell truth,  
Yet I, most sinful wretch, forswore myself.

*Theo.* On what occasion ?

*Eud.* Quite forgetting that  
An innocent truth can never stand in need  
Of a guilty lie, being on the sudden ask'd  
By the emperor, my husband, for an apple  
Presented by him, I swore I had eaten it ;  
When my grieved conscience too well knows  
I sent it

To comfort sick Paulinus, being a man  
I truly loved and favour'd.

*Theo.* A cold sweat,  
Like the juice of hemlock, bathes me.

[*Aside.*

*Eud.* And from this  
A furious jealousy getting possession  
Of the good emperor's heart, in his rage he  
doom'd

The innocent lord to die ; my perjury  
The fatal cause of murder.

*Theo.* Take heed, daughter,  
You niggle not with your conscience, and  
religion,

In styling him an innocent, from your fear  
And shame to accuse yourself. The emperor  
Had many spies upon you, saw such graces,  
Which virtue could not warrant, shower'd  
upon him ;

Glances in public, and more liberal favours  
In your private chamber-meetings, making  
way

For foul adultery ; nor could he be  
But sensible of the compact pass'd between  
you,

To the ruin of his honour.

*Eud.* Hear me, father ;  
I look'd for comfort, but, in this, you come  
To add to my afflictions.

*Theo.* Cause not you  
Your own damnation in concealing that  
Which may, in your discovery, find for-  
giveness.

Open your eyes ; set heaven or hell before  
you ;

In the revealing of the truth, you shall

Prepare a palace for your soul to dwell in,  
Stored with celestial blessings ; whereas, if  
You palliate your crime, and dare beyond  
Playing with lightning, in concealing it,  
Expect a dreadful dungeon fill'd with horror,  
And never-ending torments.

*Eud.* May they fall  
Eternally upon me, and increase,  
When that which we call Time hath lost its  
name !

May lightning cleave the centre of the earth,  
And I sink quick, before you have absolv'd  
me,

Into the bottomless abyss, if ever,  
In one unchaste desire, nay in a thought,  
I wrong'd the honour of the emperor's bed !  
I do deserve, I grant, more than I suffer,  
In that my fervour and desire to please him,  
In my holy meditations press'd upon me,  
And would not be kept out ; now to dis-  
semble,

When I shall suddenly be insensible  
Of what the world speaks of me, were mere  
madness :

And, though you are incredulous, I presume,  
If, as I kneel now, my eyes swoll'n with tears,  
My hands heaved up thus, my stretch'd  
heart-strings ready

To break asunder, my incensed lord  
(His storm of jealousy blown o'er) should  
hear me,

He would believe I lied not.

*Theo.* Rise, and see him,  
[*Discovers himself.*

On his knees with joy affirm it.

*Eud.* Can this be ?

*Theo.* My sisters, and the rest there !—All  
bear witness,

*Enter* Pulcheria, Arcadia, Flaccilla, Chry-  
sapius, Timantus, and Philanax.

In freeing this incomparable lady  
From the suspicion of guilt, I do  
Accuse myself, and willingly submit  
To any penance she in justice shall  
Please to impose upon me.

*Eud.* Royal sir,  
Your ill opinion of me's soon forgiven.

*Pul.* But how you can make satisfaction to—  
The poor Paulinus, he being dead, in reason  
You must conclude impossible.

*Theo.* And in that  
I am most miserable ; the ocean  
Of joy, which, in your innocence, flow'd  
high to me,

Ebbs in the thought of my unjust command,  
By which he died. O, Philanax, (as thy  
name

Interpreted speaks thee,) thou hast ever been.

A lover of the king, and thy whole life  
Can witness thy obedience to my will,  
In putting that in execution which  
Was trusted to thee ; say but yet this once,  
Thou hast not done what rashly I com-  
manded,  
And that Paulinus lives, and thy reward  
For not performing that which I enjoin'd  
thee,  
Shall centuple whatever yet thy duty  
Or merit challenged from me.

*Phil.* 'Tis too late, sir :

He's dead ; and, when you know he was  
unable

To wrong you in the way that you suspected,  
You'll wish it had been otherwise.

*Theo.* Unable !

*Phil.* I am sure he was an eunuch, and  
might safely

Lie by a virgin's side ; at four years made one,  
Though, to hold grace with ladies, he con-  
ceal'd it.

The circumstances, and the manner how,  
You may hear at better leisure.

*Theo.* How, an eunuch !

The more the proofs are that are brought to  
clear thee,

My best Eudocia, the more my sorrows.

*Eud.* That I am innocent ?

*Theo.* That I am guilty

Of murder, my Eudocia. I will build  
A glorious monument to his memory ;  
And, for my punishment, live and die upon it,  
And never more converse with men.

*Enter Paulinus.*

*Paul.* Live long, sir !

May I do so to serve you ! and, if that  
I live does not displease you, you owe for it  
To this good lord.

*Theo.* Myself, and all that's mine.

*Phil.* Your pardon is a payment.

*Theo.* I am rapt  
With joy beyond myself. Now, my Eudocia,  
My jealousy puff'd away thus, in this breath  
I scent the natural sweetness. [*Kisses her.*]

*Arcad.* Sacred sir,  
I am happy to behold this, and presume,  
Now you are pleased, to move a suit, in  
which  
My sister is join'd with me.

*Theo.* Prithee speak it ;  
For I have vow'd to hear before I grant :—  
I thank your good instructions.

[*To Pulcheria.*]

*Arcad.* 'Tis but this, sir :  
We have observed the falling out and in  
Between the husband and the wife shews  
rarely ;

Their jars and reconcilements strangely  
take us.

*Flac.* Anger and jealousy that conclude in  
kisses,

Is a sweet war, in sooth.

*Arcad.* We therefore, brother,  
Most humbly beg you would provide us  
husbands,

That we may taste the pleasure of't.

*Flac.* And with speed, sir ;

For so your favour's doubled.

*Theo.* Take my word,  
I will with all convenience ; and not blush  
Hereafter to be guided by your counsels :  
I will deserve your pardon. Philanax  
Shall be remember'd, and magnificent boun-  
ties

Fall on Chrysapius ; my grace on all.

Let Cleon be deliver'd, and rewarded.

My grace on all, which as I lend to you,  
Return your vows to heaven, that it may  
please,

As it is gracious, to quench in me  
All future sparks of burning jealousy.

[*Exeunt.*]

## EPILOGUE.

*We have reason to be doubtful, whether he,  
On whom (forced to it from necessity)  
The maker did confer his emperor's part,  
Hath given you satisfaction, in his art  
Of action and delivery ; 'tis sure truth,  
The burthen was too heavy for his youth  
To undergo :—but, in his will, we know,  
He was not wanting, and shall ever owe,  
With his, our service, if your favours deign  
To give him strength, hereafter to sustain  
A greater weight. It is your grace that can  
In your allowance of this, write him man  
Before his time ; which, if you please to do,  
You make the player and the poet too.*

# The Fatal Dowry.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Rochfort, *ex-premier president of the parliament of Dijon.*  
 Charalois, *a noble gentleman, son to the deceased marshal.*  
 Romont, *a brave officer, friend to Charalois.*  
 Novall senior, *premier president of the parliament of Dijon.*  
 Novall, *junior his son, in love with Beaumelle.*  
 Du Croy, *president of the parliament of Dijon.*  
 Charmi, *an advocate.*  
 Beaumont, *secretary to Rochfort.*  
 Pontalier, } *friends of Novall junior.*  
 Malotin, }  
 Liladam, *a parasite, dependent on Novall junior.*

Aymer, *a singer, and keeper of a music-house, also dependent on Novall junior.*  
*Advocates.*  
*Three Creditors.*  
*A Priest.*  
*Tailor.*  
*Barber.*  
*Perfumer.*  
*Page.*  
 Beaumelle, *daughter to Rochfort.*  
 Florimel, { *servants to Beaumelle; the latter the secret agent of Novall junior.*  
 Bellapert, {  
*Presidents, Captains, Soldiers, Mourners, Gaoler, Bailiffs, Servants.*

SCENE,—Dijon.

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I.—*A Street before the Court of Justice.*

*Enter Charalois with a paper, Romont, and Charmi.*

*Char.* Sir, I may move the court to serve your will;

But therein shall both wrong you and myself.

*Rom.* Why think you so, sir?

*Char.* 'Cause I am familiar  
 With what will be their answer: they will say,  
 'Tis against law; and argue me of ignorance,  
 For offering them the motion.

*Rom.* You know not, sir,  
 How in this cause, they may dispense with law;

And therefore frame not you their answer for them,

But do your parts.

*Char.* I love the cause so well,  
 As I could run the hazard of a check for't.

*Rom.* From whom?

*Char.* Some of the bench, that watch to give it,

More than to do the office that they sit for:  
 But give me, sir, my fee.

*Rom.* Now you are noble.

[*Gives him his purse.*]

*Char.* I shall deserve this better yet, in giving

My lord some counsel, if he please to hear it,  
 Than I shall do with pleading.

*Rom.* What may it be, sir?

*Char.* That it would please his lordship,  
 as the presidents

And counsellors of court come by, to stand  
 Here, and but shew himself, and to some one

Or two, make his request:—there is a minute,  
 When a man's presence speaks in his own  
 cause,

More than the tongues of twenty advocates.  
*Rom.* I have urged that.

*Enter Rochfort and Du Croy.*

*Char.* Their lordships here are coming,  
 I must go get me a place. You'll find me in  
 court,

And at your service.

[*Exit.*]

*Rom.* Now, put on your spirits.

*Du Croy.* The ease that you prepare your  
 self, my lord,

In giving up the place you hold in court,  
 Will prove, I fear, a trouble in the state,  
 And that no slight one.

*Roch.* Pray you, sir, no more.

*Rom.* Now, sir, lose not this offer'd means:  
 their looks,

Fix'd on you with a pitying earnestness,  
 Invite you to demand their furtherance  
 To your good purpose:—this such a dulness,  
 So foolish and untimely, as—

*Du Croy.* You know him ?

*Roch.* I do ; and much lament the sudden fall

Of his brave house. It is young Charalois, Son to the marshal, from whom he inherits His fame and virtues only.

*Rom.* Ha ! they name you.

*Du Croy.* His father died in prison two days since.

*Roch.* Yes, to the shame of this ungrateful state ;

That such a master in the art of war, So noble, and so highly meriting From this forgetful country, should, for want Of means to satisfy his creditors The sums he took up for the general good, Meet with an end so infamous.

*Rom.* Dare you ever

Hope for like opportunity ?

*Du Croy.* My good lord !

[*They salute him as they pass by.*]

*Roch.* My wish bring comfort to you !

*Du Croy.* The time calls us.

*Roch.* Good morrow, colonel !

[*Exeunt Rochfort and Du Croy.*]

*Rom.* This obstinate spleen,

You think, becomes your sorrow, and sorts well

With your black suits ; but, grant me wit or judgment,

And, by the freedom of an honest man, And a true friend to boot, I swear 'tis shameful.

And therefore flatter not yourself with hope, Your sable habit, with the hat and cloak, No, though the ribands help, have power to work them

To what you would : for those that had no eyes

To see the great acts of your father, will not, From any fashion sorrow can put on, Be taught to know their duties.

*Charal.* If they will not,

They are too old to learn, and I too young To give them counsel ; since, if they partake

The understanding and the hearts of men, They will prevent my words and tears : if not,

What can persuasion, though made eloquent With grief, work upon such as have changed natures

With the most savage beast ? Blest, blest be ever

The memory of that happy age, when justice Had no guards to keep off wrong'd innocence

From flying to her succours, and, in that, Assurance of redress ! where now, Romont,

The damn'd with more ease may ascend from hell,

Than we arrive at her. One Cerberus there Forbids the passage, in our courts a thousand,

As loud and fertile-headed ; and the client That wants the sops to fill their ravenous throats,

Must hope for no access : why should I, then,

Attempt impossibilities ; you, friend, being Too well acquainted with my dearth of means

To make my entrance that way ?

*Rom.* Would I were not !

But, sir, you have a cause, a cause so just, Of such necessity, not to be deferr'd, As would compel a maid, whose foot was never

Set o'er her father's threshold, nor within The house where she was born, ever spake word

Which was not usher'd with pure virgin blushes,

To drown the tempest of a pleader's tongue, And force corruption to give back the hire It took against her. Let examples move you. You see men great in birth, esteem, and fortune,

Rather than lose a scruple of their right, Fawn basely upon such, whose gowns put off, They would disdain for servants.

*Charal.* And to these

Can I become a suitor ?

*Rom.* Without loss :

Would you consider, that, to gain their favours,

Our chastest dames put off their modesties, Soldiers forget their honours, usurers Make sacrifice of gold, poets of wit, And men religious part with fame and goodness.

Be therefore wou to use the means that may Advance your pious ends.

*Charal.* You shall o'ercome.

*Rom.* And you receive the glory. Pray you, now practise.

*Charal.* 'Tis well.

*Enter* Novall senior, Advocates, Liladam, and three Creditors.

[*Tenders his petition.*] Not look on me !

*Rom.* You must have patience— Offer it again.

*Charal.* And be again contem'd !

*Nov. sen.* I know what's to be done.

*1 Cred.* And, that your lordship Will please to do your knowledge, we offer first

Our thankful hearts here, as a bounteous earnest

To what we will add.

*Nov. sen.* One word more of this, I am your enemy. Am I a man Your bribes can work on? ha?

*Lilad.* Friends, you mistake

[*Aside to Cred.*

The way to win my lord; he must not hear this,

But I, as one in favour, in his sight May hearken to you for my profit.—Sir! Pray hear them.

*Nov. sen.* It is well.

*Lilad.* Observe him now.

*Nov. sen.* Your cause being good, and your proceedings so, Without corruption I am your friend; Speak your desires.

*2 Cred.* Oh, they are charitable;

The marshal stood engaged unto us three Two hundred thousand crowns, which, by his death,

We are defeated of: for which great loss We aim at nothing but his rotten flesh; Nor is that cruelty.

*1 Cred.* I have a son

That talks of nothing but of guns and armour,

And swears he'll be a soldier; 'tis an humour I would divert him from; and I am told, That if I minister to him in his drink, Powder made of this bankrupt marshal's bones,

Provided that the carcass rot above ground, 'Twill cure his foolish frenzy.

*Nov. sen.* You shew in it

A father's care. I have a son myself, A fashionable gentleman, and a peaceful; And, but I am assured he's not so given, He should take of it too.

*Charal.* Sir! [*Tenders his petition.*

*Nov. sen.* What are you?

*Charal.* A gentleman.

*Nov. sen.* So are many that rake dunghills. If you have any suit, move it in court:

I take no papers in corners. [*Exit.*

*Rom.* Yes,

As the matter may be carried—and where-by—

To manage the conveyance—Follow him.

*Lilad.* You are rude: I say he shall not pass.

[*Excunt Charalois and Advocates.*

*Rom.* You say so!

On what assurance? For the well cutting of his lordship's corns, Picking his toes, or any office else Nearer to baseness!

*Lilad.* Look upon me better; Are these the ensigns of so coarse a fellow? Be well advised.

*Rom.* Out, rogue! do not I know These glorious weeds spring from the sordid dunghill

Of thy officious baseness? wert thou worthy Of anything from me, but my contempt, I would do more than this,—[*Beats him.*—

more, you court-spider!

*Lilad.* But that this man is lawless, he should find

That I am valiant,

*1 Cred.* If your ears are fast, 'Tis nothing. What's a blow or two? as much.

*2 Cred.* These chastisements as useful are as frequent,

To such as would grow rich.

*Rom.* Are they so, rascals? I will befriend you, then. [*Kicks them.*

*1 Cred.* Bear witness, sirs!

*Lilad.* Truth, I have borne my part already, friends:

In the court you shall have more. [*Exit.*

*Rom.* I know you for

The worst of spirits, that strive to rob the tombs

Of what is their inheritance, the dead:

For usurers, bred by a riotous peace, That hold the charter of your wealth and freedom

By being knaves and cuckolds; that ne'er pray,

But when you fear the rich heirs will grow wise,

To keep their lands out of your parchment toils;

And then, the devil your father's call'd upon, To invent some ways of luxury ne'er thought on.

Be gone, and quickly, or I'll leave no room Upon your foreheads for your horns to sprout on—

Without a murmur, or I will undo you;

For I will beat you honest.

*1 Cred.* Thrift forbid!

We will bear this, rather than hazard that. [*Excunt Creditors.*

*Re-enter Charalois.*

*Rom.* I am somewhat eased in this yet.

*Char.* Only friend,

To what vain purpose do I make my sorrow Wait on the triumph of their cruelty?

Or teach their pride, from my humility, To think it has o'ercome? They are determined

What they will do ; and it may well become me,

To rob them of the glory they expect  
From my submiss entreaties.

*Rom.* Think not so, sir :

The difficulties that you encounter with  
Will crown the undertaking—heaven ! you weep :

And I could do so too, but that I know  
There's more expected from the son and friend

Of him whose fatal loss now shakes our natures,

Than sighs or tears, in which a village nurse,  
Or cunning strumpet, when her knave is hang'd,

May overcome us. We are men, young lord,  
Let us not do like women. To the court,  
And there speak like your birth : wake sleeping justice,

Or dare the axe. This is a way will sort  
With what you are : I call you not to that  
I will shrink from myself ; I will deserve  
Your thanks, or suffer with you—O how bravely

That sudden fire of anger shews in you !  
Give fuel to it. Since you are on a shelf  
Of extreme danger, suffer like yourself.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The Court of Justice.*

*Enter* Rochfort, Novall *senior*, Presidents,  
Charmi, Du Croy, Beaumont, Advocates,  
three Creditors, and Officers.

*Du Croy.* Your lordships seated, may this meeting prove  
Prosperous to us, and to the general good  
Of Burgundy !

*Nov. sen.* Speak to the point.

*Du Croy.* Which is

With honour to dispose the place and power  
Of premier president, which this reverend man,

Grave Rochfort, whom for honour's sake I name,

Is purposed to resign ; a place, my lords,  
In which he hath with such integrity  
Perform'd the first and best parts of a judge,  
That, as his life transcends all fair examples  
Of such as were before him in Dijon,  
So it remains to those that shall succeed him,  
A precedent they may imitate, but not equal.

*Roch.* I may not sit to hear this.

*Du Croy.* Let the love

And thankfulness we are bound to pay to  
goodness,

In this o'ercome your modesty.

*Roch.* My thanks

For this great favour shall prevent your trouble.

The honourable trust that was imposed  
Upon my weakness, since you witness for me

It was not ill discharged, I will not mention ;  
Nor now, if age had not deprived me of  
The little strength I had to govern well  
The province that I undertook, forsake it.

*Nov. sen.* That we could lend you of our years !

*Du Croy.* Or strength !

*Nov. sen.* Or, as you are, persuade you to continue

The noble exercise of your knowing judgment !

*Roch.* That may not be ; nor can your lordships' goodness,  
Since your employments have conferr'd upon me

Sufficient wealth, deny the use of it :  
And, though old age, when one foot's in the grave,

In many, when all humours else are spent,  
Feeds no affection in them, but desire  
To add height to the mountain of their riches,  
In me it is not so. I rest content

With the honours and estate I now possess :  
And, that I may have liberty to use  
What heaven, still blessing my poor industry,  
Hath made me master of, I pray the court  
To ease me of my burthen, that I may  
Employ the small remainder of my life  
In living well, and learning how to die so.

*Enter* Romont and Charalois.

*Rom.* See, sir, our advocate.

*Du Croy.* The court entreats

Your lordship will be pleased to name the man,

Which you would have your successor, and, in me,

All promise to confirm it.

*Roch.* I embrace it

As an assurance of their favour to me,  
And name my lord Novall.

*Du Croy.* The court allows it.

*Roch.* But there are suitors wait here, and their causes

May be of more necessity to be heard ;  
I therefore wish that mine may be deferr'd,  
And theirs have hearing.

*Du Croy.* If your lordship please

[*To Nov. sen.*]

To take the place, we will proceed.

*Char.* The cause

We come to offer to your lordships' censure,  
Is in itself so noble, that it needs not  
Or rhetoric in me that plead, or favour



From your grave lordships, to determine of  
it ;

Since to the praise of your impartial justice  
(Which guilty, nay, condemn'd men, dare  
not scandal)

It will erect a trophy of your mercy,  
Which married to that justice—

*Nov. sen.* Speak to the cause.

*Char.* I will, my lord. To say, the late  
dead marshal,

The father of this young lord here, my client,  
Hath done his country great and faithful  
service,

Might task me of impertinence, to repeat  
What your grave lordships cannot but re-  
member.

He, in his life, became indebted to  
These thrifty men, (I will not wrong their  
credits,

By giving them the attributes they now  
merit,)

And failing, by the fortune of the wars,  
Of means to free himself from his engage-  
ments,

He was arrested, and for want of bail,  
Imprison'd at their suit ; and, not long after,  
With loss of liberty, ended his life.

And, though it be a maxim in our laws,  
All suits die with the person, these men's  
malice

In death finds matter for their hate to work  
on ;

Denying him the decent rites of burial,  
Which the sworn enemies of the Christian  
faith

Grant freely to their slaves. May it there-  
fore please

Your lordships so to fashion your decree,  
That, what their cruelty doth forbid, your  
pity

May give allowance to.

*Nov. sen.* How long have you, sir,  
Practised in court ?

*Char.* Some twenty years, my lord.

*Nov. sen.* By your gross ignorance, it  
should appear,

Not twenty days.

*Char.* I hope I have given no cause  
in this, my lord.

*Nov. sen.* How dare you move the court  
To the dispensing with an act, confirm'd  
By parliament, to the terror of all bankrupts ?  
Go home ; and with more care peruse the  
statutes :

Or the next motion, savouring of this bold-  
ness,

May force you, sir, to leap, against your will,  
Over the place you plead at.

*Char.* I foresaw this.

*Rom.* Why, does your lordship think the  
moving of

A cause more honest than this court had ever  
The honour to determine, can deserve  
A check like this ?

*Nov. sen.* Strange boldness !

*Rom.* 'Tis fit freedom : •

Or, do you conclude an advocate cannot hold  
His credit with the judge, unless he study  
His face more than the cause for which he  
pleads ?

*Char.* Forbear.

*Rom.* Or cannot you, that have the power  
To qualify the rigour of the laws  
When you are pleased, take a little from  
The strictness of your sour decrees, enacted  
In favour of the greedy creditors,  
Against the o'erthrown debtor ?

*Nov. sen.* Sirrah ! you that prate

Thus saucily, what are you ?

*Rom.* Why, I'll tell thee,  
Thou purple-colour'd man ! I am one to  
whom

Thou ow'st the means thou hast of sitting  
there,

A corrupt elder.

*Char.* Forbear.

*Rom.* The nose thou wear'st is my gift ;  
and those eyes,

That meet no object so base as their master,  
Had been long since torn from that guilty  
head,

And thou thyself slave to some needy Swiss,  
Had I not worn a sword, and used it better  
Than, in thy prayers, thou ever didst thy  
tongue.

*Nov. sen.* Shall such an insolence pass  
unpunish'd !

*Char.* Hear me.

*Rom.* Yet I, that, in my service done my  
country,

Disdain to be put in the scale with thee,  
Confess myself unworthy to be valued  
With the least part, nay, hair of the dead  
marshal ;

Of whose so many glorious undertakings,  
Make choice of any one, and that the  
meanest,

Perform'd against the subtle fox of France,  
The politic Louis, or the more desperate  
Swiss,

And 'twill outweigh all the good purposes,  
Though put in act, that ever gowman prac-  
tised.

*Nov. sen.* Away with him to prison !

*Rom.* If that curses,  
Urged justly, and breath'd forth so, ever fell  
On those that did deserve them, let not  
mine

Be spent in vain now, that thou from this instant

Mayst, in thy fear that they will fall upon thee,

Be sensible of the plagues they shall bring with them.

And for denying of a little earth

To cover what remains of our great soldier,

May all your wives prove whores, your factors thieves,

And, while you live, your riotous heirs undo you !

And thou, the patron of their cruelty,

Of all thy lordships live not to be owner

Of so much dung as will conceal a dog,

Or, what is worse, thyself in ! And thy years,

To th' end thou mayst be wretched, I wish many ;

And, as thou hast denied the dead a grave,

May misery in thy life make thee desire one,

Which men and all the elements keep from thee !

—I have begun well ; imitate, exceed.

[*Aside to Charalois.*

*Roch.* Good counsel, were it a praise-worthy deed.

[*Exeunt officers with Romont.*

*Du Croy.* Remember what we are.

*Charal.* Thus low my duty

Answers your lordship's counsel. I will use,

In the few words with which I am to trouble

Your lordship's ears, the temper that you wish me ;

Not that I fear to speak my thoughts as loud,

And with a liberty beyond Romont ;

But that I know, for me, that am made up

Of all that's wretched, so to haste my end,

Would seem to most rather a willingness

To quit the burthen of a hopeless life,

Than scorn of death, or duty to the dead.

I, therefore, bring the tribute of my praise

To your severity, and commend the justice

That will not, for the many services

That anyman hath done the commonwealth,

Wink at his least of ills. What though my father

Writ man before he was so, and confirm'd it,

By numbering that day no part of his life,

In which he did not service to his country ;

Was he to be free, therefore, from the laws

And ceremonious form in your decrees !

Or else, because he did as much as man,

In those three memorable overthrows

At Granson, Morat, Nancy, where his master,

The warlike Charalois, (with whose misfortunes

I bear his name,) lost treasure, men, and life,

To be excused from payment of those sums

Which (his own patrimony spent) his zeal To serve his country forced him to take up !

*Nov. sen.* The precedent were ill.

*Charal.* And yet, my lord, this much, I know, you'll grant ; after those great defeatures,

Which in their dreadful ruins buried quick

*Re-enter Officers.*

Courage and hope in all men but himself, He forced the proud foe, in his height of conquest,

To yield unto an honourable peace ;

And in it saved an hundred thousand lives,

To end his own, that was sure proof against

The scalding summer's heat, and winter's frost,

Ill airs, the cannon, and the enemy's sword, In a most loathsome prison.

*Du Croy.* 'Twas his fault

To be so prodigal.

*Nov. sen.* He had from the state

Sufficient entertainment for the army.

*Charal.* Sufficient, my lords ! You sit at home,

And, though your fees are boundless at the bar,

Are thrifty in the charges of the war—

But your wills be obey'd. To these I turn,

To these soft-hearted men, that wisely know

They're only good men that pay what they owe.

*2 Cred.* And so they are.

*1 Cred.* It is the city doctrine ;

We stand bound to maintain it.

*Charal.* Be constant in it ;

And since you are as merciless in your natures,

As base and mercenary in your means

By which you get your wealth, I will not urge

The court to take away one scruple from

The right of their laws, or [wish] one good thought

In you, to mend your disposition with.

I know there is no music to your ears

So pleasing as the groans of men in prison ;

And that the tears of widows, and the cries

Of famish'd orphans, are the feasts that take you.

That to be in your danger, with more care

Should be avoided than infectious air,

The loath'd embraces of diseased women,

A flatterer's poison, or the loss of honour.—

Yet rather than my father's reverend dust

Shall want a place in that fair monument,

In which our noble ancestors lie entomb'd,

Before the court I offer up myself

A prisoner for it. Load me with those irons.

That have worn out his life; in my best strength  
I'll run to the encounter of cold, hunger,  
And choose my dwelling where no sun dares  
enter,

So he may be released.

1 *Cred.* What mean you, sir?

2 *Adv.* Only your fee again : there's so  
much said

Already in this cause, and said so well,  
That, should I only offer to speak in it,  
I should be or not heard, or laugh'd at for it.

1 *Cred.* 'Tis the first money advocate e'er  
gave back,

Though he said nothing.

*Roch.* Be advised, young lord,  
And well considerate ; you throw away  
Your liberty and joys of life together :  
Your bounty is employ'd upon a subject  
That is not sensible of it, with which wise man  
Never abused his goodness. The great  
virtues

Of your dead father vindicate themselves  
From these men's malice, and break ope the  
prison,

Though it contain his body.

*Nov. sen.* Let him alone :

If he love cords, in God's name let him  
wear them ;

Provided these consent.

*Charal.* I hope they are not  
So ignorant in any way of profit,  
As to neglect a possibility  
To get their own, by seeking it from that  
Which can return them nothing but ill fame,  
And curses, for their barbarous cruelties.

3 *Cred.* What think you of the offer?

2 *Cred.* Very well.

1 *Cred.* Accept it by all means. Let's  
shut him up :

He is well shaped, and has a villainous  
tongue,

And, should he study that way of revenge,  
As I dare almost swear he loves a wench,  
We have no wives, nor never shall get  
daughters,

That will hold out against him.

*Du Croy.* What's your answer?

2 *Cred.* Speak you for all.

1 *Cred.* Why, let our executions  
That lie upon the father, be return'd  
Upon the son, and we release the body.

*Nov. sen.* The court must grant you that.

*Charal.* I thank your lordships.  
They have in it confirm'd on me such glory  
As no time can take from me : I am ready,  
Come, lead me where you please. Captivity,  
That comes with honour, is true liberty.

[*Exeunt* Charalois, Charmi, Officers,  
and Creditors.

*Nov. sen.* Strange rashness !

*Roch.* A brave resolution rather,  
Worthy a better fortune : but, however,  
It is not now to be disputed ; therefore  
To my own cause. Already I have found  
Your lordships bountiful in your favours  
to me,

And that should teach my modesty to end  
here,

And press your loves no further.

*Du Croy.* There is nothing  
The court can grant, but with assurance you  
May ask it, and obtain it.

*Roch.* You encourage  
A bold petitioner, and 'tis not fit  
Your favours should be lost : besides, 't'as  
been

A custom many years, at the surrendering  
The place I now give up, to grant the  
president

One boon, that parted with it ; and, to con-  
firm

Your grace towards me, against all such as  
may

Detract my actions and life hereafter,  
I now prefer it to you.

*Du Croy.* Speak it freely.

*Roch.* I then desire the liberty of Romont,  
And that my lord Novall, whose private-  
wrong

Was equal to the injury that was done  
To the dignity of the court, will pardon it,  
And now sign his enlargement.

*Nov. sen.* Pray you demand  
The moiety of my estate, or anything  
Within my power, but this.

*Roch.* Am I denied then  
My first and last request?

*Du Croy.* It must not be.

2 *Pre.* I have a voice to give in it.

3 *Pre.* And I.

And if persuasion will not work him to it,  
We will make known our power.

*Nov. sen.* You are too violent,  
You shall have my consent : but would you  
had

Made trial of my love in anything  
But this, you should have found then—but  
it skills not :

You have what you desire.

*Roch.* I thank your lordships.

*Du Croy.* The court is up. Make way.

[*Exeunt all but Rochfort and Beaumont.*

*Roch.* I follow you.

Beaumont !

*Beau.* My lord.

*Roch.* You are a scholar, Beaumont ;  
And can search deeper into the intents of  
men,

Than those that are less knowing.—How appear'd

The piety and brave behaviour of Young Charalois, to you?

*Beau.* It is my wonder, Since I want language to express it fully : And sure the colonel—

*Roch.* Fie ! he was faulty. What present money have I ?

*Beau.* There's no want Of any sum a private man has use for.

*Roch.* 'Tis well : I am strangely taken with this Charalois. Methinks, from his example the whole age Should learn to be good, and continue so. Virtue works strangely with us ; and his goodness

Rising above his fortune, seems to me, Prince-like, to will, not ask, a courtesy.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—*A Street before the Prison.*

*Enter Pontalier, Malotiu, and Beaumont.*

*Mal.* 'Tis strange.

*Beau.* Methinks so.

*Pont.* In a man but young, Yet old in judgment ; theoretic and practick In all humanity, and, to increase the wonder, Religious, yet a soldier ; that he should Yield his free-living youth a captive for The freedom of his aged father's corpse, And rather choose to want life's necessaries, Liberty, hope of fortune, than it should In death be kept from Christian ceremony.

*Mal.* Come, 'tis a golden precedent in a son,

To let strong nature have the better hand, In such a case, of all affected reason. What years sit on this Charalois ?

*Beau.* Twenty-eight :

For since the clock did strike him seventeen old,

Under his father's wing this son hath fought, Served and commanded, and so aptly both, That sometimes he appear'd his father's father,

And never less than 's son ; the old man's virtues

So recent in him, as the world may swear, Nought but a fair tree could such fair fruit bear.

*Pont.* But wherefore lets he such a barbarous law,

And men more barbarous to execute it, Prevail on his soft disposition,

That he had rather die alive for debt

Of the old man, in prison, than they should Rob him of sepulture ; considering These monies borrow'd bought the lenders peace,

And all the means they enjoy, nor were diffused

In any impious or licentious path !

*Beau.* True ! for my part, were it my father's trunk,

The tyrannous ram-heads with their horns should gore it,

Or cast it to their curs, than they less currish,

Ere prey on me so with their lion-law, Being in my free will, as in his, to shun it.

*Pont.* Alas ! he knows himself in poverty lost :

For, in this partial avaricious age, What price bears honour ? virtue ? long ago, It was but praised, and freezed ; but now-a-days,

'Tis colder far, and has nor love nor praise: The very praise now freezeth too ; for nature

Did make the heathen far more Christian than,

Than knowledge us, less heathenish, Christian.

*Mal.* This morning is the funeral ?

*Pont.* Certainly, And from this prison,—'twas the son's request.

That his dear father might interment have, See, the young son enter'd a lively grave !

*Beau.* They come :—observe their order.

*Solemn music. Enter the Funeral Procession. The Coffin borne by four, preceded by a Priest. Captains, Lieutenants, Ensigns, and Soldiers; Mourners, Scutchions, &c., and very good order. Romont and Charalois, followed by the Gaolers and Officers, with Creditors, meet it.*

*Charal.* How like a silent stream shaded with night,

And gliding softly, with our windy sighs, Moves the whole frame of this solemnity !

Tears, sighs, and blacks filling the simile ; Whilst I, the only murmur in this grove

Of death, thus hollowly break forth. Vouchsafe

[*To the Bearers, who set down the Coffin.* To stay awhile.—Rest, rest in peace, dear earth !

Thou that brought'st rest to their unthankful lives,

Whose cruelty denied thee rest in death !

Here stands thy poor exécuter, thy son,

That makes his life prisoner to bail thy death ;

Who gladlier puts on this captivity,  
Than virgins, long in love, their wedding  
weeds.

Of all that ever thou hast done good to,  
These only have good memories ; for they  
Remember best forget not gratitude.  
I thank you for this last and friendly love.

[To the Soldiers.

And though this country, like a viperous  
mother,

Not only hath eat up ungratefully  
All means of thee, her son, but last, thyself,  
Leaving thy heir so bare and indigent,  
He cannot raise thee a poor monument,  
Such as a flatterer or a usurer hath ;  
Thy worth, in every honest breast, builds  
one,

Making their friendly hearts thy funeral  
stone.

*Pont. Sir.*

*Charal.* Peace ! O, peace ! this scene is  
wholly mine.

What ! weep ye, soldiers ? blanch not.—  
Romont weeps !—

Ha ! let me see !—my miracle is eased,  
The gaolers and the creditors do weep ;  
Even they that make us weep, do weep  
themselves !

Be these thy body's balm ! these and thy  
virtue

Keep thy fame ever odoriferous,  
Whilst the great, proud, rich, undeserving  
man,

Alive, stinks in his vices, and, being vanish'd,  
The golden calf, that was an idol deck'd  
With marble pillars, jet, and porphyry,  
Shall quickly, both in bone and name, con-  
sume,

Though rapt in lead, spice, searchloth, and  
perfume !

*1 Cred. Sir.*

*Charal.* What ? away, for shame ! you,  
profane rogues,

Must not be mingled with these holy  
relics ;

This is a sacrifice :—our shower shall crown  
His sepulchre with olive, myrrh, and bays,  
The plants of peace, of sorrow, victory ;  
Your tears would spring but weeds.

*1 Cred.* Would they so !

We'll keep them to stop bottles then.

*Rom.* No, keep them

For your own sins, you rogues, till you  
repent ;

You'll die else, and be damn'd.

*2 Cred.* Damn'd—ha ! ha ! ha !

*Rom.* Laugh ye ?

*3 Cred.* Yes, faith, sir ; we would be very  
glad

To please you either way.

*1 Cred.* Your are ne'er content,  
Crying nor laughing.

*Rom.* Both with a birth, ye rogues ?

*2 Cred.* Our wives, sir, taught us.

*Rom.* Look, look, you slaves ! your thank-  
less cruelty,

And savage manners of unkind Dijon,  
Exhaust these floods, and not his father's  
death.

*1 Cred.* 'Slid, sir ! what would you ? you're  
so choleric !

*2 Cred.* Most soldiers are so, i'faith ;—let  
him alone.

They have little else to live on. We've not  
had

A penny of him, have we ?

*3 Cred.* 'Slight ! would you have our  
hearts ?

*1 Cred.* We have nothing but his body  
here in durance,

For all our money.

*Priest. On.*

*Charal.* One moment more,

But to bestow a few poor legacies,  
All I have left in my dead father's rights,  
And I have done. Captain, wear thou these  
spurs,

That yet ne'er made his horse run from a  
foe.

Lieutenant, thou this scarf ; and may it tie  
Thy valour and thy honesty together !

For so it did in him. Ensign, this cuirass,  
Your general's necklace once. You, gentle  
bearers,

Divide this purse of gold ; this other, strew  
Among the poor ; 'tis all I have. Ro-  
mont—

Wear thou this medal of himself—that,  
like

A hearty oak, grew'st close to this tall pine,  
Even in the wildest wilderness of war,

Whereon foes broke their swords, and tired  
themselves :

Wounded and hack'd ye were, but never  
fell'd.

For me, my portion provide in heaven !—  
My root is earth'd, and I, a desolate branch,  
Left scatter'd in the highway of the world,  
Tro'd under foot, that might have been a  
column

Mainly supporting our demolish'd house.

This would I wear as my inheritance—

And what hope can arise to me from it,

When I and it are both here prisoners !

Only may this, if ever we be free,

Keep, or redeem, me from all infamy.

## A DIRGE TO SOLEMN MUSIC.

*Fie! cease to wonder,  
Though you hear Orpheus with his ivory lute,  
Move trees and rocks,  
Charm bulls, bears, and men more savage,  
to be mute;  
Weak foolish singer, here is one  
Would have transformed thyself to  
stone.*

1 *Cred.* No further ; look to them at your own peril.

2 *Cred.* No, as they please : their master's a good man—

I would they were at the Bermudas !

*Gaal.* You must no further.

The prison limits you, and the creditors Exact the strictness.

*Rom.* Out, you wolvisb mongrels !  
Whose brains should be knock'd out, like dogs in July,

Lest your infection poison a whole town.

*Charal.* They grudge our sorrow. Your ill wills, perforce,

Turn now to charity : they would not have us Walk too far mourning ; usurers' relief Grieves, if the debtors have too much of grief. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in Rochfort's House.*

*Enter Beaumelle, Florimel, and Bellapert.*

*Beaumel.* I prithee tell me, Florimel, why do women marry ?

*Flor.* Why truly, madam, I think, to lie with their husbands.

*Bell.* You are a fool. She lies, madam ; women marry husbands, to lie with other men.

*Flor.* 'Faith, even such a woman wilt thou make. By this light, madam, this wagtail will spoil you, if you take delight in her license.

*Beaumel.* 'Tis true, Florimel ; and thou wilt make me too good for a young lady. What an electuary found my father out for his daughter, when he compounded you two my women ! for thou, Florimel, art even a grain too heavy, simply, for a waiting-gentlewoman—

*Flor.* And thou, Bellapert, a grain too light.

*Bell.* Well, go thy ways, goody wisdom, whom nobody regards. I wonder whether be elder, thou or thy hood ? You think, because you served my lady's mother, are thirty-two years old, which is a pip out, you know—

*Flor.* Well said, whirligig.

*Bell.* You are deceived ; I want a peg in the middle.—Out of these prerogatives, you think to be mother of the maids here, and mortify them with proverbs : go, go, govern the sweetmeats, and weigh the sugar, that the wenches steal none ; say your prayers twice a day, and, as I take it, you have performed your function.

*Flor.* I may be even with you.

*Bell.* Hark ! the court's broke up. Go, help my old lord out of his caroch, and scratch his head till dinner-time.

*Flor.* Well.

*Bell.* Fie, madam, how you walk ! By my maidenhead, you look seven years older than you did this morning. Why, there can be nothing under the sun valuable to make you thus a minute. [*Exit.*]

*Beaumel.* Ah, my sweet Bellapert, thou cabinet

To all my counsels, thou dost know the cause

That makes thy lady wither thus in youth.

*Bell.* Uds-light ! enjoy your wishes : whilst I live,

One way or other you shall crown your will. Would you have him your husband that you love,

And can it not be ? he is your servant, though,

And may perform the office of a husband.

*Beaumel.* But there is honour, wench.

*Bell.* Such a disease

There is indeed, for which ere I would die—

*Beaumel.* Prithee, distinguish me a maid and wife.

*Bell.* 'Faith, madam, one may bear any man's children, t'other must bear no man's.

*Beaumel.* What is a husband ?

*Bell.* Physic, that, tumbling in your belly, will make you sick in the stomach. The only distinction betwixt a husband and a servant is, the first will lie with you when he pleases ; the last shall lie with you when you please. Pray tell me, lady, do you love, to marry after, or would you marry, to love after ?

*Beaumel.* I would meet love and marriage both at once.

*Bell.* Why then you are out of the fashion, and will be contem'd : for I will assure you, there are few women in the world, but either they have married first, and love after ; or love first, and married after. You must do as you may, not as you would : your father's will is the goal you must fly to. If a husband approach you, you would have further off, is he you love, the less

near you? A husband in these days is but a cloak, to be oftener laid upon your bed, than in your bed.

*Beaumel.* Humph!

*Bell.* Sometimes you may wear him on your shoulder; now and then under your arm; but seldom or never let him cover you, for 'tis not the fashion.

*Enter Novall junior, Pontalier, Malotin, Liladam, and Aymer.*

*Nov. jun.* Best day to nature's curiosity, Star of Dijon, the lustre of all France! Perpetual spring dwell on thy rosy cheeks, Whose breath is perfume to our continent!—

See! Flora trimm'd in her varieties.

*Bell.* O, divine lord!

*Nov.* No autumn nor no age ever approach

This heavenly piece; which nature having wrought,

She lost her needle, and did then despair  
Ever to work so lively and so fair!

*Lilad.* Uds-light! my lord, one of the purls of your hand is, without all discipline, fallen out of his rank.

*Nov. jun.* How! I would not for a thousand crowns she had seen't. Dear Liladam, reform it.

*Bell.* Oh lord *per se*, lord! quintessence of honour! she walks not under a weed that could deny thee anything.

*Beaumel.* Prithee peace, wench; thou dost but blow the fire,

That flames too much already.

[*Liladam and Aymer trim Novall, while Bellapert dresses her lady.*]

*Aym.* By gad, my lord, you have the divinest tailor in Christendom; he hath made you look like an angel in your cloth-of-tissue doublet.

*Pont.* This is a three-legg'd lord; there's a fresh assault. Oh! that men should spend time thus! See, see, how her blood drives to her heart, and straight vaults to her cheeks again!

*Malot.* What are these?

*Pont.* One of them there, the lower, is a good, foolish, knavish, sociable gallimaufry of a man, and has much caught my lord with singing; he is master of a music-house. The other is his dressing block, upon whom my lord lays all his clothes and fashions ere he vouchsafes them his own person: you shall see him in the morning in the Galley-foist, at noon in the Bullion, in the evening in Quirpo, and all night in—

*Malot.* A bawdyhouse.

*Pont.* If my lord deny, they deny; if he affirm, they affirm: they skip into my lord's cast skins some twice a year; and thus they flatter to eat, eat to live, and live to praise my lord.

*Malot.* Good sir, tell me one thing.

*Pont.* What's that?

*Malot.* Dare these men ever fight on any cause?

*Pont.* Oh, no! 'twould spoil their clothes, and put their hands out of order.

*Nov. jun.* Mistress, you hear the news? your father has resign'd his presidentship to my lord my father.

*Mal.* And lord Charalois Undone for ever.

*Pont.* Troth, 'tis pity, sir.

A braver hope of so assured a father,  
Did never comfort France.

*Lilad.* A good dumb mourner.

*Aym.* A silent black.

*Nov. jun.* Oh, fie upon him, how he wears his clothes!

As if he had come this Christmas from St. Omers,  
To see his friends, and return'd after Twelfth-tide.

*Lilad.* His colonel looks finely like a drover—

*Nov. jun.* That had a winter lain perdue in the rain.

*Aym.* What, he that wears a clout about his neck,

His cuffs in's pocket, and his heart in's mouth?

*Nov. jun.* Now, out upon him!

*Beaumel.* Servant, tie my hand.

[*Nov. jun. kisses her hand.*]

How your lips blush, in scorn that they should pay

Tribute to hands, when lips are in the way!

*Nov. jun.* I thus recant; [*Kisses her.*] yet now your hand looks white,

Because your lips robb'd it of such a right.

Monsieur Aymer, I prithee sing the song  
Devoted to my mistress.

MUSIC,—AND A SONG BY AYMER.

*A Dialogue between a Man and a Woman.*

Man. *Set, Phæbus, set; a fairer sun doth rise*

*From the bright radiance of my mistress' eyes*

*Than ever thou begat'st: I dare not look;*

*Each hair a golden line, each word a hook,*

*The more I strive, the more still I am took.*

- Wom. *Fair servant, come; the day these eyes do lend  
To warm thy blood, thou dost so vainly spend,  
Come, strangle breath.*
- Man. *What note so sweet as this,  
That calls the spirits to a further bliss?*
- Wom. *Yet this out-savours wine, and this perfume.*
- Man. *Let's die; I languish, I consume.*  
*Enter Rochfort and Beaumont.*  
*Beau.* Romont will come, sir, straight.  
*Roch.* 'Tis well.  
*Beaumont.* My father!  
*Nov. jun.* My honourable lord.  
*Roch.* My lord Novall, this is a virtue in you;  
So early up and ready before noon,  
That are the map of dressing through all France!  
*Nov. jun.* I rise to say my prayers, sir; here's my saint.  
*Roch.* 'Tis well and courtly:—you must give me leave,—  
I have some private conference with my daughter;  
Pray use my garden: you shall dine with me.  
*Lilad.* We'll wait on you.  
*Nov. jun.* Good morn unto your lordship!  
Remember, what you have vow'd—  
[*Aside to Beaumelle.*  
*Beaumont.*—Perform I must.  
[*Exeunt all but Rochfort and Beaumelle.*  
*Roch.* Why, how now, Beaumelle? thou look'st not well.  
Thou art sad of late:—come, cheer thee, I have found  
A wholesome remedy for these maiden fits;  
A goodly oak whereon to twist my vine,  
Till her fair branches grow up to the stars.  
Be near at hand.—Success crown my intent!  
My business fills my little time so full,  
I cannot stand to talk; I know thy duty  
Is handmaid to my will, especially  
When it presents nothing but good and fit.  
*Beaumont.* Sir, I am yours.—Oh! if my fears prove true,  
Fate hath wrong'd love, and will destroy me too.  
[*Aside, and exit.*  
*Enter Romont and Gaoler.*  
*Rom.* Sent you for me, sir?  
*Roch.* Yes.  
*Rom.* Your lordship's pleasure?  
*Roch.* Keeper, this prisoner I will see forthcoming,
- Upon my word.—Sit down, good colonel.  
[*Exit Gaoler.*  
Why I did wish you hither, noble sir,  
Is to advise you from this iron carriage,  
Which, so affected, Romont, you will wear;  
To pity, and to counsel you submit  
With expedition to the great Novall:  
Recant your stern contempt, and slight neglect  
Of the whole court and him, and opportunely,  
Or you will undergo a heavy censure  
In public, very shortly.  
*Rom.* Reverend sir,  
I have observed you, and do know you well;  
And am now more afraid you know not me,  
By wishing my submission to Novall,  
Than I can be of all the bellowing mouths  
That wait upon him to pronounce the censure,  
Could it determine me torments and shame.  
Submit, and crave forgiveness of a beast!—  
'Tis true, this boil of state wears purple tissue,  
Is high fed, proud; so is his lordship's horse,  
And bears as rich caparisons. I know  
This elephant carries on his back not only  
Towers, castles, but the ponderous republic,  
And never stoops for't; with his strong-breath'd trunk  
Snuffs others' titles, lordships, offices,  
Wealth, bribes, and lives, under his ravenous jaws:  
What's this unto my freedom? I dare die;  
And therefore ask this camel, if these blessings  
(For so they would be understood by a man)  
But mollify one rudeness in his nature,  
Sweeten the eager relish of the law,  
At whose great helm he sits. Helps he the poor,  
In a just business? nay, does he not cross  
Every deserved soldier and scholar,  
As if, when nature made him, she had made  
The general antipathy of all virtue?  
How savagely and blasphemously he spake  
Touching the general, the brave general  
dead!  
I must weep when I think on't.  
*Roch.* Sir.  
*Rom.* My lord,  
I am not stubborn; I can melt, you see,  
And prize a virtue better than my life:  
For though I be not learn'd, I ever loved  
That holy mother of all issues good,  
Whose white hand, for a sceptre, holds a file  
To polish roughest customs; and, in you,  
She has her right: see! I am calm as sleep.



But when I think of the gross injuries,  
The godless wrong done to my general dead,  
I rave indeed, and could eat this Novall ;  
A soulless dromedary !

*Roch.* Oh ! be temperate.

Sir, though I would persuade, I'll not constrain :

Each man's opinion freely is his own  
Concerning anything, or any body ;  
Be it right or wrong, 'tis at the judge's peril.

*Re-enter Beaumont.*

*Beau.* These men, sir, wait without ; my lord is come too.

*Roch.* Pay them those sums upon the table ; take

Their full releases :—stay, I want a witness.  
Let me entreat you, colonel, to walk in,  
And stand but by to see this money paid ;  
It does concern you and your friend ; it was  
The better cause you were sent for, though  
said otherwise.

The deed shall make this my request more plain.

*Rom.* I shall obey your pleasure, sir, though ignorant

To what it tends.

[*Exeunt Romont and Beaumont.*]

*Enter Charalois.*

*Roch.* Worthiest sir,

You are most welcome. Fie, no more of this !

You have outwept a woman, noble Charalois.  
No man but has or must bury a father.

*Charal.* Grave sir, I buried sorrow for his death,

In the grave with him. I did never think  
He was immortal—though I vow I grieve,  
And see no reason why the vicious,  
Virtuous, valiant, and unworthy man,  
Should die alike.

*Roch.* They do not.

*Charal.* In the manner

Of dying, sir, they do not ; but all die,  
And therein differ not :—but I have done.  
I spied the lively picture of my father,  
Passing your gallery, and that cast this water  
Into mine eyes : See,—foolish that I am,  
To let it do so !

*Roch.* Sweet and gentle nature !

How silken is this well, comparatively  
To other men ! [*Aside.*] I have a suit to you,  
sir.

*Charal.* Take it, 'tis granted.

*Roch.* What ?

*Charal.* Nothing, my lord.

*Roch.* Nothing is quickly granted.

*Charal.* Faith, my lord,

That nothing granted is even all I have,  
For, all know, I have nothing left to grant.

*Roch.* Sir, have you any suit to me ? I'll grant

you something, anything.

*Charal.* Nay, surely, I that can  
Give nothing, will but sue for that again.  
No man will grant me anything I sue for,  
But begging nothing, every man will give it.

*Roch.* Sir !

The love I bore your father, and the worth  
I see in you, so much resembling his,  
Made me thus send for you :—and tender  
here,

[*Draws a curtain and discovers a table  
with money and jewels upon it.*]

Whatever you will take, gold, jewels, both,  
All, to supply your wants, and free yourself.  
Where heavenly virtue in high blooded veins  
Is lodged, and can agree, men should kneel  
down,

Adore, and sacrifice all that they have ;  
And well they may, it is so seldom seen.—  
Put off your wonder, and bere freely take,  
Or send your servants : nor, sir, shall you use,  
In aught of this, a poor man's fee, or bribe  
Unjustly taken of the rich, but what's  
Directly gotten, and yet by the law.

*Charal.* How ill, sir, it becomes those  
hairs to mock !

*Roch.* Mock ! thunder strike me then !

*Charal.* You do amaze me :

But you shall wonder too. I will not take  
One single piece of this great heap. Why  
should I

Borrow, that have no means to pay ? nay, am  
A very bankrupt, even in flattering hope  
Of ever raising any. All my begging,  
Is Romont's liberty.

*Re-enter Romont and Beaumont, with  
Creditors.*

*Roch.* Here is your friend,  
Enfranchised ere you spake. I give him to  
you ;

And, Charalois, I give you to your friend,  
As free a man as he. Your father's debts  
Are taken off.

*Charal.* How !

*Rom.* Sir, it is most true ;

I am the witness.

1 *Cred.* Yes, faith, we are paid.

2 *Cred.* Heaven bless his lordship ! I did  
think him wiser.

3 *Cred.* He a statesman ! he an ass. Pay  
other men's debts !

1 *Cred.* That he was never bound for.

*Rom.* One more such  
Would save the rest of pleaders.

*Charal.* Honour'd Rochfort—  
Lie still, my tongue, and, blushes, scald my cheeks,

That offer thanks in words, for such great deeds.

*Roch.* Call in my daughter. Still I have a suit to you, [*Exit Beaumont.*  
Would you requite me.

*Rom.* With his life, I assure you.

*Roch.* Nay, would you make me now your debtor, sir—

*Re-enter Beaumont with Beaumelle.*

'This is my only child : what she appears,  
Your lordship well may see : her education  
Follows not any ; for her mind, I know it  
To be far fairer than her shape, and hope  
It will continue so. If now her birth  
Be not too mean for Charalois, take her, take  
This virgin by the hand, and call her Wife,  
Endow'd with all my fortunes. Bless me so ;  
Requite me thus, and make me happier,  
In joining my poor empty name to yours,  
Than if my state were multiplied tenfold.

*Charal.* Is this the payment, sir, that you expect !

Why, you precipitate me more in debt,  
That nothing but my life can ever pay.  
This beauty being your daughter, in which  
YOURS

I must conceive necessity of her virtue,  
Without all dowry is a prince's aim :  
Then, as she is, for poor and worthless me  
How much too worthy ! Waken me,  
Romont,

'That I may know I dream'd, and find this  
vanish'd.

*Rom.* Sure, I sleep not.

*Roch.* Your sentence—life or death.

*Charal.* Fair Beaumelle, can you love me ?

*Beaumel.* Yes, my lord.

*Enter Novall junior, Pontalier, Malotin,  
Liladam, and Aymer. They all salute.*

*Charal.* You need not question me if I  
can you :

You are the fairest virgin in Dijon,  
And Rochfort is your father.

*Nov. jun.* What's this change ? [*Aside.*

*Roch.* You meet my wishes, gentlemen.

*Rom.* What make

These dogs in doublets here ?

*Beau.* A visitation, sir.

*Charal.* Then thus, fair Beaumelle, I  
write my faith,

Thus seal it in the sight of heaven and men !  
Your fingers tie my heart-strings with this  
touch,

In true-love knots, which nought but death  
shall loose.

And let these tears, an emblem of our loves,  
Like crystal rivers individually  
Flow into one another, make one source,  
Which never man distinguish, less divide !  
Breath marry breath, and kisses mingle souls,  
Two hearts and bodies here incorporate !  
And, though with little wooing I have won,  
My future life shall be a wooing time,  
And every day new as the bridal one.  
Oh, sir ! I groan under your courtesies,  
More than my father's bones under his  
wrongs :

You, Curtius like, have thrown into the gulf  
Of this his country's foul ingratitude,  
Your life and fortunes, to redeem their  
shames.

*Roch.* No more, my glory ! come, let's  
in, and hasten

This celebration.

*Rom. Mal. Pont. Beau.* All fair bliss  
upon it !

[*Exeunt* Rochfort, Charalois, Ro-  
mont, Beaumont, and Malotin.

*Nov. jun.* [*As Beaumelle is going out.*]  
Mistress !

*Beaumel.* Oh, servant !—Virtue strengthen  
me !

Thy presence blows round my affection's  
vane :—

You will undo me, if you speak again.

[*Exit.*  
*Lilad. Aym.* Here will be sport for you !  
this works.

[*Exeunt.*

*Nov. jun.* Peace ! peace !

*Pont.* One word, my lord Novall.

*Nov. jun.* What, thou wouldst money?—  
there !

*Pont.* No, I will none ; I'll not be bought  
a slave,

A pander, or a parasite, for all  
Your father's worth. Though you have  
saved my life,

Rescued me often from my wants, I must not  
Wink at your follies : that will ruin you.

You know my blunt way, and my love to  
truth—

Forsake the pursuit of this lady's honour,  
Now you do see her made another man's,  
And such a man's, so good, so popular !  
Or you will pluck a thousand mischiefs on  
you.

The benefits you have done me are not lost,  
Nor cast away, they are purs'd here in my  
heart ;

But let me pay you, sir, a fairer way,  
Than to defend your vices, or to sooth  
them.

*Nov. jun.* Ha, ha! what are my courses unto thee?—

Good cousin Pontalier, meddle with that That shall concern thyself. [*Exit.*]

*Pont.* No more but scorn!

Move on then, stars, work your pernicious will:

Only the wise rule, and prevent your ill. [*Exit.*]

[*Here a passage over the stage, while the act is playing for the marriage of Charalois with Beaumelle, &c.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Charalois' House.*

*Enter Novall junior, and Bellapert.*

*Nov. jun.* Fly not to these excuses; thou hast been

False in thy promise—and, when I have said Ungrateful, all is spoken.

*Bell.* Good my lord,

But hear me only.

*Nov. jun.* To what purpose, trifler?

Can anything that thou canst say make void The marriage, or those pleasures but a dream,

Which Charalois, oh Venus! hath enjoy'd?

*Bell.* I yet could say that you receive advantage

In what you think a loss, would you vouchsafe me;

That you were never in the way, till now, With safety to arrive at your desires; That pleasure makes love to you, unattended By danger or repentance.

*Nov. jun.* That I could

But apprehend one reason how this might be! Hope would not then forsake me.

*Bell.* The enjoying

Of what you most desire, I say the enjoying, Shall, in the full possession of your wishes, Confirm that I am faithful.

*Nov. jun.* Give some relish

How this may appear possible.

*Bell.* I will,

Relish and taste, and make the banquet easy. You say my lady's married,—I confess it; That Charalois hath enjoy'd her;—'tis most true:

That, with her, he's already master of The best part of my old lord's state—still better.

But, that the first or last should be your hinderance,

I utterly deny; for, but observe me;

While she went for, and was, I swear, a virgin,

What courtesy could she, with her honour, give,

Or you receive with safety!—take me with you:

When I, say courtesy, do not think I mean, A kiss, the tying of her shoe or garter, An hour of private conference; those are trifles.

In this word courtesy we, that are gamesters, point at

The sport direct, where not alone the lover Brings his artillery, but uses it;

Which word expounded to you, such a courtesy

Do you expect, and sudden.

*Nov. jun.* But he tasted

The first sweets, Bellapert.

*Bell.* He wrong'd you shrewdly!

He toil'd to climb up to the phoenix' nest, And in his prints leaves your ascent more easy.

I do not know, you that are perfect critics In women's books, may talk of maiden-heads—

*Nov. jun.* But for her marriage!

*Bell.* 'Tis a fair protection

'Gainst all arrests of fear or shame for ever. Such as are fair, and yet not foolish, study To have one at thirteen; but they are mad That stay till twenty. Then, sir, for the pleasure,

To say adultery's sweeter, that is stale; This only—is not the contentment more, To say, This is my cuckold, than my rival? More I could say—but briefly, she doats on you;

If it prove otherwise, spare not; poison me, With the next gold you give me.

*Enter Beaumelle.*

*Beaumel.* How's this, servant!

Courting my woman?

*Bell.* As an entrance to

The favour of the mistress. You are together;

And I am perfect in my cue. [*Going.*]

*Beaumel.* Stay, Bellapert.

*Bell.* In this I must not, with your leave, obey you.

Your tailor and your tirewoman wait without,

And stay my counsel and direction for Your next day's dressing. I have much to do, Nor will your ladyship, now time is precious, Continue idle; this choice lord will find So fit employment for you! [*Exit.*]

*Beaumel.* I shall grow angry.

*Nov. jun.* Not so; you have a jewel in her, madam.

*Re-enter Bellapert.*

*Bell.* I had forgot to tell your ladyship  
The closet is private, and your couch [there]  
ready ;

And, if you please that I shall lose the key,  
But say so, and 'tis done. [*Exit.*]

*Beaumel.* You come to chide me, servant,  
and bring with you

Sufficient warrant. You will say, and truly,  
My father found too much obedience in me,  
By being won too soon ; yet, if you please  
But to remember all my hopes and fortunes  
Had reference to his liking, you will grant,  
That though I did not well towards you, I  
yet

Did wisely for myself.

*Nov. jun.* With too much fervour  
I have so long loved, and still love you,  
mistress,

To esteem that an injury to me,  
Which was to you convenient :—that is past  
My help, is past my cure. You yet may,  
lady,

In recompense of all my duteous service,  
(Provided that your will answer your power,)  
Become my creditress.

*Beaumel.* I understand you ;  
And for assurance the request you make  
Shall not be long unanswered,—pray you,  
sit ;

And by what you shall hear, you'll easily  
find,

My passions are much fitter to desire,  
Than to be sued to. [*They court.*]

*Enter Romout and Florimel behind.*

*Flor.* Sir, it is not envy  
At the start my fellow has got of me in  
My lady's good opinion, that's the motive  
Of this discovery ; but the due payment  
Of what I owe her honour.

*Rom.* So I conceive it.

*Flor.* I have observed too much, nor shall  
my silence

Prevent the remedy :—Yonder they are ;  
I dare not be seen with you. You may do  
What you think fit, which will be, I presume,  
The office of a faithful and tried friend  
To my young lord. [*Exit.*]

*Rom.* This is no vision : ha !

*Nov. jun.* With the next opportunity ?

*Beaumel.* By this kiss,

And this, and this.

*Nov. jun.* That you would ever swear  
thus !

*Rom.* [*comes forward.*] If I seem rude,  
your pardon, lady ; yours

I do not ask : come ; do not dare to shew me

A face of anger, or the least dislike :  
Put on, and suddenly, a milder look,  
I shall grow rough else.

*Nov. jun.* What have I done, sir,  
To draw this harsh unsavoury language from  
you ?

*Rom.* Done, popinjay ! why, dost thou  
think, that, if

I e'er had dreamt that thou hadst done me  
wrong,

Thou shouldst outlive it ?

*Beaumel.* This is something more  
Than my lord's friendship gives commission  
for.

*Nov. jun.* Your presence and the place  
make him presume

Upon my patience.

*Rom.* As if thou e'er wert angry  
But with thy tailor ! and yet that poor shred  
Can bring more to the making up of a man,  
Than can be hoped from thee : thou art his  
creature ;

And did he not, each morning, new create  
thee,

Thou'dst stink, and be forgotten. I'll not  
change

One syllable more with thee, until thou bring  
Some testimony, under good men's hands,  
Thou art a Christian : I suspect thee strongly,  
And will be satisfied ; till which time, keep  
from me.—

The entertainment of your visitation,  
Has made what I intended one, a business.

*Nov. jun.* So ! we shall meet.—Madam.

*Rom.* Use that leg again,

And I'll cut off the other.

*Nov. jun.* Very good. [*Exit.*]

*Rom.* What a perfume the muskcat leaves  
behind him !

Do you admit him for a property,  
To save you charges, lady ?

*Beaumel.* 'Tis not useless,  
Now you are to succeed him.

*Rom.* So I respect you,  
Not for yourself, but in remembrance of  
Who is your father, and whose wife you now  
are,

That I choose rather not to understand  
Your nasty scoff, than—

*Beaumel.* What, you will not beat me  
If I expound it to you ! Here's a tyrant  
Spares neither man nor woman !

*Rom.* My intents,  
Madam, deserve not this ; nor do I stay  
To be the whetstone of your wit : preserve it  
To spend on such as know how to admire  
Such colour'd stuff. In me, there now  
speaks to you,

As true a friend and servant to your honour,

And one that will with as much hazard  
guard it,  
As ever man did goodness:—but then,  
lady,

You must endeavour not alone to BE,  
But to APPEAR, worthy such love and ser-  
vice.

*Beaumont.* To what tends this?

*Rom.* Why, to this purpose, lady.

I do desire you should prove such a wife  
To Charalois (and such a one he merits)  
As Cæsar, did he live, could not except at ;  
Not only innocent from crime, but free  
From all taint and suspicion.

*Beaumont.* They are base  
That judge me otherwise.

*Rom.* But yet be careful :

Detraction's a bold monster, and fears not  
To wound the fame of princes, if it find  
But any blemish in their lives to work on.  
But I'll be plainer with you : had the people  
Been learn'd to speak but what even now I  
saw,

Their malice out of that would raise an  
engine

To overthrow your honour. In my sight,  
With yonder painted fool I frighted from  
you,

You used familiarity beyond

A modest entertainment : you embraced him  
With too much ardour for a stranger, and  
Met him with kisses neither chaste nor  
comely.

But learn you to forget him, as I will  
Your bounties to him ; you will find it safer  
Rather to be uncourtly than immodest.

*Beaumont.* This pretty rag about your neck  
shews well,

And, being coarse and little worth, it speaks  
you

As terrible as thrifty.

*Rom.* Madam !

*Beaumont.* Yes :

And this strong belt, in which you hang  
your honour,

Will outlast twenty scarfs.

*Rom.* What mean you, lady ?

*Beaumont.* And [then] all else about you  
cap-à-pié,

So uniform in spite of handsomeness,  
Shews such a bold contempt of comeliness,  
That 'tis not strange your laundress in the  
leaguer

Grew mad with love of you.

*Rom.* Is my free counsel

Answer'd with this ridiculous scorn ?

*Beaumont.* These objects

Stole very much of my attention from me ;  
Yet something I remember, to speak truth,

Deliver'd gravely, but to little purpose,  
That almost would have made me swear  
some curate

Had stolen into the person of Romont,  
And, in the praise of goodwife honesty,  
Had read an homily.

*Rom.* By this hand—

*Beaumont.* And sword,

I will make up your oath, it will want weight  
else.—

You are angry with me, and poor I laugh  
at it.

Do you come from the camp, which affords  
only

The conversation of cast suburb whores,  
To set down, to a lady of my rank,  
Limits of entertainment ?

*Rom.* Sure a legion

Has possess'd this woman !

*Beaumont.* One stamp more would do well :  
yet I desire not

You should grow horn-mad till you have a  
wife.

You are come to warm meat, and perhaps  
clean linen ;

Feed, wear it, and be thankful. For me,  
know,

That though a thousand watches were set  
on me,

And you the master-spy, I yet would use  
The liberty that best likes me. I will revel,  
Feast, kiss, embrace, perhaps grant larger  
favours ;

Yet such as live upon my means shall know  
They must not murmur at it. If my lord  
Be now grown yellow, and has chose out you

To serve his jealousy this way, tell him this :  
You have something to inform him. [*Exit.*]

*Rom.* And I will ;

Believe it, wicked one, I will. Hear, heaven,  
But, hearing, pardon me!—if these fruits  
grow

Upon the tree of marriage, let me shun it,  
As a forbidden sweet. An heir, and rich,  
Young, beautiful, yet add to this—a wife,  
And I will rather choose a spittle sinner  
Carted an age before, though three parts  
rotten,

And take it for a blessing, rather than  
Be fetter'd to the hellish slavery  
Of such an impudence.

*Enter Beaumont with writings.*

*Beau.* Colonel, good fortune

To meet you thus ! You look sad ; but I'll  
tell you

Something that shall remove it. O, how  
happy

Is my lord Charalois in his fair bride !

*Rom.* A happy man, indeed!—pray you, in what?

*Beau.* I dare swear, you would think so good a lady  
A dowry sufficient.

*Rom.* No doubt. But on.

*Beau.* So fair, so chaste, so virtuous, so—indeed,  
All that is excellent!

*Rom.* Women have no cunning  
To gull the world! [*Aside.*]

*Beau.* Yet, to all these, my lord,  
Her father, gives the full addition of  
All he does now possess in Burgundy:  
These writings, to confirm it, are new seal'd,  
And I most fortunate to present him with them;

I must go seek him out. Can you direct me?  
*Rom.* You'll find him breaking a young horse.

*Beau.* I thank you. [*Exit.*]

*Rom.* I must do something worthy Charalois' friendship.

If she were well inclined, to keep her so  
Deserved not thanks; and yet, to stay a woman

Spurr'd headlong by hot lust to her own ruin,  
Is harder than to prop a falling tower  
With a deceiving reed.

*Enter* Rochfort, *speaking to a Servant within.*

*Roch.* Some one seek for me  
As soon as he returns.

*Rom.* Her father? ha?—  
How if I break this to him? sure it cannot  
Meet with an ill construction: his wisdom,  
Made powerful by the authority of a father,  
Will warrant and give privilege to his counsels,

It shall be so.—My lord!

*Roch.* Your friend, Romont.  
Would you aught with me?

*Rom.* I stand so engaged  
To your so many favours, that I hold it  
A breach in thankfulness, should I not discover,

Though with some imputation to myself,  
All doubts that may concern you.

*Roch.* The performance  
Will make this protestation worth my thanks.

*Rom.* Then, with your patience, lend me your attention:

For what I must deliver, whisper'd only,  
You will with too much grief receive.

*Enter* Beaumelle and Bellapert, *behind.*

*Beaumel.* See, wench!  
Upon my life, as I forespake, he's now

Preferring his complaint; but be thou perfect,  
And we will fit him.

*Bell.* Fear not me; pox on him!  
A captain turn informer against kissing!  
Would he were hang'd up in his rusty  
armour!—

But, if our fresh wits cannot turn the plots  
Of such a mouldy murrion on itself,  
Rich clothes, choice fare, and a true friend  
at a call,

With all the pleasures the night yields, forsake us!

*Roch.* This in my daughter! do not wrong her.

*Bell.* Now  
Begin: the game's afoot, and we in distance.

*Beaumel.* [*comes forward.*] 'Tis thy fault,  
foolish girl! pin on my veil,

I will not wear those jewels. Am I not  
Already match'd beyond my hopes? yet still  
You prune and set me forth, as if I were  
Again to please a suitor.

*Bell.* 'Tis the course  
That our great ladies take.

*Beaumel.* A weak excuse!  
Those that are better seen in what concerns  
A lady's honour and fair fame, condemn it.  
You wait well! in your absence, my lord's  
friend,

The understanding, grave, and wise Romont—

*Rom.* Must I be still her sport?  
*Beaumel.* Reproved me for it;  
And he has travell'd to bring home a judgment

Not to be contradicted. You will say  
My father, that owes more to years than he,  
Has brought me up to music, language,  
courtship,

And I must use them: true; but not to offend,

Or render me suspected.

*Roch.* Does your fine story  
Begin from this?

*Beaumel.* I thought a parting kiss  
From young Novall would have displeas'd  
no more

Than heretofore it hath done; but I find  
I must restrain such favours now; look,  
therefore,

As you are careful to continue mine,  
That I no more be visited. I'll endure  
The strictest course of life that jealousy  
Can think secure enough, ere my behaviour  
Shall call my fame in question.

*Rom.* Ten dissemblers  
Are in this subtle devil! You believe this?

*Roch.* So far, that if you trouble me again  
With a report like this, I shall not only

Judge you malicious in your disposition,  
But study to repent what I have done  
To such a nature.

*Rom.* Why, 'tis exceeding well.

*Roch.* And for you, daughter, off with this,  
off with it!

I have that confidence in your goodness, I,  
That I will not consent to have you live  
Like to a recluse in a cloister: Go,  
Call in the gallants, let them make you  
merry;  
Use all fit liberty.

*Bell.* Blessing upon you!

If this new preacher with the sword and  
feather

Could prove his doctrine for canonical,  
We should have a fine world. [*Exit.*]

*Roch.* Sir, if you please

To bear yourself as fits a gentleman,  
The house is at your service; but, if not,  
Though you seek company elsewhere, your  
absence

Will not be much lamented. [*Exit.*]

*Rom.* If this be

The recompense of striving to preserve  
A wanton giggle honest, very shortly  
'Twill make all mankind panders.—Do you  
smile,

Good lady looseness! your whole sex is like  
you,

And that man's mad that seeks to better any:  
What new change have you next?

*Beaumont.* Oh, fear not you, sir;

I'll shift into a thousand, but I will  
convert your heresy.

*Rom.* What heresy? speak.

*Beaumont.* Of keeping a lady that is married,  
From entertaining servants—

*Enter Novall junior, Malotin, Liladam,  
Aymer, and Pontalier.*

—O, you are welcome!

Use any means to vex him,  
And then with welcome follow me.

[*Aside to them, and exit.*]

*Nov. jun.* You are tired

With your grave exhortations, colonel!

*Lilad.* How is it? faith, your lordship  
may do well

To help him to some church preferment: 'tis  
The fashion now for men of all conditions,  
However they have lived, to end that way.

*Aym.* That face would do well in a surplice.

*Rom.* Rogues,

Be silent—or—

*Pont.* 'Sdeath! will you suffer this?

*Rom.* And you, the master-rogue, the  
coward rascal,

I shall be with you suddenly.

*Nov. jun.* Pontalier,  
If I should strike him, I know I should kill  
him;

And therefore I would have thee beat him, for  
He's good for nothing else.

*Lilad.* His back  
Appears to me, as it would tire a beadle;  
And then he has a knotted brow, would  
bruise

A courtlike hand to touch it.

*Aym.* He looks like

A currier when his hides grow dear.

*Pont.* Take heed

He curry not some of you.

*Nov. jun.* Gads me! he's angry.

*Rom.* I break no jests; but I can break  
my sword

About your pates.

*Enter Charalois and Beaumont.*

*Lilad.* Here's more.

*Aym.* Come, let's be gone:

We are beleagu'rd.

*Nov. jun.* Look, they bring up their  
troops.

*Pont.* Will you sit down  
With this disgrace? you are abused most  
grossly.

*Lilad.* I grant you, sir, we are; and you  
would have us

Stay, and be more abused.

*Nov. jun.* My lord, I'm sorry

Your house is so inhospitable, we must quit  
it.

[*Exeunt all but Charalois and Romont.*]

*Charal.* Prithee, Romont, what caused  
this uproar?

*Rom.* Nothing;

They laugh'd, and used their scurvy wits  
upon me.

*Charal.* Come, 'tis thy jealous nature:  
but I wonder

That you, which are an honest man and  
worthy,

Should foster this suspicion: no man laughs,  
No one can whisper, but thou apprehend'st

His conference and his scorn reflect on thee:  
For my part, they should scoff their thin wits

out,  
So I not heard them; beat me, not being  
there.

Leave, leave these fits to conscious men, to  
such

As are obnoxious to those foolish things  
As they can gibe at.

*Rom.* Well, sir.

*Charal.* Thou art known  
Valiant without defect, rightly defined,  
Which is as fearing to do injury,

As tender to endure it ; not a brabber,  
A swearer—

*Rom.* Pish, pish ! what needs this, my lord ?

If I be known none such, how vainly you  
Do cast away good counsel ! I have loved  
you,

And yet must freely speak ; so young a tutor  
Fits not so old a soldier as I am :

And I must tell you, 'twas in your behalf  
I grew enraged thus, yet had rather die  
Than open the great cause a syllable further.

*Charal.* In my behalf ! Wherein hath  
Charalois

Unfitly so demean'd himself, to give  
The least occasion to the loosest tongue  
To throw aspersions on him ? or so weakly  
Protected his own honour, as it should  
Need a defence from any but himself ?  
They are fools that judge me by my outward  
seeming.

Why should my gentleness beget abuse ?  
The lion is not angry that does sleep,  
Nor every man a coward that can weep.  
For God's sake, speak the cause.

*Rom.* Not for the world.  
Oh ! it will strike disease into your bones,  
Beyond the cure of physic ; drink your blood,  
Rob you of all your rest, contract your sight,  
Leave you no eyes but to see misery,  
And of your own ; nor speech, but to wish  
thus,

Would I had perish'd in the prison's jaws,  
From whence I was redeem'd !—'twill wear  
you old,

Before you have experience in that art  
That causes your affliction.

*Charal.* Thou dost strike  
A deathful coldness to my heart's high heat,  
And shrink'st my liver like the calenture.  
Declare this foe of mine, and life's, that like  
A man I may encounter and subdue it.

It shall not have one such effect in me,  
As thou denoucest ; with a soldier's arm,  
If it be strength, I'll meet it ; if a fault  
Belonging to my mind, I'll cut it off  
With mine own reason, as a scholar should.  
Speak, though it make me monstrous.

*Rom.* I will die first.  
Farewell ; continue merry, and high heaven  
Keep your wife chaste !

*Charal.* Hum ! Stay, and take this wolf  
Out of my breast, that thou hast lodged  
there, or  
For ever lose me.

*Rom.* Lose not, sir, yourself,  
And I will venture :—so, the door is fast.

[Locks the door.]

Now, noble Charalois, collect yourself,

Summon your spirits, muster all your  
strength

That can belong to man ; sift passion  
From every vein, and whatsoever ensues,  
Upbraid not me hereafter, as the cause of  
Jealousy, discontent, slaughter, and ruin :  
Make me not parent to sin.—You will know  
This secret that I burn with ?

*Charal.* Devil on't,  
What should it be ! Romont, I heard you  
wish

My wife's continuance of chastity.

*Rom.* There was no hurt in that.

*Charal.* Why, do you know  
A likelihood, or possibility,  
Unto the contrary ?

*Rom.* I know it not, but doubt it ; these  
the grounds :

The servant of your wife now, young Novall,  
The son unto your father's enemy,  
(Which aggravates presumption the more,)  
I have been warn'd of, touching her :—nay,  
seen them

Tied heart to heart, one in another's arms,  
Multiplying kisses, as if they meant  
To pose arithmetic ; or whose eyes would  
Be first burnt out with gazing on the other's.  
I saw their mouths engender, and their palms  
Glew'd, as if love had lock'd them ; their  
words flow

And melt each other's, like two circling  
flames,

Where chastity, like a phœnix, methought,  
burn'd,

But left the world nor ashes, nor an heir.—  
Why stand you silent thus ? what cold dull  
phlegm,

As if you had no drop of choler mix'd  
In your whole constitution, thus prevails,  
To fix you now thus stupid, hearing this ?

*Charal.* You did not see him on my couch  
within,

Like George a-horseback, on her, nor a-bed ?  
*Rom.* No.

*Charal.* Ha ! ha !  
*Rom.* Laugh you ! even so did your wife,  
And her indulgent father.

*Charal.* They were wise :  
Wouldst have me be a fool ?

*Rom.* No, but a man.  
*Charal.* There is no dram of manhood to  
suspect,

On such thin airy circumstance as this ;  
Mere compliment and courtship. Was this  
tale

The hideous monster which you so con-  
ceal'd ?

Away, thou curious impertinent,  
And idle searcher of such lean, nice toys !



Go, thou seditious sower of debate,  
Fly to such matches, where the bridegroom  
doubts,

He holds not worth enough to countervail  
The virtue and the beauty of his wife !  
Thou buzzing drone, that 'bout my ears dost  
hum,

To strike thy rankling sting into my heart,  
Whose venom time nor medicine could  
assuage,

Thus do I put thee off ! and, confident  
In mine own innocency and desert,  
Dare not conceive her so unreasonable,  
To put Novall in balance against me ;  
An upstart, craned up to the height he has.  
Hence, busybody ! thou'rt no friend to me,  
That must be kept to a wife's injury.

*Rom.* Is't possible ?—farewell, fine honest  
man !

Sweet-temper'd lord, adieu ! What apoplexy  
Hath knit sense up ? is this Romont's re-  
ward ?

Bear witness, the great spirit of thy father,  
With what a healthful hope I did ad-  
minister

This potion, that hath wrought so viru-  
lently !

I not accuse thy wife of act, but would  
Prevent her precipice to thy dishonour,  
Which now thy tardy sluggishness will  
admit.

Would I had seen thee grav'd with thy  
great sire,  
Ere lived to have men's marginal fingers  
point

At Charalois, as a lamented story !  
An emperor put away his wife for touching  
Another man ; but thou wouldst have thine  
tasted,

And keep her, I think—Phoh ! I am a fire,  
To warm a dead man, that waste out myself.  
Bleed—What a plague, a vengeance, is't  
to me,

If you will be a cuckold ? here, I shew  
A sword's point to thee, this side you may  
shun,

Or that, the peril ; if you will run on,  
I cannot help it.

*Charal.* Didst thou never see me

Angry, Romont ?

*Rom.* Yes, and pursue a foe  
Like lightning.

*Charal.* Prithee, see me so no more :  
I can be so again. Put up thy sword,  
And take thyself away, lest I draw mine.

*Rom.* Come, fright your foes with this,  
sir ! I'm your friend,

And dare stand by you thus.

*Charal.* Thou art not my friend,

Or, being so, thou art mad ; I must not buy  
Thy friendship at this rate. Had I just cause,  
Thou know'st I durst pursue such injury  
Through fire, air, water, earth, nay, were  
they all

Shuffled again to chaos ; but there's none.  
Thy skill, Romont, consists in camps, not  
courts.

Farewell, uncivil man ! let's meet no more :  
Here our long web of friendship I untwist.  
Shall I go whine, walk pale, and lock my  
wife,

For nothing, from her birth's free liberty,  
That open'd mine to me ? yes ! if I do,  
The name of cuckold then dog me with  
scorn !

I am a Frenchman, no Italian born.

*Rom.* A dull Dutch rather : fall and cool,  
my blood !

Boil not in zeal of thy friend's hurt so high,  
That is so low and cold himself in't !  
Woman,

How strong art thou ! how easily beguiled !  
How thou dost rack us by the very horns !  
Now wealth, I see, change manners and the  
man.

Something I must do mine own wrath to  
assuage,

And note my friendship to an after-age.

[*Exit.*

#### ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Novall's House.*

*Novall junior discovered seated before a  
looking-glass, with a Barber and Per-  
fumer dressing his hair, while a Tailor  
adjusts a new suit which he wears.  
Liladam, Aymer, and a Page attending.*

*Nov. jun.* Mend this a little : pox ! thou  
hast burnt me. Oh, fie upon't ! O lard !  
he has made me smell for all the world like  
a flax, or a red-headed woman's chamber :  
Powder, powder, powder !

*Perf.* Oh, sweet lord !

*Page.* That's his perfumer.

*Tail.* Oh, dear lord !

*Page.* That's his tailor.

*Nov. jun.* Monsieur Liladam, Aymer,  
how allow you the model of these clothes ?

*Aym.* Admirably, admirably ; oh, sweet  
lord ! assuredly it's pity the worms should  
eat thee.

*Page.* Here's a fine cell ! a lord, a tailor,  
a perfumer, a barber, and a pair of mon-  
sieurs : three to three ; as little wit in the  
one, as honesty in the other. 'Sfoot ! I'll

into the country again, learn to speak truth, drink ale, and converse with my father's tenants; here I hear nothing all day, but—  
*Upon my soul, as I am a gentleman, and an honest man!* [Aside.]

*Aym.* I vow and affirm, your tailor must needs be an expert geometrician; he has the longitude, latitude, altitude, profundity, every dimension of your body, so exquisitely—here's a lace laid as directly as if truth were a tailor.

*Page.* That were a miracle. [Aside.]

*Lilad.* With a hair's-breadth's error, there's a shoulder-piece cut, and the base of a pickadille in *puncto*.

*Aym.* You are right, monsieur; his vestments sit as if they grew upon him, or art had wrought them on the same loom as nature framed his lordship; as if your tailor were deep read in astrology, and had taken measure of your honourable body with a Jacob's staff, an ephemerides.

*Tail.* I am bound t'ye, gentlemen.

*Page.* You are deceived; they'll be bound to you: you must remember to trust them none. [Aside.]

*Nov. jun.* Nay, 'faith, thou art a reasonable neat artificer, give the devil his due.

*Page.* Ay, if he would but cut the coat according to the cloth still. [Aside.]

*Nov. jun.* I now want only my mistress' approbation, who is, indeed, the most polite, punctual queen of dressing in all Burgundy—pah! and makes all other young ladies appear as if they came from board last week out of the country: is't not true, Liladam?

*Lilad.* True, my lord! as if anything your lordship could say could be otherwise than true.

*Nov. jun.* Nay, o' my soul, 'tis so; what fouler object in the world, than to see a young, fair, handsome beauty unhandsonely dighted, and incongruently accoutred? or a hopeful chevalier unmethodically appointed in the external ornaments of nature? For, even as the index tells us the contents of stories, and directs to the particular chapters, even so does the outward habit and superficial order of garments (in man or woman) give us a taste of the spirit, and demonstratively point (as it were a manual note from the margin) all the internal quality and habilitment of the soul; and there cannot be a more evident, palpable, gross manifestation of poor, degenerate, dunghilly blood and breeding, than a rude, unpolished, disordered, and slovenly outside.

*Page.* An admirable lecture! oh, all you

gallants, that hope to be saved by your clothes, edify, edify! [Aside.]

*Aym.* By the Lord, sweet lard, thou deservest a pension o' the state.

*Page.* O' the tailors: two such lords were able to spread tailors o'er the face of the whole kingdom. [Aside.]

*Nov. jun.* Pox o' this glass! it flatters.—I could find in my heart to break it.

*Page.* O, save the glass, my lord, and break their heads;

They are the greater flatterers, I assure you. [Aside.]

*Aym.* Flatters! detracts, impairs—yet, put it by,

Lest thou, dear lord, Narcissus like, should'st doat

Upon thyself, and die; and rob the world Of nature's copy, that she works form by.

*Lilad.* O that I were the infanta queen of Europe!

Who, but thyself, sweet lord, should marry me?

*Nov. jun.* I marry! were there a queen o' the world, not I.

Wedlock! no; padlock, horselock:—I wear spurs [He capers.]

To keep it off my heels. Yet, my Aymer, Like a free, wanton jennet in the meadows, I look about, and neigh, take bedge and ditch,

Feed in my neighbour's pastures, pick my choice

Of all their fair-maned mares: but married once,

A man is staked or poun'd, and cannot graze

Beyond his own hedge.

*Enter Pontalier and Malotin.*

*Pont.* I have waited, sir, Three hours to speak wi' ye, and not take it well

Such magpies are admitted, whilst I dance Attendance.

*Lilad.* Magpies! what d'ye take me for?  
*Pont.* A long thing with a most unpromising face.

*Aym.* I'll never ask him what he takes me for.

*Malot.* Do not, sir, For he'll go near to tell you.

*Pont.* Art not thou A barber-surgeon?

*Barb.* Yes, sirrah; why?

*Pont.* My lord is sorely troubled with two scabs.

*Lilad. Aym.* Hum—

*Pont.* I prithee cure him of them.

*Nov. jun.* Pish ! no more.  
Thy gall sure's overflown ; these are my  
council,

And we were now in serious discourse.

*Pont.* Of perfume and apparel ! Can  
you rise,

And spend five hours in dressing-talk with  
these !

*Nov. jun.* Thou'dst have me be a dog :  
up, stretch, and shake,  
And ready for all day.

*Pont.* Sir, would you be  
More curious in preserving of your honour  
trim,

It were more manly. I am come to wake  
Your reputation from this lethargy  
You let it sleep in ; to persuade, impórtune,  
Nay, to provoke you, sir, to call to account  
This colonel Romont, for the foul wrong  
Which, like a burthen, he hath laid upon  
you,

And, like a drunken porter, you sleep  
under.

'Tis all the town talks ; and, believe it, sir,  
If your tough sense persist thus, you are  
undone,

Utterly lost ; you will be scorn'd and baffled  
By every lacquey : season now your youth  
With one brave thing, and it shall keep the  
odour

Even to your death, beyond, and on your  
tomb

Scent like sweet oils and frankincense. Sir,  
this life,

Which once you saved, I ne'er since counted  
mine :

I borrow'd it of you, and now will pay it :  
I tender you the service of my sword,  
To bear your challenge ; if you'll write, your  
fate

I'll make mine own ; whate'er betide you, I,  
That have lived by you, by your side will die.

*Nov. jun.* Ha ! ha ! wouldst have me  
challenge poor Romont ?—

Fight with close breeches, thou mayst think  
I dare not :

Do not mistake me, coz, I am very valiant ;  
But valour shall not make me such an ass.  
What use is there of valour now-a-days ?

'Tis sure or to be kill'd, or to be hang'd.  
Fight thou as thy mind moves thee, 'tis thy  
trade ;

Thou hast nothing else to do. Fight with  
Romont !

No ; I'll not fight, under a lord.

*Pont.* Farewell, sir !

I pity you,

Such living lords walk, their dead honour's  
graves,

For no companions fit but fools and knaves.  
Come, Malotin.

[*Exeunt Pontalier and Malotin.*]

*Enter Romont.*

*Lilad.* 'Sfoot, Colbrand, the low giant !

*Aym.* He has brought a battle in his face,  
let's go.

*Page.* Colbrand, d'ye call him ? he'll make  
some of you

Smoke, I believe.

*Rom.* By your leave, sirs !

*Aym.* Are you a consort ?

*Rom.* Do you take me for  
A fiddler ? you're deceived : look ! I'll pay  
you.

[*Kicks them.*]

*Page.* It seems he knows you one, he  
bumfiddles you so.

*Lilad.* Was there ever so base a fellow ?

*Aym.* A rascal.

*Lilad.* A most uncivil groom.

*Aym.* Offer to kick a gentleman in a  
nobleman's chamber ! a pox o' your man-  
ners !

*Lilad.* Let him alone, let him alone :  
thou shalt lose thy aim, fellow ; if we stir  
against thee, hang us.

*Page.* 'Sfoot ! I think they have the better  
on him, though they be kick'd, they talk so.

*Lilad.* Let's leave the mad ape. [*Going.*]

*Nov. jun.* Gentlemen !

*Lilad.* Nay, my lord, we will not offer to  
dishonour you so much as to stay by you,  
since he's alone.

*Nov. jun.* Hark you !

*Aym.* We doubt the cause, and will not  
disparage you so much as to take your  
lordship's quarrel in hand. Plague on him,  
how he has crumpled our bands !

*Page.* I'll c'en away with them, for this  
soldier beats man, woman, and child.

[*Exeunt all but Novall jun. and Romont.*]

*Nov. jun.* What mean you, sir ? My  
people !

*Rom.* Your boy's gone, [*Locks the door.*]  
And your door's lock'd ; yet for no hurt to  
you,

But privacy. Call up your blood again :—  
Be not afraid, I do beseech you, sir ;  
And, therefore, come, without more cir-  
cumstance,

Tell me how far the passages have gone

'Twixt you and your fair mistress, Beaumelle,  
Tell me the truth, and by my hope of heaven,  
It never shall go further.

*Nov. jun.* Tell you ! why, sir, are you my  
confessor ?

*Rom.* I will be your confounder, if you do not.

[*Draws a pocket dag.*]

Stir not, nor spend your voice.

*Nov. jun.* What will you do?

*Rom.* Nothing but line your brain-pan, sir, with lead,

If you not satisfy me suddenly:

I am desperate of my life, and command yours.

*Nov. jun.* Hold! hold! I'll speak. I vow to heaven and you,

She's yet untouch'd, more than her face and hands.

I cannot call her innocent: for, I yield, On my solicitous wooing, she consented, Where time and place met opportunity, To grant me all requests.

*Rom.* But may I build

On this assurance?

*Nov. jun.* As upon your faith.

*Rom.* Write this, sir; nay, you must.

*Nov. jun.* Pox of this gun!

*Rom.* Withal, sir, you must swear, and put your oath

Under your hand, (shake not,) ne'er to frequent

This lady's company, nor ever send Token, or message, or letter, to incline

This, too much prone already, yielding lady.

*Nov. jun.* 'Tis done, sir.

*Rom.* Let me see this first is right.

[*Reading.*]

And here you wish a sudden death may light Upon your body, and hell take your soul,

If ever more you see her, but by chance;

Much less allure her. Now, my lord, your hand.

*Nov. jun.* My hand to this!

*Rom.* Your heart else, I assure you.

*Nov. jun.* Nay, there 'tis.

*Rom.* So! keep this last article

Of your faith given, and, stead of threatenings, sir,

The service of my sword and life is yours.

But not a word of it:—'tis fairies' treasure, Which but reveal'd, brings on the blabber's ruin.

Use your youth better, and this excellent form

Heaven hath bestow'd upon you. So, good morrow

To your lordship!

[*Exit.*]

*Nov. jun.* Good devil to your roguishness! No man's safe—

I'll have a cannon planted in my chamber, Against such roaring rogues.

*Enter Bellapert, hastily.*

*Bell.* My lord, away!

The caroch stays: now have your wish, and judge

If I have been forgetful.

*Nov. jun.* Hah!

*Bell.* Do you stand

Humming and hahing now? [*Exit.*]

*Nov. jun.* Sweet wench, I come.

Hence, fear!

I swore—that's all one; my next oath I'll keep

That I did mean to break, and then 'tis quit.

No pain is due to lovers' perjury:

If Jove himself laugh at it, so will I. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*An outer Room in Aymer's House.*

*Enter Charalois and Beaumont.*

*Beau.* I grieve for the distaste, though I have manners

Not to inquire the cause, fallen out between Your lordship and Romont.

*Charal.* I love a friend,

So long as he continues in the bounds

Prescribed by friendship; but, when he usurps

Too far on what is proper to myself,

And puts the habit of a governor on,

I must and will preserve my liberty.

But speak of something else, this is a theme

I take no pleasure in. What's this Aymer,

Whose voice for song, and excellent knowledge in

The chiefest parts of music, you bestow

Such praises on?

*Beau.* He is a gentleman

(For so his quality speaks him) well received Among our greatest gallants; but yet holds

His main dependence from the young lord Novall.

Some tricks and crotchets he has in his head,

As all musicians have, and more of him

I dare not author: but, when you have heard him,

I may presume your lordship so will like him,

That you'll hereafter be a friend to music.

*Charal.* I never was an enemy to't, Beaumont,

Nor yet do I subscribe to the opinion

Of those old captains, that thought nothing musical

But cries of yielding enemies, neighing of horses,

Clashing of armour, loud shouts, drums, and trumpets;

Nor, on the other side, in favour of it, Affirm the world was made by musical discord;

Or that the happiness of our life consists

In a well-varied note upon the lute:

I love it to the worth of't, and no further.—

But let us see this wonder,

*Beau.* He prevents  
My calling of him.

*Enter Aymer, speaking to one within.*

*Aym.* Let the coach be brought  
To the back gate, and serve the banquet  
up.—

My good lord Charalois ! I think my house  
Much honour'd in your presence.

*Charal.* To have means  
To know you better, sir, has brought me  
hither  
A willing visitant ; and you'll crown my wel-  
come

In making me a witness to your skill,  
Which, crediting from others, I admire.

*Aym.* Had I been one hour sooner made  
acquainted  
With your intent, my lord, you should have  
found me

Better provided : now, such as it is,  
Pray you grace with your acceptance.

*Beau.* You are modest.

*Aym.* Begin the last new air.

[*To the Musicians within.*]

*Charal.* Shall we not see them ?

*Aym.* This little distance from the instru-  
ments,

Will to your ears convey the harmony  
With more delight.

*Charal.* I'll not contend.

*Aym.* You are tedious.

[*To the Musicians.*]

By this means shall I with one banquet  
please

Two companics, those within and these gulls  
here.

*Citizen's SONG of the Courtier.*

*Courtier, if thou needs wilt wive,  
From this lesson learn to thrive ;  
If thou match a lady, that  
Passes thee in birth and state,  
Let her curious garments be  
Twice above thine own degree ;  
This will draw great eyes upon her,  
Get her servants, and thee honour.*

*Beauemel.* [*within.*] Ha ! ha ! ha !

*Charal.* How's this ! it is my lady's laugh,  
most certain.

When I first pleased her, in this merry  
language

She gave me thanks.

[*Aside.*]

*Beau.* How like you this ?

*Charal.* 'Tis rare—

Yet I may be deceived, and should be sorry,  
Upon uncertain suppositions, rashly  
To write myself in the black list of those  
I have declaim'd against, and to Romont.

[*Aside.*]

*Aym.* I would he were well off!—

Perhaps your lordship

Likes not these sad tunes ? I have a new  
song,

Set to a lighter note, may please you better ;  
'Tis call'd the *Happy Husband*.

*Charal.* Pray you, sing it.

*Courtier's SONG of the Citizen.*

*Poor citizen, if thou wilt be  
A happy husband, learn of me  
To set thy wife first in thy shop ;  
A fair wife, a kind wife, a sweet wife, sets a  
poor man up.*

*What though thy shelves be ne'er so bare,  
A woman still is current ware ;  
Each man will cheapen, foe and friend ;  
But, whilst thou art at t'other end,  
Whate'er thou seest, or what dost hear,  
Fool, have no eye to, nor an ear ;  
And after supper, for her sake,  
When thou hast fed, snort, though thou wake:  
What though the gallants call thee Mome !  
Yet with thy lantern light her home ;  
Then look into the town, and tell  
If no such tradesmen there do well.*

*Beauemel.* [*within.*] Ha ! ha ! 'tis such a  
groom !

*Charal.* Do I hear this,  
And yet stand doubtful ?

[*Rushes into the house.*]

*Aym.* Stay him—I am undone,  
And they discover'd.

*Beau.* What's the matter ?

*Aym.* Ah !

That women, when they're well pleas'd,  
cannot hold ;  
But must laugh out.

*Re-enter Charalois, with his sword drawn,  
pursuing Novall junior, Beauemelle,  
and Bellapert.*

*Nov. jun.* Help ! save me ! murder ! mur-  
der !

*Beauemel.* Undone, undone, for ever !

*Charal.* Oh, my heart !

Hold yet a little—do not hope to 'scape  
By flight, it is impossible. Though I might  
On all advantage take thy life, and justly ;  
This sword, my father's sword, that ne'er  
was drawn

But to a noble purpose, shall not now  
Do the office of a hangman. I reserve it

To right mine honour, not for a revenge  
So poor, that though with thee it should  
cut off

Thy family, with all that are allied  
To thee in lust or baseness, 'twere still  
short of

All terms of satisfaction. Draw!

*Nov. jun.* I dare not:

I have already done you too much wrong,  
To fight in such a cause.

*Charal.* Why, darest thou neither  
Be honest coward, nor yet valiant knave,  
In such a cause! come, do not shame thy-  
self:

Such whose bloods wrongs, or wrong done  
to themselves

Could never heat, are yet in the defence  
Of their whores daring. Look on her again:  
You thought her worth the hazard of your  
soul,

And yet stand doubtful, in her quarrel, to  
Venture your body.

*Beau.* No, he fears his clothes,  
More than his flesh.

*Charal.* Keep from me! guard thy life,  
Or, as thou hast lived like a goat, thou  
shalt  
Die like a sheep.

*Nov. jun.* Since there's no remedy,  
Despair of safety now in me prove courage!  
[*They fight, Novall falls.*]

*Charal.* How soon weak wrong's o'er-  
thrown! Lend me your hand:

Bear this to the caroch—come, you have  
taught me

To say, you must and shall?

[*Exeunt Beaumont and Bellapert, with  
the Body of Novall; followed by  
Beaumelle.*]

I wrong you not,

You are but to keep him company you  
love.—

*Re-enter Beaumont.*

'Is't done? 'tis well. Raise officers, and take  
care

All you can apprehend within the house  
May be forthcoming. Do I appear much  
moved?

*Beau.* No, sir.

*Charal.* My griefs are now thus to be borne;  
Hereafter I'll find time and place to mourn.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Street.*

*Enter Romont and Pontalier.*

*Pont.* I was bound to seek you, sir.

*Rom.* And, had you found nie  
:In any place but in the street, I should

Have done,—not talked to you. Are you,  
the captain,  
The hopeful Pontalier, whom I have seen  
Do, in the field, such service as then made  
you

Their envy that commanded, here, at home,  
To play the parasite to a gilded knave,  
And, it may be, the pander?

*Pont.* Without this,

I come to call you to account for what  
Is past already. I, by your example  
Of thankfulness to the dead general,  
By whom you were raised, have practised to  
be so

To my good lord Novall, by whom I live;  
Whose least disgrace that is or may be  
offer'd,

With all the hazard of my life and fortunes  
I will make good on you, or any man  
That has a hand in't: and, since you allow  
me

A gentleman and a soldier, there's no doubt  
You will except against me. You shall meet  
With a fair enemy: you understand  
The right I look for, and must have?

*Rom.* I do;

And with the next day's sun you shall hear  
from me. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*A Room in Charalois' House.*

*Enter Charalois with a casket, Beaumelle,  
and Beaumont.*

*Charal.* Pray bear this to my father, at  
his leisure

He may peruse it; but with your best  
language

Entreat his instant presence. You have  
sworn

Not to reveal what I have done.

*Beau.* Nor will I—but—

*Charal.* Doubt me not; by heaven, I will  
do nothing

But what may stand with honour. Pray  
you, leave me [Exit Beaumont.

To my own thoughts.—If this be to me,  
rise; [Beaumelle kneels.

I am not worth the looking on, but only  
To feed contempt and scorn; and that from  
you,

Who, with the loss of your fair name have  
caused it,

Were too much cruelty.

*Beaumel.* I dare not move you

To hear me speak. I know my fault is far  
Beyond qualification or excuse;

That 'tis not fit for me to hope, or you

To think of mercy; only I presume

To entreat you would be pleased to look  
upon

My sorrow for it, and believe these tears  
Are the true children of my grief, and not  
A woman's cunning.

*Charal.* Can you, Beaumelle,  
Having deceived so great a trust as mine,  
Though I were all credulity, hope again  
To get belief? No, no; if you look on me  
With pity, or dare practise any means  
To make my sufferings less, or give just  
cause

To all the world to think what I must do  
Was call'd upon by you, use other ways :  
Deny what I have seen, or justify  
What you have done ; and, as you desper-  
ately

Made shipwreck of your faith, to be a  
whore,  
Use the arms of such a one, and such de-  
fence,

And multiply the sin with impudence.  
Stand boldly up, and tell me to my teeth,  
'That you have done but what is warranted  
By great examples, in all places where  
Women inhabit ; urge your own deserts,  
Or want of me in merit ; tell me how  
Your dowry, from the low gulf of poverty,  
Weighed up my fortunes to what they now  
are :

That I was purchased by your choice and  
practice,  
To shelter you from shame, that you might  
sin

As boldly as securely : that poor men  
Are married to those wives that bring them  
wealth,

One day their husbands, but observers  
ever.

That when, by this proud usage, you have  
blown

The fire of my just vengeance to the height,  
I then may kill you, and yet say 'twas done  
In heat of blood, and after die myself,  
To witness my repentance.

*Beaumel.* O my fate !  
That never would consent that I should see  
How worthy you were both of love and duty,  
Before I lost you ; and my misery made  
The glass in which I now behold your virtue !  
While I was good, I was a part of you,  
And of two, by the virtuous harmony  
Of our fair minds, made one ; but, since I  
wander'd

In the forbidden labyrinth of lust,  
What was inseparable is by me divided. —  
With justice, therefore, you may cut me off,  
And from your memory wash the remem-  
brance

That e'er I was ; like to some vicious pur-  
pose,

Which, in your better judgment, you re-  
pent of,  
And study to forget.

*Charal.* O Beaumelle,  
That you can speak so well, and do so ill !  
But you had been too great a blessing, if  
You had continued chaste : see, how you  
force me

To this, because mine honour will not yield  
That I again should love you.

*Beaumel.* In this life  
It is not fit you should : yet you shall find,  
Though I was bold enough to be a strumpet,  
I dare not yet live one. Let those famed  
matrons,

That are canonized worthy of our sex,  
Transcend me in their sanctity of life ;  
I yet will equal them in dying nobly,  
Ambitious of no honour after life,  
But that, when I am dead, you will forgive  
me.

*Charal.* How pity steals upon me ! should  
I hear her [*Knocking within.*]  
But ten words more, I were lost.—One  
knocks, go in. [*Exit Beaumelle.*]  
That to be merciful should be a sin !

*Enter Rochfort.*

'O, sir, most welcome ! Let me take your  
cloak,

I must not be denied.—Here are your robes,  
As you love justice, once more put them on.  
There is a cause to be determined of,  
That does require such an integrity  
As you have ever used.—I'll put you to  
The trial of your constancy and goodness :  
And look that you, that have been eagle-eyed  
In other men's affairs, prove not a mole  
In what concerns yourself. Take you your  
seat ;

I will be for you presently. [*Exit.*]

*Roch.* Angels guard me !  
To what strange tragedy does this induction  
Serve for a prologue ?

*Re-enter Charalois, Beaumelle, and Beau-  
mont, with Servants bearing the body of  
Novall junior.*

*Charal.* So, set it down before  
The judgment seat—[*Exeunt Servants.*]—  
and stand you at the bar :

[*To Beaumelle.*]  
For me, I am the accuser.

*Roch.* Novall slain !  
And Beaumelle, my daughter, in the place  
Of one to be arraign'd !

*Charal.* O, are you touch'd !  
I find that I must take another course.

Fear nothing, I will only blind your eyes ;

[*He binds his eyes.*]

For justice should do so, when 'tis to meet  
An object that may sway her equal doom  
From what it should be aim'd at.—Good,  
my lord,

A day of hearing.

*Roch.* It is granted, speak—

You shall have justice.

*Charal.* I then here accuse,

Most equal judge, the prisoner, your fair  
daughter,

For whom I owed so much to you ; your  
daughter,

So worthy in her own parts, and that worth  
Set forth by yours, to whose so rare per-  
fections,

Truth witness with me, in the place of service  
I almost paid idolatrous sacrifice,

To be a false adultery.

*Roch.* With whom ?

*Charal.* With this Novall here dead.

*Roch.* Be well advised ;

And ere you say *adulteress* again,  
Her fame depending on it, be most sure  
That she is one.

*Charal.* I took them in the act :

I know no proof beyond it.

*Roch.* O my heart !

*Charal.* A judge should feel no passions.

*Roch.* Yet remember

He is a man, and cannot put off nature.

What answer makes the prisoner ?

*Beaumcl.* I confess

The fact I am charged with, and yield my-  
self

Most miserably guilty.

*Roch.* Heaven take mercy

Upon your soul, then ! it must leave your  
body.

Now free mine eyes ; I dare unmoved look  
on her, [*Charalois unbinds his eyes.*]

And fortify my sentence with strong reasons.  
Since that the politic law provides that ser-  
vants,

To whose care we commit our goods, shall  
die

If they abuse our trust, what can you look  
for,

To whose charge this most hopeful lord  
gave up

All he received from his brave ancestors,

Or he could leave to his posterity,

His honour, wicked woman ! in whose safety  
All his life's joys and comforts were lock'd  
up,

Which thy . . . lust, a thief, hath now  
stolen from him ;

And therefore—

*Charal.* Stay, just judge :—may not what's  
lost

By her one fault, (for I am charitable,  
And charge her not with many,) be for-  
gotten

In her fair life hereafter ?

*Roch.* Never, sir.

The wrong that's done to the chaste married  
bed,

Repentant tears can never expiate ;

And be assured,—to pardon such a sin,  
Is an offence as great as to commit it.

*Charal.* I may not then forgive her ?

*Roch.* Nor she hope it.

Nor can she wish to live : no sun shall rise,  
But, ere it set, shall shew her ugly lust

In a new shape, and every one more horrid.  
Nay, even those prayers which, with such  
humble fervour,

Sheseems to send up yonder, are beat back,  
And all suits which her penitence can  
proffer,

As soon as made, are with contempt thrown  
out

Of all the courts of mercy.

*Charal.* Let her die, then !

[*He stabs her.*]

Better prepared, I'm sure, I could not take  
her,

Nor she accuse her father, as a judge  
Partial against her.

*Beaumel.* I approve his sentence,

And kiss the executioner. My lust

Is now run from me in that blood in which  
It was begot and nourish'd. [*Dies.*]

*Roch.* Is she dead, then ?

*Charal.* Yes, sir ; this is her heart-blood,  
is it not ?

I think it be.

*Roch.* And you have kill'd her ?

*Charal.* True,

And did it by your doom.

*Roch.* But I pronounced it

As a judge only, and a friend to justice ;  
And, zealous in defence of your wrong'd  
honour,

Broke all the ties of nature, and cast off

The love and soft affection of a father.

I, in your cause, put on a scarlet robe

Of red-dyed cruelty ; but in return,

You have advanced for me no flag of mercy.

I look'd on you as a wrong'd husband ; but

You closed your eyes against me as a father.

O Beaumelle ! my daughter !

*Charal.* This is madness.

*Roch.* Keep from me !—Could not one  
good thought rise up,

To tell you that she was my age's comfort,  
Begot by a weak man, and born a woman,



And could not, therefore, but partake of frailty?

Or wherefore did not thankfulness step forth,  
To urge my many merits, which I may  
Object unto you, since you prove ungrateful,  
Flint-hearted Charalois!

*Charal.* Nature does prevail  
Above your virtue.

*Roch.* No; it gives me eyes  
To pierce the heart of your design against  
me:

I find it now, it was my state was aim'd at.  
A nobler match was sought for, and the  
hours

I lived grew tedious to you: my compassion  
Tow'rds you hath render'd me most mis-  
erable,

And foolish charity undone myself.  
But there's a heaven above, from whose just  
wreak

No mists of policy can hide offenders.  
*Nov. sen.* [*within.*] Force ope the doors!

*Enter Novall senior, with Officers.*

O monster! cannibal!

Lay hold on him. My son, my son!—O  
Rochfort,

'Twas you gave liberty to this bloody wolf,  
To worry all our comforts:—but this is  
No time to quarrel; now give your assis-  
tance

For the revenge—

*Roch.* Call it a fitter name,  
Justice for innocent blood.

*Charal.* Though all conspire  
Against that life which I am weary of,  
A little longer yet I'll strive to keep it,  
To shew, in spite of malice and their laws,  
His plea must speed, that bath an honest  
cause. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT V.

SCENE I.—*A Street.*

*Enter Tailor, and two Bailiffs with  
Liladam.*

*Lilad.* Why, 'tis both most unconscion-  
able and untimely,  
To arrest a gallant for his clothes, before  
He has worn them out: besides, you said  
you ask'd  
My name in my lord's bond but for form  
only,  
And now you'll lay me up for't! Do not  
think

The taking measure of a customer  
By a brace of varlets, though I rather wait  
Never so patiently, will prove a fashion

Which any courtier or inns-of-court-man  
Would follow willingly.

*Tail.* There I believe you.  
But, sir, I must have present monies, or  
Assurance to secure me when I shall;  
Or I will see to your coming forth.  
*Lilad.* Plague on't!  
You have provided for my entrance in;  
That coming forth you talk of, concerns me.  
What shall I do? you have done me a dis-  
grace

In the arrest, but more in giving cause  
To all the street to think I cannot stand  
Without these two supporters for my arms.  
Pray you, let them loose me: for their satis-  
faction,  
I will not run away.

*Tail.* For theirs, you will not;  
But for your own, you would. Look to him,  
fellows.

*Lilad.* Why, do you call them fellows?  
do not wrong

Your reputation so. As you are merely  
A tailor, faithful, apt to believe in gallants,  
You are a companion at a ten-crown supper,  
For cloth of bodkin, and may, with one lark,  
Eat up three mauchets, and no man observe  
you,

Or call your trade in question for't. But,  
when

You study your debt-book, and hold corre-  
spondence

With officers of the hanger, and leave swordsmen,  
The learn'd conclude, the tailor and the ser-  
jeant,

In the expression of a knave and thief,  
To be synonyma. Look, therefore, to it,  
And let us part in peace; I would be loth  
You should undo yourself.

*Enter Novall senior, and Pontalier.*

*Tail.* To let you go,  
Were the next way. But see! here's your  
old lord;

Let him but give his word I shall be paid,  
And you are free.

*Lilad.* 'Slid! I will put him to't.  
I can be but denied; or—what say you?  
His lordship owing me three times your debt,  
If you arrest him at my suit, and let me  
Go run before, to see the action enter'd:—  
'Twould be a witty jest!

*Tail.* I must have earnest:  
I cannot pay my debts so.

*Pont.* Can your lordship  
Imagine, while I live, and wear a sword,  
Your son's death shall be unrevenged?

*Nov. sen.* I know not

One reason why you should not do like others :

I am sure, of all the herd that fed upon him,  
I cannot see in any, now he's gone,  
In pity or in thankfulness, one true sign  
Of sorrow for him.

*Pont.* All his bounties yet,  
Fell not in such unthankful ground : 'tis true,  
He had weaknesses, but such as few are free  
from ;

And, though none sooth'd them less than I,  
(for now

To say that I foresaw the dangers that  
Would rise from cherishing them, were but  
untimely.)

I yet could wish the justice that you seek for,  
In the revenge, had been trusted to me,  
And not the uncertain issue of the laws.

It has robb'd me of a noble testimony  
Of what I durst do for him :—but, however,  
My forfeit life redeem'd by him, though dead,  
Shall do him service.

*Nov. sen.* As far as my grief  
Will give me leave, I thank you.

*Lilad.* O, my lord !

Oh, my good lord ! deliver me from these  
Furies.

*Pont.* Arrested ! this is one of them,  
whose base

And abject flattery help'd to dig his grave :  
He is not worth your pity, nor my anger.  
Go to the basket, and repent.

*Nov. sen.* Away !

I only know thee now to hate thee deadly :  
I will do nothing for thee.

*Lilad.* Nor you, captain ?

*Pont.* No ; to your trade again ; put off  
this case :

It may be, the discovering what you were,  
When your unfortunate master took you up,  
May move compassion in your creditor.  
Confess the truth.

[*Exeunt Novall sen. and Pontalier.*]

*Lilad.* And now I think on't better,  
I will. Brother, your hand ; your hand,  
sweet brother :

I'm of your sect, and my gallantry but a  
dream,

Out of which these two fearful apparitions,  
Against my will, have waked me. This  
rich sword,

Grew suddenly out of a tailor's bodkin ;  
These hangers, from my vails and fees in  
hell ;

And where as now this beaver sits, full often  
A thrifty cap, composed of broad-cloth lists,  
Near-kin unto the cushion where I sat,  
Cross-legg'd, and yet ungarter'd, hath been  
seen :

Our breakfasts, famous for the butter'd  
loaves,

I have with joy been oft acquainted with ;  
And therefore use a conscience, though it be  
Forbidden in our hall towards other men,  
To me, that, as I have been, will again  
Be of the brotherhood.

*r Bail.* I know him now ;

He was a prentice to Le Robe at Orleans.

*Lilad.* And from thence brought by my  
young lord, now dead,

Unto Dijon, and with him, till this hour,  
Have been received here for a complete  
monsieur ;

Nor wonder at it ; for but tithes our gallants,  
Even those of the first rank, and you will find  
In every ten, one, peradventure two,  
That smell rank of the dancing-school or  
fiddle,

The pantofle, or pressing-iron :—but here-  
after

We'll talk of this. I will surrender up  
My suits again, there cannot be much loss ;  
'Tis but the turning of the lace, with one  
Addition more you know of, and what wants,  
I will work out.

*Tail.* Then here our quarrel ends :  
The gallant is turn'd tailor, and all friends.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—*The Court of Justice.*

*Enter Romont and Beaumont.*

*Rom.* You have them ready ?

*Beau.* Yes, and they will speak  
Their knowledge in this cause, when you  
think fit

To have them call'd upon.

*Rom.* 'Tis well ; and something  
I can add to their evidence, to prove  
This brave revenge, which they would have  
call'd murder,

A noble justice.

*Beau.* In this you express  
(The breach by my lord's want of you new  
made up)

A faithful friend.

*Rom.* That friendship's raised on sand,  
Which every sudden gust of discontent,  
Or flowing of our passions, can change,  
As if it ne'er had been :—but do you know  
Who are to sit on him ?

*Beau.* Monsieur Du Croy,  
Assisted by Charmi.

*Rom.* The advocate  
That pleaded for the marshal's funeral,  
And was check'd for it by Novall ?

*Beau.* The same.

*Rom.* How fortunes that ?

*Beau.* Why, sir, my lord Novall,

Being the accuser, cannot be the judge ;  
Nor would grieved Rochfort, but lord Charalois,

However he might wrong him by his power,  
Should have an equal hearing.

*Rom.* By my hopes  
Of Charalois's acquittal, I lament  
That reverend old man's fortune.

*Beau.* Had you seen him,  
As, to my grief, I have, now promise  
patience,  
And, ere it was believed, though spake by  
him

That never brake his word, enraged again  
So far as to make war upon those hairs,  
Which not a barbarous Scythian durst pre-  
sume

To touch, but with a superstitious fear,  
As something sacred ;—and then curse his  
daughter,

But with more frequent violence, himself,  
As if he had been guilty of her fault,  
By being incredulous of your report,  
You would not only judge him worthy pity,  
But suffer with him ;—but here comes the  
prisoner ;

*Enter Officers with Charalois.*

I dare not stay to do my duty to him ;  
Yet, rest assured, all possible means in me  
To do him service, keeps you company.

[*Exit.*

*Rom.* It is not doubted.

*Charal.* Why, yet as I came hither,  
The people, apt to mock calamity,  
And tread on the oppress'd, made no horns  
at me,

Though they are too familiar I deserve them.  
And, knowing too what blood my sword hath  
drunk,

In wreak of that disgrace, they yet forbear  
To shake their heads, or to revile me for  
A murderer ; they rather all put on,  
As for great losses the old Romans used,  
A general face of sorrow, waited on  
By a sad murmur breaking through their  
silence :

And no eye but was readier with a tear  
To witness 'twas shed for me, than I could  
Discern a face made up with scorn against  
me.

Why should I, then, though for unusual  
wrongs,  
I chose unusual means to right those  
wrongs,

Condemn myself, as over-partial  
In my own cause ?—Romont !

*Rom.* Best friend, well met !  
By my heart's love to you, and join to that,

My thankfulness that still lives to the dead,  
I look upon you now with more true joy,  
Than when I saw you married.

*Charal.* You have reason  
To give you warrant for't : my falling off  
From such a friendship, with the scorn that  
answered

Your too prophetic counsel, may well move  
you  
To think your meeting me, going to my  
death,

A fit encounter for that hate which justly  
I have deserved from you.

*Rom.* Shall I still, then,  
Speak truth, and be ill understood ?

*Charal.* You are not.

I am conscious I have wrong'd you : and  
allow me,

Only a moral man ;—to look on you,  
Whom foolishly I have abused and injured,  
Must of necessity be more terrible to me,  
Than any death the judges can pronounce,  
From the tribunal which I am to plead at.

*Rom.* Passion transports you.

*Charal.* For what I have done  
To my false lady, or Novall, I can  
Give some apparent cause ; but touching  
you,

In my defence, child-like, I can say nothing  
But, I am sorry for't ; a poor satisfaction !  
And yet, mistake me not ; for it is more  
Than I will speak, to have my pardon sign'd  
For all I stand accused of.

*Rom.* You much weaken  
The strength of your good cause, should you  
but think,

A man for doing well could entertain  
A pardon, were it offer'd : you have given  
To blind and slow-paced justice wings and  
eyes,

To see and overtake impieties,  
Which, from a cold proceeding, had received  
Indulgence or protection.

*Charal.* Think you so ?

*Rom.* Upon my soul ! nor should the blood  
you challenged,  
And took to cure your honour, breed more  
scruple

In your soft conscience, than if your sword  
Had been sheath'd in a tiger or she-bear,  
That in their bowels would have made your  
tomb.

To injure innocence is more than murder :  
But when inhuman lusts transform us, then  
As beasts we are to suffer, not like men  
To be lamented. Nor did Charalois ever  
Perform an act so worthy the applause  
Of a full theatre of perfect men,  
As he hath done in this. The glory got



To this man's charity, for my liberty ;  
Nor did his bounty end there, but began :  
For, after my enlargement, cherishing  
The good he did, he made me master of  
His only daughter, and his whole estate.  
Great ties of thankfulness, I must acknow-  
ledge :

Could any one, fee'd by you, press this  
further ?

But yet consider, my most honour'd lords,  
If to receive a favour make a seryant,  
And benefits are bonds to tie the taker  
To the imperious will of him that gives,  
There's none but slaves will receive courtesies,  
Since they must fetter us to our dishonours.  
Can it be call'd magnificence in a prince,  
To pour down riches with a liberal hand  
Upon a poor man's wants, if that must bind  
him

To play the soothing parasite to his vices ?  
Or any man, because he saved my hand,  
Presume my head and heart are at his service ?  
Or, did I stand engaged to buy my freedom  
(When my captivity was honourable)  
By making myself here, and fame hereafter,  
Bondslaves to men's scorn, and calumnious  
tongues ?—

Had his fair daughter's mind been like her  
feature,

Or, for some little blemish, I had sought  
For my content elsewhere, wasting on others  
My body and her dowry ; my forehead then  
Deserved the brand of base ingratitude :  
But if obsequious usage, and fair warning  
To keep her worth my love, could not pre-  
serve her

From being a whore, and yet no cunning  
one,

So to offend, and yet the fault kept from me,  
What should I do ? Let any free-born spirit  
Determine truly, if that thankfulness,  
Choice form, with the whole world given  
for a dowry,

Could strengthen so an honest man with  
patience,

As with a willing neck to undergo  
The insupportable yoke of slave, or wittol.

*Char.* What proof have you she did play  
false, besides

Your oath ?

*Charal.* Her own confession to her father :  
I ask him for a witness.

*Roch.* 'Tis most true.  
I would not willingly blend my last words  
With an untruth.

*Charal.* And then to clear myself,  
That his great wealth was not the mark I  
shot at,

But that I held it, when fair Beaumelle

Fell from her virtue, like the fatal gold  
Which Brennus took from Delphos, whose  
possession

Brought with it ruin to himself and army :—  
Here's one in court, Beaumont, by whom I  
sent

All grants and writings back which made it  
mine,

Before his daughter died by his own sen-  
tence,

As freely as, unask'd, he gave it to me.

*Beau.* They are here to be seen.

*Char.* Open the casket.

—Peruse that deed of gift. [*To Du Croy—*  
*Rom.* Half of the danger

Already is discharged ; the other part  
As bravely ; and you are not only free  
But crown'd with praise for ever !

*Du Croy.* 'Tis apparent.

*Char.* Your state, my lord, again is yours—  
*Roch.* Not mine ;

I am not of the world. If it can prosper,  
(And yet, being justly got, I'll not examine  
Why it should be so fatal,) do you bestow it.  
On pious uses : I'll go seek a grave.

And yet, for proof I die in peace, your  
pardon

I ask ; and, as you grant it me, may heaven,  
Your conscience, and these judges, free you  
from

What you are charged with ! So, farewell  
for ever !— [*Exit.*

*Nov. sen.* I'll be mine own guide. Passion-  
nor example

Shall be my leaders. I have lost a son,  
A son, grave judges, I require his blood  
From his accursed homicide.

*Char.* What reply you,

In your defence, for this ?

*Charal.* I but attended

Your lordship's pleasure.—For the fact, as of  
The former, I confess it ; but with what  
Base wrongs I was unwillingly drawn to it,  
To my few words there are some other  
proofs,

To witness this for truth. When I was  
married,

For there I must begin, the slain Novall  
Was to my wife, in way of our French  
courtship,

A most devoted servant ; but yet aimed at  
Nothing but means to quench his wanton  
heat,

His heart being never warm'd by lawful fires,  
As mine was, lords : and though, on these  
presumptions,

Join'd to the hate between his house and  
mine,

I might, with opportunity and ease,

Have found a way for my revenge, I did not ;

But still he had the freedom as before,  
When all was mine : and, told that he abused it

With some unseemly license, by my friend,  
My approved friend, Romont, I gave no credit

To the reporter, but reproved him for it,  
As one uncourtly, and malicious to him.  
What could I more, my lords ? Yet, after this,

He did continue in his first pursuit,  
Hotter than ever, and at length obtain'd it ;  
But, how it came to my most certain knowledge,

For the dignity of the court, and my own honour,  
I dare not say.

*Nov. sen.* If all may be believed  
A passionate prisoner speaks, who is so foolish

That durst be wicked, that will appear guilty ?

No, my grave lords ; in his impunity,  
But give example unto jealous men  
To cut the throats they hate, and they will never

Want matter or pretence for their bad ends.

*Char.* You must find other proofs to strengthen these

But mere presumptions.

*Du Croy.* Or we shall hardly  
Allow your innocence.

*Charal.* All your attempts  
Shall fall on me like brittle shafts on armour,  
That break themselves ; or waves against a rock,

That leave no sign of their ridiculous fury,  
But foam and splinters ; my innocence, like these,

Shall stand triumphant, and your malice serve

But for a trumpet to proclaim my conquest.  
Nor shall you, though you do the worst fate can,

Howe'er condemn, affright an honest man.  
*Rom.* May it please the court, I may be heard ?

*Nov. sen.* You come not  
To rail again ? but do—you shall not find  
Another Rochfort.

*Rom.* In Novall I cannot ;  
But I come furnished with what will stop  
The mouth of his conspiracy 'gainst the life

Of innocent Charalois. Do you know this character ?

*Nov. sen.* Yes, 'tis my son's.

*Rom.* May it please you lordships, read it :

And you shall find there, with what vehemency

He did solicit Beaumelle ; how he got  
A promise from her to enjoy his wishes ;  
How after, he abjured her company,  
And yet—but that 'tis fit I spare the dead—  
Like a damn'd villain, as soon as recorded,  
He brake that oath :—to make this manifest,  
Produce his bawds and hers.

*Enter Officers with Aymer, Florimel, and Bellapert.*

*Char.* Have they ta'en their oaths ?

*Rom.* They have, and, rather than endure the rack,

Confess the time, the meeting, nay, the act ;  
What would you more ? only this matron made

A free discovery to a good end ;  
And therefore I sue to the court, sbe may not  
Be placed in the black list of the delinquents.

*Pont.* I see by this, Novall's revenge needs me,

And I shall do— [*Aside.*]

*Char.* 'Tis evident.

*Nov. sen.* That I  
Till now was never wretched ; here's no place

To curse him or my stars. [*Exit.*]

*Char.* Lord Charalois,  
The injuries you have sustain'd appear  
So worthy of the mercy of the court,  
That, notwithstanding you have gone beyond

The letter of the law, they yet acquit you.

*Pont.* But, in Novall, I do condemn him—thus. [*Stabs him.*]

*Charal.* I am slain.

*Rom.* Can I look on ? Oh, murderous wretch !

Thy challenge now I answer. So ! die with him. [*Stabs Pontalier.*]

*Char.* A guard ! disarm him.

*Rom.* I yield up my sword  
Unforced—Oh, Charalois.

*Charal.* For shame, Romont,  
Mourn not for him that dies as he hath lived,  
Still constant and unmoved : what's fall'n upon me

Is by heaven's will, because I made myself  
A judge in my own cause, without their warrant ;

But He that lets me know thus much in death,

With all good men—forgive me ! [*Dies.*]

*Pont.* I receive  
The vengeance which my love, not built on  
virtue,

Has made me worthy, worthy of. [*Dies.*

*Char.* We are taught  
By this sad precedent, how just soever  
Our reasons are to remedy our wrongs,  
We are yet to leave them to their will and  
power

That, to that purpose, have authority.

For you, Romont, although in your excuse,  
You may plead what you did was in re-  
venge

Of the dishonour done unto the court,  
Yet, since from us you had not warrant for it,  
We banish you the state: for these, they  
shall,

As they are found guilty or innocent,  
Or be set free, or suffer punishment.

[*Exeunt.*



# A New Way to Pay Old Debts.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Lord Lovell.  
 Sir Giles Overreach, a cruel extortioner.  
 Frank Wellborn, a prodigal.  
 Tom Allworth, a young gentleman, page to Lord Lovell.  
 Greedy, a hungry justice of peace.  
 Marrall, a term-driver; a creature of Sir Giles Overreach.  
 Order, steward  
 Amble, usher  
 Furnace, cook  
 Watchall, porter

} to Lady Allworth.

Willdo, a parson  
 Tapwell, an alehouse keeper.  
 Creditors, Servants, &c.  
 Lady Allworth, a rich widow.  
 Margaret, Overreach's daughter.  
 Froth, Tapwell's wife.  
 Chambermaid.  
 Waiting Woman.

SCENE,—The country near Nottingham.

### ACT I.

SCENE I.—Before Tapwell's House.

Enter Wellborn in tattered apparel, Tapwell, and Froth.

Well. No house? nor no tobacco?

Tap. Not a suck, sir;

Nor the remainder of a single can  
 Left by a drunken porter, all night pall'd too.

Froth. Not the dropping of the tap for  
 your morning's draught, sir:

'Tis verity, I assure you.

Well. Verity, you brache!

The devil turn'd precisian! Rogue, what  
 am I?

Tap. Troth, durst I trust you with a look-  
 ing-glass,

To let you see your trim shape, you would  
 quit me,

And take the name yourself.

Well. How, dog!

Tap. Even so, sir.

And I must tell you, if you but advance  
 Your Plymouth cloak, you shall be soon in-  
 structed

There dwells, and within call, if it please  
 your worship,

A potent monarch, call'd the constable,  
 That does command a citadel call'd the  
 stocks;

Whose guards are certain files of rusty  
 billmen,

Such as with great dexterity will hale  
 Your tatter'd, lousy—

Well. Rascal! slave!

Froth. No rage, sir.

Tap. At his own peril: Do not put your-  
 self

In too much heat, there being no water near  
 To quench your thirst; and sure, for other  
 liquor,

As mighty ale, or beer, they are things, I  
 take it,

You must no more remember; not in a  
 dream, sir.

Well. Why, thou unthankful villain,  
 dar'st thou talk thus!

Is not thy house, and all thou hast, my gift?

Tap. I find it not in chalk; and Timothy  
 Tapwell

Does keep no other register.

Well. Am not I he

Whose riots fed and clothed thee? wert thou  
 not

Born on my father's land, and proud to be  
 A drudge in his house?

Tap. What I was, sir, it skills not;

What you are, is apparent: now, for a  
 farewell,

Since you talk of father, in my hope it will  
 torment you,

I'll briefly tell your story. Your dead father,  
 My quondam master, was a man of worship,  
 Old Sir John Wellborn, justice of peace and  
 quorum,

And stood fair to be custos rotulorum;  
 Bore the whole sway of the shire, kept a  
 great house,

Relieved the poor, and so forth; but he  
 dying,

And the twelve hundred a year coming to  
 you,



Late master Francis, but now forlorn Well-born—

*Well.* Slave, stop! or I shall lose myself.

*Froth.* Very hardly;

You cannot out of your way.

*Tap.* But to my story:

You were then a lord of acres, the prime gallant,

And I your under butler; note the change now:

You had a merry time of't; hawks and hounds,

With choice of running horses: mistresses

Of all sorts and all sizes, yet so hot,

As their embraces made your lordships melt;

Which your uncle, Sir Giles Overreach, observing,

(Resolving not to lose a drop of them,)

On foolish mortgages, statutes, and bonds,  
For a while supplied your looseness, and then left you.

*Well.* Some curate hath pent'd this invective, mongrel,

And you have studied it.

*Tap.* I have not done yet:

Your land gone, and your credit not worth a token,

You grew the common borrower; no man scaped

Your paper-pellets, from the gentleman  
To the beggars on highways, that sold you switches

In your gallantry.

*Well.* I shall switch your brains out.

*Tap.* Where poor Tim Tapwell, with a little stock,

Some forty pounds or so, bought a small cottage;

Humbled myself to marriage with my Froth here,

Gave entertainment—

*Well.* Yes, to whores and cauters,  
Clubbers by night.

*Tap.* True, but they brought in profit,

And had a gift to pay for what they called for;

And stuck not like your mastership. The poor income

I glean'd from them hath made me in my parish

Thought worthy to be scavenger, and in time  
May rise to be overseer of the poor;

Which if I do, on your petition, Wellborn,  
I may allow you thirteen-pence a quarter,

And you shall thank my worship.

*Well.* Thus, you dog-bolt,

And thus— [*Beats and kicks him.*]

*Tap.* [*to his wife.*] Cry out for help!

*Well.* Stir, and thou diest:

Your potent prince, the constable, shall not save you.

Hear me, ungrateful hell-hound! did not I  
Make purses for you? then you lick'd my boots,

And thought your holiday cloak too coarse  
to clean them.

'Twas I that, when I heard thee swear if ever  
Thou couldst arrive at forty pounds, thou wouldst

Live like an emperor, 'twas I that gave it  
In ready gold. Deny this, wretch!

*Tap.* I must, sir;

For, from the tavern to the taphouse, all,  
On forfeiture of their licenses, stand bound

Ne'er to remember who their best guests were,  
If they grew poor like you.

*Well.* They are well rewarded  
That beggar themselves to make such cuckolds rich.

Thou viper, thankless viper! impudent  
bawd!—

But since you are grown forgetful, I will help  
Your memory, and tread you into mortar;

Not leave one bone unbroken.

[*Beats him again.*]

*Tap.* Oh!

*Froth.* Ask mercy.

*Enter Allworth.*

*Well.* 'Twill not be granted.

*All.* Hold, for my sake bold.  
Deny me, Frank! they are not worth your anger.

*Well.* For once thou hast redeem'd them  
from this sceptre;

But let them vanish, creeping on their knees,  
And, if they grumble, I revoke my pardon.

*Froth.* This comes of your prating, husband; you presumed

On your ambling wit, and must use your  
glib tongue,

Though you are beaten lame for't.

*Tap.* Patience, Froth;  
There's law to cure our bruises.

[*They crawl off on their hands and knees.*]  
*Well.* Sent to your mother?

*All.* My lady, Frank, my patroness, my  
all!

She's such a mourner for my father's death,  
And, in her love to him, so favours me,

That I cannot pay too much observance to  
her:

There are few such stepdames.

*Well.* 'Tis a noble widow,  
And keeps her reputation pure, and clear

From the least taint of infamy; her life,  
With the splendour of her actions, leaves no  
tongue

To envy or detraction. Prithee tell me,  
Has she no suitors?

*All.* Even the best of the shire, Frank,  
My lord, excepted; such as sue, and send,  
And send, and sue again, but to no purpose;  
Their frequent visits have not gain'd her  
presence.

Yet she's so far from sullenness and pride,  
That I dare undertake you shall meet from  
her

A liberal entertainment: I can give you  
A catalogue of her suitors' names.

*Well.* Forbear it,  
While I give you good counsel: I am bound  
to it.

Thy father was my friend; and that affection  
I bore to him, in right descends to thee;  
Thou art a handsome and a hopeful youth,  
Nor will I have the least affront stick on thee,  
If I with any danger can prevent it.

*All.* I thank your noble care; but, pray  
you, in what

Do I run the hazard?

*Well.* Art thou not in love?  
Put it not off with wonder.

*All.* In love, at my years!

*Well.* You think you walk in clouds, but  
are transparent.

I have heard all, and the choice that you  
have made;

And, with my finger, can point out the north  
star

By which the loadstone of your folly's guided;  
And, to confirm this true, what think you of

Fair Margaret, the only child and heir  
Of Cormorant Overreach? Does it blush  
and start,

To hear her only named? blush at your want  
Of wit, and reason.

*All.* You are too bitter, sir.

*Well.* Wounds of this nature are not to  
be cured

With balms, but corrosives. I must be plain:  
Art thou scarce manumised from the porter's  
lodge,

And yet sworn servant to the pantofle,  
And dars't thou dream of marriage? I fear

'Twill be concluded for impossible,  
That there is now, or e'er shall be hereafter,

A handsome page, or player's boy of fourteen,  
But either loves a wench, or drabs love him;  
Court-waiters not exempted.

*All.* This is madness.

Howe'er you have discover'd my intents,  
You know my aims are lawful; and if ever

The queen of flowers, the glory of the spring,  
The sweetest comfort to our smell, the  
rose,

Sprang from an envious briar, I may infer,

There's such disparity in their conditions,  
Between the goodness of my soul, the  
daughter,

And the base churl her father.

*Well.* Grant this true,  
As I believe it, canst thou ever hope  
To enjoy a quiet bed with her, whose father  
Ruin'd thy state?

*All.* And yours too.

*Well.* I confess it.

True; I must tell you as a friend, and freely,  
That, where impossibilities are apparent,  
'Tis indiscretion to nourish hopes.

Canst thou imagine (let not self-love blind  
thee)

That Sir Giles Overreach, that, to make her  
great

In swelling titles, without touch of con-  
science,

Will cut his neighbour's throat, and I hope  
his own too,—

Will e'er consent to make her thine? Give  
o'er,

And think of some course suitable to thy  
rank,

And prosper in it.

*All.* You have well advised me.

But, in the mean time, you, that are so  
studious

Of my affairs, wholly neglect your own:  
Remember yourself, and in what plight you  
are.

*Well.* No matter, no matter.

*All.* Yes, 'tis much material:

You know my fortune, and my means; yet  
something

I can spare from myself, to help your wants.

*Well.* How's this?

*All.* Nay, be not angry; there's eight  
pieces,

To put you in better fashion.

*Well.* Money from thee!

From a boy! a stipendiary! one that lives

At the devotion of a stepmother,

And the uncertain favour of a lord!

I'll eat my arms first. Howsoe'er blind  
Fortune

Hath spent the utmost of her malice on  
me;

Though I am vomited out of an alchouse,  
And thus accounted; know not where to eat,

Or drink, or sleep, but underneath this  
canopy;

Although I thank thee, I despise thy offer:  
And as I, in my madness, broke my state,

Without the assistance of another's brain,  
In my right wits I'll piece it; at the worst,

Die thus, and be forgotten.

*All.* A strange humour!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in Lady Allworth's House.*

*Enter Order, Amble, Furnace, and Watchall.*

*Ord.* Set all things right, or, as my name is Order,

And by this staff of office that commands you,

This chain and double ruff, symbols of power,

Whoever misses in his function,

For one whole week makes forfeiture of his breakfast,

And privilege in the wine-cellar.

*Amb.* You are merry,

Good master steward.

*Furn.* Let him ; I'll be angry.

*Amb.* Why, fellow Furnace, 'tis not twelve o'clock yet,

Nor dinner taking up ; then, 'tis allow'd,

Cooks, by their places, may be choleric.

*Furn.* You think you have spoke wisely, goodman Amble,

My lady's go-before !

*Ord.* Nay, nay, no wrangling.

*Furn.* Twit me with the authority of the kitchen !

At all hours, and all places, I'll be angry ;

And thus provoked, when I am at my prayers I will be angry.

*Amb.* There was no hurt meant.

*Furn.* I am friends with thee ; and yet I will be angry.

*Ord.* With whom ?

*Furn.* No matter whom : yet, now I think on it,

I am angry with my lady.

*Watch.* Heaven forbid, man !

*Ord.* What cause has she given thee ?

*Furn.* Cause enough, master steward.

I was entertained by her to please her palate,

And, till she forswore eating, I perform'd it.

Now, since our master, noble Allworth, died,

Though I crack my brains to find out tempting sauces,

And raise fortifications in the pastry,

Such as might serve for models in the Low Countries ;

Which, if they had been practised at Breda,

Spinola might have thrown his cap at it, and ne'er took it—

*Amb.* But you had wanted matter there to work on.

*Furn.* Matter ! with six eggs, and a strike of rye meal,

I had kept the town till doomsday, perhaps longer.

*Ord.* But what's this to your pet against my lady ?

*Furn.* What's this ? marry this ; when I am three parts roasted, And the fourth part parboiled, to prepare her viands,

She keeps her chamber, dines with a panada, Or water-gruel, my sweat never thought on.

*Ord.* But your art is seen in the dining-room.

*Furn.* By whom ?

By such as pretend love to her ; but come To feed upon her. Yet, of all the harpies

That do devour her, I am out of charity

With none so much as the thin-gutted squire,

That's stolen into commission.

*Ord.* Justice Greedy ?

*Furn.* The same, the same : meat's eat away upon him,

It never thrives ; he holds this paradox, Who eats not well, can ne'er do justice well:

His stomach's as insatiate as the grave, Or stumptets' ravenous appetites.

[*Knocking within.*

*Watch.* One knocks.

[*Exit.*

*Ord.* Our late young master !

*Re-enter Watchall and Allworth.*

*Amb.* Welcome, sir.

*Furn.* Your hand ;

If you have a stomach, 'a cold bake-meat's ready.

*Ord.* His father's picture in little.

*Furn.* We are all your servants.

*Amb.* In you he lives.

*All.* At once, my thanks to all ;

This is yet some comfort. Is my lady stirring ?

*Enter Lady Allworth, Waiting Woman, and Chambermaid.*

*Ord.* Her presence answers for us.

*L. All.* Sort those silks well.

I'll take the air alone.

[*Exeunt Waiting Woman and Chambermaid.*

*Furn.* You air and air ;

But will you never taste but spoon-meat more ?

To what use serve I ?

*L. All.* Prithee, be not angry ;

I shall ere long ; i' the mean time, there is gold

To buy thee aprons, and a summer suit.

*Furn.* I am appeased, and Furnace now grows cool.

*L. All.* And, as I gave directions, if this morning

I am visited by any, entertain them

As heretofore ; but say, in my excuse,  
I am indisposed.

*Ord.* I shall, madam.

*L. All.* Do, and leave me.

Nay, stay you, Allworth.

[*Exeunt* Order, Amble, Furnace, and  
Watchall.

*All.* I shall gladly grow here,  
To wait on your commands.

*L. All.* So soon turn'd courtier !

*All.* Style not that courtship, madam,  
which is duty

Purchased on your part.

*L. All.* Well, you shall o'ercome ;

I'll not contend in words. How is it with  
Your noble master ?

*All.* Ever like himself ;

No scruple lessen'd in the full weight of  
honour :

He did command me, pardon my pre-  
sumption,

As his unworthy deputy, to kiss  
Your ladyship's fair hands.

*L. All.* I am honour'd in

His favour to me. Does he hold his purpose  
For the Low Countries ?

*All.* Constantly, good madam ;

But he will in person first present his service.

*L. All.* And how approve you of his  
course ? you are yet

Like virgin parchment, capable of any  
Inscription, vicious or honourable.

I will not force your will, but leave you free  
To your own election.

*All.* Any form you please,

I will put on ; but, might I make my choice,  
With humble emulation I would follow

The path my lord marks to me.

*L. All.* 'Tis well answer'd,

And I commend your spirit : you had a  
father,

Bless'd be his memory ! that some few hours  
Before the will of heaven took him from me,

Who did commend you, by the dearest ties  
Of perfect love between us, to my charge ;

And, therefore, what I speak, you are bound  
to hear,

With such respect as if he lived in me.

He was my husband, and howe'er you are  
not

Son of my womb, you may be of my love,  
Provided you deserve it.

*All.* I have found you,

Most honour'd madam, the best mother to  
me ;

And, with my utmost strengths of care and  
service,

Will labour that you never may repent

Your bounties shower'd upon me.

*L. All.* I much hope it.

These were your father's words : *If e'er my  
son*

*Follow the war, tell him it is a school,  
Where all the principles tending to honour  
Are taught, if truly follow'd : but for such  
As repair thither, as a place in which  
They do presume they may with license  
practise*

*Their lusts and riots, they shall never merit  
The noble name of soldiers. To dare boldly  
In a fair cause, and for their country's safety,  
To run upon the cannon's mouth undaunted ;  
To obey their leaders, and shun mutinies ;  
To bear with patience the winter's cold,  
And summer's scorching heat, and not to  
faint,*

*When plenty of provision fails, with hunger ;  
Are the essential parts make up a soldier,  
Not swearing, dice, or drinking.*

*All.* There's no syllable

You speak, but is to me an oracle,  
Which but to doubt were impious.

*L. All.* To conclude :

Beware ill company, for often men  
Are like to those with whom they do con-  
verse ;

And, from one man I warn you, and that's  
Wellborn :

Not 'cause he's poor, that rather claims  
your pity ;

But that he's in his manners so debauch'd,  
And hath to vicious courses sold himself.

'Tis true, your father loved him, while he was  
Worthy the loving ; but if he had lived

To have seen him as he is, he had cast him  
off.

As you must do.

*All.* I shall obey in all things.

*L. All.* Follow me to my chamber, you  
shall have gold

To furnish you like my son, and still sup-  
plied,

As I hear from you.

*All.* I am still your creature. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Hall in the same.*

*Enter* Overreach, Greedy, Order, Amble,  
Furnace, Watchall, and Marrall.

*Greedy.* Not to be seen !

*Over.* Still cloister'd up ! Her reason,  
I hope, assures her, though she make herself

Close prisoner ever for her husband's loss,  
'Twill not recover him.

*Ord.* Sir, it is her will,

Which we, that are her servants, ought to  
serve,

And not dispute : howe'er, you are nobly  
welcome ;

And, if you please to stay, that you may think so,

There came, not six days since, from Hull, a pipe,

Of rich Canary, which shall spend itself For my lady's honour.

*Greedy.* Is it of the right race?

*Ord.* Yes, master Greedy.

*Amb.* How his mouth runs o'er!

*Furn.* I'll make it run, and run. Save your good worship!

*Greedy.* Honest master cook, thy hand; again: how I love thee!

Are the good dishes still in being? speak, boy.

*Furn.* If you have a mind to feed, there is a chine

Of beef, well season'd.

*Greedy.* Good!

*Furn.* A pheasant, larded.

*Greedy.* That I might now give thanks for't!

*Furn.* Other kickshaws.

Besides, there came last night, from the forest of Sherwood,

The fattest stag I ever cook'd.

*Greedy.* A stag, man!

*Furn.* A stag, sir; part of it prepared for dinner,

And baked in puff-paste.

*Greedy.* Puff-paste too! Sir Giles,

A ponderous chine of beef! a pheasant larded!

And red deer too, sir Giles, and baked in puff-paste!

All business set aside, let us give thanks here.

*Furn.* How the lean skeleton's rapt?

*Over.* You know we cannot.

*Mar.* Your worships are to sit on a commission,

And if you fail to come, you lose the cause.

*Greedy.* Cause me no causes. I'll prove't, for such a dinner,

We may put off a commission: you shall find it

*Henrici decimo quarto.*

*Over.* Fie, master Greedy!

Will you lose me a thousand pounds for a dinner,

No more, for shame! we must forget the belly,

When we think of profit.

*Greedy.* Well, you shall o'er-rule me;

I could e'en cry now.—Do you hear, master cook,

Sent but a corner of that immortal pasty,

And I, in thankfulness, will, by your boy,

Sent you—a brace of three-pences.

*Furn.* Will you be so prodigal?

*Enter Wellborn.*

*Over.* Remember me to your lady. Who have we here?

*Well.* You know me.

*Over.* I did once, but now I will not; Thou art no blood of mine. Avaunt, thou beggar!

If ever thou presume to own me more, I'll have thee caged, and whipp'd.

*Greedy.* I'll grant the warrant.

Think of pie-corner, Furnace!

[*Exeunt Overreach, Greedy, and Marrall.*]

*Watch.* Will you out, sir?

I wonder how you durst creep in.

*Ord.* This is rudeness,

And saucy impudence.

*Amb.* Cannot you stay

To be serv'd, among your fellows, from the basket,

But you must press into the hall?

*Furn.* Prithce, vanish

Into some outhouse, though it be the pigstie; My scullion shall come to thee.

*Enter Allworth.*

*Well.* This is rare:

Oh, here's Tom Allworth. Tom!

*All.* We must be strangers;

Nor would I have you seen here for a million.

[*Exit.*]

*Well.* Better and better. He contemns me too!

*Enter Waiting Woman and Chambermaid.*

*Woman.* Foh, what a smell's here! what thing's this?

*Cham.* A creature

Made out of the privy; let us hence, for love's sake,

Or I shall swoon.

*Woman.* I begin to faint already.

[*Exeunt Waiting Woman and Chambermaid.*]

*Watch.* Will you know your way?

*Amb.* Or shall we teach it you,

By the head and shoulders?

*Well.* No; I will not stir;

Do you mark, I will not: let me see the wretch

That dares attempt to force me. Why, you slaves,

Created only to make legs, and cringe;

To carry in a dish, and shift a trencher;

That have not souls only to hope a blessing

Beyond black jacks or flagons; you, that were born

Only to consume meat and drink, and batten

Upon reversions!—who advances? who  
Shews me the way?

*Ord.* My lady!

*Enter* Lady Allworth, Waiting Woman,  
and Chambermaid.

*Cham.* Here's the monster.

*Woman.* Sweet madam, keep your glove  
to your nose.

*Cham.* Or let me

Fetch some perfumes may be predominant;  
You wrong yourself else.

*Well.* Madam, my designs

Bear me to you.

*L. All.* To me!

*Well.* And though I have met with  
But ragged entertainment from your grooms  
here,

I hope from you to receive that noble usage  
As may become the true friend of your  
husband,

And then I shall forget these.

*L. All.* I am amazed

To see, and hear this rudeness. Darest thou  
think,

Though sworn, that it can ever find belief,  
That I, who to the best men of this country  
Denied my presence, since my husband's  
death,

Can fall so low, as to change words with  
thee?

Thou son of infamy! forbear my house,  
And know, and keep the distance that's be-  
tween us;

Or, though it be against my gentler temper,  
I shall take order you no more shall be  
An eyesore to me.

*Well.* Scorn me not, good lady;

But, as in form you are angelical,  
Imitate the heavenly natures, and vouchsafe  
At the least awhile to hear me. You will  
grant

The blood that runs in this arm is as noble  
As that which fills your veins; those costly  
jewels,

And those rich clothes you wear, your men's  
observance,

And women's flattery, are in you no virtues;  
Nor these rags, with my poverty, in me vices.  
You have a fair fame, and, I know deserve it;  
Yet, lady, I must say, in nothing more  
Than in the pious sorrow you have shewn  
For your late noble husband.

*Ord.* How she starts!

*Furn.* And hardly can keep finger from  
the eye,

To hear him named.

*L. All.* Have you ought else to say?

*Well.* That husband, madam, was once  
in his fortune

Almost as low as I; want, debts, and quarrels  
Lay heavy on him: let it not be thought  
A boast in me, though I say, I relieved him.  
'Twas I that gave him fashion; mine the  
sword,

That did on all occasions second his;  
I brought him on and off with honour, lady;  
And when in all men's judgments he was  
sunk,

And, in his own hopes, not to be buoy'd up,  
I stepp'd unto him, took him by the hand,  
And set him upright.

*Furn.* Are not we base rogues,  
That could forget this?

*Well.* I confess, you made him  
Master of your estate; nor could your friends,  
Though he brought no wealth with him,  
blame you for it;

For he had a shape, and to that shape a  
mind

Made up of all parts, either great or noble;  
So winning a behaviour, not to be  
Resisted, madam.

*L. All.* 'Tis most true, he had.

*Well.* For his sake, then, in that I was his  
friend,

Do not contemn me.

*L. All.* For what's past excuse me,  
I will redeem it. Order, give the gentleman  
A hundred pounds.

*Well.* No, madam, on no terms:  
I will nor beg nor borrow sixpence of you,  
But be supplied elsewhere, or want thus ever.  
Only one suit I make, which you deny not  
To strangers; and 'tis this.

[*Whispers to her.*]

*L. All.* Fie! nothing else?

*Well.* Nothing, unless you please to charge  
your servants,  
To throw away a little respect upon me.

*L. All.* What you demand is yours.

*Well.* I thank you, lady.

Now what can be wrought out of such a suit  
Is yet in supposition: [*Aside.*—I have said  
all;

When you please, you may retire. [*Exit*  
Lady Allworth.]—Nay, all's forgotten;

[*To the Servants.*]

And, for a lucky omen to my project,  
Shake hands, and end all quarrels in the  
cellar.

*Ord.* Agreed, agreed.

*Furn.* Still merry master Wellborn.

*Exeunt.*

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Overreach's House.**Enter Overreach and Marrall.**Over.* He's gone, I warrant thee; this commission erush'd him.*Mar.* Your worships have the way on't, and ne'er miss

To squeeze these unthrifths into air: and yet,

The chapfall'n justice did his part, returning

For your advantage, the certificate, Against his conscience, and his knowledge too,

With your good favour, to the utter ruin Of the poor farmer.

*Over.* 'Twas for these good ends I made him a justice: he that bribes his belly,

Is certain to command his soul.

*Mar.* I wonder, Still with your license, why, your worship having

The power to put this thin-gut in commission,

You are not in't yourself?

*Over.* Thou art a fool;

In being out of office I am out of danger; Where, if I were a justice, besides the trouble,

I might or out of wilfulness, or error,

Run myself finely into a premunire,

And so become a prey to the informer.

No, I'll have none of't; 'tis enough I keep

Greedy at my devotion: so he serve My purposes, let him hang, or damn, I care not;

Friendship is but a word.

*Mar.* You are all wisdom.*Over.* I would be worldly wise; for the other wisdom,

That does prescribe us a well govern'd life,

And to do right to others, as ourselves,

I value not an atom.

*Mar.* What course take you,

With your good patience, to hedge in the manor

Of your neighbour, master Frugal? as 'tis said

He will nor sell, nor borrow, nor exchange;

And his land, lying in the midst of your

many lordships,

Is a foul blemish.

*Over.* I have thought on't, Marrall, And it shall take. I must have all menAnd I the only purchaser.*Mar.* 'Tis most fit, sir.*Over.* I'll therefore buy some cottage near his manor,

Which done, I'll make my men break ope his fences,

Ride o'er his standing corn, and in the night

Set fire on his barns, or break his cattle's legs:

These trespasses draw on suits, and suits expenses,

Which I can spare, but will soon beggar him.

When I have harried him thus two or three year,

Though he sue *in forma pauperis*, in spite Of all his thrift and care, he'll grow behind-hand.*Mar.* The best I ever heard! I could adore you.*Over.* Then, with the favour of my man of law,

I will pretend some title: want will force him

To put it to arbitrement; then, if he sell For half the value, he shall have ready money,

And I possess his land.*Mar.* 'Tis above wonder!

Wellborn was apt to sell, and needed not

These fine arts, sir, to hook him in.

*Over.* Well thought on.

This varlet, Marrall, lives too long, to upbraid me

With my close cheat put upon him. Will nor cold,

Nor hunger, kill him?

*Mar.* I know not what to think on't.

I have used all means; and the last night I caused

His host, the tapster, to turn him out of doors;

And have been since with all your friends and tenants,

And, on the forfeit of your favour, charged them,

Though a crust of mouldy bread would keep him from starving,

Yet they should not relieve him. This is done, sir.

*Over.* That was something, Marrall; but thou must go further,

And suddenly, Marrall.

*Mar.* Where, and when you please, sir.*Over.* I would have thee seek him out, and, if thou canst,

Persuade him that 'tis better steal than beg;

Then, if I prove he has but robb'd a henroost,

Not all the world shall save him from the gallows.

Do any thing to work him to despair ;  
And 'tis thy masterpiece.

*Mar.* I will do my best, sir.

*Over.* I am now on my main work with the lord Lovell,

The gallant-minded, popular lord Lovell,  
The minion of the people's love. I hear  
He's come into the country, and my aims are  
To insinuate myself into his knowledge,  
And then invite him to my house.

*Mar.* I have you ;

This points at my young mistress.

*Over.* She must part with

That humble title, and write honourable,  
Right honourable, Marrall, my right ho-  
nourable daughter ;

If all I have, or e'er shall get, will do it.  
I'll have her well attended ; there are ladies  
Of errant knights decay'd, and brought so  
low,

That for cast clothes and meat will gladly  
serve her.

And 'tis my glory, though I come from the  
city,

To have their issue whom I have undone,  
To kneel to mine as bondslaves.

*Mar.* 'Tis fit state, sir.

*Over.* And therefore, I'll not have a  
chambermaid

That ties her shoes, or any meaner office,  
But such whose fathers were right worship-  
ful.

'Tis a rich man's pride ! there having ever  
been

More than a feud, a strange antipathy,  
Between us and true gentry.

*Enter Wellborn.*

*Mar.* See, who's here, sir.

*Over.* Hence, monster ! prodigy !

*Well.* Sir, your wife's nephew,  
She and my father tumbled in one belly.

*Over.* Avoid my sight ! thy breath's in-  
fectious, rogue !

I shun thee as a leprosy, or the plague.—  
Come hither, Marrall—this is the time to  
work him. [*Aside, and exit.*]

*Mar.* I warrant you, sir.

*Well.* By this light I think he's mad.

*Mar.* Mad ! had you ta'en compassion on  
yourself,

You long since had been mad,

*Well.* You have ta'en a course  
Between you and my venerable uncle,  
To make me so.

*Mar.* The more pale-spirited you,

That would not be instructed. I swear  
deeply—

*Well.* By what ?

*Mar.* By my religion,

*Well.* Thy religion !

The devil's creed :—but what would you  
have done ?

*Mar.* Had there been but one tree in all  
the shire,

Nor any hope to compass a penny halter,  
Before, like you, I had outlived my fortunes,  
A withe had served my turn to hang myself.  
I am zealous in your cause ; pray you hang  
yourself,

And presently, as you love your credit.

*Well.* I thank you.

*Mar.* Will you stay till you die in a ditch,  
or lice devour you ?—

Or, if you dare not do the feat yourself,  
But that you'll put the state to charge and  
trouble,

Is there no purse to be cut, house to be  
broken,

Or market-woman with eggs, that you may  
murder,

And so dispatch the business ?

*Well.* Here's variety,

I must confess ; but I'll accept of none  
Of all your gentle offers, I assure you.

*Mar.* Why, have you hope ever to eat  
again,

Or drink ? or be the master of three farthings ?  
If you like not hanging, drown yourself ;  
take some course

For your reputation.

*Well.* 'Twill not do, dear tempter,  
With all the rhetoric the fiend hath taught  
you.

I am as far as thou art from despair ;

Nay, I have confidence, which is more than  
hope,

To live, and suddenly, better than ever.

*Mar.* Ha ! ha ! these castles you build in  
the air,

Will not persuade me or to give, or lend,  
A token to you.

*Well.* I'll be more kind to thee :

Come, thou shalt dine with me.

*Mar.* With you !

*Well.* Nay more, dine gratis.

*Mar.* Under what hedge, I pray you ? or  
at whose cost ?

Are they padders, or abram-men that are  
your consorts ?

*Well.* Thou art incredulous ; but thou  
shalt dine,

Not alone at her house, but with a gallant  
lady ;

With me, and with a lady.



*Mar.* Lady! what lady?

With the lady of the lake, or queen of fairies?

For I know it must be an enchanted dinner.

*Well.* With the lady Allworth, knave.

*Mar.* Nay, now there's hope

Thy brain is crack'd.

*Well.* Mark there, with what respect

I am entertain'd.

*Mar.* With choice, no doubt, of dog-whips.

Why, dost thou ever hope to pass her porter?

*Well.* 'Tis not far off, go with me; trust thine own eyes.

*Mar.* Troth, in my hope, or my assurance rather,

To see thee curvet, and mount like a dog in a blanket,

If ever thou presume to pass her threshold, I will endure thy company.

*Well.* Come along then. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in Lady Allworth's House.*

*Enter* Allworth, Waiting Woman, Chambermaid, Order, Amble, Furnace, and Watchall.

*Woman.* Could you not command your leisure one hour longer?

*Cham.* Or half an hour?

*All.* I have told you what my haste is: Besides, being now another's, not mine own,

Howe'er I much desire to enjoy you longer, My duty suffers, if, to please myself, I should neglect my lord.

*Woman.* Pray you do me the favour To put these few quince-cakes into your pocket;

They are of mine own preserving.

*Cham.* And this marmalade; 'Tis comfortable for your stomach.

*Woman.* And, at parting,

Excuse me if I beg a farewell from you.

*Cham.* You are still before me. I move the same suit, sir.

[*Allworth kisses them severally.*]

*Furn.* How greedy these chamberers are of a beardless chin!

I think the tits will ravish him.

*All.* My service

To both.

*Woman.* Ours waits on you.

*Cham.* And shall do ever.

*Ord.* You are my lady's charge, be therefore careful

That you sustain your parts.

*Woman.* We can bear, I warrant you.

[*Exeunt* Waiting Woman and Chambermaid.

*Furn.* Here, drink it off; the ingredients are cordial,

And this the true elixir; it hath boil'd

Since midnight for you. 'Tis the quintessence

Of five cocks of the game, ten dozen of sparrows,

Knuckles of veal, potatoe-roots, and marrow,

Coral, and ambergris: were you two years older,

And I had a wife, or gamesome mistress,

I durst trust you with neither: you need not bait

After this, I warrant you, though your journey's long;

You may ride on the strength of this till tomorrow morning.

*All.* Your courtesies overwhelm me: I much grieve

To part from such true friends; and yet find comfort,

My attendance on my honourable lord,

Whose resolution holds to visit my lady,

Will speedily bring me back.

[*Knocking within. Exit* Watchall.

*Mar.* [*within.*] Dar'st thou venture further?

*Well.* [*within.*] Yes, yes, and knock again.

*Ord.* 'Tis he; disperse!

*Amb.* Perform it bravely.

*Furn.* I know my cue, ne'er doubt me.

[*Exeunt all but* Allworth.]

*Re-enter* Watchall, ceremoniously introducing Weillborn and Marrall.

*Watch.* Beast that I was, to make you stay! most welcome;

You were long since expected.

*Well.* Say so much

To my friend, I pray you.

*Watch.* For your sake, I will, sir.

*Mar.* For his sake!

*Well.* Mum; this is nothing.

*Mar.* More than ever

I would have believed, though I had found it in my primer.

*All.* When I have given you reasons for my late harshness,

You'll pardon and excuse me; for, believe me,

Though now I part abruptly, in my service I will deserve it.

*Mar.* Service! with a vengeance!

*Well.* I am satisfied : farewell, Tom.

*All.* All joy stay with you ! *[Exit.]*

*Re-enter Amble.*

*Ambl.* You are happily encounter'd ; I yet never

Presented one so welcome as, I know,  
You will be to my lady.

*Mar.* This is some vision ;  
Or, sure, these men are mad, to worship a  
dunghill ;

It cannot be a truth.

*Well.* Be still a pagan,  
An unbelieving infidel ; be so, miscreant,  
And meditate on blankets, and on dog-whips !

*Re-enter Furnace.*

*Furn.* I am glad you are come ; until I  
know your pleasure,  
I knew not how to serve up my lady's dinner.

*Mar.* His pleasure ! is it possible ?

*Well.* What's thy will ?

*Furn.* Marry, sir, I have some growse,  
and turkey chicken,  
Some rails and quails, and my lady will'd  
me ask you,

What kind of sauces best affect your palate,  
That I may use my utmost skill to please it.

*Mar.* The devil's enter'd this cook : sauce  
for his palate !

That, on my knowledge, for almost this  
twelvemonth,

Durst wish but cheeseparings and brown  
bread on Sundays. *[Aside.]*

*Well.* That way I like them best.

*Furn.* It shall be done, sir. *[Exit.]*

*Well.* What think you of the hedge we shall  
dine under ?

Shall we feed gratis ?

*Mar.* I know not what to think ;  
Pray you make me not mad.

*Re-enter Order.*

*Ord.* This place becomes you not ;  
Pray you walk, sir, to the dining room.

*Well.* I am well here,  
Till her ladyship quits her chamber.

*Mar.* Well here, say you ?

'Tis a rare change ! but yesterday you  
thought  
Yourself well in a barn, wrapp'd up in  
pease-straw.

*Re-enter Waiting Woman and Chambermaid.*

*Woman.* O ! sir, you are wish'd for.

*Cham.* My lady dreamt, sir, of you.

*Woman.* And the first command she gave,  
after she rose,

Was, (her devotions done,) to give her notice  
When you approach'd here.

*Cham.* Which is done, on my virtue.

*Mar.* I shall be converted ; I begin to  
grow

Into a new belief, which saints, nor angels,  
Could have won me to have faith in.

*Woman.* Sir, my lady !

*Enter Lady Allworth.*

*L. All.* I come to meet you, and languish'd  
till I saw you.

This first kiss is for form ; I allow a second  
To such a friend. *[Kisses Wellborn.]*

*Mar.* To such a friend ! heaven bless me !

*Well.* I am wholly yours ; yet, madam,  
if you please

To grace this gentleman with a salute—

*Mar.* Salute me at his bidding !

*Well.* I shall receive it  
As a most high favour.

*L. All.* Sir, you may command me.

*[Advances to salute Marrall, who retires.]*

*Well.* Run backward from a lady ! and  
such a lady !

*Mar.* To kiss her foot is, to poor me, a  
favour

I am unworthy of. *[Offers to kiss her foot.]*

*L. All.* Nay, pray you rise ;

And since you are so humble, I'll exalt you :  
You shall dine with me to-day, at mine own  
table.

*Mar.* Your ladyship's table ! I am not  
good enough

To sit at your steward's board.

*L. All.* You are too modest :  
I will not be denied.

*Re-enter Furnace.*

*Furn.* Will you still be babbling  
Till your meat freeze on the table ? the old  
trick still ;

My art ne'er thought on !

*L. All.* Your arm, master Wellborn :—  
Nay, keep us company. *[To Marrall.]*

*Mar.* I was ne'er so graced.

*[Exeunt Wellborn, Lady Allworth,  
Amble, Marrall, Waiting Woman,  
and Chambermaid.]*

*Ord.* So ! we have play'd our parts, and  
are come off well ;

But if I know the mystery, why my lady  
Consented to it, or why master Wellborn  
Desired it, may I perish !

*Furn.* Would I had

The roasting of his heart that cheated him,  
And forces the poor gentleman to these  
shifts !

By fire! for cooks are Persians, and swear  
by it,

Of all the griping and extorting tyrants  
I ever heard or read of, I ne'er met  
A match to sir Giles Overreach.

*Watch.* What will you take  
To tell him so, fellow Furnace?

*Fur.* Just as much  
As my throat is worth, for that would be the  
price on't.

To have a usurer that starves himself,  
And wears a cloak of one and twenty years  
On a suit of fourteen groats, bought of the  
hangman,

To grow rich, and then purchase, is too  
common:

But this sir Giles feeds high, keeps many  
servants,

Who must at his command do any outrage;  
Rich in his habit, vast in his expenses;  
Yet he to admiration still increases  
In wealth, and lordships.

*Ord.* He frights men out of their estates,  
And breaks through all law-nets, made to  
curb ill men,  
As they were cobwebs. No man dares re-  
prove him.

Such a spirit to dare, and power to do, were  
never

Lodged so unluckily.

*Re-enter Amble laughing.*

*Amb.* Ha! ha! I shall burst.

*Ord.* Contain thyself, man.

*Furn.* Or make us partakers  
Of your sudden mirth.

*Amb.* Ha! ha! my lady has got  
Such a guest at her table!—this term-driver,  
Marrall,

This snip of an attorney—

*Furn.* What of him, man?

*Amb.* The knave thinks still he's at the  
cook's shop in Ram Alley,  
Where the clerks divide, and the elder is to  
choose;

And feeds so slovenly!

*Furn.* Is this all?

*Amb.* My lady

Drank to him for fashion sake, or to please  
master Wellborn;

As I live, he rises, and takes up a dish  
In which there were some remnants of a  
boil'd capon,

And pledges her in white broth!

*Furn.* Nay, 'tis like

The rest of his tribe.

*Amb.* And when I brought him wine,  
He leaves his stool, and, after a leg or two,  
Most humbly thanks my worship.

*Ord.* Risen already!

*Amb.* I shall be chid.

*Re-enter Lady Allworth, Wellborn, and  
Marrall.*

*Furn.* My lady frowns.

*L. All.* You wait well! [*To Amble.*

Let me have no more of this; I observed  
your jeering:

Sirrah, I'll have you know, whom I think  
worthy

To sit at my table, be he ne'er so mean,  
When I am present, is not your companion.

*Ord.* Nay, she'll preserve what's due to  
her.

*Furn.* This refreshing

Follows your flux of laughter.

*L. All.* [*To Wellborn.*] You are master  
Of your own will. I know so much of  
manners,

As not to inquire your purposes; in a word,  
To me you are ever welcome, as to a house  
That is your own.

*Well.* Mark that. [*Aside to Marrall.*

*Mar.* With reverence, sir,  
An it like your worship.

*Well.* Trouble yourself no further,  
Dear madam; my heart's full of zeal and  
service,

However in my language I am sparing.  
Come, master Marrall.

*Mar.* I attend your worship.

[*Exeunt Wellborn and Marrall.*

*L. All.* I see in your looks you are sorry,  
and you know me  
An easymistress: be merry; I have forgot all.  
Order and Furnace, come with me; I must  
give you  
Further directions.

*Ord.* What you please.

*Furn.* We are ready. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*The Country near Lady  
Allworth's House.*

*Enter Wellborn, and Marrall bare-headed.*

*Well.* I think I am in a good way.

*Mar.* Good! sir; the best way,  
The certain best way.

*Well.* There are casualties

That men are subject to.

*Mar.* You are above them;  
And as you are already worshipful,  
I hope ere long you will increase in worship,  
And be, right worshipful.

*Well.* Prithee do not flout me:

What I shall be, I shall be. Is't for your  
eat e,

You keep your hat off?

*Mar.* Ease! an it like your worship!  
I hope Jack Marrall shall not live so long,  
To prove himself such an unmannerly beast,  
Though it hail hazel-nuts, as to be cover'd  
When your worship's present.

*Well.* Is not this a true rogue,  
That, out of mere hope of a future cozenage,  
Can turn thus suddenly? 'tis rank already.

[*Aside.*]

*Mar.* I know your worship's wise, and  
needs no counsel:

Yet if, in my desire to do you service,  
I humbly offer my advice, (but still  
Under correction,) I hope I shall not  
Incur your high displeasure.

*Well.* No; speak freely.

*Mar.* Then, in my judgment, sir, my  
simple judgment,  
(Still with your worship's favour,) I could  
wish you

A better habit, for this cannot be  
But much distasteful to the noble lady,  
(I say no more) that loves you: for, this  
morning,

To me, and I am but a swine to her,  
Before the assurance of her wealth perfumed  
you,

You savour'd not of amber.

*Well.* I do now then!

*Mar.* This your batoon hath got a touch of  
it. — [*Kisses the end of his cudgel.*]

Yet, if you please, for change, I have twenty  
pounds here,

Which, out of my true love, I'll presently  
Lay down at your worship's feet; 'twill serve  
to buy you

A riding suit.

*Well.* But where's the horse?

*Mar.* My gelding

Is at your service: nay, you shall ride me,  
Before your worship shall be put to the  
trouble

To walk afoot. Alas! when you are lord  
Of this lady's manor, as I know you will be,  
You may with the lease of glebe land, call'd  
Knave's-acre,

A place I would manure, requite your vassal.

*Well.* I thank thy love, but must make no  
use of it;

What's twenty pounds?

*Mar.* 'Tis all that I can make, sir.

*Well.* Dost thou think, though I want  
clothes, I could not have them,  
For one word to my lady?

*Mar.* As I know not that!

*Well.* Come, I will tell thee a secret, and  
so leave thee.

I will not give her the advantage, though  
she be

A gallant-minded lady, after we are married,  
(There being no woman, but is sometimes  
froward,)

To hit me in the teeth, and say, she was  
forced

To buy my wedding-clothes, and took me on,  
With a plain riding-suit, and an ambling nag,  
No, I'll be furnish'd something like myself,  
And so farewell: for thy suit touching

Knave's-acre,

When it is mine, 'tis thine.

[*Exit.*]

*Mar.* I thank your worship.

How was I cozen'd in the calculation  
Of this man's fortune! my master cozen'd too,  
Whose pupil I am in the art of undoing men;  
For that is our profession! Well, well, master  
Wellborn,

You are of a sweet nature, and fit again to  
be cheated:

Which, if the Fates please, when you are  
possess'd

Of the land and lady, you, sans question,  
shall be.

I'll presently think of the means.

[*Walks by musing.*]

*Enter Overreach, speaking to a servant  
within.*

*Over.* Sirrah, take my horse.

I'll walk to get me an appetite; 'tis but a  
mile,

And exercise will keep me from being purseey.  
Ha! Marrall! is he conjuring? perhaps

The knave has wrought the prodigal to do  
Some outrage on himself, and now he feels  
Compunction in his conscience for't: no  
matter,

So it be done. Marrall!

*Mar.* Sir.

*Over.* How succeed we

In our plot on Wellborn?

*Mar.* Never better, sir.

*Over.* Has he hang'd or drown'd himself?

*Mar.* No, sir, he lives;

Lives once more to be made a prey to you,  
A greater prey than ever.

*Over.* Art thou in thy wits?

If thou art, reveal this miracle, and briefly.

*Mar.* A lady, sir, is fall'n in love with  
him.

*Over.* With him? what lady?

*Mar.* The rich lady Allworth.

*Over.* Thou dolt! how dar'st thou speak  
this?

*Mar.* I speak truth.

And I do so but once a year, unless  
It be to you, sir: we dined with her ladyship,  
I thank his worship.

*Over.* His worship!

*Mar.* As I live, sir,  
I dined with him, at the great lady's table,  
Simple as I stand here ; and saw when she  
kiss'd him,

And would, at his request, have kiss'd me  
too ;

But I was not so audacious as some youths  
are,

That dare do anything, be it ne'er so absurd,  
And sad after performance.

*Over.* Why, thou rascal !

To tell me these impossibilities.  
Dine at her table ! and kiss him ! or  
thee !—

Impudent varlet, have not I myself,  
To whom great countesses' doors have oft  
flew open,

Ten times attempted, since her husband's  
death,

In vain, to see her, though I came—a suitor?  
And yet your good solicitorship, and rogue  
Wellborn,

Were brought into her presence, feasted  
with her !—

But that I know thee a dog that cannot  
blush,

This most incredible lie would call up one,  
On thy buttermilk cheeks.

*Mar.* Shall I not trust my eyes, sir,  
Or taste ? I feel her good cheer in my belly.

*Over.* You shall feel me, if you give not  
over, sirrah :

Recover your brains again, and be no more  
gull'd

With a beggar's plot, assisted by the aids  
Of serving-men and chambermaids, for  
beyond these

Thou never saw'st a woman, or I'll quit you  
From my employments.

*Mar.* Will you credit this yet ?

On my confidence of their marriage, I offer'd  
Wellborn—

I would give a crown now I durst say his  
worship— [*Aside.*]

My nag, and twenty pounds.

*Over.* Did you so, ideot !

[*Strikes him down.*]

Was this the way to work him to despair,  
Or rather to cross me ?

*Mar.* Will your worship kill me ?

*Over.* No, no ; but drive the lying spirit  
out of you.

*Mar.* He's gone.

*Over.* I have done then : now, forgetting  
Your late imaginary feast and lady,  
Know, my lord Lovell dines with me to-  
morrow.

Be careful nought be wanting to receive him ;  
And bid my daughter's women trim her up,

Though they paint her, so she catch the  
lord, I'll thank them :

There's a piece for my late blows.

*Mar.* I must yet suffer :

But there may be a time— [*Aside.*]

*Over.* Do you grumble ?

*Mar.* No, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The Country near Overreach's  
House.*

*Enter* Lord Lovell, Allworth, and Servants.

*Lov.* Walk the horses down the hill :  
something in private

I must impart to Allworth.

[*Exeunt* Servants.]

*All.* O, my lord,

What sacrifice of reverence, duty, watching,  
Although I could put off the use of sleep,  
And ever wait on your commands to serve  
them ;

What dangers, though in ne'er so horrid  
shapes,

Nay death itself, though I should run to  
meet it,

Can I, and with a thankful willingness  
suffer ;

But still the retribution will fall short  
Of your bounties shower'd upon me ?

*Lov.* Loving youth ;

Till what I purpose be put into act,  
Do not o'erprize it ; since you have trusted me  
With your soul's nearest, nay, her dearest  
secret,

Rest confident 'tis in a cabinet lock'd  
Treachery shall never open. I have found  
you

(For so much to your face I must profess,  
Howe'er you guard your modesty with a  
blush for't)

More zealous in your love and service to me,  
Than I have been in my rewards.

*All.* Still great ones,

Above my merit.

*Lov.* Such your gratitude calls them :

Nor am I of that harsh and rugged temper  
As some great men are taxed with, who  
imagine

They part from the respect due to their  
honours,

If they use not all such as follow them,  
Without distinction of their births, like  
slaves.

I am not so condition'd : I can make  
A fitting difference between my footboy,  
And a gentleman by want compell'd to serve  
me.

*All.* 'Tis thankfully acknowledged ; you have been

More like a father to me than a master :  
Pray you, pardon the comparison.

*Lov.* I allow it ;

And to give you assurance I am pleas'd in't,  
My carriage and demeanour to your mistress,  
Fair Margaret, shall truly witness for me,  
I can command my passions.

*All.* 'Tis a conquest

Few lords can boast of when they are tempted  
—Oh !

*Lov.* Why do you sigh ? can you be  
doubtful of me ?

By that fair name I in the wars have pur-  
chased,

And all my actions, hitherto untainted,  
I will not be more true to mine own honour,  
Than to my Allworth !

*All.* As you are the brave lord Lovell,  
Your bare word only given is an assurance  
Of more validity and weight to me,  
Than all the oaths, bound up with imprecations,

Which, when they would deceive, most  
courtiers practise :

Yet being a man, (for, sure, to style you  
more

Would relish of gross flattery,) I am forced,  
Against my confidence of your worth and  
virtues,

To doubt, nay more, to fear.

*Lov.* So young, and jealous !

*All.* Were you to encounter with a single  
foe,

The victory were certain ; but to stand  
The charge of two such potent enemies,  
At once assailing you, as wealth and  
beauty,

And those too seconded with power, is odds  
Too great for Hercules.

*Lov.* Speak your doubts and fears,  
Since you will nourish them, in plainer lan-  
guage,

That I may understand them.

*All.* What's your will,

Though I lend arms against myself, (pro-  
vided

They may advantage you,) must be obey'd.  
My much-loved lord, were Margaret only  
fair,

The cannon of her more than earthly form,  
Though mounted high, commanding all  
beneath it,

And ramm'd with bullets of her sparkling  
eyes,

Of all the bulwarks that defend your senses  
Could batter none, but that which guards  
your sight.

But when the well-tuned accents of her  
tongue

Make music to you, and with numerous  
sounds

Assault your bearing, (such as Ulysses, if  
[he]

Now liv'd again, howe'er he stood the  
Syrens,

Could not resist,) the combat must grow  
doubtful

~~Between your reason and rebellious pas-  
sions.~~

Add this too ; when you feel her touch, and  
breath

Like a soft western wind, when it glides o'er  
Arabia, creating gums and spices ;

And in the van, the nectar of her lips,  
Which you must taste, bring the battalia on,  
Well arm'd, and strongly lined with her dis-  
course,

And knowing manners, to give entertain-  
ment ;—

Hippolytus himself would leave Diana,  
To follow such a Venus.

*Lov.* Love hath made you  
Poetical, Allworth.

*All.* Grant all these beat off,  
Which if it be in man to do, you'll do it,  
Mammon, in Sir Giles Overreach, steps in  
With heaps of ill-got gold, and so much  
land,

To make her more remarkable, as would  
tire

A falcon's wings in one day to fly over.  
O my good lord ! these powerful aids, which  
would

Make a mis-shapen negro beautiful,  
(Yet are but ornaments to give her lustre,  
That in herself is all perfection,) must  
Prevail for her : I here release your trust ;  
'Tis happiness, enough, for me to serve you,  
And sometimes, with chaste eyes, to look  
upon her.

*Lov.* Why, shall I swear ?

*All.* O, by no means, my lord ;  
And wrong not so your judgment to the  
world,

As from your fond indulgence to a boy,  
Your page, your servant, to refuse a blessing  
Divers great men are rivals for.

*Lov.* Suspend

Your judgment till the trial. How far is it  
To Overreach' house ?

*All.* At the most, some half hour's riding ;  
You'll soon be there.

*Lov.* And you the sooner freed  
From your jealous fears.

*All.* O that I durst but hope it.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in Overreach's House.*

*Enter Overreach, Greedy, and Marrall.*

*Over.* Spare for no cost; let my dressers crack with the weight  
Of curious viands.

*Greedy.* *Store indeed's no sore,* sir.

*Over.* That proverb fits your stomach, master Greedy.

And let no plate be seen but what's pure gold,

Or such whose workmanship exceeds the matter

That it is made of; let my choicest linen Perfume the room, and, when we wash, the water,

With precious powders mix'd, so please my lord,

That he may with envy wish to bathe so ever.

*Mar.* 'Twill be very chargeable.

*Over.* Avaunt, you drudge!

Now all my labour'd ends are at the stake, Is't a time to think of thrift? Call in my daughter. [*Exit Marrall.*]

And, master justice, since you love choice dishes,

And plenty of them——

*Greedy.* As I do, indeed, sir,

Almost as much as to give thanks for them.

*Over.* I do confer that providence, with my power

Of absolute command to have abundance, To your best care.

*Greedy.* I'll punctually discharge it, And give the best directions. Now am I, In mine own conceit, a monarch; at the least,

Arch-president of the boil'd, the roast, the baked,

For which I will eat often; and give thanks When my belly's braced up like a drum, and that's pure justice. [*Exit.*]

*Over.* It must be so: should the foolish girl prove modest,

She may spoil all; she had it not from me, But from her mother; I was ever forward, As she must be, and therefore I'll prepare her.

*Enter Margaret.*

Alone—and let your women wait without.

*Marg.* Your pleasure, sir?

*Over.* Ha! this is a neat dressing! These orient pearls and diamonds well placed too!

The gown affects me not, it should have been Embroider'd o'er and o'er with flowers of gold;

But these rich jewels, and quaint fashion help it.

And how below? since oft the wanton eye, The face observed, descends unto the foot, Which being well proportion'd, as yours is, Invites as much as perfect white and red, Though without art. How like you your new woman,

The lady Downfallen?

*Marg.* Well, for a companion; Not as a servant.

*Over.* Is she humble, Meg, And careful too, her ladyship forgotten?

*Marg.* I pity her fortune.

*Over.* Pity her! trample on her.

I took her up in an old tamin gown, (Even starv'd for want of twopenny chops,) to serve thee,

And if I understand she but repines To do thee any duty, though ne'er so servile, I'll pack her to her knight, where I have lodged him,

Into the counter, and there let them howl together.

*Marg.* You know your own ways; but for me, I blush

When I command her, that was once attended With persons not inferior to myself, In birth.

*Over.* In birth! why, art thou not my daughter,

The best child of my industry and wealth? Why, foolish girl, was't not to make thee great,

That I have run, and still pursue, those ways That hale down curses on me, which I mind not!

Part with these humble thoughts, and apt thyself

To the noble state I labour to advance thee; Or, by my hopes, to see thee honourable, I will adopt a stranger to my heir, And throw thee from my care: do not provoke me.

*Marg.* I will not, sir; mould me which way you please.

*Re-enter Greedy.*

*Over.* How! interrupted!

*Greedy.* 'Tis matter of importance. The cook, sir, is self-will'd, and will not learn

From my experience: there's a fawn brought in, sir,

And, for my life, I cannot make him roast it With a Norfolk dumpling in the belly of it; And, sir, we wise men know, without the dumpling

'Tis not worth three-pence.

*Over.* Would it were whole in thy belly,  
To stuff it out! cook it any way; prithee,  
leave me.

*Greedy.* Without order for the dumpling?

*Over.* Let it be dumped

Which way thou wilt; or tell him, I will  
scald him

In his own caldron.

*Greedy.* I had lost my stomach

Had I lost my mistress dumpling; I'll give  
thanks for't. [*Exit.*]

*Over.* But to our business, Meg; you have  
heard who dines here?

*Marg.* I have, sir.

*Over.* 'Tis an honourable man;

A lord, Meg, and commands a regiment  
Of soldiers, and, what's rare, is one himself,  
A bold and understanding one: and to be  
A lord, and a good leader, in one volume,  
is granted unto few but such as rise up  
The kingdom's glory.

*Re-enter Greedy.*

*Greedy.* I'll resign my office,  
If I be not better obey'd.

*Over.* 'Slight, art thou frantic?

*Greedy.* Frantic! 'twould make me frantic,  
and stark mad,

'Were I not a justice of peace and quorum too,  
Which this rebellious cook cares not a straw  
for.

There are a dozen of woodcocks——

*Over.* Make thyself

Thirteen, the baker's dozen.

*Greedy.* I am contented,

So they may be dress'd to my mind; he has  
found out

A new device for sauce, and will not dish  
them

With toasts and butter; my father was a  
tailor,

And my name, though a justice, Greedy  
Woodcock;

And, ere I'll see my lineage so abused,  
I'll give up my commission.

*Over.* [*aloud.*] Cook!—Rogue, obey him!

I have given the word, pray you now remove  
yourself

To a collar of brawn, and trouble me no  
further.

*Greedy.* I will, and meditate what to eat  
at dinner. [*Exit.*]

*Over.* And as I said, Meg, when this gull  
disturb'd us,

This honourable lord, this colonel,  
I would have thy husband.

*Marg.* There's too much disparity  
Between his quality and mine, to hope it.

*Over.* I more than hope, and doubt not to  
effect it,

Be thou no enemy to thyself; my wealth  
Shall weigh his titles down, and make you  
equals.

Now for the means to assure him thine, ob-  
serve me;

Remember he's a courtier, and a soldier,  
And not to be trifled with; and, therefore,  
when

He comes to woo you, see you do not coy it:  
This mincing modesty has spoil'd many a  
match

By a first refusal, in vain after hoped for.

*Marg.* You'll have me, sir, preserve the  
distance that

Confines a virgin?

*Over.* Virgin me no virgins?

I must have you lose that name, or you lose  
me.

I will have you private—start not—I say,  
private;

If thou art my true daughter, not a bastard,  
Thou wilt venture alone with one man,  
though he came

Like Jupiter to Semele, and come off, too;  
And therefore, when he kisses you, kiss  
close.

*Marg.* I have heard this is the strumpet's  
fashion, sir,

Which I must never learn.

*Over.* Learn any thing,

And from any creature that may make thee  
great;

From the devil himself.

*Marg.* This is but devilish doctrine!

[*Aside.*]  
*Over.* Or, if his blood grow hot, suppose  
he offer

Beyond this, do not you stay till it cool,  
But meet his ardour; if a couch be near,  
Sit down on't, and invite him.

*Marg.* In your house,

Your own house, sir! for heaven's sake,  
what are you then?

Or what shall I be, sir?

*Over.* Stand not on form;

Words are no substances.

*Marg.* Though you could dispense

With your own honour, cast aside religion,  
The hopes of heaven, or fear of hell; excuse  
me,

In worldly policy, this is not the way

To make me his wife; his whore, I grant it  
may do.

My maiden honour so soon yielded up,  
Nay, prostituted, cannot but assure him

I, that am light to him, will not hold  
weight



Whene'er tempted by others ; so, in judgment,

When to his lust I have given up my honour,

He must and will forsake me.

*Over.* How ! forsake thee !

Do I wear a sword for fashion ? or is this arm shrunk up, or wither'd ? does there live a man

Of that large list I have encounter'd with  
Can truly say I e'er gave inch of ground  
Not purchased with his blood that did  
oppose me ?

Forsake thee when the thing is done ! he dares not.

Give me but proof he has enjoyed thy person,  
Though all his captains, echoes to his will,  
Stood arm'd by his side to justify the wrong,  
And he himself in the head of his bold troop,  
Spite of his lordship, and his colonelship,  
Or the judge's favour, I will make him render  
A bloody and a strict accompt, and force  
him,

By marrying thee, to cure thy wounded  
honour !

I have said it.

*Re-enter Marrall.*

*Mar.* Sir, the man of honour's come,  
Newly alighted.

*Over.* In, without reply ;

And do as I command, or thou art lost.

[*Exit* Margaret.]

Is the loud music I gave order for  
Ready to receive him ?

*Mar.* 'Tis, sir.

*Over.* Let them sound

A princely welcome. [*Exit* Marrall.] Roughness  
awhile leave me ;

For fawning now, a stranger to my nature,  
Must make way for me.

*Loud music.* Enter Lord Lovell, Greedy,  
Allworth, and Marrall.

*Lov.* Sir, you meet your trouble.

*Over.* What you are pleased to style so,  
is an honour

Above my worth and fortunes.

*All.* Strange, so humble. [*Aside.*]

*Over.* A justice of peace, my lord.  
[*Presents* Greedy to him.]

*Lov.* Your hand, good sir.

*Greedy.* This is a lord, and some think  
this a favour ;

But I had rather have my hand in my dump-  
ling. [*Aside.*]

*Over.* Room for my lord.

*Lov.* I miss, sir, your fair daughter  
To crown my welcome.

*Over.* May it please my lord  
To taste a glass of Greek wine first, and  
suddenly

She shall attend my lord.

*Lov.* You'll be obey'd, sir.

[*Exeunt all but* Overreach.]

*Over.* 'Tis to my wish : as soon as come,  
ask for her !

Why, Meg ! Meg Overreach.—

*Re-enter* Margaret.

How ! tears in your eyes ?

Hah ! dry them quickly, or I'll dig them out.  
Is this a time to whimper ? meet that great-  
ness

That flies into thy bosom, think what 'tis  
For me to say, My honourable daughter ;  
And thou, when I stand bare, to say, Put on ;  
Or, Father, you forget yourself. No more,  
But be instructed, or expect—he comes.

*Re-enter* Lord Lovell, Greedy, Allworth,  
and Marrall.

A black-brow'd girl, my lord.

[*Lord Lovell salutes* Margaret.]

*Lov.* As I live, a rare one.

*All.* He's ta'en already : I am lost.

[*Aside.*]

*Over.* That kiss

Came twanging off, I like it ; quit the room.

[*Exeunt all but* Over, Lov, and Marg.]

A little bashful, my good lord, but you,  
I hope, will teach her boldness.

*Lov.* I am happy

In such a scholar : but—

*Over.* I am past learning,

And therefore leave you to yourselves :—  
remember.

[*Aside to* Margaret, and *exit.*]

*Lov.* You see, fair lady, your father is  
solicitous,

To have you change the barren name of  
virgin

Into a hopeful wife.

*Marg.* His haste, my lord,

Holds no power o'er my will. )

*Lov.* But o'er your duty. )

*Marg.* Which forced too much, may  
break.

*Lov.* Bend rather, sweetest :

Think of your years.

*Marg.* Too few to match with yours :

And choicest fruits too soon plucked, rot  
and wither.

*Lov.* Do you think I am old ?

*Marg.* I am sure I am too young. )

*Lov.* I can advance you. )

*Marg.* To a hill of sorrow ;

Where every hour I may expect to fall,

But never hope firm footing. You are noble,  
I of a low descent, however rich;  
And tissues match'd with scarlet suit but ill.  
O, my good lord, I could say more, but that  
I dare not trust these walls.

*Lov.* Pray you, trust my ear then.

*Re-enter Overreach behind, listening.*

*Over.* Close at it! whispering! this is excellent!  
And, by their postures, a consent on both parts.

*Re-enter Greedy behind.*

*Greedy.* Sir Giles, Sir Giles!

*Over.* The great fiend stop that clapper!

*Greedy.* It must ring out, sir, when my belly rings noon.

The baked-meats are run out, the roast turn'd powder.

*Over.* I shall powder you.

*Greedy.* Beat me to dust, I care not;

In such a cause as this, I'll die a martyr.

*Over.* Marry, and shall, you barathrum of the shambles! [*Strikes him.*]

*Greedy.* How! strike a justice of peace! 'tis petty treason,

*Edward's quintet:* but that you are my friend, I would commit you without bail or main-prize.

*Over.* Leave your bawling, sir, or I shall commit you

Where you shall not dine to-day: disturb my lord,

When he is in discourse!

*Greedy.* Is't a time to talk

When we should be munching?

*Lov.* Hah! I heard some noise.

*Over.* Mum, villain; vanish! shall we break a bargain

Almost made up? [*Thrusts Greedy off.*]

*Lov.* Lady, I understand you, And rest most happy in your choice, believe it;

I'll be a careful pilot to direct Your yet uncertain bark to a port of safety.

*Marg.* So shall your honour save two lives, and bind us

Your slaves for ever.

*Lov.* I am in the act rewarded, Since it is good; if howe'er, you must put on

An amorous carriage towards me to delude Your subtle father

*Marg.* I am prone to that.

*Lov.* Now break we off our conference.— Sir Giles!

Where is Sir Giles?

[*Overreach comes forward.*]

*Re-enter Allworth, Marrall, and Greedy.*

*Over.* My noble lord; and how Does your lordship find her?

*Lov.* Apt, Sir Giles, and coming; And I like her the better.

*Over.* So do I too.

*Lov.* Yet should we take forts at the first assault, 'Twere poor in the defendant; I must confirm her

With a love-letter or two, which I must have Deliver'd by my page, and you give way to't.

*Over.* With all my soul:—a towardly gentleman!

Your hand, good master Allworth; know my house

Is ever open to you.

*All.* 'Twas shut till now. [*Aside.*]

*Over.* Well done, well done, my honourable daughter!

Thou'rt so already: know this gentle youth, And cherish him, my honourable daughter.

*Marg.* I shall, with my best care.

[*Noise within, as of a coach.*]

*Over.* A coach!

*Greedy.* More stops

Before we go to dinner! O my guts!

*Enter Lady Allworth and Wellborn.*

*L. All.* If I find welcome, You share in it; if not, I'll back again, Now I know your ends; for I come arm'd for all Can be objected.

*Lov.* How! the lady Allworth!

*Over.* And thus attended!

[*Lovell salutes Lady Allworth, Lady Allworth salutes Margaret.*]

*Mar.* No, I am a dolt!

*The spirit of lies hath enter'd me!*

*Over.* Peace, Patch;

'Tis more than wonder! an astonishment That does possess me wholly!

*Lov.* Noble lady,

This is a favour, to prevent my visit, The service of my life can never equal.

*L. All.* My lord, I laid wait for you, and much hoped

You would have made my poor house your first inn:

And therefore doubting that you might forget me,

Or too long dwell here, having such ample cause,

In this unequal'd beauty, for your stay; And fearing to trust any but myself

With the relation of my service to you,

I borrow'd so much from my long restraint,  
And took the air in person to invite you.

*Lov.* Your bounties are so great, they  
rob me, madam,

Of words to give you thanks.

*L. All.* Good sir Giles Overreach.

[*Salutes him.*]

—How dost thou, Marrall? liked you my  
meat so ill,

You'll dine no more with me?

*Greedy.* I will, when you please,

As it like your ladyship.

*L. All.* When you please, master Greedy;  
If meat can do it, you shall be satisfied.

And now, my lord, pray take into your  
knowledge

This gentleman; howe'er his outside's coarse,  
[*Presents Wellborn.*]

His inward linings are as fine and fair  
As any man's; wonder not I speak at large:  
And howsoe'er his humour carries him  
To be thus account'd, or what taint so-  
ever,

For his wild life, hath stuck upon his fame,  
He may, ere long, with boldness, rank him-  
self

With some that have contemn'd him. Sir  
Giles Overreach,

If I am welcome, bid him so.

*Over.* My nephew!

He has been too long a stranger: faith you  
have,

Pray let it be mended.

[*Lovell confers aside with Wellborn.*]

*Mar.* Why, sir, what do you mean?

This is *rogue Wellborn, monster, prodigy,*  
*That should hang or drown himself;* no  
man of worship,

Much less your nephew.

*Over.* Well, sirrah, we shall reckon  
For this hereafter.

*Mar.* I'll not lose my jeer,  
Though I be beaten dead for't.

*Well.* Let my silence plead

In my excuse, my lord, till better leisure  
Offer itself to hear a full relation

Of my poor fortunes.

*Lov.* I would hear, and help them.

*Over.* Your dinner waits you.

*Lov.* Pray you lead, we follow.

*L. All.* Nay, you are my guest; come,  
dear master Wellborn.

[*Exeunt all but Greedy.*]

*Greedy.* Dear Master Wellborn! So she  
said: heaven! heaven!

If my belly would give me leave, I could  
ruminate

All day on this: I have granted twenty  
warrants

To have him committed, from all prisons in  
the shire,

To Nottingham gaol; and now, *Dear*  
*Master Wellborn!*

And, *My good nephew!*—but I play the fool  
To stand here prating, and forget my dinner.

*Re-enter Marrall.*

Are they set, Marrall?

*Mar.* Long since; pray you a word, sir.

*Greedy.* No wording now.

*Mar.* In troth, I must; my master,  
Knowing you are his good friend, makes  
bold with you,

And does entreat you, more guests being  
come in

Than he expected, especially his nephew,  
The table being full too, you would excuse  
him,

And sup with him on the cold meat.

*Greedy.* How! no dinner,

After all my care?

*Mar.* 'Tis but a penance for

A meal; besides, you broke your fast.

*Greedy.* That was

But a bit to stay my stomach: a man in com-  
mission,

Give place to a tatterdemalion!

*Mar.* No bug words, sir;

Should his worship hear you—

*Greedy.* Lose my dumpling too,  
And butter'd toasts, and woodcocks!

*Mar.* Come, have patience.

If you will dispense a little with your worship,  
And sit with the waiting women, you'll have  
dumpling,

Woodcock, and butter'd toasts too.

*Greedy.* This revives me:

I will gorge there sufficiently.

*Mar.* This is the way, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*Another Room in Over-  
reach's House.*

*Enter Overreach, as from dinner.*

*Over.* She's caught! O women!—she  
neglects my lord,

And all her compliments applied to Well-  
born!

The garments of her widowhood laid by,  
She now appears as glorious as the spring.  
Her eyes fix'd on him, in the wine she drinks,  
He being her pledge, she sends him burn-  
ing kisses,

And sits on thorns, till she be private with  
him.

She leaves my meat, to feed upon his looks;  
And if in our discourse he be but named,

From her a deep sigh follows. But why  
grieve I

At this! it makes for me; if she prove his,  
All that is hers is mine, as I will work him.

*Enter Marrall.*

*Mar.* Sir, the whole board is troubled at  
your rising.

*Over.* No matter, I'll excuse it: prithee,  
Marrall,

Watch an occasion to invite my nephew  
To speak with me in private.

*Mar.* Who! the *rogue*  
*The lady scorn'd to look on?*

*Over.* You are a wag.

*Enter Lady Allworth and Wellborn.*

*Mar.* See, sir, she's come, and cannot be  
without him.

*L. All.* With your favour, sir, after a  
plenteous dinner,  
I shall make bold to walk a turn or two,  
In your rare garden.

*Over.* There's an arbour too,  
If your ladyship please to use it.

*L. All.* Come, master Wellborn.

[*Exeunt Lady Allworth and Wellborn.*]

*Over.* Grosser and grosser! now I believe  
the poet  
Feign'd not, but was historical, when he  
wrote

Pasiphaë was enamour'd of a bull:  
This lady's lust's more monstrous.—My  
good lord,

*Enter Lord Lovell, Margaret, and the rest.*

Excuse my manners.

*Lov.* There needs none, sir Giles,  
I may ere long say Father, when it pleases  
My dearest mistress to give warrant to it.

*Over.* She shall seal to it, my lord, and  
make me happy.

*Re-enter Wellborn and Lady Allworth.*

*Marg.* My lady is return'd.

*L. All.* Provide my coach,  
I'll instantly away; my thanks, sir Giles,  
For my entertainment.

*Over.* 'Tis your nobleness  
To think it such.

*L. All.* I must do you a further wrong,  
In taking away your honourable guest.

*Lov.* I wait on you, madam; farewell,  
good sir Giles.

*L. All.* Good mistress Margaret! nay,  
come, master Wellborn,  
I must not leave you behind; in sooth, I  
must not.

*Over.* Rob me not, madam, of all joys at  
once;

Let my nephew stay behind: he shall have  
my coach,

And, after some small conference between us,  
Soon overtake your ladyship.

*L. All.* Stay not long, sir.

*Lov.* This parting kiss; [*Kisses Margaret.*]  
you shall every day hear from me,  
By my faithful page.

*All.* 'Tis a service I am proud of.

[*Exeunt Lord Lovell, Lady Allworth,  
Allworth, and Marrall.*]

*Over.* Daughter, to your chamber.—[*Exit  
Margaret.*—You may wonder, nephew,  
After so long an enmity between us,  
I should desire your friendship.

*Well.* So I do, sir;  
'Tis strange to me.

*Over.* But I'll make it no wonder;  
And what is more, unfold my nature to you.  
We worldly men, when we see friends, and  
kinsmen,

Past hope sunk in their fortunes, lend no  
hand

To lift them up, but rather set our feet  
Upon their heads, to press them to the  
bottom;

As, I must yield, with you I practised it:  
But, now I see you in a way to rise,  
I can and will assist you; this rich lady  
(And I am glad of't) is enamour'd of you;  
'Tis too apparent, nephew.

*Well.* No such thing:  
Compassion rather, sir.

*Over.* Well, in a word,  
Because your stay is short, I'll have you  
seen

No more in this base shape; nor shall she  
say,

She married you like a beggar, or in debt.

*Well.* He'll run into the noose, and save  
my labour. [*Aside.*]

*Over.* You have a trunk of rich clothes,  
not far hence,

In pawn; I will redeem them; and that no  
clamour

May taint your credit for your petty debts,  
You shall have a thousand pounds to cut  
them off,

And go a free man to the wealthy lady.

*Well.* This done, sir, out of love, and no  
ends else—

*Over.* As it is, nephew.

*Well.* Binds me still your servant.

*Over.* No compliments, you are staid for:  
ere you have supp'd

You shall hear from me. My coach, knaves,  
for my nephew.

To-morrow I will visit you.

*Well.* Here's an uncle

In a man's extremes! how much they do  
believe you,  
That say you are hard-hearted!  
*Over.* My deeds, nephew,  
Shall speak my love; what men report I  
weigh not. [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Lady Allworth's House.*

*Enter Lord Lovell and Allworth.*

*Lov.* 'Tis well; give me my cloak; I now  
discharge you

From further service: mind your own affairs,  
I hope they will prove successful.

*All.* What is blest

With your good wish, my lord, cannot but  
prosper.

Let aftertimes report, and to your honour,  
How much I stand engaged, for I want lan-  
guage

To speak my debt; yet if a tear or two  
Of joy, for your much goodness, can supply  
My tongue's defects, I could—

*Lov.* Nay, do not melt:

This ceremonial thanks to me's superfluous.

*Over.* [within.] Is my lord stirring?

*Lov.* 'Tis he! oh, here's your letter: let  
him in.

*Enter Overreach, Greedy, and Marrall.*

*Over.* A good day to my lord!

*Lov.* You are an early riser,  
Sir Giles.

*Over.* And reason, to attend your lordship.

*Lov.* And you, too, master Greedy, up so  
soon!

*Greedy.* In troth, my lord, after the sun  
is up,

I cannot sleep, for I have a foolish stomach  
That croaks for breakfast. With your lord-  
ship's favour,

I have a serious question to demand  
Of my worthy friend sir Giles.

*Lov.* Pray you use your pleasure.

*Greedy.* How far, sir Giles, and pray you  
answer me

Upon your credit, hold you it to be  
From your manor-house, to this of my lady  
Allworth's?

*Over.* Why, some four mile.

*Greedy.* How! four mile, good sir  
Giles—

Upon your reputation, think better;  
For if you do abate but one half-quarter  
Of five, you do yourself the greatest wrong

That can be in the world; for four miles  
riding,  
Could not have raised so huge an appetite  
As I feel gnawing on me.

*Mar.* Whether you ride,  
Or go afoot, you are that way still provided,  
An it please your worship.

*Over.* How now, sirrah? prating  
Before my lord! no difference! Go to my  
nephew,  
See all his debts discharged, and help his  
worship

To fit on his rich suit.

*Mar.* I may fit you too.  
Toss'd like a dog still! [Aside, and exit.]

*Lov.* I have writ this morning  
A few lines to my mistress, your fair  
daughter.

*Over.* 'Twill fire her, for she's wholly  
yours already:—  
Sweet master Allworth, take my ring; 'twill  
carry you

To her presence, I dare warrant you; and  
there plead

For my good lord, if you shall find occasion.  
That done, pray ride to Nottingham, get a  
license,

Still by this token. I'll have it dispatch'd,  
And suddenly, my lord, that I may say,  
My honourable, nay, right honourable-  
daughter.

*Greedy.* Take my advice, young gentle-  
man, get your breakfast;  
'Tis unwholesome to ride fasting: I'll eat  
with you,  
And eat to purpose.

*Over.* Some Fury's in that gut:  
Hungry again! did you not devour, this  
morning,  
A shield of brawn, and a barrel of Colches-  
ter oysters?

*Greedy.* Why, that was, sir, only to scour  
my stomach,  
A kind of a preparative. Come, gentleman,  
I will not have you feed like the hangman  
of Flushing,

Alone, while I am here.

*Lov.* Haste your return.

*All.* I will not fail, my lord.

*Greedy.* Nor I, to line  
My Christmas coffer.

[Exeunt Greedy and Allworth.]  
*Over.* To my wish: we are private.

I come not to make offer with my daughter  
A certain portion, that were poor and trivial:  
In one word, I pronounce all that is mine,  
In lands or leases, ready coin or goods,  
With her, my lord, comes to you; nor shall  
you have

One motive, to induce you to believe  
I live too long, since every year I'll add  
Something unto the heap, which shall be  
yours too.

*Lov.* You are a right kind father.

*Over.* You shall have reason

To think me such. How do you like this  
seat?

It is well wooded, and well water'd, the acres  
Fertile and rich; would it not serve for  
change,

To entertain your friends in a summer pro-  
gress?

What thinks my noble lord?

*Lov.* 'Tis a wholesome air,  
And well-built pile; and she that's mistress  
of it,

Worthy the large revenue.

*Over.* She the mistress!

It may be so for a time: but let my lord  
Say only that he likes it, and would have it,  
I say, ere long 'tis his.

*Lov.* Impossible.

*Over.* You do conclude too fast, not  
knowing me,  
Nor the engines that I work by. 'Tis not  
alone

The lady Allworth's lands, for those once  
Wellborn's,

(As by her dotage on him I know they will  
be,)

Shall soon be mine; but point out any man's  
In all the shire, and say they lie convenient,  
And useful for your lordship, and once more  
I say aloud, they are yours.

*Lov.* I dare not own

What's by unjust and cruel means extorted;  
My fame and credit are more dear to me,  
Than so to expose them to be censured by  
The public voice.

*Over.* You run, my lord, no hazard.

Your reputation shall stand as fair,  
In all good men's opinions, as now;  
Nor can my actions, though condemn'd for  
ill,

Cast any foul aspersion upon yours.

For, though I do condemn report myself,  
As a mere sound, I still will be so tender  
Of what concerns you, in all points of  
honour,

That the immaculate whiteness of your  
fame,

Nor your unquestioned integrity,  
Shall e'er be sullied with one taint or spot  
That may take from your innocence and  
candour.

All my ambition is to have my daughter  
Right honourable, which my lord can make  
her:

And might I live to dance upon my knee  
A young lord Lovell, born by her unto you,  
I write *nil ultra* to my proudest hopes.  
As for possessions, and annual rents,  
Equivalent to maintain you in the port  
Your noble birth, and present state requires,  
I do remove that burthen from your shoul-  
ders,

And take it on mine own: for, though I  
ruin

The country to supply your riotous waste,  
The scourge of prodigals, want, shall never  
find you.

*Lov.* Are you not frighted with the im-  
precations

And curses of whole families, made wretched  
By your sinister practices?

*Over.* Yes, as rocks are,  
When foamy billows split themselves against  
Their flinty ribs; or as the moon is moved,  
When wolves, with hunger pined, howl at  
her brightness.

I am of a solid temper, and, like these,  
Steer on, a constant course: with mine own  
sword,

If call'd into the field, I can make that  
right,

Which fearful enemies murmur'd at as  
wrong.

Now, for these other piddling complaints  
Breath'd out in bitterness; as when they  
call me

Extortioner, tyrant, cormorant, or intruder  
On my poor neighbour's right, or grand in-  
c loser

Of what was common, to my private use;  
Nay, when my ears are pierced with widows'  
cries,

And undone orphans wash with tears my  
threshold,

I only think what 'tis to have my daughter  
Right honourable; and 'tis a powerful  
charm

Makes me insensible of remorse, or pity,  
Or the least sting of conscience.

*Lov.* I admire

The toughness of your nature. >

*Over.* 'Tis for you,

My lord, and for my daughter, I am marble;  
Nay more, if you will have my character

In little, I enjoy more true delight,  
In my arrival to my wealth these dark

And crooked ways, than you shall e'er take  
pleasure

In spending what my industry hath com-  
pass'd.

My haste commands me hence; in one  
word, therefore,

Is it a match?

*Lov.* I hope, that is past doubt now.

*Over.* Then rest secure; not the hate of all mankind here,

Nor fear of what can fall on me hereafter,  
Shall make me study aught but your advancement

One story higher: an earl! if gold can do it.  
Dispute not my religion, nor my faith;

Though I am borne thus headlong by my will,

You may make choice of what belief you please,

To me they are equal; so, my lord, good morrow. [*Exit.*]

*Lov.* He's gone—I wonder how the earth can bear

Such a portent! I, that have lived a soldier,  
And stood the enemy's violent charge undaunted,

To hear this blasphemous beast am bath'd all over

In a cold sweat: yet, like a mountain, he (Confirm'd in atheistical assertions) Is no more shaken than Olympus is When angry Boreas loads his double head With sudden drifts of snow.

*Enter* Lady Allworth, Waiting Woman, and Amble.

*L. All.* Save you, my lord!  
Disturb I not your privacy?

*Lov.* No, good madam;  
For your own sake I am glad you came no sooner;

Since this bold bad man, sir Giles Overreach,

Made such a plain discovery of himself,  
And read this morning such a devilish matins,

That I should think it a sin next to his But to repeat it.

*L. All.* I ne'er press'd, my lord,  
On others' privacies; yet, against my will,  
Walking, for health sake, in the gallery  
Adjoining to your lodgings, I was made  
(So vehement and loud he was) partaker  
Of his tempting offers.

*Lov.* Please you to command  
Your servants hence, and I shall gladly hear  
Your wiser counsel.

*L. All.* 'Tis, my lord, a woman's,  
But true and hearty;—wait in the next room,

But be within call; yet not so near to force me

To whisper my intents.

*Amble.* We are taught better  
By you, good madam.

*Woman.* And well know our distance.

*L. All.* Do so, and talk not; 'twill become your breeding.

[*Exeunt* Amble and Woman.]

Now, my good lord: if I may use my freedom,

As to an honour'd friend—

*Lov.* You lessen ease

Your favour to me.

*L. All.* I dare then say thus;

As you are noble (howe'er common men  
Make sordid wealth the object and sole end  
Of their industrious aims) 'twill not agree  
With those of eminent blood, who are engaged

More to prefer their honours, than to increase

The state left to them by their ancestors,  
To study large additions to their fortunes,  
And quite neglect their births:—though I must grant,

Riches, well got, to be a useful servant,  
But a bad master.

*Lov.* Madam, 'tis confess'd;

But what infer you from it?

*L. All.* This, my lord;

That as all wrongs, though thrust into one scale,

Slide of themselves off, when right fills the other,

And cannot bide the trial; so all wealth,  
I mean if ill-acquired, cemented to honour  
By virtuous ways achieved, and bravely purchased,

Is but as rubbish pour'd into a river,  
(Howe'er intended to make good the bank,)  
Rendering the water, that was pure before,  
Polluted and unwholesome. I allow  
The heir of sir Giles Overreach, Margaret,  
A maid well qualified, and the richest match  
Our north part can make boast of; yet she cannot,

With all that she brings with her, fill their mouths,

That never will forget who was her father;  
Or that my husband Allworth's lands, and Wellborn's,

(How wrung from both needs now no repetition.)

Were real motives that more work'd your lordship

To join your families, than her form and virtues:

You may conceive the rest.

*Lov.* I do, sweet madam,  
And long since have considered it. I know,  
The sum of all that makes a just man happy  
Consists in the well choosing of his wife:  
And there, well to discharge it, does require  
Equality of years, of birth, of fortune;

For beauty being poor, and not cried up  
By birth or wealth, can truly mix with neither.  
And wealth, where there's such difference in  
years,

And fair descent, must make the yoke  
uneasy :—

But I come nearer.

*L. All.* Pray you do, my lord.

*Lov.* Were Overreach' states thrice centu-  
pled, his daughter  
Millions of degrees much fairer than she is,  
Howe'er I might urge precedents to excuse  
me,

I would not so adulterate my blood  
By marrying Margaret, and so leave my issue  
Made up of several pieces, one part scarlet,  
And the other London blue. In my own  
tomb

I will inter my name first.

*L. All.* I am glad to hear this.—

[*Aside.*

Why then, my lord, pretend your marriage  
to her?

Dissimulation but ties false knots  
On that straight line, by which you, hitherto,  
Have measured all your actions.

*Lov.* I make answer,

And aptly, with a question. Wherefore have  
you,

That, since your husband's death, have lived  
a strict

And chaste nun's life, on the sudden given  
yourself

To visits and entertainments? think you,  
madam,

'Tis not grown public conference? or the  
favours

Which you too prodigally have thrown on  
Wellborn,

Being too reserved before, incur not censure?

*L. All.* I am innocent here; and, on my  
life, I swear

My ends are good.

*Lov.* On my soul, so are mine

To Margaret; but leave both to the event :  
And since this friendly privacy does serve

But as an offer'd means unto ourselves,  
To search each other further, you having  
shewn

Your care of me, I my respect to you ;  
Deny me not, but still in chaste words,  
madam,

An afternoon's discourse.

*L. All.* So I shall hear you. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*Before Tapwell's House.*

*Enter Tapwell and Froth.*

*Tap.* Undone, undone! this was your  
counsel, Froth.

*Froth.* Mine! I defy thee: did not master  
Marrall

(He has marr'd all, I am sure) strictly com-  
mand us,

On pain of sir Giles Overreach' displeasure,  
To turn the gentleman out of doors?

*Tap.* 'Tis true;

But now he's his uncle's darling, and has got  
Master justice Greedy, since he fill'd his belly,  
At his commandment, to do anything ;

Woe, woe to us !

*Froth.* He may prove merciful.

*Tap.* Troth, we do not deserve it at his  
hands.

Though he knew all the passages of our  
house,

As the receiving of stolen goods, and bawdry,  
When he was rogue Wellborn no man would  
believe him,

And then his information could not hurt us ;  
But now he is right worshipful again,

Who dares but doubt his testimony? me-  
thinks,

I see thee, Froth, already in a cart,  
For a close bawd, thine eyes even pelted out  
With dirt and rotten eggs ; and my hand

hissing,

If I scape the halter, with the letter R

Printed upon it.

*Froth.* He that were the worst !

That were but nine days wonder : as for  
credit,

We have none to lose, but we shall lose the  
money

He owes us, and his custom ; there's the  
hell on't.

*Tap.* He has summon'd all his creditors  
by the drum,

And they swarm about him like so many  
soldiers

On the pay day : and has found out such a  
NEW WAY

TO PAY HIS OLD DEBTS. as 'tis very likely

He shall be chronicled for it !

*Froth.* He deserves it

More than ten pageants. But are you sure  
his worship

Comes this way, to my lady's?

[*A cry within* : Brave master Wellborn !

*Tap.* Yes :—I hear him.

*Froth.* Be ready with your petition, and  
present it

To his good grace.

*Enter Wellborn in a rich habit, followed by  
Marrall, Greedy, Order, Furnace, and  
Creditors ; Tapwell kneeling, delivers his  
petition.*

*Well.* How's this ! petition'd too?—



But note what miracles the payment of  
A little trash, and a rich suit of clothes  
Can work upon these rascals ! I shall be,  
I think, prince Wellhorn.

*Mar.* When your worship's married,  
You may be :—I know what I hope to see you.

*Well.* Then look thou for advancement.

*Mar.* To be known

Your worship's hailiff, is the mark I shoot at.

*Well.* And thou shalt hit it.

*Mar.* Pray you, sir, dispatch

These needy followers, and for my ad-  
mittance,

Provided you'll defend me from sir Giles,  
Whose service I am weary of, I'll say some-  
thing

You shall give thanks for.

*Well.* Fear me not sir Giles.

*Greedy.* Who, Tapwell ? I remember thy  
wife brought me,

Last new-year's tide, a couple of fat turkies.

*Tap.* And shall do every Christmas, let  
your worship

But stand my friend now.

*Greedy.* How ! with master Wellborn ?

I can do anything with him on such terms.—  
See you this honest couple, they are good  
souls

As ever drew out fosset ; have they not  
A pair of honest faces ?

*Well.* I o'erheard you,

And the bribe he promised. You are cozen'd  
in them ;

For, of all the scum that grew rich by my  
riots,

This, for a most unthankful knave, and this,  
For a base hawd and whore, have worst de-  
serv'd me,

And therefore speak not for them : by your  
place

You are rather to do me justice ; lend me  
your ear :

—Forget his turkies, and call in his license  
And, at the next fair, I'll give you a yoke of  
oxen

Worth all his poultry.

*Greedy.* I am changed on the sudden

In my opinion ! come near ; nearer, rascal.  
And, now I view him better, did you e'er see  
One look so like an archknave ? his very  
countenance,

Should an understanding judge but look  
upon him,

Would hang him, though he were innocent.

*Tap. Froth.* Worshipful sir.

*Greedy.* No, though the great Turk came,  
instead of turkies,

To beg my favour, I am inexorable.

Thou hast an ill name ; besides thy musty ale,

That hath destroyed many of the king's liege  
people,

Thou never hadst in thy house, to stay men's  
stomachs,

A piece of Suffolk cheese, or gammon of  
bacon,

Or any esculent, as the learn'd call it,  
For their emolument, but sheer drink only.  
For which gross fault I here do damn thy  
license,

Forbidding thee ever to tap or draw ;  
For, instantly, I will, in mine own person,  
Command the constable to pull down thy sign,  
And do it before I eat.

*Froth.* No mercy ?

*Greedy.* Vanish !

If I sbew any, may my promised oxen gore  
me !

*Tap.* Unthankful knaves are ever so re-  
warded.

[*Exeunt Greedy, Tapwell, and Froth.*]

*Well.* Speak ; what are you ?

1 *Cred.* A decay'd vintner, sir,

That might have thrived, but that your  
worship broke me

With trusting you with muskadine and eggs,  
And five pound suppers, with your after  
drinkings,

When you lodged upon the Bankside.

*Well.* I remember.

1 *Cred.* I have not been hasty, nor e'er  
laid to arrest you ;

And therefore, sir—

*Well.* Thou art an honest fellow,

I'll set thee up again ; see his bill paid.—

What are you ?

2 *Cred.* A tailor once, but now mere  
botcher.

I gave you credit for a suit of clothes,  
Which was all my stock, but you failing in  
payment,

I was removed from the shopboard, and  
confined

Under a stall.

*Well.* See him paid ; and hotch no more.

2 *Cred.* I ask no interest, sir.

*Well.* Such tailors need not ;

If their bills are paid in one and twenty year,  
They are seldom losers.—O, I know thy face,

[*To 3 Cred.*]

Thou wert my surgeon : you must tell no  
tales ;

Those days are done. I will pay you in  
private.

*Ord.* A royal gentleman !

*Furn.* Royal as an emperor !

He'll prove a brave master ; my good lady  
knew

To choose a man.

*Well.* See all men else discharg'd ;  
And since old debts are clear'd by a new way,  
A little bounty will not misbecome me ;  
There's something, honest cook, for thy  
good breakfasts ;  
And this, for your respect ; [*To Order.*]  
take't, 'tis good gold,  
And I able to spare it.

*Ord.* You are too munificent.

*Furn.* He was ever so.

*Well.* Pray you, on before.

3 *Cred.* Heaven bless you !

*Mar.* At four o'clock ; the rest know  
where to meet me.

[*Exeunt Order, Furnace, and Creditors.*]

*Well.* Now, master Marrall, what's the  
weighty secret

You promised to impart ?

*Mar.* Sir, time nor place

Allow me to relate each circumstance,  
This only, in a word ; I know sir Giles  
Will come upon you for security  
For his thousand pounds, which you must  
not consent to.

As he grows in heat, as I am sure he will,  
Be you but rough, and say he's in your debt  
Ten times the sum, upon sale of your land ;  
I had a hand in't (I speak it to my shame)  
When you were defeated of it.

*Well.* That's forgiven.

*Mar.* I shall deserve it : then urge him to  
produce

The deed in which you pass'd it over to him,  
Which I know he'll have about him, to de-  
liver

To the lord Lovell, with many other writings,  
And present monies : I'll instruct you further,  
As I wait on your worship : if I play not my  
prize

To your full content, and your uncle's much  
vexation,

Hang up Jack Marrall.

*Well.* I rely upon thee. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Room in Overreach's  
House.*

*Enter Allworth and Margaret.*

*All.* Whether to yield the first praise to  
my lord's  
Unequal'd temperance, or your constant  
sweetness,

That I yet live, my weak hands fasten'd on  
Hope's anchor, spite of all storms of despair,  
I yet rest doubtful.

*Marg.* Give it to lord Lovell ;

For what in him was bounty, in me's duty.  
I make but payment of a debt to which  
My vows, in that high office register'd,  
Are faithful witnesses.

*All.* 'Tis true, my dearest :

Yet, when I call to mind how many fair ones  
Make wilful shipwreck of their faiths, and  
oaths

To God and man, to fill the arms of great-  
ness ;

And you rise up no less than a glorious star,  
To the amazement of the world,—that hold  
out

Against the stern authority of a father,  
And spurn at honour, when it comes to court  
you ;

I am so tender of your good, that faintly,  
With your wrong, I can wish myself that  
right

You yet are pleased to do me.

*Marg.* Yet, and ever.

To me what's title, when content is wanting?  
Or wealth, raked up together with much  
care,

And to be kept with more, when the heart  
pines,

In being disposess'd of what it longs for,  
Beyond the Indian mines? or the smooth  
brow

Of a pleased sire, that slaves me to his will ;  
And so his ravenous humour may be feasted  
By my obedience, and he see me great,

Leaves to my soul nor faculties nor power  
'To make her own election?

*All.* But the dangers

That follow the repulse—

*Marg.* To me they are nothing ;

Let Allworth love, I cannot be unhappy.  
Suppose the worst, that, in his rage, he kill  
me ;

A tear or two, by you dropt on my herse,  
In sorrow for my fate, will call back life  
So far as but to say, that I die yours ;  
I then shall rest in peace : or should he  
prove

So cruel, as one death would not suffice  
His thirst of vengeance, but with lingering  
torments,

In mind and body, I must waste to air,  
In poverty join'd with banishment ; so you  
share

In my afflictions, which I dare not wish you,  
So high I prize you, I could undergo them  
With such a patience as should look down  
With scorn on his worst malice.

*All.* Heaven avert

Such trials of your true affection to me !  
Nor will it unto you, that are all mercy,  
Shew so much rigour : but since we must  
run

Such desperate hazards, let us do our best  
To steer between them.

*Marg.* Your lord's ours, and sure ;

And though but a young actor, second me  
In doing to the life what he has plotted,

*Enter Overreach behind.*

The end may yet prove happy. Now, my  
Allworth. [*Seeing her father.*

*All.* To your letter, and put on a seeming  
anger.

*Marg.* I'll pay my lord all debts due to  
his title;

And when with terms, not taking from his  
honour,

He does solicit me, I shall gladly hear him.  
But in this peremptory, nay, commanding  
way,

T' appoint a meeting, and, without my  
knowledge,

A priest to tie the knot can ne'er be undone  
Till death unloose it, is a confidence  
In his lordship will deceive him.

*All.* I hope better,  
Good lady.

*Marg.* Hope, sir, what you please: for me  
I must take a safe and secure course; I have  
A father, and without his full consent,  
Though all lords of the land kneel'd for my  
favour,

I can grant nothing.

*Over.* I like this obedience:

[*Comes forward.*

But whatsoe'er my lord writes, must and  
shall be

Accepted and embrac'd. Sweet master  
Allworth,

You shew yourself a true and faithful servant  
To your good lord; he has a jewel of you.  
How! frowning, Meg? are these looks to  
receive

A messenger from my lord? what's this?  
give me it.

*Marg.* A piece of arrogant paper, like the  
inscriptions.

*Over.* [*Reads.*] *Fair mistress, from your  
servant learn, all joys*

*That we can hope for, if deserr'd, prove toys;  
Therefore this instant, and in private, meet  
A husband, that will gladly at your feet  
Lay down his honours, tendering them to you  
With all content, the church being paid her  
due.*

—Is this the arrogant piece of paper? fool!  
Will you still be one? in the name of mad-  
ness what

Could his good honour write more to con-  
tent you?

Is there aught else to be wish'd, after these  
two,

That are already offer'd; marriage first,

And lawful pleasure after: what would you  
more?

*Marg.* Why, sir, I would be married like  
your daughter;

Not hurried away i' the night I know not  
whither,

Without all ceremony; no friends invited  
To honour the solemnity.

*All.* An't please your honour,

For so before to-morrow I must style you,  
My lord desires this privacy, in respect  
His honourable kinsmen are afar off,  
And his desires to have it done, brook not  
So long delay as to expect their coming;  
And yet he stands resolv'd, with all due  
pomp,

As running at the ring, plays, masks, and  
tilting,

To have his marriage at court celebrated,  
When he has brought your honour up to  
London.

*Over.* He tells you true; 'tis the fashion,  
on my knowledge:

Yet the good lord, to please your peevish-  
ness,

Must put it off, forsooth! and lose a night,  
In which perhaps he might get two boys on  
thee.

Tempt me no further, if you do, this goad  
[*Points to his sword.*

Shall prick you to him.

*Marg.* I could be contented,  
Were you but by, to do a father's part,  
And give me in the church.

*Over.* So my lord have you,

What do I care who gives you? since my  
lord

Does purpose to be private, I'll not cross him.  
I know not, master Allworth, how my lord

May be provided, and therefore there's a  
purse

Of gold, 'twill serve this night's expense;  
to-morrow

I'll furnish him with any sums: in the mean  
time,

Use my ring to my chaplain; he is beneficed  
At my manor of Got'em, and call'd parson

Willdo:

'Tis no matter for a license, I'll bear him  
out in't.

*Marg.* With your favour, sir, what warrant  
is your ring?

He may suppose I got that twenty ways,  
Without your knowledge; and then to be  
refused,

Were such a stain upon me!—if you pleased,  
sir,

Your presence would do better.

*Over.* Still perverse!

I say again, I will not cross my lord ;  
Yet I'll prevent you too.—Paper and ink,  
there !

*All.* I can furnish you.

*Over.* I thank you, I can write then.

*All.* You may, if you please, put out the  
name of my lord,

In respect he comes disguised, and only  
write,

Marry her to this gentleman.

*Over.* Well advised.

'Tis done ; away ;—[*Margaret kneels.*] My  
blessing, girl ? thou hast it.

Nay, no reply, be gone :—good master  
Allworth,

This shall be the best night's work you ever  
made.

*All.* I hope so, sir.

[*Exeunt Allworth and Margaret.*]

*Over.* Farewell !—Now all's cocksure :  
Methinks I hear already knights and ladies  
Say, Sir Giles Overreach, how is it with  
Your honourable daughter ! has her honour  
Slept well to-night ? or, will her honour  
please

To accept this monkey, dog, or paroqueto,  
(This is state in ladies,) or my eldest son  
To be her page, and wait upon her trencher ?  
My ends, my ends are compass'd—then for  
Wellborn

And the lands ; were he once married to the  
widow—

I have him here—I can scarce contain my-  
self,

I am so full of joy, nay, joy all over. [*Exit.*]

### ACT V.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Lady Allworth's  
House.*

*Enter Lord Lovell, Lady Allworth, and  
Amble.*

*L. All.* By this you know how strong the  
motives were

That did, my lord, induce me to dispense  
A little, with my gravity, to advance  
In personating some few favours to him,  
The plots and projects of the down-trod  
Wellborn.

Nor shall I e'er repent, although I suffer  
In some few men's opinions for't, the action ;  
For he that ventured all for my dear hus-  
band,

Might justly claim an obligation from me,  
To pay him such a courtesy ; which had I  
Coyly, or over-curiously denied,

It might have argued me of little love  
To the deceased.

*Lov.* What you intended, Madam,  
For the poor gentleman, hath found good  
success ;

For, as I understand, his debts are paid,  
And he once more furnish'd for fair employ-  
ment :

But all the arts that I have used to raise  
The fortunes of your joy and mine, young  
Allworth,

Stand yet in supposition, though I hope well :  
For the young lovers are in wit more  
pregnant

Than their years can promise ; and for their  
desires,

On my knowledge, they are equal.

*L. All.* As my wishes

Are with yours, my lord ; yet give me leave  
to fear

The building, though well grounded : to  
deceive

Sir Giles, that's both a lion and a fox  
In his proceedings, were a work beyond  
The strongest undertakers ; not the trial  
Of two weak innocents.

*Lov.* Despair not, madam :

Hard things are compass'd oft by easy  
means ;

And judgment, being a gift derived from  
heaven,

Though sometimes lodged in the hearts of  
worldly men,

That ne'er consider from whom they receive  
it,

Forsakes such as abuse the giver of it.

Which is the reason that the politic  
And cunning statesman, that believes he  
fathoms

The counsels of all kingdoms on the earth,  
Is by simplicity oft over-reach'd.

*L. All.* May he be so ! yet, in his name  
to express it,

Is a good omen.

*Lov.* May it to myself

Prove so, good lady, in my suit to you !

What think you of the motion ?

*L. All.* Troth, my lord,

My own unworthiness may answer for me ;  
For had you, when that I was in my prime,  
My virgin flower uncropp'd, presented me  
With this great favour ; looking on my low-  
ness

Not in a glass of self-love, but of truth,  
I could not but have thought it, as a blessing  
Far, far beyond my merit.

*Lov.* You are too modest,  
And undervalue that which is above  
My title, or whatever I call mine,

I grant, were I a Spaniard, to marry  
A widow might disparage me ; but being  
A true-born Englishman, I cannot find  
How it can taint my honour : nay, what's

more,  
That which you think a blemish, is to me  
The fairest lustre. You already, madam,  
Have given sure proofs how dearly you can  
cherish

A husband that deserves you ; which con-  
firms me,

That, if I am not wanting in my care  
To do you service, you'll be still the same  
That you were to your Allworth : in a word,  
Our years, our states, our births are not un-  
equal.

You being descended nobly, and allied so ;  
If then you may be won to make me happy,  
But join your lips to mine, and that shall be  
A solemn contract.

*L. All.* I were blind to my own good,  
Should I refuse it ; [*Kisses him.*] yet, my  
lord, receive me

As such a one, the study of whose whole life  
Shall know no other object but to please you.

*Lov.* If I return not, with all tenderness,  
Equal respect to you, may I die wretched !

*L. All.* There needs no protestation, my  
lord,

To her that cannot doubt.—

*Enter Wellborn, handsomely apparelled.*

You are welcome, sir.

Now you look like yourself.

*Well.* And will continue  
Such in my free acknowledgment, that I am  
Your creature, madam, and will never hold  
My life mine own, when you please to com-  
mand it.

*Lov.* It is a thankfulness that well becomes  
you ;

You could not make choice of a better shape  
To dress your mind in.

*L. All.* For me, I am happy  
That my endeavours prosper'd. Saw you of  
late

Sir Giles, your uncle ?

*Well.* I heard of him, madam,  
By his minister, Marrall ; he's grown into  
strange passions

About his daughter : this last night he look'd  
for

Your lordship at his house, but missing you,  
And she not yet appearing, his wise head  
Is much perplex'd and troubled.

*Lov.* It may be,  
Sweetheart, my project took.

*L. All.* I strongly hope.

*Over.* [*within.*] Ha ! find her, booby,  
thou huge lump of nothing,  
I'll bore thine eyes out else.

*Well.* May it please your lordship,  
For some ends of mine own, but to with-  
draw

A little out of sight, though not of hearing,  
You may, perhaps, have sport.

*Lov.* You shall direct me. [*Steps aside.*]

*Enter Overreach, with distracted looks,  
driving in Marrall before him, with a box.*

*Over.* I shall sol fa you, rogue !

*Mar.* Sir, for what cause  
Do you use me thus ?

*Over.* Cause, slave ! why, I am angry,  
And thou a subject only fit for beating,  
And so to cool my cholera. Look to the  
writing ;

Let but the seal be broke upon the box,  
That has slept in my cabinet these three  
years,

I'll rack thy soul for't.

*Mar.* I may yet cry quittance,  
Though now I suffer, and dare not resist.

[*Aside.*]

*Over.* Lady, by your leave, did you see  
my daughter, lady ?

And the lord her husband ? are they in your  
house ?

If they are, discover, that I may bid them  
joy ;

And, as an entrance to her place of honour,  
See your ladyship on her left hand, and  
make courtships

When she nods on you ; which you must  
receive

As a special favour.

*L. All.* When I know, sir Giles,  
Her state requires such ceremony, I shall  
pay it ;

But, in the meantime, as I am myself,  
I give you to understand, I neither know  
Nor care where her honour is.

*Over.* When you once see her  
Supported, and led by the lord her husband,  
You'll be taught better.—Nephew.

*Well.* Sir.

*Over.* No more !

*Well.* 'Tis all I owe you.

*Over.* Have your redeem'd rags  
Made you thus insolent ?

*Well.* Insolent to you !

Why, what are you, sir, unless in your years,  
At the best, more than myself ?

*Over.* His fortune swells him :

'Tis rank, he's married.

[*Aside.*]

*L. All.* This is excellent !

*Over.* Sir, in calm language, though I seldom use it,  
I am familiar with the cause that makes you  
Bear up thus bravely; there's a certain buz  
Of a stolen marriage, do you hear? of a  
stolen marriage,  
In which, 'tis said, there's somebody hath  
been eozen'd;  
I name no parties.

*Well.* Well, sir, and what follows?

*Over.* Marry, this; since you are peremp-  
tory. Remember,  
Upon mere hope of your great match, I lent  
you

A thousand pounds: put me in good se-  
curity,

And suddenly, by mortgage or by statute,  
Of some of your new possessions, or I'll  
have you

Dragg'd in your lavender robes to the gaol:  
you know me,

And therefore do not trifle.

*Well.* Can you be  
So cruel to your nephew, now he's in  
The way to rise? was this the courtesy  
You did me in pure love, and no ends else?

*Over.* End me no ends! engage the whole  
estate,

And force your spouse to sign it, you shall  
have

Three or four thousand more, to roar and  
swagger,

And revel in bawdy taverns.

*Well.* And beg after;

Mean you not so?

*Over.* My thoughts are mine, and free.

Shall I have security?

*Well.* No, indeed you shall not,  
Nor bond, nor bill, nor bare acknowledg-  
ment;

Your great looks fright not me.

*Over.* But my deeds shall.

Outbraved! [Both draw.

*L. All.* Help, murder! murder!

*Enter Servants.*

*Well.* Let him come on,  
With all his wrongs and injuries about him,  
Arm'd with his cut-throat practices to guard  
him;

The right that I bring with me will defend  
me,

And punish his extortion.

*Over.* That I had thee

But single in the field!

*L. All.* You may; but make not

My house your quarrelling scene.

*Over.* Were't in a church,

By heaven and hell, I'll do't.

*Mar.* Now put him to  
The shewing of the deed.

[*Aside to Wellborn.*

*Well.* This rage is vain, sir;  
For fighting, fear not, you shall have your  
hands full,

Upon the least incitement; and whereas  
You charge me with a debt of a thousand  
pounds,

If there be law, (howe'er you have no con-  
science,)

Either restore my land, or I'll recover  
A debt, that's truly due to me from you,  
In value ten times more than what you  
challenge.

*Over.* I in thy debt! O impudence! did  
I not purchase

The land left by thy father, that rich land,  
That had continued in Wellborn's name  
Twenty descents; which, like a riotous fool,  
Thou didst make sale of? Is not here,  
inclosed,

The deed that does confirm it mine?

*Mar.* Now, now!

*Well.* I do acknowledge none; I ne'er  
pass'd over

Any such land: I grant, for a year or two  
You had it in trust; which if you do dis-  
charge,

Surrendering the possession, you shall ease  
Yourself and me of chargeable suits in law,  
Which, if you prove not honest, as I doubt it,  
Must of necessity follow.

*L. All.* In my judgment,

He does advise you well.

*Over.* Good! good! conspire  
With your new husband, lady; second him  
In his dishonest practices; but when  
This manor is extended to my use,  
You'll speak in an humbler key, and sue for  
favour.

*L. All.* Never: do not hope it.

*Well.* Let despair first seize me.

*Over.* Yet, to shut up thy mouth, and  
make thee give

Thyself the lie, the loud lie, I draw out  
The precious evidence; if thou canst for-  
swear

Thy hand and seal, and make a forfeit of  
[*Opens the box, and displays the bond.*  
Thy ears to the pillory, see! here's that will  
make

My interest clear—ha!

*L. All.* A fair skin of parchment.

*Well.* Indented, I confess, and labels too;  
But neither wax nor words. How! thun-  
der struck?

Not a syllable to insult with? My wise  
uncle,

Is this your precious evidence, this that makes

Your interest clear?

*Over.* I am o'erwhelmed with wonder !  
What prodigy is this? what subtle devil  
Hath razed out the inscription? the wax  
Turn'd into dust!—the rest of my deeds  
whole,  
As when they were deliver'd, and this only  
Made nothing! do you deal with witches,  
rascal?

There is a statute for you, which will bring  
Your neck in an hempen circle; yes, there is;  
And now 'tis better thought for, cheater,  
know

This juggling shall not save you.

*Well.* To save thee,

Would beggar the stock of mercy.

*Over.* Marrall!

*Mar.* Sir.

*Over.* Though the witnesses are dead,  
your testimony

Help with an oath or two: and for thy  
master,

Thy liberal master, my good honest servant,  
I know thou wilt swear anything, to dash  
This cunning sleight: besides, I know thou  
art

A public notary, and such stand in law  
For a dozen witnesses: the deed being  
drawn too

By thee, my careful Marrall, and deliver'd  
When thou wert present, will make good  
my title.

Wilt thou not swear this?

[*Aside to Marrall.*]

*Mar.* I! no, I assure you:

I have a conscience not sear'd up like yours;  
I know no deeds.

*Over.* Wilt thou betray me?

*Mar.* Keep him

From using of his hands, I'll use my tongue,  
To his no little torment.

*Over.* Mine own varlet  
Rebel against me!

*Mar.* Yes, and uncase you too.

*The idiot, the Patch, the slave, the booby,  
The property fit only to be beaten  
For your morning exercise, your football, or  
The unprofitable lump of flesh, your drudge;  
Can now anatomise you, and lay open  
All your black plots, and level with the earth  
Your hill of pride: and, with these gabions*

guarded,  
Unload my great artillery, and shake,  
Nay pulverize, the walls you think defend  
you.

*L. All.* How he foams at the mouth with  
rage!

*Well.* To him again.

*Over.* O that I had thee in my gripe, I  
would tear thee

Joint after joint!

*Mar.* I know you are a tearer.

But I'll have first your fangs pared off, and  
then

Come nearer to you; when I have discover'd,  
And made it good before the judge, what  
ways,  
And devilish practices, you used to cozen  
with

An army of whole families, who yet alive,  
And but enroll'd for soldiers, were able  
To take in Dunkirk.

*Well.* All will come out.

*L. All.* The better.

*Over.* But that I will live, rogue, to tor-  
ture thee,

And make thee wish, and kneel in vain, to  
die,

These swords, that keep thee from me,  
should fix here,

Although they made my body but one  
wound,

But I would reach thee.

*Lov.* Heaven's hand is in this;

One bandog worry the other! [*Aside.*]

*Over.* I play the fool,

And make my anger but ridiculous:

There will be a time and place, there will be,  
cowards,

When you shall feel what I dare do.

*Well.* I think so:

You dare do any ill, yet want true valour  
To be honest, and repent.

*Over.* They are words I know not,  
Nor e'er will learn. Patience, the beggar's  
virtue,

*Enter Greedy and Parson Willdo.*

Shall find no harbour here:—after these  
storms

At length a calm appears. Welcome, most  
welcome!

There's comfort in thy looks; is the deed  
done?

Is my daughter married? say but so, my  
chaplain,

And I am tame.

*Willdo.* Married! yes, I assure you.

*Over.* Then vanish all sad thoughts!  
there's more gold for thee.

My doubts and fears are in the titles  
drown'd

Of my honourable, my right honourable  
daughter.

*Greedy.* Here will be feasting! at least  
for a month,

I am provided : empty guts, croak no more,  
You shall be stuff'd like bagpipes, not with  
wind,

But bearing dishes.

*Over.* Instantly be here ?

[*Whispering to Willdo.*

To my wish ! to my wish ! Now you that  
plot against me,

And hoped to trip my heels up, that con-  
temn'd me,

Think on't and tremble :—[*Loud music.*]—  
they come ! I hear the music.

A lane there for my lord !

*Well.* This sudden heat

May yet be cool'd, sir.

*Over.* Make way there for my lord !

*Enter Allworth and Margaret.*

*Marg.* Sir, first your pardon, then your  
blessing, with

Your full allowance of the choice I have  
made.

As ever you could make use of your reason.

[*Kneeling.*

Grow not in passion ; since you may as well  
Call back the day that's past, as untie the  
knot

Which is too strongly fasten'd : not to dwell  
Too long on words, this is my husband.

*Over.* How !

*All.* So I assure you ; all the rights of  
marriage,

With every circumstance, are past. Alas !  
sir,

Although I am no lord, but a lord's page,  
Your daughter and my loved wife mourns  
not for it ;

And, for right honourable son-in-law, you  
may say,

Your dutiful daughter.

*Over.* Devil ! are they married ?

*Willdo.* Do a father's part, and say,  
Heaven give them joy !

*Over.* Confusion and ruin ! speak, and  
speak quickly,

Or thou art dead.

*Willdo.* They are married.

*Over.* Thou hadst better

Have made a contract with the king of fiends,  
Than these :—my brain turns !

*Willdo.* Why this rage to me ?

Is not this your letter, sir, and these the  
words ?

*Marry her to this gentleman.*

*Over.* It cannot—

Nor will I e'er believe it, 'sdeath ! I will not ;  
That I, that, in all passages I touch'd  
At worldly profit, have not left a print

Where I have trod, for the most curious  
search

To trace my footsteps, should be gull'd by  
children,

Baffed and fool'd, and all my hopes and la-  
bours

Defeated, and made void.

*Well.* As it appears,

You are so, my grave uncle.

*Over.* Village nurses

Revenge their wrongs with curses ; I'll not  
waste

A syllable, but thus I take the life

Which, wretched, I gave to thee.

[*Attempts to kill Margaret.*

*Lov.* [*coming forward.*] Hold, for your  
own sake !

Though charity to your daughter hath quite  
left you,

Will you do an act, though in your hopes  
lost here,

Can leave no hope for peace or rest hereafter ?  
Consider ; at the best you are but a man,

And cannot so create your aims, but that  
They may be cross'd.

*Over.* Lord ! thus I spit at thee,

And at thy counsel ; and again desire thee,  
And as thou art a soldier, if thy valour

Dares shew itself, where multitude and  
example

Lead not the way, let's quit the house, and  
change

Six words in private.

*Lov.* I am ready.

*L. All.* Stay, sir,

Contest with one distracted !

*Well.* You'll grow like him,

Should you answer his vain challenge.

*Over.* Are you pale ?

Borrow his help, though Hercules call it odds,  
I'll stand against both as I am, hemm'd in  
thus.—

Since, like a Libyan lion in the toil,

My fury cannot reach the coward hunters,  
And only spends itself, I'll quit the place :

Alone I can do nothing ; but I have servants,  
And friends to second me ; and if I make not

This house a heap of ashes, (by my wrongs,  
What I have spoke I will make good !) or

leave

One throat uncut,—if it be possible,

Hell, add to my afflictions ! [*Exit.*

*Mar.* Is't not brave sport ?

*Greeedy.* Brave sport ! I am sure it has ta'en  
away my stomach ;

I do not like the sauce.

*All.* Nay, weep not, dearest,

Though it express your pity ; what's decreed  
Above, we cannot alter.



*L. All.* His threats move me  
No scruple, madam.

*Mar.* Was it not a rare trick,  
An it please your worship, to make the deed  
nothing?

I can do twenty neater, if you please  
To purchase and grow rich; for I will be  
Such a solicitor and steward for you,  
As never worshipful had.

*Well.* I do believe thee;  
But first discover the quaint means you used  
To raze out the conveyance?

*Mar.* They are mysteries  
Not to be spoke in public: certain minerals  
Incorporated in the ink and wax.—  
Besides, he gave me nothing, but still fed me  
With hopes and blows; and that was the in-  
ducement

To this conundrum. If it please your worship  
To call to memory, this mad beast once  
caused me

To urge you, or to drown or hang yourself;  
I'll do the like to him, if you command me.

*Well.* You are a rascal! be that dares be  
false

To a master, though unjust, will ne'er be true  
To any other. Look not for reward  
Or favour from me; I will shun thy sight  
As I would do a basilisk's: thank my pity,  
If thou keep thy ears; howe'er, I will take  
order

Your practice shall be silenced.

*Greedy.* I'll commit him,  
If you will have me, sir.

*Well.* That were to little purpose;  
His conscience be his prison. Not a word,  
But instantly be gone.

*Ord.* Take this kick with you.

*Amb.* And this.

*Furn.* If that I had my cleaver here,  
I would divide your knave's head.

*Mar.* This is the haven  
False servants still arrive at. [Exit.]

*Re-enter Overreach.*

*L. All.* Come again!

*Lov.* Fear not, I am your guard.

*Well.* His looks are ghastly.

*Willdo.* Some little time I have spent,  
under your favours,

In physical studies, and if my judgment err  
not,

He's mad beyond recovery: but observe him,  
And look to yourselves.

*Over.* Why, is not the whole world  
Included in myself? to what use then  
Are friends and servants? Say there were a  
squadron

Of pikes, lined through with shot, when I am  
mounted

Upon my injuries, shall I fear to charge  
them?

No: I'll through the battalia, and that  
routed,

[*Flourishing his sword sheathed.*  
I'll fall to execution.—Ha! I am feeble:  
Some undone widow sits upon mine arm,  
And takes away the use of't; and my sword,  
Glued to my scabbard, with wrong'd or-  
phans' tears,

Will not be drawn. Ha! what are these?  
sure, hangmen,

That come to bind my hands, and then to  
drag me

Before the judgment-seat: now they are new  
shapes,

And do appear like *Furies*, with steel whips  
To scourge my ulcerous soul. Shall I then  
fall

Ingloriously, and yield? no; spite of Fate,  
I will be forced to hell like to myself.

'Though you were legions of accursed  
spirits,

Thus would I fly among you.—  
[*Rushes forward, and flings himself  
on the ground.*

*Well.* There's no help;  
Disarm him first, then bind him.

*Greedy.* Take a mittimus,  
And carry him to Bedlam.

*Lov.* How he foams!

*Well.* And bites the earth!

*Willdo.* Carry him to some dark room,  
There try what art can do for his recovery.

*Marg.* O my dear father!

[*They force Overreach off.*  
*All.* You must be patient, mistress.

*Lov.* Here is a precedent to teach wicked  
men,

That when they leave religion, and turn  
atheists,

Their own abilities leave them] Pray you take  
comfort,

I will endeavour you shall be his guardians  
In his distractions: and for your land, master

Wellborn,

Be it good or ill in law, I'll be an umpire  
Between you, and this, the undoubted heir

Of sir Giles Overreach: for me, here's the  
anchor

That I must fix on.

*All.* What you shall determine,  
My lord, I will allow of.

*Well.* 'Tis the language  
That I speak too; but there is something

else—  
Beside the repossession of my land,

And payment of my debts, that I must  
practise.

I had a reputation, but 'twas lost  
In my loose course; and until I redeem it  
Some noble way, I am but half made up.  
It is a time of action; if your lordship  
Will please to confer a company upon me,  
In your command, I doubt not, in my ser-  
vice

To my king and country, but I shall do  
something

That may make me right again.

*Lov.* Your suit is granted,  
And you loved for the motion.

*Well.* [coming forward.] *Nothing wants  
then*

*But your allowance—and in that our all  
Is comprehended; it being known, nor we,  
Nor he that wrote the comedy, can be free,  
Without your manumission; which if you  
Grant willingly, as a fair favour due  
To the poet's, and our labours, (as you  
may,)*

*For we despair not, gentlemen, of the play:  
We jointly shall profess your grace hatle  
might*

*To teach us action, and him how to write.*

[Excunt.]



# The City Madam.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Lord Lacy.  
 Sir John Frugal, a merchant.  
 Sir Maurice Lacy, son to lord Lacy.  
 Mr. Plenty, a country gentleman.  
 Luke Frugal, brother to sir John.  
 Goldwire senior, } two gentlemen.  
 Tradewell senior, }  
 Goldwire junior, } their sons, apprentices  
 Tradewell junior, } to sir John Frugal.  
 Stargaze, an astrologer.  
 Hoyst, a decayed gentleman.  
 Fortune, } decayed merchants.  
 Penury, }  
 Holdfast, steward to sir John Frugal.

Ramble, } two heclors.  
 Scuffle, }  
 Ding'em, a pimp.  
 Gettali, a box-keeper.  
 Page, Sheriff, Marshal, Serjeants.  
 Lady Frugal.  
 Anne, } her daughters.  
 Mary, }  
 Milliscent, her woman.  
 Shave'em, a courtezan.  
 Secret, a bawd.  
 Orpheus, Charon, Cerberus, Chorus,  
 Musicians, Porters, Servants.

SCENE,—London.

### ACT I.

SCENE I.—A Room in Sir John Frugal's House.

*Enter Goldwire junior and Tradewell junior.*

*Gold.* The ship is safe in the Pool then?

*Trade.* And makes good

In her rich freight, the name she bears,  
*The Speedwell:*

My master will find it; for, on my certain knowledge,

For every hundred that he ventured in her,  
 She hath return'd him five.

*Gold.* And it comes timely;

For, besides a payment on the nail for a manor

Late purchased by my master, his young daughters

Are ripe for marriage.

*Trade.* Who? Nan and Mall?

*Gold.* Mistress Anne and Mary, and with some addition,

Or 'tis more punishable in our house

Than *scandalum magnatum*.

*Trade.* 'Tis great pity

Such a gentleman as my master (for that title His being a citizen cannot take from him)

Hath no male heir to inherit his estate,

And keep his name alive.

*Gold.* The want of one,

Swells my young mistresses, and their madam-mother,

With hopes above their birth, and scale;  
 their dreams are

Of being made countesses; and they take state,

As they were such already. When you went

To the Indies, there was some shape and proportion

Of a merchant's house in our family; but since

My master, to gain precedency for my mistress,

Above some elder merchants' wives, was knighted,

'Tis grown a little court in bravery,

Variety of fashions, and those rich ones:

There are few great ladies going to a mask

That do outshine ours in their every-day habits.

*Trade.* 'Tis strange, my master, in his wisdom, can

Give the reins to such exorbitance.

*Gold.* He must,

Or there's no peace nor rest for him at home;

I grant his state will bear it; yet he's censured

For his indulgence, and, for sir John Frugal,

By some styled sir John Prodigal.

*Trade.* Is his brother,

Master Luke Frugal, living?

*Gold.* Yes; the more

His misery, poor man!

*Trade.* Still in the counter?

- Gold.* In a worse place. He was redeem'd from the hole,  
To live, in our house, in hell; since, his base usage  
Consider'd, 'tis no better. My proud lady Admits him to her table; marry, ever Beneath the salt, and there he sits the subject  
Of her contempt and scorn; and dinner ended,  
His courteous nieces find employment for him Fitting an under-prentice, or a footman, And not an uncle.  
*Trade.* I wonder, being a scholar Well read, and travell'd, the world yielding means  
For men of such desert, he should endure it.  
*Gold.* He does, with a strange patience; and to us,  
The servants, so familiar, nay humble!
- Enter Stargaze, Lady Frugal, Anne, Mary, and Milliscent, in several affected postures, with looking-glasses at their girdles.*
- I'll tell you—but I am cut off. Look these Like a citizen's wife and daughters?  
*Trade.* In their habits  
They appear other things: but what are the motives  
Of this strange preparation?  
*Gold.* The young wagtails  
Expect their suitors: the first, the son and heir  
Of the lord Lacy, who needs my master's money,  
As his daughter does his honour; the second, Mr. Plenty,  
A rough-hewn gentleman, and newly come To a great estate; and so all aids of art In them's excusable.  
*L. Frug.* You have done your parts here: To your study; and be curious in the search Of the nativities. [*Exit Stargaze.*]  
*Trade.* Methinks the mother,  
As if she could renew her youth, in care,  
Nay curiosity, to appear lovely,  
Comes not behind her daughters.  
*Gold.* Keeps the first place;  
And though the church-book speak her fifty, they  
That say she can write thirty, more offend her,  
Than if they tax'd her honesty: t'other day,  
A tenant of hers, instructed in her humour,  
But one she never saw, being brought before her,  
For saying only, *Good young mistress, help me*
- To the speech of your lady-mother, so far pleased her,*  
That he got his lease renew'd for't.  
*Trade.* How she bristles!  
Prithee, observe her.  
*Mill.* As I hope to see  
A country knight's son and heir walk bare before you  
When you are a countess, as you may be one  
When my master dies, or leaves trading; and I, continuing  
Your principal woman, take the upper hand  
Of a squire's wife, though a justice, as I must  
By the place you give me; you look now as young  
As when you were married.  
*L. Frug.* I think I bear my years well.  
*Mill.* Why should you talk of years?  
Time hath not plough'd  
One furrow in your face; and were you not known  
The mother of my young ladies, you might pass  
For a virgin of fifteen.  
*Trade.* Here's no gross flattery!  
Will she swallow this?  
*Gold.* You see she does, and glibly.  
*Mill.* You never can be old; wear but a mask  
Forty years hence, and you will still seem young  
In your other parts. What a waist is here!  
O Venus!  
That I had been born a king! and here a hand  
To be kiss'd ever;—pardon my boldness, madam.  
Then, for a leg and foot, you will be courted  
When a great grandmother.  
*L. Frug.* These, indeed, wench, are not  
So subject to decayings as the face;  
Their comeliness lasts longer.  
*Mill.* Ever, ever!  
Such a rare featured and proportion'd madam,  
London could never boast of.  
*L. Frug.* Where are my shoes?  
*Mill.* Those that your ladyship gave order, should  
Be made of the Spanish perfum'd skins?  
*L. Frug.* The same.  
*Mill.* I sent the prison-bird this morning for them;  
But he neglects his duty.  
*Anne.* He is grown  
Exceeding careless.  
*Mary.* And begins to murmur

At our commands, and sometimes grumbles  
to us,

He is, forsooth, our uncle!

*L. Frug.* He is your slave,  
And as such use him.

*Anne.* Willingly; but he's grown  
Rebellious, madam.

*Gold.* Nay, like hen, like chicken.

*L. Frug.* I'll humble him.

*Enter Luke, with shoes, garters, fans, and roses.*

*Gold.* Here he comes, sweating all over:  
He shews like a walking frippery.

*L. Frug.* Very good, sir:  
Were you drunk last night, that you could  
rise no sooner,  
With humble diligence, to do what my  
daughters

And woman did command you?

*Luke.* Drunk, an't please you!

*L. Frug.* Drunk, I said, sirrah! dar'st  
thou, in a look,  
Repine or grumble? Thou unthankful  
wretch,

Did our charity redeem thee out of prison,  
(Thy patrimony spent,) ragged and lousy,  
When the sheriff's basket, and his broken  
meat,

Were your festival-exceedings! and is this  
So soon forgotten?

*Luke.* I confess I am  
Your creature, madam.

*L. Frug.* And good reason why  
You should continue so.

*Anne.* Who did new clothe you?

*Marg.* Admitted you to the dining-room?

*Mill.* Allow'd you

A fresh bed in the garret?

*L. Frug.* Or from whom  
Received you spending money?

*Luke.* I owe all this  
To your goodness, madam; for it you have  
my prayers,  
The beggar's satisfaction: all my studies  
(Forgetting what I was, but with all duty  
Remembering what I am) are how to please  
you.

And if in my long stay I have offended,  
I ask your pardon; though you may con-  
sider,

Being forced to fetch these from the Old  
Exchange,

These from the Tower, and these from  
Westminster,

I could not come much sooner.

*Gold.* Here was a walk

To breathe a footman!

*Anne.* 'Tis a curious fan.

*Mary.* These roses will shew rare: would  
'twere in fashion

That the garters might be seen too!

*Mill.* Many ladies

That know they have good legs, wish the  
same with you;

Men that way have the advantage.

*Luke.* I was with

The lady, and delivered her the satin

For her gown, and velvet for her petti-  
coat;

This night she vows she'll pay you.

[*Aside to Goldwire.*

*Gold.* How I am bound  
To your favour, master Luke!

*Mill.* As I live, you will  
Perfume all rooms you walk in.

*L. Frug.* Get your fur,  
You shall pull them on within. [*Exit Luke.*

*Gold.* That servile office

Her pride imposes on him.

*Sir John.* [*within.*] Goldwire! Trade-  
well!

*Trade.* My master calls.—We come, sir.  
[*Exeunt Goldwire and Tradewell.*

*Enter Holdfast, and Porters with baskets, &c.*

*L. Frug.* What have you brought there?

*Hold.* The cream o' the market;  
Provision enough to serve a garrison.

I weep to think on't: when my master got  
His wealth, his family fed on roots and  
livers,

And necks of beef on Sundays.—

But now I fear it will be spent in poultry;  
Butcher's-meat will not go down.

*L. Frug.* Why, you rascal, is it  
At your expense? what cooks have you pro-  
vided?

*Hold.* The best of the city: they've  
wrought at my lord mayor's.

*Anne.* Fie on them! they smell of Fleet-  
lane, and Pie-corner.

*Mary.* And think the happiness of man's  
life consists

In a mighty shoulder of mutton.

*L. Frug.* I'll have none  
Shall touch what I shall eat, you grumbling  
cur,

But Frenchmen and Italians; they wear  
satin,

And dish no meat but in silver.

*Hold.* You may want, though,  
A dish or two when the service ends.

*L. Frug.* Leave prating;  
I'll have my will: do you as I command you.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*The Street before Frugal's House.*

*Enter Sir Maurice Lacy and Page.*

*Sir Maur.* You were with Plenty?

*Page.* Yes, sir.

*Sir Maur.* And what answer Return'd the clown?

*Page.* Clown, sir! he is transform'd, And grown a gallant of the last edition; More rich than gaudy in his habit; yet The freedom and the bluntness of his language

Continues with him. When I told him that You gave him caution, as he loved the peace And safety of his life, he should forbear To pass the merchant's threshold, until you. Of his two daughters, had made choice of her

Whom you design'd to honour as your wife, He smiled in scorn.

*Sir Maur.* In scorn!

*Page.* His words confirm'd it;

They were few, but to this purpose: *Tell your master, Though his lordship in reversion were now his,*

*It cannot awe me. I was born a freeman, And will not yield, in the way of affection, Precedence to him: I will visit them, Though he sate porter to deny me entrance: When I meet him next, I'll say more to his face.*

*Deliver thou this:* then gave me a piece, To help my memory, and so we parted.

*Sir Maur.* Where got he this spirit?

*Page.* At the academy of valour, Newly erected for the institution Of elder brothers; where they are taught the ways, Though they refuse to seal for a duellist, How to decline a challenge. He himself Can best resolve you.

*Enter Plenty and three Servants.*

*Sir Maur.* You, sir!

*Plenty.* What with me, sir?

How big you look! I will not loose a hat To a hair's breadth: move your beaver, I'll move mine;

Or if you desire to prove your sword, mine hangs

As near my right hand, and will as soon out; though I keep not

A fencer to breathe me. Walk into Moor-fields—

I dare look on your Toledo. Do not shew A foolish valour in the streets, to make

Work for shopkeepers and their clubs, 'tis scurvy,

And the women will laugh at us.

*Sir Maur.* You presume On the protection of your hinds.

*Plenty.* I scorn it:

Though I keep men, I fight not with their fingers,

Nor make it my religion to follow The gallant's fashion, to have my family Consisting in a footman and a page, And those two sometimes hungry. I can feed these,

And clothe them too, my gay sir.

*Sir Maur.* What a fine man Hath your tailor made you!

*Plenty.* 'Tis quite contrary, I have made my tailor, for my clothes are paid for

As soon as put on; a sin your man of title Is seldom guilty of; but Heaven forgive it!

I have other faults, too, very incident To a plain gentleman: I eat my venison With my neighbours in the country, and present not

My pheasants, partridges, and growse to the usurer;

Nor ever yet paid brokage to his scrivener. I flatter not my mercer's wife, nor feast her With the first cherries, or peascods, to prepare me

Credit with her husband, when I come to London.

The wool of my sheep, or a score or two of fat oxen

In Smithfield, give me money for my expenses. I can make my wife a jointure of such lands too

As are not encumber'd; no annuity Or statute lying on them. This I can do, An it please your future honour, and why, therefore,

You should forbid my being suitor with you, My dullness apprehends not.

*Page.* This is bitter.

[*Aside.*

*Sir Maur.* I have heard you, sir, and in my patience shewn

Too much of the stoic. But to parley further, Or answer your gross jeers, would write me coward.

This only,—thy great-grandfather was a butcher,

And his son a grazier; thy sire, constable Of the hundred, and thou the first of your dunghill

Created gentleman. Now you may come on, sir,

You and your thrashers.

*Plenty.* Stir not, on your lives.

This for the grazier,—this for the butcher.

[*They fight.*]

*Sir Maur.* So, sir!

*Page.* I'll not stand idle; draw! [*to the Servants.*] my little rapier,

Against your bumb blades! I'll one by one dispatch you,

Then house this instrument of death and horror.

*Enter Sir John Frugal, Luke, Goldwire junior, and Tradewell junior.*

*Sir John.* Beat down their weapons. My gate ruffian's hall!

What insolence is this?

*Luke.* Noble sir Maurice, Worshipful master Plenty—

*Sir John.* I blush for you.

Men of your quality expose your fame To every vulgar censure! this at midnight, After a drunken supper in a tavern, (No civil man abroad to censure it,) Had shewn poor in you; but in the day, and view

Of all that pass by, monstrous!

*Plenty.* Very well, sir; You look'd for this defence.

*Sir Maur.* 'Tis thy protection; But it will deceive thee.

*Sir John.* Hold, if you proceed thus, I must make use of the next justice's power, And leave persuasion; and in plain terms tell you,

*Enter Lady Frugal, Anne, Mary, and Milliscent.*

Neither your birth, sir Maurice, nor your wealth,

Shall privilege this riot. See whom you have drawn

To be spectators of it! can you imagine It can stand with the credit of my daughters, To be the argument of your swords? 't' the street too?

Nay, ere you do salute, or I give way To any private conference, shake hands In sign of peace: he that draws back, parts with

My good opinion. [*They shake hands.*] This is as it should be.

Make your approaches, and if their affection Can sympathise with yours, they shall not come,

On my credit, beggars to you. I will bear What you reply within.

*Sir Maur.* May I have the honour To support you, lady? [*To Anne.*]

*Plenty.* I know not what's supporting,

But by this fair hand, glove and all, I love you.

[*To Mary.*]  
[*Exeunt all but Luke.*]

*Enter Hoyst, Penury, and Fortune.*

*Luke.* You are come with all advantage. I will help you

To the speech of my brother.

*For.* Have you moved him for us?

*Luke.* With the best of my endeavours, and I hope

You'll find him tractable.

*Pen.* Heaven grant he prove so!

*Hoyst.* Howe'er, I'll speak my mind.

*Enter Lord Lacy.*

*Luke.* Do so, master Hoyst.

Go in: I'll pay my duty to this lord, And then I am wholly yours.

[*Exeunt Hoyst, Penury, and Fortune.*]  
Heaven bless your honour!

*L. Lacy.* Your hand, master Luke: the world's much changed with you Within these few months; then you were the gallant:

No meeting at the horse-race, cocking, hunting,

Shooting, or bowling, at which master Luke Was not a principal gamester, and companion For the nobility.

*Luke.* I have paid dear

For those follies, my good lord; and 'tis but justice

That such as soar above their pitch, and will not

Be warn'd by my example, should, like me, Share in the miseries that wait upon it.

Your honour, in your charity, may do well Not to upbraid me with those weaknesses, Too late repented.

*L. Lacy.* I nor do, nor will;

And you shall find I'll lend a helping hand To raise your fortunes: how deals your brother with you?

*Luke.* Beyond my merit, I thank his goodness for't.

I am a free man, all my debts discharged; Nor does one creditor, undone by me, Curse my loose riots. I have meat and clothes,

Time to ask heaven remission for what's past;

Cares of the world by me are laid aside, My present poverty's a blessing to me; And though I have been long, I dare not say I ever lived till now.

*L. Lacy.* You bear it well;

Yet as you wish I should receive for truth

What you deliver, with that truth acquaint me

With your brother's inclination. I have heard,

In the acquisition of his wealth, he weighs not

Whose ruins he builds upon.

*Luke.* In that, report

Wrongs him, my lord. He is a citizen, And would increase his heap, and will not lose What the law gives him : such as are worldly wise

Pursue that track, or they will ne'er wear scarlet.

But if your honour please to know his temper, You are come opportunely. I can bring you Where you, unseen, shall see and hear his carriage

Towards some poor men, whose making, or undoing,

Depends upon his pleasure.

*L. Lacy.* To my wish :

I know no object that could more content me.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Counting-room in Frugal's House.*

*Enter Sir John Frugal, Hoyst, Fortune, Penury, and Goldwire junior.*

*Sir John.* What would you have me do? reach me a chair.

When I lent my monies I appear'd an angel; But now I would call in mine own, a devil.

*Hoyst.* Were you the devil's dam, you must stay till I have it,

For as I am a gentleman—

*Re-enter Luke, behind, with Lord Lacy, whom he places near the door.*

*Luke.* There you may hear all.

*Hoyst.* I pawn'd you my land for the tenth part of the value :

Now, 'cause I am a gamester, and keep ordinaries,

And a livery punk or so, and trade not with The money-mongers' wives, not one will be bound for me :

'Tis a hard case ; you must give me longer day,

Or I shall grow very angry.

*Sir John.* Fret, and spare not.

I know no obligation lies upon me With my honey to feed drones. But to the purpose,

How much owes Penury?

*Gold.* Two hundred pounds :

His bond three times since forfeited.

*Sir John.* Is it sued?

*Gold.* Yes, sir, and execution out against him.

*Sir John.* For body and goods?

*Gold.* For both, sir.

*Sir John.* See it served.

*Pen.* I am undone ; my wife and family Must starve for want of bread.

*Sir John.* More infidel thou, In not providing better to support them.

What's Fortune's debt?

*Gold.* A thousand, sir.

*Sir John.* An estate

For a good man! You were the glorious trader,

Embraced all bargains ; the main venturer In every ship that launch'd forth ; kept your wife

As a lady ; she had her caroch, her choice Of summer houses, built with other men's monies

Ta'en up at interest, the certain road

To Ludgate in a citizen. Pray you acquaint me,

How were my thousand pounds employ'd?

*For.* Insult not

On my calamity ; though, being a debtor, And a slave to him that lends, I must endure it.

Yet hear me speak thus much in my defence ; Losses at sea, and those, sir, great and many,

By storms and tempests, not domestical riots In soothing my wife's humour, or mine own, Have brought me to this low ebb.

*Sir John.* Suppose this true,

What is't to me? I must and will have my money,

Or I'll protest you first, and, that done, have

The statute made for bankrupts served upon you.

*For.* 'Tis in your power, but not in mine to shun it.

*Luke* [*comes forward.*] Not as a brother, sir, but with such duty,

As I should use unto my father, since Your charity is my parent, give me leave To speak my thoughts.

*Sir John.* What would you say?

*Luke.* No word, sir,

I hope, shall give offence ; nor let it relish Of flattery, though I proclaim aloud,

I glory in the bravery of your mind, To which your wealth's a servant. Not that riches

Is, or should be, contemn'd, it being a blessing

Derived from heaven, and by your industry Pull'd down upon you ; but in this, dear sir,



You have many equals : such a man's possessions

Extend as far as yours ; a second hath  
His bags as full ; a third in credit flies  
As high in the popular voice : but the distinction

And noble difference by which you are  
Divided from them, is, that you are styled,  
Gentle in your abundance, good in plenty ;  
And that you feel compassion in your bowels  
Of others' miseries, (I have found it, sir,  
Heaven keep me thankful for't !) while they  
are curs'd

As rigid and inexorable.

*Sir John.* I delight not

To hear this spoke to my face.

*Luke.* That shall not grieve you.

Your affability, and mildness, clothed  
In the garments of your [thankful] debtors'  
breath,  
Shall everywhere, though you strive to conceal it,

Be seen and wonder'd at, and in the act  
With a prodigal hand rewarded. Whereas,  
such

As are born only for themselves, and live so,  
Though prosperous in worldly understandings,

Are but like beasts of rapine, that, by odds  
Of strength, usurp, and tyrannize o'er others  
Brought under their subjection.

*L. Lacy.* A rare fellow !

I am strangely taken with him.

*Luke.* Can you think, sir,

In your unquestion'd wisdom, I beseech you,  
The goods of this poor man sold at an outcry,

His wife turn'd out of doors, his children  
forced

To beg their bread ; this gentleman's estate,  
By wrong extorted, can advantage you ?

*Hoyst.* If it thrive with him, hang me, as  
it will damn him,

If he be not converted.

*Luke.* You are too violent.—

Or that the ruin of this once brave merchant,  
For such he was esteem'd, though now  
decay'd,

Will raise your reputation with good men ?  
But you may urge, (pray you pardon me,  
my zeal

Makes me thus bold and vehement,) in this  
You satisfy your anger, and revenge  
For being defeated. Suppose this, it will  
not

Repair your loss, and there was never yet  
But shame and scandal in a victory,  
When the rebels unto reason, passions,  
fought it.

Then for revenge, by great souls it was ever  
Contemn'd, though offer'd ; entertain'd by  
none

But cowards, base and abject spirits,  
strangers

To moral honesty, and never yet  
Acquainted with religion.

*L. Lacy.* Our divines

Cannot speak more effectually.

*Sir John.* Shall I be

Talk'd out of my money ?

*Luke.* No, sir, but entreated

To do yourself a benefit, and preserve  
What you possess entire.

*Sir John.* How, my good brother ?

*Luke.* By making these your beadsmen—

When they eat,

Their thanks, next heaven, will be paid to  
your mercy ;

When your ships are at sea, their prayers  
will swell

The sails with prosperous winds, and guard  
them from

Tempests, and pirates ; keep your ware-  
houses

From fire, or quench them with their tears.

*Sir John.* No more.

*Luke.* Write you a good man in the  
people's hearts,

Follow you everywhere.

*Sir John.* If this could be—

*Luke.* It must, or our devotions are but  
words.

I see a gentle promise in your eye,  
Make it a blessed act, and poor me rich,  
In being the instrument.

*Sir John.* You shall prevail ;

Give them longer day : but, do you hear, no  
talk of't.

Should this arrive at twelve on the Ex-  
change,

I shall be langh'd at for my foolish pity,  
Which money-men hate deadly. Take your  
own time,

But see you break not. Carry them to the  
cellar ;

Drink a health, and thank your orator.

*Pen.* On our knees, sir.

*For.* Honest master Luke !

*Hoyst.* I bless the counter, where  
You learn'd this rhetoric.

*Luke.* No more of that, friends.

[*Exeunt Luke, Hoyst, Fortune, and  
Penury. Lord Lacy comes forward.*

*Sir John.* My honourable lord.

*L. Lacy.* I have seen and heard all.

Excuse my manners, and wish heartily  
You were all of a piece. Your charity to your  
debtors,

I do commend ; but where you should express  
Your piety to the height, I must boldly tell  
you,

You shew yourself an atheist.

*Sir John.* Make me know  
My error, and for what I am thus censured,  
And I will purge myself, or else confess  
A guilty cause.

*L. Lacy.* It is your harsh demeanour  
To your poor brother.

*Sir John.* Is that all?

*L. Lacy.* 'Tis more  
Than can admit defence. You keep him as  
A parasite to your table, subject to  
The scorn of your proud wife ; an underling  
To his own nieces : and can I with mine  
honour

Mix my blood with his, that is not sensible  
Of his brother's miseries?

*Sir John.* Pray you, take me with you ;  
And let me yield my reasons why I am  
No opener-handed to him. I was born  
His elder brother, yet my father's fondness  
To him, the younger, robb'd me of my birth-  
right :

He had a fair estate, which his loose riots  
Soon brought to nothing ; wants grew heavy  
on him,

And when laid up for debt, of all forsaken,  
And in his own hopes lost, I did redeem him.

*L. Lacy.* You could not do less.

*Sir John.* Was I bound to it, my lord ?  
What I possess I may, with justice, call  
The harvest of my industry. Would you  
have me,

Neglecting mine own family, to give up  
My estate to his disposal ?

*L. Lacy.* I would have you,  
What's pass'd forgot, to use him as a brother ;  
A brother of fair parts, of a clear soul,  
Religious, good, and honest.

*Sir John.* Outward gloss  
Often deceives, may it not prove so in him !  
And yet my long acquaintance with his  
nature

Renders me doubtful ; but that shall not  
make

A breach between us : let us in to dinner,  
And what trust, or employment you think fit,  
Shall be conferr'd upon him : if he prove  
True gold in the touch, I'll be no mourner  
for it.

*L. Lacy.* If counterfeit, I'll never trust my  
judgment. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Sir John Frugal's  
House.*

*Enter Luke, Holdfast, Goldwire junior, and  
Tradewell junior.*

*Hold.* The like was never seen.

*Luke.* Why in this rage, man ?

*Hold.* Men may talk of country-christ-  
masses, and court-gluttony,  
Their thirty-pound butter'd eggs, their pies  
of carps' tongues,  
Their pheasants drench'd with ambergris,  
the carcasses

Of three fat wethers bruised for gravy, to  
Make sauce for a single peacock ; yet their  
feasts

Were fasts, compared with the city's.

*Trade.* What dear dainty

Was it, thou murmur'st at ?

*Hold.* Did you not observe it ?

There were three sucking pigs serv'd up in  
a dish,

Ta'en from the sow as soon as farrowed,  
A fortnight fed with dates, and muskadine,  
That stood my master in twenty marks apiece,  
Besides the puddings in their bellies, made  
Of I know not what.—I dare swear the  
cook that dress'd it

Was the devil, disguised like a Dutchman.

*Gold.* Yet all this

Will not make you fat, fellow Holdfast.

*Hold.* I am rather  
Starv'd to look on't. But here's the mis-  
chief—though

The dishes were raised one upon another,  
As woodmongers do billets, for the first,  
The second, and third course, and most  
of the shops

Of the best confectioners in London ran-  
sack'd,

To furnish out a banquet ; yet my lady  
Call'd me penurious rascal, and cried out,  
There was nothing worth the eating.

*Gold.* You must have patience,  
This is not done often.

*Hold.* 'Tis not fit it should ;

Three such dinners more would break an  
alderman,

And make him give up his cloak : I am  
resolv'd

To have no hand in't. I'll make up my  
accounts,

And since my master longs to be undone,  
The great fiend be his steward : I will pray,  
And bless myself from him ! [*Exit.*

*Gold.* The wretch shews in this  
An honest care.

*Luke.* Out on him ! with the fortune  
Of a slave he has the mind of one. How-  
ever

She bears me hard, I like my lady's humour,  
And my brother's suffrage to it. They are  
now

Busy on all hands ; one side eager for  
Large portions, the other arguing strictly  
For jointures and security ; but this  
Being above our scale, no way concerns us.  
How dull you look ! in the mean time, how  
intend you  
To spend the hours ?

*Gold.* We well know how we would,  
But dare not serve our wills.

*Trade.* Being prentices,  
We are bound to attendance.

*Luke.* Have you almost served out  
The term of your indentures, yet make con-  
science

By starts to use your liberty ! Hast thou  
traded [To Tradewell.

In the other world, exposed unto all dangers,  
To make thy master rich, yet dar'st not take  
Some portion of the profit for thy pleasure ?  
Or wilt thou, [to Gold.] being keeper of  
the cash,

Like an ass that carries dainties, feed on  
thistles ?

Are you gentlemen born, yet have no gallant  
tincture

Of gentry in you ? you are no mechanics,  
Nor serve some needy shopkeeper, who  
surveys

His every-day takings : you have in your  
keeping

A mass of wealth, from which you may take  
boldly,

And no way be discover'd. He's no rich man  
That knows all he possesses, and leaves  
nothing

For his servants to make prey of. I blush  
for you,

Blush at your poverty of spirit ; you,  
The brave sparks of the city !

*Gold.* Master Luke,  
I wonder you should urge this, having felt  
What misery follows riot.

*Trade.* And the penance.  
You endur'd for't in the counter.

*Luke.* You are fools,  
The case is not the same ; I spent mine own  
money,  
And my stock being small, no marvel 'twas  
soon wasted ;

But you, without the least doubt or suspicion,  
If cautelous, may make bold with your  
master's.

As, for example, when his ships come home,

And you take your receipts, as 'tis the  
fashion,

For fifty bales of silk you may write forty ;  
Or for so many pieces of cloth of bodkin,  
Tissue, gold, silver, velvets, satins, taffetas,  
A piece of each deducted from the gross  
Will ne'er be miss'd, a dash of a pen will  
do it.

*Trade.* Ay, but our fathers' bonds, that  
lie in pawn

For our honesties, must pay for't.

*Luke.* A mere bugbear,  
Invented to fright children ! As I live,  
Were I the master of my brother's fortunes,  
I should glory in such servants. Didst thou  
know

What ravishing lechery it is to enter  
An ordinary, cap-à-pie, trimm'd like a gal-  
lant,

For which, in trunks conceal'd, be ever  
furnish'd ;

The reverence, respect, the crouches,  
cringes,

The musical chime of gold in your cramm'd  
pockets,

Commands from the attendants, and poor  
porters—

*Trade.* O rare !

*Luke.* Then sitting at the table with  
The braveries of the kingdom, you shall hear  
Occurs from all corners of the world,  
The plots, the counsels, the designs of  
princes,

And freely censure them ; the city wits  
Cried up, or decried, as their passions lead  
them ;

Judgment having nought to do there.

*Trade.* Admirable !

*Luke.* My lord no sooner shall rise out of  
his chair,

The gaming lord I mean, but you may  
boldly,

By the privilege of a gamester, fill his room,  
For in play you are all fellows ; have your  
knife

As soon in the pheasant ; drink your health  
as freely,

And, striking in a lucky hand or two,  
Buy out your time.

*Trade.* This may be ; but suppose  
We should be known ?

*Luke.* Have money and good clothes,  
And you may pass invisible. Or, if  
You love a madam-punk, and your wide  
nostril

Be taken with the scent of cambric smocks,  
Wrought and perfum'd—

*Gold.* There, there, master Luke,  
There lies my road of happiness !

*Luke.* Enjoy it.  
And pleasure stolen, being sweetest, apprehend

The raptures of being hurried in a coach  
To Brentford, Staines, or Barnet.

*Gold.* 'Tis enchanting.

I have proved it.

*Luke.* Hast thou?

*Gold.* Yes, in all these places

I have had my several pagans billeted

For my own tooth, and after ten-pound suppers

The curtains drawn, my fiddlers playing all night

*The shaking of the sheets*, which I have danced  
Again and again with my cockatrice:—

master Luke,

You shall be of my counsel, and we two sworn brothers;

And therefore I'll be open. I am out now  
Six hundred in the cash, yet if on a sudden  
I should be call'd to account, I have a trick  
How to evade it, and make up the sum.

*Trade.* Is't possible?

*Luke.* You can instruct your tutor.

How, how, good Tom?

*Gold.* Why, look you. We cash-keepers  
Hold correspondence, supply one another  
On all occasions: I can borrow for a week  
Two hundred pounds of one, as much of a second,

A third lays down the rest; and, when they want,

As my master's monies come in I do repay it:  
*Ka me, ka thee!*

*Luke.* An excellent knot! 'tis pity

It e'er should be unloosed; for me it shall not.

You are shewn the way, friend Tradewell, you may make use on't,

Or freeze in the warehouse, and keep company

With the cater, Holdfast.

*Trade.* No, I am converted.

A Barbican broker will furnish me with outside,

And then, a crash at the ordinary!

*Gold.* I am for

The lady you saw this morning, who indeed is  
My proper recreation.

*Luke.* Go to, Tom;

What did you make me?

*Gold.* I'll do as much for you,  
Employ me when you please.

*Luke.* If you are enquired for,  
I will excuse you both.

*Trade.* Kind master Luke!

*Gold.* We'll break my master to make you. You know—

*Luke.* I cannot love money. Go, boys!  
[*Exeunt Goldwire and Tradewell.*

When time serves,

It shall appear I have another end in't.

[*Exit.*

SCENE II.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter* Sir John Frugal, Lord Lacy, Sir Maurice Lacy, Plenty, Lady Frugal, Anne, Mary, and Milliscent.

*Sir John.* Ten thousand pounds a piece

I'll make their portions,

And after my decease it shall be double,  
Provided you assure them, for their jointures,  
Eight hundred pounds per annum, and entail  
A thousand more upon the heirs male  
Begotten on their bodies.

*L. Lacy.* Sir, you bind us

To very strict conditions.

*Plenty.* You, my lord,

May do as you please: but to me it seems  
strange,

We should conclude of portions, and of jointures,

Before our hearts are settled.

*L. Frug.* You say right:

There are counsels of more moment and importance,

On the making up of marriages, to be  
Consider'd duly, than the portion or the jointures,

In which a mother's care must be exacted;

And I, by special privilege, may challenge  
A casting voice.

*L. Lacy.* How's this?

*L. Frug.* Even so, my lord;

In these affairs I govern.

*L. Lacy.* Give you way to't?

*Sir John.* I must, my lord.

*L. Frug.* 'Tis fit he should, and shall.

You may consult of something else, this province

Is wholly mine.

*Sir Maur.* By the city custom, madam?

*L. Frug.* Yes, my young sir; and both  
must look my daughters

Will hold it by my copy.

*Plenty.* Brave, i' faith!

*Sir John.* Give her leave to talk, we have  
the power to do;

And now touching the business we last  
talk'd of,

In private, if you please.

*L. Lacy.* 'Tis well remember'd:

You shall take your own way, madam.

[*Exeunt* Lord Lacy and Sir John Frugal.

*Sir Maur.* What strange lecture

Will she read unto us?

*L. Frug.* Such as wisdom warrants

From the superior bodies. Is Stargaze ready  
With his several schemes ?

*Mill.* Yes, madam, and attends

Your pleasure.

*Sir Maur.* Stargaze ! lady : what is he ?

*L. Frug.* Call him in.—[*Exit Milliscent.*]

—You shall first know him, then admire  
him

For a man of many parts, and those parts  
rare ones.

He's every thing, indeed ; parcel physician,  
And as such prescribes my diet, and foretels  
My dreams when I eat potatoes ; parcel poet,  
And sings encomiums to my virtues sweetly ;  
My antecedent, or my gentleman-usher,  
And as the stars move, with that due pro-  
portion

He walks before me : but an absolute master  
In the calculation of nativities ;  
Guided by that ne'er-erring science call'd,  
Judicial astrology.

*Plenty.* Stargaze ! sure

I have a penny almanack about me  
Inscribed to you, as to his patronness,  
In his name publish'd.

*L. Frug.* Keep it as a jewel.

Some statesmen that I will not name are  
wholly

Govern'd by his predictions ; for they serve  
For any latitude in Christendom,  
As well as our own climate.

*Re-enter Milliscent, followed by Stargaze,  
with two schemes.*

*Sir Maur.* I believe so.

*Plenty.* Must we couple by the almanack ?

*L. Frug.* Be silent ;

And ere we do articulate, much more  
Grow to a full conclusion, instruct us  
Whether this day and hour, by the planets,  
promise

Happy success in marriage.

*Star.* *In omni*

*Parte, et toto.*

*Plenty.* Good learn'd sir, in English ;  
And since it is resolved we must be cox-  
combs,

Make us so in our own language.

*Star.* You are pleasant :

Thus in our vulgar tongue then.

*L. Frug.* Pray you observe him.

*Star.* Venus, in the west angle, the house  
of marriage the seventh house, in trine of  
Mars, in conjunction of Luna ; and Mars  
almuthen, or lord of the horoscope.

*Plenty.* Hey-day !

*L. Frug.* The angels' language ! I am  
ravisht : forward.

*Star.* Mars, as I said, lord of the horo-

scope, or geniture, in mutual reception of  
each other ; she in her exaltation, and he in  
his triplicite trine, and face, assure a for-  
tunate combination to Hymen, excellent,  
prosperous, and happy.

*L. Frug.* Kneel, and give thanks.

[*The Women kneel.*]

*Sir Maur.* For what we understand not ?

*Plenty.* And have as little faith in ?

*L. Frug.* Be incredulous ;

To me, 'tis oracle.

*Star.* Now for the sovereignty of my future  
ladies, your daughters, after they are mar-  
ried.

*Plenty.* Wearing the breeches, you mean ?

*L. Frug.* Touch that point home :

It is a principal one, and, with London  
ladies,  
Of main consideration.

*Star.* This is infallible : Saturn out of all digni-  
ties in his detriment and fall, combust : and  
Venus in the south angle elevated above him,  
lady of both their nativities, in her essential  
and accidental dignities ; occidental from the  
sun, oriental from the angle of the east,  
in cazimi of the sun, in her joy, and free  
from the malevolent beams of infortunes ; in  
a sign commanding, and Mars in a constel-  
lation obeying ; she fortunate, and he de-  
jected : the disposers of marriage in the  
radix of the native in feminine figures, argue,  
foretel, and declare rule, pre-eminence, and  
absolute sovereignty in women.

*L. Frug.* Is't possible !

*Star.* 'Tis drawn, I assure you, from the  
aphorisms of the old Chaldeans, Zoroastes  
the first and greatest magician, Mercurius  
Trismegistus, the later Ptolemy, and the  
everlasting prognosticator, old Erra Pater.

*L. Frug.* Are you yet satisfied ?

*Plenty.* In what ?

*L. Frug.* That you

Are bound to obey your wives ; it being so  
Determined by the stars, against whose  
influence

There is no opposition.

*Plenty.* Since I must

Be married by the almanack, as I may be,  
'Twere requisite the services and duties  
Which, as you say, I must pay to my wife,  
Were set down in the calendar.

*Sir Maur.* With the date

Of my apprenticeship.

*L. Frug.* Make your demands ;  
I'll sit as moderatrix, if they press you  
With over-hard conditions.

*Sir Maur.* Mine hath the van ;  
I stand your charge, sweet.

*Star.* Silenc.

*Anne.* I require first,  
And that, since 'tis in fashion with kind  
husbands,

In civil manners you must grant, my will  
In all things whatsoever, and that will  
To be obey'd, -not argued.

*L. Frug.* And good reason.

*Plenty.* A gentle *imprimis!*

*Sir Maur.* This in gross contains all :  
But your special items, lady.

*Anne.* When I am one,  
And you are honour'd to be styled my hus-  
band,

To urge my having my page, my gentleman-  
usher,

My woman sworn to my secrets, my caroch  
Drawn by six Flanders mares, my coachman,  
grooms,

Postillion, and footmen.

*Sir Maur.* Is there aught else  
To be demanded?

*Anne.* Yes, sir, mine own doctor.

French and Italian cooks, musicians,  
songsters,

And a chaplain that must preach to please  
my fancy :

A friend at court to place me at a masque ;  
The private box ta'en up at a new play,  
For me and my retinue ; a fresh habit,  
Of a fashion never seen before, to draw  
The gallants' eyes, that sit on the stage, upon  
me ;

Some decayed lady for my parasite,  
To flatter me, and rail at other madams ;  
And there ends my ambition.

*Sir Maur.* Your desires  
Are modest, I confess !

*Anne.* These toys subscribed to,  
And you continuing an obedient husband,  
Upon all fit occasions you shall find me  
A most indulgent wife.

*L. Frug.* You have said ; give place,  
And hear your younger sister.

*Plenty.* If she speak  
Her language, may the great fiend, booted  
and spur'd,

With a sithe at his girdle, as the Scotchman  
says,

Ride headlong down her throat !

*Sir Maur.* Curse not the judge,  
Before you hear the sentence.

*Mary.* In some part  
My sister hath spoke well for the city  
pleasures,

But I am for the country's ; and must say,  
Under correction, in her demands  
She was too modest.

*Sir Maur.* How like you this exordium ?  
*Plenty.* Too modest, with a mischief !

*Mary.* Yes, too modest :

I know my value, and prize it to the worth,  
My youth, my beauty—

*Plenty.* How your glass deceives you !

*Mary.* The greatness of the portion I  
bring with me,  
And the sea of happiness that from me  
flows to you.

*Sir Maur.* She bears up close.

*Mary.* And can you, in your wisdom,  
Or rustical simplicity, imagine  
You have met some innocent country girl,  
that never

Look'd further than her father's farm, nor  
knew more

Than the price of corn in the market ; or at  
what rate

Beef went a stone ? that would survey your  
dairy,

And bring in mutton out of cheese and  
butter ?

That could give directions at what time of  
the moon

To cut her cocks for capons against Christmas,  
Or when to raise up goslings ?

*Plenty.* These are arts

Would not misbecome you, though you  
should put in

Obedience and duty.

*Mary.* Yes, and patience,  
To sit like a fool at home, and eye your  
thrashers ;

Then make provision for your slaving  
bounds,

When you come drunk from an alehouse,  
after hunting

With your clowns and comrades, as if all  
were yours,

You the lord paramount, and I the drudge ;  
The case, sir, must be otherwise.

*Plenty.* How, I beseech you ?

*Mary.* Marry, thus : I will not, like my  
sister, challenge

What's useful or superfluous from my hus-  
band,

That's base all o'er ; mine shall receive  
from me

What I think fit ; I'll have the state convey'd  
Into my hands, and he put to his pension,

Which the wise viragos of our climate prac-  
tise ;—

I will receive your rents.

*Plenty.* You shall be hang'd first.

*Mary.* Make sale or purchase : nay, I'll  
have my neighbours

Instructed, when a passenger shall ask,  
Whose house is this ? (though you stand

by) to answer,  
The lady Plenty's. Or who owns this manor ?

The lady Plenty. Whose sheep are these,  
whose oxen?

The lady Plenty's.

*Plenty.* A plentiful pox upon you!

*Mary.* And when I have children, if it be  
inquired

By a stranger, whose they are?—they shall  
still echo,

My lady Plenty's, the husband never thought  
on.

*Plenty.* In their begetting: I think so.

*Mary.* Since you'll marry

In the city for our wealth, in justice, we  
Must have the country's sovereignty.

*Plenty.* And we nothing.

*Mary.* A nag of forty shillings, a couple  
of spaniels,

With a sparhawk, is sufficient, and these  
too,

As you shall behave yourself, during my  
pleasure,

I will not greatly stand on. I have said, sir,  
Now if you like me, so.

*L. Frug.* At my entreaty,

The articles shall be easier.

*Plenty.* Shall they, i' faith?

Like bitch, like whelps.

*Sir Maur.* Use fair words.

*Plenty.* I cannot;

I have read of a house of pride, and now I  
have found one:

A whirlwind overturn it!

*Sir Maur.* On these terms,

Will your minxship be a lady?

*Plenty.* A lady in a morris:

I'll wed a pedlar's punk first—

*Sir Maur.* Tinker's trull,

A beggar without a smock.

*Plenty.* Let monsieur almanack,

Since he is so cunning with his Jacob's staff,  
Find you out a husband in a bowling-alley.

*Sir Maur.* The general pimp to a brothel.

*Plenty.* Though that now

All the loose desires of man were raked up  
in me,

And no means but thy maidenhead left to  
quench them,

I would turn cinders, or the next sow-  
gelder,

On my life, should lib me, rather than em-  
brace thee.

*Anne.* Wooing do you call this!

*Mary.* A bear-baiting rather.

*Plenty.* Were you worried, you deserve  
it, and I hope

I shall live to see it.

*Sir Maur.* I'll not rail, nor curse you:

Only this, you are pretty peats, and your  
great portions

Add much unto your handsomeness; but as  
You would command your husbands, you  
are beggars,

Deform'd and ugly.

*L. Frug.* Hear me.

*Plenty.* Not a word more.

[*Exeunt Sir Maurice Lacy and Plenty.*]

*Anne.* I ever thought it would come to this.

*Mary.* We may

Lead apes in hell for husbands, if you bind us  
To articulate thus with our suitors.

[*Both speak weeping.*]

*Star.* Now the cloud breaks,  
And the storm will fall on me. [*Aside.*]

*L. Frug.* You rascal! juggler!

[*She breaks Stargaze's head, and beats  
him.*]

*Star.* Dear madam.

*L. Frug.* Hold you intelligence with the  
stars,

And thus deceive me!

*Star.* My art cannot err;

If it does, I'll burn my astrolabe. In mine-  
own star

I did forsee this broken head, and beating;  
And now your ladyship sees, as I do feel it.

It could not be avoided.

*L. Frug.* Did you?

*Star.* Madam,

Have patience but a week, and if you find not  
All my predictions true, touching your

daughters,

And a change of fortune to yourself, a rare  
one,

Turn me out of doors. These are not the  
men the planets

Appointed for their husbands; there will  
come

Gallants of another metal.

*Mill.* Once more trust him.

*Anne. Mary.* Do, lady-mother:

*L. Frug.* I am vex'd, look to it;

Turn o'er your books; if once again you  
fool me,

You shall graze elsewhere: come, girls.

*Star.* I am glad I scaped thus.

[*Aside. Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Lord Lacy and Sir John Frugal.*

*L. Lacy.* The plot shews very likely.

*Sir John.* I repose

My principal trust in your lordship; 'twill  
prepare

The physic I intend to minister  
To my wife and daughters.

*L. Lacy.* I will do my parts,

To set it off to the life.

*Enter Sir Maurice Lacy, and Plenty.*

*Sir John.* It may produce  
A scene of no vulgar mirth. Here come the  
suits ;

When we understand how they relish my  
wife's humours,

The rest is feasible.

*L. Lacy.* Their looks are cloudy.

*Sir John.* How sits the wind? are you  
ready to launch forth  
Into this sea of marriage?

*Plenty.* Call it rather,  
A whirlpool of afflictions.

*Sir Maur.* If you please  
To enjoin me to it, I will undertake  
To find the north passage to the Indies  
sooner,

Than plough with your proud heifer.

*Plenty.* I will make  
A voyage to hell first.—

*Sir John.* How, sir!

*Plenty.* And court Proserpine,  
In the sight of Pluto, his three-headed porter,  
Cerberus, standing by, and all the Furies  
With their whips to scourge me for't, than  
say, I Jeffrey

Take you, Mary, for my wife.

*L. Lacy.* Why, what's the matter?

*Sir Maur.* The matter is, the mother (with  
your pardon,  
I cannot but speak so much) is a most un-  
sufferable,

Proud, insolent lady.

*Plenty.* And the daughters worse.  
The dam in years had the advantage to be  
wicked,

But they were so in her belly.

*Sir Maur.* I must tell you,  
With reverence to your wealth, I do begin  
To think you of the same leaven.

*Plenty.* Take my counsel ;  
'Tis safer for your credit to profess  
Yourself a cuckold, and upon record,  
Than say they are your daughters.

*Sir John.* You go too far, sir.

*Sir Maur.* They have so articed with us!  
*Plenty.* And will not take us  
For their husbands, but their slaves ; and so  
aforehand

They do profess they'll use us.

*Sir John.* Leave this heat :  
Though they are mine, I must tell you, the  
perverseness

Of their manners (which they did not take  
from me,  
But from their mother) qualified, they de-  
serve

Your equals.

*Sir Maur.* True ; but what's bred in the  
bone,

Admits no hope of cure.

*Plenty.* Though saints and angels  
Were their physicians.

*Sir John.* You conclude too fast,

*Plenty.* God be wi' you ! I'll travel three  
years, but I'll bury  
This shame that lives upon me.

*Sir Maur.* With your license,  
I'll keep him company.

*L. Lacy.* Who shall furnish you  
For your expenses.

*Plenty.* He shall not need your help,  
My purse is his ; we were rivals, but now  
friends,

And will live and die so.

*Sir Maur.* Ere we go, I'll pay  
My duty as a son.

*Plenty.* And till then leave you.

[*Exeunt Sir Maurice, Lacy, and Plenty.*]

*L. Lacy.* They are strangely moved.

*Sir John.* What's wealth, accompanied  
With disobedience in a wife and children?  
My heart will break.

*L. Lacy.* Be comforted, and hope better :  
We'll ride abroad ; the fresh air and dis-  
course

May yield us new inventions.

*Sir John.* You are noble,  
And shall in all things, as you please, com-  
mand me. [*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—*A Room in Secret's House.*

*Enter Shave'em and Secret.*

*Secret.* Dead doings, daughter.

*Shave.* Doings ! sufferings, mother :  
[For poor] men have forgot what doing is ;  
And such as have to pay for what they do,  
Are impotent, or eunuchs.

*Secret.* You have a friend yet,  
And a striker too, I take it.

*Shave.* Goldwire is so, and comes  
To me by stealth, and, as he can steal,  
maintains me

In clothes, I grant ; but alas ! dame, what's  
one friend ?

I would have a hundred ;—for every hour,  
and use,

And change of humour I am in, a fresh one :  
'Tis a flock of sheep that makes a lean wolf  
fat,

And not a single lambkin. I am starv'd,  
Starv'd in my pleasures ; I know not what  
a coach is,

To hurry me to the Burse, or Old Exchange :



The neathouse for musk-melons, and the gardens,

Where we traffic for asparagus, are, to me, In the other world.

*Secret.* There are other places, lady, Where you might find customers.

*Shave.* You would have me foot it To the dancing of the ropes, sit a whole afternoon there

In expectation of nuts and pippins ; Gape round about me, and yet not find a chapman

That in courtesy will bid a chop of mutton, Or a pint of drum-wine for me.

*Secret.* You are so impatient ! But I can tell you news will comfort you, And the whole sisterhood.

*Shave.* What's that?

*Secret.* I am told

Two ambassadors are come over : a French monsieur,

And a Venetian, one of the clarissimi, A hot-rein'd marmoset. Their followers, For their countries' honour, after a long vacation,

Will make a full term with us.

*Shave.* They indeed are

Our certain and best customers :—*[knocking within.]*—Who knocks there ?

*Ramb.* *[within.]* Open the door.

*Secret.* What are you ?

*Ramb.* *[within.]* Ramble.

*Scuff.* *[within.]* Scuffle.

*Ramb.* *[within.]* Your constant visitants.

*Shave.* Let them not in ;

I know them, swaggering, suburban roarers, Sixpenny truckers.

*Ramb.* *[within.]* Down go all your windows,

And your neighbours' too shall suffer.

*Scuff.* *[within.]* Force the doors !

*Secret.* They are outlaws, mistress Shave'em, and there is No remedy against them. What should you fear ?

They are but men ; lying at your close ward, You have foil'd their betters.

*Shave.* Out, you bawd ! you care not Upon what desperate service you employ me, Nor with whom, so you have your fee.

*Secret.* Sweet lady-bird, Sing in a milder key.

*Exit, and re-enters with Ramble and Scuffle.*

*Scuff.* Are you grown proud ?

*Ramb.* I knew you a waistcoateer in the garden alleys, And would come to a sailor's whistle.

*Secret.* Good sir Ramble, Use her not roughly ; she is very tender.

*Ramb.* Rank and rotten, is she not ?

*[Shave'em draws her knife.]*

*Shave.* Your spittle rogueships

*[Ramble draws his sword.]*

Shall not make me so.

*Secret.* As you are a man, squire Scuffle, Step in between them : a weapon of that length,

Was never drawn in my house.

*Shave.* Let him come on.

I'll scour it in your guts, you dog !

*Ramb.* You brache !

Are you turn'd mankind ? you forgot I gave you,

When we last join'd issue, twenty pound—

*Shave.* O'er night,

And kick'd it out of me in the morning. I was then

A novice, but I know to make my game now.

Fetch the constable.

*Enter Goldwire junior, disguised like a Justice of Peace, Ding'em like a Constable, and Musicians like Watchmen.*

*Secret.* Ah me ! here's one unsent for, And a justice of peace, too.

*Shave.* I'll bang you both, you rascals !

I can but ride :—you for the purse you cut In Paul's at a sermon ; I have smook'd you, ha !

And you for the bacon you took on the highway,

From the poor market woman, as she rode From Rumford.

*Ramb.* Mistress Shave'em.

*Scuff.* Mistress Secret,

On our knees we beg your pardon.

*Ramb.* Set a ransome on us.

*Secret.* We cannot stand trifling : if you mean to save them,

Shut them out at the back-door.

*Shave.* First, for punishment,

They shall leave their cloaks behind them ; and in sign

I am their sovereign, and they my vassals, For homage kiss my shoe-sole, rogues, and vanish ! *[Exeunt Ramble and Scuffle.]*

*Gold.* My brave virago ! The coast's clear ; strike up.

*[Goldwire, and the rest discover themselves.]*

*Shave.* My Goldwire made a justice !

*Secret.* And your scout

Turn'd constable, and the musicians watchmen !

*Gold.* We come not to fright you, but to make you merry :

A light lavolta. [*They dance.*]

*Shave.* I am tired ; no more.

This was your device ?

*Ding.* Wholly his own ; he is

No pig-sconce, mistress.

*Secret.* He has an excellent headpiece.

*Gold.* Fie ! no, not I ; your jeering gallants say,

We citizens have no wit.

*Ding.* He dies that says so :

This was a masterpiece.

*Gold.* A trifling stratagem,

Not worth the talking of.

*Shave.* I must kiss thee for it, Again, and again. [*They kiss.*]

*Ding.* Make much of her. Did you know

What suitors she had since she saw you—

*Gold.* I' the way of marriage ?

*Ding.* Yes, sir ; for marriage, and the other thing too ;

The commodity is the same. An Irish lord offer'd her

Five pound a week.

*Secret.* And a cashier'd captain, half Of his entertainment.

*Ding.* And a new-made courtier, The next suit he could beg.

*Gold.* And did my sweet one

Refuse all this, for me ?

*Shave.* Weep not for joy ;

'Tis true. Let others talk of lords and commanders,

And country heirs for their servants ; but give me

My gallant prentice ! he parts with his money

So civilly and demurely, keeps no account

Of his expenses, and comes ever furnish'd. — I know thou hast brought money to make up

My gown and petticoat, with the appurtenances.

*Gold.* I have it here, duck ; thou shalt want for nothing.

*Shave.* Let the chamber be perfum'd ; and get you, sirrah, [*To Ding'em.*]

His cap and pantofles ready.

*Gold.* There's for thee,

And thee : that for a banquet.

*Secret.* And a caudle

Again you rise.

*Gold.* There. [*Gives them money.*]

*Shave.* Usher us up in state.

*Gold.* You will be constant ?

*Shave.* Thou art the whole world to me. [*Exeunt ; Gold. and Shave. embracing, music playing before them.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in Sir John Frugal's House.*

*Enter Luke.*

*Anne.* [*within.*] Where is this uncle ?

*L. Frug.* [*within.*] Call this beadsman-brother ;

He hath forgot attendance.

*Mary.* [*within.*] Seek him out ; Idleness spoils him.

*Luke.* I deserve much more Than their scorn can load me with, and 'tis but justice

That I should live the family's drudge, design'd

To all the sordid offices their pride Imposes on me ; since, if now I sat A judge in mine own cause, I should conclude I am not worth their pity. Such as want Discourse, and judgment, and through weakness fall,

May merit man's compassion ; but I, That knew profuseness of expense the parent Of wretched poverty, her fatal daughter, To riot out mine owu, to live upon The alms of others, steering on a rock I might have shunn'd ! O Heaven ! it is not fit

I should look upward, much less hope for mercy.

*Enter Lady Frugal, Anne, Mary, Stargaze, and Milliscent.*

*L. Frug.* What are you devising, sir ?

*Anne.* My uncle is much given

To his devotion.

*Mary.* And takes time to mumble A paternoster to himself.

*L. Frug.* Know you where Your brother is ? it better would become you (Your means of life depending wholly on him) To give your attendance.

*Luke.* In my will I do :

But since he rode forth yesterday with lord Lacy,

I have not seen him.

*L. Frug.* And why went not you By his stirrup ? How do you look ! were his eyes closed,

You'd be glad of such employment.

*Luke.* 'Twas his pleasure

I should wait your commands, and those I am ever

Most ready to receive.

*L. Frug.* I know you can speak well ; But say, and do.

*Enter Lord Lacy.*

*Luke.* Here comes my lord.

*L. Frug.* Further off:  
You are no companion for him, and his  
business

Aims not at you, as I take it.

*Luke.* Can I live  
In this base condition !

[*He stands aside.*]

*L. Frug.* I hope, my lord,  
You had brought master Frugal with you ;  
for I must ask

An account of him from you.

*L. Lacy.* I can give it, lady ;  
But with the best discretion of a woman,  
And a strong fortified patience, I desire you  
To give it hearing.

*Luke.* My heart beats.

*L. Frug.* My lord, you much amaze me.

*L. Lacy.* I shall astonish you. The noble  
merchant,

Who, living, was, for his integrity  
And upright dealing, (a rare miracle  
In a rich citizen,) London's best honour ;  
Is—I am loth to speak it.

*Luke.* Wonderous strange !

*L. Frug.* I do suppose the worst ; not  
dead, I hope ?

*L. Lacy.* Your supposition's true, your  
hopes are false ;

He's dead.

*L. Frug.* Ah me !

*Anne.* My father !

*Mary.* My kind father !

*Luke.* Now they insult not.

*L. Lacy.* Pray hear me out.

He's dead ; dead to the world and you, and,  
now,

Lives only to himself.

*Luke.* What riddle's this ?

*L. Frug.* Act not the torturer in my  
afflictions ;

But make me understand the sum of all  
That I must undergo.

*L. Lacy.* In few words take it :

He is retired into a monastery,  
Where he resolves to end his days.

*Luke.* More strange.

*L. Lacy.* I saw him take post for Dover,  
and the wind

Sitting so fair, by this he's safe at Calais,  
And ere long will be at Lovain.

*L. Frug.* Could I guess

What were the motives that induced him  
to it,

'Twere some allay to my sorrows.

*L. Lacy.* I'll instruct you,

And chide you into that knowledge ; 'twas  
your pride

Above your rank, and stubborn disobe-  
dience

Of these your daughters, in their milk suck'd  
from you :

At home the harshness of his entertainment,  
You wilfully forgetting that your all  
Was borrow'd from him ; and to hear  
abroad

The imputations dispers'd upon you,  
And justly too, I fear, that drew him to  
This strict retirement : and, thus much said  
for him,

I am myself to accuse you.

*L. Frug.* I confess

A guilty cause to him ; but, in a thought,  
My lord, I ne'er wrong'd you.

*L. Lacy.* In fact, you have.

The insolent disgrace you put upon  
My only son, and Plenty, men that loved  
Your daughters in a noble way, to wash off  
The scandal, put a resolution in them  
For three years travel.

*L. Frug.* I am much grieved for it.

*L. Lacy.* One thing I had forgot ; your  
rigour to

His decay'd brother, in which your flatteries,  
Or sorceries, made him a co-agent with you,  
Wrought not the least impression.

*Luke.* Hum ! this sounds well.

*L. Frug.* 'Tis now past help : after these  
storms, my lord,

A little calm, if you please.

*L. Lacy.* If what I have told you,  
Shew'd like a storm, what now I must del-  
iver,

Will prove a raging tempest. His whole  
estate,

In lands and leases, debts and present  
monies,

With all the movables he stood possess'd of,  
With the best advice which he could get for  
gold

From his learned counsel, by this formal  
will

Is pass'd o'er to his brother.—[*Giving the  
will to Luke, who comes forward.*—With  
it take

The key of his counting-house. Not a groat  
left you,

Which you can call your own.

*L. Frug.* Undone for ever !

*Anne. Mary.* What will become of us ?

*Luke.* Hum !

[*Aside.*]

*L. Lacy.* The scene is changed,  
And he that was your slave, by Fate ap-  
pointed

[*Lady Frugal, Mary, and Anne kneel.*]

Your governor : you kneel to me in vain,  
I cannot help you : I discharge the trust  
Imposed upon me. This humility,  
From him may gain remission, and, perhaps,

Forgetfulness of your barbarous usage to him.

*L. Frug.* Am I come to this ?

*L. Lacy.* Enjoy your own, good sir,  
But use it with due reverence. I once heard you

Speak most divinely in the opposition  
Of a revengeful humour ; to these shew it,  
And such who then depended on the mercy  
Of your brother, wholly now at your devotion,

And make good the opinion I held of you,  
Of which I am most confident.

*Luke.* Pray you rise, [*Raises them.*  
And rise with this assurance, I am still,  
As I was of late, your creature ; and if raised  
In anything, 'tis in my power to serve you,  
My will is still the same. O my good lord !  
This heap of wealth which you possess me of,  
Which to a worldlyman had been a blessing,  
And to the messenger might with justice  
challenge

A kind of adoration, is to me  
A curse I cannot thank you for ; and, much  
less,

Rejoice in that tranquillity of mind  
My brother's vows must purchase. I have  
made

A dear exchange with him : he now enjoys  
My peace and poverty, the trouble of  
His wealth conferr'd on me, and that a  
burthen

Too heavy for my weak shoulders.

*L. Lacy.* Honest soul,  
With what feeling he receives it !

*L. Frug.* You shall have  
My best assistance, if you please to use it,  
To help you to support it.

*Luke.* By no means ;  
The weight shall rather sink me, than you  
part

With one short minute from those lawful  
pleasures

Which you were born to, in your care to aid  
me :

You shall have all abundance. In my nature,  
I was ever liberal ; my lord, you know it ;  
Kind, affable.—And now methinks I see  
Before my face the jubilee of joy,  
When 'tis assured my brother lives in me,  
His debtors, in full cups, crown'd to my  
health,

With pæans to my praise will celebrate !  
For they well know 'tis far from me to take  
The forfeiture of a bond : nay, I shall blush,  
The interest never paid after three years,  
When I demand my principal : and his  
servants,

Who from a slavish fear paid their obedience,

By him exacted, now, when they are mine,  
Will grow familiar friends, and as such use  
me ;

Being certain of the mildness of my temper,  
Which my change of fortune, frequent in  
most men,

Hath not the power to alter.

*L. Lacy.* Yet take heed, sir,  
You ruin not, with too much lenity,  
What his fit severity raised.

*L. Frug.* And we fall from  
That height we have maintain'd.

*Luke.* I'll build it higher,  
To admiration higher. With disdain  
I look upon these habits, no way suiting  
The wife and daughters of a knighted citizen  
Bless'd with abundance.

*L. Lacy.* There, sir, I join with you ;  
A fit decorum must be kept, the court  
Distinguish'd from the city.

*Luke.* With your favour,  
I know what you would say ; but give me  
leave

In this to be your advocate. You are wide,  
Wide the whole region, in what I purpose.  
Since all the titles, honours, long descents,  
Borrow their gloss from wealth, the rich with  
reason

May challenge their prerogatives : and it  
shall be

My glory, nay a triumph, to revive,  
In the pomp that these shall shine, the memory  
Of the Roman matrons, who kept captive  
queens

To be their handmaids. And when you  
appear,

Like Juno, in full majesty, and my nieces,  
Like Iris, Hebe, or what deities else  
Old poets fancy, (your cramm'd wardrobes  
richer

Than various nature's,) and draw down the  
envy

Of our western world upon you ; only hold  
me

Your vigilant Hermes with aërial wings,  
(My caduceus, my strong zeal to serve you,)  
Prest to fetch in all rarities may delight you,  
And I am made immortal.

*L. Lacy.* A strange frenzy ! [*Aside.*  
*Luke.* Off with these rags, and then to  
bed ; there dream

Of future greatness, which, when you awake,  
I'll make a certain truth : but I must be  
A doer, not a promiser. The performance  
Requiring haste, I kiss your hands, and  
leave you. [*Exit.*

*L. Lacy.* Are we all turn'd statues ? have  
his strange words charm'd us ?  
What muse you on, lady ?

*L. Frug.* Do not trouble me.

*L. Lacy.* Sleep you too, young ones?

*Anne.* Swift-wing'd time till now

Was never tedious to me. Would 'twere night!

*Mary.* Nay, morning rather.

*L. Lacy.* Can you ground your faith  
On such impossibilities? have you so soon  
Forgot your good husband?

*L. Frug.* He was a vanity

I must no more remember.

*L. Lacy.* Excellent!

You, your kind father?

*Anne.* Such an uncle never

Was read of in story!

*L. Lacy.* Not one word in answer

Of my demands?

*Mary.* You are but a lord; and know,  
My thoughts soar higher.

*L. Lacy.* Admirable! I'll leave you

To your castles in the air.—When I relate  
this,

It will exceed belief; but he must know it.

[*Aside, and exit.*]

*Star.* Now I may boldly speak. May it  
please you, madam,

To look upon your vassal; I foresaw this,  
The stars assured it.

*L. Frug.* I begin to feel  
Myself another woman.

*Star.* Now you shall find  
All my predictions true, and nobler matches  
Prepared for my young ladies.

*Mill.* Princely husbands.

*Anne.* I'll go no less.

*Mary.* Not a word more;

Provide my night-rail.

*Mill.* What shall we be to-morrow!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Luke.*

*Luke.* 'Twas no fantastic object, but a  
truth,

A real truth; nor dream: I did not slumber,  
And could wake ever with a brooding eye  
To gaze upon't! it did endure the touch;  
I saw and felt it! Yet what I beheld

And handled oft, did so transcend belief,  
(My wonder and astonishment pass'd o'er,  
I faintly could give credit to my senses.  
Thou dumb magician,—[*Taking out a key.*]

—that without a charm

Didst make my entrance easy, to possess  
What wise men wish, and toil for! Hermes'  
moly,

Sibylla's golden bough, the great elixir,  
Imagined only by the alchemist,

Compared with thee are shadows,—thou  
the substance,

And guardian of felicity! No marvel,  
My brother made thy place of rest his bosom,  
Thou being the keeper of his heart, a  
mistress

To be hugg'd ever! In by-corners of  
This sacred room, silver in bags, heap'd up  
Like billets saw'd and ready for the fire,  
Unworthy to hold fellowship with bright  
gold

That flow'd about the room, conceal'd itself.  
There needs no artificial light; the splen-  
dour

Makes a perpetual day there, night and  
darkness

By that still-burning lamp for ever banish'd!  
But when, guided by that, my eyes had made  
Discovery of the caskets, and they open'd,  
Each sparkling diamond, from itself, shot  
forth

A pyramid of flames, and, in the roof,  
Fix'd it a glorious star, and made the place  
Heaven's abstract, or epitome!—rubies,  
sapphires,

And ropes of orient pearl, these seen, I  
could not

But look on with contempt. And yet I  
found,

What weak credulity could have no faith in,  
A treasure far exceeding these: here lay  
A manor bound fast in a skin of parchment,  
The wax continuing hard, the acres melting;

Here a sure deed of gift for a market-town,  
If not redeem'd this day, which is not in  
The unthrift's power: there being scarce one  
shire

In Wales or England, where my monies are  
not

Lent out at usury, the certain hook  
To draw in more. I am sublimed! gross  
earth

Supports me not; I walk on air!—Who's  
there?

*Enter Lord Lacy, with Sir John Frugal,  
Sir Maurice Lacy, and Plenty, painted  
and disguised as Indians.*

Thieves! raise the street! thieves!

*L. Lacy.* What strange passion's this!  
Have you your eyes? do you know me?

*Luke.* You, my lord,  
I do: but this retinue, in these shapes too,  
May well excuse my fears. When 'tis your  
pleasure

That I should wait upon you, give me leave  
To do it at your own house, for I must tell  
you,

Things as they now are with me well consider'd,  
I do not like such visitants.

*L. Lacy.* Yesterday,  
When you had nothing, praise your poverty for't,

You could have sung secure before a thief ;  
But now you are grown rich, doubts and suspicions,

And needless fears, possess you. Thank a good brother ;

But let not this exalt you.

*Luke.* A good brother !  
Good in his conscience, I confess, and wise,  
In giving o'er the world. But his estate,  
Which your lordship may conceive great, no way answers

The general opinion : alas !

With a great charge, I am left a poor man by him.

*L. Lacy.* A poor man, say you ?  
*Luke.* Poor, compared with what

'Tis thought I do possess. Some little land,  
Fair household furniture, a few good debts,  
But empty bags, I find : yet I will be  
A faithful steward to his wife and daughters ;  
And, to the utmost of my power, obey  
His will in all things.

*L. Lacy.* I'll not argue with you  
Of his estate, but bind you to performance  
Of his last request, which is, for testimony  
Of his religious charity, that you would  
Receive these Indians, lately sent him from  
Virginia, into your house ; and labour,  
At any rate, with the best of your endeavours,

Assisted by the aids of our divines,  
To make them Christians.

*Luke.* Call you this, my lord,  
Religious charity ; to send infidels,  
Like hungry locusts, to devour the bread  
Should feed his family ? I neither can,  
Nor will consent to't.

*L. Lacy.* Do not slight it ; 'tis  
With him a business of such consequence,  
That should he only hear 'tis not embraced,  
And cheerfully, in this his conscience aiming  
At the saving of three souls, 'twill draw him  
o'er

To see it himself accomplish'd.

*Luke.* Heaven forbid  
I should divert him from his holy purpose,  
To worldly cares again ! I rather will  
Sustain the burthen, and, with the converted,  
Feast the converters, who, I know, will prove  
The greater feeders.

*Sir John.* Oh, ha, enewah Chrish bully  
*leika.*

*Plenty.* *Enaula.*

*Sir Maur.* *Harrico botikia bonnerv.*

*Luke.* Ha ! in this heathen language,  
How is it possible our doctors should  
Hold conference with them, or I use the  
means

For their conversion ?

*L. Lacy.* That shall be no hindrance  
To your good purposes : they have lived  
long

In the English colony, and speak our  
language

As their own dialect ; the business does  
concern you :

Mine own designs command me hence. Con-  
tinne,

As in your poverty you were, a pious  
And honest man. [Exit.

*Luke.* That is, interpreted,  
A slave and beggar.

*Sir John.* You conceive it right ;  
There being no religion, nor virtue,  
But in abundance, and no vice but want.  
All deities serve Plutus.

*Luke.* Oracle !

*Sir John.* Temples raised to ourselves in  
the increase

Of wealth and reputation, speak a wise  
man ;

But sacrifice to an imagined Power,  
Of which we have no sense but in belief,  
A superstitious fool.

*Luke.* True worldly wisdom !

*Sir John.* All knowledge else is folly.

*Sir Maur.* Now we are yours,  
Be confident your better angel is  
Enter'd your house.

*Plenty.* There being nothing in  
The compass of your wishes, but shall end  
In their fruition to the full.

*Sir John.* As yet,  
You do not know us ; but when you under-  
stand

The wonders we can do, and what the ends  
were

That brought us hither, you will entertain us  
With more respect.

*Luke.* There's something whispers to me  
These are no common men. [Aside.]—My  
house is yours,

Enjoy it freely : only grant me this,  
Not to be seen abroad till I have heard  
More of your sacred principles. Pray enter :  
You are learned Europeans, and we worse  
Than ignorant Americans.

*Sir John.* You shall find it. [Exeunt.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Frugal's House.**Enter Ding'em, Gettall, and Holdfast.*

*Ding.* Not speak with him! with fear  
 survey me better,  
 Thou figure of famine!

*Gett.* Coming, as we do,  
 From his quondam patrons, his dear ingles  
 now,

The brave spark Tradewell—

*Ding.* And the man of men  
 In the service of a woman, gallant Goldwire!

*Enter Luke.*

*Hold.* I know them for his prentices,  
 without

These flourishes.—Here are rude fellows, sir.

*Ding.* Not yours, you rascal!

*Hold.* No, don't pimp; you may seek them  
 In Bridewell, or the hole; here are none of  
 your comrogues.

*Luke.* One of them locks as he would cut  
 my throat:

Your business, friends?

*Hold.* I'll fetch a constable;

Let him answer him in the stocks.

*Ding.* Stir, an thou dar'st:  
 Fight me with Bridewell and the stocks!  
 they are fleabittings

I am familiar with.

*[Draws.]*

*Luke.* Pray you put up:  
 And, sirrah, hold your peace.

*[To Holdfast.]*

*Ding.* Thy word's a law,  
 And I obey. Live, scrape-shoe, and be  
 thankful.

Thou man of muck and money, for as such  
 I now salute thee, the suburban gamesters  
 Have heard thy fortunes, and I am, in person,  
 Sent to congratulate.

*Gett.* The news hath reach'd  
 The ordinaries, and all the gamesters are  
 Ambitious to shake the golden golls  
 Of worshipful master Luke. I come from  
 Tradewell,

Your fine facetious factor.

*Ding.* I from Goldwire:  
 He and his Helen have prepared a banquet,  
 With the appurtenances, to entertain thee;  
 For, I must whisper in thine ear, thou art  
 To be her Paris: but bring money with  
 thee,

To quit old scores.

*Gett.* Blind chance hath frown'd upon  
 Brave Tradewell: he's blown up, but not  
 without

Hope of recovery, so you supply him

With a good round sum. In my house, I can  
 assure you,

There's half a million stirring.

*Luke.* What hath he lost?

*Gett.* Three hundred.

*Luke.* A trifle.

*Gett.* Make it up a thousand,  
 And I will fit him with such tools as shall  
 Bring in a myriad.

*Luke.* They know me well,  
 Nor need you use such circumstances for  
 them:

What's mine, is theirs. They are my friends,  
 not servants,

But in their care to enrich me; and these  
 courses,

The speeding means. Your name, I pray  
 you?

*Gett.* Gettall.

I have been many years an ordinary-keeper,  
 My box my poor revenue.

*Luke.* Your name suits well  
 With your profession. Bid him bear up; he  
 shall not

Sit long on Penniless-Bench.

*Gett.* There spake an angel!

*Luke.* You know mistress Shave'em?

*Gett.* The pontifical punk?

*Luke.* The same. Let him meet me there  
 some two hours hence:

And tell Tom Goldwire I will then be with  
 him,

Furnish'd beyond his hopes; and let your  
 mistress

Appear in her best trim.

*Ding.* She will make thee young,  
 Old Æson: she is ever furnish'd with  
 Medea's drugs, restoratives. I fly  
 To keep them sober till thy worship come;  
 They will be drunk with joy else.

*Gett.* I'll run with you.

*[Exeunt Ding'em and Gettall.]*

*Hold.* You will not do as you say, I hope?

*Luke.* Enquire not;

I shall do what becomes me.—*[Knocking  
 within.]*—To the door.

*[Exit Holdfast.]*

New visitants!

*Re-enter Holdfast.*

What are they?

*Hold.* A whole batch, sir,  
 Almost of the same leaven: your needy  
 debtors,

Penury, Fortune, Hoyst.

*Luke.* They come to gratulate

The fortune fallen upon me.

*Hold.* Rather, sir,  
 Like the others, to prey on you.

*Luke.* I am simple ; they  
Know my good nature : but let them in,  
however.

*Hold.* All will come to ruin ! I see beg-  
gary  
Already knocking at the door.—You may  
enter— [*Speaking to those without.*]  
But use a conscience, and do not work upon  
A tender-hearted gentleman too much ;  
'Twill shew like charity in you.

*Enter* Fortune, Penury, and Hoyst.

*Luke.* Welcome, friends :  
I know your hearts and wishes ; you are  
glad  
You have changed your creditor.

*Pen.* I weep for joy,  
To look upon his worship's face.

*For.* His worship's !  
I see lord mayor written on his forehead ;  
The cap of maintenance, and city sword,  
Borne up in state before him.

*Hoyst.* Hospitals,  
And a third Burse, erected by his honour.

*Pen.* The city poet on the pageant day  
Preferring him before Gresham.

*Hoyst.* All the conduits  
Spouting canary sack.

*For.* Not a prisoner left,  
Under ten pounds.

*Pen.* We, his poor beadsmen, feasting  
Our neighbours on his bounty.

*Luke.* May I make good  
Your prophecies, gentle friends, as I'll en-  
deavour,

To the utmost of my power !

*Hold.* Yes, for one year,  
And break the next.

*Luke.* You are ever prating, sirrah.  
Your present business, friends ?

*For.* Were your brother present,  
Mine had been of some consequence ; but  
now

The power lies in your worship's hand, 'tis  
little,  
And will, I know, as soon as ask'd, be  
granted.

*Luke.* 'Tis very probable.

*For.* The kind forbearance  
Of my great debt, by your means, Heaven  
be prais'd for't !

Hath raised my sunk estate. I have two  
ships,  
Which I long since gave for lost, above my  
hopes

Return'd from Barbary, and richly freighted.

*Luke.* Where are they ?

*For.* Near Gravesend.

*Luke.* I am truly glad of it.

*For.* I find your worship's charity, and  
dare swear so.

Now after I have your license, as I know  
With willingness I shall, to make the best  
Of the commodities, though you have exe-  
cution,

And after judgment, against all that's  
mine,

As my poor body, I shall be enabled  
To make payment of my debts to all the  
world,  
And leave myself a competence.

*Luke.* You much wrong me,  
If you only doubt it. Yours, master Hoyst ?

*Hoyst.* 'Tis the surrendering back the  
mortgage of

My lands, and on good terms, but three  
days' patience ;

By an uncle's death I have means left to  
redeem it,  
And cancel all the forfeited bonds I seal'd  
to,

In my riots, to the merchant ; for I am  
Resolv'd to leave off play, and turn good  
husband.

*Luke.* A good intent, and to be cherish'd  
in you.

Yours, Penury ?

*Pen.* My state stands as it did, sir ;  
What I owed I owe, but can pay nothing to  
you.

Yet, if you please to trust me with ten pounds  
more,

I can buy a commodity of a sailor,  
Will make me a freeman. There, sir, is his  
name ;

And the parcels I am to deal for.

[*Gives him a paper.*]

*Luke.* You are all so reasonable  
In your demands, that I must freely grant  
them.

Some three hours hence meet me on the  
exchange,

You shall be amply satisfied.

*Pen.* Heaven preserve you !

*For.* Happy were London, if, within her  
walls,

She had many such rich men !

*Luke.* No more ; now leave me :

I am full of various thoughts.—[*Exeunt*  
Fortune, Hoyst, and Penury.]—Be  
careful, Holdfast ;

I have much to do.

*Hold.* And I something to say,  
Would you give me hearing.

*Luke.* At my better leisure.

Till my return look well unto the Indians ;  
In the mean time, do you as this directs you.

[*Gives him a paper. Exeunt.*]



SCENE II.—*A Room in Shave'em's House.*

*Enter Goldwire junior, Tradewell junior, Shave'em, Secret, Gettall, and Ding'em.*

*Gold.* All that is mine is theirs. Those were his words?

*Ding.* I am authentic.

*Trade.* And that I should not sit long on Penniless-Bench?

*Gett.* But suddenly start up A gamester at the height, and cry *At all!*

*Shave.* And did he seem to have an inclination

To toy with me?

*Ding.* He wish'd you would put on Your best habiliments, for he resolv'd To make a jovial day on't.

*Gold.* Hug him close, wench, And thou mayst eat gold and amber. I well know him

For a most insatiate drabber; he hath given, Before he spent his own estate, which was Nothing to the huge mass he's now possess'd of,

A hundred pound a leap.

*Shave.* Hell take my doctor! He should have brought me some fresh oil of talc;

These ceruses are common.

*Secret.* 'Troth, sweet lady, The colours are well laid on.

*Gold.* And thick enough: I find that on my lips.

*Shave.* Do you so, Jack Sauce! I'll keep them further off.

*Gold.* But be assured first Of a new maintainer, ere you cashier the old one.

But bind him fast by thy sorceries, and thou shalt

Be my revenue; the whole college study The reparation of thy ruin'd face; Thou shalt have thy proper and bald-headed coachman;

Thy tailor and embroiderer shall kneel To thee, their idol: Cheapside and the Exchange

Shall court thy custom, and thou shalt forget There e'er was a St. Martin's: thy procurer Shall be sheath'd in velvet, and a reverend veil

Pass her for a grave matron. Have an eye to the door,

And let loud music, when this monarch enters, Proclaim his entertainment.

*Ding.* That's my office.

[*Flourish of cornets within.*]

The consort's ready.

*Enter Luke.*

*Trade.* And the god of pleasure, Master Luke, our Comus, enters.

*Gold.* Set your face in order, I will prepare him.—Live I to see this day, And to acknowledge you my royal master?

*Trade.* Let the iron chests fly open, and the gold,

Rusty for want of use, appear again!

*Gett.* Make my ordinary flourish!

*Shave.* Welcome, sir,

To your own palace! [*The music plays.*]

*Gold.* Kiss your Cleopatra, And shew yourself, in your magnificent bounties,

A second Antony!

*Ding.* All the nine worthies!

*Secret.* Variety of pleasures wait upon you, And a strong back!

*Luke.* Give me leave to breathe, I pray you.

I am astonish'd! all this preparation For me? and this choice modest beauty wrought

To feed my appetite?

*All.* We are all your creatures.

*Luke.* A house well furnish'd!

*Gold.* At your own cost, sir,

Glad I the instrument. I prophesied You should possess what now you do, and therefore

Prepared it for your pleasure. There's no rag

This Venus wears, but, on my knowledge, was Derived from your brother's cash: the lease of the house,

And furniture, cost near a thousand, sir.

*Shave.* But now you are master both of it and me,

I hope you'll build elsewhere.

*Luke.* And see you placed, Fair one, to your desert. As I live, friend Tradewell,

I hardly knew you, your clothes so well become you.

What is your loss? speak truth.

*Trade.* Three hundred, sir.

*Gett.* But, on a new supply, he shall recover

The sum told twenty times o'er.

*Shave.* There's a banquet,

And after that a soft couch, that attends you. *Luke,* I couple not in the daylight. Expectation

Heightens the pleasure of the night, my sweet one!

Your music's harsh, discharge it; I have provided

A better consort, and you shall frolic it  
In another place. [*The music ceases.*]

Gold. *But have you brought gold, and  
store, sir?*

Trade. I long to *Ware the caster!*

Gold. I to appear  
In a fresh habit.

Shave. My mercer and my silkman  
Waited me, two hours since.

Luke. I am no porter,  
To carry so much gold as will supply  
Your vast desires, but I have ta'en order for  
you;

*Enter Sheriff, Marshal, and Officers.*

You shall have what is fitting, and they  
come here

Will see it perform'd.—Do your offices: you  
have

My lord chief-justice's warrant for't.

Sher. Seize them all,

Shave. The city marshal!

Gold. And the sheriff! I know him.

Secret. We are betray'd.

Ding. Undone.

Gett. Dear master Luke.

Gold. You cannot be so cruel; your per-  
suasion

Chid us into these courses, oft repeating,  
*Shew yourselves city-sparks, and hang up  
money!*

Luke. True; when it was my brother's, I  
contemn'd it;

But now it is mine own, the case is alter'd.

Trade. Will you prove yourself a devil?  
tempt us to mischief,

And then discover it?

Luke. Argue that hereafter:

In the mean time, master Goldwire, you  
that made

Your ten-pound suppers; kept your punks  
at livery

In Brentford, Staines, and Barnet, and this,  
in London;

Held correspondence with your fellow-  
cashiers,

*Ka me, ka thee!* and knew, in your ac-  
compts,

To cheat my brother; if you can, evade me.  
If there be law in London, your father's  
bonds

Shall answer for what you are out.

Gold. You often told us

It was a bugbear.

Luke. Such a one as shall fright them  
Out of their estates, to make me satisfaction  
To the utmost scruple. And for you, madam,  
My Cleopatra, by your own confession,

Your house, and all your moveables, are  
mine;

Nor shall you nor your matron need to  
trouble

Your mercer, or your silkman; a blue gown,  
And a whip to boot, as I will handle it,

Will serve the turn in Bridewell; and these  
soft hands,

When they are inured to beating hemp, be  
scour'd

In your penitent tears, and quite forget their  
powders

And bitter almonds.

Shave. *Secret. Ding.* Will you show no  
mercy?

Luke. I am inexorable.

Gett. I'll make bold

To take my leave; the gamesters stay my  
coming.

Luke. We must not part so, gentle master  
Gettall.

Your box, your certain income, must pay  
back

Three hundred, as I take it, or you lie by it.  
There's *half a million stirring in your*

*house,*

This a poor trifle.—Master shrieve and  
master marshal,

On your perils, do your offices.

Gold. Dost thou cry now

[*To Tradewell.*]

Like a maudlin gamester after loss? I'll suffer  
Like a Roman, and now, in my misery,

In scorn of all thy wealth, to thy teeth tell  
thee

Thou wert my pander.

Luke. Shall I hear this from

My prentice?

Mar. Stop his mouth.

Sher. Away with them.

[*Exeunt Sheriff, Marshal, and Officers,  
with Gold. Trade. Shave. Secret. Gett.  
and Ding.*]

Luke. A prosperous omen in my entrance  
to

My alter'd nature! these house thieves re-  
moved,

And what was lost, beyond my hopes, re-  
cover'd,

Will add unto my heap; increase of wealth  
Is the rich man's ambition, and mine

Shall know no bounds. The valiant Macedon  
Having in his conceit subdued one world,

Lamented that there were no more to con-  
quer:

In my way, he shall be my great example.

And when my private house, in cramm'd  
abundance,

Shall prove the chamber of the city poor,

And Genoa's bankers shall look pale with  
envy

When I am mentioned, I shall grieve there is  
No more to be exhausted in one kingdom.  
Religion, conscience, charity, farewell !  
To me you are words only, and no more ;  
All human happiness consists in store.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*A Street.*

*Enter Serjeants with Fortune, Hoyst, and  
Penury.*

*For.* At master Luke's suit ! the action  
twenty thousand !

*1 Serj.* With two or three executions,  
which shall grind you

To powder, when we have you in the counter.

*For.* Thou dost belie him, varlet ! he,  
good gentleman,

Will weep when he hears how we are used.

*1 Serj.* Yes, millstones.

*Pen.* He promised to lend me ten pound  
for a bargain,

He will not do it this way.

*2 Serj.* I have warrant

For what I have done. You are a poor fellow,

And there being little to be got by you,

In charity, as I am an officer,

I would not have seen you, but upon com-  
pulsion,

And for mine own security.

*3 Serj.* You are a gallant,

And I'll do you a courtesy, provided

That you have money : for a piece an hour,  
I'll keep you in the house till you send for  
bail.

*2 Serj.* In the mean time, yeoman, run  
to the other counter,

And search if there be aught else out against  
him.

*3 Serj.* That done, baste to his creditors :  
he's a prize,

And as we are city pirates by our oaths,

We must make the best on't.

*Hoyst.* Do your worst, I care not.

I'll be removed to the Fleet, and drink and  
drab there

In spite of your teeth. I now repent I ever  
Intended to be honest.

*Enter Luke.*

*3 Serj.* Here he comes

You had best tell so.

*For.* Worshipful sir,

You come in time to free us from these ban-  
dogs.

I know you gave no way to't.

*Pen.* Or if you did,

'Twas but to try our patience.

*Hoyst.* I must tell you  
I do not like such trials.

*Luke.* Are you serjeants,  
Acquainted with the danger of a rescue,  
Yet stand here prating in the street ? the  
counter

Is a safer place to parley in.

*For.* Are you in earnest ?

*Luke.* Yes, faith ; I will be satisfied to a  
token,

Or, build upon't, you rot there.

*For.* Can a gentleman

Of your soft and silken temper, speak such  
language ?

*Pen.* So honest, so religious ?

*Hoyst.* That preach'd

So much of charity for us to your brother ?

*Luke.* Yes, when I was in poverty it  
shew'd well ;

But I inherit with his state, his mind,

And rougher nature. I grant then, I talk'd,

For some ends to myself conceal'd, of pity,

The poor man's orisons, and such like no-  
things :

But what I thought you all shall feel, and  
with rigour ;

*Kind master Luke* says it. Who pays for  
your attendance ?

Do you wait gratis ?

*For.* Hear us speak.

*Luke.* While I,

Like the adder, stop mine ears : or did I  
listen,

Though you spake with the tongues of  
angels to me,

I am not to be alter'd.

*For.* Let me make the best

Of my ships, and their freight.

*Pen.* Lend me the ten pounds you pro-  
mised.

*Hoyst.* A day or two's patience to redeem  
my mortgage,

And you shall be satisfied.

*For.* To the utmost farthing.

*Luke.* I'll shew some mercy ; which is,  
that I will not

Torture you with false hopes, but make you  
know

What you shall trust to.—Your ships to my  
use

Are seized on.—I have got into my bands

Your bargain from the sailor, 'twas a good one

For such a petty sum.—I will likewise take

The extremity of your mortgage, and the  
forfeit

Of your several bonds ; the use and principal

Shall not serve.—Think of the basket,  
wretches,

And a coal-sack for a winding-sheet,

*For.* Broker !

*Hoyst.* Jew !

*For.* Imposter !

*Hoyst.* Cut-throat !

*For.* Hypocrite !

*Luke.* Do, rail on ;

Move mountains with your breath, it shakes not me.

*Pen.* On my knees I beg compassion. My wife and children

Shall hourly pray for your worship.

*For.* Mine betake thee

To the devil, thy tutor.

*Pen.* Look upon my tears.

*Hoyst.* My rage.

*For.* My wrongs.

*Luke.* They are all alike to me ;

Entreaties, curses, prayers, or imprecations. Do your duties, serjeants ; I am elsewhere look'd for. [Exit.]

3 *Serj.* This your kind creditor !

2 *Serj.* A vast villain, rather.

*Pen.* See, see, the serjeants pity us ! yet he's marble.

*Hoyst.* Buried alive !

*For.* There's no means to avoid it.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—*A Room in Sir John Frugal's House.*

*Enter Holdfast, Stargaze, and Milliscent.*

*Star.* Not wait upon my lady ?

*Hold.* Nor come at her ;

You find it not in your almanack.

*Mill.* Nor I have license

To bring her breakfast ?

*Hold.* My new master hath

Decreed this for a fasting-day. She hath feasted long,

And, after a carnival, Lent ever follows.

*Mill.* Give me the key of her wardrobe.

You'll repent this ;

I must know what gown she'll wear.

*Hold.* You are mistaken,

Dame president of the sweetmeats ; she and her daughters

Are turn'd philosophers, and must carry all

Their wealth about them ; they have clothes laid in their chamber,

If they please to put them on, and without help too,

Or they may walk naked. You look, master Stargaze,

As you had seen a strange comet, and had now foretold,

The end of the world, and on what day : and you,

As the wasps had broke into the gallipots, And eaten up your apricots.

*L. Frug.* [within.] Stargaze ! Milliscent !

*Mill.* My lady's voice.

*Hold.* Stir not, you are confined here.

Your ladyship may approach them, if you please ;

But they are bound in this circle. [Aloud.]

*L. Frug.* [within.] Mine own bees Rebel against me ! When my kind brother knows this,

I will be so revenged !

*Hold.* The world's well alter'd.

He's your kind brother now ; but yesterday Your slave and jesting-stock.

*Enter Lady Frugal, Anne, and Mary, in coarse habits, weeping.*

*Mill.* What witch hath transform'd you ?

*Star.* Is this the glorious shape your cheating brother

Promised you should appear in ?

*Mill.* My young ladies

In buffin gowns, and green aprons ! tear them off ;

Rather shew all than be seen thus.

*Hold.* 'Tis more comely,

I wis, than their other whim-whams.

*Mill.* A French hood too,

Now, tis out of fashion ! a fool's cap would show better.

*L. Frug.* We are fool'd indeed ! by whose command are we used thus ?

*Enter Luke.*

*Hold.* Here he comes can best resolve you.

*L. Frug.* O, good brother !

Do you thus preserve your protestation to me ?

Can queens envy this habit ? or did Juno E'er feast in such a shape ?

*Anne.* You talk'd of Hebe,

Of Iris, and I know not what ; but were they

Dress'd as we are ? they were sure some chandler's daughters

Bleaching linen in Moorfields.

*Mary.* Or Exchange wenches,

Coming from eating pudding-pies on a Sunday,

At Pimlico, or Islington.

*Luke.* Save you, sister !

I now dare style you so : you were before Too glorious to be look'd on, now you appear

Like a city matron ; and my pretty nieces Such things as were born and bred there.

Why should you ape

The fashions of court-ladies, whose high titles,

And pedigrees of long descent, give warrant

For their superfluous bravery? 'twas monstrous :

Till now you ne'er look'd lovely.

*L. Frug.* Is this spoken

In scorn !

*Luke.* Fie ? no ; with judgment. I make good

My promise, and now shew you like yourselves,

In your own natrual shapes ; and stand resolved

You shall continue so.

*L. Frug.* It is confess'd, sir.

*Luke.* Sir ! sirrah : use your old phrase, I can bear it.

*L. Frug.* That, if you please, forgotten, we acknowledge

We have deserv'd ill from you ; yet despair not,

Though we are at your disposure, you'll maintain us

Like your brother's wife and daughters.

*Luke.* 'Tis my purpose.

*L. Frug.* And not make us ridiculous.

*Luke.* Admired rather,

As fair examples for our proud city dames, And their proud brood to imitate. Do not frown ;

If you do, I laugh, and glory that I have The power, in you, to scourge a general vice, And raise up a new satirist : but hear gently, And in a gentle phrase I'll reprehend Your late disguised deformity, and cry up This decency and neatness, with the advantage

You shall receive by't.

*L. Frug.* We are bound to hear you.

*Luke.* With a soul inclined to learn. Your father was

An honest country farmer, goodman Humble,

By his neighbours ne'er call'd Master. Did you pride

Descend from him ? but let that pass : your fortune,

Or rather your husband's industry, advanced you

To the rank of a merchant's wife. He made a knight,

And your sweet mistress-ship ladyfied, you wore

Satin on solemn days, a chain of gold, A velvet hood, rich borders, and sometimes

A dainty miniver cap, a silver pin, Headed with a pearl worth three-pence, and thus far

You were privileged, and no man envied it ; It being for the city's honour that

There should be a distinction between

The wife of a patrician, and plebeian.

*Mill.* Pray you, leave preaching, or choose some other text ;

Your rhetoric is too moving, for it makes Your auditory weep.

*Luke.* Peace, chattering magpie !

I'll treat of you anon :—but when the height And dignity of London's blessings grew Contemptible, and the name lady-mayoress Became a by-word, and you scorn'd the means

By which you were raised, my brother's fond indulgence,

Giving the reins to it ; and no object pleased you

But the glittering pomp and bravery of the court ;

What a strange, nay monstrous, metamorphosis follow'd !

No English workman then could please your fancy,

The French and Tuscan dress your whole discourse ;

This bawd to prodigality, entertain'd

To buzz into your ears what shape this countess

Appear'd in the last masque, and how it drew The young lord's eyes upon her ; and this usher

Succeeded in the eldest prentice' place, To walk before you—

*L. Frug.* Pray you, end.

*Hold.* Proceed, sir ;

I could fast almost a prenticeship to hear you,

You touch them so to the quick.

*Luke.* Then, as I said,

The reverend hood cast off, your borrow'd hair,

Powder'd and curl'd, was by your dresser's art

Form'd like a coronet, hang'd with diamonds,

And the richest orient pearl ; your carcanets That did adorn your neck, of equal value :

Your Hungerland bands, and Spanish quellio ruffs ;

Great lords and ladies feasted to survey Embroider'd petticoats ; and sickness feign'd,

That your night rails of forty pounds a piece Might be seen, with envy, of the visitants ;

Rich pantofles in ostentation shewn, And roses worth a family : you were served in plate,

Stirr'd not a foot without your coach, and going

To church, not for devotion, but to shew Your pomp, you were tickled when the

beggars cried,

Heaven save your honour ! this idolatry  
Paid to a painted room.

*Hold.* Nay, you have reason  
To blubber, all of you.

*Luke.* And when you lay  
In childbed, at the christening of this minx,  
I well remember it, as you had been  
An absolute princess, since they have no  
more,

Three several chambers hung, the first with  
arras,

And that for waiters ; the second crimson  
satin,

For the meaner sort of guests ; the third of  
scarlet

Of the rich Tyrian die ; a canopy  
To cover the brat's cradle ; you in state,  
Like Pompey's Julia.

*L. Frug.* No more, I pray you.

*Luke.* Of this, be sure, you shall not. I'll  
cut off

Whatever is exorbitant in you,  
Or in [your] daughters, and reduce you to  
Your natural forms and habits ; not in re-  
venge

Of your base usage of me, but to fright  
Others by your example : 'tis decreed  
You shall serve one another, for I will  
Allow no waiter to you. Out of doors  
With these useless drones !

*Hold.* Will you pack ?

*Mill.* Not till I have

My trunks along with me.

*Luke.* Not a rag ; you came

Hither without a box.

*Star.* You'll shew to me,

I hope, sir, more compassion.

*Hold.* Troth I'll be

Thus far a suitor for him : he hath printed  
An almanack, for this year, at his own  
charge ;

Let him have the impression with him, to  
set up with.

*Luke.* For once I'll be entreated ; let it be  
Thrown to him out of the window.

*Star.* O cursed stars

That reign'd at my nativity ! how have you  
cheated

Your poor observer !

*Anne.* Must we part in tears ?

*Mary.* Farewell, good Milliscent !

*L. Frug.* I am sick, and meet with  
A rough physician. O my pride and scorn !  
How justly am I punish'd !

*Mary.* Now we suffer  
For our stubbornness and disobedience  
To our good father.

*Anne.* And the base conditions  
We imposed upon our suitors.

*Luke.* Get you in,  
And caterwaul in a corner.

*L. Frug.* There's no contending.

[Lady Frugal, Anne, and Mary, go  
off at one door, Stargaze and  
Milliscent at the other.]

*Luke.* How

Lik'st thou my carriage, Holdfast ?

*Hold.* Well in some parts ;  
But it relishes, I know not how, a little  
Of too much tyranny.

*Luke.* Thou art a fool :  
He's cruel to himself, that dares not be  
Severe to those that used him cruelly.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Sir John Frugal's  
House.*

*Enter Luke, Sir John Frugal, Sir Maurice  
Lacy, and Plenty.*

*Luke.* You care not then, as it seems, to  
be converted  
To our religion ?

*Sir John.* We know no such word,  
Nor power but the devil, and him we serve  
for fear,  
Not love.

*Luke.* I am glad that charge is saved.

*Sir John.* We put

That trick upon your brother, to have means  
To come to the city. Now, to you, we'll  
discover

The close design that brought us, with  
assurance,

If you lend your aids to furnish us with that  
Which in the colony was not to be pur-  
chased,

No merchant ever made such a return  
For his most precious venture, as you shall  
Receive from us ; far, far above your hopes,  
Or fancy, to imagine.

*Luke.* It must be  
Some strange commodity, and of a dear  
value,

(Such an opinion is planted in me  
You will deal fairly,) that I would not  
hazard :

Give me the name of it.

*Sir Maur.* I fear you will make  
Some scruple in your conscience, to grant it.

*Luke.* Conscience ! no, no ; so it may be  
done with safety,  
And without danger of the law.

*Plenty.* For that,  
You shall sleep securely : nor shall it di-  
minish,

But add unto your heap such an increase.  
As what you now possess shall appear an  
atom,

To the mountain it brings with it.

*Luke.* Do not rack me

With expectation.

*Sir John.* Thus then in a word :

The devil—why start you at his name ? if you  
Desire to wallow in wealth and worldly  
honours,

You must make baste to be familiar with  
him.—

This devil, whose priest I am, and by him  
made

A deep magician, (for I can do wonders,)

Appear'd to me in Virginia, and commanded,  
With many stripes, for that's his cruel  
custom,

I should provide, on pain of his fierce wrath,  
Against the next great sacrifice, at which,  
We, grovelling on our faces, fall before him,  
Two Christian virgins, that, with their pure  
blood,

Might dye his horrid altars ; and a third,  
In his hate to such embraces as are lawful,  
Married, and with your ceremonious rites,  
As an oblation unto Hecate,  
And wanton Lust, her favourite.

*Luke.* A devilish custom !

And yet why should it startle me ?—There are  
Enough of the sex fit for this use ; but  
virgins,

And such a matron as you speak of, hardly  
To be wrought to it.

*Plenty.* A mine of gold, for a fee,

Waits him that undertakes it and performs it.

*Sir Maur.* Know you no distressed widow,  
or poor maids,

Whose want of dower, though well born,  
makes them weary

Of their own country ?

*Sir John.* Such as had rather be

Miserable in another world, than where

They have surfeited in felicity ?

*Luke.* Give me leave— [*Walks aside.*

I would not lose this purchase. A grave  
matron !

And two pure virgins ! Umph ! I think my  
sister,

Though proud, was ever honest ; and my  
nieces,

Untainted yet. Why should not they be  
shipp'd

For this employment ? they are burthensome  
to me,

And eat too much ; and if they stay in  
London,

They will find friends that, to my loss, will  
force me

To composition : 'twere a masterpiece,  
If this could be effected. They were ever  
Ambitious of title : should I urge,  
Marching with these they shall live Indian  
queens,

It may do much : but what shall I feel here,  
Knowing to what they are design'd ? they  
absent,

The thought of them will leave me. It shall  
be so.— [*Returns.*

I'll furnish you, and, to endear the service,  
In mine own family, and my blood too.

*Sir John.* Make this good, and your  
house shall not contain

The gold we'll send you.

*Luke.* You have seen my sister,

And my two nieces ?

*Sir John.* Yes, sir.

*Luke.* These persuaded

How happily they shall live, and in what  
pomp,

When they are in your kingdoms, for you  
must

Work them a belief that you are kings—

*Plenty.* We are so.

*Luke.* I'll put it in practice instantly.  
Study you

For moving language. Sister ! nieces !

*Enter Lady Frugal, Anne, and Mary.*

How !

Still mourning ? dry your eyes, and clear  
these clouds

That do obscure your beauties. Did you  
believe

My personated reprehension, though

It shew'd like a rough anger, could be  
serious ?

Forget the fright I put you in : my end,

In humbling you, was to set off the height

Of honour, principal honour, which my  
studies,

When you least expect it, shall confer upon  
you !

Still you seem doubtful : be not wanting to  
Yourselves, nor let the strangeness of the  
means,

With the shadow of some danger, render you  
Incredulous.

*L. Frug.* Our usage hath been such,  
As we can faintly hope that your intents

And language are the same.

*Luke.* I'll change those hopes

To certainties.

*Sir John.* With what art he winds about  
them ! [*Aside.*

*Luke.* What will you say, or what thanks  
shall I look for,

If now I raise you to such eminence, as

Heaven save your honour ! this idolatry  
Paid to a painted room.

*Hold.* Nay, you have reason  
To blubber, all of you.

*Luke.* And when you lay  
In childbed, at the christening of this minx,  
I well remember it, as you had been  
An absolute princess, since they have no  
more,

Three several chambers hung, the first with  
arras,

And that for waiters ; the second crimson  
satin,

For the meaner sort of guests ; the third of  
scarlet

Of the rich Tyrian die ; a canopy  
To cover the brat's cradle ; you in state,  
Like Pompey's Julia.

*L. Frug.* No more, I pray you.

*Luke.* Of this, be sure, you shall not. I'll  
cut off

Whatever is exorbitant in you,  
Or in [your] daughters, and reduce you to  
Your natural forms and habits ; not in re-  
venge

Of your base usage of me, but to fright  
Others by your example : 'tis decreed  
You shall serve one another, for I will  
Allow no waiter to you. Out of doors  
With these useless drones !

*Hold.* Will you pack ?

*Mill.* Not till I have

My trunks along with me.

*Luke.* Not a rag ; you came  
Hither without a box.

*Star.* You'll shew to me,  
I hope, sir, more compassion.

*Hold.* Troth I'll be

Thus far a suitor for him : he hath printed  
An almanack, for this year, at his own  
charge ;

Let him have the impression with him, to  
set up with.

*Luke.* For once I'll be entreated ; let it be  
Thrown to him out of the window.

*Star.* O cursed stars

That reign'd at my nativity ! how have you  
cheated

Your poor observer !

*Anne.* Must we part in tears ?

*Mary.* Farewell, good Milliscent !

*L. Frug.* I am sick, and meet with  
A rough physician. O my pride and scorn !  
How justly am I punish'd !

*Mary.* Now we suffer  
For our stubbornness and disobedience  
To our good father.

*Anne.* And the base conditions  
We imposed upon our suitors.

*Luke.* Get you in,  
And caterwaul in a corner.

*L. Frug.* There's no contending.

[Lady Frugal, Anne, and Mary, go  
off at one door, Stargaze and  
Milliscent at the other.]

*Luke.* How

Lik'st thou my carriage, Holdfast ?

*Hold.* Well in some parts ;

But it relishes, I know not how, a little  
Of too much tyranny.

*Luke.* Thou art a fool :

He's cruel to himself, that dares not be  
Severe to those that used him cruelly.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*A Room in Sir John Frugal's  
House.*

*Enter Luke, Sir John Frugal, Sir Maurice  
Lacy, and Plenty.*

*Luke.* You care not then, as it seems, to  
be converted  
To our religion ?

*Sir John.* We know no such word,  
Nor power but the devil, and him we serve  
for fear,  
Not love.

*Luke.* I am glad that charge is saved.

*Sir John.* We put

That trick upon your brother, to have means  
To come to the city. Now, to you, we'll  
discover

The close design that brought us, with  
assurance,

If you lend your aids to furnish us with that  
Which in the colony was not to be pur-  
chased,

No merchant ever made such a return  
For his most precious venture, as you shall  
Receive from us ; far, far above your hopes,  
Or fancy, to imagine.

*Luke.* It must be

Some strange commodity, and of a dear  
value,

(Such an opinion is planted in me  
You will deal fairly,) that I would not  
hazard :

Give me the name of it.

*Sir Maur.* I fear you will make  
Some scruple in your conscience, to grant it.

*Luke.* Conscience ! no, no ; so it may be  
done with safety,

And without danger of the law.

*Plenty.* For that,

You shall sleep securely : nor shall it di-  
minish,



But add unto your heap such an increase.  
As what you now possess shall appear an  
atom,

To the mountain it brings with it.

*Luke.* Do not rack me

With expectation.

*Sir John.* Thus then in a word :

The devil—why start you at his name ? if you  
Desire to wallow in wealth and worldly  
honours,

You must make haste to be familiar with  
him.—

This devil, whose priest I am, and by him  
made

A deep magician, (for I can do wonders,)  
Appear'd to me in Virginia, and commanded,  
With many stripes, for that's his cruel  
custom,

I should provide, on pain of his fierce wrath,  
Against the next great sacrifice, at which,  
We, grovelling on our faces, fall before him,  
Two Christian virgins, that, with their pure  
blood,

Might dye his horrid altars ; and a third,  
In his hate to such embraces as are lawful,  
Married, and with your ceremonious rites,  
As an oblation unto Hecate,  
And wanton Lust, her favourite.

*Luke.* A devilish custom !

And yet why should it startle me?—There are  
Enough of the sex fit for this use ; but  
virgins,

And such a matron as you speak of, hardly  
To be wrought to it.

*Plenty.* A mine of gold, for a fee,

Waits him that undertakes it and performs it.

*Sir Maur.* Know you no distressed widow,  
or poor maids,

Whose want of dower, though well born,  
makes them weary

Of their own country ?

*Sir John.* Such as had rather be

Miserable in another world, than where  
They have surfeited in felicity ?

*Luke.* Give me leave— [*Walks aside.*

I would not lose this purchase. A grave  
matron !

And two pure virgins ! Umph ! I think my  
sister,

Though proud, was ever honest ; and my  
nieces,

Untainted yet. Why should not they be  
shipp'd

For this employment? they are burthensome  
to me,

And eat too much ; and if they stay in  
London,

They will find friends that, to my loss, will  
force me

To composition : 'twere a masterpiece,  
If this could be effected. They were ever  
Ambitious of title : should I urge,  
Matching with these they shall live Indian  
queens,

It may do much : but what shall I feel here,  
Knowing to what they are design'd ? they  
absent,

The thought of them will leave me. It shall  
be so.— [*Returns.*

I'll furnish you, and, to endear the service,  
In mine own family, and my blood too.

*Sir John.* Make this good, and your  
house shall not contain

The gold we'll send you.

*Luke.* You have seen my sister,

And my two nieces ?

*Sir John.* Yes, sir.

*Luke.* These persuaded

How happily they shall live, and in what  
pomp,

When they are in your kingdoms, for you  
must

Work them a belief that you are kings—

*Plenty.* We are so.

*Luke.* I'll put it in practice instantly.

Study you

For moving language. Sister ! nieces !

*Enter Lady Frugal, Anne, and Mary.*

How !

Still mourning ? dry your eyes, and clear  
these clouds

That do obscure your beauties. Did you  
believe

My personated reprehension, though

It shew'd like a rough anger, could be  
serious ?

Forget the fright I put you in : my end,

In humbling you, was to set off the height

Of honour, principal honour, which my  
studies,

When you least expect it, shall confer upon  
you !

Still you seem doubtful : be not wanting to  
Yourselves, nor let the strangeness of the  
means,

With the shadow of some danger, render you  
Incredulous.

*L. Frug.* Our usage hath been such,

As we can faintly hope that your intents  
And language are the same.

*Luke.* I'll change those hopes

To certainties.

*Sir John.* With what art he winds about  
them ! [*Aside.*

*Luke.* What will you say, or what thanks  
shall I look for,

If now I raise you to such eminence, as

The wife and daughters of a citizen  
Never arrived at! many, for their wealth, I  
grant,

Have written ladies of honour, and some few  
Have higher titles, and that's the furthest rise  
You can in England hope for. What think  
you,

If I should mark you out a way to live  
Queens in another climate?

*Anne.* We desire  
A competence.

*Mary.* And prefer our country's smoke  
Before outlandish fire.

*L. Frug.* But should we listen  
To such impossibilities, 'tis not in  
The power of man to make it good.

*Luke.* I'll do it:  
Nor is this seat of majesty far removed;  
It is but to Virginia.

*L. Frug.* How! Virginia!  
High heaven forbid! Remember, sir, I be-  
seech you,

What creatures are shipp'd thither.

*Anne.* Condemn'd wretches,  
Forfeited to the law.

*Mary.* Strumpets and bawds,  
For the abomination of their life,  
Spew'd out of their own country.

*Luke.* Your false fears  
Abuse my noble purposes. Such indeed  
Are sent as slaves to labour there; but you,  
To absolute sovereignty. Observe these men,  
With reverence observe them: they are  
kings of

Such spacious territories and dominions,  
As our Great Britain measured will appear  
A garden to it.

*Sir Maur.* You shall be adored there  
As goddesses.

*Sir John.* Your litters made of gold,  
Supported by your vassals, proud to bear  
The burthen on their shoulders.

*Plenty.* Pomp, and ease,  
With delicates that Europe never knew,  
Like pages shall wait on you.

*Luke.* If you have minds  
To entertain the greatness offer'd to you,  
With outstretch'd arms, and willing hands,  
embrace it.

But this refused, imagine what can make you  
Most miserable here; and rest assured,  
In storms it falls upon you: take them in,  
And use your best persuasion. If that fail,  
I'll send them aboard in a dry fat.

[*Exeunt all but Sir John Frugal and  
Luke.*

*Sir John.* Be not moved, sir;  
We'll work them to your will. Yet, ere we  
part,

Your worldly cares deferr'd, a little mirth  
Would not misbecome us.

*Luke.* You say well: and now  
It comes into my memory, 'tis my birthday.  
Which with solemnity I would observe,  
But that it would ask cost.

*Sir John.* That shall not grieve you.  
By my art I will prepare you such a feast,  
As Persia, in her height of pomp and riot,  
Did never equal; and such ravishing music  
As the Italian princes seldom heard  
At their greatest entertainments. Name  
your guests.

*Luke.* I must have none.  
*Sir John.* Not the city senate?

*Luke.* No;  
Nor yet poor neighbours: the first would  
argue me

Of foolish ostentation, and the latter  
Of too much hospitality; a virtue  
Grown obsolete, and useless. I will sit  
Alone, and surfeit in my store, while others  
With envy pine at it; my genius pamper'd  
With the thought of what I am, and what  
they suffer

I have mark'd out to misery.

*Sir John.* You shall:  
And something I will add you yet conceive  
not,

Nor will I be slow-paced.

*Luke.* I have one business,  
And, that dispatch'd, I am free.

*Sir John.* About it, sir,  
Leave the rest to me.

*Luke.* Till now I ne'er loved magic.  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Lord Lacy, Goldwire senior, and  
Tradewell senior.*

*L. Lacy.* Believe me, gentlemen, I never  
was

So cozen'd in a fellow. He disguised  
Hypocrisy in such a cunning shape  
Of real goodness, that I would have sworn  
This devil a saint. M. Goldwire, and M.  
Tradewell,

What do you mean to do? Put on.

*Gold.* With your lordship's favour.

*L. Lacy.* I'll have it so.

*Trade.* Your will, my lord, excuses  
The rudeness of our manners.

*L. Lacy.* You have received  
Penitent letters from your sons, I doubt not

*Trade.* They are our only sons.

*Gold.* And as we are fathers,  
Remembering the errors of our youth,  
We would pardon slips in them.

*Trade.* And pay for them  
In a moderate way.

*Gold.* In which we hope your lordship  
Will be our mediator.

*L. Lacy.* All my power

*Enter Luke, richly dressed.*

You freely shall command ; 'tis he ! You  
are well met,

And to my wish,—and wonderous brave !  
your habit

Speaks you a merchant royal.

*Luke.* What I wear

I take not upon trust.

*L. Lacy.* Your betters may,  
And blush not for't.

*Luke.* If you have nought else with me  
But to argue that, I will make bold to leave  
you.

*L. Lacy.* You are very peremptory ; pray  
you stay :—

I once held you

An upright honest man.

*Luke.* I am honest now

By a hundred thousand pound, I thank my  
stars for't,

Upon the Exchange ; and if your late  
opinion

Be alter'd, who can help it ? Good my lord,  
To the point ; I have other business than to  
talk

Of honesty, and opinions.

*L. Lacy.* Yet you may

Do well, if you please, to shew the one, and  
merit

The other from good men, in a case that now  
Is offer'd to you.

*Luke.* What is it ? I am troubled.

*L. Lacy.* Here are two gentlemen, the  
fathers of

Your brother's prentices.

*Luke.* Mine, my lord, I take it.

*L. Lacy.* Goldwire, and Tradewell.

*Luke.* They are welcome, if  
They come prepared to satisfy the damage  
I have sustain'd by their sons.

*Gold.* We are, so you please  
To use a conscience.

*Trade.* Which we hope you will do,  
For your own worship's sake.

*Luke.* Conscience, my friends,  
And wealth, are not always neighbours.

Should I part

With what the law gives me, I should suffer  
mainly

In my reputation ; for it would convince me  
Of indiscretion : nor will you, I hope, move  
me

To do myself such prejudice.

*L. Lacy.* No moderation ?

*Luke.* They cannot look for't, and pre-  
serve in me .

A thriving citizen's credit. Your bonds lie  
For your sons' truth, and they shall answer all  
They have run out : the masters never pros-  
per'd

Since gentlemen's sons grew prentices :  
when we look

To have our business done at home, they are  
Abroad in the tennis-court, or in Partridge-  
alley,

In Lambeth Marsh, or a cheating ordinary,  
Where I found your sons. I have your  
bonds, look to't.

A thousand pounds apiece, and that will  
hardly

Repair my losses.

*L. Lacy.* Thou dar'st not shew thyself  
Such a devil !

*Luke.* Good words.

*L. Lacy.* Such a cut-throat ! I have  
heard of

The usage of your brother's wife and  
daughters ;

You shall find you are not lawless, and that  
your monies

Cannot justify your villainies.

*Luke.* I endure this.

And, good my lord, now you talk in time of  
monies,

Pay in what you owe me. And give me  
leave to wonder

Your wisdom should have leisure to consider  
The business of these gentlemen, or my

carriage

To my sister, or my nieces, being yourself,  
So much in my danger.

*L. Lacy.* In thy danger ?

*Luke.* Mine.

I find in my counting-house a manor pawn'd,  
Pawn'd, my good lord ; Lacy manor, and  
that manor

From which you have the title of a lord,  
An it please your good lordship ! You are  
a nobleman ;

Pray you pay in my monies : the interest  
Will eat faster in't, than aquafortis in iron.

Now though you bear me hard, I love your  
lordship.

I grant your person to be privileged

From all arrests ; yet there lives a foolish  
creature

Call'd an under-sheriff, who, being well  
paid, will serve

An extent on lords or lowns' land. Pay  
it in :

I would be loth your name should sink, or  
that

*Sir John.* You have seen, my lord, the pageant?

*L. Lacy.* I have, and am raviſh'd with it.

*Sir John.* What think you now  
Of this clear ſoul? this honeſt, pious man?  
Have I ſtripp'd him bare, or will your lord-  
ſhip have  
A further trial of him? 'Tis not in  
A wolf to change his nature.

*L. Lacy.* I long ſince  
Confess'd my error.

*Sir John.* Look up; I forgive you,  
And ſeal your pardons thus.  
[*Raiſes and embraces Lady Frugal,  
Anne, and Mary.*]

*L. Frug.* I am too full  
Of joy, to ſpeak it.

*Anne.* I am another creature;  
Not what I was.

*Mary.* I vow to ſhew myſelf,  
When I am married, an humble wife,  
Not a commanding miſtreſs.

*Plenty.* On thoſe terms,  
I gladly thus embrace you. [To *Mary.*]

*Sir Maur.* Welcome to  
My boſom: as the one half of myſelf,  
I'll love and cheriſh you. [To *Anne.*]

*Gold. jun.* Mercy!

*Trade. jun. and the reſt.* Good ſir, mercy!

*Sir John.* This day is ſacred to it. All  
ſhall find me,  
As far as lawful pity can give way to't,  
Indulgent to your wiſhes, though with loſs  
Unto myſelf.—My kind and honeſt brother,  
Looking into yourſelf, have you ſeen the  
Gorgon?  
What a golden dream you have had, in the  
poſſeſſion

Of my eſtate!—but here's a revocation  
That wakes you out of it. Monster in  
nature!  
Revengeful, avaricious atheist,  
Transcending all example!—but I ſhall be  
A ſharer in thy crimes, ſhould I repeat  
them—  
What wilt thou do? turn hypocrite again,  
With hope diſſimulation can aid thee?  
Or that one eye will ſhed a tear in ſign  
Of ſorrow for thee? I have warrant to  
Make bold with mine own, pray you uncaſe:  
this key, too,  
I muſt make bold with. Hide thyſelf in  
ſome deſart,  
Where good men ne'er may find thee; or in  
juſtice  
Pack to Virginia, and repent; not for  
Thoſe horrid ends to which thou didſt de-  
ſign theſe.

*Luke.* I care not where I go: what's done,  
with words  
Cannot be undone. [Exit.]

*L. Frug.* Yet, ſir, ſhew ſome mercy;  
Be cauſe his cruelty to me and mine,  
Did good upon us.

*Sir John.* Of that at better leiſure,  
As his penitency ſhall work me. Make you  
good  
Your promiſed reformation, and inſtruct  
Our city dames, whom wealth makes proud,  
to move  
In their own ſpheres; and willingly to con-  
feſs,  
In their habits, manners, and their higheſt  
port,  
A diſtance 'twixt the city and the court.  
[*Exeunt.*]



# The Guardian.

## PROLOGUE.

*After twice putting forth to sea, his fame  
Shipwreck'd in either, and his once-known name  
In two years silence buried, perhaps lost  
In the general opinion; at our cost  
(A zealous sacrifice to Neptune made  
For good success in his uncertain trade)  
Our author weighs up anchors, and once more  
Forsaking the security of the shore,  
Resolves to prove his fortune: what 'twill be,  
Is not in him, or us, to prophesie;  
You only, can assure us: yet he pray'd  
This little, in his absence, might be said,  
Designing me his orator. He submits  
To the grave censure of those abler wits  
His weakness; nor dares he profess that when  
The critics laugh, he'll laugh at them agen.  
(Strange self-love in a writer!) He would know  
His errors as you find them, and bestow  
His future studies to reform from this,  
What in another might be judged amiss.  
And yet despair not, gentlemen; though he fear  
His strengths to please, we hope that you shall hear  
Some things so writ, as you may truly say  
He hath not quite forgot to make a play,  
As 'tis with malice rumour'd: his intents  
Are fair; and though he want the compliments  
Of wide-mouth'd promisers, who still engage,  
Before their works are brought upon the stage,  
Their parasites to proclaim them: this last birth,  
Deliver'd without noise, may yield such mirth,  
As, balanced equally, will cry down the boast  
Of arrogance, and regain his credit lost.*

---

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Alphonso, <i>king of Naples.</i>	Cario, <i>cook to Adorio.</i>
Duke Montpensier, <i>general of Milan.</i>	Claudio, <i>a confidential servant to Severino.</i>
Severino, <i>a banished nobleman.</i>	Captain.
Monteclaro, <i>his brother-in-law (supposed dead,) disguised under the name of Laval.</i>	Banditti.
Durazzo, <i>the GUARDIAN.</i>	Servants.
Caldoro, <i>his nephew and ward, in love with Calista.</i>	Iolante, <i>wife to Severino.</i>
Adorio, <i>a young libertine.</i>	Calista, <i>her daughter, in love with Adorio.</i>
Camillo,	Mirtilla, <i>Calista's maid.</i>
Lentulo,	Calipso, <i>the confidant of Iolante.</i>
Donato,	Singers, <i>Countrymen.</i>

SCENE,—Partly at Naples, and partly in the adjacent country.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—Naples. *A Grove.*

*Enter Durazzo, Camillo, Lentulo, Donato, and two Servants.*

*Dur.* Tell me of his expenses! Which of you  
Stands bound for a gazet? he spend his own;  
And you impertinent fools or knaves, (make  
choice  
Of either title, which your signiorships  
please,)  
To meddle in't.

*Camil.* Your age gives privilege  
To this harsh language.

*Dur.* My age! do not use  
That word again; if you do, I shall grow  
young,  
And swinge you soundly: I would have you  
know

Though I write fifty odd, I do not carry  
An almanack in my bones to pre-declare  
What weather we shall have; nor do I kneel  
In adoration, at the spring and fall,  
Before my doctor, for a dose or two  
Of his restoratives, which are things, I take it,  
You are familiar with.

*Camil.* This is from the purpose.

*Dur.* I cannot cut a caper, or groan like  
you  
When I have done, nor run away so nimbly  
Out of the field: but bring me to a fence-  
school,

And crack a blade or two for exercise,  
Ride a barb'd horse, or take a leap after me,  
Following my hounds, or hawks, (and, by  
your leave,  
At a gamesome mistress,) and you shall  
confess

I am in the May of my abilities,  
And you in your December.

*Lent.* We are glad you bear  
Your years so well.

*Dur.* My years! no more of years;  
If you do, at your peril.

*Camil.* We desire not  
To prove your valour.

*Dur.* 'Tis your safest course.

*Camil.* But as friends to your fame and  
reputation,  
Come to instruct you, your too much in-  
dulgence

To the exorbitant waste of young Caldoro,  
Your nephew and your ward, hath rendered  
you

But a bad report among wise men in Naples.

*Dur.* Wise men!—in your opinion; but  
to me,

That understand myself and them, they are  
Hide-bounded money-mongers: they would  
have me

Train up my ward a hopeful youth, to keep  
A merchant's book; or at the plough, and  
clothe him

In canvas or coarse cotton; while I fell  
His woods, grant leases, which he must make  
good

When he comes to age, or be compelled to  
marry

With a cast whore and three bastards; let  
him know

No more than how to cipher well, or do  
His tricks by the square root; grant him no  
pleasure

But quoits and nine-pins; suffer him to con-  
verse

With none but clowns and cobblers: as the  
Turk says,

Poverty, old age, and aches of all seasons,  
Light on such heathenish guardians!

*Don.* You do worse  
To the ruin of his state, under your favour,  
In feeding his loose riots.

*Dur.* Riots! what riots?

He wears rich clothes, I do so; keeps  
horses, games, and wenches;

'Tis not amiss, so it be done with decorum:  
In an heir 'tis ten times more excusable  
Than to be over-thrifty. Is there aught else  
That you can charge him with?

*Camil.* With what we grieve for,  
And you will not approve.

*Dur.* Out with it, man.

*Camil.* His rash endeavour, without your  
consent,

To match himself into a family  
Not gracious with the times.

*Dur.* 'Tis still the better;  
By this means he shall scape court visitants,  
And not be eaten out of house and home  
In a summer progress: but does he mean to  
marry?

*Camil.* Yes, sir, to marry.

*Dur.* In a beardless chin

'Tisten times worse than wenching. Family!  
whose family?

*Camil.* Signor Severino's.

*Dur.* How! not he that killed

The brother of his wife, as it is rumour'd,  
Then fled upon it; since proscribed, and  
chosen

Captain of the Banditti; the king's pardon  
On no suit to be granted?

*Lent.* The same, sir.

*Dur.* This touches near: how is his love  
return'd

By the saint he worships?

*Don.* She affects him not,  
But dotes upon another.

*Dur.* Worse and worse.

*Camil.* You know him, young Adorio.

*Dur.* A brave gentleman!  
What proof of this?

*Leni.* I dogg'd him to the church;  
Where he, not for devotion, as I guess,  
But to make his approaches to his mistress,  
Is often seen.

*Camil.* And would you stand conceal'd  
Among these trees, for he must pass this  
green,

The matins ended, as she returns home,  
You may observe the passages.

*Dur.* I thank you;

This torrent must be stopt.

*Don.* They come.

*Camil.* Stand close. [*They stand aside.*]

*Enter Adorio, Calista, Mirtilla, and  
Caldoro muffled.*

*Calis.* I know I wrong my modesty.

*Ador.* And wrong me,  
In being so importunate for that  
I neither can nor must grant.

*Calis.* A hard sentence!

And to increase my misery, by you,  
Whom fond affection hath made my judge,  
Pronounced without compassion. Alas, sir,  
Did I approach you with unchaste desires,  
A sullied reputation; were deform'd,  
As it may be I am, though many affirm  
I am something more than handsome—

*Dur.* I dare swear it.

*Calis.* Or if I were no gentlewoman, but  
bred coarsely,  
You might, with some pretence of reason,  
slight

What you should sue for.

*Dur.* Were he not an eunuch,  
He would, and sue again; I am sure I  
should.

Pray look in my collar, a flea troubles me:  
Hey-day! there are a legion of young Cupids  
At barley-break in my breeches.

*Calis.* Hear me, sir;

Though you continue, nay increase your  
scorn,

Only vouchsafe to let me understand  
What my defects are; of which once con-  
vinced,

I will hereafter silence my harsh plea,  
And spare your further trouble.

*Ador.* I will tell you,

And bluntly, as my usual manner is.  
Though I were a woman-hater, which I am  
not,

But love the sex,—for my ends, take me with  
you;

If in my thought I found one taint or blemish  
In the whole fabric of your outward features,  
I would give myself the lie. You are a  
virgin

Possess'd of all your mother could wish in  
you;

Your father Severino's dire disaster  
In killing of your uncle, which I grieve for,  
In no part taking from you. I repeat it,  
A noble virgin, for whose grace and favours  
The Italian princes might contend as rivals;  
Yet unto me, a thing far, far beneath you,  
(A noted libertine I profess myself,)

In your mind there does appear one fault so  
gross,

Nay, I might say unpardonable at your  
years,

If justly you consider it, that I cannot  
As you desire, affect you.

*Calis.* Make me know it,  
I'll soon reform it.

*Ador.* Would you'd keep your word!

*Calis.* Put me to the test.

*Ador.* I will. You are too honest,  
And, like your mother, too strict and re-  
ligious,

And talk too soon of marriage; I shall break,  
If at that rate I purchase you. Can I part  
with

My uncurb'd liberty, and on my neck  
Wear such a heavy yoke? hazard my for-  
tunes,

With all the expected joys my life can yield  
me,

For one commodity, before I prove it?  
Venus forbid on both sides! let crook'd

bams,  
Bald heads, declining shoulders, furrow'd  
cheeks,

Be awed by ceremonies: if you love me  
In the way young people should, I'll fly to-  
meet it,

And we'll meet merrily.

*Calis.* 'Tis strange such a man  
Can use such language.

*Ador.* In my tongue my heart  
Speaks freely, fair one. Think on't, a close  
friend,

Or private mistress, is court rhetoric;  
A wife, mere rustic solecism: so good mor-  
row!

[*Adorio offers to go, Caldoro comes  
forward and stops him.*]

*Camil.* How like you this?

*Dur.* A well-bred gentleman!

I am thinking now if ever in the dark,  
Or drunk, I met his mother: he must have

Some drops of my blood in him, for at his years

I was much of his religion.

*Camil.* Out upon you!

*Don.* The colt's tooth still in your mouth!

*Dur.* What means this whispering?

*Ador.* You may perceive I seek not to displant you,

Where you desire to grow; for further thanks,  
'Tis needless compliment.

*Cald.* There are some natures

Which blush to owe a benefit, if not

Received in corners; holding it an impairing  
To their own worth, should they acknow-  
ledge it.

I am made of other clay, and therefore must  
Trench so far on your leisure, as to win you  
To lend a patient ear, while I profess  
Before my glory, though your scorn, Calista,  
How much I am your servant.

*Ador.* My designs

Are not so urgent, but they can dispense  
With so much time.

*Camil.* Pray you now observe your  
nephew.

*Dur.* How he looks! like a school-boy that  
had play'd the truant,

And went to be breech'd.

*Cald.* Madam!

*Calis.* A new affliction:

Your suit offends as much as his repulse,  
It being not to be granted.

*Mirt.* Hear him, madam;

His sorrow is not personated; he deserves  
Your pity, not contempt.

*Dur.* He has made the maid his;

And, as the master of *the Art of Love*  
Wisely affirms, it is a kind of passage  
To the mistress' favour.

*Cald.* I come not to urge

My merit to deserve you, since you are,  
Weigh'd truly to your worth, above all value:  
Much less to argue you of want of judgment  
For following one that with wing'd feet flies  
from you,

While I, at all parts, without boast, his  
equal,

In vain pursue you; bringing those flames  
with me,

Those lawful flames, (for, madam, know,  
with other

I never shall approach you,) which Adorio,

In scorn of Hymen and religious rites,

With atheistical impudence contemns;

And in his loose attempt to undermine

The fortress of your honour, seeks to ruin

All holy altars by clear minds erected

To virgin honour.

*Dur.* My nephew is an ass;

What a devil hath he to do with virgin  
honour,

Altars, or lawful flames, when he should tell  
her

They are superstitious nothings; and speak  
to the purpose,

Of the delight to meet in the old dance,  
Between a pair of sheets; my grandam call'd  
it,

The Peopling of the World.

*Calis.* How, gentle sir!

To vindicate my honour? that is needless;  
I dare not fear the worst aspersion malice  
Can throw upon it.

*Cald.* Your sweet patience, lady,  
And more than dove-like innocence, render  
you

Insensible of an injury, for which  
I deeply suffer. Can you undergo

The scorn of being refused? I must confess  
It makes for my ends; for had he embraced

Your gracious offers tender'd him, I had been  
In my own hopes forsaken; and if yet

There can breathe any air of comfort in me,  
To his contempt I owe it: but his ill

No more shall make way for my good intents,  
Than virtue, powerful in herself, can need

The aids of vice.

*Ador.* You take that license, sir,

Which yet I never granted.

*Cald.* I'll force more;

Nor will I for my own ends undertake it,  
As I will make apparent, but to do

A justice to your sex, with mine own wrong  
And irrecoverable loss. To thee I turn,

Thou goatish ribald, in whom lust is grown  
Defensible, the last descent to hell,

Which gapes wide for thee: look upon this  
lady,

And on her fame, (if it were possible,  
Fairer than she is,) and if base desires,

And beastly appetite, will give thee leave,  
Consider how she sought thee, how this lady,

In a noble way, desired thee. Was she  
fashion'd

In an inimitable mould, (which Nature  
broke,

The great work perfected,) to be made a  
slave

To thy libidinous twines, and, when com-  
manded,

To be used as physic after drunken surfeits!  
Mankind should rise against thee: what even  
now

I heard with horror, shewed like blasphemy,  
And as such I will punish it.

[*Strikes Adorio, the rest rush for-  
ward; they all draw.*

*Calis.* Murder!



*Mirt.* Help!

*Dur.* After a whining prologue, who would have look'd for Such a rough catastrophe? Nay, come on, fear nothing:

Never till now my nephew! and do you hear, sir?

(And yet I love thee too) if you take the wench now,

I'll have it posted first, then chronicled, Then wert beaten to it.

*Ador.* You think you have shewn A memorable masterpiece of valour In doing this in public, and it may Perhaps deserve her shoe-string for a favour: Wear it without my envy; but expect, For this affront, when time serves, I shall call you

To a strict accompt. [Exit.

*Dur.* Hook on, follow him, harpies! You may feed upon this business for a month, If you manage it handsomely:

[*Exeunt* Camillo, Lentulo, and Donato.

When two heirs quarrel, The swordmen of the city shortly after Appear in plush, for their grave consultations In taking up the difference; some, I know, Make a set living on't. Nay, let him go, Thou art master of the field; enjoy thy fortune

With moderation: for a flying foe, Discreet and provident conquerors build up A bridge of gold. To thy mistress, boy! if I were

In thy shirt, how I could nick it!

*Cald.* You stand, madam, As you were rooted, and I more than fear My passion hath offended: I perceive The roses frighted from your cheeks, and paleness

To usurp their room; yet you may please to ascribe it

To my excess of love, and boundless ardour To do you right; for myself I have done nothing.

I will not curse my stars, how'er assured To me you are lost for ever: for suppose Adorio slain, and by my hand, my life Is forfeited to the law, which I condemn, So with a tear or two you would remember I was your martyr, and died in your service.

*Cul.* Alas, you weep! and in my just compassion

Of what you suffer, I were more than marble, Should I not keep you company: you have sought

My favours nobly, and I am justly punish'd, In wild Adorio's contempt and scorn, For my ingratitude, it is no better,

To your deservings: yet such is my fate, Though I would, I cannot help it. O Caldoro!

In our misplaced affection I prove Too soon, and with dear-bought experience, Cupid

Is blind indeed, and hath mistook his arrows.

If it be possible, learn to forget, (And yet that punishment is too light,) to hate,

A thankless virgin: practise it; and may Your due consideration that I am so, In your imagination, disperse Loathsome deformity upon this face That hath bewitch'd you! more I cannot say, But that I truly pity you, and wish you A better choice, which, in my prayers, Caldoro,

I ever will remember.

[*Exeunt* Calista and Mirtilla.

*Dur.* 'Tis a sweet rogue.

Why, how now! thunderstruck?

*Cald.* I am not so happy:

Oh that I were but master of myself!

You soon should see me nothing.

*Dur.* What would you do?

*Cald.* With one stab give a fatal period

To my woes and life together.

*Dur.* For a woman!

Better the kind were lost, and generation Maintain'd a new way.

*Cald.* Pray you, sir, forbear

This profane language.

*Dur.* Pray you, be you a man,

And whimper not like a girl: all shall be well,

As I live it shall; this is no hectic fever,

But a love-sick ague, easy to be cured,

And I'll be your physician, so you subscribe

To my directions. First, you must change

This city whorish air, for 'tis infected,

And my potions will not work here; I must have you

To my country villa: rise before the sun,

Then make a breakfast of the morning dew,

Served up by nature on some grassy hill;

You'll find it nectar, and far more cordial

Than cullises, cock-broth, or your distillations

Of a hundred crowns a quart.

*Cald.* You talk of nothing.

*Dur.* This ta'en as a preparative, to strengthen

Your queasy stomach, vault into your saddle;

With all this flesh I can do it without a

stirrup:—

My hounds uncoupled, and my huntsmen ready,

You shall hear such music from their tunable mouths,

That you shall say the viol, harp, theorbo,  
Ne'er made such ravishing harmony; from  
the groves

And neighbouring woods, with frequent iterations,

Enamour'd of the cry, a thousand echoes  
Repeating it.

*Cald.* What's this to me?

*Dur.* It shall be,

And you give thanks for't. In the afternoon,  
For we will have variety of delights,  
We'll to the field again, no game shall rise  
But we'll be ready for't: if a hare, my grey-  
hounds

Shall make a course; for the pie or jay, a  
sparhawk

Flies from the fist; the crow so near pursued,  
Shall be compell'd to seek protection under  
Our horses' bellies; a hearn put from her  
siege,

And a pistol shot off in her breech, shall  
mount

So high, that, to your view, she'll seem to soar  
Above the middle region of the air:

A cast of haggard falcons, by me mann'd,  
Eying the prey at first, appear as if  
They did turn tail; but with their labouring  
wings

Getting above her, with a thought their  
pinions

Cleaving the purer element, make in,  
And by turns bind with her; the frighted  
fowl,

Lying at her defence upon her back,  
With her dreadful beak a while defers her  
death,

But by degrees forced down, we part the  
fray,

And feast upon her.

*Cald.* This cannot be, I grant,

But pretty pastime.

*Dur.* Pretty pastime, nephew!

'Tis royal sport. Then, for an evening flight,  
A tiercel gentle, which I call, my masters,  
As he were sent a messenger to the moon,  
In such a place flies, as he seems to say,  
See me, or see me not! the partridge sprung,  
He makes his stoop; but wanting breath, is  
forced

To cancelier; then, with such speed as if  
He carried lightning in his wings, he strikes  
The trembling bird, who even in death  
appears

Proud to be made his quarry.

*Cald.* Yet all this

Is nothing to Calista.

*Dur.* Thou shalt find

Twenty Calistas there; for every night,  
A fresh and lusty one; I'll give thee a ticket,  
In which my name, Durazzo's name, sub-  
scribed,

My tenants' nut-brown daughters, whole-  
some girls,

At midnight shall contend to do thee service,  
I have bred them up to't; should their  
fathers murmur,

Their leases are void, for that is a main point  
In my indentures; and when we make our  
progress,

There is no entertainment perfect, if  
This last dish be not offer'd.

*Cald.* You make me smile.

*Dur.* I'll make thee laugh outright.—My  
horses, knaves!

'Tis but six short hours riding; yet ere night  
Thou shalt be an alter'd man.

*Cald.* I wish I may, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in Severino's House.*

*Enter Iólante, Calista, Calipso, and  
Mirtilla.*

*Iól.* I had spies upon you, minion; the  
relation

Of your behaviour was at home before you:  
My daughter to hold parley, from the  
church too,

With noted libertines! her fame and favours  
The quarrel of their swords!

*Calis.* 'Twas not in me  
To help it, madam.

*Iól.* No! how have I lived?

My neighbour knows my manners have  
been such,

That I presume I may affirm, and boldly,  
In no particular actor of my life  
I can be justly censured.

*Calip.* Censured, madam!

What lord or lady lives, worthy to sit  
A competent judge on you?

*Calis.* Yet black detraction  
Will find faults where they are not.

*Calip.* Her foul mouth  
Is stopp'd, you being the object: give me  
leave

To speak my thoughts, yet still under cor-  
rection;

And if my young lady and her woman hear  
With reverence, they may be edified.

You are my gracious patroness and sup-  
portress,

And I your poor observer, nay, your creature,  
Fed by your bounties; and but that I know

Your honour detests flattery, I might say,  
And with an emphasis, you are the lady

Admired and envied at, far, far above  
All imitation of the best of women

That are or ever shall be. This is truth :  
I dare not be obsequious ; and 'twould ill  
Become my gravity, and wisdom glean'd  
From your oraculous ladyship, to act  
The part of a she-parasite.

*Jöl.* If you do,

I never shall acknowledge you.

*Calis.* Admirable !

This is no flattery ! *[Aside to Mirt.]*

*Mirt.* Do not interrupt her :

'Tis such a pleasing itch to your lady-  
mother,

That she may peradventure forget us,  
To feed on her own praises.

*Jöl.* I am not

So far in debt to age, but if I would  
Listen to men's bewitching sorceries,  
I could be courted.

*Calip.* Rest secure of that.

All the braveries of the city run mad for you,  
And yet your virtue's such, not one attempts  
you.

*Jöl.* I keep no mankind servant in my  
house,

In fear my chastity may be suspected :  
How is that voiced in Naples ?

*Calip.* With loud applause,  
I assure your honour.

*Jöl.* It confirms I can

Command my sensual appetites.

*Calip.* As vassals to

Your more than masculine reason, that com-  
mands them :

Your palace styled a nunnery of pureness,  
In which not one lascivious thought dares  
enter,

Your clear soul standing centinel.

*Mirt.* Well said, Echo ! *[Aside.]*

*Jöl.* Yet I have tasted those delights  
which women

So greedily long for, know their titillations ;  
And when, with danger of his head, thy  
father

Comes to give comfort to my widow'd sheets,  
As soon as his desires are satisfied,  
I can with ease forget them.

*Calip.* Observe that,

It being indeed remarkable : 'tis nothing  
For a simple maid, that never had her hand  
In the honey-pot of pleasure, to forbear it ;  
But such as have lick'd there, and lick'd  
there often,

And felt the sweetness of't—

*Mirt.* How her mouth runs o'er

With rank imagination ! *[Aside.]*

*Calip.* If such can,

As urged before, the kickshaw being offer'd,  
Refuse to take it, like my matchless madam,  
They may be sainted.

*Jöl.* I'll lose no more breath  
In fruitless reprehension ; look to it :  
I'll have thee wear this habit of my mind,  
As of my body.

*Calip.* Seek no other precedent :

In all the books of *Amadis de Gaul*,  
The *Palmerins*, and that true Spanish story,  
*The Mirror of Knighthood*, which I have  
read often,

Read feelingly, nay more, I do believe in't,  
My lady has no parallel.

*Jöl.* Do not provoke me :

If, from this minute, thou e'er stir abroad,  
Write letter, or receive one ; or presume  
To look upon a man, though from a window,  
I'll chain thee like a slave in some dark  
corner ;

Prescribe thy daily labour, which omitted,  
Expect the usage of a fury from me,  
Not an indulgent mother.—Come, *Calipso*.

*Calip.* Your ladyship's injunctions are so  
easy,

That I dare pawn my credit my young lady  
And her woman shall obey them.

*[Exeunt Jölante and Calipso.]*

*Mirt.* You shall fry first

For a rotten piece of touchwood, and give  
fire

To the great fiend's nostrils, when he smokes  
tobacco !

Note the injustice, madam ; they would  
have us,

Being young and hungry, keep perpetual  
Lent,

And the whole year to them a carnival.

*Easy injunctions*, with a mischief to you !  
Suffer this and suffer all.

*Calis.* Not stir abroad !

The use and pleasure of our eyes denied us !

*Mirt.* Insufferable.

*Calis.* Nor write, nor yet receive  
An amorous letter !

*Mirt.* Not to be endured.

*Calis.* Nor look upon a man out of a  
window !

*Mirt.* Flat tyranny, insupportable tyranny,  
To a lady of your blood.

*Calis.* She is my mother,  
And how should I decline it ?

*Mirt.* Run away from't ;  
Take any course.

*Calis.* But without means, *Mirtilla*,  
How shall we live ?

*Mirt.* What a question's that ! as if  
A buxom lady could want maintenance  
In any place in the world, where there are  
men,

Wine, meat, or money stirring.

*Calis.* Be you more modest,

Or seek some other mistress : rather than  
In a thought or dream I will consent to  
aught

That may take from my honour, I'll endure  
More than my mother can impose upon me.

*Mirt.* I grant your honour is a specious  
dressing,

But without conversation of men,  
A kind of nothing. I will not persuade you  
To disobedience : yet my confessor told me  
(And he, you know, is held a learned clerk)  
When parents do enjoin unnatural things,  
Wise children may evade them. She may as  
well

Command when you are hungry, not to eat,  
Or drink, or sleep : and yet all these are  
easy,

Compared with the not seeing of a man,  
As I persuade no further ; but to you  
There is no such necessity ; you have the  
means

To shun your mother's rigour.

*Calis.* Lawful means ?

*Mirt.* Lawful, and pleasing too ; I will  
not urge

Calodoro's loyal love, you being averse to't ;  
Make trial of Adorio.

*Calis.* And give up

My honour to his lust !

*Mirt.* There's no such thing

Intended, madam ; in few words, write to  
him

What slavish hours you spend under your  
mother ;

That you desire not present marriage from  
him,

But as a noble gentleman to redeem you  
From the tyranny you suffer. With your  
letter

Present him some rich jewel ; you have one,  
In which the rape of Proserpine, in little,  
Is to the life express'd : I'll be the messenger  
With any hazard, and at my return,  
Yield you a good account of't.

*Calis.* 'Tis a business

To be consider'd of.

*Mirt.* Consideration,

When the converse of your lover is in  
question,

Is of no moment : if she would allow you  
A dancer in the morning to well breathe you,  
A songster in the afternoon, a servant  
To air you in the evening ; give you leave  
To see the theatre twice a week, to mark  
How the old actors decay, the young sprout  
up,

(A fitting observation,) you might bear it ;  
But not to see, or talk, or touch a man,  
Abominable !

*Calis.* Do not my blushes speak  
How willingly I would assent ?

*Mirt.* Sweet lady,

Do something to deserve them, and blush  
after. [Exeunt.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*The same. A Street near  
Severino's House.*

*Enter Iölande and Calipso.*

*Iö.* And are these Frenchmen, as you say,  
such gallants ?

*Calip.* Gallant and active ; their free  
breeding knows not

The Spanish and Italian preciseness  
Practised among us ; what we call in modest,  
With them is styled bold courtship : they  
dare fight

Under a velvet ensign, at fourteen.

*Iö.* A petticoat, you mean ?

*Calip.* You are in the right ;

Let a mistress wear it under an armour of  
proof,

They are not to be beaten off.

*Iö.* You are merry, neighbour.

*Calip.* I fool to make you so : pray you  
observe them,

They are the forward'st monsieurs ; born  
physicians

For the malady of young wenches, and  
ne'er miss :

I owe my life to one of them. When I was  
A raw young thing, not worth the ground I  
trod on,

And long'd to dip my bread in tar, my lips  
As blue as salt-water, he came up roundly  
to me,

And cured me in an instant ; Venus be  
praised for't !

*Enter Alphonso, Montpensier, Laval, Cap-  
tain, and Attendants.*

*Iö.* They come, leave prating.

*Calip.* I am dumb, an't like your honour.

*Alph.* We will not break the league con-  
firm'd between us

And your great master : the passage of his  
army

Through all our territories lies open to him ;  
Only we grieve that your design for Rome  
Commands such haste, as it denies us means  
To entertain you as your worth deserves,  
And we would gladly tender.

*Mont.* Royal Alphonso,

The king my master, your confederate,  
Will pay the debt he owes, in fact, which I

Want words t'express. I must remove to-night ;

And yet, that your intended favours may not be lost, I leave this gentleman behind me, To whom you may vouchsafe them, I dare say,

Without repentance. I forbear to give Your majesty his character ; in France He was a precedent for arts and arms, Without a rival, and may prove in Naples Worthy the imitation.

[*Introduces Laval to the king.*]

*Calip.* Is he not, madam,

A monsieur in print ? what a garb was there ! O rare !

Then, how he wears his clothes ! and the fashion of them !

A main assurance that he is within All excellent : by this, wise ladies ever Make their conjectures.

*IöL.* Peace, I have observed him

From head to foot.

*Calip.* Eye him again, all over.

*Lav.* It cannot, royal sir, but argue me Of much presumption, if not impudence, To be a suitor to your majesty, Before I have deserved a gracious grant, By some employment prosperously achieved. But pardon, gracious sir : when I left France I made a vow to a bosom friend of mine, (Which my lord general, if he please, can witness.)

With such humility as well becomes A poor petitioner, to desire a boon From your magnificence.

[*He delivers a petition.*]

*Calip.* With what punctual form

He does deliver it !

*IöL.* I have eyes : no more.

*Alph.* For Severino's pardon !—you must excuse me,

I dare not pardon murder.

*Lav.* His fact, sir,

Ever submitting to your abler judgment, Merits a fairer name : he was provoked, As by unanswerable proofs it is confirm'd, By Montecclaro's rashness ; who repining That Severino, without his consent, Had married IöLante, his sole sister, (It being conceal'd almost for thirteen years,) Though the gentleman, at all parts, was his equal,

First challeng'd him, and, that declined, he gave him

A blow in public.

*Mont.* Not to be endured,

But by a slave.

*Lav.* This, great sir, justly weigh'd,

You may a little, if you please, take from

The rigour of your justice, and express An act of mercy.

*IöL.* I can hear no more.

This opens an old wound, and makes a new one.

Would it were cicatrized ! wait me.

*Calip.* As your shadow.

[*Exeunt IöLante and Calipso.*]

*Alph.* We grant you these are glorious pretences,

Revenge appearing in the shape of valour, Which wise kings must distinguish : the defence

Of reputation, now made a bawd To murder ; every trifle falsely styled An injury, and not to be determined But by a bloody duel : though this vice Hath taken root and growth beyond the mountains,

(As France, and, in strange fashions, her ape, England, can dearly witness with the loss Of more brave spirits, than would have stood the shock

Of the Turk's army,) while Alphonso lives It shall not here be planted. Move me no further

In this ; in what else suiting you to ask, And me to give, expect a gracious answer : However, welcome to our court. Lord General,

I'll bring you out of the ports, and then betake you

To your good fortune.

*Mont.* Your grace overwhelms me.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in Severino's House.*

*Enter Calipso and IöLante.*

*Calip.* You are bound to favour him : mark you how he pleaded

For my lord's pardon.

*IöL.* That's indeed a tie ;

But I have a stronger on me.

*Calip.* Say you love

His person, be not ashamed of't ; he's a man, For whose embraces, though Endymion Lay sleeping by, Cynthia would leave her orb,

And exchange kisses with him.

*IöL.* Do not fan

A fire that burns already too hot in me ;

I am in my honour sick, sick to the death, Never to be recovered.

*Calip.* What a coil's here

For loving a man ! It is no Africk wonder : If, like Pasiphaë, you doted on a bull, Indeed 'twere monstrous ; but in this you have

A thousand thousand precedents to excuse you.

A seaman's wife may ask relief of her neighbour,

When her husband's bound to the Indies, and not blamed for't ;

And many more besides of higher calling, Though I forbear to name them. You have a husband ;

But, as the case stands with my lord, he is A kind of no husband ; and your ladyship As free as a widow can be. I confess, If ladies should seek change, that have their husbands

At board and bed, to pay their marriage duties,

(The surest bond of concord,) 'twere a fault, Indeed it were : but for your honour, that Do lie alone so often—body of me !

I am zealous in your cause—let me take breath.

*Iñ.* I apprehend what thou wouldst say, I want all

As means to quench the spurious fire that burns here.

*Calip.* Want means, while I, your creature, live ! I dare not

Be so unthankful.

*Iñ.* Wilt thou undertake it ?

And, as an earnest of much more to come, Receive this jewel, and purse cramm'd full of crowns.—

How dearly I am forced to buy dishonour !

[*Aside.*

*Calip.* I would do it gratis, but 'twould ill become

My breeding to refuse your honour's bounty ; Nay, say no more, all rhetoric in this Is comprehended ; let me alone to work him. He shall be yours ; that's poor, he is already At your devotion. I will not boast

My faculties this way, but suppose he were Coy as Adonis, or Hippolytus, And your desires more hot than Cytherea's, Or wanton Phædra's, I will bring him chain'd To your embraces, glorying in his fetters : I have said it.

*Iñ.* Go, and prosper ; and imagine

A salary beyond thy hopes.

*Calip.* Sleep thy

Secure on either ear ; the burthen's yours To entertain him, mine to bring him hither.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*A Room in Adorio's House.*

*Enter Adorio, Camillo, Lentulo, and Donato.*

*Don.* Your wrong's beyond a challenge, and you deal

Too fairly with him, if you take that way To right yourself.

*Lent.* The least that you can do, In the terms of honour, is, when next you meet him,

To give him the bastinado.

*Cam.* And that done, Draw out his sword to cut your own throat !

No, Be ruled by me, shew yourself an Italian, And having received one injury, do not put off

Your hat for a second ; there are fellows that, For a few crowns, will make him sure, and so ; With your revenge, you prevent future mischief.

*Ador.* I thank you, gentlemen, for your studied care

In what concerns my honour ; but in that I'll steer my own course. Yet, that you may know

You are still my cabinet counsellors, my bosom

Lies open to you ; I begin to feel A weariness, nay, satiety of looseness, And something tells me here, I should repent My harshness to Calista.

*Enter Cario, hastily.*

*Camil.* When you please, You may remove that scruple.

*Ador.* I shall think on't.

*Car.* Sir, sir, are you ready ?

*Ador.* To do what ?

I am sure 'tis not yet dinner-time.

*Car.* True ; but I usher Such an unexpected dainty bit for breakfast, As yet I never cook'd : 'tis not botargo, Fried frogs, potatoes marrow'd, cavear, Carps' tongues, the pith of an English chine of beef,

Nor our Italian delicate, oil'd mushrooms, And yet a drawer-on too ; and if you shew not

An appetite, and a strong one, I'll not say To eat it, but devour it, without grace too, (For it will not stay a preface,) I am shamed, And all my past provocatives will be jeer'd at.

*Ador.* Art thou in thy wits ? what new-found rarity

Hast thou discover'd ?

*Car.* No such matter, sir ;

It grows in our own country.

*Don.* Serve it up,

I feel a kind of stomach.

*Camil.* I could feed too.

*Car.* Not a bit upon a march ; there's other lettuce

For your coarse lips ; this is peculiar only  
For my master's palate : I would give my  
whole year's wages,  
With all my vails, and fees due to the kitchen,  
But to be his carver.

*Ador.* Leave your fooling, sirrah,  
And bring in your dainty.

*Car.* 'Twill bring in itself,  
It has life and spirit in it ; and for proof,  
Behold ! Now fall to boldly ; my life on't,  
It comes to be tasted.

*Enter* Mirtilla.

*Camil.* Ha ! Calista's woman ?

*Lent.* A handsome one, by Venus.

*Ador.* Pray you forbear :—  
You are welcome, fair one.

*Den.* How that blush becomes her !

*Ador.* Aim your designs at me ?

*Mirt.* I am trusted, sir,

With a business of near consequence, which  
I would

To your private car deliver.

*Car.* I told you so.

Give her audience on your couch ; it is fit  
state

To a she-ambassador.

*Ador.* Pray you, gentlemen,  
For awhile dispose of yourselves, I'll straight  
attend you.

[*Exeunt* Camil. Lent. and Don.

*Car.* Dispatch her first for your honour :  
the quickly doing—

You know what follows.

*Ador.* Will you please to vanish ?

[*Exit* Cario.

Now, pretty one, your pleasure ? you shall  
find me

Ready to serve you ; if you'll put me to  
My oath, I'll take it on this book.

[*Offers to kiss her.*

*Mirt.* O sir,

The favour is too great, and far above  
My poor ambition ; I must kiss your hand  
In sign of humble thankfulness.

*Ador.* So modest !

*Mirt.* It well becomes a maid, sir. Spare  
those blessings  
For my noble mistress, upon whom with  
justice,

And, with your good allowance, I might add  
With a due gratitude, you may confer them ;  
But this will better speak her chaste desires,  
[*Delivers a letter.*

Than I can fancy what they are, much less  
With moving language, to their fair deserts,  
Aptly express them. Pray you read, but  
with

Compassion, I beseech you : if you find

The paper blurr'd with tears fallen from her  
eyes,

While she endeavour'd to set down that  
truth

Her soul did dictate to her, it must chal-  
lenge

A gracious answer.

*Ador.* O the powerful charms

By that fair hand writ down here ! not like  
those

Which dreadfully pronounced by Circe,  
changed

Ulysses' followers into beasts ; these have

An opposite working, I already feel,

But reading them, their saving operations ;  
And all those sensual, loose, and base

desires,  
Which have too long usurp'd, and tyrann-  
ized

Over my reason, of themselves fall off.  
Most happy metamorphosis ! in which

The film of error that did blind my judgment  
And seduced understanding, is removed.

What sacrifice of thanks can I return

Her pious charity, that not alone

Redeems me from the worst of slavery,

The tyranny of my beastly appetites,

To which I long obsequiously have how'd ;

But adds a matchless favour, to receive  
A benefit from me, nay, puts her goodness

In my protection ?

*Mirt.* Transform'd !—it is

A bless'd metamorphosis, and works

I know not how on me.

[*Aside.*

*Ador.* My joys are boundless,  
Curb'd with no limits : for her sake, Mirtilla ;

Instruct me how I presently may seal  
To those strong bonds of loyal love, and

service,

Which never shall be cancell'd.

*Mirt.* She'll become

Your debtor, sir, if you vouchsafe to answer  
Her pure affection.

*Ador.* Answer it, Mirtilla !

With more than adoration I kneel to it.

Tell her, I'll rather die a thousand deaths

Than fail, with punctuality, to perform

All her commands.

*Mirt.* I am lost on this assurance,

Which, if 'twere made to me, I should have  
faith in't,

As in an oracle : ah me ! [*Aside.*] She pre-  
sents you

This jewel, her dead grandsire's gift, in  
which,

As by a true Egyptian hieroglyphic,

(For so I think she call'd it,) you may be  
instructed what her suit is you should do.

And she with joy will suffer.

*Ador.* [looking at the trinket.] Heaven be pleased

To qualify this excess of happiness  
With some disaster, or I shall expire  
With a surfeit of felicity. With what art  
The cunning lapidary hath here express'd  
The rape of Proserpine! I apprehend  
Her purpose, and obey it; yet not as  
A helping friend, but a husband I will meet  
Her chaste desires with lawful heat, and warm  
Our Hymeneal sheets with such delights  
As leave no sting behind them.

*Mirt.* I despair then. [*Aside.*

*Ador.* At the time appointed say, wench,  
I'll attend her,  
And guard her from the fury of her mother,  
And all that dare disturb her.

*Mirt.* You speak well;  
And I believe you.

*Ador.* Would you aught else?

*Mirt.* I would carry  
Some love-sign to her; and now I think on  
it,

The kind salute you offer'd at my entrance,  
Hold it not impudence that I desire it,  
I'll faithfully deliver it.

*Ador.* O, a kiss!

You must excuse me, I was then mine own,  
Now wholly hers: the touch of other lips  
I do abjure for ever: but there's gold  
To bind thee still my advocate. [*Exit.*

*Mirt.* Not a kiss!

I was coy when it was offer'd, and now justly,  
When I beg one am denied. What scorching  
fires

My loose hopes kindle in me! shall I be  
False to my lady's trust, and, from a servant,  
Rise up her rival? His words have bewitch'd me,

And something I must do, but what?—'tis  
yet

An embryo, and how to give it form,  
Alas, I know not. Pardon me, Calista,  
I am nearest to myself, and time will teach  
me

To perfect that which yet is undetermined.

[*Exit.*

SCENE IV.—*The Country. A Forest.*

*Enter Claudio and Severino.*

*Claud.* You are master of yourself; yet,  
if I may,  
As a tried friend in my love and affection,  
And a servant in my duty, speak my thoughts  
Without offence, i' the way of counsel to you;  
I could allege, and truly, that your purpose  
For Naples, cover'd with a thin disguise,  
Is full of danger.

*Sev.* Danger, Claudio!

'Tis here, and everywhere, our forced companion:

The rising and the setting sun beholds us  
Environ'd with it; our whole life a journey  
Ending in certain ruin.

*Claud.* Yet we should not,  
Howe'er besieg'd, deliver up our fort  
Of life, till it be forced.

*Sev.* 'Tis so indeed

By wisest men concluded, which we should  
Obey as Christians; but when I consider  
How different the progress of our actions  
Is from religion, nay, morality,  
I cannot find in reason, why we should  
Be scrupulous that way only; or like meteors  
Blaze forth prodigious terrors, till our stuff  
Be utterly consumed, which once put out,  
Would bring security unto ourselves,  
And safety unto those we prey upon.  
O Claudio! since by this fatal hand  
The brother of my wife, bold Montecarlo,  
Was left dead in the field, and I proscribed:  
After my flight, by the justice of the king,  
My being hath been but a living death,  
With a continued torture.

*Claud.* Yet in that,

You do delude their bloody violence  
That do pursue your life.

*Sev.* While I, by rapines,

Live terrible to others as myself—  
What one hour can we challenge as our own,  
Unhappy as we are, yielding a beam  
Of comfort to us? Quiet night, that brings  
Rest to the labourer, is the outlaw's day,  
In which he rises early to do wrong,  
And when his work is ended, dares not sleep:  
Our time is spent in watches to entrap  
Such as would shun us, and to hide ourselves  
From the ministers of justice, that would  
bring us

To the correction of the law. O, Claudio,  
Is this a life to be preserv'd, and at  
So dear a rate? But why hold I discourse  
On this sad subject, since it is a burthen  
We are mark'd to bear, and not to be shook  
off

But with our human frailty? in the change  
Of dangers there is some delight, and there-  
fore

I am resolv'd for Naples.

*Claud.* May you meet there  
All comforts that so fair and chaste a wife  
As Fame proclaims her, without parallel,  
Can yield to ease your sorrows!

*Sev.* I much thank you;

Yet you may spare those wishes, which with  
joy

I have prov'd certainties, and from their want  
Her excellencies take lustre.



*Claud.* Ere you go yet,  
Some charge unto your squires not to fly out  
Beyond their bounds, were not impertinent;  
For though that with a look you can command them,

In your absence they'll be headstrong.

*Sev.* 'Tis well thought on,  
I'll touch my horn,—[*Blows his horn.*—]—they know my call.

*Claud.* And will,  
As soon as heard, make in to't from all quarters,  
As the flock to the shepherd's whistle.

*Enter Banditti.*

*1 Ban.* What's your will?

*2 Ban.* Hail sovereign of these woods!

*3 Ban.* We lay our lives

At your highness' feet.

*4 Ban.* And will confess no king,  
Nor laws but what come from your mouth;  
and those

We gladly will subscribe to.

*Sev.* Make this good,  
In my absence, to my substitute, to whom  
Pay all obedience as to myself;  
The breach of this in one particular  
I will severely punish: on your lives,  
Remember upon whom with our allowance  
You may securely prey, with such as are  
Exempted from your fury.

*Claud.* 'Twere not amiss,  
If you please, to help their memory; besides,  
Here are some newly initiated.

*Sev.* To these  
Read you the articles; I must be gone:  
Claudio, farewell!

*Claud.* May your return be speedy!

*1 Ban.* Silence; out with your table-books.

*2 Ban.* And observe.

*Claud.* [reads.] *The cormorant that lives  
in expectation*

*Of a long-wish'd for dearth, and, smiling,  
grinds*

*The faces of the poor, you may make spoil of;  
Even theft to such is justice.*

*3 Ban.* He's in my tables.

*Claud.* *The grand encloser of the commons,  
for*

*His private profit or delight, with all  
His herds that graze upon't, are lawful prize.*

*4 Ban.* And we will bring them in, although the devil

Stood roaring by, to guard them.

*Claud.* *If a usurer,  
Greedy, at his own price, to make a purchase,  
Taking advantage upon bond or mortgage  
From a prodigal, pass through our territories,*

*In the way of custom, or of tribute to us,  
You may ease him of his burthen.*

*2 Ban.* Wholesome doctrine.

*Claud.* *Builders of iron mills, that grub  
up forests  
With timber trees for shipping.*

*1 Ban.* May we not  
Have a touch at lawyers?

*Claud.* By no means; they may  
Too soon have a gripe at us; they are angry  
hornets,  
Not to be jested with.

*3 Ban.* This is not so well.

*Claud.* *The owners of dark shops, that  
vent their wares,  
With perjuries; cheating vintners, not contented*

*With half in half in their reckonings, yet  
cry out,*

*When they find their guests want coin, 'Tis  
late, and bed-time.*

*These ransack at your pleasures.*

*3 Ban.* How shall we know them?

*Claud.* If they walk on foot, by their rat-  
colour'd stockings,  
And shining-shoes; if horsemen, by short  
boots,

And riding-furniture of several counties.

*2 Ban.* Not one of the list escapes us.

*Claud.* *But for scholars,  
Whose wealth lies in their heads, and not  
their pockets,*

*Soldiers that have bled in their country's  
service;*

*The rent-rack'd farmer, needy market folks;  
The sweaty labourer, carriers that transport  
The goods of other men, are privileged;*

*But, above all, let none presume to offer  
Violence to women, for our king hath sworn,  
Who that way's a delinquent, without mercy  
Hangs for't, by martial law.*

*All.* Long live Severino,

And perish all such cullions as repine  
At his new monarchy!

*Claud.* About your business,  
That he may find, at his return, good cause  
To praise your care and discipline.

*All.* We'll not fail, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—Naples. *A Street.*

*Enter Laval and Calipso.*

*Lav.* Thou art sure mistaken; 'tis not possible

That I can be the man thou art employ'd to.

*Calip.* Not you the man! you are the man  
of men,

And such another, in my lady's eye,  
Never to be discover'd.

*Lav.* A mere stranger,  
Newly arrived !

*Calip.* Still the more probable,  
Since ladies, as you know, affect strange  
dainties,

And brought far to them. This is not an age  
In which saints live ; but women, knowing  
women,

That understand their *summum bonum* is  
Variety of pleasures in the touch,  
Derived from several nations ; and if men  
would

Be wise by their example——

*Lav.* As most are :

'Tis a coupling age !

*Calip.* Why, sir, do gallants travel ?

Answer that question ; but, at their return,  
With wonder to the hearers, to discourse of  
The garb and difference in foreign females,  
As the lusty girl of France, the sober German,  
The plump Dutch frow, the stately dame of  
Spain ;

The Roman libertine, and sprightly Tuscan,  
The merry Greek, Venetian courtesan,  
The English fair companion, that learns  
something

From every nation, and will fly at all :—  
I say again, the difference betwixt these  
And their own country gamesters.

*Lav.* Aptly urged.

Some make that their main end : but may I  
ask,

Without offence to your gravity, by what  
title

Your lady, that invites me to her favours,  
Is known in the city ?

*Calip.* If you were a true-born monsieur,  
You would do the business first, and ask that  
after.

If you only truck with her title, I shall hardly  
Deserve thanks for my travail ; she is, sir,  
No single-ducat trader, nor a beldam  
So frozen up, that a fever cannot thaw her ;  
No lioness by her breath.

*Lav.* Leave these impertinencies,  
And come to the matter.

*Calip.* Would you be as forward,  
When you draw for the upshot ! she is, sir,  
a lady,

A rich, fair, well-complexion'd, and what is  
Not frequent among Venus' votaries,  
Upon my credit, which good men have  
trusted,

A sound and wholesome lady, and her name is  
Madonna Iólante.

*Lav.* Iólante !

I have heard of her ; for chastity, and beauty,  
The wonder of the age.

*Calip.* Pray you, not too much

Of chastity ; fair and free I do subscribe to,  
And so you'll find her.

*Lav.* Come, you are a base creature ;  
And, covering your foul ends with her fair  
name,

Give me just reason to suspect you have  
A plot upon my life.

*Calip.* A plot ! very fine !

Nay, 'tis a dangerous one, pray you beware  
of't ;

'Tis cunningly contriv'd : I plot to bring you  
Afoot, with the travel of some forty paces,  
To those delights which a man not made of  
snow

Would ride a thousand miles for. You shall  
be

Received at a postern door, if you be not  
cautious,

By one whose touch would make old Nestor  
young,

And cure his hernia ; a terrible plot !

A kiss then ravish'd from you by such lips  
As flow with nectar, a juicy palm more  
precious

Than the famed Sibylla's bough, to guide  
you safe

Through mists of perfumes to a glorious  
room,

Where Jove might feast his Juno ; a dire  
plot !

A banquet I'll not mention, that is common :  
But I must not forget, to make the plot  
More horrid to you, the retiring bower,  
So furnish'd as might force the Persian's  
envy,

The silver bathing-tub, the cambric rubbers,  
The embroider'd quilt, the bed of gossamer  
And damask roses ; a mere powder plot  
To blow you up ! and last, a bed-fellow,  
To whose rare entertainment all these are  
But foils and settings off.

*Lav.* No more ; her breath  
Would warm an eunuch.

*Calip.* I knew I should hurt you :  
Now he begins to glow !

*Lav.* I am flesh and blood,  
And I were not man if I should not run the  
hazard,

Had I no other ends in't. I have consider'd  
Your motion, matron.

*Calip.* My plot, sir, on your life,  
For which I am deservedly suspected  
For a base and dangerous woman ! Fare you  
well, sir,

I'll be bold to take my leave.

*Lav.* I will along too.

Come, pardon my suspicion : I confess  
My error ; and eyeing you better, I per-  
ceive

There's nothing that is ill that can flow from you ;

I am serious, and, for proof of it, I'll purchase Your good opinion. [*Gives her his purse.*]

*Calip.* I am gentle natured, And can forget a greater wrong upon Such terms of satisfaction.

*Lav.* What's the hour ?

*Calip.* Twelve.

*Lav.* I'll not miss a minute.

*Calip.* I shall find you At your lodging ?

*Lav.* Certainly ; return my service, And for me kiss your lady's hands.

*Calip.* At twelve

I'll be your convoy.

*Lav.* I desire no better. [*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—*The Country.*

*Enter Durazzo, Caldoro, and Servant.*

*Dur.* Walk the horses down the hill ; I have a little

To speak in private. [*Exit Servant.*]

*Cald.* Good sir, no more anger.

*Dur.* Love do you call it ! madness, wilful madness ;

And since I cannot cure it, I would have you Exactly mad. You are a lover already, Be a drunkard too, and after turn small poet, And then you are mad, katexokên the mad-man.

*Cald.* Such as are safe on shore may smile at tempests ;

But I, that am embark'd, and every minute Expect a shipwreck, relish not your mirth : To me it is unseasonable.

*Dur.* Pleasing viands

Are made sharp by sick palates. I affect A handsome mistress in my gray beard as well.

As any boy of you all ; and on good terms Will venture as far i' the fire, so she be willing

To entertain me ; but ere I would dote, As you do, where there is no flattering hope Ever t' enjoy her, I would forswear wine, And kill this lecherous itch with drinking water,

Or live, like a Carthusian, on poor John, Then bathe myself night by night in marble dew,

And use no soap but camphire-balls.

*Cald.* You may,

(And I must suffer it,) like a rough surgeon, Apply these burning caustics to my wounds

Already gangrened, when soft unguents would

Better express an uncle with some feeling Of his nephew's torments.

*Dur.* I shall melt, and cannot Hold out if he whimper. O that this young fellow,

Who, on my knowledge, is able to beat a man,

Should be baffled by this blind imagined boy,

Or fear his bird-bolts ! [*Aside.*]

*Cald.* You have put yourself already To too much trouble, in bringing me thus far :

Now, if you please, with your good wishes, leave me

To my hard fortunes.

*Dur.* I'll forsake myself first.

Leave thee ! I cannot, will not ; thou shalt have

No cause to be weary of my company, For I'll be useful ; and, ere I see thee perish, Dispensing with my dignity and candour, I will do something for thee, though it savour

Of the old squire of Troy. As we ride, we will

Consult of the means : bear up.

*Cald.* I cannot sink,

Having your noble aids to buoy me up ;

There was never such a guardian.

*Dur.* How is this ?

Stale compliments to me ! when my work's done,

Commend the artificer, and then be thankful. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE II.—*Naples. A Room in Severino's House.*

*Enter Calista richly habited, and Mirtilla in the gown which Calista first wore.*

*Calis.* How dost thou like my gown ?

*Mirt.* 'Tis rich and courtlike.

*Calis.* The dressings too are suitable ?

*Mirt.* I must say so,

Or you might blame my want of care.

*Calis.* My mother

Little dreams of my intended flight, or that These are my nuptial ornaments.

*Mirt.* I hope so.

*Calis.* How dully thou reply'st ! thou dost not envy

Adorio's noble change, or the good fortune That it brings to me ?

*Mirt.* My endeavours that way

Can answer for me.

*Calis.* True ; you have discharged A faithful servant's duty, and it is

By me rewarded like a liberal mistress :  
I speak it not to upbraid you with my  
bounties,

Though they deserve more thanks and cere-  
mony

Than you have yet express'd.

*Mirt.* The miseries

Which, from your happiness, I am sure to  
suffer,

Restrain my forward tongue; and, gentle  
madam,

Excuse my weakness, though I do appear

A little daunted with the heavy burthen

I am to undergo: when you are safe,

My dangers, like to roaring torrents, will

Gush in upon me; yet I would endure

Your mother's cruelty; but how to bear

Your absence, in the very thought confounds  
me.

Since we were children I have loved and  
serv'd you;

I willingly learned to obey, as you

Grew up to knowledge, that you might  
command me;

And now to be divorced from all my com-  
forts!—

Can this be borne with patience?

*Calis.* The necessity

Of my strange fate commands it; but I vow

By my Adorio's love, I pity thee.

*Mirt.* Pity me, madam! a cold charity;

You must do more, and help me.

*Calis.* Ha! what said you?

I *must*? is this fit language for a servant?

*Mirt.* For one that would continue your  
poor servant,

And cannot live that day in which she is

Denied to be so. Can Mirtilla sit

Mourning alone, imagining those pleasures

Which you, this blessed Hymeneal night,

Enjoy in the embraces of your lord,

And my lord too, in being yours? (already

As such I love and honour him.) Shall a  
stranger

Sew you in a sheet, to guard that maidenhead

You must pretend to keep; and 'twill be-  
come you?

Shall another do those bridal offices,

Which time will not permit me to remember,

And I pine here with envy? pardon me,—

I must and will be pardon'd,—for my pas-  
sions

Are in extremes; and use some speedy means

That I may go along with you, and share

In those delights, but with becoming dis-  
tance;

Or by his life, which as a saint you swear by,  
I will discover all!

*Calis.* Thou canst not be

So treacherous and cruel, in destroying  
The building thou hast rais'd.

*Mirt.* Pray you do not tempt me,  
For 'tis resolv'd.

*Calis.* I know not what to think of't.

In the discovery of my secrets to her,  
I have made my slave my mistress; I must  
sooth her,

There's no evasion else. [*Aside.*] Prithee,  
Mirtilla,

Be not so violent, I am strangely taken  
With thy affection for me; 'twas my purpose  
To have thee sent for.

*Mirt.* When?

*Calis.* This very night;

And I vow deeply I shall be no sooner

In the desired possession of my lord,

But by some of his servants I will have thee  
Convey'd unto us.

*Mirt.* Should you break!

*Calis.* I dare not.

Come, clear thy looks, for instantly we'll  
prepare

For our departure.

*Mirt.* Pray you, forgive my boldness,

Growing from my excess of zeal to serve you.

*Calis.* I thank thee for't.

*Mirt.* You'll keep your word?

*Calis.* Still doubtful! [*Exit.*]

*Mirt.* 'Twas this I aim'd at, and leave the  
rest to fortune. [*Exit, following.*]

SCENE III.—*A Room in Adorio's House.*

*Enter* Adorio, Camillo, Lentulo, Donato,  
Cario, and Servants.

*Ador.* Haste you unto my villa, and take  
all

Provision along with you, and for use  
And ornament, the shortness of the time  
Can furnish you; let my best plate be set  
out,

And costliest hangings; and, if't be possible,  
With a merry dance to entertain the bride,  
Provide an epithalamium.

*Car.* Trust me

For belly timber: and for a song, I have  
A paper-blurrer, who on all occasions,  
For all times, and all seasons, hath such  
trinkets

Ready in the deck: it is but altering  
The names, and they will serve for any bride,  
Or bridegroom, in the kingdom.

*Ador.* But for the dance?

*Car.* I will make one myself, and foot it  
finely;

And summoning your tenants at my dresser,  
Which is, indeed, my drum, make a rare  
choice

Of the able youth, such as shall sweat sufficiently,  
And smell too, but not of amber, which, you know, is

The grace of the country-hall.

*Ador.* About it, Cario,  
And look you be careful.

*Car.* For mine own credit, sir.

[*Exeunt Cario and Servants.*]

*Ador.* Now, noble friends, confirm your loves, and think not

Of the penalty of the law, that does forbid  
The stealing away an heir: I will secure you,

And pay the breach of't.

*Camil.* Tell us what we shall do,  
We'll talk of that hereafter.

*Ador.* Pray you be careful

To keep the west gate of the city open,  
That our passage may be free, and bribe the watch

With any sum; this is all.

*Don.* A dangerous business!

*Camil.* I'll make the constable, watch,  
and porter drunk,

Under a crown.

*Lent.* And then you may pass while they snore,

Though you had done a murder.

*Camil.* Get but your mistress,  
And leave the rest to us.

*Ador.* You much engage me:  
But I forget myself.

*Camil.* Pray you, in what, sir?

*Ador.* Yielding too much to my affection,  
Though lawful now, my wounded reputation  
And honour suffer: the disgrace, in taking  
A blow in public from Caldoro, branded  
With the infamous mark of coward, in de-  
laying

To right myself, upon my cheek grows  
fresher;

That's first to be consider'd.

*Camil.* If you dare

Trust my opinion, (yet I have had  
Some practice and experience in duels,)  
You are too tender that way: can you answer  
The debt you owe your honour till you meet  
Your enemy from whom you may exact it?  
Hath he not left the city, and in fear  
Conceal'd himself, for aught I can imagine?  
What would you more?

*Ador.* I should do.

*Camil.* Never think on't,

Till fitter time and place invite you to it:  
I have read Caranza, and find not in his  
Grunmar

Of quarrels, that the injured man is bound  
To seek for reparation at an hour;

But may, and without loss, till he hath settled  
More serious occasions that import him,  
For a day or two defer it.

*Ador.* You'll subscribe

Your hand to this?

*Camil.* And justify't with my life;  
Presume upon't.

*Ador.* On, then; you shall o'er-rule me.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*A Room in Severino's House.*

*Enter Iolante and Calipso.*

*Iol.* I'll give thee a golden tongue, and  
have it hung up,

Over thy tomb, for a monument.

*Calip.* I am not prepared yet

To leave the world; there are many good  
pranks

I must dispatch in this kind before I die:

And I had rather, if your honour please,

Have the crowns in my purse.

*Iol.* Take that.

*Calip.* Magnificent lady!

May you live long, and, every moon, love-  
change,

That I may have fresh employment! you  
know what

Remains to be done?

*Iol.* Yes, yes; I will command

My daughter and Mirtilla to their chamber.

*Calip.* And lock them up; such liquorish  
kitlings are not,

To be trusted with our cream. Ere I go,  
I'll help you

To set forth the banquet, and place the can-  
died eringoes

Where he may be sure to taste them; then  
undress you,

For these things are cumbersome, when you  
should be active:

A thin night mantle to hide part of your-  
smock,

With your pearl embroider'd pantofles on  
your feet,

And then you are arm'd for service! nay,  
no trifling,

We are alone, and you know 'tis a point of  
folly

To be coy to eat when meat is set before  
you. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*A Street before Severino's House.*

*Enter Adorio and Servant.*

*Ador.* 'Tis eleven by my watch, the hour  
appointed.

Listen at the door—hear'st thou any stirring?

*Serv.* No, sir;

All's silent here.

*Ador.* Some cursed business keeps  
Her mother up. I'll walk a little circle,  
And shew where you shall wait us with the  
horses,  
And then return. This short delay afflicts  
me,  
And I presume to her it is not pleasing.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter Durazzo and Caldoro.*

*Dur.* What's, now to be done? prithe  
let's to bed, I am sleepy;  
And here's my hand on't, without more ado,  
By fair or foul play we'll have her to-morrow  
In thy possession.

*Cald.* Good sir, give me leave  
To taste a little comfort in beholding  
The place by her sweet presence sanctified.  
She may perhaps, to take air, ope the case-  
ment,

And looking out, a new star to be gazed on  
By me with adoration, bless these eyes,  
Ne'er happy but when she is made the object.

*Dur.* Is not here fine fooling!

*Cald.* Thou great queen of love,  
Or real or imagined, be propitious  
To me, thy faithful votary! and I vow  
To erect a statue to thee, equal to  
Thy picture, by Apelles' skilful hand  
Left as the great example of his art;  
And on thy thigh I'll hang a golden Cupid,  
His torches flaming, and his quiver full,  
For further honour!

*Dur.* End this waking dream,  
And let's away.

*Enter from the house Calista and Mirtilla.*

*Calis.* Mirtilla!

*Cald.* 'Tis her voice!

*Calis.* You heard the horses' footing?

*Mirt.* Certainly.

*Calis.* Speak low. My lord Adorio!

*Cald.* I am dumb.

*Dur.* The darkness friend us too! Most  
honour'd madam,  
Adorio, your servant.

*Calis.* As you are so,  
I do command your silence till we are  
Further remov'd; and let this kiss assure you  
(I thank the sable night that hides my  
blushes)

I am wholly yours.

*Dur.* Forward, you micher!

*Mirt.* Madam,

Think on Mirtilla! [*Goes into the house.*]

*Dur.* I'll not now enquire  
The mystery of this, but bless kind fortune  
Favouring us beyond our hopes: yet, now  
I think on't,

I had ever a lucky hand in such smock  
night-work. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter Adorio and Servant.*

*Ador.* This slowness does amaze me:  
she's not alter'd

In her late resolution?

*Isl.* [*within.*] Get you to bed,  
And stir not on your life, till I command you.

*Ador.* Her mother's voice! listen.

*Serv.* Here comes the daughter.

*Re-enter Mirtilla, hastily.*

*Mirt.* Whither shall I fly for succour?

*Ador.* To these arms,  
Your castle of defence, impregnable,  
And not to be blown up: how your heart  
beats!

Take comfort, dear Calista, you are now  
In his protection that will ne'er forsake you:  
Adorio, your changed Adorio, swears  
By your best self, an oath he dares not break,  
He loves you, loves you in a noble way,  
His constancy firm as the poles of heaven.  
I will urge no reply, silence becomes you;  
And I'll defer the music of your voice,  
Till we are in a place of safety.

*Mirt.* O blest error! [*Aside. Exeunt.*]

*Enter Severino.*

*Sev.* 'Tis midnight: how my fears of cer-  
tain death,  
Being surprised, combat with my strong  
hopes  
Raised on my chaste wife's goodness! I am  
grown

A stranger in the city, and no wonder,  
I have too long been so unto myself:  
Grant me a little truce, my troubled soul—  
I hear some footing, ha!

*Enter Laval and Calipso.*

*Calip.* That is the house,  
And there's the key: you'll find my lady  
ready

To entertain you; 'tis not fit I should  
Stand gaping by while you bill: I have  
brought you on,  
Charge home, and come off with honour.

[*Exit.*]

*Sev.* It makes this way.

*Lav.* I am much troubled, and know not  
what to think

Of this design.

*Sev.* It still comes on.

*Lav.* The watch!

I am betray'd.

*Sev.* Should I now appear fearful,  
It would discover me; there's no retiring.

My confidence must protect me ; I'll appear  
As if I walk'd the round.—Staud !

*Lav.* I am lost.

*Sev.* The word ?

*Lav.* Pray you forbear ; I am a stranger,  
And missing, this dark stormy night, my way  
To my lodging, you shall do a courteous  
office

To guide me to it.

*Sev.* Do you think I stand here

For a page or a porter ?

*Lav.* Good sir, grow not so high :  
I can justify my being abroad ; I am  
No pilfering vagabond, and what you are  
Stands yet in supposition ; and I charge you,  
If you are an officer, bring me before your  
captain ;

For if you do assault me, though not in fear  
Of what you can do alone, I will cry murder,  
And raise the streets.

*Sev.* Before my captain, ha !

And bring my head to the block. Would we  
were parted,

I have greater cause to fear the watch than  
he.

*Lav.* Will you do your duty ?

*Sev.* I must close with him :—

Troth, sir, whate'er you are, (yet by your  
language,

I guess you a gentleman,) I'll not use the  
rigour

Of my place upon you : only quit this street,  
For your stay here will be dangerous ; and  
good night !

*Lav.* The like to you, sir ; I'll grope out  
my way

As well as I can. O damn'd bawd !—Fare  
you well, sir. [*Exit.*]

*Sev.* I am glad he's gone ; there is a secret  
passage,

Unknown to my wife, through which this  
key will guide me

To her desired embraces, which must be,  
My presence being beyond her hopes, most  
welcome. [*Exit.*]

SCENE VI.—*A Room in Severino's House.*

*Iölaute is heard speaking behind a curtain.*

*Iö.* I am full of perplex'd thoughts. Imperious  
blood,

Thou only art a tyrant ; judgment, reason,  
To whatsoever thy edicts proclaim,  
With vassal fear subscribe against them-  
selves.

I am yet safe in the port, and see before me,  
If I put off, a rough tempestuous sea,  
The raging winds of infamy from all quarters  
Assuring my destruction ; yet my lust

Swelling the wanton sails, (my understand-  
ing

Stow'd under hatches,) like a desperate pilot,  
Commands me to urge on. My pride, my  
pride,

Self-love, and over-value of myself,  
Are justly punish'd : I, that did deny  
My daughter's youth allow'd and lawful  
pleasures,

And would not suffer in her those desires  
She suck'd in with my milk, now in my  
waning

Am scorch'd and burnt up with libidinous  
fire,

That must consume my fame ; yet still I  
throw

More fuel on it.

*Enter Severino before the curtain.*

*Sev.* 'Tis her voice, poor turtle :

She's now at her devotions, praying for  
Her banish'd mate ; alas, that for my guilt  
Her innocence should suffer ! But I do  
Commit a second sin in my deferring

The ecstacy of joy that will transport her  
Beyond herself, when she flies to my lips,  
And seals my welcome.—[*Draws the curtain,*

*and discovers Iölaute seated, with a  
rich banquet, and tapers, set forth.*—  
Iölaute !

*Iö.* Ha !

Good angels guard me !

*Sev.* What do I behold !

Some sudden flash of lightning strike me  
blind,

Or cleave the centre of the earth, that I  
May living find a sepulchre to swallow  
Me and my shame together !

*Iö.* Guilt and horror

Confound me in one instant ; thus surprised,  
The subtily of all wantons, though ab-  
stracted,

Can shew no seeming colour of excuse,  
To plead in my defence. [*Aside.*]

*Sev.* Is this her mourning ?

O killing object ! The imprison'd vapours  
Of rage and sorrow make an earthquake in  
me ;

This little world, like to a tottering tower,  
Not to be underpropp'd ;—yet in my fall,  
I'll crush thee with my ruins.

[*Draws a poniard.*]

*Iö.* [*kneeling.*] Good sir, hold :

For, my defence unheard, you wrong your  
justice,

If you proceed to execution ;

And will, too late, repent it.

*Sev.* Thy defence !

To move it, adds (could it receive addition)

Ugliness to the loathsome leprosy  
That, in thy being a strumpet, hath already  
Infected every vein, and spreads itself  
Over this carrion, which would poison vul-  
tures

And dogs, should they devour it. Yet, to  
stamp

The seal of reprobation on thy soul,  
I'll hear thy impudent lies, borrow'd from  
hell,

And prompted by the devil, thy tutor, whore!  
Then send thee to him. Speak.

*Iol.* Your Gorgon looks  
Turn me to stone, and a dead palsy seizes  
My silenced tongue.

*Sev.* O Fate, that the disease  
Were general in women, what a calm  
Should wretched men enjoy! Speak, and  
be brief,

Or thou shalt suddenly feel me.

*Iol.* Be appeased, sir,  
Until I have deliver'd reasons for  
This solemn preparation.

*Sev.* On, I hear thee.

*Iol.* With patience ask your memory;  
'twill instruct you,

This very day of the month, seventeen years  
since,

You married me.

*Sev.* Grant it, what canst thou urge  
From this?

*Iol.* That day, since your proscription, sir,  
In the remembrance of it annually,  
The garments of my sorrow laid aside,  
I have with pomp observed.

*Sev.* Alone!

*Iol.* The thoughts  
Of my felicity then, my misery now,  
Were the invited guests; imagination  
Teaching me to believe that you were pre-  
sent,

And a partner in it.

*Sev.* Rare! this real banquet  
To feast your fancy; fiend! could fancy  
drink off

These flaggons to my health, or the idle  
thought,

Like Baal, devour these delicates? the room  
Perfumed to take his nostrils! this loose  
habit,

Which Messalina would not wear, put on  
To fire his lustful eyes! Wretch, am I  
grown

So weak in thy opinion, that it can  
Flatter credulity that these gross tricks  
May be foisted on me? Where's my daughter?  
where

The bawd your woman? answer me.—  
Calista!

Mirtilla! they are disposed of, if not  
murder'd,

To make all sure; and yet methinks your  
neighbour,

Your whistle, agent, parasite, Calipso,  
Should be within call, when you hem, to  
usher in

The close adulterer. [*Lays hands on her.*]

*Iol.* What will you do?

*Sev.* Not kill thee, do not hope it; I am  
not

So near to reconcilment. Ha! this scarf,  
The intended favour to your stallion, now

Is useful: do not strive;—[*He binds her.*—  
thus bound, expect

All studied tortures my assurance, not  
My jealousy, thou art false, can pour upon  
thee.

In darkness howl thy mischiefs; and if rank-  
ness

Of thy imagination can conjure  
The ribald [hither,] glut thyself with him;

I will cry *Aim!* and in another room  
Determine of my vengeance. Oh, my heart-

strings! [*Exit with the tapers.*]

*Iol.* Most miserable woman! and yet  
sitting

A judge in mine own cause upon myself,  
I could not mitigate the heavy doom

My incens'd husband must pronounce upon  
me.

In my intents I am guilty, and for them  
Must suffer the same punishment, as if

I had, in fact, offended.

*Calip.* [*within.*] Bore my eyes out,  
If you prove me faulty; I'll but tell my lady

What caused your stay, and instantly pre-  
sent you.

*Enter Calipso.*

How's this? no lights! What new device?  
will she play

At blindman's-buff?—Madam!

*Iol.* Upon thy life,

Speak in a lower key.

*Calip.* The mystery

Of this, sweet lady? where are you?

*Iol.* Here, fast bound.

*Calip.* By whom?

*Iol.* I'll whisper that into thine ear,

And then farewell for ever.—

*Calip.* How! my lord?

I am in a fever: horns upon horns grow on  
him!

Could he pick no hour but this to break a  
bargain

Almost made up?

*Iol.* What shall we do?



*Calip.* Betray him ;  
I'll instantly raise the watch.

*Iö.* And so make me  
For ever infamous.

*Calip.* The gentleman,  
The rarest gentleman is at the door,  
Shall he lose his labour? Since that you  
must perish,

\*Twill shew a woman's spleen in you to fall  
Deservedly ; give him his answer, madam.  
I have on the sudden in my head a strange  
whim ;

But I will first unbind you. [*Frees Iö.*  
*Iö.* Now what follows?

*Calip.* I will supply your place ; [*Iö.*  
*binds Calip.*] and, bound, give me  
Your mantle, take my night-gown ; send  
away

The gentleman satisfied. I know my lord  
Wants power to hurt you, I perhaps may get  
A kiss by the bargain, and all this may prove  
But some neat love-trick : if he should grow  
furious,

And question me, I am resolved to put on  
An obstinate silence. Pray you dispatch the  
gentleman,

His courage may cool.

*Iö.* I'll speak with him, but if  
To any base or lustful end, may mercy  
At my last gasp forsake me ! [*Exit.*

*Calip.* I was too rash,  
And have done what I wish undone : say he  
should kill me ?

I have run my head in a fine noose, and I  
smell

The pickle I am in ! 'las, how I shudder  
Still more and more ! would I were a she  
Priapus,

Stuck up in a garden to fright away the  
crows,

So I were out of the house ! she's at her  
pleasure,

Whate'er she said ; and I must endure the  
torture—

He comes ; I cannot pray, my fears will kill  
me.

*Re-enter Severino with a knife in his hand,  
throwing open the doors violently.*

*Sev.* It is a deed of darkness, and I need  
No light to guide me ; there is something  
tells me

I am too slow-paced in my wreak, and trifle  
In my revenge. All hush'd ! no sigh nor  
groan,

To witness her compunction ! can guilt sleep,  
And innocence be open-eyed ? even now,  
Perhaps, she dreams of the adulterer,

And in her fancy hugs him. Wake, thou  
strumpet,

And instantly give up unto my vengeance  
The villain that defiles my bed ; discover  
Both what and where he is, and suddenly,  
That I may bind you face to face, then sew  
you

Into one sack, and from some steep rock  
hurl you

Into the sea together ; do not play with  
The lightning of my rage ; break stubborn  
silence,

And answer my demands ; will it not be ?  
I'll talk no longer ; thus I mark thee for  
A common strumpet.

[*Strikes at her with the knife.*

*Calip.* Oh !

*Sev.* Thus stab these arms  
That have stretch'd out themselves to grasp  
a stranger.

*Calip.* Oh !

*Sev.* This is but an induction ; I will draw  
The curtains of the tragedy hereafter :  
Howl on, 'tis music to me. [*Exit.*

*Calip.* He is gone.

A kiss and love-tricks ! he hath villainous  
teeth,

May sublimed mercury draw them ! if all  
dealers

In my profession were paid thus, there  
would be

A dearth of cuckolds. Oh my nose ! I had  
one :

My arms, my arms ! I dare not cry for fear ;  
Cursed desire of gold, how art thou punish'd !

*Enter Iö.*

*Iö.* Till now I never truly knew myself,  
Nor by all principles and lectures read  
In chastity's cold school, was so instructed  
As by her contrary, how base and deform'd  
Loose appetite is ; as in a few short minutes  
This stranger hath, and feelingly, deliver'd.  
Oh ! that I could recall my bad intentions,  
And be as I was yesterday, untainted  
In my desires, as I am still in fact,  
I thank his temperance ! I could look un-  
daunted

Upon my husband's rage, and smile at it,  
So strong the guards and sure defences are  
Of armed innocence ; but I will endure  
The penance of my sin, the only means  
Is left to purge it. The day breaks.—  
*Calipso !*

*Calip.* Here, madam, here.

*Iö.* Hath my lord visited thee ?  
*Calip.* Hell take such visits ! these stabb'd

arms, and loss

Of my nose you left fast on, may give you a  
relish

What a night I have had of't, and what you  
had suffered,

Had I not supplied your place.

*Iol.* I truly grieve for't ;

Did not my husband speak to thee ?

*Calip.* Yes, I heard him,

And felt him, *ecce signum*, with a mischief !

But he knew not me ; like a true-bred Spartan  
boy,

With silence I endured it ; he could not get  
One syllable from me.

*Iol.* Something may be fashion'd  
From this ; invention help me ! I must be  
sudden. [Unbinds her.

Thou art free, exchange, quick, quick ! now  
bind me sure,

And leave me to my fortune.

*Calip.* Pray you consider

The loss of my nose ; had I been but carted  
for you,

Though wash'd with mire and chamber-lie,  
I had

Examples to excuse me : but my nose,

My nose, dear lady !

*Iol.* Get off, I'll send to thee.

If so, it may take ; if it fail, I must  
Suffer whatever follows. [Exit Calipso.

*Re-enter Severino with the knife and taper.*

*Sev.* I have search'd  
In every corner of the house, yet find not  
My daughter, nor her maid ; nor any print  
Of a man's footing, which, this wet night,  
would

Be easily discern'd, the ground being soft,  
At his coming in or going out.

*Iol.* 'Tis he,  
And within hearing ; heav'n forgive this  
feigning,

I being forced to't to preserve my life,  
To be better spent hereafter !

*Sev.* I begin  
To stagger, and my love, if it knew how,  
(Her piety heretofore and fame remembered,)  
Would plead in her excuse.

*Iol.* [*aloud.*] You blessed guardians  
Of matrimonial faith, and just revengers  
Of such as do in fact offend against  
Your sacred rites and ceremonies ; by all titles  
And holy attributes you do vouchsafe  
To be invoked, look down with saving pity  
Upon my matchless sufferings !

*Sev.* At her devotions :  
Affliction makes her repent.

*Iol.* Look down  
Upon a wretched woman, and as I

Have kept the knot of wedlock, in the temple  
By the priest fasten'd, firm ; (though in loose  
wishes

I yield I have offended ;) to strike blind  
The eyes of jealousy, that see a crime  
I never yet committed, and to free me  
From the unjust suspicion of my lord,  
Restore my martyr'd face and wounded arms  
To their late strength and beauty.

*Sev.* Does she hope  
To be cured by miracle ?

*Iol.* This minute I  
Perceive with joy my orisons heard and  
granted.

You ministers of mercy, who unseen,  
And by a supernatural means, have done  
This work of heavenly charity, be ever  
Canonized for't !

*Sev.* I did not dream, I heard her,  
And I have eyes too, they cannot deceive  
me :

If I have no belief, in their assurance,  
I must turn sceptic. Ha ! this is the hand,  
And this the fatal instrument : these drops  
Of blood, that gush'd forth from her face  
and arms,  
Still fresh upon the floor. This is some-  
thing more

Than wonder or amazement ; I profess  
I am astonish'd.

*Iol.* Be incredulous still,  
And go on in your barbarous rage, led to it  
By your false guide, suspicion ; have no faith  
In my so long tried loyalty, nor believe  
That which you see ; and for your satisfac-  
tion,  
My doubted innocence cleared by miracle,  
Proceed ; these veins have now new blood,  
if you

Resolve to let it out.  
*Sev.* I would not be fool'd  
With easiness of belief, and faintly give  
Credit to this strange wonder ; 'tis now  
thought on :

In a fitter place and time I'll sound this  
further. [Aside.

How can I expiate my sin ? or hope,  
[Unties her.

Though now I write myself thy slave, the  
service

Of my whole life can win thee to pronounce  
Despair'd-of pardon ? Shall I kneel ? that's  
poor,  
Thy mercy must urge more in my defence,  
Than I can fancy ; wilt thou have revenge ?  
My heart lies open to thee.

*Iol.* This is needless  
To me, who in the duty of a wife,  
Know I must suffer.

*Sev.* Thou art made up of goodness,  
And from my confidence that I am alone  
The object of thy pleasures, until death  
Divorce us, we will know no separation.  
Without inquiring why, as sure thou wilt  
not,  
Such is thy meek obedience, thy jewels  
And choicest ornaments pack'd up, thou  
shalt  
Along with me, and as a queen be honour'd  
By such as style me sovereign. Already  
My banishment is repeal'd, thou being  
present ;  
The Neapolitan court a place of exile  
When thou art absent ; my stay here is  
mortal,  
Of which thou art too sensible, I perceive it ;  
Come, dearest Iölane, with this breath  
All jealousy is blown away. [*Embraces her.*  
*Iö.* Be constant. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*The Country.*

*A Noise within, as of a horse fallen ;—then  
enter Durazzo, Caldoro, and Servant,  
with Calista in their arms.*

*Dur.* Hell take the stumbling jade !

*Cald.* Heaven help the lady !

*Serv.* The horse hath broke his neck.

*Dur.* Would thine were crack'd too,  
So the lady had no harm ! Give her fresh  
air,

'Tis but a swoon.

*Cald.* 'Tis more, she's dead.

*Dur.* Examine

Her limbs if they be whole : not too high,  
not too high,

You ferret ; this is no coney-burrow for you.  
How do you find her ?

*Cald.* No breath of comfort, sir : too  
cruel fate !

Had I still pined away, and linger'd under  
The modesty of just and honest hopes  
After a long consumption, sleep and death  
To me had been the same ; but now, as  
'twere,

Possess'd of all my wishes, in a moment  
To have them ravish'd from me ! suffer  
shipwreck

In view of the port ! and, like a half-starv'd  
beggar,

No sooner in compassion clothed, but  
coffin'd !

Malevolent destinies, too unning in  
Wretched Caldoro's tortures ! O Calista,  
If thy immortal part hath not already  
Left this fair palace, let a beam of light

Drawn from thine eye, in this Cimmerian  
darkness,

To guide my shaking hand to touch the  
anchor

Of hope in thy recovery.

*Calis.* Oh !

*Dur.* She lives ;

Disturb her not : she is no right-bred woman,  
If she die with one fall ; some of my ae-  
quaintance

Have ta'en a thousand merrily, and are still  
Excellent wrestlers at the close hug.

*Cald.* Good sir—

*Dur.* Prithree be not angry, I should speak  
thus if

My mother were in her place.

*Cald.* But had you heard

The music of the language which she used

To me, believed Adorio, as she rode

Behind me ; little thinking that she did

Embrace Caldoro—

*Calis.* Ah, Adorio !

*Dur.* Leave talking, I conceive it.

*Calis.* Are you safe ?

*Cald.* And raised, like you, from death to  
life, to hear you.

*Calis.* Hear my defence then, ere I take  
my veil off,

A simple maid's defence, which, looking on  
you,

I faintly could deliver ; willingly

I am become your prize, and therefore use

Your victory nobly ; heaven's bright eye, the  
sun,

Draws up the grossest vapours, and I hope  
I ne'er shall prove an envious cloud to  
darken

The splendour of your merits. I could urge  
With what disdain, nay scorn, I have de-  
clin'd

The shadows of insinuating pleasures

Tender'd by all men else, you only being

The object of my hopes : that cruel prince

To whom the olive-branch of peace is offer'd,

Is not a conqueror, but a bloody tyrant,

If he refuse it ; nor should you wish a  
triumph,

Because Calista's humble : I have said,

And now expect your sentence.

*Dur.* What a throng

Of clients would be in the court of Love,

Were there many such she-advocates ! Art  
thou dumb ?

Canst thou say nothing for thyself ?

*Cald.* [*Kneels.*] Dear lady,

Open your eyes, and look upon the man,

The man you have elected for your judge,

Kneeling to you for mercy.

*Calis.* I should know

This voice, and something more than fear I  
am

Deceived ; but now I look upon his face,  
I am assured I am wretched.

*Dur.* Why, good lady ?

Hold her up, she'll fall again before her time  
else.

'The youth's a well-timber'd youth, look on  
his making ;

His hair curl'd naturally ; he's whole-chested  
too,

And will do his work as well, and go through  
stitch with't,

As any Adorio in the world, my state on't !  
A chicken of the right kind ; and if he prove  
not

A cock of the game, cuckold him first, and  
after

Make a capon of him.

*Calis.* I'll cry out a rape,  
If thou unhand me not ; would I had died  
In my late trance, and never lived to know  
I am betray'd !

*Dur.* To a young and active husband !  
'Call you that treachery ? there are a shoal of  
Young wenches i'the city, would vow a pil-  
grimage

Beyond Jerusalem, to be so cheated.—

To her again, you milksop ! violent storms  
Are soon blown over.

*Calis.* How could'st thou, Caldoro,  
With such a frontless impudence arm thy  
hopes

'So far, as to believe I might consent  
To this lewd practice ? have I not often told  
thee,

How'er I pitied thy misplaced affection,  
I could not answer it ; and that there was  
A strong antipathy between our passions,  
Not to be reconciled ?

*Cald.* Vouchsafe to hear me  
With an impartial ear, and it will take from  
The rigour of your censure. Man was mark'd  
A friend, in his creation, to himself,  
And may with fit ambition conceive  
The greatest blessings and the highest  
honours

Appointed for him, if he can achieve them  
The right and noble way : I grant you were  
The end of my design, but still pursued  
With a becoming modesty, heaven at length  
Being pleas'd, and not my arts, to further it.

*Dur.* Now he comes to her : on, boy !

*Cald.* I have served you  
With a religious zeal, and borne the burthen  
Of your neglect, if I may call it so,  
Beyond the patience of a man : to prove this,  
I have seen those eyes with pleasant glances  
play

Upon Adorio's, like Phœbe's shine  
Gilding a crystal river ; and your lip  
Rise up in civil courtship to meet his,  
While I bit mine with envy : yet these  
favours,

How'er my passions raged, could not pro-  
voke me

To one act of rebellion against  
My loyalty to you, the sovereign  
To whom I owe obedience.

*Calis.* My blushes

Confess this for a truth.

*Dur.* A flag of truce is

Hung out in this acknowledgment.

*Cald.* I could add,

But that you may interpret what I speak  
The malice of a rival, rather than  
My due respect to your deserts, how faintly  
Adorio hath return'd thanks to the bounty  
Of your affection, ascribing it

As a tribute to his worth, and not in you  
An act of mercy : could he else, invited  
(As by your words I understood) to take you  
To his protection, grossly neglect  
So gracious an offer, or give power  
To Fate itself to cross him ? O, dear madam,  
We are all the balls of time, toss'd to and  
fro,

From the plough unto the throne, and back  
again :

Under the swing of destiny mankind suffers,  
And it appears, by an unchang'd decree,  
You were appointed mine ; wise nature al-  
ways

Aiming at due proportion : and if so,  
I may believe with confidence, heaven, in  
pity

Of my sincere affection, and long patience,  
Directed you, by a most blessed error,  
To your vow'd servant's bosom.

*Dur.* By my holiday,

Tickling philosophy !

*Calis.* I am, sir, too weak

To argue with you ; but my stars have better,  
I hope, provided for me.

*Cald.* If there be  
Disparity between us, 'tis in your  
Compassion to level it.

*Dur.* Give fire

To the mine, and blow her up.

*Calis.* I am sensible  
Of what you have endured ; but on the  
sudden,

With my unusual travel, and late bruise,  
I am exceeding weary. In yon grove,  
While I repose myself, be you my guard ;  
My spirits with some little rest revived,  
We will consider further : for my part,  
You shall receive modest and gentle answers

To your demands, though short, perhaps,  
to make you  
Full satisfaction.

*Cald.* I am exalted

In the employment ; sleep secure, I'll be  
Your vigilant centinel.

*Calis.* But I command you,  
And as you hope for future grace, obey me,  
Presume not with one stolen kiss to disturb  
The quiet of my slumbers ; let your tem-  
perance,

And not your lust, watch o'er me.

*Cald.* My desires

Are frozen, till your pity shall dissolve them.

*Dur.* Frozen ! think not of frost, fool, in  
the dog-days.

Remember the old adage, and make use of t,  
*Occasion's bald behind.*

*Calis.* Is this your uncle ?

*Cald.* And guardian, madam : at your  
better leisure,

When I have deserved it, you may give him  
thanks

For his many favours to me.

*Calis.* He appears

A pleasant gentleman.

[*Exeunt* Caldoro and Calista.]

*Dur.* You should find me so,  
But that I do hate incest : I grow heavy ;  
Sirrah, provide fresh horses ; I'll seek out  
Some hollow tree, and dream till you return,  
Which I charge you to hasten.

*Serv.* With all care, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The Country. A Room in  
Adorio's House.*

*Enter* Cario, *with several* Villagers,  
Musicians, &c.

*Car.* Let your eyes be rivetted to my heels,  
and miss not

A hair's breadth of my footing ; our dance  
has

A most melodious note, and I command you  
To have ears like hares this night, for my  
lord's honour,

And something for my worship ; your re-  
ward is

To be drunk-blind like moles, in the wine-  
cellar ;

And though you ne'er see after, 'tis the  
better ;

You were born for this night's service. And,  
do you hear,

Wire-string and cat-gut men, and strong-  
breath'd hobboys,

For the credit of your calling, have not  
your instruments

To tune when you should strike up ; but  
twang it perfectly,

As you would read your neck-verse ; and  
you, warbler,

Keep your wind pipe moist, that you may  
not spit and hem,

When you should make division. How I  
sweat !

Authority is troublesome ;—[*A horn within.*]  
—they are come,

I know it by the cornet that I placed

On the hill to give me notice ; marshal  
yourselves

I the rear ; the van is yours.

*Enter* Adorio, Mirtilla, Camillo, Dentulo,  
and Donato

Now chant it sprightly.

SONG, *between* Juno and Hymen.

Juno to the Bride.

*Enter a maid ; but made a bride,*

*Be bold, and freely taste*

*The marriage banquet, ne'er denied*

*To such as sit down chaste.*

*Though he unloose thy virgin zone,*

*Presumed against thy will,*

*Those joys reserved to him alone,*

*Thou art a virgin still.*

Hymen to the Bridegroom.

*Hail, bridegroom, hail ! thy choice thus made,*

*As thou wouldst have her true,*

*Thou must give o'er thy wanton trade,*

*And bid loose fires adieu.*

*That husband who would have his wife*

*To him continue chaste,*

*In her embraces spends his life,*

*And makes abroad no waste.*

Hymen and Juno.

*Sport then like turtles, and bring forth*

*Such pledges as may be*

*Assurance of the father's worth,*

*And mother's purity.*

*Juno doth bless the nuptial bed ;*

*Thus Hymen's torches burn.*

*Live long, and may, when both are dead,*

*Your ashes fill one urn !*

*Ador.* A well-penn'd ditty.

*Camil.* Not ill sung.

*Ador.* What follows? [*to the dancers.*]

*Car.* Use your eyes. If ever—now your  
master-piece !

A DANCE.

*Ador.* 'Tis well perform'd ; take that, but  
not from me,

'Tis your new lady's bounty, thank her  
for it ;

All that I have is hers.

*Car.* I must have three shares  
For my pains and properties, the rest shall  
be  
Divided equally.

[*Exeunt* Cario, Villagers, &c.]

*Mirt.* My real fears  
Begin, and soon my painted comforts vanish,  
In my discovery.

*Ador.* Welcome to your own !  
You have (a wonder in a woman) kept  
Three long hours silence ; and the greater,  
holding  
Your own choice in your arms ; a blessing  
for which

I will be thankful to you : nay, unmask,  
And let mine eye and ears together feast,  
Too long by you kept empty. Oh, you want  
Your woman's help, I'll do her office for you.

[*Takes off her mask.*]

Mirtilla !

*Camil.* It is she, and wears the habit  
In which Calista three days since appeared,  
As she came from the temple.

*Lent.* All this trouble

For a poor waiting-maid !

*Don.* We are grossly gull'd.

*Ador.* Thou child of impudence, answer  
me, and truly,

Or, though the tongues of angels pleaded  
mercy,

Tortures shall force it from thee.

*Mirt.* Innocence

Is free, and open-breasted ; of what crime  
Stand I accused, my lord ?

*Ador.* What crime ! no language  
Can speak it to the height ; I shall become  
Discourse for fools and drunkards. How  
was this

Contrived ? who help'd thee in the plot ?  
discover.

Were not Calista's aids in't ?

*Mirt.* No, on my life ;

Nor am I faulty.

*Ador.* No ! What May-game's this ?

Didst thou treat with me for thy mistress's  
favours,

To make sale of thine own ?

*Mirt.* With her and you  
I have dealt faithfully : you had her letter  
With the jewel I presented : she received  
Your courteous answer, and prepared herself  
To be removed by you : and howsoever  
You take delight to hear what you have done,  
From my simplicity, and make my weakness  
The subject of your mirth, as it suits well  
With my condition, I know you have her  
In your possession.

*Ador.* How ! has she left  
Her mother's house ?

*Mirt.* You drive this nail too far.  
Indeed she deeply vow'd, at her departure,  
To send some of your lordship's servants for  
me,

(Though you were pleased to take the pains  
yourself,)

That I might still be near her, as a shadow  
To follow her, the substance.

*Ador.* She is gone then ?

*Mirt.* This is too much ; but, good my  
lord, forgive me,

I come a virgin hither to attend  
My noble mistress, though I must confess,  
I look with sore eyes upon her good fortune,  
And wish it were mine own.

*Ador.* Then, as it seems,

You do yourself affect me ?

*Mirt.* Should she hear me,  
And in her sudden fury kill me for't,  
I durst not, sir, deny it ; since you are  
A man so form'd, that not poor I alone,  
But all our sex like me, I think, stand bound  
To be enamour'd of you.

*Ador.* O my fate !

How justly am I punish'd, in thee punish'd,  
For my defended wantonness ! I, that scorn'd  
The mistress when she sought me, now I  
would

Upon my knees receive her, am become  
A prey unto her bondswoman, my honour too  
Neglected for this purchase. Art thou one of  
those

Ambitious servingwomen, who, contemning  
The embraces of their equals, aim to be  
The wrong way ladyfied, by a lord ? was there  
No forward page or footman in the city,  
To do the feat, that in thy lust I am chosen  
To be the executioner ? dar'st thou hope  
I can descend so low ?

*Mirt.* Great lords sometimes  
For change leave calver'd salmon, and eat  
sprats :

In modesty I dare speak no more.

*Camil.* If 'twere

A fish-day, though you like it not, I could  
say

I have a stomach, and would content myself  
With this pretty whiting-mop.

*Ador.* Discover yet

How thou cam'st to my hands.

*Mirt.* My lady gone,  
Fear of her mother's rage, she being found  
absent,

Moved me to fly ; and quitting of the house,  
You were pleased, unask'd, to comfort me ;  
(I us'd

No sorceries to bewitch you ;) then vouch-  
safed

(Thanks ever to the darkness of the night !)

To hug me in your arms ; and I had wrong'd  
My breeding near the court, had I refused it.

*Ador.* This is still more bitter. Canst thou  
guess to whom

Thy lady did commit herself?

*Mirt.* They were

Horsemen, as you are.

*Ador.* In the name of wonder,  
How could they pass the port, where you  
expected

My coming?

*Camil.* Now I think upon't, there came  
Three mounted by, and, behind one, a  
woman

Embracing fast the man that rode before her.

*Lent.* I knew the men ; but she was veil'd.

*Ador.* What were they?

*Lent.* The first the lord Durazzo, and the  
second,

Your rival, young Caldoro ; it was he  
That carried the wench behind him.

*Don.* The last a servant,  
That spur'd fast after them.

*Ador.* Worse and worse ! 'twas she !

Too much assurance of her love undid me.

Why did you not stay them ?

*Don.* We had no such commission.

*Camil.* Or say we had, who durst lay  
fingers on

The angry old ruffian?

*Lent.* For my part, I had rather  
Take a baited bull by the horns.

*Ador.* You are sure friends

For a man to build on !

*Camil.* They are not far off,  
Their horses appear'd spent too ; let's take  
fresh ones,

And coast the country ; ten to one we find  
them.

*Ador.* I will not eat nor sleep, until I have  
them :

Moppet, you shall along too.

*Mirt.* So you please

I may keep my place behind you, I'll sit fast,  
And ride with you all the world o'er.

*Camil.* A good girl ! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—Naples. *A Street.*

*Enter Laval and Calipso.*

*Lav.* Her husband? Severino?

*Calip.* You may see

His handywork by my flat face ; no bridge  
Left to support my organ, if I had one :  
The comfort is, I am now secure from the  
crincomes,

I can lose nothing that way.

*Lav.* Dost thou not know  
What became of the lady?

*Calip.* A nose was enough to part with,

I think, in the service ; I durst stay no  
longer :

But I am full assured the house is empty,  
Neither poor lady, daughter, servant left  
there.

I only guess he hath forced them to go with  
him

To the dangerous forest, where he lives like  
a king,

Among the banditti ; and how there he hath  
used them,

Is more than to be fear'd.

*Lav.* I have play'd the fool,  
And kept myself too long conceal'd, sans  
question,

With the danger of her life. Leave me——  
the king !

*Enter Alphonso and Captain.*

*Calip.* The surgeon must be paid.

*Lav.* Take that. [*Gives her money.*]

*Calip.* I thank you ;

I have got enough by my trade, and I will  
build

An hospital only for noseless bawds,  
('Twill speak my charity,) and be myself  
The governess of the sisterhood. [*Exit.*]

*Alph.* I may

Forget this in your vigilance hereafter !  
But as I am a king, if you provoke me  
The second time with negligence of this kind,  
You shall deeply smart for't.

*Lav.* The king's moved.

*Alph.* To suffer

A murderer, by us proscribed, at his pleasure  
To pass and repass through our guards !

*Capt.* Your pardon

For this, my gracious lord, binds me to be  
More circumspect hereafter.

*Alph.* Look you be so :

Monsieur Laval, you were a suitor to me  
For Severino's pardon.

*Lav.* I was so, my good lord.

*Alph.* You might have met him here, to  
have thank'd you for't,

As now I understand.

*Lav.* So it is rumour'd ;

And hearing in the city of his boldness,  
I would not say contempt of your decrees,  
As then I pleaded mercy, under pardon,  
I now as much admire the slowness of  
Your justice (though it force you to some  
trouble)

In fetching him in.

*Alph.* I have consider'd it.

*Lav.* He hath of late, as 'tis suspected,  
done

An outrage on his wife, forgetting nature  
To his own daughter ; in whom, sir, I have

Some nearer interest than I stand bound to  
In my humanity, which I gladly would  
Make known unto your highness.

*Alph.* Go along,  
You shall have opportunity as we walk :  
See you what I committed to your charge,  
In readiness, and without noise.

*Capt.* I shall, sir.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT V.

SCENE I.—*The Forest.*

*Enter Claudio and all the Banditti, making  
a guard; Severino and Iölande with  
oaken-leaved garlands; Singers.*

SONG, Entertainment of the Forest's Queen.

*Welcome, thrice welcome to this shady green,  
Our long-wish'd Cynthia, the forest's queen,  
The trees begin to bud, the glad birds sing  
In winter, changed by her into the spring.*

*We know no night,  
Perpetual light*

*Dawns from your eye.*

*You being near,*

*We cannot fear,*

*Though Death stood by.*

*From you our swords take edge, our hearts  
grow bold;*

*From you in fee their lives your liegemen  
hold.*

*These groves your kingdom, and our law  
your will;*

*Smile, and we spare; but if you frown, we  
kill.*

*Bless then the hour  
That gives the power  
In which you may,  
At bed and board,  
Embrace your lord*

*Both night and day.*

*Welcome, thrice welcome to this shady green,  
Our long-wish'd Cynthia, the forest's queen!*

*Sev.* Here, as a queen, share in my sove-  
reignty:

The iron toils pitch'd by the law to take  
The forfeiture of my life, I have broke  
through,

And secure in the guards of these few  
subjects,

Smile at Alphonso's fury; though I grieve  
for

The fatal cause, in your good brother's loss,  
That does compel me to this course.

*Iö.* Revive not  
A sorrow long since dead, and so diminish

The full fruition of those joys, which now  
I stand possess'd of: womanish fear of  
danger

That may pursue us, I shake off, and with  
A masculine spirit.

*Sev.* 'Tis well said.

*Iö.* In you, sir,

I live; and when, or by the course of nature,  
Or violence, you must fall, the end of my  
Devotions is, that one and the same hour  
May make us fit for heaven.

*Sev.* I join with you

In my votes that way: but how, Iölande,  
You that have spent your past days, slum-  
bering in

The down of quiet, can endure the hardness  
And rough condition of our present being,  
Does much disturb me.

*Iö.* These woods, Severino,  
Shall more than seem to me a populous city,  
You being present; here are no allurements  
To tempt my frailty, nor the conversation  
Of such whose choice behaviour, or dis-  
course,

May nourish jealous thoughts.

*Sev.* True, Iölande;  
Nor shall suspected chastity stand in need  
here,

To be clear'd by miracle.

*Iö.* Still on that string!

It yields harsh discord.

*Sev.* I had forgot myself,  
And wish I might no more remember it.  
The day wears, sirs, without one prize  
brought in

As tribute to your queen: Claudio, divide  
Oursquadron in small parties, let them watch  
All passages, that none escape without  
The payment of our customs.

*Claud.* Shall we bring in  
The persons, with the pillage?

*Sev.* By all means;  
Without reply, about it: we'll retire  
[*Exeunt Claudio and the rest.*]

Into my cave, and there at large discourse  
Our fortunes past, and study some apt means  
To find our daughter; since, she well dis-  
posed of,

Our happiness were perfect.

*Iö.* We must wait  
With patience heaven's pleasure.

*Sev.* 'Tis my purpose. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Another part of the forest.*

*Enter Lentulo and Camillo.*

*Lent.* Let the horses graze, they are spent.  
*Camil.* I am sure I'm sleepy,  
And nodded as I rode: here was a jaunt



I' the dark through thick and thin, and all  
to no purpose !

What a dulness grows upon me !

*Lent.* I can hardly

Hold ope mine eyes to say so. How did we  
lose

Adorio? [*They sit down.*]

*Camil.* He, Donato, and the wench,  
That cleaves to him like birdlime, took the  
right hand :

But this place is our rendezvous.

*Lent.* No matter,

We'll talk of that anon—heigh ho !

[*Falls asleep.*]

*Camil.* He's fast already.

Lentulo !—I'll take a nap too.

[*Falls asleep.*]

*Enter Adorio, Mirtilla, and Donato.*

*Ador.* Was ever man so crost ?

*Mirt.* So blest ; this is

The finest wild-geese chase ! [*Aside.*]

*Ador.* What's that you mutter ?

*Mirt.* A short prayer, that you may find  
your wish'd-for love,

Though I am lost for ever.

*Don.* Pretty fool !

Who have we here ?

*Ador.* This is Camillo.

*Mirt.* This signior Lentulo.

*Ador.* Wake them.

*Don.* They'll not stir,

Their eyelids are glued, and mine too : by  
your favour,

I'll follow their example. [*Lies down.*]

*Ador.* Are you not weary ?

*Mirt.* I know not what the word means,  
while I travel

To do you service.

*Ador.* You expect to reap

The harvest of your flattery ; but your hopes  
Will be blasted, I assure you.

*Mirt.* So you give leave

To sow it, as in me a sign of duty,  
Though you deny your beams of gracious  
favour

To ripen it, with patience I shall suffer.

*Ador.* No more ; my resolution to find  
Calista, by what accident lost I know not,  
Binds me not to deny myself what nature  
Exacteth from me : to walk alone afoot  
(For my horse is tired) were madness, I must  
sleep.

You could lie down too ?

*Mirt.* Willingly ; so you please

To use me—

*Ador.* Use thee !

*Mirt.* As your pillow, sir ;

I dare presume no further. Noble sir,

Do not too much contemn me ; generous feet  
Spurn not a fawning spaniel.

*Ador.* Well ; sit down.

*Mirt.* I am ready, sir.

*Ador.* So nimble !

*Mirt.* Love is active,

Nor would I be a slow thing : rest secure, sir ;  
On my maidenhead, I'll not ravish you.

*Ador.* For once,  
So far I'll trust you.

[*Lays his head on her lap.*]

*Mirt.* All the joys of rest

Dwell on your eyelids ; let no dream disturb  
Your soft and gentle slumbers ! I cannot sing,  
But I'll talk you asleep ; and I beseech you  
Be not offended, though I glory in  
My being thus employ'd ; a happiness  
That stands for more than ample satisfaction  
For all I have or can endure.—He snores,  
And does not hear me ; would his sense of  
feeling

Were bound up too ! I should—I am all  
fire.

Such heaps of treasure offer'd as a prey,  
Would tempt a modest thief ; I can no longer  
Forbear—I'll gently touch his lips, and leave  
No print of mine :—[*Kisses him.*] ah !—I  
have heard of nectar,

But till now never tasted it ; these rubies  
Are not clouded by my breath : if once again  
I steal from such a full exchequer, trifles  
Will not be miss'd ;—[*Kisses him again.*]—

I am entranced : our fancy,  
Some say, in sleep works stronger ; I will  
prove

How far my— [*Falls asleep.*]

*Enter Durazzo.*

*Dur.* My bones ache,  
I am exceeding cold too ; I must seek out  
A more convenient trundle-bed. Ha ! do I  
dream ?

No, no, I wake. Camillo, Lentulo,  
Donato this, and, as I live, Adorio  
In a handsome wench's lap ! a whoreson !  
you are

The best accommodated. I will call  
My nephew and his mistress to this pageant ;  
The object may perhaps do more upon her,  
Than all Caldoro's rhetoric. With what  
Security they sleep ! sure Mercury  
Hath travell'd this way with his charming-  
rod.

Nephew ! Calista ! Madam !

*Enter Caldoro and Calista.*

*Cald.* Here, sir. Is  
Your man return'd with horses ?

*Dur.* No, boy, no ;  
 But here are some you thought not of.  
*Calis.* Adorio !  
*Dur.* The idol that you worshipped.  
*Calis.* This Mirtilla !  
 I am made a stale.  
*Dur.* I knew 'twould take. [*Aside.*]  
*Calis.* False man !  
 But much more treacherous woman ! 'Tis  
 apparent,  
 They jointly did conspire against my weak-  
 ness,  
 And credulous simplicity, and have  
 Prevail'd against it.  
*Cald.* I'll not kill them sleeping ;  
 But, if you please, I'll wake them first, and  
 after  
 Offer them as a fatal sacrifice,  
 To your just anger.  
*Dur.* You are a fool ; reserve  
 Your blood for better uses.  
*Calis.* My fond love  
 Is changed to an extremity of hate ;  
 His very sight is odious.  
*Dur.* I have thought of  
 A pretty punishment for him and his com-  
 rades,  
 Then leave him to his harlotry ; if she  
 prove not  
 Torture enough, hold me an ass. Their  
 horses  
 Are not far off, I'll cut the girths and  
 bridles,  
 Then turn them into the wood ; if they can  
 run,  
 Let them follow us as footmen. Wilt thou  
 fight  
 For what's thine own already !  
*Calis.* In his hat  
 He wears a jewel, which this faithless  
 strumpct,  
 As a salary of her lust, deceived me of ;  
 He shall not keep't to my disgrace, nor  
 will I  
 Stir till I have it.  
*Dur.* I am not good at nimming ;  
 And yet that shall not hinder us : by your  
 leave, sir ;  
 'Tis restitution : pray you all bear witness  
 I do not steal it ; here 'tis.  
*Takes off Adorio's hat, and removes  
 the jewel, which he gives to Calista.*  
*Calis.* Take it,—not  
 As a mistress' favour, but a strong assurance  
 I am your wife. [*Gives it to Caldoro.*]  
*Cald.* O heaven !  
*Dur.* Pray in the church.  
 Let us away. Nephew, a word ; have you  
 not

Been billing in the brakes, ha ! and so de-  
 serv'd  
 This unexpected favour?  
*Cald.* You are pleasant.  
*Execut Durazzo, Caldoro, and Calista.*  
*Ador.* As thou art a gentleman, kill me  
 not basely ; [*Starts up ; the rest awake.*]  
 Give me leave to draw my sword.  
*Camil.* Ha ! what's the matter ?  
*Lent.* He talk'd of's sword.  
*Don.* I see no enemy near us,  
 That threatens danger.  
*Mirt.* Sure 'twas but a dream.  
*Ador.* A fearful one. Methought Cal-  
 doro's sword  
 Was at my throat, Calista frowning by,  
 Commanding him, as he desired her fa-  
 vour,  
 To strike my head off.  
*Camil.* Mere imagination  
 Of a disturbed fancy.  
*Mirt.* Here's your hat, sir.  
*Ador.* But where's my jewel ?  
*Camil.* By all likelihood lost,  
 This troublesome night.  
*Don.* I saw it when we came  
 Unto this place.  
*Mirt.* I look'd upon't myself,  
 When you repos'd.  
*Ador.* What is become of it ?  
 Restore it, for thou hast it ; do not put  
 me  
 To the trouble to search you.  
*Mirt.* Search me !  
*Ador.* You have been,  
 Before your lady gave you entertainment,  
 A night-walker in the streets.  
*Mirt.* How, my good lord !  
*Ador.* Traded in picking pockets, when  
 tame gulls,  
 Charm'd with your prostituted flatteries,  
 Deign'd to embrace you.  
*Mirt.* Love, give place to anger..  
 Charge me with theft, and prostituted  
 baseness !  
 Were you a judge, nay more, the king, thus  
 urged,  
 To your teeth I would say, 'tis false.  
*Ador.* This will not do.  
*Camil.* Deliver it in private.  
*Mirt.* You shall be  
 In public hang'd first, and the whole gang  
 of you.  
 I steal what I presented !  
*Lent.* Do not strive.  
*Ador.* Though thou hast swallow'd it,  
 I'll rip thy entrails,  
 But I'll recover it. [*Seizes her.*]  
*Mirt.* Help, help !

Claudio and two Banditti rush upon them  
with pistols.

*Ador.* A new plot!

*Claud.* Forbear, libidinous monsters! if  
you offer

The least resistance, you are dead. If one  
But lay his hand upon his sword, shoot all.

*Ador.* Let us fight for what we have, and  
if you can

Win it, enjoy it.

*Claud.* We come not to try

Your valour, but for your money; throw  
down your sword,

Or I'll begin with you: so! if you will  
Walk quietly without bonds, you may, if not  
We'll force you.—[Fear not,] thou shalt  
have no wrong,

But justice against these. [To Mirtilla.

*1 Ban.* We'll teach you, sir,

To meddle with wenches in our walks.

*2 Ban.* It being

Against our canons.

*Camil.* Whither will you lead us?

*Claud.* You shall know that hereafter.—  
Guard them sure. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Another part of the Forest.

Enter Alphonso disguised as an old Man,  
Laval and Captain.

*Alph.* Are all the passages stopp'd?

*Capt.* And strongly mann'd;

They must use wings, and fly, if they escape  
us.

*Lav.* But why, great sir, you should ex-  
pose your person

To such apparent danger, when you may  
Have them brought bound before you, is  
beyond

My apprehension.

*Alph.* I am better arm'd

Than you suppose: besides, it is confirm'd  
By all that have been robb'd, since Severino  
Commanded these banditti, (though it be  
Unusual in Italy,) imitating

The courteous English thieves, for so they  
call them,

They have not done one murder: I must  
add too,

That, from a strange relation I have heard  
Of Severino's justice, in disposing

The preys brought in, I would be an eye-  
witness

Of what I take up now but on report:  
And therefore 'tis my pleasure that we should,  
As soon as they encounter us, without  
A shew of opposition, yield.

*Lav.* Your will

Is not to be disputed.

*Alph.* You have placed  
Your ambush so, that, if there be occasion,  
They suddenly may break in?

*Capt.* My life upon't.

*Alph.* We cannot travel far, but we shall  
meet

With some of these good fellows; and be  
sure

You do as I command you,

*Lav.* Without fear, sir. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Another part of the Forest.

Enter Severino and Iolante.

*Sev.* 'Tis true; I did command Calista  
should not,

Without my knowledge and consent, assisted  
By your advice, be married; but your  
Restraint, as you deliver it, denying  
A grown-up maid the modest conversation  
Of men, and warrantable pleasures, relish'd  
Of too much rigour, which, no doubt, hath  
driven her

To take some desperate course.

*Iol.* What then I did

Was, in my care, thought best.

*Sev.* So I conceive it;

But where was your discretion to forbid  
Access, and fit approaches, when you knew  
Her suitors noble, either of which I would  
Have wish'd my son-in-law? Adorio,  
However wild, a young man of good parts,  
But better fortunes: his competitor,  
Caldoro, for his sweetness of behaviour,  
Staidness, and temperance, holding the first  
place

Among the gallants most observed in Naples;  
His own revenues of a large extent,  
But in the expectation of his uncle  
And guardian's entradas, by the course  
Of nature to descend on him, a match  
For the best subject's blood, I except none.  
Of eminence in Italy.

*Iol.* Your wishes,

Howe'er a while delay'd, are not, I hope,  
Impossibilities.

*Sev.* Though it prove so,

Yet 'tis not good to give a check to fortune,  
When she comes smiling to us.—Hark! this  
cornet [Cornet within.

Assures us of a prize; there sit in state,  
'Tis thy first tribute.

*Iol.* Would we might enjoy

Our own as subjects!

*Sev.* What's got by the sword,  
Is better than inheritance: all those king-  
doms

Of Alexander were, by force, extorted,  
Though gilded o'er with glorious styles of  
conquest:

His victories but royal robberies,  
And his true definition a thief,  
When circled with huge navies, to the terror  
Of such as plough'd the ocean, as the pirate,  
Who, from a narrow creek, puts off for  
prey

In a small pinnace :—[*Cornet within.*]  
From a second place

New spoil brought in !—[*Cornet within.*]  
from a third party ! brave !

This shall be register'd a day of triumph,  
Design'd by fate to honour thee.—

*Enter Claudio.*

Welcome, Claudio !

Good booty, ha ?

*Enter at different sides, various parties of  
the Banditti ; one with Adorio, Lentulo,  
Donato, Camillo, Mirtilla ; another with  
Durazzo, Caldoro, Calista ; and the rest  
with Alphonso, Laval, and Captain.*

*Claud.* Their outsides promise so ;  
But yet they have not made discovery  
Of what they stand possess'd of.

*Sev.* Welcome all ;

Good boys ! you have done bravely, if no  
blood

Be shed in the service.

*r Ban.* On our lives, no drop, sir.

*Sev.* 'Tis to my wish.

*Isl.* My lord !

*Sev.* No more ; I know them.

*Isl.* My daughter, and her woman too !

*Sev.* Conceal

Your joys.

*Dur.* Fallen in the devil's mouth !

*Calis.* My father,

And mother ! to what fate am I reserved ?

*Cald.* Continue mask'd ; or grant that  
you be known,

From whom can you expect a gentle sen-  
tence,

If you despair a father's ?

*Ador.* I perceive now

Which way I lost my jewel.

*Mirt.* I rejoice

'Tm clear'd from theft ; you have done me  
wrong, but I,

Unask'd, forgive you.

*Dur.* 'Tis some comfort yet,

The rivals, men and women, friends and  
foes, are

Together in one toil.

*Sev.* You all look pale,

And by your private whisperings and soft  
murmurs,

Express a general fear : pray you shake it off ;  
For understand you are not fallen into

The hands of a Busiris or a Cacus,  
Delighted more in blood than spoil, but  
given up

To the power of an unfortunate gentle-  
man,

Not born to these low courses, howsoever  
My fate, and just displeasure of the king,  
Design'd me to it ; you need not to doubt  
A sad captivity here, and much less fear,  
For profit, to be sold for slaves, then shipp'd  
Into another country ; in a word,  
You know the proscribed Severino, he,  
Not unacquainted, but familiar with  
The most of you.—Want in myself I know  
not ;

But for the pay of these my squires, who eat  
Their bread with danger purchased, and  
must be

With others' fleeces clothed, or live exposed  
To the summer's scorching heat and winter's  
cold ;

To these, before you be compell'd, (a word  
I speak with much unwillingness,) deliver  
Such coin as you are furnish'd with.

*Dur.* A fine method !

This is neither begging, borrowing, nor  
robbery ;

Yet it hath a twang of all of them : but one  
word, sir.

*Sev.* Your pleasure.

*Dur.* When we have thrown down our  
muck,

What follows ?

*Sev.* Liberty, with a safe convoy,

To any place you choose.

*Dur.* By this hand, you are  
A fair fraternity ! for once I'll be  
The first example to relieve your convent.  
There's a thousand crowns, my vintage,  
harvest, profits,

Arising from my herds, bound in one bag,  
Share it among you.

*Sev.* You are still the jovial,  
And good Durazzo.

*Dur.* To the offering ; nay,  
No hanging an a—, this is their wedding-  
day :

What you must do spite of your hearts, do  
freely

For your own sakes.

*Camil.* There's mine.

*Lent.* Mine.

*Don.* All that I have.

*Cald.* This, to preserve my jewel.

*Ador.* Which I challenge :

Let me have justice, for my coin I care not.

*Lav.* I will not weep for mine.

*Capt.* Would it were more.

[*They all throw down their purses.*

*Sev.* Nay, you are privileged ; but why,  
old father, [To the King.  
Art thou so slow ? thou hast one foot in the  
grave,

And, if desire of gold do not increase  
With thy expiring lease of life, thou shouldst  
Be forwardest.

*Alph.* In what concerns myself,  
I do acknowledge it ; and I should lie,  
A vice I have detested from my youth,  
If I denied my present store, since what  
I have about me now weighs down in value,  
Almost a hundred fold, whatever these  
Have laid before you : see ! I do groan  
under [Throws down three bags.

The burthen of my treasure : nay, 'tis gold ;  
And if your hunger of it be not sated  
With what already I have shewn unto you,  
Here's that shall glut it. In this casket are  
Inestimable jewels, diamonds  
Of such a piercing lustre, as struck blind  
The amazed lapidary, while he labour'd

[Opens the casket.  
To honour his own art in setting them ;  
Some orient pearls too, which the queen of  
Spain

Might wear as ear-rings, in remembrance of  
The day that she was crown'd.

*Sev.* The spoils, I think,  
Of both the Indies !

*Dur.* The great sultan's poor,  
if parallel'd with this Cræsus.

*Sev.* Why dost thou weep ?

*Alph.* From a most fit consideration of  
My poverty ; this, though restored, will not  
Serve my occasions.

*Sev.* Impossible !

*Dur.* May be he would buy his passport  
up to heaven ;  
And then this is too little ; though, in the  
journey,

It were a good viaticum.

*Alph.* I would make it

A means to help me thither : not to wrong  
you

With tedious expectation, I'll discover  
What my wants are, and yield my reasons  
for them.

I have two scus, twins, the true images  
Of what I was at their years ; never father  
Had fairer or more promising hopes in his  
Posterity : but, alas ! these sons, ambitious  
Of glittering honour, and an after-name,  
Achieved by glorious, and yet pious actions,  
(For such were their intentions,) put to sea :  
They had a well-rigg'd bottom, fully mann'd,  
An old experienced master, lusty sailors,  
Stout landmen, and what's something more  
than rare,

They did agree, had one design, and that was  
In charity to redeem the Christian slaves  
Chain'd in the Turkish servitude.

*Sev.* A brave aim !

*Dur.* A most heroic enterprise ; I lan-  
guish  
To hear how they succeeded.

*Alph.* Prosperously,  
At first, and to their wishes : divers gallies  
They boarded, and some strong iorts near  
the shore

They suddenly surprised ; a thousand cap-  
tives,  
Redeem'd from the oar, paid their glad  
vows and prayers

For their deliverance : their ends acquired,  
And making homeward in triumphant man-  
ner,

For sure the cause deserved it —

*Dur.* Pray you end here ;  
The best, I fear, is told, and that which  
follows

Must conclude ill.

*Alph.* Your fears are true, and yet  
I must with grief relate it. Prodigal fame,  
In every place, with her loud trump, pro-  
claiming

The greatness of the action, the pirates  
Of Tunis and Argiers laid wait for them  
At their return : to tell you what resistance  
They made, and how my poor sons fought,  
would but

Increase my sorrow, and, perhaps, grieve  
you

To hear it passionately described unto you.  
In brief, they were taken, and for the great  
loss

The enemy did sustain, their victory  
Being with much blood bought, they do  
endure

The heaviest captivity wretched men  
Did ever suffer. O my sons ! my sons !  
To me for ever lost ! lost, lost for ever !

*Sev.* Will not these heaps of gold, added  
to thine,

Suffice for ransom ?

*Alph.* For my sons it would ;  
But they refuse their liberty, if all  
That were engaged with them, have not  
their irons,

With theirs, struck off, and set at liberty  
with them ;

Which these heaps cannot purchase.

*Sev.* Ha ! the toughness  
Of my heart melts. Be comforted, old father ;  
I have some hidden treasure, and if all  
I and my squires these three years have laid  
up,

Can make the sum up, freely take't.

*Dur.* I'll sell  
Myself to my shirt, lands, moveables ; and  
thou  
Shalt part with thine too, nephew, rather  
than

Such brave men shall live slaves.

*2 Ban.* We will not yield to't.

*3 Ban.* Nor lose our parts.

*Sev.* How's this !

*2 Ban.* You are fitter far

To be a churchman, than to have command  
Over good fellows.

*Sev.* Thus I ever use [*Strikes them down.*  
Such saucy rascals ; second me, Claudio.—  
Rebellious ! do you grumble ? I'll not leave  
One rogue of them alive.

*Alph.* Hold ;—give the sign.

[*Discovers himself.*

*All.* The king !

*Sev.* Then I am lost.

*Claud.* The woods are full

Of armed men.

*Alph.* No hope of your escape  
Can flatter you.

*Sev.* Mercy, dread sir ! [*Kneels.*

*Alph.* Thy carriage

In this unlawful course appears so noble,  
Especially in this last trial, which  
I put upon you, that I wish the mercy  
You kneel in vain for might fall gently on  
you :

But when the holy oil was pour'd upon  
My head, and I anointed king, I swore  
Never to pardon murder. I could wink at  
Your robberies, though our laws call them  
death,

But to dispense with Montecarlo's blood  
Would ill become a king ; in him I lost  
A worthy subject, and must take from you  
A strict account of't. 'Tis in vain to move ;  
My doom's irrevocable.

*Lav.* Not, dread sir,

If Montecarlo live.

*Alph.* If ! good Laval.

*Lav.* He lives in him, sir, that you thought  
Laval.

[*Discovers himself.*

Three years have not so alter'd me, but you  
may

Remember Montecarlo.

*Dur.* How !

*Isl.* My brother !

*Calis.* Uncle !

*Mont.* Give me leave : I was  
Left dead in the field, but by the duke  
Montpensier,

Now general at Milan, taken up,  
And with much care recover'd.

*Alph.* Why lived you  
So long conceal'd ?

*Mont.* Confounded with the wrong  
I did my brother, in provoking him  
To fight, I spent the time in France that I  
Was absent from the court, making my exile  
The punishment imposed upon myself,  
For my offence.

*Isl.* Now, sir, I dare confess all :  
This was the guest invited to the banquet,  
That drew on your suspicion.

*Sev.* Your intent,  
Though it was ill in you, I do forgive ;  
The rest I'll hear at leisure. Sir, your sen-  
tence.

*Alph.* It is a general pardon unto all,  
Upon my hopes, in your fair lives hereafter,  
You will deserve it.

*Sev.* *Claud.* and the rest. Long live great  
Alphonso !

*Dur.* Your mercy shewn in this ; now, if  
you please,  
Decide these lovers' difference.

*Alph.* That is easy ;  
I'll put it to the women's choice, the men  
Consenting to it.

*Calis.* Here I fix then, never  
To be removed. [*Embraces Caldoro.*

*Cald.* 'Tis my *nil ultra*, sir.

*Mirt.* O, that I had the happiness to say  
So much to you ! I dare maintain my love  
Is equal to my lady's.

*Ador.* But my mind  
A pitch above yours : marry with a servant  
Of no descent or fortune !

*Sev.* You are deceived :  
How'er she has been train'd up as a servant,  
She is the daughter of a noble captain,  
Who, in his voyage to the Persian gulf,  
Perish'd by shipwreck ; one I dearly loved.  
He to my care intrusted her, having taken  
My word, if he return'd not like himself,  
I never should discover what she was ;  
But it being for her good, I will dispense  
with't.

So much, sir, for her blood ; now for her  
portion :

So dear I hold the memory of my friend,  
It shall rank with my daughter's.

*Ador.* This made good,  
I will not be perverse.

*Dur.* With a kiss confirm it.

*Ador.* I sign all concord here ; but must  
to you, sir,

For reparation of my wounded honour,  
The justice of the king consenting to it,  
Denounce a lawful war.

*Alph.* This in our presence !

*Ador.* The cause, dread sir, commands  
it : though your edicts  
Call private combats, murders ; rather than

Sit down with a disgrace, arising from  
A blow, the bonds of my obedience shook  
off,

I'll right myself.

*Cald.* I do confess the wrong,  
Forgetting the occasion, and desire  
Remission from you, and upon such terms  
As by his sacred majesty shall be judged  
Equal on both parts.

*Ador.* I desire no more.

*Alph.* All then are pleased; it is the  
glory of

A king to make and keep his subjects  
happy :

For us, we do approve the Roman maxim,  
To save one citizen is a greater prize  
Than to have kill'd in war ten enemies.

[*Exeunt*..

#### EPILOGUE.

*I am left to enquire, then to relate  
To the still-doubtful author, at what rate  
His merchandise are valued. If they prove  
Staple commodities, in your grace and love  
To this last birth of his Minerva, he  
Vows (and we do believe him) seriously,  
Sloth cast off, and all pleasures else declined,  
He'll search with his best care, until he find  
New ways, and make good in some labour'd song,  
Though he grow old, Apollo still is young.  
Cherish his good intentions, and declare  
By any signs of favour, that you are  
Well pleased, and with a general consent;  
And he desires no more encouragement.*



# A Very Woman ;

or,

## The Prince of Tarent.

---

### PROLOGUE.

*To such, and some there are, no question, here,  
Who, happy in their memories, do bear  
This subject, long since acted, and can say,  
Truly, we have seen something like this play.  
Our author, with becoming modesty,  
(For in this kind he ne'er was bold,) by me,  
In his defence thus answers, By command,  
He undertook this task, nor could it stand  
With his low fortune to refuse to do  
What, by his patron, he was call'd unto :  
For whose delight and yours, we hope, with care  
He hath review'd it ; and with him we dare  
Maintain to any man, that did allow  
'Twas good before, it is much better'd now :  
Nor is it, sure, against the proclamation  
To raise new piles upon an old foundation.  
So much to them deliver'd ; to the rest,  
To whom each scene is fresh, he doth protest,  
Should his Muse fail now a fair flight to make,  
He cannot fancy what will please or take.*

---

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

*Viceroy of Sicily.  
Don Pedro, his son.  
Duke of Messina.  
Don Martino Cardenes, his son.  
Don John Antonio, prince of Tarent.  
Captain of the castle of Palermo.  
Paulo, a physician.  
Cuculo, the Viceroy's steward.  
Two Surgeons.  
Apothecary.  
Citizens.  
Slave-merchant.  
Servant.*

*Page.  
An English Slave.  
Slaves.  
Moors.  
Pirates.  
Sailors.  
Almira, the Viceroy's daughter.  
Leonora, duke of Messina's niece.  
Borachia, wife to Cuculo, governess of Leonora and Almira.  
Two Waiting Women.  
A good and evil Genius, Servants, Guard, Attendants, &c.*

SCENE,—Palermo.

---

### ACT I.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the Viceroy's Palace.*

*Enter Pedro meeting Leonora.*

*Pedro.* My worthiest mistress ! this day cannot end

But prosperous to Pedro, that begins  
With this so wish'd encounter.  
*Leon.* Only servant,  
To give you thanks in your own courtly  
language,  
Would argue me more ceremonious,  
Than heartily affected ; and you are



Too well assured, or I am miserable,  
Our equal loves have kept one rank too long,  
To stand at distance now.

*Pedro.* You make me happy

In this so wise reproof, which I receive  
As a chaste favour from you, and will ever  
Hold such a strong command o'er my desires,  
That though my blood turn rebel to my  
reason,

I never shall presume to seek aught from  
you,

But what (your honour safe) you well may  
grant me,

And virtue sign the warrant.

*Leon.* Your love to me

So limited, will still preserve your mistress  
Worthy her servant, and in your restraint  
Of loose affections, bind me faster to you :  
But there will be a time when we may wel-  
come

Those wish'd for pleasures, as heaven's  
greatest blessings,

When that the viceroy, your most noble  
father,

And the duke my uncle, and to that, my  
guardian,

Shall by their free consent confirm them  
lawful.

*Pedro.* You ever shall direct, and I obey  
you :

Is my sister stirring yet ?

*Leon.* Long since.

*Pedro.* Some business

With her, join'd to my service to yourself,  
Hath brought me hither ; pray you vouch-  
safe the favour

To acquaint her with so much.

*Leon.* I am prevented.

*Enter Almira, and two Waiting Women  
dressing her.*

*Alm.* Do the rest here, my cabinet is too  
hot ;

This room is cooler. Brother !

*Pedro.* Morrow, sister !

Do I not come unseasonably ?

*Alm.* Why, good brother ?

*Pedro.* Because you are not yet fully made  
up,

Nor fit for visitation. There are ladies,  
And great ones, that will hardly grant access,  
On any terms, to their own fathers, as  
They are themselves, nor willingly be seen  
Before they have ask'd counsel of their  
doctor

How the ceruse will appear, newly laid on,  
When they ask blessing.

*Alm.* Such, indeed, there are  
That would be still young, in despite of time ;

That in the wrinkled winter of their age  
Would force a seeming April of fresh beauty,  
As if it were within the power of art

To frame a second nature : but for me,  
And for your mistress I dare say as much,  
The faces, and the teeth you see, we slept  
with.

*Pedro.* Which is not frequent, sister, with  
some ladies.

*Alm.* You spy no sign of any night-mask  
here,

(Tie on my carcanet,) nor does your nostril  
Take in the scent of strong perfumes, to stifle  
The sourness of our breaths as we are fasting :  
You're in a lady's chamber, gentle brother,  
And not in your apothecary's shop.

We use the women, you perceive, that serve  
us,

Like servants, not like such as do create  
us :—

Faith, search our pockets, and, if you find  
there

Comfits of ambergris to help our kisses,

Conclude us faulty.

*Pedro.* You are pleasant, sister,

And I am glad to find you so disposed ;

You will the better hear me.

*Alm.* What you please, sir.

*Pedro.* I am entreated by the prince of  
Tarent,

Don John Antonio—

*Alm.* Would you would choose

Some other subject.

*Pedro.* Pray you, give me leave,

For his desires are fit for you to hear,  
As for me to prefer. This prince of Tarent  
(Let it not wrong him that I call him friend)  
Finding your choice of don Cardenes liked of  
By both your fathers, and his hopes cut off,  
Resolves to leave Palermo.

*Alm.* He does well ;

That I hear gladly.

*Pedro.* How this prince came hither,

How bravely furnish'd, how attended on,  
How he hath borne himself here, with what  
charge

He hath continued ; his magnificence

In costly banquets, curious masques, rare  
presents,

And of all sorts, you cannot but remember.

*Alm.* Give me my gloves.

*Pedro.* Now, for reward of all

His cost, his travel, and his duteous service,  
He does entreat that you will please he may  
Take his leave of you, and receive the favour  
Of kissing of your hands.

*Alm.* You are his friend,

And shall discharge the part of one to tell  
him

That he may spare the trouble ; I desire not  
To see or hear more of him.

*Pedro.* Yet grant this,  
Which a mere stranger, in the way of court-  
ship,  
Might challenge from you.

*Alm.* And obtain it sooner.

*Pedro.* One reason for this would do well.

*Alm.* My will

Shall now stand for a thousand. Shall I lose  
The privilege of my sex, which is my will,  
To yield a reason like a man? or you,  
Deny your sister that which all true women  
Claim as their first prerogative, which nature  
Gave to them for a law, and should I break it,  
I were no more a woman?

*Pedro.* Sure, a good one

You cannot be, if you put off that virtue  
Which best adorns a good one, courtesy  
And affable behaviour. Do not flatter  
Yourself with the opinion that your birth,  
Your beauty, or whatever false ground else  
You raise your pride upon, will stand against  
The censure of just men.

*Alm.* Why, let it fall then ;  
I still shall be unmoved.

*Leon.* And, pray you, be you so.

*Alm.* What jewel's that? *[Aside to Pedro.]*

*Wom.* That which the prince of  
Tarent—

*Alm.* Left here, and you received with-  
out my knowledge!

I have use of't now. Does the page wait  
without,

My lord Cardenes sent to inquire my health?

*Wom.* Yes, madam.

*Alm.* Give it him, and, with it, pray him  
To return my service to his lord, and mine.

*Pedro.* Will you so undervalue one that has  
So truly loved you, to bestow the pledge  
Of his affection, being a prince, upon  
The servant of his rival?

*Leon.* 'Tis not well.

Faith, wear it, lady : send gold to the boy,  
'Twill please him better.

*Alm.* Do as I command you.

*[Exit Waiting Woman.]*  
I will keep nothing that may put me in mind  
Don John Antonio ever loved, or was ;  
Being wholly now Cardenes'.

*Pedro.* In another  
This were mere barbarism, sister ; and in  
you,

(For I'll not sooth you,) at the best, 'tis  
rudeness.

*Alm.* Rudeness!

*Pedro.* Yes, rudeness ; and, what's worse,  
the want

Of civil manners ; nay, ingratitude  
Unto the many and so fair deservings  
Of don Antonio. Does this express  
Your breeding in the court, or that you call  
The viceroy father? a poor peasant's  
daughter,

That ne'er had conversation but with beasts,  
Or men bred like them, would not so far  
shame

Her education.

*Alm.* Pray you, leave my chamber ;  
I know you for a brother, not a tutor.

*Leon.* You are too violent, madam.

*Alm.* Were my father

Here to command me, (as you take upon  
you

Almost to play his part,) I would refuse it.  
Where I love, I profess it ; where I hate,  
In every circumstance I dare proclaim it.  
Of all that wear the shapes of men, I loath  
That prince you plead for ; no antipathy  
Between things most averse in nature, holds  
A stronger enmity than his with mine ;  
With which rest satisfied :—If not, your  
anger

May wrong yourself, not me.

*Leon.* My lord Cardenes!

*Pedro.* Go : in soft terms, if you persist  
thus, you

Will be one—

*Enter Cardenes.*

*Alm.* What one? pray you, out with it.

*Pedro.* Why, one that I shall wish a  
stranger to me,

That I might curse you ; but—

*Car.* Whence grows this heat?

*Pedro.* Be yet advised, and entertain him  
fairly,

For I will send him to you ; or no more  
Know me a brother.

*Alm.* As you please.

*Pedro.* Good morrow.

*Car.* Good morrow, and part thus! you  
seem moved too :

What desperate fool durst raise a tempest  
here,

To sink himself?

*Alm.* Good sir, have patience ;

The cause, though I confess I am not  
pleased,

No way deserves your anger.

*Car.* Not mine, madam,

As if the least offence could point at you,  
And I not feel it : as you have vouchsafed  
me

The promise of your heart, conceal it not,  
Whomsoever it concerns.

*Alm.* It is not worth

So serious an inquiry : my kind brother  
Had a desire to learn me some new court-  
ship,

Which I distasted ; that was all.

*Car.* Your brother !

In being yours, with more security  
He might provoke you ; yet, if he hath past  
A brother's bounds—

*Leon.* What then, my lord ?

*Car.* Believe it,

I'll call him to account for't.

*Leon.* Tell him so.

*Alm.* No more.

*Leon.* Yes, thus much ; though my modesty  
Be call'd in question for it, in his absence  
I will defend him : he hath said nor done,  
But what don Pedro well might say or do ;  
Mark me, don Pedro ! in which understand  
As worthy, and as well as can be hoped for  
Of those that love him best—from don  
Cardenes.

*Car.* This to me, cousin !

*Alm.* You forget yourself.

*Leon.* No, nor the cause in which you  
did so, lady,

Which is so just that it needs no concealing  
On Pedro's part.

*Alm.* What mean you ?

*Leon.* I dare speak it,

If you dare hear it, sir : he did persuade  
Almira, your Almira, to vouchsafe  
Some little conference with the prince of  
Tarent,

Before he left the court ; and, that the world  
Might take some notice, though he prosper'd  
not

In his so loved design, he was not scorn'd,  
He did desire the kissing of her hand,  
And then to leave her :—this was much !

*Car.* 'Twas more

Than should have been urged by him ; well  
denied,

On your part, madam, and I thank you for't.  
Antonio bad his answer, I your grant ;  
And why your brother should prepare for  
him

An after-interview, or private favour,  
I can find little reason.

*Leon.* None at all,

Why you should be displeas'd with't.

*Car.* His respect

To me, as things now are, should have  
weigh'd down

His former friendship : 'twas done indis-  
creetly,

I would be loath to say, maliciously,  
To build up the demolish'd hopes of him  
That was my rival. What had he to do,  
If he view not my bappiness in your favour

With wounded eyes, to take upon himself  
An office so distasteful ?

*Leon.* You may ask

As well, what any gentleman has to do  
With civil courtesy.

*Alm.* Or you, with that

Which at no part concerns you. Good my  
lord,

Rest satisfied, that I saw him not, nor will ;  
And that nor father, brother, nor the world,  
Can work me unto anything but what  
You give allowance to—in which assurance,  
With this, I leave you.

*Leon.* Nay, take me along ;

You are not angry too ?

*Alm.* Presume on that.

[*Exit, followed by Leonora.*]

*Car.* Am I assured of her, and shall again  
Be tortured with suspicion to lose her,  
Before I have enjoy'd her ! the next sun  
Shall see her mine ; why should I doubt,  
then ? yet,

To doubt is safer than to be secure.

But one short day ! Great empires in less  
time

Have suffer'd change : she's constant—but a  
woman ;

And what a lover's vows, persuasions, tears,  
May, in a minute, work upon such frailty,  
There are too many and too sad examples.  
The prince of Tarent gone, all were in safety ;  
Or not admitted to solicit her,

My fears would quit me : 'tis my fault, if I  
Give way to that ; and let him ne'er desire  
To own what's hard [to win,] that dares not  
guard it.—

Who waits there ?

*Enter Servants and Page.*

*Serv.* Would your lordship aught ?

*Car.* 'Tis well

You are so near.

*Enter Antonio and a Servant.*

*Ant.* Take care all things be ready  
For my remove.

*Serv.* They are.

[*Exit.*]

*Car.* We meet like friends,

No more like rivals now : my emulation  
Puts on the shape of love and service to you.

*Ant.* It is return'd.

*Car.* 'Twas rumoured in the court

You were to leave the city, and that won me  
To find you out. Your excellence may  
wonder

'That I, that never saw you, till this hour,  
But that I wish'd you dead, so willingly  
Should come to wait upon you to the ports ;

And there, with hope you never will look  
back,

Take my last farewell of you.

*Ant.* Never look back!

*Car.* I said so; neither is it fit you should;  
And may I prevail with you as a friend,  
You never shall; nor, while you live, here-  
after

Think of the viceroy's court, or of Palermo,  
But as a grave, in which the prince of Tarent  
Buried his honour.

*Ant.* You speak in a language  
I do not understand.

*Car.* No! I'll be plainer.

What madman, that came hither with that  
pomp

Don John Antonio did, that exact courtier  
Don John Antonio, with whose brave fame  
only

Great princesses have fall'n in love, and died;  
That came with such assurance, as young  
Paris

Did to fetch Helen, being sent back, con-  
temn'd,

Disgraced, and scorn'd, his large expense  
lough'd at,

His bravery scoff'd, the lady that he courted  
Left quietly in possession of another,  
(Not to be named that day a courtier  
Where he was mention'd,) the scarce-known  
Cardenes,

And he to bear her from him!—that would  
ever

Be seen again (having got fairly off)

By such as will live ready witnesses  
Of his repulse and scandal?

*Ant.* The grief of it,

Believe me, will not kill me: all man's  
honour

Depends not on the most uncertain favour  
Of a fair mistress.

*Car.* Troth, you bear it well.

You should have seen some that were  
sensible

Of a disgrace, that would have raged, and  
sought

To cure their honour with some strange  
revenge:

But you are better temper'd; and they  
wrong

The Neapolitans in their report,  
That say they are fiery spirits, incapable  
Of the least injury, dangerous to be talk'd  
with

After a loss; where nothing can move you,  
But, like a stoic, with a constancy

Words nor affronts can shake, you still go on,  
And smile when men abuse you.

*Ant.* If they wrong

Themselves, I can; yet, I would have you  
know,

I dare be angry.

*Car.* 'Tis not possible.

A taste of't would do well; and I'd make  
trial

What may be done. Come hither, boy.—You  
have seen

This jewel, as I take it?

*Ant.* Yes; 'tis that

I gave Almira.

*Car.* And in what esteem

She held it, coming from your worthy self,  
You may perceive, that freely hath bestow'd it  
Upon my page.

*Ant.* When I presented it,

I did not indent with her, to what use  
She should employ it.

*Car.* See the kindness of

A loving soul! who, after this neglect,  
Nay, gross contempt, will look again upon

her,

And not be frighted from it.

*Ant.* No, indeed, sir;

Nor give way longer—give way, do you  
mark,

To your loose wit, to run the wild-geese'  
chase,

Six syllables further. I will see the lady,  
That lady that dotes on you, from whose

hate  
My love increases, though you stand elected.  
Her porter, to deny me.

*Car.* Sure you will not.

*Ant.* Yes, instantly: your prosperous-  
success

Hath made you insolent; and for her sake  
I have thus long forborne you, and can yet

Forget it and forgive it, ever provided,  
That you end here; and, for what's past re-  
calling,

That she make intercession for your pardon,  
Which, at her suit, I'll grant.

*Car.* I am much unwilling

To move her for a trifle—bear that too,  
[*Strikes him.*

And then she shall speak to you.

*Ant.* Men and angels,

Take witness for me, that I have endured  
More than a man!—

[*They fight; Cardenes falls.*

O do not fall so soon,  
Stand up—take my hand—so! when I have  
printed,

For every contumelious word, a wound here,  
Then sink for ever.

*Car.* Oh, I suffer justly!

1 *Serv.* Murder! murder! murder!  
[*Exit.*

2 *Serv.* Apprehend him.

3 *Serv.* We'll all join with you.

*Ant.* I do wish you more ;

My fury will be lost else, if it meet not  
Matter to work on : one life is too little  
For so much injury.

*Re-enter* Almira, Leonora, and *Servant.*

*Alm.* O my Cardenes !

Though dead, still my Cardenes ! Villains,  
cowards,

What do ye check at ? can one arm, and that  
A murderer's, so long guard the curs'd  
master,

Against so many swords made sharp with  
justice ?

1 *Serv.* Sure he will kill us all ; he is a  
devil.

2 *Serv.* He is invulnerable.

*Alm.* Your base fears

Beget such fancies in you. Give me a sword,  
[*Snatches a sword from the Servant.*]

This my weak arm, made strong in my re-  
venge,

Shall force a way to't. [*Wounds* Antonio.

*Ant.* Would it were deeper, madam !

The thrust, which I would not put by, being  
yours,

Of greater force, to have pierced through  
that heart

Which still retains your figure !—weep still,  
lady ;

For every tear that flows from those grieved  
eyes,

Some part of that which maintains life, goes  
from me ;

And so to die were in a gentle slumber

To pass to paradise : but you envy me

So quiet a departure from my world,

My world of miseries ; therefore, take my  
sword,

And, having kill'd me with it, cure the  
wounds

It gave Cardenes.

[*Gives* Almira his sword.

*Re-enter* Pedro.

*Pedro.* 'Tis too true : was ever  
Valour so ill employed !

*Ant.* Why stay you, lady ?

Let not soft pity work on your hard nature ;  
You cannot do a better office to

The dead Cardenes, and I willingly

Shall fall a ready sacrifice to appease him,

Your fair hand offering it.

*Alm.* Thou couldst ask nothing

But this, which I would grant.

[*Attempts to wound* him.

*Leon.* Flint-hearted lady !

*Pedro.* Are you a woman, sister !

[*Takes the sword from her.*]

*Alm.* Thou art not

A brother, I renounce that title to thee ;  
Thy hand is in this bloody act ; 'twas this,  
For which that savage homicide was sent  
hither.

Thou equal Judge of all things ! if that blood,  
And innocent blood—

*Pedro.* [Best sister.]

*Alm.* Oh, Cardenes !

How is my soul rent between rage and sor-  
row,

That it can be that such an upright cedar  
Should violently be torn up by the roots,  
Without an earthquake in that very moment  
To swallow them that did it !

*Ant.* The hurt's nothing ;

But the deep wound is in my conscience,  
friend,

Which sorrow in death only can recover.

*Pedro.* Have better hopes.

*Enter* Viceroy, Duke of Messina, Captain,  
Guard, and *Servants.*

*Duke.* My son, is this the marriage  
I came to celebrate ? false hopes of man !  
I come to find a grave here.

*Alm.* I have wasted

My stock of tears, and now just anger help  
me

To pay, in my revenge, the other part  
Of duty, which I owe thee. O, great sir,  
Not as a daughter now, but a poor widow,  
Made so before she was a bride, I fly  
To your impartial justice : the offence  
Is death, and death in his most horrid form ;  
Let not, then, title, or a prince's name,  
(Since a great crime is, in a great man,  
greater,)

Secure the offender.

*Duke.* Give me life for life,  
As thou wilt answer it to the great king,  
Whose deputy thou art here.

*Alm.* And speedy justice.

*Duke.* Put the damn'd wretch to torture.

*Alm.* Force him to

Reveal his curs'd confederates, which spare  
not,

Although you find a son among them.

*Vice.* How !

*Duke.* Why bring you not the rack forth ?

*Alm.* Wherefore stands

The murderer unbound ?

*Vice.* Shall I have hearing ?

*Duke.* Excellent lady, in this you express  
Your true love to the dead.

*Alm.* All love to mankind  
From me, ends with him.

*Vice.* Will you hear me yet?  
And first to you; you do confess the fact  
With which you stand charged?

*Ant.* I will not make worse  
What is already ill, with vain denial.

*Vice.* Then understand, though you are  
prince of Tarent,

Yet, being a subject to the king of Spain,  
No privilege of Sicily can free you  
(Being convict by a just form of law)  
From the municipal statutes of that kingdom,  
But as a common man, being found guilty,  
Must suffer for it.

*Ant.* I prize not my life  
So much, as to appeal from anything  
You shall determine of me.

*Vice.* Yet despair not  
To have an equal hearing; the exclaims  
Of this grieved father, nor my daughter's  
tears,

Shall sway me from myself; and, where  
they urge

To have you tortured, or led bound to  
prison,

I must not grant it.

*Duke.* No!

*Vice.* I cannot, sir;  
For men of his rank are to be distinguish'd  
From other men, before they are condemn'd,  
From which (his cause not heard) he yet  
stands free:

So take him to your charge, and, as your life,  
See he be safe.

*Capt.* Let me die for him else.

[*Exeunt* Pedro, and *Capt.* and *Guard*  
with *Ant.*]

*Duke.* The guard of him should have  
been given to me.

*Alm.* Or unto me.

*Duke.* Bribes may corrupt the captain.

*Alm.* And our just wreak, by force, or  
cunning practice,  
With scorn prevented.

*Car.* Oh!

*Alm.* What groan is that?

*Vice.* There are apparent signs of life yet  
in him.

*Alm.* Oh that there were! that I could  
pour my blood  
Into his veins!

*Car.* Oh, oh!

*Vice.* Take him up gently.

*Duke.* Run for physicians.

*Alm.* Surgeons.

*Duke.* All helps else.

*Vice.* This care of his recovery, timely  
practis'd,  
Would have express'd more of a father in  
you,

Than your impetuous clamours for revenge.  
But I shall find fit time to urge that further,  
Hereafter, to you; 'tis not fit for me  
To add weight to oppress'd calamity.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the Castle.*

*Enter* Pedro, Antonio, and *Captain.*

*Ant.* Why should your love to me, having  
already

So oft endured the test, be put unto  
A needless trial? have you not, long since,  
In every circumstance and rite of friendship,  
Outgone all precedents the ancients boast of,  
And will you yet move further?

*Pedro.* Hitherto

I have done nothing (howsoe'er you value  
My weak endeavours) that may justly claim  
A title to your friendship, and much less  
Laid down the debt, which, as a tribute due  
To your deservings, not I, but mankind  
Stands bound to tender.

*Ant.* Do not make an idol

Of him that should, and without supersti-  
tion,

To you build up an altar. O my Pedro!  
When I am to expire, to call you mine,  
Assures a future happiness: give me leave  
To argue with you, and, the fondness of  
Affection struck blind, with justice hear me:  
Why should you, being innocent, fling your  
life

Into the furnace of your father's anger,  
For my offence? or, take it granted (yet  
'Tis more than supposition) you prefer  
My safety 'fore your own, so prodigally  
You waste your favours, wherefore should  
this captain,

His blood and sweat rewarded in the favour  
Of his great master, falsify the trust  
Which, from true judgment, he reposes in  
him,

For me a stranger?

*Pedro.* Let him answer that,

He needs no prompter: speak your thoughts,  
and freely.

*Capt.* I ever loved to do so, and it shames  
not

The bluntness of my breeding: from my  
youth

I was train'd up a soldier, one of those  
That in their natures love the dangers more,  
Than the rewards of danger. I could add,  
My life, when forfeited, the viceroy pardon'd  
But by his intercession; and therefore,  
It being lent by him, I were ungrateful,

Which I will never be, if I refused  
To pay that debt at any time demanded.

*Pedro.* I hope, friend, this will satisfy you.

*Ant.* No, it raises

More doubts within me. Shall I, from the  
school

Of gratitude, in which this captain reads  
The text so plainly, learn to be unthankful?  
Or, viewing in your actions the idea  
Of perfect friendship, when it does point to  
me

How brave a thing it is to be a friend,  
Turn from the object? Had I never loved  
The fair Almira for her outward features,  
Nay, were the beauties of her mind sus-  
pected,

And her contempt and scorn painted before  
me,

The being your sister would anew inflame  
me,

With much more impotence to dote upon  
her:

No, dear friend, let me in my death confirm,  
(Though you in all things else have the pre-  
cedence,)

I'll die ten times, ere one of Pedro's hairs  
Shall suffer in my cause.

*Pedro.* If you so love me,

In love to that part of my soul dwells in you,  
(For though two bodies, friends have but one  
soul,)

Lose not both life and me.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* The prince is dead. [*Exit.*]

*Ant.* If so, shall I leave Pedro here to  
answer

For my escape? as thus I clasp thee, let  
The viceroy's sentence find me.

*Pedro.* Fly, for heaven's sake!

Consider the necessity; though now  
We part, Antonio, we may meet again,  
But death's division is for ever, friend.

*Enter another Servant.*

*Serv.* The rumour spread, sir, of Martino's  
death,

Is check'd; there's hope of his recovery.  
[*Exit.*]

*Ant.* Why should I fly, then, when I may  
enjoy,

With mine own life, my friend?

*Pedro.* That's still uncertain,

He may have a relapse; for once be ruled,  
friend:

He's a good debtor that pays when 'tis due;  
A prodigal, that, before it is required,  
Makes tender of it.

*Enter Sailors.*

1 *Sail.* The bark, sir, is ready.

2 *Sail.* The wind sits fair.

3 *Sail.* Heaven favours your escape.

[*Whistles within.*]

*Capt.* Hark, how the boatswain whistles  
you aboard!

Will nothing move you?

*Ant.* Can I leave my friend?

*Pedro.* I must delay no longer; force him  
hence.

*Capt.* I'll run the hazard of my fortunes  
with you.

*Ant.* What violence is this?—hear but my  
reasons.

*Pedro.* Poor friendship that is cool'd with  
arguments!

Away, away!

*Capt.* For Malta.

*Pedro.* You shall hear

All our events.

*Ant.* I may sail round the world,

But never meet thy like. Pedro!

*Pedro.* Antonio!

*Ant.* I breathe my soul back to thee.

*Pedro.* In exchange,

Bear mine along with thee.

*Capt.* Cheerly, my hearts!

[*Exeunt Captain and Sailors with  
Antonio.*]

*Pedro.* He's gone; may pitying heaven his  
pilot be,

And then I weigh not what becomes of me.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in the Viceroy's  
Palace.*

*Enter Viceroy, Duke of Messina, and  
Attendants.*

*Vice.* I tell you right, sir.

*Duke.* Yes, like a rough surgeon,  
Without a feeling in yourself you search  
My wounds unto the quick, then pre-declare  
The tediousness and danger of the cure,  
Never remembering what the patient suffers,  
But you preach this philosophy to a man  
That does partake of passion, and not  
To a dull stoic.

*Vice.* I confess you have

Just cause to mourn your son; and yet, if  
reason

Cannot yield comfort, let example cure.

I am a father too, my only daughter

As dear in my esteem, perhaps as worthy,

As your Martino, in her love to him

As desperately ill, either's loss equal;

And yet I bear it with a better temper;

*Enter Pedro.*

Which, if you please to imitate, 'twill not wrong

Your piety, nor your judgment.

*Duke.* We were fashion'd  
In different moulds. I weep with mine own eyes, sir,

Pursue my ends too ; pity to you's a cordial,  
Revenge to me ; and that I must and will have,

If my Martino die.

*Pedro.* Your *must* and *will*,  
Shall in your full-sailed confidence deceive you. [*Aside.*]

Here's doctor Paulo, sir.

*Enter Paulo and two Surgeons.*

*Duke.* My hand ! you rather  
Deserve my knee, and it shall bend as to  
A second father, if your saving aids  
Restore my son.

*Vice.* Rise, thou bright star of knowledge,  
Thou honour of thy art, thou help of nature,  
Thou glory of our academies !

*Paul.* If I blush, sir,  
To hear these attributes ill-placed on me,  
It is excusable. I am no god, sir,  
Nor holy saint that can do miracles,  
But a weak, sinful man : yet, that I may,  
In some proportion, deserve these favours  
Your excellencies please to grace me with,  
I promise all the skill I have acquired  
In simples, or the careful observation  
Of the superior bodies, with my judgment  
Derived from long experience, stand ready  
To do you service.

*Duke.* Modestly replied.

*Vice.* How is it with your princely patient ?

*Duke.* Speak,

But speak some comfort, sir.

*Paul.* I must speak truth :  
His wounds though many, heaven so guided yet  
Antonio's sword, it pierced no part was mortal.

These gentlemen, who worthily deserve  
The names of surgeons, have done their duties :

The means they practised, not ridiculous charms

To stop the blood ; no oils, nor balsams bought

Of cheating quack-salvers, or mountebanks,  
By them applied : the rules by Chiron taught,  
And Æsculapius, which drew upon him  
The Thunderer's envy, they with care pursued,  
Heaven prospering their endeavours.

*Duke.* There is hope, then,  
Of his recovery ?

*Paul.* But no assurance ;  
I must not flatter you. That little air  
Of comfort that breathes towards us (for I dare not  
Rob these t'enrich myself) you owe their care ;

For, yet, I have done nothing.

*Duke.* Still more modest ;  
I will begin with them : to either give  
Three thousand crowns.

*Vice.* I'll double your reward :  
See them paid presently.

*1 Surg.* This magnificence  
With equity cannot be conferr'd on us ;  
'Tis due unto the doctor.

*2 Surg.* True ; we were  
But his subordinate ministers, and did only  
Follow his grave directions.

*Paul.* 'Tis your own :

I challenge no part in it.

*Vice.* Brave on both sides !

*Paul.* Deserve this, with the honour that  
will follow,

In your attendance.

*2 Surg.* If both sleep at once,  
'Tis justice both should die.

[*Exeunt Surgeons.*]

*Duke.* For you, grave doctor,  
We will not in such petty sums consider  
Your high deserts ; our treasury lies open,  
Command it as your own.

*Vice.* Choose any castle,  
Nay, city, in our government, and be lord  
of't.

*Paul.* Of neither, sir ; I am not so ambitious :

Nor would I have your highnesses secure.  
We have but faintly yet begun our journey ;  
A thousand difficulties and dangers must be  
Encounter'd, ere we end it : though his  
hurts,

I mean his outward ones, do promise fair,  
There is a deeper one, and in his mind,  
Must be with care provided for ; melancholy,

And at the height, too, near akin to madness,

Possesses him ; his senses are distracted,  
Not one, but all ; and, if I can collect them,  
With all the various ways invention  
Or industry e'er practised, I shall write it  
My masterpiece.

*Duke.* You more and more engage me.

*Vice.* May we not visit him ?

*Paul.* By no means, sir ;  
As he is now, such courtesies come un-  
timely :



I'll yield you reason for't. Should he look on you,

It will renew the memory of that Which I would have forgotten ; your good prayers

And those I do presume shall not be wanting To my endeavours, are the utmost aids I yet desire your excellencies should grant me.

So, with my humblest service—

*Duke.* Go, and prosper. [*Exit* Paulo.

*Vice.* Observe his piety ;—I have heard, how true

I know not, most physicians, as they grow Greater in skill, grow less in their religion ; Attributing so much to natural causes, That they have little faith in that they cannot

Deliver reason for : this doctor steers Another course—but let this pass. If you please,

Your company to my daughter.

*Duke.* I wait on you. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter* Leonora and Waiting Women.

*Leon.* Took she no rest to-night ?

*1* *Wom.* Not any, madam ;

I am sure she slept not. If she slumber'd, straight,

As if some dreadful vision had appear'd, She started up, her hair unbound, and with Distracted looks staring about the chamber, She asks aloud, *Where is Martino ? where Have you conceal'd him ?* sometimes names Antonio,

Trembling in every joint, her brows contracted,

Her fair face as 'twere changed into a curse, Her hands held up thus ; and, as if her words

Were too big to find passage through her mouth,

She groans, then throws herself upon her bed,

Beating her breast.

*Leon.* 'Tis wondrous strange.

*2* *Wom.* Nay, more ;

She that of late vouchsafed not to be seen, But so adorn'd as if she were to rival Nero's Poppæa, or the Egyptian queen, Now, careless of her beauties, when we offer Our service, she contemns it.

*Leon.* Does she not

Sometimes forsake her chamber ?

*2* *Wom.* Much about

This hour ; then, with a strange unsettled gait,

She measures twice or thrice the gallery,

Silent, and frowning, (we dare not speak to her.)

And then returns.—She's come, pray you, now observe her.

*Enter* Almira in black, carelessly habited.

*Alm.* Why are my eyes fix'd on the ground, and not

Bent upwards ? ha ! that which was mortal of My dear Martino, as a debt to nature, I know this mother earth hath sepulchred ; But his diviner part, his soul, o'er which The tyrant Death, nor yet the fatal sword Of curs'd Antonio, his instrument, Had the least power, borne upon angels' wings Appointed to that office, mounted far Above the firmament.

*Leon.* Strange imagination !

Dear cousin, your Martino lives.

*Alm.* I know you,

And that in this you flatter me ; he's dead, As much as could die of him :—but look yonder !

Amongst a million of glorious lights That deck the heavenly canopy, I have Discern'd his soul, transform'd into a star. Do you not see it ?

*Leon.* Lady !

*Alm.* Look with my eyes.

What splendour circles it ! the heavenly archer,

Not far off distant, appears dim with envy, Viewing himself outshined. Bright constellation !

Dart down thy beams of pity on Almira, And, since thou find'st such grace where now thou art,

As I did truly love thee on the earth, Like a kind harbinger, prepare my lodging, And place me near thee !

*Leon.* I much more than fear

She'll grow into a frenzy.

*Alm.* How ? what's this !

A dismal sound ! come nearer, cousin ; lay Your ear close to the ground,—closer, I pray you.

Do you howl ? are you there, Antonio ?

*Leon.* Where, sweet lady ?

*Alm.* In the vault, in hell, on the infernal rack,

Where murderers are tormented :—yerk him soundly,

'Twas Rhadamanth's sentence ; do your office, Furies.—

How he roars ! What ! plead to me to mediate for you !

I'm deaf, I cannot hear you.

*Leon.* 'Tis but fancy,

Collect yourself.

*Alm.* Leave babbling ; 'tis rare music !  
Rhamnusia plays on a pair of tongs  
Red hot, and Proserpine dances to the  
consort ;

Pluto sits laughing by too. So ! enough :  
I do begin to pity him.

*Leon.* I wish, madam,  
You would shew it to yourself.

*2 Wom.* Her fit begins  
To leave her.

*Alm.* Oh my brains ! are you there,  
cousin ?

*Leon.* Now she speaks temperately. I  
am ever ready

To do you service : how do you ?

*Alm.* Very much troubled.

I have had the strangest waking dream of hell  
And heaven—I know not what.

*Leon.* My lord your father  
Is come to visit you ; as you would not  
grieve him

That is so tender of you, entertain him  
With a becoming duty.

*Enter Viceroy, Duke of Messina, Pedro,  
and Attendants.*

*Vice.* Still forlorn !  
No comfort, my Almira ?

*Duke.* In your sorrow,  
For my Martino, madam, you have express'd  
All possible love and tenderness ; too much  
of it

Will wrong yourself, and him. He may  
live, lady,

(For we are not past hope,) with his future  
service,

In some part to deserve it.

*Alm.* If heaven please  
To be so gracious to me, I will serve him  
With such obedience, love, and humbleness,  
That I will rise up an example for  
Good wives to follow : but until I have  
Assurance what fate will determine of me,  
Thus, like a desolate widow, give me leave  
To weep for him ; for, should he die, I have  
vow'd

Not to outlive him ; and my humble suit is,  
One monument may cover us, and Antonio  
(In justice you must grant me that) be  
offer'd

A sacrifice to our ashes.

*Vice.* Prithee put off  
These sad thoughts ; both shall live, I doubt  
it not,

A happy pair.

*Enter Cueulo, and Borachia.*

*Cuc.* O sir, the foulest treason  
That ever was discover'd !

*Vice.* Speak it, that  
We may prevent it.

*Cuc.* Nay, 'tis past prevention :  
Though you allow me wise, (in modesty,  
I will not say oraculous,) I cannot help it.  
I am a statesman, and some say a wise one ;  
But I could never conjure, nor divine  
Of things to come.

*Vice.* Leave fooling : to the point ;  
What treason ?

*Cuc.* The false prince, don John Antonio,  
Is fled.

*Vice.* It is not possible.

*Pedro.* Peace, screech-owl.

*Cuc.* I must speak, and it shall out, sir ;  
the captain

You trusted with the fort is run away too.

*Alm.* O miserable woman ! I defy  
All comfort : cheated too of my revenge !  
As you are my father, sir, and you my  
brother,

I will not curse you ; but I dare, and will  
say,

You are unjust and treacherous.—If there be  
A way to death, I'll find it. [*Exit.*

*Vice.* Follow her,  
She'll do some violent act upon herself ;  
Till she be better temper'd, bind her hands,  
And fetch the doctor to her.—

[*Exeunt Leonora, and Waiting Women.*  
Had not you

A hand in this ?

*Pedro.* I, sir ! I never knew  
Such disobedience.

*Vice.* My honour's touch'd in't :  
Let gallies be mann'd forth in his pursuit,  
Search every port and harbour ; if I live,  
He shall not 'scape thus.

*Duke.* Fine hypocrisy !  
Away, dissemblers ! 'tis confederacy  
Betwixt thy son, and self, and the false cap-  
tain,

He could not thus have vanish'd else. You  
have murder'd  
My son amongst you, and now murder jus-  
tice :

You know it most impossible he should live,  
Howe'er the doctor, for your ends, dissem-  
bled,

And you have shifted hence Antonio.

*Vice.* Messina, thou'rt a crazed and  
grieved old man,

And being in my court, protected by  
The law of hospitality, or I should  
Give you a sharper answer : may I perish,  
If I knew of his flight !

*Duke.* Fire, then, the castle.  
Hang up the captain's wife and children.

*Vice.* Fie, sir !

*Pedro.* My lord, you are uncharitable ;  
capital treasons  
Exact not so much.

*Duke.* Thanks, most noble signior !  
We ever had your good word and your love.

*Cuc.* Sir, I dare pass my word, my lords  
are clear

Of any imputation in this case  
You seem to load them with.

*Duke.* Impertinent fool !—  
No, no ; the loving faces you put on,  
Have been but grinning visors : you have  
juggled me

Out of my son, and out of justice too ;  
But Spain shall do me right, believe me,  
Viceroy :

There I will force it from thee by the king.  
He shall not eat nor sleep in peace for me,  
Till I am righted for this treachery.

*Vicc.* Thy worst, Messina ! since no rea-  
son can

Qualify thy intemperance ; the corruption  
Of my subordinate ministers cannot wrong  
My true integrity. Let privy searchers  
Examine all the land.

*Pedro.* Fair fall Antonio ! [*Aside.*  
[*Exeunt* Viceroy, Pedro, and Attendants.

*Cuc.* 'This is my wife, my lord ; troth speak  
your conscience,  
Is't not a goodly dame ?

*Duke.* She is no less, sir ;  
I will make use of these : may I entreat you  
To call my niece.

*Bora.* With speed, sir. [*Exit* Borachia.

*Cuc.* You may, my lord, suspect me  
As an agent in these state-conveyances :  
Let signior Cuculo, then, be never more,  
For all his place, wit, and authority,  
Held a most worthy, honest gentleman.

*Re-enter* Borachia with Leonora.

*Duke.* I do acquit you, signior. Niece,  
you see  
To what extremes I am driven ; the cunning  
viceroy,  
And his son Pedro, having express'd too  
plainly

Their cold affections to my son Martino :  
And therefore I conjure thee, Leonora,  
By all thy hopes from me, which is my  
dukedom

If my son fail,—however, all thy fortunes ;  
Though heretofore some love hath past  
betwixt

Don Pedro, and thyself, abjure him now :  
And as thou keep'st Almira company,  
In this her desolation, so in bate  
To this young Pedro, for thy cousin's love,  
Be her associate ; or assure thyself,

I cast thee like a stranger from my blood.  
If I do ever hear thou see'st, or send'st  
Token, or receiv'st message—by yon heaven,  
I never more will own thee !

*Leon.* O, dear uncle !  
You have put a tyrannous yoke upon my  
heart,

And it will break it. [*Exit.*

*Duke.* Gravest lady, you  
May be a great assister in my ends.  
I buy your diligence thus :—divide this  
couple,

Hinder their interviews ; feign 'tis her will  
To give him no admittance, if he crave it ;  
And thy rewards shall be thine own desires :  
Whereto, good sir, but add your friendly aids,  
And use me to my uttermost.

*Cuc.* My lord,  
If my wife please, I dare not contradict.

Borachia, what do you say ?

*Bora.* I say, my lord,  
I know my place ; and be assured, I will  
Keep fire and tow asunder.

*Duke.* You in this  
Shall much deserve me. [*Exit.*

*Cuc.* We have ta'en upon us  
A heavy charge : I hope you'll now forbear  
The excess of wine.

*Bora.* I will do what I please.  
This day the market's kept for slaves ; go you,  
And buy me a fine-timber'd one to assist me ;  
I must be better waited on.

*Cuc.* Anything,  
So you'll leave wine.

*Bora.* Still prating !  
*Cuc.* I am gone, duck. [*Exit.*

*Bora.* Pedro ! so hot upon the scent ! I'll  
fit him.

*Re-enter* Pedro.

*Pedro.* Donna Borachia, you most happily  
Are met to pleasure me.

*Bora.* It may be so ;  
I use to pleasure many. Here lies my way,  
I do beseech you, sir, keep on your voyage.

*Pedro.* Be not so short, sweet lady, I must  
with you.

*Bora.* With me, sir ! I beseech you, sir—  
why, what, sir,  
See you in me ?

*Pedro.* Do not mistake me, lady ;  
Nothing but honesty.

*Bora.* Hang honesty !  
Trump me not up with honesty : do you  
mark, sir,

I have a charge, sir, and a special charge, sir,  
And 'tis not honesty can win on me, sir.

*Pedro.* Prithee conceive me rightly.  
*Bora.* I conceive you !

*Pedro.* But understand.  
*Bora.* I will not understand, sir,  
 I cannot, nor I do not understand, sir.  
*Pedro.* Prithee, Borachia, let me see my  
 mistress,  
 But look upon her; stand you by.  
*Bora.* How's this!  
 Shall I stand by? what do you think of me?  
 Now, by the virtue of the place I hold,  
 You are a paltry lord to tempt my trust thus:  
 I am no Helen, nor no Hecuba,  
 To be deflower'd of my loyalty  
 With your fair language.  
*Pedro.* Thou mistak'st me still.  
*Bora.* It may be so, my place will bear  
 me out in't,  
 And will mistake you still, make you your  
 best on't.  
*Pedro.* A pox upon thee! let me but behold  
 her.  
*Bora.* A plague upon you! you shall never  
 see her.  
*Pedro.* This is a crone in grain! thou art  
 so testy—  
 Prithee, take breath, and know thy friends.  
*Bora.* I will not,  
 I have no friends, nor I will have none this  
 way:  
 And, now I think on't better, why will you  
 see her?  
*Pedro.* Because she loves me dearly, I her  
 equally.  
*Bora.* She hates you damnably, most  
 wickedly,  
 Build that upon my word, most wickedly;  
 And swears her eyes are sick when they  
 behold you.  
 How fearfully have I heard her rail upon you,  
 And cast and rail again; and cast again;  
 Call for hot waters, and then rail again!  
*Pedro.* How! 'tis not possible.  
*Bora.* I have heard her swear  
 (How justly, you best know, and where the  
 cause lies)  
 That you are—I shame to tell it—but it must  
 out—  
 Fie, fie! why, how have you deserv'd it?  
*Pedro.* I am what?  
*Bora.* The beastliest man—why, what a  
 grief must this be?  
 (Sir-reverence of the company)—a rank  
 whoremaster:  
 Ten livery whores, she assured me on her  
 credit,  
 With weeping eyes she spake it, and seven  
 citizens,  
 Besides all voluntaries that serve under you,  
 And of all countries.  
*Pedro.* This must needs be a lie.

*Bora.* Besides, you are so careless of your  
 body,  
 Which is a foul fault in you.  
*Pedro.* Leave your fooling,  
 For this shall be a fable: happily,  
 My sister's anger may grow strong against  
 me,  
 Which thou mistak'st.  
*Bora.* She hates you very well too,  
 But your mistress hates you heartily:—look  
 upon you!  
 Upon my conscience, she should see the  
 devil first,  
 With eyes as big as saucers; when I but  
 named you,  
 She has leap'd back thirty feet: if once she  
 smell you,  
 For certainly you are rank, she says, ex-  
 treme rank,  
 And the wind stand with you too, she's  
 gone for ever!  
*Pedro.* For all this, I would see her.  
*Bora.* That's all one.  
 Have you new eyes when those are scratch'd  
 out, or a nose  
 To clap on warm? have you proof against  
 a piss-pot,  
 Which, if they bid me, I must fling upon  
 you?  
*Pedro.* I shall not see her, then, you say?  
*Bora.* It seems so.  
*Pedro.* Prithee, be thus far friend then,  
 good Borachia,  
 To give her but this letter, and this ring,  
 And leave thy pleasant lying, which I pardon:  
 But leave it in her pocket; there's no harm  
 in't.  
 I'll take thee up a petticoat, will that please  
 thee?  
*Bora.* Take up my petticoat! I scorn the  
 motion,  
 I scorn it with my heels; take up my petti-  
 coat!  
*Pedro.* And why thus hot?  
*Bora.* Sir, you shall find me hotter,  
 If you take up my petticoat.  
*Pedro.* I'll give thee a new petticoat.  
*Bora.* I scorn the gift—take up my petti-  
 coat!  
 Alas! my lord, you are too young, my lord,  
 Too young, my lord, to circumcise me that  
 way.  
 Take up my petticoat! I am a woman,  
 A woman of another way, my lord,  
 A gentlewoman: he that takes up my petti-  
 coat,  
 Shall have enough to do, I warrant him,  
 I would fain see the proudest of you all so  
 lusty.

*Pedro.* Thou art disposed still to mistake me.

*Bora.* Petticoat !  
You shew now what you are ; but do your worst, sir.

*Pedro.* A wild-fire take thee !

*Bora.* I ask no favour of you,  
And so I leave you ; and withal, I charge you  
In my own name, for, sir, I'd have you know  
it,

In this place I present your father's person,  
Upon your life, not dare to follow me,  
For if you do— [Exit.

*Pedro.* Go ! and the pox go with thee,  
If thou hast so much moisture to receive  
them !

For thou wilt have them, though a horse  
bestow them.

I must devise a way—for I must see her,  
And very suddenly ; and, madam petticoat,  
If all the wit I have, and this can do,  
I'll make you break your charge, and your  
hope too. [Exit.

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The Slave Market.*

*Enter Slave-merchant and Servant, with Antonio and Captain disguised, and dressed as Slaves, English Slave, and divers other Slaves.*

*Merch.* Come, rank yourselves, and stand  
out handsomely.

—Now ring the bell, that they may know  
my market.

Stand you two here ; [*To Antonio and the Captain.*] you are personable men,  
And apt to yield good sums, if women  
cheapen.

Put me that pig-complexion'd fellow behind,  
He will spoil my sale else ; the slave looks  
like famine.

Sure he was got in a cheese-press, the whey  
runs out on's nose yet.

He will not yield above a peck of oysters—  
If I can get a quart of wine in too, you are  
gone, sir :

Why sure, thou hadst no father.

*Slave.* Sure I know not.

*Merch.* No, certainly ; a March frog  
[leap'd] thy mother ;

Thou'rt but a monster-paddock.—Look who  
comes, sirrah.— [Exit Servant.

And next prepare the song, and do it lively.—  
Your tricks too, sirrah, they are ways to  
catch the buyer, [*To the English Slave.*  
And if you do them well, they'll prove good  
dowries.—

How now ?

*Re-enter Servant.*

*Serv.* They come, sir, with their bags full  
loaden.

*Merch.* Reach me my stool. O ! here  
they come.

*Enter Paulo, Apothecary, Cuculo, and Citizens.*

*Cuc.* That's he.

He never fails monthly to sell his slaves here ;  
He buys them presently upon their taking,  
And so disperses them to every market.

*Merch.* Begin the song, and chant it  
merrily.

A SONG, by one of the Slaves.

Well done.

*Paul.* Good morrow !

*Merch.* Morrow to you, signiors !

*Paul.* We come to look upon your slaves,  
and buy too,

If we can like the persons, and the prices.

*Cuc.* They shew fine active fellows.

*Merch.* They are no less, sir,

And people of strong labours.

*Paul.* That's in the proof, sir.

*Apoth.* Pray what's the price of this red-  
bearded fellow ?

If his gall be good, I have certain uses for  
him.

*Merch.* My sorrel slaves are of a lower price,  
Because the colour's faint :—fifty chequins,  
sir.

*Apoth.* What be his virtues ?

*Merch.* He will poison rats ;  
Make him but angry, and his eyes kill spiders ;  
Let him but, fasting, spit upon a toad,  
And presently it bursts, and dies ; his dreams  
kill :

He'll run you in a wheel, and draw up water,  
But if his nose drop in't, 'twill kill an army.  
When you have worn him to the bones with  
uses,

Thrust him into an oven luted well,  
Dry him, and beat him, flesh and bone, to  
powder,

And that kills scabs, and aches of all climates.

*Apoth.* Pray at what distance may I talk  
to him ?

*Merch.* Give him but sage and butter in  
a morning,  
And there's no fear : but keep him from all  
women,

For there his poison swells most.

*Apoth.* I will have him.

Cannot he breed a plague too ?

*Merch.* Yes, yes, yes,  
Feed him with fogs ; *probatum*.—Now to  
you, sir.

Do you like this slave?

[*Pointing to Antonio.*]

*Cuc.* Yes, if I like his price well.

*Merch.* The price is full an hundred, nothing bated.

Sirrah, sell the Moors there :—feel, be's high and lusty,

And of a gamesome nature ; bold, and secret, Apt to win favour of the man that owns him, By diligence and duty : look upon him.

*Paul.* Do you hear, sir?

*Merch.* I'll be with you presently.—

Mark but his limbs, that slave will cost you fourscore ;

[*Pointing to the Captain.*]

An easy price—turn him about, and view him.—

For these two, sir? why, they are the finest children—

Twins, on my credit, sir.—Do you see this boy, sir?

He will run as far from you in an hour—

*1 Cit.* Will he so, sir?

*Merch.* Conceive me rightly,—if upon an errand,

As any horse you have.

*2 Cit.* What will this girl do?

*Merch.* Sure no harm at all, sir,

For she sleeps most an end.

*Cit.* An excellent housewife.

Of what religion are they?

*Merch.* What you will, sir,

So there be meat and drink in't : they'll do little

That shall offend you, for their chief desire Is to do nothing at all, sir.

*Cuc.* A hundred is too much.

*Merch.* Not a doit bated :

He's a brave slave, his eye shews activeness ; Fire and the mettle of a man dwell in him.

Here is one you shall have—

*Cuc.* For what?

*Merch.* For nothing,

And thank you too.

*Paul.* What can he do?

*Merch.* Why, anything that's ill,

And never blush at it : he's so true a thief, That he'll steal from himself, and think he has got by it.

He stole out of his mother's belly, being an infant ;

And from a lousy nurse he stole his nature, From a dog his look, and from an ape his nimbleness ;

He will look in your face and pick your pockets,

Rob ye the most wise rat of a cheese-paring ; There, where a cat will go in, he will follow,

His body has no backbone. Into my company

He stole, for I never bought him, and will steal into yours,

An you stay a little longer. Now, if any of you

Be given to the excellent art of lying, Behold, before you here, the masterpicce ! He'll outlie him that taught him, monsieur devil,

Offer to swear he has eaten nothing in a twelvemonth,

When his mouth's full of meat.

*Cuc.* Pray keep him, he's a jewel ;

And here's your money for this fellow.

*Merch.* He's yours, sir.

*Cuc.* Come, follow me.

[*Exit with Antonio.*]

*Cit.* Twenty chequiss for these two.

*Merch.* For five and twenty take them.

*Cit.* There's your money ;

I'll have them, if it be to sing in cages.

*Merch.* Give them hard eggs, you never had such blackbirds.

*Cit.* Is she a maid, dost think?

*Merch.* I dare not swear, sir :

She is nine year old, at ten you shall find few here.

*Cit.* A merry fellow ! thou say'st true. Come, children.

[*Exit with the two Moors.*]

*Paul.* Here, tell your money ; if his life but answer

His outward promises, I have bought him cheap, sir.

*Merch.* Too cheap, o' conscience : he's a preguant kuave ;

Full of fine thought, I warrant him.

*Paul.* He's but weak-timber'd.

*Merch.* 'Tis the better, sir ;

He will turn gentleman a great deal sooner.

*Paul.* Very weak legs.

*Merch.* Strong, as the time allows, sir.

*Paul.* What's that fellow?

*Merch.* Who, this? the finest thing in all the world, sir,

The punctuallest, and the perfectest ; an English metal,

But coin'd in France : *Your servant's servant, sir!*

Do you understand that? or your shadow's servant!

Will you buy him to carry in a box? Kiss your hand, sirrah ;—

Let fall your cloak on one shoulder ;—face to your left hand ;—

Feather your hat ;—slope your hat ;—now charge.—Your honour,

What think you of this fellow?

*Paul.* Indeed, I know not ;

I never saw such an ape before : but, hark you,

Are these things serious in his nature ?

*Merch.* Yes, yes ;

Part of his creed : come, do some more devices.

Quarrel a little, and take him for your enemy, Do it in dumb show. Now observe him nearly.

[*The English Slave practises his postures.*

*Paul.* This fellow's mad, stark mad.

*Merch.* Believe they are all so :

I have sold a hundred of them.

*Paul.* A strange nation !

What may the women be ?

*Merch.* As mad as they,

And, as I have heard for truth, a great deal madder :

Yet, you may find some civil things amongst them,

But they are not respected. Nay, never wonder ;

They have a city, sir,—I have been in it, And therefore dare affirm it, where, if you saw

With what a load of vanity 'tis fraughted, How like an everlasting morris-dance it looks, Nothing but hobby-horse, and maid Marian, You would start indeed.

*Paul.* They are handsome men ?

*Merch.* Yes, if they would thank their maker,

And seek no further ; but they have new creators,

God-tailor, and god-mercier : a kind of Jews, sir,

But fall'n into idolatry ; for they worship Nothing with so much service, as the cow-calves.

*Paul.* What do you mean by cow-calves ?

*Merch.* Why, their women.

Will you see him do any more tricks ?

*Paul.* 'Tis enough, I thank you ;

But yet I'll buy him, for the rareness of him : He may make my princely patient mirth, and that done,

I'll chain him in my study, that at void hours I may run o'er the story of his country.

*Merch.* His price is forty.

*Paul.* Hold—I'll once be foolish, And buy a lump of levity to laugh at.

*Apoth.* Will your worship walk ?

*Paul.* How now, apothecary, Have you been buying too ?

*Apoth.* A little, sir,

A dose or two of mischief.

*Paul.* Fare ye well, sir,

As these prove, we shall look the next wind for you.

*Merch.* I shall be with you, sir.

*Paul.* Who bought this fellow ?

*2 Cit.* Not I.

*Apoth.* Nor I.

*Paul.* Why does he follow us, then ?

*Merch.* Did not I tell you he would steal to you ?

*2 Cit.* Sirrah,

You mouldy-chaps ! know your crib, I would wish you,

And get from whence you came.

*1 Slave.* I came from no place.

*Paul.* Wilt thou be my fool ? for fools, they say, will tell truth.

*1 Slave.* Yes, if you will give me leave, sir, to abuse you,

For I can do that naturally.

*Paul.* And I can heat you.

*1 Slave.* I should be sorry else, sir.

*Merch.* He looks for that, as duly as his victuals,

And will be extreme sick when he is not beaten. He will be as wanton, when he has a bone broken,

As a cat in a bowl on the water.

*Paul.* You will part with him ?

*Merch.* To such a friend as you, sir.

*Paul.* And without money ?

*Merch.* Not a penny, signior ; And would he were better for you !

*Paul.* Follow me, then ;

The knave may teach me something.

*1 Slave.* Something that

You dearly may repent ; howe'er you scorn me,

The slave may prove your master.

*Paul.* Farewell once more !

*Merch.* Farewell ! and when the wind serves next, expect me. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in the Viceroy's Palace.*

*Enter Cuculo and Antonio.*

*Cuc.* Come, sir, you are mine, sir, now ; you serve a man, sir,

That, when you know more, you will find—

*Ant.* I hope so.

*Cuc.* What dost thou hope ?

*Ant.* To find you a kind master.

*Cuc.* Find you yourself a diligent true servant,

And take the precept of the wise before you, And then you may hope, sirrah. Understand,

You serve me—what is ME ? a man of credit.

*Ant.* Yes, sir.

*Cuc.* Of special credit, special office ; hear first

And understand again, of special office :

A man that nods upon the thing he meets,  
And that thing bows.

*Ant.* 'Tis fit it should be so, sir.

*Cuc.* It shall be so: a man near all importance.

Dost thou digest this truly?

*Ant.* I hope I shall, sir.

*Cuc.* Besides, thou art to serve a noble mistress,

Of equal place and trust. Serve usefully,  
Serve all with diligence, but her delights;  
There make your stop. She is a woman,  
sirrah,

And though a cull'd out virtue, yet a woman.  
Thou art not troubled with the strength of  
blood,

And stirring faculties, for she'll shew a fair  
one?

*Ant.* As I am a man, I may; but as I am  
your man,

Your trusty, useful man, those thoughts shall  
perish.

*Cuc.* 'Tis apt, and well distinguish'd. The  
next precept,

And then, observe me, you have all your  
duty;

Keep, as thou'dst keep thine eye-sight, all  
wine from her,

All talk of wine.

*Ant.* Wine is a comfort, sir.

*Cuc.* A devil, sir! let her not dream of  
wine;

Make her believe there neither is, nor was  
wine;

Swear it.

*Ant.* Will you have me lie?

*Cuc.* To my end, sir:

For if one drop of wine but creep into her,  
She is the wisest woman in the world straight,  
And all the women in the world together  
Are but a whisper to her; a thousand iron  
mills

Can be heard no further than a pair of nut-  
crackers.

Keep her from wine; wine makes her dan-  
gerous.

Fall back—my lord Don Pedro!

*Enter Pedro.*

*Pedro.* Now, master Office,

What is the reason that your vigilant Great-  
ness,

And your wife's wonderful Wiseness, have  
lock'd up from me

The way to see my mistress? Whose dog's  
dead now,

That you observe these vigils?

*Cuc.* Very well, my lord.

Belike, we observe no law then, nor no order,

Nor feel no power, nor will, of him that  
made them,

When state-commands thus slightly are dis-  
puted.

*Pedro.* What state command? dost thou  
think any state

Would give thee anything but eggs to keep,  
Or trust thee with a secret above lousing?

*Cuc.* No, no, my lord, I am not passionate;  
You cannot work me that way, to betray me.  
A point there is in't, that you must not see, sir,  
A secret and a serious point of state too;  
And do not urge it further, do not, lord,  
It will not take; you deal with them that  
wink not.

You tried my wife. Alas! you thought she  
was foolish,

Won with an empty word; you have not  
found it.

*Pedro.* I have found a pair of coxcombs,  
that I am sure on.

*Cuc.* Your lordship may say three:—I am  
not passionate.

*Pedro.* How's that?

*Cuc.* Your lordship found a faithful gentle-  
woman,

Strong, and inscrutable as the viceroy's heart;  
A woman of another making, lord:

And, lest she might partake with woman's  
weakness,

I've purchased her a rib to make her perfect,  
A rib that will not shrink, nor break in the  
bending.

This trouble we are put to, to prevent things,  
Which your good lordship holds but neces-  
sary.

*Pedro.* A fellow of a handsome and free  
promise,

And much, methinks, I'm taken with his  
countenance.—

Do you serve this yeoman, porter?

[To Antonio.

*Cuc.* Not a word.

*Basta!* Your lordship may discourse your  
freedom;

He is a slave of state, sir, so of silence.

*Pedro.* You are very punctual, state-cut,  
fare ye well;

I shall find time to fit you too, I fear not.

[Exit.

*Cuc.* And I shall fit you, lord: you would  
be billing;

You are too hot, sweet lord, too hot.—Go  
you home,

And there observe these lessons I first taught  
you.

Look to your charge abundantly; be wary,  
Trusty and wary; much weight bangs upon  
me,



Watchful and wary too! this lord is dangerous,  
Take courage and resist: for other uses,  
Your mistress will inform you. Go, be faithful,

And, do you hear? no wine.

*Ant.* I shall observe, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Paulo and Surgeons.*

*Paul.* He must take air.

*1 Surg.* Sir, under your correction,  
The violence of motion may make  
His wounds bleed fresh.

*2 Surg.* And he hath lost already  
Too much blood, in my judgment.

*Paul.* I allow that;  
But to choke up his spirits in a dark room,  
Is far more dangerous. He comes; no questions.

*Enter Cardenes.*

*Car.* Certain we have no reason, nor that soul  
Created of that pureness books persuade us:  
We understand not, sure, nor feel that  
sweetness

That men call virtue's chain to link our actions.

Our imperfections form, and flatter us;  
A will to rash and rude things is our reason,  
And that we glory in, that makes us guilty.  
Why did I wrong this man? unmanly wrong him?

Unmannerly? He gave me no occasion.  
In all my heat how noble was his temper!  
And, when I had forgot both man and manhood,

With what a gentle bravery did he chide me!  
And, say he had kill'd me, whither had I  
travell'd?

Kill'd me in all my rage—oh, how it shakes me!

Why didst thou do this, fool? a woman taught me,

The devil and his angel, woman, bade me.—  
I am a beast, the wildest of all beasts,  
And like a beast I make my blood my master.

Farewell, farewell, forever, name of mistress!  
Out of my heart I cross thee; love and women

Out of my thoughts.

*Paul.* Ay, now you shew your manhood.

*Car.* Doctor, believe me, I have bought my knowledge,  
And dearly, doctor:—they are dangerous creatures,

They sting at both ends, doctor; worthless creatures,

And all their loves and favours end in ruins.

*Paul.* To man, indeed.

*Car.* Why, now thou tak'st me rightly.  
What can they shew, or by what act deserve us,

While we have Virtue, and pursue her beauties!

*Paul.* And yet I've heard of many virtuous women.

*Car.* Not many, doctor; there your reading fails you:

Would there were more, and in their loves less dangers!

*Paul.* Love is a noble thing without all doubt, sir.

*Car.* Yes, and an excellent—to cure the itch. [*Exit.*]

*1 Surg.* Strange melancholy!

*Paul.* By degrees 'twill lessen:

Provide your things.

*2 Surg.* Our care shall not be wanting. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*A Room in Cuculo's House.*

*Enter Leonora and Almira.*

*Leon.* Good madam, for your health's sake clear those clouds up,

That feed upon your beauties like diseases.  
Time's hand will turn again, and what he ruins

Gently restore, and wipe off all your sorrows.  
Believe you are to blame, much to blame, lady;

You tempt his loving care whose eye has number'd

All our afflictions, and the time to cure them:

You rather with this torrent choak his mercies,  
Than gently slide into his providence.

Sorrows are well allow'd, and sweet nature,  
Where they express no more than drops on lilies;

But, when they fall in storms, they bruise our hopes;

Make us unable, though our comforts meet us,

To hold our heads up: Come, you shall take comfort;

This is a sullen grief becomes condemn'd men,

That feel a weight of sorrow through their souls:

Do but look up. Why, so!—is not this better,

Than hanging down your head still like a violet,

And dropping out those sweet eyes for a wager?

Pray you, speak a little.

*Alm.* Pray you, desire no more ;

And, if you love me, say no more.

*Leon.* How fain,

If I would be as wilful, and partake in't,  
Would you destroy yourself! how often, lady,  
Even of the same disease have you cured

me,  
And shook me out on't ; chid me, tumbled

me,  
And forced my hands, thus ?

*Alm.* By these tears, no more.

*Leon.* You are too prodigal of them. Well,  
I will not ;

For though my love bids me transgress your  
will,

I have a service to your sorrows still.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*A Hall in the same.*

*Enter Pedro and Antonio.*

*Ant.* Indeed, my lord, my place is not so  
near ;

I wait below stairs, and there sit, and wait  
Who comes to seek accesses ; nor is it fit, sir,  
My rudeness should intrude so near their  
lodgings.

*Pedro.* Thou mayst invent a way, 'tis but  
a trial,

But carrying up this letter, and this token,  
And giving them discreetly to my mistress,  
The lady Leonora : there's my purse,  
Or anything thou'lt ask me ; if thou knew'st  
me,

And what I may be to thee for this  
courtesy—

*Ant.* Your lordship speaks so honestly,  
and freely,

That by my troth I'll venture.

*Pedro.* I dearly thank thee.

*Ant.* And it shall cost me hard ; nay, keep  
your purse, sir,

For, though my body's bought, my mind  
was never.

Though I am bound, my courtesies are no  
slaves.

*Pedro.* Thou shouldst be truly gentle.

*Ant.* If I were so,

The state I am in bids you not believe it.  
But to the purpose, sir ; give me your letter,  
And next your counsel, for I serve a crafty  
mistress.

*Pedro.* And she must be removed, thou  
wilt else ne'er do it.

*Ant.* Ay, there's the plague : think, and  
I'll think awhile too.

*Pedro.* Her husband's suddenly fallen sick?

*Ant.* She cares not ;

If he were dead, indeed, it would do better.

*Pedro.* Would he were hang'd !

*Ant.* Then she would run for joy, sir.

*Pedro.* Some lady crying out ?

*Ant.* She has two already.

*Pedro.* Her house afire ?

*Ant.* *Let the fool, my husband, quench it.*  
This will be her answer.—This may take ; it  
will, sure.

Your lordship must go presently, and send me  
Two or three bottles of your best Greek wine,  
The strongest and the sweetest.

*Pedro.* Instantly :

But will that do ?

*Ant.* Let me alone to work it.

[*Exit Pedro.*]

Wine I was charged to keep by all means  
from her ;

All secret locks it opens, and all counsels,  
That I am sure, and gives men all accesses.  
Pray heaven she be not loving when she's  
drunk now !

For drunk she shall be, though my pate pay  
for it.

She'll turn my stomach then abominably.  
She has a most wicked face, and that lewd  
face

Being a drunken face, what face will there  
be !—

She cannot ravish me. Now, if my master  
Should take her so, and know I minister'd,  
What will his wisdom do ? I hope be drunk  
too,

And then all's right. Well, lord, to do thee  
service

Above these puppet-plays, I keep a life  
yet—

Here come the executioners.

*Enter Servant with bottles.*

You are welcome ;

Give me your load, and tell my lord I am  
at it.

*Serv.* I will, sir ; speed you, sir. [*Exit.*]

*Ant.* Good speed on all sides !

'Tis strong, strong wine : O, the yaws that  
she will make !

Look to your stern, dear mistress, and steer  
right,

Here's that will work as high as the Bay of  
Portugal.

Stay, let me see—I'll try her by the nose first ;  
For, if she be a right sow, sure she'll find it.

She is yonder by herself, the ladies from her.  
Now to begin my sacrifice :—[*pours out some*

*of the wine.*—she stirs, and vents it.  
O, how she holds her nose up like a jennet

In the wind of a grass mare ! she has it full now,  
And now she comes.— I'll stand aside awhile.

*Enter Borachia.*

*Bora.* [snuffing.] 'Tis wine ! ay, sure 'tis wine ! excellent strong wine !

In the must, I take it : very wine ! this way too.

*Ant.* How true she hunts ! I'll make the train a little longer.

[Pours out more wine.]

*Bora.* Stronger and stronger still ! still ! blessed wine !

*Ant.* Now she hunts hot.

*Bora.* All that I can for this wine !

This way it went, sure.

*Ant.* Now she's at a cold scent.

Make out your doubles, mistress. O, well hunted !

That's she ! that's she !

*Bora.* O, if I could but see it !

Oh what a precious scent it has !— but handle it !

*Ant.* Now I'll untapice.

[Comes forward with the bottle.]

*Bora.* What's that ? still 'tis stronger.

Why, how now, sirrah ! what's that ? answer quickly,

And to the point.

*Ant.* 'Tis wine, forsooth, good wine, Excellent Candy wine.

*Bora.* 'Tis well, forsooth !

Is this a drink for slaves ? why, saucy sirrah, (Excellent Candy wine !) draw nearer to me, Reach me the bottle : why, thou most debauch'd slave—

*Ant.* Pray be not angry, for with all my service

And pains, I purchased this for you, (I dare not drink it,)

For you a present ; only for your pleasure ; To shew in little what a thanks I owe

The hourly courtesies your goodness gives me.

*Bora.* And I will give thee more ; there, kiss my hand on't.

*Ant.* I thank you dearly—for your dirty favour :

How rank it smells ? [Aside.]

*Bora.* By thy leave, sweet bottle, And sugar-candy wine, I now come to thee ; Hold your hand under.

*Ant.* How does your worship like it ?

*Bora.* Under again—again—and now come kiss me ;

I'll be a mother to thee : come, drink to me.

*Ant.* I do beseech your pardon.

*Bora.* Here's to thee, then ;

I am easily entreated for thy good.

'Tis naught for thee, indeed ; 'twill make thee break out ;

Thou hast a pure complexion : now, for me 'Tis excellent, 'tis excellent for me.

Son slave, I've a cold stomach, and the wind—

*Ant.* Blows out a cry at both ends.

*Bora.* Kiss again.

Cherish thy lips, for thou shalt kiss fair ladies ; Son slave, I have them for thee ; I'll shew thee all.

*Ant.* Heaven bless mine eyes !

*Bora.* Even all the secrets, son slave,

In my dominion.

*Ant.* Oh ! here come the ladies ;

Now to my business.

*Enter Leonora and Almira behind.*

*Leon.* This air will much refresh you.

*Alm.* I must sit down.

*Leon.* Do, and take freer thoughts, The place invites you ; I'll walk by like your sentinel.

*Bora.* And thou shalt be my heir, I'll leave thee all,

Heaven knows to what 'twill mount to ; but abundance :

I'll leave thee two young ladies—what think you of that, boy !—

[Antonio goes to Leonora.]

Where is the bottle ?—two delicate young ladies :

But first you shall commit with me ; do you mark, son ?

And shew yourself a gentleman, that's the truth, son.

*Ant.* Excellent lady, kissing your fair hand,

And humbly craving pardon for intruding, This letter, and this ring—

*Leon.* From whom, I pray you, sir ?

*Ant.* From the most noble, loving lord, don Pedro,

The servant of your virtues.

*Bora.* And prithee, good son slave, be wise and circumspect,

And take heed of being o'ertaken with too much drink ;

For it is a lamentable sin, and spoils all :

Why, 'tis the damnablest thing to be drunk, son !

Heaven can't endure it. And hark you, one thing I'd have done :

Knock my husband on the head, as soon as may be,

For he is an arrant puppy, and cannot perform—

Why, where the devil is this foolish bottle ?

*Leon.* I much thank you ;

And this, sir, for your pains.

*[Offers him her purse.]*

*Ant.* No, gentle lady ;  
That I can do him service is my merit,  
My faith, my full reward .

*Leon.* Once more, I thank you.  
Since I have met so true a friend to goodness,  
I dare deliver to your charge my answer :  
Pray you, tell him, sir, this night I do invite  
him

To meet me in the garden ; means he may find,  
For love, they say, wants no abilities.

*Ant.* Nor shall he, madam, if my help may  
prosper ;  
So everlasting love and sweetness bless  
you !—

She's at it still, I dare not now appear to her.  
*Alm.* What fellow's that ?

*Leon.* Indeed I know not, madam ;  
It seems of some strange country by his habit ;  
Nor can I shew you by what mystery  
He wrought himself into this place, pro-  
hibited.

*Alm.* A handsome man.

*Leon.* But of a mind more handsome.

*Alm.* Was his business to you ?

*Leon.* Yes, from a friend you wot of.

*Alm.* A very handsome fellow,  
And well demean'd.

*Leon.* Exceeding well ; and speaks well.

*Alm.* And speaks well, too ?

*Leon.* Ay, passing well, and freely,  
And, as he promises, of a most clear nature ;  
Brought up, sure, far above his shew.

*Alm.* It seems so :  
I would I'd heard him, friend. Comes he  
again ?

*Leon.* Indeed I know not if he do.

*Alm.* 'Tis no matter.

Come, let's walk in.

*Leon.* I am glad you have found your  
tongue yet.

*[Exeunt Leonora and Almira.]*

*Borachia sings.*

*Cuc.* *[within.]* My wife is very merry ; sure  
'twas her voice :

Pray heaven there be no drink in't, then I  
allow it.

*Ant.* 'Tis sure my master.

*Enter Cuculo.*

Now the game begins ;  
Here will be spitting of fire o' both sides  
presently ;

Send me but safe deliver'd !

*Cuc.* O, my heart aches !

My head aches too : mercy o' me, she's  
perish'd !

She has gotten wine ! she is gone for ever !

*Bora.* Come hither, ladies, carry your  
bodies swimming ;  
Do your three duties, then—then fall behind  
me.

*Cuc.* O, thou pernicious rascal ! what  
hast thou done ?

*Ant.* I done ! alas, sir, I have donenothing.

*Cuc.* Sirrah,

How came she by this wine ?

*Ant.* Alas, I know not.

*Bora.* Who's that, that talks of wine there ?

*Ant.* Forsooth, my master.

*Bora.* Bring him before me, son slave .

*Cuc.* I will know it.

This bottle, how this bottle ?

*Bora.* Do not stir it ;

For, if you do, by this good wine, I'll knock  
you,

I'll beat you damnably, yea and nay, I'll  
beat you ;

And, when I have broke it 'bout your head,  
do you mark me ?

Then will I tie it to your worship's tail,  
And all the dogs in the town shall follow you.  
No question, I would advise you, how I came  
by it ;

I will have none of these points handled now.

*Cuc.* She'll ne'er be well again while the  
world stands.

*Ant.* I hope so.

*[Aside.]*

*Cuc.* How dost thou, lamb ?

*Bora.* Well, God-a-mercy.

Belwether, how dost thou ? Stand out, son  
slave,

Sit you here, and before this worshipful  
audience

Propound a doubtful question ; see who's  
drunk now.

*Cuc.* Now, now it works ; the devil now  
dwells in her.

*Bora.* Whether the heaven or the earth  
be nearer the moon ?

Or what's the natural reason, why a woman  
longs

To make her husband cuckold ? Bring me  
your cousin

The curate now, that great philosopher,  
He that found out a pudding had two ends,  
That learned clerk, that notable gymnoso-  
phist ;

And let him with his Jacob's-staff discover  
What is the third part of three farthings,  
Three halfpence being the half, and I am  
satisfied.

*Cuc.* You see she hath learning enough,  
if she could dispose it.

*Bora.* Too much for thee, thou logger-  
head, thou bull-head !

*Cuc.* Nay, good Borachia.

*Bora.* Thou a sufficient statesman !  
A gentleman of learning ! hang thee, dog-  
whelp ;  
Thou shadow of a man of action,  
Thou scab o' the court ! go sleep, you  
drunken rascal,  
You debauch'd puppy ; get you home, and  
sleep, sirrah ;  
And so will I : son slave, thou shalt sleep  
with me.

*Cuc.* Prithce, look to her tenderly.

*Bora.* No words, sirrah,  
Of any wine, or anything like wine,  
Or anything concerning wine, or by wine,  
Or from, or with wine. Come, lead me like  
a countess.

*Cuc.* Thus must we bear, poor men !  
there is a trick in't ;  
But, when she is well again, I'll trick her  
for it. [Exit.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A Room in the Viceroy's  
Palace.

*Enter Pedro.*

*Pedro.* Now, if this honest fellow do but  
prosper,  
I hope I shall make fair return. I wonder  
I hear not from the prince of Tarent yet,  
I hope he's landed well, and to his safety ;  
The winds have stood most gently to his  
purpose.

*Enter Antonio.*

My honest friend !

*Ant.* Your lordship's poorest servant.

*Pedro.* How hast thou sped ?

*Ant.* My lord, as well as wishes.

My way hath reach'd your mistress, and  
deliver'd

Your loveletter, and token ; who, with all joy,  
And virtuous constancy, desires to see you :  
Commands you this night, by her loving  
power,

To meet her in the garden.

*Pedro.* Thou hast made me ;

Redeem'd me, man, again from all my  
sorrows ;

Done above wonder for me. Is it so ?

*Ant.* I should be now too old to learn to  
lie, sir,

And, as I live, I never was good flatterer.

*Pedro.* I do see something in this fellow's  
face still,

That ties my heart fast to him. Let me  
love thee,

Nay, let me honour thee for this fair service :  
And if I e'er forget it—

*Ant.* Good my lord,  
The only knowledge of me is too much  
bounty :

My service, and my life, sir.

*Pedro.* I shall think on't ;  
But how for me to get access ?

*Ant.* 'Tis easy ;

I'll be your guide, sir, all my care shall lead  
you ;

My credit's better than you think.

*Pedro.* I thank you,  
And soon I'll wait your promise.

*Ant.* With all my duty. [Exit.

## SCENE II.—A Bed-room in the same.

*Enter Viceroy, Duke, Paulo, and Cuculo.*

*Paulo.* All's as I tell you, princes ; you  
shall here

Be witness to his fancies, melancholy,  
And strong imagination of his wrongs.  
His inhumanity to don Antonio  
Hath rent his mind into so many pieces  
Of various imaginations, that,  
Like the celestial bow, this colour now's  
The object, then another, till all vanish.  
He says a man might watch to death, or fast,  
Or think his spirit out ; to all which humours  
I do apply myself, checking the bad,  
And cherishing the good. For these, I have  
Prepared my instruments, fitting his chamber  
With trapdoors, and descents ; sometimes-  
presenting

Good spirits of the air, bad of the earth,  
To pull down or advance his fair intentions.  
He's of a noble nature, yet sometimes  
Thinks that which, by confederacy, I do,  
Is by some skill in magic.

*Enter Cardenes, a book in his hand.*

Here he comes

Unsent. I do beseech you, what do you  
read, sir ?

*Car.* A strange position, which doth much  
perplex me :

That every soul's alike a musical instrument,  
The faculties in all men equal strings,  
Well or ill handled ; and those sweet or  
harsh. [Exit Paulo.

How like a fiddler I have play'd on mine  
then !

Declined the high pitch of my birth and  
breeding,

Like the most barbarous peasant ; read my  
pride

Upon Antonio's meek humility,  
Wherein he was far valianter than I.

Meekness, thou wait'st upon courageous  
spirits,

Enabling sufferance past inflictions.

In patience Tarent overcame me more  
Than in my wounds : live then, no more to  
men,

Shut daylight from thine eyes, here cast  
thee down, [*Falls on the bed.*]  
And with a sullen sigh breathe forth thy soul—

*Re-enter Paulo disguised as a Friar.*

What art? an apparition, or a man?

*Paul.* A man, and sent to counsel thee.

*Car.* Despair

Has stopt mine ears; thou seem'st a holy  
friar.

*Paul.* I am; by doctor Paulo sent, to  
tell thee

Thou art too cruel to thyself, in seeking  
To lend compassion and aid to others.

My order bids me comfort thee. I have  
heard all

Thy various, troubled passions: hear but  
my story.

In way of youth I did enjoy one friend,

As good and perfect as heaven e'er made  
man;

This friend was plighted to a beauteous  
woman,

(Nature proud of her workmanship,) mutual  
love

Possess'd them both, her heart in his breast  
lodged,

And his in hers.

*Car.* No more of love, good father,

It was my surfeit, and I loath it now,

As men in fevers meat they fell sick on.

*Paul.* Howe'er, 'tis worth your hearing.

This betroth'd lady,

(The ties and duties of a friend forgotten,)

Spurr'd on by lust, I treacherously pursued;  
Contemn'd by her, and by my friend re-

proved,  
Despised by honest men, my conscience

sear'd up,

Love I converted into frantic rage;

And by that false guide led, I summon'd him

In this bad cause, his sword 'gainst mine, to  
prove

If he or I might claim most right in love.

But fortune, that does seld or never give

Success to right and virtue, made him fall

Under my sword. Blood, blood, a friend's  
dear blood,

A virtuous friend's, shed by a villain, me,

In such a monstrous and unequal cause,

Lies on my conscience.

*Car.* And durst thou live,

After this, to be so old? 'tis an illusion

Raised up by charms: a man would not  
have lived.

Art quiet in thy bosom?

*Paul.* As the sleep  
Of infants.

*Car.* My fault did not equal this;

Yet I have emptied my heart of joy,  
Only to store sighs up. What were the arts  
That made thee live so long in rest?

*Paul.* Repentance

Hearty, that cleansed me; reason then con-  
firm'd me,

I was forgiven, and took me to my beads.

[*Exit.*]

*Car.* I am in the wrong path; tender  
conscience

Makes me forget mine honour: I have done  
No evil like this, yet I pine; whilst he,

A few tears of his true contrition tender'd,  
Securely sleeps. Ha! where keeps peace of

conscience,

That I may buy her?—nowhere; not in  
life.

'Tis feign'd that Jupiter two vessels placed,  
The one with honey fill'd, the other gall,

At the entry of Olympus; Destiny,  
There brewing these together, suffers not

One man to pass, before he drinks this mix-  
ture.

Hence it is we have not an hour of life

In which our pleasures relish not some pain,  
Our sours some sweetness. Love doth taste

of both;

Revenge, that thirsty dropsy of our souls,  
Which makes us covet that which hurts us

most,

Is not alone sweet, but partakes of tartness.

*Duke.* Is't not a strange effect?

*Vice.* Past precedent.

*Cuc.* His brain-pan's perish'd with his  
wounds: go to,

I knew 'twould come to this.

*Vice.* Peace, man of wisdom.

*Car.* Pleasure's the hook of evil; ease of  
care,

And so the general object of the court;

Yet some delights are lawful. Honour is  
Virtue's allow'd ascent; honour, that clasps

All-perfect justice in her arms, that craves  
No more respect than what she gives, that

does

Nothing but what she'll suffer.—This dis-  
tracts me;

But I have found the right: had don An-  
tonio

Done that to me, I did to him, I should  
have kill'd him;

The injury so foul, and done in public,  
My footman would not bear it; then in

honour

Wronging him so, I'll right him on myself:

There's honour, justice, and full satisfaction

Equally tender'd ; 'tis resolved, I'll do it.

*[They rush forward and disarm him.]*

They take all weapons from me.

*Duke.* Bless my son !

*Re-enter Paulo, dressed like a Soldier, and the English Slave like a Courtier.*

*Vice.* The careful doctor's come again.

*Duke.* Rare man !

How shall I pay this debt ?

*Cuc.* He that is with him,

Is one o' the slaves he lately bought, he said,  
To accommodate his cure : he's English born,  
But French in his behaviour ; a delicate slave.

*Vice.* The slave is very fine.

*Cuc.* Your English slaves

Are ever so ; I have seen an English slave  
Far finer than his master : there's a state-  
point,

Worthy your observation.

*Paul.* On thy life,

Be perfect in thy lesson : fewer legs, slave.

*Car.* My thoughts are search'd and  
answer'd ; for I did

Desire a soldier and a courtier,  
To yield me satisfaction in some doubts  
Not yet concluded of.

*Paul.* Your doctor did  
Admit us, sir.

*Slave.* And we are at your service ;

Whate'er it be, command it.

*Car.* You appear

A courtier in the race of LOVE ; how far  
In honour are you bound to run ?

*Slave.* I'll tell you,

You must not spare expense, but wear gay  
clothes,

And you may be, too, prodigal of oaths,  
To win a mistress' favour ; not afraid  
To pass unto her through her chambermaid.  
You may present her gifts, and of all sorts,  
Feast, dance, and revel ; they are lawful  
sports :

The choice of suitors you must not deny her,  
Nor quarrel, though you find a rival by her :  
Build on your own deserts, and ever be  
A stranger to love's enmity, jealousy,  
For that draws on—

*Car.* No more ; this points at me ;

*[Exit English Slave.]*

I ne'er observed these rules. Now speak, old  
soldier,

The height of HONOUR ?

*Paul.* No man to offend,

Ne'er to reveal the secrets of a friend ;  
Rather to suffer than to do a wrong ;  
To make the heart no stranger to the  
tongue ;

Provoked, not to betray an enemy,

Nor eat his meat I choak with flattery ;  
Blushless to tell wherefore I wear my scars,  
Or for my conscience, or my country's wars ;  
To aim at just things ; if we have wildly run  
Into offences, wish them all undone :

'Tis poor, in grief for a wrong done, to die,  
Honour, to dare to live, and satisfy.

*Vice.* Mark, how he winds him.

*Duke.* Excellent man !

*Paul.* Who fights

With passions, and o'ercomes them, is en-  
dued

With the best virtue, passive fortitude.

*[Exit.]*

*Car.* Thou hast touch'd me, soldier ; oh !  
this honour bears

The right stamp ; would all soldiers did  
profess

Thy good religion ! The discords of my soul  
Are tuned, and make a heavenly harmony :  
What sweet peace feel I now ! I am ravish'd  
with it.

*Vice.* How still he sits !

*[Music.]*

*Cuc.* Hark ! music.

*Duke.* How divinely

This artist gathers scatter'd sense ; with  
cunning

Composing the fair jewel of his mind,  
Broken in picces, and nigh lost before.

*Re-enter Paulo, dressed like a Philosopher,  
accompanied by a good and evil Genius,  
who sing a song in alternate stanzas :  
during the performance of which Paulo  
goes off, and returns in his own shape.*

*Vice.* See Protean Paulo in another shape.

*Paul.* Away, I'll bring him shortly per-  
fect, doubt not.

*Duke.* Master of thy great art !

*Vice.* As such we'll hold thee.

*Duke.* And study honours for him.

*Cuc.* I'll be sick

On purpose to take physic of this doctor.

*[Exeunt all but Cardenes and Paulo.]*

*Car.* Doctor, thou hast perfected a body's  
cure

To amaze the world, and almost cured a mind  
Near frenzy. With delight I now perceive,  
You, for my recreation, have invented  
The several objects, which my melancholy  
Sometimes did think you conjured, other-  
whiles

Imagined them chimæras. You have been  
My friar, soldier, philosopher,  
My poet, architect, physician ;  
Labour'd for me, more than your slaves for  
you,

In their assistance : in your moral song

Of my good Genius and my bad, you have won me

A cheerful heart, and banish'd discontent ;  
There being nothing wanting to my wishes,  
But once more, were it possible, to behold  
Don John Antonio.

*Paul.* There shall be letters sent  
Into all parts of Christendom, to inform him  
Of your recovery, which now, sir, I doubt  
not.

*Car.* What honours, what rewards can I  
heap on you !

*Paul.* That my endeavours have so well  
succeeded,

Is a sufficient recompense. Pray you retire, sir ;  
Not too much air so soon.

*Car.* I am obedient. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*A Room in Cinculo's House.*

*Enter Almira and Leonora.*

*Leon.* How strangely  
This fellow runs in her mind ! [*Aside.*

*Alm.* Do you hear, cousin ?

*Leon.* Her sadness clean forsaken !

*Alm.* A poor slave

Bought for my governess, say you ?

*Leon.* I hear so.

*Alm.* And, do you think, a Turk ?

*Leon.* His habit shows it ;

At least bought for a Turk.

*Alm.* Ay, that may be so.

*Leon.* What if he were one naturally ?

*Alm.* Nay, 'tis nothing,

Nothing to the purpose ; and yet, methinks,

'tis strange

Such handsomeness of mind, and civil out-  
side,

Should spring from those rude countries.

*Leon.* If it be no more,

I'll call our governess, and she can shew you.

*Alm.* Why, do you think it is ?

*Leon.* I do not think so.

*Alm.* Fie ! no, no, by no means ; and to

tell thee truth, wench,

I am truly glad he is here, be what he will ;

Let him be still the same he makes a shew of ;

For now we shall see something to delight us.

*Leon.* And heaven knows, we have need  
on't.

*Alm.* Heigh ho ! my heart aches.

Prithee, call in our governess.—[*Exit*  
*Leonora.*] Plague o' this fellow !

Why do I think so much of him ? how the  
devil

Creep'd he into my head ? and yet, beshrew  
me,

Methinks I have not seen—I lie, I have seen  
A thousand handsomer, a thousand  
sweeter.—

But say this fellow were adorn'd as they are,  
Set off to shew and glory !—What's that to  
me ?

Fie, what a fool am I ! what idle fancies  
Buz in my brains !

*Re-enter Leonora with Borachia.*

*Bora.* And how doth my sweet lady ?

*Leon.* She wants your company to make  
her merry.

*Bora.* And how does master Png, I pray  
you, madam ?

*Leon.* Do you mean her little dog ?

*Bora.* I mean his worship.

*Leon.* Troubled with fleas a little.

*Bora.* Alas, poor chicken !

*Leon.* She's here, and drunk, very fine  
drunk, I take it ;

I found her with a bottle for her bolster,  
Lying along, and making love.

*Alm.* Borachia,

Why, where hast thou been, wench ? she  
looks not well, friend.

Art not with child ?

*Bora.* I promise ye, I know not ;

I am sure my belly's full, and that's a shrewd  
sign ;

Besides I am shrewdly troubled with a tiego  
Here in my head, madam ; often with this  
tiego,

It takes me very often.

*Leon.* I believe thee.

*Alm.* You must drink wine.

*Bora.* A little would do no harm, sure.

*Leon.* 'Tis a raw humour blows into your  
head ;

Which good strong wine will temper.

*Bora.* I thank your highness.

I will be ruled, though much against my  
nature ;

For wine I ever hated from my cradle ;

Yet, for my good—

*Leon.* Ay, for your good, by all means.

*Alm.* Borachia, what new fellow's that  
thou hast gotten ?

(Now she will sure be free) that handsome  
stranger ?

*Bora.* How much wine must I drink, an't  
please your ladyship ?

*Alm.* She's finely greased !—Why, two or  
three round draughts, wench.

*Bora.* Fasting ?

*Alm.* At any time.

*Bora.* I shall hardly do it ;

But yet I'll try, good madam.

*Leon.* Do ; 'twill work well.

*Alm.* But, prithee answer me, what is this  
fellow ?



*Bora.* I'll tell you two : but let it go no further.

*Leon.* No, no, by no means.

*Bora.* May I not drink before bed too?

*Leon.* At any hour.

*Bora.* And say in the night it take me?

*Alm.* Drink then : but what's this man?

*Bora.* I'll tell ye, madam,

But pray you be secret ; he's the great Turk's son, for certain,

And a fine Christian ; my husband bought him for me :

He's circumcised.

*Leon.* He's circumcised, thou wouldst say.

*Alm.* How dost thou know?

*Bora.* I had an eye upon him :

But even as sweet a Turk, an't like your ladyship,

And speaks ye as pure pagan :—I'll assure ye, My husband had a notable pennyworth of him ;

And found me but the Turk's own son, his own son

By father and mother, madam !

*Leon.* She's mad-drunk.

*Alm.* Prithee, Borachia, call him ; I would see him,

And tell thee how I like him.

*Bora.* As fine a Turk, madam,

For that which appertains to a true Turk—

*Alm.* Prithee, call him.

*Bora.* He waits here at the stairs :—Son slave ! come hither.

*Enter Antonio.*

Pray you give me leave a little to instruct him, He's raw yet in the way of entertainment.

Son slave, where's the other bottle?

*Ant.* In the bedstraw ;

I hid it there.

*Bora.* Go up, and make your honours.

Madam, the tiego takes me now, now, madam ;

I must needs be unmannerly.

*Alm.* Pray you be so.

*Leon.* You know your cure.

*Bora.* In the bedstraw?

*Ant.* There you'll find it.

[*Exit Borachia.*]

*Alm.* Come hither, sir : how long have you served here?

*Ant.* A poor time, madam, yet, to shew my service.

*Alm.* I see thou art diligent.

*Ant.* I would be, madam ;

'Tis all the portion left me, that and truth.

*Alm.* Thou art but young.

*Ant.* Had fortune meant me so,

Excellent lady, time had not much wrong'd me.

*Alm.* Wilt thou serve me?

*Ant.* In all my prayers, madam,

Else such a misery as mine but blasts you.

*Alm.* Beshrew my heart, he speaks well ; wondrous honestly. [*Aside.*]

*Ant.* Madam, your loving lord stays for you.

*Leon.* I thank you.

Your pardon for an hour, dear friend.

*Alm.* Your pleasure.

*Leon.* I dearly thank you, sir. [*Exit.*]

*Ant.* My humblest service.

She views me narrowly, yet sure she knows me not :

I dare not trust the time yet, nor I must not. [*Aside.*]

*Alm.* You are not as your habit shews?

*Ant.* No, madam,

His hand, that, for my sins, lies heavy on me, I hope will keep me from being a slave to the devil.

*Alm.* A brave clear mind he has, and nobly season'd.

What country are you of?

*Ant.* A Biscan, lady.

*Alm.* No doubt, a gentleman,

*Ant.* My father thought so.

*Alm.* Ay, and I warrant thee, a right fair woman

Thy mother was :—he blushes, that confirms it.

Upon my soul, I have not seen such sweetness !

I prithee, blush again.

*Ant.* 'Tis a weakness, madam,

I am easily this way woo'd to.

*Alm.* I thank you.

Of all that e'er I saw, thou art the perfectest. [*Aside.*]

Now you must tell me, sir, for now I long for't.—

*Ant.* What would she have?

*Alm.* The story of your fortune,

The hard and cruel fortune brought you hither.

*Ant.* That makes me stagger ; yet I hope I'm hid still.— [*Aside.*]

That I came hither, madam, was the fairest.

*Alm.* But how this misery you bear, fell on you?

*Ant.* *Infandum, regina, jubes renovare dolorem.*

*Alm.* Come, I will have it ; I command you, tell it,

For such a speaker I would hear for ever.

*Ant.* Sure, madam, 'twill but make you sad and heavy,

Because I know your goodness full of pity;  
And 'tis so poor a subject too, and to your  
ears,

That are acquainted with things sweet and  
easy,

So harsh a harmony.

*Alm.* I prithee speak it.

*Ant.* I ever knew obedience the best  
sacrifice.

Honour of ladies, then, first passing over  
Some few years of my youth, that are im-  
pertinent,

Let me begin the sadness of my story,  
Where I began to lose myself, to love first.

*Alm.* 'Tis well, go forward; some rare  
piece I look for.

*Ant.* Not far from where my father lives,  
a lady,

A neighbour by, bless'd with as great a  
beauty

As nature durst bestow without undoing,  
Dwelt, and most happily, as I thought then,  
And bless'd the house a thousand times she  
dwelt in.

This beauty, in the blossom of my youth,  
When my first fire knew no adulterate in-  
cense,

Nor I no way to flatter, but my fondness;  
In all the bravery my friends could shew me,  
In all the faith my innocence could give me,  
In the best language my true tongue could  
tell me,

And all the broken sighs my sick heart lend  
me,

I sued, and serv'd: long did I love this lady,  
Long was my travail, long my trade to win  
her;

With all the duty of my soul I served her.—  
*Alm.* How feelingly he speaks! [*Aside.*]

—And she loved you too?

It must be so.

*Ant.* I would it had, dear lady;

This story had been needless, and this place,  
I think, unknown to me.

*Alm.* Were your bloods equal?

*Ant.* Yes, and I thought our hearts too.

*Alm.* Then she must love.

*Ant.* She did—but never me; she could  
not love me,

She would not love, she hated: more, she  
scorn'd me,

And in so poor and base a way abused me,  
For all my services, for all my bounties,  
So bold neglects flung on me.

*Alm.* An ill woman!

Belike you found some rival in your love,  
then?

*Ant.* How perfectly she points me to my  
story!

[*Aside.*]

Madam, I did; and one whose pride and  
anger,

Ill manners, and worse mien, she doted on,  
Doted to my undoing, and my ruin.

And, but for honour to your sacred beauty,  
And reverence to the noble sex, though she  
fall,

As she must fall that durst be so unno-  
ble, I should say something unbecoming me,  
What out of love, and worthy love, I gave her,  
Shame to her most unworthy mind! to fools,  
To girls, and fiddlers, to her *boys* she flung,  
And in disdain of me.

*Alm.* Pray you take me with you.

Of what complexion was she?

*Ant.* But that I dare not

Commit so great a sacrilege gainst virtue,  
She look'd not much unlike—though far,  
far short.

Something, I see, appears—your pardon,  
madam—

Her eyes would smile so, but her eyes would  
cozen;

And so she would look sad: but yours is pity,  
A noble chorus to my wretched story;  
Hers was disdain and cruelty.

*Alm.* Pray heaven,

Mine be no worse! he has told me a strange  
story,

And said 'twould make me sad! he is no  
liar.—

But where begins this poor state? I will have  
all,

For it concerns me truly.

*Ant.* Last, to blot me

From all remembrance what I had been to  
her,

And how, how honestly, how nobly served  
her,

'Twas thought she set her gallant to dispatch  
me.

'Tis true, he quarrell'd without place or  
reason:

We fought, I kill'd him; heaven's strong  
hand was with me.—

For which I lost my country, friends, ac-  
quaintance,

And put myself to sea, where a pirate took me,  
Foreing this habit of a Turk upon me,

And sold me here.

*Alm.* Stop there awhile; but stay still.

[*Walks aside.*]

In this man's story, how I look, how  
monstrous!

How poor and naked now I shew! what don  
John,

In all the virtue of his life, but aim'd at,  
This thing hath conquer'd with a tale, and  
carried.

Forgive me, thou that guid'st me! never  
conscience  
Touch'd me till now, nor true love: let me  
keep it.

*Re-enter Leonora with Pedro.*

*Leon.* She is there. Speak to her, you will  
find her alter'd.

*Pedro.* Sister, I am glad to see you, but  
far gladder,

To see you entertain your health so well.

*Alm.* I am glad to see you too, sir, and  
shall be gladder

Shortly to see you all.

*Pedro.* Now she speaks heartily.

What do you want?

*Alm.* Only an hour of privateness;

I have a few thoughts—

*Pedro.* Take your full contentment,

We'll walk aside again; but first to you,  
friend,

Or I shall much forget myself: my best  
friend,

Command me ever, ever—you have won it.

*Ant.* Your lordship overflows me.

*Leon.* 'Tis but due, sir,

*[Exeunt Leonora and Pedro.]*

*Alm.* He's there still. Come, sir, to your  
last part now,

Which only is your name, and I dismiss you.

Why, whither go you?

*Ant.* Give me leave, good madam,

Or I must be so seeming rude to take it.

*Alm.* You shall not go, I swear you shall  
not go:

I ask you nothing but your name; you have  
one,

And why should that thus fright you?

*Ant.* Gentle madam,

I cannot speak; pray pardon me, a sickness,  
That takes me often, ties my tongue: go  
from me,

My fit's infectious, lady.

*Alm.* Were it death

In all his horrors, I must ask and know it;  
Your sickness is unwillingness. Hard heart,

To let a lady of my youth, and place,

Beg thus long for a trifle!

*Ant.* Worthiest lady,

Be wise, and let me go; you'll bless me for it,  
Beg not that poison from me that will kill you.

*Alm.* I only beg your name, sir.

*Ant.* That will choke you;

I do beseech you, pardon me.

*Alm.* I will not.

*Ant.* You'll curse me when you hear it.

*Alm.* Rather kiss thee;

Why shouldst thou think so?

*Ant.* Why! I bear that name,

And most unluckily as now it happens,  
(Though I be innocent of all occasion,)  
That, since my coming hither, people tell me  
You bate beyond forgiveness: now, heaven  
knows

So much respect, although I am a stranger,  
Duty, and humble zeal, I bear your sweet-  
ness,

That for the world I would not grieve your  
goodness:

I'll change my name, dear madam.

*Alm.* People lie,

And wrong thy name; thy name may save  
all others,

And make that holy to me, that I hated:

Prithce, what is't?

*Ant.* Don John Antonio.—

What will this woman do, what thousand  
changes

Run through her heart and hands? no fix'd  
thought in her!

She loves for certain now, but now I dare not.  
Heaven guide me right! *[Aside.]*

*Alm.* I am not angry, sir,

With you, nor with your name; I love it  
rather,

And shall respect you—you deserve—for  
this time

I license you to go: be not far from me,  
I shall call for you often.

*Ant.* I shall wait, madam. *[Exit.]*

*Enter Cuculo.*

*Alm.* Now, what's the news with you?

*Cuc.* My lord your father

Sent me to tell your honour, prince Martino  
Is well recovered, and in strength.

*Alm.* Why, let him.—

The stories and the names so well agreeing,  
And both so noble gentlemen. *[Aside.]*

*Cuc.* And more, an't please you—

*Alm.* It doth not please me, neither more  
nor less on't.

*Cuc.* They'll come to visit you.

*Alm.* They shall break through the doors  
then. *[Exit.]*

*Cuc.* Here's a new trick of state; this  
shews foul weather;

But let her make it when she please, I'll  
gain by it. *[Exit.]*

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—A Street.

*Enter Pirates, and the Slave that followed  
Paulo.*

1 *Pir.* Sold for a slave, say'st thou?

*Slave.* 'Twas not so well:

Though I am bad enough, I personated  
Such base behaviour, barbarism of manners,  
With other pranks that might deter the  
buyer,

That the market yielded not one man that  
would

Vouchsafe to own me.

1 *Pir.* What was thy end in it?

*Slave.* To be given away for nothing, as  
I was

To the viceroy's doctor; with him I have  
continued

In such contempt, a slave unto his slaves;  
His horse and dog of more esteem; and from  
That villainous carriage of myself, as if  
I'd been a lump of flesh without a soul,  
I drew such scorn upon me, that I pass'd,  
And pried in every place, without observance.  
For which, if you desire to be made men,  
And by one undertaking, and that easy,  
You are bound to sacrifice unto my sufferings,  
The seed I sow'd, and from which you shall  
reap

A plentiful harvest.

1 *Pir.* To the point; I like not

These castles built in the air.

*Slave.* I'll make them real,

And you the Neptunes of the sea; you shall  
No more be sea-rats.

1 *Pir.* Art not mad?

*Slave.* You have seen

The star of Sicily, the fair Almira,  
The viceroy's daughter, and the beauteous  
ward

Of the duke of Messina?

1 *Pir.* Madam Leonora.

*Slave.* What will you say, if both these  
princesses,

This very night, for I will not delay you,  
Be put in your possession?

1 *Pir.* Now I dare swear

Thou hast maggots in thy brains, thou  
wouldst not else,

Talk of impossibilities.

*Slave.* Be still

Incredulous.

1 *Pir.* Why, canst thou think we are able  
To force the court?

*Slave.* Are we able to force two women,  
And a poor Turkish slave? Where lies  
your pinnace?

1 *Pir.* In a creek not half a league hence.

*Slave.* Can you fetch ladders,

To mount a garden wall?

2 *Pir.* They shall be ready.

*Slave.* No more words then, but follow  
me; and if

I do not make this good, let my throat pay  
for't.

1 *Pir.* What heaps of gold these beauties  
would bring to us

From the great Turk, if it were possible  
That this could be effected!

*Slave.* If it be not,  
I know the price on't.

1 *Pir.* And be sure to pay it. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in Cuculo's House.*

*Enter Antonio with a letter in his hand.*

*Ant.* Her fair hand threw this from the  
window to me,  
And as I took it up, she said, *Peruse it,  
And entertain a fortune offer'd to thee.*—  
What may the inside speak?—

[*Breaks it open, and reads.*]

*For satisfaction*

*Of the contempt I shew'd don John Antonio,  
Whose name thou bear'st, and in that dearer  
to me,*

*I do profess I love thee—How!—tis so—  
I love thee; this night wait me in the garden,  
There thou shalt know more—* subscribed,  
*Thy Almira.*

Can it be possible such levity  
Should wait on her perfections! when I was  
Myself, set off with all the grace of greatness,  
Pomp, bravery, circumstance, she hated me,  
And did profess it openly; yet now,  
Being a slave, a thing she should in reason  
Disdain to look upon; in this base shape,  
And, since I wore it, never did her service,  
To dote thus fondly!—and yet I should glory  
In her revolt from constancy, not accuse it,  
Since it makes for me. But ere I go further,  
Or make discovery of myself, I'll put her  
To the utmost trial. *In the garden!* well,  
There I shall learn more. Women, giddy  
women!

In her the blemish of your sex you prove,  
There is no reason for your hate or love.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*A Garden belonging to the  
same.*

*Enter Almira, Leonora, and two  
Waiting Women.*

*Leon.* At this  
Unseasonable time to be thus brave,  
No visitants expected! you amaze me.

*Alm.* Are these jewels set forth to the best  
advantage,

To take the eye?

1 *Wom.* With our best care.

2 *Wom.* We never

Better discharged our duties.

*Alm.* In my sorrows,  
A princess' name (I could perceive it) struck

A kind of reverence in him, and my beauty,  
As then neglected, forced him to look on me  
With some sparks of affection ; but now,  
When I would fan them to a glorious flame,  
I cannot be too curious. I wonder  
He stays so long.

[*Aside.*  
*Leon.* These are strange fancies.

*Alm.* Go,

Entreat—I do forget myself—command  
My governess' gentleman—her slave, I  
should say,

To wait me instantly ;—[*Exit 1 Woman.*]  
—and yet already

He's here ; his figure graven on my heart,  
Never to be razed out.

*Enter Pirates, and the Slave.*

*Slave.* There is the prize.

Is it so rich that you dare not seize upon it ?  
Here I begin.

[*Seizes Almira.*

*Alm.* Help ! villain !

1 *Pir.* You are mine. [*Seizes Leonora.*

2 *Pir.* Though somewhat coarse, you'll  
serve, after a storm,

To bid fair weather welcome.

[*Seizes 2 Woman.*

*Leon.* Ravisher !

Defend me, heaven !

*Alm.* No aid near !

2 *Wom.* Help !

*Slave.* Dispatch.

No glove nor handkerchief to stop their  
mouths ?

Their cries will reach the guard, and then  
we are lost.

*Re-enter 1 Woman, with Antonio.*

*Ant.* What shrieks are these ? from  
whence ? O blessed saints,

What sacrilege to beauty ! do I talk,  
When 'tis almost too late to do !—[*Forces a  
sword from the Slave.*]  
—Take that.

*Slave.* All set upon him.

1 *Pir.* Kill him.

*Ant.* You shall buy

My life at a dear rate, you rogues.

*Enter Pedro, Cuculo, Borachia, and  
Guard.*

*Cuc.* Down with them !

*Pedro.* Unheard-of treason !

*Bora.* Make in, loggerhead ;

My son slave fights like a dragon : take my  
bottle,

Drink courage out on't.

*Ant.* Madam, you are free.

*Pedro.* Take comfort, dearest mistress.

*Cuc.* O you micher,

Have you a hand in this ?

*Slave.* My aims were high ;  
Fortune's my enemy. to die's the worst,  
And that I look for.

1 *Pir.* Vengeance on your plots !

*Pedro.* The rack at better leisure shall  
force from them

A full discovery : away with them.

*Cuc.* Load them with irons.

*Bora.* Let them have no wine

[*Exit Guard with Pirates and Slave.*

To comfort their cold hearts.

*Pedro.* Thou man of men !

*Leon.* A second Hercules.

*Alm.* An angel thus disguised.

*Pedro.* What thanks ?

*Leon.* What service ?

*Bora.* He shall serve me, by your leave,  
no service else.

*Ant.* I have done nothing but my duty,  
madam ;

And if the little you have seen exceed it,  
The thanks due for it pay my watchful master,  
And this my sober mistress.

*Bora.* He speaks truth, madam,  
I am very sober.

*Pedro.* Far beyond thy hopes  
Expect reward.

*Alm.* We'll straight to court, and there  
It is resolved what I will say and do.  
I am faint, support me.

*Pedro.* This strange accident  
Will be heard with astonishment. Come,  
friend,  
You have made yourself a fortune, and  
deserve it. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—*A Room in the Viceroy's  
Palace.*

*Enter Viceroy, Duke of Messina, and  
Paulo.*

*Duke.* Perfectly cured !

*Paul.* As such I will present him :  
The thanks be given to heaven.

*Duke.* Thrice-reverend man,  
What thanks but will come short of thy  
desert ?

Or bounty, though all we possess were given  
thee,

Can pay thy merit ? I will have thy statue  
Set up in brass.

*Vice.* Thy name made the sweet subject  
Of our best poems ; thy unequal'd cures  
Recorded to posterity.

*Paul.* Such false glories  
(Though the desire of fame be the last  
weakness

Wise men put off) are not the marks I shoot  
at :

But, if I have done anything that may challenge

Your favours, mighty princes, my request is,  
That for the good of such as shall succeed  
me,

A college for physicians may be  
With care and cost erected, in which no man  
May be admitted to a fellowship,  
But such as by their vigilant studies shall  
Deserve a place there; this magnificence,  
Posterity shall thank you for.

*Vice.* Rest assured,  
In this, or any boon you please to ask,  
You shall have no repulse.

*Paul.* My humblest service  
Shall ne'er be wanting. Now, if you so  
please,

I'll fetch my princely patient, and present  
him.

*Duke.* Do; and imagine in what I may  
serve you,

And, by my honour, with a willing hand  
I will subscribe to't. [*Exit Paulo.*]

*Enter Pedro, Almira, Leonora, Antonio,  
Cuculo, Borachia, and Guard.*

*Cuc.* Make way there.

*Vice.* My daughter!  
How's this! a slave crown'd with a civic  
garland!

The mystery of this?

*Pedro.* It will deserve  
Your hearing and attention: such a truth  
Needs not rhetorical flourishes, and therefore  
With all the brevity and plainness that  
I can, I will deliver it. If the old Romans,  
When of most power and wisdom, did decree  
A wreath like this to any common soldier  
That saved a citizen's life, the bravery  
And valour of this man may justly challenge  
Triumphant laurel. This last night a crew  
Of pirates brake in signior Cuculo's house,  
With violent rudeness seizing on my sister,  
And my fair mistress; both were in their  
power,

And ready to be forced hence, when this man,  
Unarm'd, came to their rescue, but his  
courage

Soon furnish'd him with weapons; in a word,  
The lives and liberties of these sweet ladies,  
You owe him for: the rovers are in hold,  
And ready, when you please, for punishment.

*Vice.* As an induction of more to come,  
Receive this favour.

*Duke.* With myself, my son  
Shall pay his real thanks. He comes; ob-  
serve now  
Their amorous meeting.

*Re-enter Paulo with Cardenes.*

*Car.* I am glad you are well, lady.

*Alm.* I grieve not your recovery.

*Vice.* So coldly!

*Duke.* Why fall you off?

*Car.* To shun captivity, sir.

I was too long a slave, I'll now be free.

*Alm.* 'Tis my desire you should. Sir, my  
affection

To him was but a trifle, which I play'd with  
In the childhood of my love; which now,  
grown older,

I cannot like of.

*Vice.* Strange inconstancy!

*Car.* 'Tis judgment, sir, in me, or a true  
debt

Tender'd to justice, rather. My first life,  
Loaden with all the follies of a man,  
Or what could take addition from a woman,  
Was by my headstrong passions, which o'er-  
ruled

My understanding, forfeited to death:  
But this new being, this my second life,  
Begun in serious contemplation of  
What best becomes a perfect man, shall  
never

Sink under such weak frailties.

*Duke.* Most unlook'd for!

*Paul.* It does transcend all wonders.

*Car.* 'Tis a blessing

I owe your wisdom, which I'll not abuse:  
But if you envy your own gift, and will  
Make me that wretched creature which I was,  
You then again shall see me passionate,  
A lover of poor trifles, confident  
In man's deceiving strength, or falser fortune;  
Jealous, revengeful, in unjust things daring,  
Injurious, quarrelsome, stored with all  
diseases

The beastly part of man infects his soul with,  
And to remember what's the worst, once  
more

To love a woman; but till that time never.

[*Exit.*]

*Vice.* Stand you affected so to men,  
Almira?

*Alm.* No, sir; if so, I could not well dis-  
charge

What I stand bound to pay you, and to  
nature.

Though prince Martino does profess a hate  
To womankind, 'twere a poor world for  
women,

Were there no other choice, or all should  
follow

The example of this new Hippolytus:  
There are men, sir, that can love, and have  
loved truly;

Nor am I desperate but I may deserve  
One that both can and will so.

*Vice.* My allowance  
Shall rank with your good liking, still pro-  
vided

Your choice be worthy.

*Alm.* In it I have used  
The judgment of my mind, and that made  
clearer

With calling off to heaven it might be so.  
I have not sought a living comfort from  
The reverend ashes of old ancestors ;  
Nor given myself to the mere name and titles  
Of such a man, that, being himself nothing,  
Derives his substance from his grandsire's  
tomb :

For wealth, it is beneath my birth to think  
on't,

Since that must wait upon me, being your  
daughter ;

No, sir, the man I love, though he wants all  
The setting forth of fortune, gloss and  
greatness,

Has in himself such true and real goodness,  
His parts so far above his low condition,  
That he will prove an ornament, not a  
blemish,

Both to your name and family.

*Pedro.* What strange creature  
Hath she found out ?

*Leon.* I dare not guess.

*Alm.* To hold you

No longer in suspense, this matchless man,  
That saved my life and honour, is my hus-  
band,

Whom I will serve with duty.

*Bora.* My son slave !

*Vice.* Have you your wits ?

*Bora.* I'll not part with him so.

*Cuc.* This I foresaw too.

*Vice.* Do not jest thyself

Into the danger of a father's anger.

*Alm.* Jest, sir ! by all my hope of comfort  
in him,

I am most serious. Good sir, look upon  
him ;

But let it be with my eyes, and the care  
You should owe to your daughter's life and  
safety,

Of which, without him, she's uncapable,  
And you'll approve him worthy.

*Vice.* O thou shame

Of women ! thy sad father's curse and  
scandal !

With what an impious violence thou tak'st  
from him,

His few short hours of breathing !

*Paul.* Do not add, sir,

Weight to your sorrow in the ill-bearing of it.

*Vice.* From whom, degenerate monster,  
flow these low

And base affections in thee ? what strange-  
philtres

Hast thou received ? what witch with damned  
spells

Deprived thee of thy reason ? Look on me,  
Since thou art lost unto thyself, and learn,  
From what I suffer for thee, what strange  
tortures

Thou dost prepare thyself.

*Duke.* Good sir, take comfort ;

The counsel you bestow'd on me, make use of.

*Paul.* This villain, (for such practices in  
that nation

Are very frequent,) it may be, hath forced,  
By cunning potions, and by sorcerous  
charms,

This frenzy in her.

*Vice.* Sever them.

*Alm.* I grow to him.

*Vice.* Carry the slave to torture, and wrest  
from him,

By the most cruel means, a free confession  
Of his impostures.

*Alm.* I will follow him,

And with him take the rack.

*Bora.* No ; hear me speak,

I can speak wisely : hurt not my son slave,  
But rack or hang my husband, and I care not ;  
For I'll be bound body to body with him,  
He's very honest, that's his fault.

*Vice.* Take hence

This drunken beast.

*Bora.* Drunk ! am I drunk ? bear witness.

*Cuc.* She is indeed distemper'd.

*Vice.* Hang them both,

If e'er more they come near the court.

*Cuc.* Good sir,

You can recover dead men ; can you cure  
A living drunkenness ?

*Paul.* 'Tis the harder task :

Go home with her, I'll send you something-  
that

Shall once again bring her to better temper,  
Or make her sleep for ever.

*Cuc.* Which you please, sir.

[*Exeunt Cuculo and Borachia.*

*Vice.* Why linger you ? rack him first, and  
after break him

Upon the wheel.

*Pedro.* Sir, this is more than justice.

*Ant.* Is't death in Sicily to be beloved  
Of a fair lady ?

*Leon.* Though he be a slave,  
Remember yet he is a man.

*Vice.* I am deaf

To all persuasions :—drag him hence.

[*The Guard carry off Antonio.*

*Alm.* Do, tyrant,  
No more a father, feast thy cruelty  
Upon thy daughter; but hell's plagues fall  
on me,

If I inflict not on myself whatever  
He can endure for me!

*Vice.* Will none restrain her?

*Alm.* Death hath a thousand doors to let  
out life,

I shall find one. If Portia's burning coals,  
The knife of Lucrece, Cleopatra's aspics,  
Famine, deep waters, have the power to  
free me

From a loath'd life, I'll not an hour outlive  
him.

*Pedro.* Sister!

*Leon.* Dear cousin!

[*Exit Almira, followed by Pedro and  
Leon.*]

*Vice.* Let her perish.

*Paul.* Hear me:

The effects of violent love are desperate,  
And therefore in the execution of  
The slave be not too sudden. I was present  
When he was bought, and at that time myself  
Made purchase of another; he that sold them  
Said that they were companions of one  
country;

Something may rise from this to ease your  
sorrows.

By circumstance I'll learn what's his con-  
dition;

In the mean time use all fair and gentle  
means,

To pacify the lady.

*Vice.* I'll endeavour,

As far as grief and anger will give leave,  
To do as you direct me.

*Duke.* I'll assist you. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*A Room in the Prison.*

*Enter Pedro and Keeper.*

*Pedro.* Hath he been visited already?

*Keep.* Yes, sir,

Like one of better fortune; and to increase  
My wonder of it, such as repair to him,  
In their behaviour rather appear  
Servants, than friends to comfort him.

*Pedro.* Go fetch him. [*Exit Keeper.*]  
I am bound in gratitude to do more than wish  
The life and safety of a man that bath  
So well deserved me.

*Re-enter Keeper with Antonio in his former  
dress, and Servant.*

*Keep.* Here he is, my lord.

*Pedro.* Who's here? thou art no conjurer  
to raise

Aspirit in the best shapeman e'er appeared in,  
My friend, the prince of Tarent! doubts,  
forsake me!

I must and will embrace him.

*Ant.* Pedro holds

One that loves life for nothing, but to live  
To do him service.

*Pedro.* You are he, most certain.

Heaven ever make me thankful for this  
bounty.

Run to the Viceroy, let him know this rarity.  
[*Exit Keeper.*]

But how you came here thus—yet, since I  
have you,

Is't not enough I bless the prosperous means  
That brought you hither?

*Ant.* Dear friend, you shall know all;  
And though, in thankfulness, I should begin  
Where you deliver'd me—

*Pedro.* Pray you pass that over,

That's not worth the relation.

*Ant.* You confirm

True friends love to do courtesies, not to hear  
them.

But I'll obey you. In our tedious passage  
Towards Malta—I may call it so, for hardly  
We had lost the ken of Sicily, but we were  
Becalm'd, and hull'd so up and down twelve  
hours;

When, to our more misfortunes, we descried  
Eight well-mann'd galleys making amain for  
us,

Of which the arch Turkish pirate, cruel  
Dragut,

Was admiral: I'll not speak what I did  
In our defence, but never man did more  
Than the brave captain that you sent forth  
with me:

All would not do; courage oppress'd with  
number,

We were boarded, pillaged to the skin, and  
after

Twice sold for slaves; by the pirate first, and  
after

By a Maltese to signior Cuculo,  
Which I repent not, since there 'twas my  
fortune

To be to you, my best friend, some ways  
useful—

I thought to cheer you up with this short  
story,

But you grow sad on't.

*Pedro.* Have I not just cause,  
When I consider I could be so stupid,  
As not to see a friend through all disguises;  
Or he so far to question my true love,  
To keep himself conceal'd?

*Ant.* 'Twas fit to do so,

And not to grieve you with the knowledge of



What then I was ; where now I appear to you,  
Your sister loving me, and Martino safe,  
Like to myself and birth.

*Pedro.* May you live long so !  
How dost thou, honest friend? (your trustiest  
servant)  
Give me thy hand :—I now can guess by  
whom

You are thus furnish'd.

*Ant.* Troth he met with me  
As I wassent to prison, and there brought me  
Such things as I had use of.

*Pedro.* Let's to court,  
My father never saw a man so welcome,  
As you'll be to him.

*Ant.* May it prove so, friend ! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*A Room in the Viceroy's  
Palace.*

*Enter Viceroy, Duke of Messina, Cardenes,  
Paulo, Captain, Almira, Leonora, Waiting  
Women, and Attendants.*

*Vice.* The slave changed to the prince of  
Tarent, says he?

*Capt.* Yes, sir, and I the captain of the fort,  
Worthy of your displeasure, and the effect of't,  
For my deceiving of the trust your excellency  
Reposed in me.

*Paul.* Yet since all hath fallen out  
Beyond your hopes, let me become a suitor,  
And a prevailing one, to get his pardon.

*Alm.* O, dearest Leonora, with what fore-  
head

Dare I look on him now? too powerful Love,  
The best strength of thy unconfined empire  
Lies in weak women's hearts : thou art feign'd  
blind,

And yet we borrow our best sight from thee.  
Could it be else, the person still the same,  
Affection over me such power should have,  
To make me scorn a prince, and love a slave?

*Car.* But art thou sure 'tis lie?

*Capt.* Most certain, sir.

*Car.* Is he in health, strong, vigorous, and  
as able

As when he left me dead?

*Capt.* Your own eyes, sir,  
Shall make good my report.

*Car.* I am glad of it,  
And take you comfort in it, sir, there's hope,  
Fair hope left for me, to repair mine honour.

*Duke.* What's that?

*Car.* I will do something, that shall speak me  
Messina's son.

*Duke.* I like not this :—one word, sir.

[*Whispers the Viceroy.*]

*Vice.* We'll prevent it,—  
Nay, look up my Almira ; now I approve

Thy happy choice ; I have forgot my anger ;  
I freely do forgive thee.

*Alm.* May I find

Such easiness in the wrong'd prince of Tarent !  
I then were happy.

*Leon.* Rest assured you shall.

*Enter Antonio, Pedro, and Servant.*

*Vice.* We all with open arms haste to  
embrace you.

*Duke.* Welcome, most welcome !

*Car.* Stay.

*Duke.* 'Twas this I fear'd.

*Car.* Sir, 'tis best known to you, on what  
strict terms

The reputation of men's fame and honours  
Depends in this so punctual age, in which  
A word that may receive a harsh construction,  
Is answer'd and defended by the sword :

And you, that know so much, will, I presume,  
Be sensibly tender of another's credit,  
As you would guard your own.

*Ant.* I were unjust else.

*Car.* I have received from your hands  
wounds, and deep ones,

My honour in the general report  
Tainted and soil'd, for which I will demand.

This satisfaction—that you would forgive  
My contumelious words and blow, my rash

And unadvised wildness first threw on you.  
Thus I would teach the world a better way.

For the recovery of a wounded honour,  
Than with a savage fury, not true courage,  
Still to run headlong on.

*Ant.* Can this be serious?

*Car.* I'll add this, he that does wrong, not  
alone

Draws, but makes sharp, his enemy's sword  
against

His own life and his honour. I have paid  
for't ;

And wish that they who dare most, would  
learn from me,

Not to maintain a wrong, but to repent it.

*Paul.* Why, this is like yourself.

*Car.* For further proof,

Here, sir, with all my interest, I give up  
This lady to you.

*Vice.* Which I make more strong  
With my free grant.

*Alm.* I bring mine own consent,  
Which will not weaken it.

*All.* All joy confirm it !

*Ant.* Your unexpected courtesies amaze  
me,

Which I will study with all love and service  
To appear worthy of.

*Paul.* Pray you, understand, sir,

There are a pair of suitors more, that gladly

Would hear from you as much as the pleased  
viceroy

Hath said unto the prince of Tarent.

*Duke.* Take her ;

Her dowry shall be answerable to

Her birth, and your desert.

*Pedro.* You make both happy.

*Ant.* One only suit remains ; that you  
would please

To take again into your highness' favour,

This honest captain : let him have your  
grace ;

What's due to his much merit, shall from  
me

Meet liberal rewards.

*Vicc.* Have your desire.

*Ant.* Now may all here that love, as they  
are friends

To our good fortunes, find like prosperous  
ends. [*Exeunt.*

#### EPILOGUE.

*Custom, and that a law we must obey,  
In the way of epilogue bids me something say,  
How'er to little purpose, since we know,  
If you are pleased, unbegg'd you will bestow  
A gentle censure : on the other side,  
If that this play deserve to be decried  
In your opinions, all that I can say  
Will never turn the stream the other way.  
Your gracious smiles will render us secure ;  
Your frowns without despair we must endure.*



# The Bashful Lover.

## PROLOGUE.

*This from our author, far from all offence  
To abler writers, or the audience  
Met here to judge his poem. He, by me,  
Presents his service, with such modesty  
As well becomes his weakness. 'Tis no crime,  
He hopes, as we do, in this curious time,  
To be a little diffident, when we are  
To please so many with one bill of fare.  
Let others, building on their merit, say  
You're in the wrong, if you move not that way  
Which they prescribe you; as you were bound to learn  
Their maxims, but incapable to discern  
'Twixt truth and falsehood. Ours had rather be  
Censured by some for too much obsequy,  
Than tax'd of self opinion. If he hear  
That his endeavours thrived, and did appear  
Worthy your view, (though made so by your grace,  
With some desert,) he, in another place,  
Will thankfully report, one leaf of bays  
Truly conferr'd upon this work, will raise  
More pleasure in him, you the givers free,  
Than garlands ravish'd from the virgin tree.*

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Gonzaga, duke of Mantua.	Pisano, } Florentine officers.
Lorenzo, duke of Tuscany.	Martino, }
Uberti, prince of Parma.	Captains.
Farneze, cousin to Gonzaga.	Milanese Ambassador.
Alonzo, the ambassador, nephew to Lorenzo.	Doctor.
Manfroy, a lord of Mantua.	Matilda, daughter to Gonzaga.
Octavio, formerly general to Gonzaga, but now in exile.	Beatrice, her waiting woman.
Gothrio, his servant.	Maria, daughter to Octavio, disguised as a page, and called Ascanio.
Galeazzo, a Milanese prince, disguised under the name of Hortensio.	Waiting Women.
Julio, his attendant.	Captains, Soldiers, Guard, Attendants, Page, &c.

SCENE,—Partly in the City of Mantua, and partly in the dutchy.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—Mantua. *A Space before the Palace.*

*Enter Hortensio and Julio.*

*Jul.* I dare not cross you, sir, but I would gladly (Provided you allow it) render you My personal attendance.

*Hort.* You shall better Discharge the duty of an honest servant, In following my instructions, which you have Received already, than in questioning What my intents are, or upon what motives My stay's resolved in Mantua: believe me, That servant overdoes, that's too officious; And, in presuming to direct your master,

You argue him of weakness, and yourself  
Of arrogance and impertinence.

*Ful.* I have done, sir ;  
But what my ends are—

*Hort.* Honest ones, I know it.  
I have my bills of exchange, and all pro-  
visions,

Entrusted to you ; you have shown yourself  
Just and discreet, what would you more ? and  
yet,

To satisfy in some part your curious care,  
Hear this, and leave me. I desire to be  
Obscured, and, as I have demean'd myself  
These six months past in Mantua, I'll con-  
tinue

Unnoted and unknown, and, at the best,  
Appear no more than a gentleman, and a  
stranger,

That travels for his pleasure.

*Ful.* With your pardon,  
This hardly will hold weight, though I should  
swear it,

With your noble friends and brother.

*Hort.* You may tell them,  
Since you will be my tutor, there's a rumour,  
Almost cried up into a certainty,  
Of wars with Florence, and that I am de-  
termined

To see the service : whatever I went forth,  
Heaven prospering my intents, I would come  
home

A soldier, and a good one.

*Ful.* Should you get  
A captain's place, nay, colonel's, 'twould add  
little

To what you are ; few of your rank will follow  
That dangerous profession.

*Hort.* 'Tis the noblest,  
And monarchs honour'd in it : but no more,  
On my displeasure.

*Ful.* Saints and angels guard you !

[*Exit.*

*Hort.* A war, indeed, is threaten'd, nay,  
expected,

From Florence ; but it is 'gainst me already  
Proclaim'd in Mantua ; I find it here,  
No foreign, but intestine war : I have  
Defied myself, in giving up my reason  
A slave to passion, and am led captive  
Before the battle's fought : I fainted, when  
I only saw mine enemy, and yielded,  
Before that I was charged ; and, though  
defeated,

I dare not sue for mercy. Like Ixion,  
I look on Juno, feel my heart turn cinders  
With an invisible fire ; and yet, should she  
Deign to appear clothed in a various cloud,  
The majesty of the substance is so sacred,  
I durst not clasp the shadow. I behold her

With adoration, feast my eye, while all  
My other senses starve ; and, oft frequenting  
The place which she makes happy with her  
presence,

I never yet had power with tongue or pen  
To move her to compassion, or make known  
What 'tis I languish for ; yet I must gaze still,  
Though it increase my flame :—however, I  
Much more than fear I am observed, and  
censured

For bold intrusion. [*Walks by.*

*Enter Beatrice and Ascanio.*

*Beat.* Know you, boy, that gentleman ?

*Asc.* Who ? monsieur Melancholy ? hath  
not your honour  
Mark'd him before ?

*Beat.* I have seen him often wait  
About the princess' lodgings, but ne'er guess'd  
What his designs were.

*Asc.* No ! what a sigh he breath'd now !  
Many such will blow up the roof : on my  
small credit

There's gunpowder in them.

*Beat.* How, crack ! gunpowder ?  
He's flesh and blood, and devils only carry  
Such roaring stuff about them : you cannot  
prove

He is or spirit or conjurer.

*Asc.* That I grant,  
But he's a lover, and that's as bad ; their sighs  
Are like petards, and blow all up.

*Beat.* A lover !  
I have been in love myself, but never found  
yet

That it could work such strange effects.

*Asc.* True, madam,  
In women it cannot ; for when they miss the  
enjoying

Of their full wishes, all their sighs and  
heigh-hoes,  
At the worst, breed tympanies, and these are  
cured too

With a kiss or two of their saint, when he  
appears

Between a pair of sheets : but, with us men,  
The case is otherwise.

*Beat.* You will be breech'd, boy,  
For your physical maxims.—But how are  
you assured,  
He is a lover ?

*Asc.* Who, I ? I know with whom too :  
But that is to be whisper'd. [*Whispers.*

*Beat.* How ! the princess !  
The unparallel'd Matilda ! some proof of it ;  
I'll pay for my intelligence.

*Asc.* Let me kiss [*Gives Asc. money.*

Your honour's hand; 'twas ever fair, but now  
Beyond comparison.

*Beat.* I guess the reason;  
A giving hand is still fair to the receiver.

*Asc.* Your ladyship's in the right; but to  
the purpose.

He is my client, and pays his fees as duly  
As ever usurer did, in a bad cause,  
To his man of law; and yet I get, and  
take them

Both easily and honestly: all the service  
I do him, is, to give him notice when  
And where the princess will appear; and that  
I hope's no treason. If you miss him, when  
She goes to the vesper or the matins, hang  
me;

Or when she takes the air, be sure to find him  
Near her coach, at her going forth, or  
coming back:

But if she walk, he's ravish'd. I have seen  
him

Smell out her footing like a lime-hound, and  
nose it

From all the rest of her train.

*Beat.* Yet I ne'er saw him  
Present her a petition.

*Asc.* Nor e'er shall:  
He only sees her, sighs, and sacrifices  
A tear or two—then vanishes.

*Beat.* 'Tis most strange:  
What a sad aspect he wears! but I'll make  
use of't.

The princess is much troubled with the  
threats

That come from Florence; I will bring her  
to him,

The novelty may afford her sport, and help  
To purge deep melancholy. Boy, can you  
stay

Your client here for the third part of an hour?  
I have some ends in't.

*Asc.* Stay him, madam! fear not:  
The present receipt of a round sum of crowns,  
And that will draw most gallants from their  
prayers,

Cannot drag him from me.

*Beat.* See you do. [Exit.]

*Asc.* Ne'er doubt me.  
I'll put him out of his dream.—Good mor-  
row, signior.

*Hort.* My little friend, good morrow.  
Hath the princess

Slept well to-night?

*Asc.* I hear not from her women

One murmur to the contrary.

*Hort.* Heaven be praised for't!

Does she go to church this morning?

*Asc.* Troth, I know not;  
I keep no key of her devotion, signior.

*Hort.* Goes she abroad? pray tell me.

*Asc.* 'Tis thought rather,  
She is resolv'd to keep her chamber.

*Hort.* Ah me!

*Asc.* Why do you sigh? if that you have  
a business

To be dispatch'd in court, shew ready money,  
You shall find those that will prefer it for  
you.

*Hort.* Business! can any man have busi-  
ness, but

To see her; then admire her, and pray for her,  
She being composed of goodness? for myself,  
I find it a degree of happiness

But to be near her, and I think I pay  
A strict religious vow, when I behold her;  
And that's all my ambition.

*Asc.* I believe you:  
Yet, she being absent, you may spend some  
hours

With profit and delight too. After dinner,  
The duke gives audience to a rough am-  
bassador,

Whom yet I never saw, nor heard his title,  
Employ'd from Florence; I'll help you to  
a place,

Where you shall see and hear all.

*Hort.* 'Tis not worth

My observation.

*Asc.* What think you of  
An excellent comedy, to be presented  
For his entertainment? he that penn'd it is  
The poet of the time, and all the ladies,  
(I mean the amorous and learned ones,  
Except the amorous, will be there to grace it.

*Hort.* What's that to me? without her all  
is nothing;

The light that shines in court Cimmerian  
darkness;

I will to bed again, and there contemplate  
On her perfections.

*Re-enter Beatrice with Matilda, and two  
Waiting Women.*

*Asc.* Stay, sir, see! the princess,  
Beyond our hopes.

*Hort.* Take that. [Gives him money.]—As  
Moors salute

The rising sun with joyful superstition,  
I could fall down and worship.—O my  
heart!

Like Phœbe breaking through an envious  
cloud,

Or something which no simile can express,  
She shews to me: a reverent fear, but  
blended

With wonder and amazement, does possess  
me.

Now glut thyself, my famish'd eye!

*Beat.* That's he,  
An't please your excellence.

1 *Wom.* Observe his posture,  
But with a quarter-look.

2 *Wom.* Your eye fix'd on him,  
Will breed astonishment.

*Matil.* A comely gentleman!  
I would not question your relation, lady,  
Yet faintly can believe it. How he eyes me!  
Will he not speak?

*Beat.* Your excellence hath deprived him  
Of speech and motion.

*Matil.* 'Tis most strange.

*Asc.* These fits  
Are usual with him.

*Matil.* Is it not, Ascanio,  
A personated folly! or he a statue?  
If it be, it is a masterpiece; for man  
I cannot think him.

*Beat.* For your sport, vouchsafe him  
A little conference.

*Matil.* In compassion rather:  
For should he love me, as you say, (though  
hopeless,)  
It should not be return'd with scorn; that  
were

An inhumanity, which my birth nor honour  
Could privilege, were they greater. Now I  
perceive  
He has life and motion in him. To whom,  
lady,

Pays he that duty?

[*Hortensio, bowing, offers to go off.*

*Beat.* Sans doubt, to yourself.

*Matil.* And whither goes he now?

*Asc.* To his private lodging,

But to what end I know not; this is all  
I ever noted in him.

*Matil.* Call him back:

In pity I stand bound to counsel him,  
How'er I am denied, though I were willing,  
To ease his sufferings.

*Asc.* Signior! the princess  
Commands you to attend her.

*Hort.* [*Returns.*] How! the princess!  
Am I betray'd?

*Asc.* What a lump of flesh is this!

You are betray'd, sir, to a better fortune  
Than you durst ever hope for. What a  
Tantalus

Do you make yourself! the flying fruit stays  
for you,

And the water that you long'd for, rising up  
Above your lip, do you refuse to taste it?  
Move faster, sluggish camel, or I'll thrust  
This goad in your breech: had I such a  
promising beard,

I should need the reins, not spurs.

*Matil.* You may come nearer.

Why do you shake, sir? If I flatter not  
Myself, there's no deformity about me,  
Nor any part so monstrous, to beget  
An ague in you.

*Hort.* It proceeds not, madam,  
From guilt, but reverence.

*Matil.* I believe you, sir;  
Have you a suit to me?

*Hort.* Your excellence  
Is wondrous fair.

*Matil.* I thank your good opinion.

*Hort.* And I beseech you that I may have  
license

To kneel to you.

*Matil.* A suit I cannot cross.

*Hort.* I humbly thank your excellence.

[*Kneels.*

*Matil.* But what,  
As you are prostrate on your knee before me,  
Is your petition?

*Hort.* I have none, great princess.

*Matil.* Do you kneel for nothing?

*Hort.* Yes, I have a suit,  
But such a one, as, if denied, will kill me.

*Matil.* Take comfort: it must be of some  
strange nature,

Unfitting you to ask, or me to grant,  
If I refuse it.

*Hort.* It is, madam—

*Matil.* Out with't.

*Hort.* That I may not offend you, this is all,  
When I presume to look on you.

*Asc.* A flat eunuch!

To look on her? I should desire myself  
To move a little further.

*Matil.* Only that?

*Hort.* And I beseech you, madam, to  
believe

I never did yet with a wanton eye;  
Or cherish one lascivious wish beyond it.

*Beat.* You'll never make good courtier, or  
be

In grace with ladies.

1 *Wom.* Or us waiting women,  
If that be your *nil ultra*.

2 *Wom.* He's no gentleman,  
On my virginity, it is apparent:  
My tailor has more boldness; nay, my shoe-  
maker

Will fumble a little further, he could not have  
The length of my foot else.

*Matil.* Only to look on me!

Ends your ambition there?

*Hort.* It does, great lady,—  
And that confined too, and at fitting distance:

The fly that plays too near the flame burns in it.  
As I behold the sun, the stars, the temples,

I look on you, and wish it were no sin  
Should I adore you.

*Matil.* Come, there's something more in't ;  
And since that you will make a goddess of me,  
As such a one I'll tell you, I desire not  
The meanest altar raised up to mine honour  
To be pull'd down ; I can accept from you,  
Be your condition ne'er so far beneath me,  
One grain of incense with devotiou offer'd,  
Beyond all perfumes, or Sabæan spices,  
By one that proudly thinks he merits in it :  
I know you love me.

*Hort.* Next to heaven, madam,  
And with as pure a zeal. That, we behold  
With the eyes of contemplation, but can  
Arrive no nearer to it in this life ;  
But when that is divorc'd, my soul shall  
serve yours,  
And witness my affection.

*Matil.* Pray you, rise ;  
But wait my further pleasure,  
[*Hort. rises and walks aside.*]

*Enter Farneze and Uberti.*

*Farn.* I'll present you,  
And give you proof I am your friend, a true  
one ;

And in my pleading for you, teach the age,  
That calls, erroneously, friendship but a  
name,

It is a substance.—Madam, I am bold  
To trench so far upon your privacy,  
As to desire my friend (let not that wrong him,  
For he's a worthy one) may have the honour  
To kiss your hand.

*Matil.* His own worth challenges  
A greater favour.

*Farn.* Your acknowledgment  
Confirms it, madam. If you look on him  
As he's built up a man, without addition  
Of fortune's liberal favours, wealth or titles,  
He doth deserve no usual entertainment :  
But, as he is a prince, and for your service  
Hath left fair Parma, that acknowledges  
No other lord, and, uncompell'd, exposes  
His person to the dangers of the war,  
Ready to break in storms upon our heads ;  
In noble thankfulness you may vouchsafe him  
Nearer respect, and such grace as may  
nourish,  
Not kill, his amorous hopes.

*Matil.* Cousin, you know  
I am not the disposer of myself,  
The duke my father challenges that power :  
Yet thus much I dare promise ; prince Uberti  
Shall find the seed of service that he sows,  
Falls not on barren ground.

*Uber.* For this high favour  
I am your creature, and profess I owe you  
Whatever I call mine. [*They walk aside.*]

*Hort.* This great lord is  
A suitor to the princess.

*Asc.* True, he is so.

*Hort.* Fame gives him out too for a brave  
commander.

*Asc.* And in it does him but deserved right ;  
The duke hath made him general of his horse,  
On that assurance.

*Hort.* And the lord Farneze,  
Pleads for him, as it seems.

*Asc.* 'Tis too apparent :  
And, this consider'd, give me leave to ask  
What hope have you, sir ?

*Hort.* I may still look on her,  
Howe'er he wear the garland.

*Asc.* A thin diet,  
And will not feed you fat, sir.

*Uber.* I rejoice,  
Rare princess, that you are not to be won  
By carpet-courtship, but the sword ; with this  
Steel pen I'll write on Florence' helm how  
much

I can, and dare do for you.

*Matil.* 'Tis not question'd.  
Some private business of mine own disposed of,  
I'll meet you in the presence.

*Uber.* Ever your servant.

[*Exeunt Uberti and Farneze.*]

*Matil.* Now, sir, to you. You have ob-  
served, I doubt not,  
For lovers are sharp-sighted, to what purpose  
This prince solicits me ; and yet I am not  
So taken with his worth, but that I can  
Vouchsafe you further parle. The first com-  
mand

That I'll impose upon you, is to hear  
And follow my good counsel : I am not  
Offended that you love me, persist in it,  
But love me virtuously ; such love may spur-

you  
To noble undertakings, which achieved,  
Will raise you into name, preferment,  
honour :

For all which, though you ne'er enjoy my  
person,  
(For that's impossible,) you are indebted  
To your high aims : visit me when you,  
please,

I do allow it, nor will blush to own you,  
So you confine yourself to what you promise,  
As my virtuous servant.

*Beat.* Farewell, sir ! you have  
An unexpected cordial.

*Asc.* May it work well !

[*Exeunt all but Hort.:*  
*Hort.* Your love—yes, so she said, may-  
spur you to

Brave undertakings: adding this, You may  
Visit me when you please. Is this allow'd me,

And any act, within the power of man,  
Impossible to be effected? no:  
I will break through all oppositions that  
May stop me in my full career to honour:  
And, borrowing strength to do, from her  
high favour,  
Add something to Alcides' greatest labour.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—*The same. A State-room in the Palace.*

*Enter Gonzaga, Uberti, Farneze, Manfroy, and Attendants.*

*Gon.* This is your place; and, were it in our power, [*Leads Uberti to the state.*]  
You should have greater honour, prince of Parma;

The rest know theirs.—Let some attend with care

On the ambassador, and let my daughter Be present at his audience.

[*Exeunt Attendants.*

—Reach a chair,

We'll do all fit respects; and, pray you, put on

Your milder looks, you are in a place where frowns

Are no prevailing agents. [*To Uberti.*

*Enter at one door Alonzo and Attendants: Matilda, Beatrice, Ascanio, Hortensio, and Waiting Women, at the other.*

*Asc.* I have seen

More than a wolf, a Gorgon! [*Swoons.*

*Gon.* What's the matter?

*Matild.* A page of mine is fallen into a swoon;

Look to him carefully.

[*Ascanio is carried out.*

*Gon.* Now, when you please,

The cause that brought you hither?

*Alon.* The protraction

Of my dispatch forgotten, from Lorenzo, The Tuscan duke, thus much to you, Gonzaga,

The duke of Mantua. By me, his nephew, He does salute you fairly, and entreats (A word not suitable to his power and greatness)

You would consent to tender that which he, Unwillingly, must force, if contradicted.

Ambition, in a private man a vice,

Is, in a prince, the virtue.

*Gon.* To the purpose;

These ambages are impertinent.

*Alon.* He demands

The fair Matilda, for I dare not take From her perfections, in a noble way; And in creating her the comfort of

His royal bed, to raise her to a height  
Her flattering hopes could not aspire, where she

With wonder shall be gazed upon, and live  
The envy of her sex.

*Gon.* Suppose this granted.

*Uber.* Or, if denied, what follows?

*Alon.* Present war,

With all extremities the conqueror can  
Inflict upon the vanquish'd.

*Uber.* Grant me license

To answer this defiance. What intelligence  
Holds your proud master with the will of heaven,

That, ere the uncertain die of war be thrown,

He dares assure himself the victory?

Are his unjust invading arms of fire?

Or those we put on in defence of right,

Like chaff, to be consumed in the encounter?

I look on your dimensions, and find not

Mine own of lesser size; the blood that fills

My veins, as hot as yours; my sword as sharp,

My nerves of equal strength, my heart as good;

And, confident we have the better cause,

Why should we fear the trial?

*Far.* You presume

You are superior in numbers; we

Lay hold upon the surest anchor, virtue;

Which, when the tempest of the war roars  
loudest,

Must prove a strong protection.

*Gon.* Two main reasons

(Seconding those you have already heard)

Give us encouragement; the duty that

I owe my mother-country, and the love

Descending to my daughter. For the first,

Should I betray her liberty, I deserv'd

To have my name with infamy razed from

The catalogue of good princes; and I should

Unnaturally forget I am a father,

If, like a Tartar, or for fear or profit,

I should consign her, as a bondswoman,

To be disposed of at another's pleasure;

Her own consent or favour never sued for,

And mine by force exacted. No, Alonzo,

She is my only child, my heir; and, if

A father's eyes deceive me not, the hand

Of prodigal nature hath given so much to her,

As, in the former ages, kings would rise up

In her defence, and make her cause their  
quarrel:

Nor can she, if that any spark remain

To kindle a desire to be possess'd

Of such a beauty, in our time, want swords

To guard it safe from violence.

*Hort.* I must speak,

Or I shall burst; now to be silent were



A kind of blasphemy : if such purity,  
Such innocence, an abstract of perfection,  
The soul of beauty, virtue, in a word,  
A temple of things sacred, should groan  
under

The burthen of oppression, we might  
Accuse the saints, and tax the Powers above  
us

Of negligence or injustice.—Pardon, sir,  
A stranger's boldness, and in your mercy  
call it

True zeal, not rudeness. In a cause like this,  
The husbandman would change his plough-  
ing-irons

To weapons of defence, and leave the earth  
Untill'd, although a general dearth should  
follow :

The student would forswear his book, the  
lawyer

Put off his thriving gown, and, without pay,  
Conclude this cause is to be fought, not  
pleaded.

The women will turn Amazons, as their sex  
In her were wrong'd ; and boys write down  
their names

In the muster-book for soldiers.

*Gon.* Take my hand :

Whate'er you are, I thank you. How are  
you call'd ?

*Hort.* Hortensio, a Milanese.

*Gon.* I wish

Mantua had many such.—My lord am-  
bassador,

Some privacy, if you please ; Manfroy, you  
may

Partake it, and advise us.

[*They walk aside.*]

*Uber.* Do you know, friend,

What this man is, or of what country ?

*Farn.* Neither.

*Uber.* I'll question him myself. What are  
you, sir ?

*Hort.* A gentleman.

*Uber.* But if there be gradation

In gentry, as the heralds say, you have  
Been over-bold in the presence of your  
betters.

*Hort.* My betters, sir !

*Uber.* Your betters. As I take it,

You are no prince.

*Hort.* 'Tis fortune's gift you were born one ;  
I have not heard that glorious title crowns  
you,

As a reward of virtue : it may be,  
The first of your house deserv'd it ; yet his  
merits

You can but faintly call your own.

*Matil.* Well answer'd.

*Uber.* You come up to me.

*Hort.* I would not turn my back,  
If you were the duke of Florence, though  
you charged me  
I' the head of your troops.

*Uber.* Tell me in gentler language,  
Your passionate speech induces me to think  
so,

Do you love the princess ?

*Hort.* Were you mine enemy,  
Your foot upon my breast, sword at my  
throat,

Even then I would profess it. The ascent  
To the height of honour is by arts or arms ;  
And if such an unequal'd prize might fall  
On him that did deserve best in defence  
Of this rare princess in the day of battle,  
I should lead you a way would make your  
greatness

Sweat drops of blood to follow.

*Uber.* Can your excellence  
Hear this without rebuke from one unknown ?  
Is he a rival for a prince ?

*Matil.* My lord,

You take that liberty I never gave you.  
In justice you should give encouragement  
To him, or any man, that freely offers  
His life to do me service, not deter him ;  
I give no suffrage to it. Grant he loves me,  
As he professes, how are you wrong'd in it ?  
Would you have all men hate me but your-  
self ?

No more of this, I pray you : if this gentle-  
man

Fight for my freedom, in a fit proportion  
To his desert and quality, I can  
And will reward him ; yet give you no cause  
Of jealousy or envy.

*Hort.* Heavenly lady !

*Gon.* No peace but on such poor and base  
conditions !

We will not buy it at that rate : return  
'This answer to your master : Though we  
wish'd

To hold fair quarter with him, on such terms  
As honour would give way to, we are not  
So thunderstruck with the loud voice of war,  
As to acknowledge him our lord before  
His sword hath made us vassals : we long  
since

Have had intelligence of the unjust gripe  
He purposed to lay on us ; neither are we  
So unprovided as you think, my lord ;  
He shall not need so seek us ; we will meet  
him,

And prove the fortune of a day, perhaps  
Sooner than he expects.

*Alon.* And find repentance,  
When 'tis too late. Farewell.

[*Exit with Farnese.*]

*Gon.* No, my Matilda,  
We must not part so. Beasts and birds of  
prey,  
To their last gasp, defend their brood; and  
Florence,

Over thy father's breast shall march up to  
thee,

Before he force affection. The arms  
That thou must put on for us and thyself,  
Arc prayers and pure devotion, which will  
Be heard, Matilda. Manfroy, to your trust  
We do give up the city, and my daughter;  
On both keep a strong guard—No tears,  
they are ominous.

O my Octavio, my tried Octavio,  
In all my dangers! now I want thy service,  
In passion recompensed with banishment.  
Error of princes, who hate virtue when  
She's present with us, and in vain admire her  
When she is absent!—'tis too late to think  
on't.

The wish'd-for time is come, princely Uberti,  
To shew your valour; friends, being to do,  
not talk,

All rhetoric is fruitless, only this,  
Fate cannot rob you of deserv'd applause,  
Whether you win or lose in such a cause.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—Mantua. *A Room in the  
Palace.*

*Enter* Matilda, Beatrice, and Waiting  
Women.

*Matil.* No matter for the ring I ask'd you  
for.

The boy not to be found?

*Beat.* Nor heard of, madam.

*1 Wom.* He hath been sought and search'd  
for, house by house,

Nay, every nook of the city, but to no pur-  
pose.

*2 Wom.* And how he should escape hence,  
the lord Manfroy

Being so vigilant o'er the guards, appears  
A thing impossible.

*Matil.* I never saw him,

Since he swoon'd in the presence, when my  
father

Gave audience to the ambassador: but I feel  
A sad miss of him; on any slight occasion,

He would find out such pretty arguments  
To make me sport, and with such witty  
sweetness

Deliver his opinion, that I must

Ingenuously confess his harmless mirth,

When I was most oppress'd with care,  
wrought more

In the removing of't, than music on me.

*Beat.* An't please your excellence, I have  
observed him

Waggishly witty; yet, sometimes, on the  
sudden,

He would be very pensive; and then talk  
So feelingly of love, as if he had  
Tasted the bitter sweets of't.

*1 Wom.* He would tell, too,

A pretty tale of a sister, that had been  
Deceived by her sweetheart; and then,  
weeping, swear

He wonder'd how men could be false.

*2 Wom.* And that

When he was a knight, he'd be the ladies'  
champion,

And travel o'er the world to kill such lovers,  
As durst play false with their mistresses.

*Matil.* I am sure

I want his company.

*Enter* Manfroy.

*Man.* There are letters, madam,  
In post come from the duke; but I am  
charged,

By the careful bringer, not to open them  
But in your presence.

*Matil.* Heaven preserve my father!

Good news, an't be thy will!

*Man.* Patience must arm you

Against what's ill,

*Matil.* I'll hear them in my cabinet.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The Dutchy of Mantua.  
Gonzaga's Camp.*

*Enter* Hortensio and Ascanio.

*Hort.* Why have you left the safety of the  
city,

And service of the princess, to partake  
The dangers of the camp? and at a time too  
When the armies are in view, and every  
minute

The dreadful charge expected?

*Asc.* You appear

So far beyond yourself, as you are now,  
Arm'd like a soldier, (though I grant your  
presence

Was ever gracious,) that I grow enamour'd  
Of the profession: in the horror of it,

There is a kind of majesty.

*Hort.* But too heavy

To sit on thy soft shoulders, youth; retire  
To the duke's tent, that's guarded.

*Asc.* Sir, I come

To serve you; knight-adventurers are allow'd

Their pages, and I bring a will that shall  
Supply my want of power.

*Hort.* To serve me, boy!

I wish, believe it, that 'twere in my nerves  
To do thee any service; and thou shalt,  
If I survive the fortune of this day,  
Be satisfied I am serious.

*Asc.* I am not

To be put off so, sir. Since you do neglect  
My offer'd duty, I must use the power  
I bring along with me, that may command  
you:

You have seen this ring—

*Hort.* Made rich by being worn

Upon the princess' finger.

*Asc.* 'Tis a favour

To you, by me sent from her: view it better;  
But why coy to receive it?

*Hort.* I am unworthy

Of such a blessing, I have done nothing  
yet

That may deserve it; no commander's blood  
Of the adverse party hath yet died my sword  
Drawn out in her defence. I must not  
take it.

This were a triumph for me when I had  
Made Florence' duke my prisoner, and  
compell'd him

To kneel for mercy at her feet.

*Asc.* 'Twas sent, sir,

To put you in mind whose cause it is you  
fight for;

And, as I am her creature, to revenge

A wrong to me done.

*Hort.* By what man?

*Asc.* Alonzo.

*Hort.* The ambassador?

*Asc.* The same.

*Hort.* Let it suffice.

I know him by his armour and his horse;

And if we meet—[*Trumpets sound.*]-I  
am cut off, the alarum

Commands me hence: sweet youth, fall off.

*Asc.* I must not;

You are too noble to receive a wound

Upon your back, and, following close be-  
hind you,

I am secure; though I could wish my bosom  
Were your defence.

*Hort.* Thy kindness will undo thee.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same.* Lorenzo's Camp.

*Enter* Lorenzo, Alonzo, Pisano, and  
Martino.

*Lor.* We'll charge the main battalia, fall  
you

Upon the van · preserve your troops entire,

To force the rear: he dies that breaks his  
ranks,

Till all be ours, and sure.

*Pis.* 'Tis so proclaim'd.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Fighting and alarum.* *Enter* Hortensio,  
Ascanio, and Alonzo.

*Hort.* 'Tis he, Ascanio:—Stand!

*Alon.* I never shunn'd

A single opposition; but tell me

Why, in the battle, of all men, thou hast

Made choice of me?

*Hort.* Look on this youth; his cause

Sits on my sword.

*Alon.* I know him not.

*Hort.* I'll help

Your memory.

[*They fight.*]

*Asc.* What have I done? I am doubtful  
To whom to wish the victory; for, still  
My resolution wavering, I so love  
The enemy that wrong'd me, that I cannot,  
Without repentance, wish success to him  
That seeks to do me right.—[*Alonzo falls.*]  
—Alas, he's fall'n!

As you are gentle, hold, sir! or, if I want  
Power to persuade so far, I conjure you  
By her loved name I am sent from.

*Hort.* 'Tis a charm

Too strong to be resisted: he is yours.

Yet, why you should make suit to save that  
life

Which you so late desired should be cut  
off,

For injuries received, begets my wonder.

*Asc.* Alas! we foolish, spleenful boys  
would have

We know not what; I have some private  
reasons,

But now not to be told.

*Hort.* Shall I take him prisoner?

*Asc.* By no means, sir; I will not save  
his life,

To rob him of his honour: when you give,  
Give not by halves. One short word, and I  
follow.

[*Exit* Hortensio.

My lord Alonzo, if you have received  
A benefit, and would know to whom you  
owe it,

Remember what your entertainment was  
At old Octavio's house, one you call'd  
friend,

And how you did return it.

[*Exit.*]

*Alon.* I remember

I did not well; but it is now no time

To think upon't: my wounded honour calls

For reparation; I must quench my fury

For this disgrace, in blood, and some shall  
smart for't.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE IV.—*The same. A Forest.*

*Alarum continued. Enter Uberti, and Farneze wounded.*

*Farn.* O prince Uberti, valour cannot save us ;

The body of our army's pierced and broken,  
The wings are routed, and our scatter'd troops  
Not to be rallied up.

*Uber.* 'Tis yet some comfort,  
The enemy must say we were not wanting  
In courage or direction ; and we may  
Accuse the Powers above as partial, when  
A good cause, well defended too, must suffer  
For want of fortune.

*Farn.* All is lost ; the duke  
Too far engaged, I fear, to be brought off :  
Three times I did attempt his rescue, but  
With odds was beaten back ; only the  
stranger,

I speak it to my shame, still follow'd him,  
Cutting his way ; but 'tis beyond my hopes,  
That either should return.

*Uber.* That noble stranger,  
Whom I, in my proud vanity of greatness,  
As one unknown contemn'd, when I was  
thrown

Out of my saddle by the great duke's lance,  
Horsed me again, in spite of all that made  
Resistance ; and then whisper'd in mine ear,  
*Fight bravely, prince Uberti, there's no way  
else,*

*To the fair Matilda's favour.*

*Farn.* 'Twas done nobly.

*Uber.* In you, my bosom-friend, I had  
call'd it noble :

But such a courtesy from a rival merits  
The highest attribute.

*Enter Hortensio and Gonzaga.*

*Farn.* Stand on your guard ;  
We are pursued.

*Uber.* Preserv'd ! wonder on wonder.

*Farn.* The duke in safety !

*Gon.* Pay your thanks, Farneze,  
To this brave man, if I may call him so,  
Whose acts were more than human. If  
thou art

My better angel, from my infancy  
Design'd to guard me, like thyself appear,  
For sure thou'rt more than mortal.

*Hort.* No, great sir,  
A weak and sinful man ; though I have done  
you

Some prosperous service that hath found your  
favour,

I am lost to myself : but lose not you  
The offer'd opportunity to delude  
The hot-pursuing enemy ; these woods,

Nor the dark veil of night, cannot conceal you,  
If you dwell long here. You may rise again ;  
But I am fallen for ever.

*Farn.* Rather borne up  
To the supreme sphere of honour.

*Uber.* I confess  
My life your gift.

*Gon.* My liberty.

*Uber.* You have snatch'd  
The wreath of conquest from the victor's head,  
And do alone, in scorn of Lorenzo's fortune,  
Though we are slaved, by true heroic valour  
Deserve a triumph.

*Gon.* From whence then proceeds  
This poor dejection ?

*Hort.* In one suit I'll tell you,  
Which I beseech you grant :—I loved your  
daughter,  
But how ? as beggars in their wounded fancy,  
Hope to be monarchs : I long languish'd for  
her,

But did receive no cordial, but what  
Despair, my rough physician, prescribed me.  
A length her goodness and compassion  
found it ;

And, whereas I expected, and with reason,  
The distance and disparity consider'd  
Between her birth and mine, she would con-  
temn me,

The princess gave me comfort.

*Gon.* In what measure ?

*Hort.* She did admit me for her knight  
and servant,  
And spurr'd me to do something in this battle,  
Fought for her liberty, that might not blemish  
So fair a favour.

*Gon.* This you have perform'd,  
To the height of admiration.

*Uber.* I subscribe to't,  
That am your rival.

*Hort.* You are charitable :  
But how short of my hopes, nay, the assurance  
Of those achievements which my love and  
youth

Already held accomplish'd, this day's fortune  
Must sadly answer. What I did, she gave me  
The strength to do ; her piety preserved  
Her father, and her gratitude for the dangers  
You threw yourself into for her defence,  
Protected you by me her instrument :  
But when I came to strike in mine own cause,  
And to do something so remarkable,  
That should at my return command her  
thanks

And gracious entertainment, then, alas !  
I fainted like a coward. I made a vow, too,  
(And it is register'd,) ne'er to presume  
To come into her presence, if I brought not  
Her fears and dangers bound in fetters to her,

Which now's impossible. — Hark! the enemy

Makes his approaches: save yourselves: this only

Deliver to her sweetness; I have done My poor endeavours, and pray her not repent Her goodness to me. May you live to serve her,

This loss recover'd, with a happier fate! And make use of this sword: arms I abjure, And conversation of men; I'll seek out Some unfrequented cave, and die love's martyr. *[Exit hastily.]*

*Gon.* Follow him.

*Uber.* 'Tis in vain; his nimble feet

Have borne him from my sight.

*Gon.* I suffer for him.

*Farn.* We share in it; but must not, sir, forget

Your means of safety.

*Uber.* In the war I have served you, And to the death will follow you.

*Gon.* 'Tis not fit,

We must divide ourselves. My daughter— If I retain yet A sovereign's power o'er thee, or friend's with you,

Do, and dispute not; by my example change Your habits: as I thus put off my purple, Ambition dies; this garment of a shepherd, Left here by chance, will serve; in lieu of it, I leave this to the owner. Raise new forces, And meet me at St. Leo's fort; my daughter, As I commanded Manfroy, there will meet us.

The city cannot hold out, we must part: Farewell, thy hand.

*Farn.* You still shall have my heart.

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE V.—*The same. Another part of the Forest.*

*Enter Lorenzo, Alonzo, Pisano, Martino, Captains, and Soldiers.*

*Lor.* The day is ours, though it cost dear; yet 'tis not

Enough to get a victory, if we lose The true use of it. We have hitherto Held back your forward swords, and in our fear

Of ambushes, deferr'd the wish'd reward Duc to your bloody toil: but now give freedom,

Nay, license to your fury and revenge; Now glut yourselves with prey; let not the night,

Nor these thick woods, give sanctuary to The fear-struck hares, our enemies: fire these trees,

And force the wretches to forsake their holes, And offer their scorch'd bodies to your swords, Or burn them as a sacrifice to your angers. Who brings Gonzaga's head, or takes him prisoner,

(Which I incline to rather, that he may Be sensible of those tortures, which I vow To inflict upon him for denial of His daughter to our bed,) shall have a blank, With our hand and signet made authentical, In which he may write down himself, what wealth

Or honours he desires.

*Alon.* The great duke's will Shall be obey'd.

*Pisan.* Put it in execution.

*Mart.* Begirt the wood, and fire it.

*Sold.* Follow, follow! *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE VI.—*The same. Another part of the same.*

*Enter Farneze, disguised as a Florentine Soldier.*

*Farn.* Uberti, prince Uberti! O my friend, Dearer than life! I have lost thee. Cruel fortune,

Unsatisfied with our sufferings! we no sooner Were parted from the duke, and e'en then ready

To take a mutual farewell, when a troop Of the enemy's horse fell on us; we were forced

To take the woods again, but, in our flight, Their hot pursuit divided us: we had been happy

If we had died together. To survive him, To me is worse than death; and therefore should not

Embrace the means of my escape, though offer'd.

When nature gave us life she gave a burthen, But at our pleasure not to be cast off,

Though weary of it; and my reason prompts me,

This habit of a Florentine, which I took From a dying soldier, may keep me unknown,

Till opportunity mark me out a way For flight, and with security.

*Enter Uberti.*

*Uber.* Was there ever Such a night of horror?

*Farn.* My friend's voice! I now In part forgive thee, fortune.

*Uber.* The wood flames,

The bloody sword devours all that it meets, And death in several shapes rides here in triumph.

I am like a stag closed in a toil, my life,  
As soon as found, the cruel huntsman's  
prey :

Why fliest thou, then, what is inevitable?  
Better to fall with manly wounds before  
Thy cruel enemy, than survive thine honour:  
And yet to charge him, and die unrevenged,  
More desperation.

*Farn.* Heroic spirit!

*Uber.* Mine own life I contemn, and would  
not save it

But for the future service of the duke,  
And safety of his daughter; having means,  
If I escape, to raise a second army;  
And, what is nearest to me, to enjoy  
My friend *Farneze*.

*Farn.* I am still his care.

*Uber.* What shall I do? if I call loud, the  
foe

That hath begirt the wood, will hear the  
sound.

Shall I return by the same path? I cannot,  
The darkness of the night conceals it from  
me;

Something I must resolve.

*Farn.* Let friendship rouse

Thy sleeping soul, *Farneze*: wilt thou suffer  
Thy friend, a prince, nay, one that may set  
free

Thy captived country, perish, when 'tis in  
Thy power, with this disguise, to save his life?  
Thou hast lived too long, therefore resolve  
to die;

Thou hast seen thy country ruin'd, and thy  
master

Compell'd to shameful flight; the fields and  
woods

Strew'd o'er with carcasses of thy fellow-  
soldiers:

The miseries thou art fallen in, and before  
Thy eyes the horror of this place, and  
thousand

Calamities to come; and after all these,  
Can any hope remain? shake off delays:

Dost thou doubt yet? To save a citizen,  
The conquering Roman in a general

Esteem'd the highest honour: can it be then  
Inglorious to preserve a prince? thy friend?—

*Uberti*, prince *Uberti*! [*Aloud.*] use this  
means

Of thy escape;—

[*Pulls off his Florentine uniform,  
and casts it before Uberti.*

conceal'd in this, thou mayst

Pass through the enemy's guards: the time  
denies

Longer discourse; thou hast a noble end,  
Live, therefore, mindful of thy dying friend.

[*Exit.*

*Uber.* *Farneze*, stay thy hasty steps!  
*Farneze*!

Thy friend *Uberti* calls thee: 'tis in vain;  
He's gone to death an innocent, and makes  
life,

The benefit he confers on me, my guilt.  
Thou art too covetous of another's safety,  
Too prodigal and careless of thine own.

'Tis a deceit in friendship to enjoin me  
To put this garment on, and live, that he  
May have alone the honour to die nobly.

O cruel piety, in our equal danger  
To rob thyself of that thou giv'st thy friend!  
It must not be; I will restore his gift,

And die before him. How? where shall I  
find him?—

Thou art o'ercome in friendship; yield,  
*Uberti*,

To the extremity of the time, and live:  
A heavy ransom! but it must be paid.

I will put on this habit: pitying heaven,  
As it loves goodness, may protect my friend,  
And give me means to satisfy the debt.

I stand engaged for; if not, pale despair,  
I dare thy worst; thou canst but bid me die,  
And so much I'll force from an enemy.

[*Exit.*

SCENE VII.—*The same.* *Lorenzo's  
Camp.*

*Enter Alonzo and Pisano, with Farneze  
bound; Soldiers with torches, Farneze's  
sword in one of the Soldier's hands.*

*Alon.* I know him, he's a man of ransome.

*Pisan.* True;

But if he live, 'tis to be paid to me.

*Alon.* I forced him to the woods.

*Pisan.* But my art found him;

Nor will I brook a partner in the prey

My fortune gave me.

*Alon.* Render him, or expect

The point of this.

*Pisan.* Were it lightning, I would meet it,  
Rather than be outraved.

*Alon.* I thus decide

The difference.

*Pisan.* My sword shall plead my title.

[*They fight.*

*Enter Lorenzo, Martino, Captains, and  
Attendants.*

*Lor.* Ha! where learn'd you this disci-  
pline? my commanders

Oppos'd 'gainst one another! what blind fury  
Brings forth this brawl? *Alonzo* and *Pisano*

At bloody difference! hold, or I tilt

At both as enemies.—Now speak; how grew  
This strange division?

*Pisan.* Against all right,

By force Alonzo strives to reap the harvest  
Sown by my labour.

*Alon.* Sir, this is my prisoner,  
The purchase of my sword, which proud  
Pisano,

That hath no interest in him, would take  
from me.

*Pisan.* Did not the presence of the duke  
forbid me,

I would say—

*Alon.* What?

*Pisan.* 'Tis false.

*Lor.* Before my face!

Keep them asunder. And was this the cause  
Of such a mortal quarrel, this the base  
To raise your fury on? the ties of blood,  
Of fellowship in arms, respect, obedience  
To me, your prince and general, no more  
Prevailing on you? this a price for which  
You would betray our victory, or wound  
Your reputation with mutinies,  
Forgetful of yourselves, allegiance, honour?—  
This is a course to throw us headlong down  
From that proud height of empire, upon  
which

We were securely seated. Shall division  
O'erturn what concord built? if you desire  
To bathe your swords in blood, the enemy  
Still flies before you: would you have spoil?  
the country

Lies open to you. O unheard-of madness!  
What greater mischief could Gouzaga wish  
us,

Than you pluck on our heads? no, my  
brave leaders,  
Let unity dwell in our tents, and discord  
Be banish'd to our enemies.

*Alon.* Take the prisoner,  
I do give up my title.

*Pisan.* I desire  
Your friendship, and will buy it; he is yours.

*Alon.* No man's a faithful judge in his  
own cause;  
Let the duke determine of him: we are  
friends, sir.

*Lor.* Shew it in emulation to o'ertake  
The flying foe; this cursed wretch disposed of,  
With our whole strength we'll follow.

[*Exeunt Alonzo and Pisano embracing.*]

*Farn.* Death at length  
Will set a period to calamity:  
I see it in this tyrant's frowns haste to me.

*Enter Uberti, habited like a Florentine  
Soldier, and mixes with the rest.*

*Lor.* Thou machine of this mischief, look  
to feel  
Whate'er the wrath of an incensed prince

Can pour upon thee: with thy blood I'll  
quench

(But drawn forth slowly) the invisible flames  
Of discord—by thy charms first fetch'd from  
hell,

Then forced into the breasts of my com-  
manders.

Bring forth the tortures.

*Uber.* Hear, victorious duke,  
The story of my miserable fortune,  
Of which this villain (by your sacred tongue  
Condemned to die) was the immediate cause:  
And, if my humble suit have justice in it,  
Vouchsafe to grant it.

*Lor.* Soldier, be brief, our anger  
Can brook no long delay.

*Uber.* I am the last  
Of three sons, by one father got, and train'd  
up

With his best care, for service in your wars:  
My father died under his fatal hand,  
And two of my poor brothers. Now I hear,  
Or fancy, wounded by my grief, deludes me,  
Their pale and mangled ghosts crying for  
vengeance

On perjury and murder. Thus the case  
stood:

My father, (on whose face he durst not look  
In equal mart,) by his fraud circumvented,  
Became his captive; we, his sons, lamenting  
Our old sire's hard condition, freely offer'd  
Our utmost for his ransom: that refused,  
The subtle tyrant, for his cruel ends,  
Conceiving that our piety might ensnare us,  
Proposed my father's head to be redeem'd,  
If two of us would yield ourselves his slaves.  
We, upon any terms, resolved to save him,  
Though with the loss of life which he gave  
to us,

With an undaunted constancy drew lots  
(For each of us contended to be one)  
Who should preserve our father; I was  
exempted,

But to my more affliction. My brothers  
Deliver'd up, the perjured homicide,  
Laughing in scorn, and by his hoary locks  
Pulling my wretched father on his knees,  
Said, *Thus receive the father you have ran-  
somed!*

And instantly struck off his head.

*Lor.* Most barbarous!

*Farn.* I never saw this man.

*Lor.* One murmur more,  
I'll have thy tongue pull'd out.—Proceed.

*Uber.* Conceive, sir,  
How thunderstruck we stood, being made  
spectators  
Of such an unexpected tragedy:  
Yet this was a beginning, not an end

To his intended cruelty ; for, pursuing  
Such a revenge as no Hyrcanian tigress,  
Robb'd of her whelps, durst aim at, in a  
moment,

Treading upon my father's trunk, he cut off  
My pious brothers' heads, and threw them  
at me.

Oh, what a spectacle was this ! what moun-  
tain

Of sorrow overwhelm'd me ! my poor heart-  
strings,

As tender'd by his tyranny, crack'd ; my knees  
Beating 'gainst one another, groans and  
tears

Blended together follow'd ; not one passion  
Calamity ever yet express'd, forgotten.—

Now, mighty sir, (bathing your feet with  
tears.)

Your suppliant's suit is, that he may have  
leave,

With any cruelty revenge can fancy,  
To sacrifice this monster, to appease

My father's ghost, and brothers'.

*Lor.* Thou hast obtain'd it :

Choose any torture, let the memory  
Of what thy father and thy brothers suffer'd,

Make thee ingenious in it ; such a one,  
As Phalaris would wish to be call'd his.

Martino, guarded with your soldiers, see  
The execution done ; but bring his head,

On forfeiture of your own, to us : our presence  
Long since was elsewhere look'd for.

[*Exit, with Captains and Attendants.*]

*Mart.* Soldier, to work ;

Take any way thou wilt for thy revenge,  
Provided that he die : his body's thine,

But I must have his head.

*Uber.* I have already

Concluded of the manner. O just heaven,  
The instrument I wish'd for offer'd me !

*Mart.* Why art thou rapt thus ?

*Uber.* In this soldier's hand

I see the murderer's own sword, I know it ;  
Yes, this is it by which my father and

My brothers were beheaded : noble captain,  
Command it to my hand.—[*Takes Farneze's*

*sword from the Soldier.*—Stand forth  
and tremble !

This weapon, of late drunk with innocent  
blood,

Shall now carouse thine own : pray, if thou  
canst,

For, though the world shall not redeem thy  
body,

I would not kill thy soul.

*Farn.* Canst thou believe

There is a heaven, or hell, or soul? thou hast  
none,

In death to rob me of my fame, my honour,

With such a forged lie. Tell me, thou hang-  
man,

Where did I ever see thy face? or when  
Murder'd thy sire or brothers? look on me,  
And make it good : thou dar'st not.

*Uber.* Yes, I will [*He unbinds his arms.*  
In one short whisper ; and that told, thou  
art dead.

I am Uberti : take thy sword, fight bravely ;  
We'll live or die together.

*Mart.* We are betray'd.

[*Martino is struck down, the Soldiers*  
*run off.*]

*Farn.* And have I leave once more, brave  
prince, to ease

My head on thy true bosom?

*Uber.* I glory more

To be thy friend, than in the name of prince,  
Or any higher title.

*Farn.* My preserver !

*Uber.* The life you gave to me I but return ;  
And pardon, dearest friend, the bitter lan-  
guage

Necessity made me use.

*Farn.* O, sir, I am

Outdone in all ; but comforted, that none  
But you can wear the laurel.

*Uber.* Here's no place

Or time to argue this ; let us fly hence.

*Farn.* I follow.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Mart.* [*rises.*] A thousand Furies keep you  
company !

I was at the gate of [hell,] but now I feel  
My wound's not mortal ; I was but astonish'd ;

And, coming to myself, I find I am  
Reserv'd for the gallows : there's no looking

on

The enraged duke, excuses will not serve ;  
I must do something that may get my pardon ;

If not, I know the worst, a halter ends all !  
[*Exit.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—The Dutchy of Mantua.—*A*  
*part of the Country near Octavio's Cottage.*

*Enter Octavio, a book in his hand.*

*Oct.* 'Tis true, by proof I find it, human  
reason

Views with such dim eyes what is good or ill,  
That if the great Disposer of our being

Should offer to our choice all worldly bless-  
ings,

We know not what to take. When I was  
young,

Ambition of court-preferment fired me :  
And, as there were no happiness beyond it,

I labour'd for't, and got it ; no man stood



In greater favour with his prince ; I had  
Honours and offices, wealth flow'd in to me,  
And, for my service both in peace and war,  
The general voice gave out I did deserve them.  
But, O vain confidence in subordinate great-  
ness!

When I was most secure it was not in  
The power of fortune to remove me from  
The flat I firmly stood on, in a moment  
My virtues were made crimes, and popular  
favour,

(To new-raised men still fatal) bred suspicion  
That I was dangerous : which no sooner  
enter'd

Gonzaga's breast, but straight my ruin  
follow'd.

My offices were ta'en from me, my state  
seized on :

And, had I not prevented it by flight,  
The jealousy of the duke had been removed  
With the forfeiture of my head.

*Hort.* [*within.*] Or shew compassion,  
Or I will force it.

*Oct.* Ha ! is not poverty safe ?  
I thought proud war, that aim'd at kingdoms'  
ruins,

The sack of palaces and cities, scorn'd  
To look on a poor cottage.

*Enter Hortensio with Ascanio in his arms,  
Gothrio following.*

*Goth.* What would you have ?  
The devil sleeps in my pocket ; I have no  
cross

To drive him from it. Be you or thief or  
soldier,

Or such a beggar as will not be denied,  
My scrip, my tar-box, hook, and coat, will  
prove

But a thin purchase ; if you turn my inside  
outwards,  
You'll find it true.

*Hort.* Not any food ? [*Searches his scrip.*  
*Goth.* Alas ! sir,

I am no glutton, but an under-shepherd ;  
The very picture of famine ; judge by my  
cheeks else :

I have my pittance by ounces, and starve  
myself,

When I pay a pensioner, an ancient mouse,  
I have, a crumb a meal.

*Hort.* No drop left ? [*Takes his bottle.*  
Drunkard ! hast thou swill'd up all ?

*Goth.* How ! drunkard, sir ?

I am a poor man, you mistake me, sir,  
Drunkard's a title for the rich, my betters ;  
A calling in repute : some sell their lands for't,  
And roar, *Wine's better than money.* Our  
poor beverages

Of buttermilk or whey allayed with water,  
Ne'er raise our thoughts so high. Drunk, I  
had never

The credit to be so yet.

*Hort.* Ascanio,  
Look up, dear youth ; Ascanio, did thy  
sweetness

Command the greedy enemy to forbear  
To prey upon it, and I thank my fortune  
For suffering me to live, that in some part  
I might return thy courtesies, and now,  
To heighten my afflictions, must I be  
Enforced, no pitying angel near to help us,  
Heaven deaf to my complaints too, to behold  
thee

Die in my arms for hunger ? no means left  
To lengthen life a little ! I will open  
A vein, and pour my blood, not yet corrupted  
With any sinful act, but pure as he is,  
Into his famish'd mouth.

*Oct.* [*comes forward.*] Young man, forbear  
Thy savage pity ; I have better means  
To call back flying life.

[*Pours a cordial into the mouth of  
Ascanio.*

*Goth.* You may believe him ;  
It is his sucking-bottle, and confirms,  
*An old man's twice a child* ; his nurse's milk  
Was ne'er so chargeable, should you put in  
too

For soap and candles : though he sell his  
flock for't,

The baby must have this dug : he swears  
'tis ill

For my complexion ; but wondrous comfort-  
able

For an old man, that would never die.

*Oct.* Hope well, sir ;  
A temperate heat begins to thaw his numb-  
ness ;

The blood too by degrees takes fresh posses-  
sion

On his pale cheek ; his pulse beats high :  
stand off,

Give him more air, he stirs.

[*Gothrio steals the bottle.*  
*Goth.* And have I got thee,

Thou bottle of immortality ! [*Aside.*  
*Asc.* Where am I ?

What cruel hand bath forced back wretched  
life ?

Is rest in death denied me ?

*Goth.* O sweet liquor ! [*Drinks.*  
Were here enough to make me drunk, I might

Write myself gentleman, and never buy  
A coat of the heralds. [*Aside.*

*Oct.* How now, slave !

*Goth.* I was fainting,  
A clownlike qualm seized on me ; but I am

Recover'd, thanks to your bottle, and begin  
To feel new stirrings, gallant thoughts : one  
draught more

Will make me a perfect signior.

*Oct.* A tough cudgel

Will take this gentle itch off ; home to my  
cottage,

See all things handsome.

*Goth.* Good sir, let me have

The bottle along to smell to : O rare per-  
fume ! *[Exit.]*

*Hort.* Speak once more, dear Ascanio.—

How he eyes you,

Then turns away his face ! look up, sweet  
youth ;

The object cannot hurt you ; this good man,  
Next heaven, is your pre-er-ver.

*Asc.* Would I had pe-ish'd

Without relief, rather than live to break  
His good old heart with sorrow. O my  
shame !

My shame, my never-dying shame !

*Oct.* I have been

Acquainted with this voice, and know the  
face too :—

'Tis she, 'tis too apparent ; O my daughter !  
I mourn'd long for thy loss, but thus to find  
thee,

Is more to be lamented.

*Hort.* How ! your daughter ?

*Oct.* My only child ; I murmur'd against  
heaven

Because I had no more, but now I find

This one too many.—Is Alonzo glutt'd

*[Maria weeps.]*

With thy embraces ?

*Hort.* At his name, a shower

Of tears falls from her eyes ; she faints again.

Grave sir, o'er-rule your passion, and defer

The story of her fortune. On my life

She is a worthy one ; her innocence

Might be abused, but mischief's self wants  
power

To make her guilty. Shew yourself a father

In her recovery ; then as a judge,

When she hath strength to speak in her own  
cause,

You may determine of her.

*Oct.* I much thank you

For your wise counsel : you direct me, sir,

As one indebted more to years, and I,

As a pupil, will obey you : not far hence

I have a homely dwelling ; if you please there

To make some short repose, your entertain-  
ment,

Though coarse, shall relish of a gratitude,

And that's all I can pay you. Look up, girl,

Thou art in thy father's arms.

*Hort.* She's weak and faint still—

O spare your age ! I am young and strong,  
and this way

To serve her is a pleasure, not a burthen :

*[Takes her in his arms.]*

Pray you, lead the way.

*Oct.* The saints reward your goodness !

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II.—*The same. Another part of  
the Country.*

*Enter Manfroy, and Matilda disguised.*

*Matil.* No hope of safety left ?

*Man.* We are descried.

*Matil.* I thought that, cover'd in this poor  
disguise,

I might have pass'd unknown.

*Man.* A diamond,

Though set in horn, is still a diamond,

And sparkles as in purest gold. We are fol-  
low'd :

Out of the troops that scour'd the plains, I  
saw

Two gallant horsemen break forth, (who, by  
their

Brave furniture and habiliments for the war,  
Seem'd to command the rest,) spurring hard

towards us.

See with what winged speed they climb the  
hill,

Like falcons on the stretch to seize the prey !

Now they dismount, and on their hands and  
knees

O'ercome the deep ascent that guards us from  
them.

Your beauty hath betray'd you ; for it can  
No more be night when bright Apollo shines  
In our meridian, than that be conceal'd.

*Matil.* It is my curse, not blessing ; fatal to  
My country, father, and myself. Why did you  
Forsake the city ?

*Man.* 'Twas the duke's command :

No time to argue that ; we must descend.

If undiscover'd your soft feet, unused

To such rough travel, can but carry you

Half a league hence, I know a cave which will  
Yield us protection.

*Matil.* I wish I could lend you

Part of my speed ; for me, I can outstrip.

Daphne or Atalanta.

*Man.* Some good angel

Defend us, and strike blind our hot pursuers !

*[Exeunt.]*

*Enter Alonzo and Pisano.*

*Alon.* She cannot be far off : how  
gloriously

She shew'd to us in the valley !

*Pisan.* In my thought,

Like to a blazing comet.

*Alon.* Brighter far :  
Her beams of beauty made the hill all fire ;  
From whence removed, 'tis cover'd with  
thick clouds.

But we lose time ; I'll take that way.

*Pisan.* I, this. [*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE III.—*The same. A Wood.*

*Enter Hortensio.*

*Hort.* 'Tis a degree of comfort in my  
sorrow,

I have done one good work in reconciling  
Maria, long hid in Ascanio's habit,  
To griev'd Octavio. What a sympathy  
I found in their affections ! she with tears  
Making a free confession of her weakness,  
In yielding up her honour to Alonzo,  
Upon his vows to marry her ; Octavio,  
Prepared to credit her excuses, nay,  
To extenuate her guilt ; she the delinquent,  
And judge, as 'twere, agreeing.—But to me,  
The most forlorn of men, no beam of comfort  
Deigns to appear ; nor can I, in my fancy,  
Fashion a means to get it : to my country  
I am lost for ever, and 'twere impudence  
To think of a return ; yet this I could  
Endure with patience, but to be divorced  
From all my joy on earth, the happiness  
To look upon the excellence of nature,  
That is perfection in herself, and needs not  
Addition or epithet, rare Matilda,  
Would make a saint blaspheme. Here,  
Galeazzo,

In this obscure abode, 'tis fit thou shouldst  
Consume thy youth, and grow old in la-  
menting

Thy star-cross'd fortune, in this shepherd's  
habit ;

This hook thy best defence, since thou  
couldst use,

When thou didst fight in such a princess'  
cause,

Thy sword no better. [*Lies down.*]

*Enter Alonzo and Pisano with Matilda.*

*Matil.* Are you men, or monsters ?  
Whither will you drag me ? can the open ear  
Of heaven be deaf, when an unspotted maid  
Cries out for succour !

*Pisan.* 'Tis in vain ; cast lots  
Who shall enjoy her first.

*Alon.* Flames rage within me,  
And, such a spring of nectar near to quench  
them !

My appetites shall be cloy'd first : here I stand,  
Thy friend, or enemy ; let me have prece-  
dence,

I write a friend's name in my heart ; deny it,  
As an enemy I defy thee.

*Pisan.* Friend or foe  
In this alike I value, I disdain  
To yield priority ; draw thy sword.

*Alon.* To sheath it  
In thy ambitious heart.

*Matil.* O curb this fury,  
And hear a wretched maid first speak.

*Hort.* I am marble.

*Matil.* Where shall I seek out words, or  
how restrain

My enemies rage, or lovers' ? oh, the latter  
Is far more odious : did not your lust  
Provoke you, for that is its proper name,  
My chastity were safe ; and yet I tremble  
more  
To think what dire effects lust may bring  
forth,

Than what, as enemies, you can inflict,  
And less I fear it. Be friends to yourselves,  
And enemies to me ; better I fall  
A sacrifice to your atonement, than  
Or one or both should perish. I am the cause  
Of your division ; remove it, lords,  
And concord will spring up : poison this face  
That hath bewitch'd you, this grove cannot  
want

Aspics or toads ; creatures, though justly  
call'd,

For their deformity, the scorn of nature,  
More happy than myself with this false beauty  
(The seed and fruit of mischief) you admire  
so.

I thus embrace your knees, and yours, a  
suppliant,

If tigers did not nurse you, or you suck  
The milk of a fierce lioness, shew compassion  
Unto yourselves in being reconciled,  
And pity to poor me, my honour safe,  
In taking loath'd life from me.

*Pisan.* What shall we do ?

Or end our difference in killing her,  
Or fight it out ?

*Alon.* To the last gasp. I feel  
The moist tears on my cheeks, and blush to  
find

A virgin's plaints can move so.

*Pisan.* To prevent  
Her flight while we contend, let's bind her  
fast

To this cypress-tree.

*Alon.* Agreed.

*Matil.* It does presage  
My funeral rites. [*They bind Matilda.*]

*Hort.* I shall turn atheist  
If heaven see and suffer this : why did I  
Abandon my good sword ? with unarm'd  
hands

I cannot rescue her. Some angel pluck me  
From the apostacy I am falling to,

And by a miracle lend me a weapon  
To underprop falling honour.

*Pisan.* She is fast :  
Resume your arms.

*Alon.* Honour, revenge, the maid too,  
Lie at the stake.

*Pisan.* Which thus I draw.  
[*They fight, Pisano falls.*]

*Alon.* All's mine,  
But bought with some blood of mine own.  
*Pisano,*

Thou wert a noble enemy, wear that laurel  
In death to comfort thee: for the reward,  
'Tis mine now without rival.

[*Hortensio snatches up Pisano's sword.*]

*Hort.* Thou art deceived ;  
Men will grow up like to the dragon's teeth  
From Cadmus' helm, sown in the field of  
Mars,

To guard pure chastity from lust and rape.  
Libidinous monster, satyr, faun, or what  
Does better speak thee, slave to appetite,  
And sensual baseness ; if thy profane hand  
But touch this virgin temple, thou art dead.

*Matil.* I see the aid of heaven, though  
slow, is sure.

*Alon.* A rustic swain dare to retard my  
pleasure !

*Hort.* No swain, Alonzo, but her knight  
and servant

To whom the world should owe and pay  
obedience ;

One that thou hast encounter'd, and shrunk  
under

His arm ; that spared thy life in the late battle,  
At the intercession of the princess' page.  
Look on me better.

*Matil.* 'Tis my virtuous lover !

Under his guard 'twere sin to doubt my safety.

*Alon.* I know thee, and with courage will  
redeem

What fortune then took from me.

*Hort.* Rather keep

[*They fight, Alonzo falls.*]

Thy compeer company in death.—Lie by him,  
A prey for crows and vultures : these fair  
arms, [*He unbinds Matilda.*]

Unfit for bonds, should have been chains to  
make

A bridegroom happy, though a prince, and  
proud

Of such captivity : whatsoever you are,  
I glory in the service I have done you ;  
But I entreat you pay your vows and prayers,  
For preservation of your life and honour,  
To the most virtuous princess, chaste Matilda.  
I am her creature, and what good I do  
You truly may call hers ; what's ill, mine  
own.

*Matil.* You never did do ill, my virtuous  
servant ;

Nor is it in the power of poor Matilda,  
To cancel such an obligation as,  
With humble willingness, she must sub-  
scribe to.

*Hort.* The princess ? ha !

*Matil.* Give me a fitter name,  
Your manumised bondswoman, but even now  
In the possession of lust, from which  
Your more than brave,—heroic valour  
bought me :

And can I then, for freedom unexpected,  
But kneel to you, my patron ?

*Hort.* Kneel to me !

For heaven's sake rise ; I kiss the ground  
you tread on,

My eyes fix'd on the earth ; for I confess  
I am a thing not worthy to look on you,  
Till you have sign'd my pardon.

*Matil.* Do you interpret

The much good you have done me, an  
offence ?

*Hort.* The not performing your injunc-  
tions to me,

Is more than capital : your allowance of  
My love and service to you, with admission  
To each place you made paradise with your  
presence,

Should have enabled me to bring home  
conquest ;

Then, as a sacrifice, to offer it  
At the altar of your favour : had my love  
Answer'd your bounty, or my hopes, an army  
Had been as dust before me ; whereas I,  
Like a coward, turn'd my back, and durst  
not stand

The fury of the enemy.

*Matil.* Had you done

Nothing in the battle, this last act deserves  
more

Than I, the duke my father joining with me,  
Can ever recompense. But take your plea-  
sure ;

Suppose you have offended in not grasping  
Your boundless hopes, I thus seal on your lips  
A full remission.

*Hort.* Let mine touch your foot,

Your hand's too high a favour.

*Matil.* Will you force me

To ravish a kiss from you ? [*Kisses him.*]

*Hort.* I am entranced.

*Matil.* So much desert and bashfulness  
should not march

In the same file. Take comfort ; when you  
have brought me

To some place of security, you shall find  
You have a seat here, in a heart that hath  
Already studied and vow'd to be thankful.

*Hort.* Heaven make me so! oh, I am  
overwhelm'd

With an excess of joy! Be not too prodigal,  
Divinest lady, of your grace and bounties,  
At once; if you are pleased, I shall enjoy  
them,

Not taste them, and expire.

*Matil.* I'll be more sparing. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter Octavio, Gothrio, and Maria.*

*Oct.* What noise of clashing swords, like  
armour fashion'd

Upon an anvil, pierced mine ears; the echo  
Redoubling the loud sound through all the  
vallisies?

This way the wind assures me that it came.

*Goth.* Then with your pardon, I'll take this.

*Oct.* Why, sirrah?

*Goth.* Because, sir, I will trust my heels  
before

All winds that blow in the sky: we are  
wiser far

Than our grandsires were, and in this I'll  
prove it;

They said, *Haste to the beginning of a feast,*  
There I am with them; *but to the end of a*  
*fray—*

That is apocryphal; 'tis more canonical,

Not to come there at all; after a storm

There are still some drops behind.

*Mar.* Pure fear hath made

The fool a philosopher.

*Oct.* See, Maria, see!

I did not err; here lie two brave men wel-  
tering

In their own gore.

*Mar.* A pitiful object.

*Goth.* I am in a swoon to look on't.

*Oct.* They are stiff already.

*Goth.* But are you sure they are dead?

*Oct.* Too sure, I fear.

*Goth.* But are they stark dead?

*Oct.* Leave prating.

*Goth.* Then I am valiant, and dare come  
nearer to them.

This fellow without a sword shall be my  
patient. [*Goes to Pisano.*]

*Oct.* Whate'er they are, humanity com-  
mands us

To do our best endeavour. Run, Maria,  
To the neighbour spring for water; you  
will find there

A wooden dish, the beggar's plate, to bring  
it. [*Exit Maria.*]

Why dost not, dull drone, bend his body,  
and feel

If any life remain?

*Goth.* By your leave, he shall die first,  
And then I'll be his surgeon.

*Oct.* Tear ope his doublet,  
And prove if his wounds be mortal.

*Goth.* Fear not me, sir:

Here's a large wound.—[*Feels his pocket.*—]  
How it is swoln and imposthomed!

This must be cunningly drawn out; should  
it break,

'Twould strangle him. What a deal of foul  
matter's here!

This hath been long a gathering. Here's a  
gash too

On the rim of his belly,—[*Feels his side*  
*pocket.*]—it may have matter in it.

He was a choleric man, sure; what comes  
from him [*Takes out his money.*]

Is yellow as gold:—how! troubled with the  
stone too?

[*Seeing a diamond ring on his finger.*]

I'll cut you for this.

*Pisan.* Oh, oh!

[*Starts up.*]

*Goth.* He roars before I touch him.

*Pisan.* Robb'd of my life?

*Goth.* No, sir, nor of your money,  
Nor jewel; I keep them for you:—if I had been  
A perfect mountebank, he had not lived  
To call for his fees again.

*Oct.* Give me leave—there's hope  
Of his recovery.

[*Quits Pisano and goes to Alonzo.*]

*Goth.* I had rather bury him quick,  
Than part with my purchase; let his ghost  
walk, I care not.

*Re-enter Maria with a dish of water.*

*Oct.* Well done, Maria; lend thy helping  
hand.

He hath a deeper wound in his head, wash off  
The clotted blood: he comes to himself.

*Alon.* My lust!

The fruit that grows upon the tree of lust!  
With horror now I taste it.

*Oct.* Do you not know him?

*Mar.* Too soon. Alonzo! oh me! though  
disloyal,

Still dear to thy Maria.

*Goth.* So they know not

My patient, all's cocksure; I do not like  
The Romanish restitution. [*Aside.*]

*Oct.* Rise, and leave him.

Applaud heaven's justice.

*Mar.* 'Twill become me better,  
To implore its saving mercy.

*Oct.* Hast thou no gall?

No feeling of thy wrongs?

*Mar.* Turtles have none;

Nor can there be such poison in her breast  
That truly loves, and lawfully.

*Oct.* True, if that love

Be placed on a worthy subject. What he is,

In thy disgrace is published ; heaven hath  
mark'd him

For punishment, and 'twere rebellious mad-  
ness

In thee to attempt to alter it : revenge,  
A sovereign balm for injuries, is more proper  
To thy robb'd honour. Join with me, and  
thou

Shalt be thyself the goddess of revenge,  
This wretch, the vassal of thy wrath : I'll  
make him,

While yet he lives, partake those torments  
which,

For perjured lovers, are prepared in hell,  
Before his curs'd ghost enter it. This oil,  
Extracted and sublimed from all the simples  
The earth, when swoln with venom, e'er  
brought forth,

Pour'd in his wounds, shall force such  
anguish as

The Furies whips but imitate ; and when  
Extremity of pain shall hasten death,  
Here is another that shall keep in life,  
And make him feel a perpetuity  
Of lingering tortures.

*Goth.* Knock them both o' th' head, I say,  
An it be but for their skins ; they are em-  
broider'd,

And will sell well in the market.

*Mar.* Ill-look'd devil,  
Tie up thy bloody tongue.—O sir ! I was  
slow

In beating down those propositions which  
You urge for my revenge ; my reasons being  
So many, and so forcible, that make  
Against yours, that until I had collected  
My scatter'd powers, I waver'd in my choice  
Which I should first deliver. Fate hath  
brought

My enemy (I can faintly call him so)  
Prostrate before my feet ; shall I abuse  
The bounty of my fate, by trampling on him ?  
He alone ruin'd me, nor can any hand  
But his rebuild my late demolish'd honour.

If you deny me means of reparation,  
To satisfy your spleen, you are more cruel  
Than ever yet Alonzo was ; you stamp  
The name of strumpet on my forehead, which  
Heaven's mercy would take off ; you fan the  
fire,

E'en ready to go out ; forgetting that  
'Tis truly noble, having power to punish,  
Nay, kinglike, to forbear it. I would pur-  
chase

My husband by such benefits as should make  
him

Confess himself my equal, and disclaim  
Superiority.

*Oct.* My blessing on thee !

What I urg'd was a trial ; and my grant  
To thy desires shall now appear, if art  
Or long experience can do him service.  
Nor shall my charity to this be wanting,  
Howe'er unknown : help me, Maria : you, sir,  
Do your best to raise him.—So !

*Goth.* He's wondrous heavy ;  
But the porter's paid, there's the comfort.

*Oct.* 'Tis but a trance,  
And 'twill forsake both.

*Mar.* If he live, I fear not  
He will redeem all, and in thankfulness  
Confirm he owes you for a second life,  
And pay the debt, in making me his wife.

[*Exeunt Octavio and Maria with Alonzo,  
and Gothrio with Pisano.*]

#### ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Lorenzo's *Camp under the  
Walls of Mantua.*

*Enter Lorenzo and Captains.*

*Lor.* Mantua is ours ; place a strong  
garrison in it,

To keep it so ; and as a due reward  
To your brave service, be our governour in it.  
1 *Capt.* I humbly thank your excellence.

[*Exit.*]

*Lor.* Gonzaga  
Is yet out of our gripe ; but his strong fort,  
St. Leo, which he holds impregnable  
By the aids of art, as nature, shall not long  
Retard our absolute conquest. The escape  
Of fair Matilda, my supposed mistress,  
(For whose desired possession 'twas given out  
I made this war,) I value not ; alas !  
Cupid's too feeble-eyed to hit my heart,  
Or could he see, his arrows are too blunt  
To pierce it ; his imagined torch is quench'd  
With a more glorious fire of my ambition  
To enlarge my empire : soft and silken  
amours,

With carpet courtship, which weak princes  
style

The happy issue of a flourishing peace,  
My toughness scorns. Were there an abstract  
made

Of all the eminent and canonized beauties  
By truth recorded, or by poets feign'd,  
I could unmoved behold it ; as a picture,  
Commend the workmanship, and think no  
more on't ;

I have more noble ends. Have you not  
heard yet

Of Alonzo, or Pisano ?

2 *Capt.* My lord, of neither.

*Lor.* Two turbulent spirits unfit for dis-  
cipline,

Much less command in war ; if they were lost,  
I should not pine with mourning.

*Enter Martino and Soldiers with Matilda  
and Hortensio.*

*Mart.* Bring them forward :  
This will make my peace, though I had kill'd  
his father ;

Besides the reward that follows.

*Lor.* Ha, Martino !

Where is Farneze's head ? dost thou stare !  
and where

The soldier that desired the torture of him ?

*Mart.* An't please your excellence——

*Lor.* It doth not please us ;

Are our commands obey'd ?

*Mart.* Farneze's head, sir,

Is a thing not worth your thought, the sol-  
dier's less, sir :

I have brought your highness such a head !  
a head

So well set on too ! a fine head——

*Lor.* Take that, [*Strikes him.*]

For thy impertinence : what head, you rascal ?

*Mart.* My lord, if they that bring such  
presents to you

Are thus rewarded, there are few will strive  
To be near your grace's pleasures : but I know  
You will repent your choler. Here's the head :  
And now I draw the curtain, it hath a face  
too,

And such a face——

*Lor.* Ha !

*Mart.* View her all o'er, my lord,  
My company on't, she's sound of wind and  
limb,

And will do her labour tightly, a *bona roba* :  
And for her face, as I said, there are five  
hundred

City-dubb'd madams in the dukedom, that  
would part with

Their jointures to have such another :—hold  
up your head, maid.

*Lor.* Of what age is the day ?

*Mart.* Sir, since sunrising

About two hours.

*Lor.* Thou liest ; the sun of beauty,

In modest blushes on her cheeks, but now  
Appear'd to me, and in her tears breaks forth,  
As through a shower in April ; every drop  
An orient pearl, which, as it falls, congeal'd,  
Were ear-rings for the Catholic king, [to be]  
Worn on his birthday.

*Mart.* Here's a sudden change !

*Lor.* Incensed Cupid, whom even now I  
scorn'd,

Hath ta'en his stand, and by reflection shines  
(As if he had two bodies, or indeed

A brother-twin whom sight cannot dis-  
tinguish)

In her fair eyes :—see, how they head their  
arrows

With her bright beams ! now frown, as if my  
heart,

Rebellious to their edicts, were unworthy,  
Should I rip up my bosom, to receive  
A wound from such divine artillery !

*Mart.* I am made for ever. [*Aside.*]

*Matil.* We are lost, dear servant.

*Hort.* Virtue's but a word ;  
Fortune rules all.

*Matil.* We are her tennis-balls.

*Lor.* Allow her fair, her symmetry and  
features

So well proportion'd, as the heavenly object  
With admiration would strike Ovid dumb,  
Nay, force him to forget his faculty

In verse, and celebrate her praise in prose.

What's this to me ? I that have pass'd my  
youth

Unscorch'd with wanton fires, my sole delight  
In glittering arms, my conquering sword my  
mistress,

Neighing of barbed horse, the cries and  
groans

Of vanquish'd foes suing for life, my music :  
And shall I, in the autumn of my age,

Now, when I wear the livery of time

Upon my head and beard, suffer myself

To be transform'd, and like a puling lover,

With arms thus folded up, echo *Ah me's* !

And write myself a bondman to my vassal ?

It must not, nay, it shall not be : remove

The object, and the effect dies. Nearer,

*Martino.*

*Mart.* I shall have a regiment : colonel  
*Martino,*

I cannot go less.

*Lor.* What thing is this thou hast brought  
me ?

*Mart.* What thing ? heaven bless me ! are  
you a Florentine,

Nay, the great duke of Florentines, and  
having had her

So long in your power, do you now ask what  
she is ?

Take her aside and learn : I have brought  
you that

I look to be dearly paid for.

*Lor.* I am a soldier,

And use of women will, *Martino,* rob

My nerves of strength.

*Mart.* All armour and no smock ?

Abominable ! a little of the one with the  
other

Is excellent : I ne'er knew general yet,  
Nor prince that did deserve to be a worthy,

But he desired to have his swcat wash'd off  
By a juicy bedfellow.

*Lor.* But say she be unwilling  
To do that office?

*Mart.* Wrestle with her, I will wager  
Ten to one on your grace's side.

*Lor.* Slave, hast thou brought me  
Temptation in a beauty not to be  
With prayers resisted; and, in place of  
counsel

To master my affections, and to guard  
My honour, now besieged by lust, with the  
arms

Of sober temperance, mark me out a way  
To be a ravisher? Would thou hadst shewn  
me

Some monster, though in a more ugly form  
Than Nile or Afric ever bred! The basilisk,  
Whose envious eye yet never brook'd a neigh-  
bour,

Kills but the body; her more potent eye  
Buries alive mine honour: Shall I yield thus?  
And all brave thoughts of victory and  
triumphs,

The spoils of nations, the loud applauses  
Of happy subjects, made so by my conquests;  
And, what's the crown of all, a glorious name  
Insculp'd on pyramids to posterity,  
Be drench'd in Lethe, and no object take me  
But a weak woman, rich in colours only,  
Too delicate a touch, and some rare features  
Which age or sudden sickness will take from  
her!

And where's then the reward of all my ser-  
vice,

Love-soothing passions, nay, idolatry  
I must pay to her? Hence, and with thee  
take

This second but more dangerous Pandora,  
Whose fatal box, if open'd, will pour on me  
All mischiefs that mankind is subject to.

To the desarts with this Circe, this Calypso,  
This fair enchantress! let her spells and  
charms

Work upon beasts and thee, than whom wise  
nature

Ne'er made a viler creature.

*Matil.* Happy exile!

*Hort.* Some spark of hope remains yet.

*Mart.* Come, you are mine now.

I will remove her where your highness shall  
not

Or see or hear more of her: what a sum  
Will she yield for the Turk's seraglio!

*Lor.* Stay, I feel

A sudden alteration.

*Mart.* Here are fine whimsies.

*Lor.* Why should I part with her? can any  
foulness

Inhabit such a clean and gorgeous palace?  
The fish, the fowl, the beasts, may safer  
leave

The elements they were nourish'd in, and live,  
Than I endure her absence; yet her presence  
Is a torment to me: why do I call it so?

My sire enjoy'd a woman, I had not been  
else;

He was a complete prince, and shall I blush  
To follow his example? Oh! but my choice,  
Though she gave suffrage to it, is beneath  
me:

But even now, in my proud thoughts, I  
scorn'd

A princess, fair Matilda; and is't decreed  
For punishment, I straight must dote on one,  
What, or from whence, I know not? Grant  
she be

Obscure, without a coat or family,  
Those I can give: and yet, if she were noble,  
My fondness were more pardonable.—Mar-  
tino,

Dost thou know thy prisoner?

*Mart.* Do I know myself?

I kept that for the l'envoy; 'tis the daughter  
Of your enemy, duke Gonzaga.

*Lor.* Fair Matilda!

I now call to my memory her picture,  
And find this is the substance; but her painter  
Did her much wrong, I see it.

*Mart.* I am sure

I tugg'd hard for her, here are wounds can-  
witness,

Before I could call her mine.

*Lor.* No matter how:

Make thine own ransome, I will pay it for her.

*Mart.* I knew 'twould come at last.

*Matil.* We are lost again.

*Hort.* Variety of afflictions!

*Lor.* That his knee,

That never yet bow'd to mortality, [*Kneels.*  
Kisses the earth happy to bear your weight,  
I know, begets your wonder; hear the reason,  
And cast it off:—your beauty does com-  
mand it.

Till now, I never saw you; fame hath been  
Too sparing in report of your perfections,

Which now with admiration I gaze on.  
Be not afraid, fair virgin; had you been

Employ'd to mediate your father's cause,  
My drum had been unbraced, my trumpet  
hung up;

Nor had the terror of the war e'er frighted  
His peaceful confines; your demands had  
been,

As soon as spoke, agreed to: but you'll  
answer,

And may with reason, words make no satis-  
faction



For what's in fact committed. Yet, take comfort,

Something my pious love commands me do,  
Which may call down your pardon.

*Matil.* This expression  
Of reverence to your person better suits  
[*Raises Lorenzo, and kneels.*  
With my low fortune. That you deign to  
love me,

My weakness would persuade me to believe,  
Though conscious of mine own unworthiness :  
You being as the liberal eye of heaven,  
Which may shine where it pleases, let your  
beams

Of favour warm and comfort, not consume  
me !

For, should your love grow to excess, I dare  
not

Deliver what I fear.

*Lor.* Dry your fair eyes ;  
I apprehend your doubts, and could be angry,  
If humble love could warrant it, you should  
Nourish such base thoughts of me. Heaven  
bear witness,

And, if I break my vow, dart thunder at me,  
You are, and shall be, in my tent as free  
From fear of violence, as a cloister'd nun  
Kneeling before the altar. What I purpose  
Is yet an embryo ; but, grown into form,  
I'll give you power to be the sweet disposer  
Of blessings unexpected ; that your father,  
Your country, people, children yet unborn  
too,

In holy hymns, on festivals, shall sing  
The triumph of your beauty. On your hand  
Once more I swear it :—O imperious Love,  
Look down, and, as I truly do repent,  
Prosper the good ends of thy penitent !

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*The Dutchy. A Room in  
Octavio's Cottage.*

*Enter Octavio, disguised as a Priest, and  
Maria.*

*Oct.* You must not be too sudden, my  
Maria,

In being known : I am, in this friar's habit,  
As yet conceal'd. Though his recovery  
Be almost certain, I must work him to  
Repentance by degrees ; when I would have  
you

Appear in your true shape of sorrow, to  
Move his compassion, I will stamp thus,——  
then,

You know to act your part.

*Mar.* I shall be careful. [*Exit.*

*Oct.* If I can cure the ulcers of his mind,  
As I despair not of his body's wounds,  
Felicity crowns my labour.—*Gothrio!*

*Enter Gothrio.*

*Goth.* Here, sir.

*Oct.* Desire my patients to leave their  
chamber,

And take fresh air here : how have they slept ?

*Goth.* Very well, sir.

I would we were so rid of them.

*Oct.* Why ?

*Goth.* I fear one hath

The art of memory, and will remember  
His gold and jewels : could you not minister  
A potion of forgetfulness ? What would  
gallants

That are in debt give me for such a receipt,  
To pour in their creditors' drink ?

*Oct.* You shall restore all,  
Believe 't, you shall :—will you please to  
walk ?

*Goth.* Will you please to put off  
Your holy habit, and spiced conscience ? one,  
I think, infects the other. [*Exit.*

*Oct.* I have observed  
Punishment in Alonzo ; he speaks little,  
But full of retired thoughts : the other is  
Jocund and merry ; no doubt, because he  
hath

The less account to make here.

*Enter Alonzo.*

*Alon.* Reverend sir,

I come to wait your pleasure ; but, my  
friend,

Your creature I should say, being so myself,  
Willing to take further repose, entreats  
Your patience a few minutes.

*Oct.* At his pleasure ;

Pray you sit down ; you are faint still.

*Alon.* Growing to strength,

I thank your goodness : but my mind is  
troubled,

Very much troubled, sir, and I desire,  
Your pious habit giving me assurance  
Of your skill and power that way, that you  
would please

To be my mind's physician.

*Oct.* Sir, to that

My order binds me ; if you please to unload  
The burthen of your conscience, I will  
minister

Such heavenly cordials as I can, and set you  
In a path that leads to comfort.

*Alon.* I will open

My bosom's secrets to you. That I am  
A man of blood, being brought up in the wars,  
And cruel executions, my profession

Admits not to be question'd ; but in that,  
Being a subject, and bound to obey

Whate'er my prince commanded, I have left

Some shadow of excuse : with other crimes,  
As pride, lust, gluttony, it must be told,  
I am besmear'd all over.

*Oct.* On repentance,  
Mercy will wash it off.

*Alon.* O sir, I grant  
These sins are deadly ones ; yet their frequency  
With wicked men makes them less dreadful  
to us.

But I am conscious of one crime, with which  
All ills I have committed from my youth  
Put in the scale, weigh nothing ; such a crime,  
So odious to heaven and man, and to  
My sear'd-up conscience so full of horror,  
As penance cannot expiate.

*Oct.* Despair not.  
'Tis impious in man to prescribe limits  
To the divine compassion : out with it.

*Alon.* Hear then, good man, and when  
that I have given you

The character of it, and confess'd myself  
The wretch that acted it, you must repent  
The charity you have extended towards me.  
Not long before these wars began, I had  
Acquaintance ('tis not fit I style it friendship,  
That being a virtue, and not to be blended  
With vicious breach of faith) with the lord  
Octavio,

The minion of his prince and court, set off  
With all the pomp and circumstance of  
greatness :

To this then happy man I offer'd service,  
And with insinuation wrought myself  
Into his knowledge, grew familiar with him,  
Ever a welcome guest. This noble gentleman  
Was bless'd with one fair daughter, so he  
thought,

And boldly might believe so, for she was  
In all things excellent without a rival,  
Till I, her father's mass of wealth before  
My greedy eyes, but hoodwink'd to mine  
honour,

With far more subtle arts than perjured Paris  
E'er practis'd on poor credulous Oenone,  
Besieged her virgin fort, in a word, took it,  
No vows or imprecation forgotten  
With speed to marry her.

*Oct.* Perhaps, she gave you  
Just cause to break those vows.

*Alon.* She cause ! alas,  
Her innocence knew no guilt, but too much  
favour

To me, unworthy of it : 'twas my baseness,  
My foul ingratitude—what shall I say more?  
The good Octavio no sooner fell  
In the displeasure of his prince, his state  
Confiscated, and he forced to leave the court,  
And she exposed to want ; but all my oaths

And protestation of service to her,  
Like seeming flames raised by enchantment,  
vanish'd ;

This, this sits heavy here.

*Oct.* He speaks as if  
He were acquainted with my plot.—You  
have reason

To feel compunction, for 'twas most inhuman  
So to betray a maid.

*Alon.* Most barbarous.

*Oct.* But does your sorrow for the fact beget  
An aptness in you to make satisfaction  
For the wrong you did her ?

*Alon.* Gracious heaven ! an aptness ?  
It is my only study : since I tasted  
Of your compassion, these eyes ne'er were  
closed,

But fearful dreams cut off my little sleep ;  
And, being awake, in my imagination  
Her apparition haunted me.

*Oct.* 'Twas mere fancy. [*He stamps.*]  
*Alon.* 'Twas more, gravesir—nay, 'tis—  
now it appears !

*Enter Maria, in white.*

*Oct.* Where ?

*Alon.* Do you not see there the gliding  
shadow

Of a fair virgin ? that is she, and wears  
The very garments that adorn'd her, when  
She yielded to my crocodile tears : a cloud  
Of fears and diffidence then so chased away  
Her purer white and red, as it foretold  
That I should be disloyal. Blessed shadow !  
For 'twere a sin, far, far exceeding all  
I have committed, to hope only that  
Thou art a substance ; look on my true sorrow,  
Nay, soul's contrition : hear again those vows  
My perjury cancell'd, stamp'd in brass, and  
never

To be worn out.

*Mar.* I can endure no more ;  
Action, not oaths, must make me reparation :  
I am Maria.

*Alon.* Can this be ?

*Oct.* It is,

And I Octavio.

*Alon.* Wonder on wonder !

How shall I look on you, or with what fore-  
head

Desire your pardon ?

*Mar.* You truly shall deserve it  
In being constant.

*Re-enter Gothrio, with the purses of Alonzo  
and Pisano.*

*Oct.* If you fall not off,  
But look on her in poverty with those eyes  
As, when she was my heir in expectation,  
You thought her beautiful.

*Alon.* She is in herself  
Both Indies to me.

*Goth.* Stay, she shall not come  
A beggar to you, my sweet young mistress!  
no,  
She shall not want a dower: here's white and  
red  
Will ask a jointure; but how you should  
make her one,  
Being a captain, would beget some doubt,  
If you should deal with a lawyer.

*Alon.* I have seen this purse.

*Goth.* How the world's given—I dare not  
say, to lying,  
Because you are a soldier; you may say as  
well,  
This gold is mark'd too: you, being to re-  
ceive it,  
Should ne'er ask how I got it. I'll run for a  
priest  
To dispatch the matter; you shall not want  
a ring,  
I have one for the purpose.—[*Gives Pisano's  
ring to Alonzo.*]—Now, sir, I think I'm  
honest. [*Exit.*]

*Alon.* This ring was Pisano's.

*Oct.* I'll dissolve this riddle  
At better leisure: the wound given to my  
daughter,  
Which, in your honour, you are bound to  
cure,  
Exact's our present care.

*Alon.* I am all yours, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same. The Castle of  
St. Leo.*

*Enter Gonzaga, Uberti, and Manfroy.*

*Gon.* Thou hast told too much to give  
assurance that  
Her honour was too far engaged, to be  
By human help redeem'd: if thou hadst  
given  
Thy sad narration this full period,  
She's dead, I had been happy.

*Uber.* Sir, these tears

Do well become a father, and my eyes  
Would keep you company as a forlorn lover,  
But that the burning fire of my revenge  
Dries up those drops of sorrow. We once  
more,

Our broken forces rallied up, and with  
Full numbers strengthen'd, stand prepared  
t'endure

A second trial; nor let it dismay us  
That we are once again to affront the fury  
Of a victorious army; their abuse  
Of conquest hath disarm'd them, and call'd  
down

The Powers above to aid us. I have read  
Some piece of story, yet ne'er found but that  
The general, that gave way to cruelty,  
The profanation of things sacred, rapes  
Of virgins, butchery of infants, and  
The massacre in cold blood of reverend age,  
Against the discipline and law of arms,  
Did feel the hand of heaven lie heavy on him,  
When most secure. We have had a late  
example,  
And let us not despair but that, in Lorenzo,  
It will be seconded.

*Gon.* You argue well,  
And 'twere a sin in me to contradict you:  
Yet we must not neglect the means that's  
lent us,  
To be the ministers of justice.

*Uber.* No, sir:

One day given to refresh our wearied troops,  
Tired with a tedious march, we'll be no  
longer  
Coop'd up, but charge the enemy in his  
trenches,  
And force him to a battle. [*Shouts within.*]

*Gon.* Ha! how's this?

In such a general time of mourning, shouts,  
And acclamations of joy?

[*Cry within, Long live the princess!  
long live Matilda!*]

*Uber.* Matilda!

The princess' name, Matilda, oft re-echoed!

*Enter Farneze.*

*Gon.* What speaks thy haste?

*Farn.* More joy and happiness  
Than weak words can deliver, or strong faith  
Almost give credit to: the princess lives;  
I saw her, kiss'd her hand.

*Gon.* By whom deliver'd?

*Farn.* This is not to be staled by my  
report,

This only must be told:—As I rode forth  
With some choice troops, to make discovery  
Where the enemy lay, and how intrench'd,  
a leader

Of the adverse party, but unarm'd, and in  
His hand an olive branch, encounter'd me:  
He shew'd the great duke's seal, that gave  
him power

To parley with me; his desires were, that  
Assurance for his safety might be granted.  
To his royal master, who came as a friend,  
And not as an enemy, to offer to you  
Conditions of peace. I yielded to it.  
This being return'd, the duke's prætorium  
open'd,

When suddenly, in a triumphant chariot  
Drawn by such soldiers of his own as were,  
For insolence after victory, condemn'd.

Unto this slavish office, the fair princess  
Appear'd, a wreath of laurel on her head,  
Her robes majestical, their richness far  
Above all value, as the present age  
Contended that a woman's pomp should dim  
The glittering triumphs of the Roman  
Cæsars. *[Music without.*

—I am cut off; no cannon's throat now  
thunders,

Nor fife nor drum beat up a charge; choice  
music

Ushers the parent of security,  
Long-absent peace.

*Man.* I know not what to think on't.

*Uber.* May it poise the expectation!

*Loud music. Enter Soldiers unarmed, bearing olive branches, Captains, Lorenzo, Matilda crowned with a wreath of laurel, and seated in a chariot drawn by Soldiers; followed by Hortensio and Martino.*

*Gon.* Thus to meet you,  
Great duke of Tuscany, throws amazement  
on me;

But to behold my daughter, long since  
mourn'd for,

And lost even to my hopes, thus honour'd  
by you,

With an excess of comfort overwhelms me:  
And yet I cannot truly call myself

Happy in this solemnity, till your highness  
Vouchsafe to make me understand the motive  
That, in this peaceful way, hath brought  
you to us.

*Lor.* I must crave license first; for know,  
Gonzaga,

I am subject to another's will, and can  
Nor speak nor do without permission from  
her,

My curled forehead, of late terrible  
To those that did acknowledge me their lord,  
Is now assmooth as rivers when no wind stirs;  
My frowns or smiles, that kill'd or saved,  
have lost

Their potent awe, and sweetness: I am  
transform'd

(But do not scorn the metamorphosis)  
From that fierce thing men held me; I am  
captived,

And, by the irresistible force of beauty,  
Led hither as a prisoner. Is't your pleasure  
that

I shall deliver those injunctions which  
Your absolute command imposed upon me,  
Or deign yourself to speak them?

*Matil.* Sir, I am

Your property, you may use me as you  
please;

But what is in your power and breast to do,  
No orator can dilate so well.

*Lor.* I obey you.

That I came hither as an enemy,  
With hostile arms, to the utter ruin of  
Your country, what I have done makes ap-  
parent;

That fortune seconded my will, the late  
Defeat will make good: that I resolved  
To force the sceptre from your hand, and  
make

Your dukedom tributary, my surprisal  
Of Mantua, your metropolis, can well wit-  
ness;

And that I cannot fear the change of fate,  
My army flesh'd in blood, spoil, glory, con-  
quest,

Stand ready to maintain: yet, I must tell you  
By whom I am subdued, and what's the  
ransome

I am commanded to lay down.

*Gon.* My lord,  
You humble yourself too much; it is fitter  
You should propose, and we consent.

*Lor.* Forbear,  
The articles are here subscribed and sign'd  
By my obedient hand: all prisoners,  
Without a ransome, set at liberty;  
Mantua to be deliver'd up, the rampires  
Ruin'd in the assault, to be repair'd;  
The loss the husbandman received, his crop  
Burnt up by wanton license of the soldier,  
To be made good;—with whatsoever else  
You could impose on me, if you had been  
The conqueror, I your captive.

*Gon.* Such a change  
Wants an example: I must owe this favour  
To the clemency of the old heroic valour,  
That spared when it had power to kill; a  
virtue

Buried long since, but raised out of the grave  
By you, to grace this latter age.

*Lor.* Mistake not  
The cause that did produce this good effect,  
If as such you receive it: 'twas her beauty,  
Wrought first on my rough nature; but the  
virtues

Of her fair soul, dilated in her converse,  
That did confirm it.

*Matil.* Mighty sir, no more:  
You honour her too much, that is not worthy  
To be your servant.

*Lor.* I have done, and now  
Would gladly understand that you allow of  
The articles propounded.

*Gon.* Do not wrong  
Your benefits with such a doubt; they are  
So great and high, and with such reverence  
To be received, that, if I should profess

I hold my dukedom from you, as your vassal,  
Or offer'd up my daughter as you please  
To be disposed of, in the point of honour,  
And a becoming gratitude, 'twould not cancel  
The bond I stand engaged for :—but accept  
Of that which I can pay, my all is yours, sir;  
Nor is there any here, (though I must grant  
Some have deserved much from me,) for so far  
I dare presume, but will surrender up  
Their interest to that your highness shall  
Deign to pretend a title.

*Über.* I subscribe not  
To this condition.

*Farn.* The services  
This prince hath done your grace in your  
most danger,  
Are not to be so slighted.

*Hort.* 'Tis far from me  
To urge my merits, yet, I must maintain,  
How'er my power is less, my love is more ;  
Nor will the gracious princess scorn to ac-  
knowledge

I have been her humble servant.

*Lov.* Smooth your brows,  
I'll not encroach upon your right, for that  
were

Once more to force affection, (a crime  
With which should I the second time be  
tainted,

I did deserve no favour,) neither will I  
Make use of what is offer'd by the duke,  
How'er I thank his goodness. I'll lay by  
My power, and though I should not brook  
a rival,

(What we are, well consider'd,) I'll descend  
To be a third competitor ; he that can  
With love and service best deserve the gar-  
land,

With your consent let him wear it ; I de-  
spair not

The trial of my fortune.

*Gon.* Bravely offer'd,  
And like yourself, great prince.

*Über.* I must profess  
I am so taken with it, that I know not  
Which way to express my service.

*Hort.* Did I not build  
Upon the princess' grace, I could sit down,  
And hold it no dishonour.

*Matil.* How I feel  
My soul divided ! all have deserved so well,  
I know not where to fix my choice.

*Gon.* You have  
Time to consider : will you please to take  
Possession of the fort? then, having tasted  
The fruits of peace, you may at leisure prove,  
Whose plea will prosper in the court of Love.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—Mantua. *A Room in the  
Palace.*

*Enter* Alonzo, Octavio, Pisano, Maria, and  
Gothrio.

*Alon.* You need not doubt, sir, were not  
peace proclaim'd

And celebrated with a general joy,  
The high displeasure of the Mantuan duke,  
Raised on just grounds, not jealous suppo-  
sitions,

The saving of our lives (which, next to heaven,  
To you alone is proper) would force mercy  
For an offence, though capital.

*Pisan.* When the conqueror  
Uses entreaties, they are arm'd commands  
The vanquish'd must not check at.

*Mar.* My piety pay the forfeit,  
If danger come but near you ! I have heard  
My gracious mistress often mention you,  
When I served her as a page, and feelingly  
Relate how much the duke her sire repented  
His hasty doom of banishment, in his rage  
Pronounced against you.

*Oct.* In a private difference,  
I grant that innocence is a wall of brass,  
And scorns the hottest battery ; but, when  
The cause depends between the prince and  
subject,

'Tis an unequal competition ; Justice  
Must lay her balance by, and use her sword  
For his ends that protects it. I was banish'd,  
And, till revoked from exile, to tread on  
My sovereign's territories with forbidden feet,  
The severe letter of the law calls death ;  
Which I am subject to, in coming so near  
His court and person. But my only child  
Being provided for, her honour saved too,  
I thank your noble change, I shall endure  
Whate'er can fall, with patience.

*Alon.* You have used  
That medicine too long ; prepare yourself  
For honour in your age, and rest secure of't.

*Mar.* Of what is your wisdom musing ?

*Goth.* I am gazing on  
This gorgeous house ; our cote's a dishclout  
to it ;

It has no sign,—what do you call't ?

*Mar.* The court ;  
I have lived in't a page.

*Goth.* Page ! very pretty :  
May I not be a page ? I am old enough,  
Well-timber'd too, and I've a beard to  
carry it :

Pray you, let me be your page ; I can swear  
already,

Upon your pantofle.

*Mar.* What?

*Goth.* That I'll be true  
Unto your smock.

*Mar.* How, rascal!

*Oct.* Hence, and pimp

To your rams and ewes; such foul pollution is  
To be whipt from court; I have now no more  
use of you;

Return to your trough.

*Goth.* Must I feed on husks,  
Before I have play'd the prodigal?

*Oct.* No, I'll reward

Your service; live in your own element,  
Like an honest man; all that is mine in the  
cottage,

I freely give you.

*Goth.* Your bottles too, that I carry  
For your own tooth!

*Oct.* Full as they are.

*Mar.* And gold, [*Gives him her purse.*]  
That will replenish them.

*Goth.* I am made for ever.

This was done i'the nick.

*Oct.* Why in the nick?

*Goth.* O sir!

'Twas well for me that you did reward my  
service

Before you enter'd the court; for 'tis reported  
There is a drink of forgetfulness, which once  
tasted,

Few masters think of their servants, who,  
grown old,

Are turn'd off, like lame hounds and hunting  
horses,

To starve on the commons.

[*Exit.*]

*Alon.* Bitter knave!

*Enter Martino.*

There's craft

In the clouted shoe.—Captain!

*Mart.* I am glad to kiss  
Your valiant hand, and yours; but pray you,  
take notice,

My title's changed, I am a colonel.

*Pisan.* A colonel! where's your regiment?

*Mart.* Not raised yet;

All the old ones are cashier'd, and we are now  
To have a new militia: all is peace here,

Yet I hold my title still, as many do  
That never saw an enemy.

*Alon.* You are pleasant,

And it becomes you. Is the duke stirring?

*Mart.* Long since,

Four hours at least, but yet not ready.

*Pisan.* How!

*Mart.* Even so; you make a wonder of't,  
but leave it:

Alas, he is not now, sir, in the camp,

To be up and arm'd upon the least alarm;

There's something else to be thought on:  
here he comes,  
With his officers, new-rigg'd.

*Enter Lorenzo, as from his chamber, with a  
looking-glass; Doctor, Gentleman, and  
Page employed about his person.*

*Alon.* A looking-glass!

Upon my head, he saw not his own face  
These seven years past, but by reflection  
From a bright armour.

*Mart.* Be silent, and observe.

*Lor.* So, have you done yet?  
Is your building perfect?

*Doct.* If your highness please,  
Here is a water.

*Lor.* To what use? my barber  
Hath wash'd my face already.

*Doct.* But this water

Hath a strange virtue in't, beyond his art;  
It is a sacred relic, part of that  
Most powerful juice, with which Medea made  
Old Æson young.

*Lor.* A fable! but suppose  
I should give credit to it, will it work  
The same effect on me?

*Doct.* I'll undertake

This will restore the honour'd hair that grows  
Upon your highness' head and chin, a little  
Inclining unto gray.

*Lor.* Inclining! doctor.

*Doct.* Pardon me, mighty sir, I went too  
far,

Not gray at all;—I dare not flatter you—  
'Tis something changed; but this applied will  
help it

To the first amber-colour, every hair  
As fresh as when, your manhood in the prime,  
Your grace arrived at thirty.

*Lor.* Very well.

*Doct.* Then here's a precious oil, to which  
the maker

Hath not yet given a name, will soon fill up  
These dimples in your face and front. I  
grant

They are terrible to your enemies, and set off  
Your frowns with majesty; but you may  
please

To know, as sure you do, a smooth aspect,  
Softness and sweetness, in the court of Love,  
Though dumb, are the prevailing orators.

*Lor.* Will he new-create me?

*Doct.* If you deign to taste too,  
Of this confection.

*Lor.* I am in health, and need  
No physic.

*Doct.* Physic, sir! An empress,  
If that an empress' lungs, sir, may be tainted  
With putrefaction, would taste of it,

That night on which she were to print a kiss  
Upon the lips of her long-absent lord,  
Returning home with conquest.

*Lor.* 'Tis predominant

Over a stinking breath, is it not, doctor?

*Doct.* Clothe the infirmity with sweeter  
language :

'Tis a preservative that way.

*Lor.* You are, then,

Admitted to the cabinets of great ladies,  
And have the government of the borrow'd  
beauties

Of such as write near forty.

*Doct.* True, my good lord,

And my attempts have prosper'd.

*Lor.* Did you never

Minister to the princess?

*Doct.* Sir, not yet ;

She's in the April of her youth, and needs  
not

The aids of art, my gracious lord ; but in  
The autumn of her age I may be useful,  
And sworn her highness' doctor, and your  
grace

Partake of the delight.—

*Lor.* Slave ! witch ! impostor !

[*Strikes him down.*]

Mountebank ! cheater ! traitor to great  
nature,

In thy presumption to repair what she,

In her immutable decrees, design'd

For some few years to grow up, and then  
wither !

Or is't not crime enough thus to betray  
The secrets of the weaker sex, thy patients,  
But thou must make the honour of this age,  
And envy of the time to come, Matilda,  
Whose sacred name I bow to, guilty of  
A future sin in thy ill-boding thoughts,  
Which for a perpetuity of youth  
And pleasure she disdains to act, such is  
Her purity and innocence !

[*Sets his foot on the Doctor's breast.*]

*Alon.* Long since

I look'd for this l'envoy.

*Mart.* Would I were well off !

He's dangerous in these humours.

*Oct.* Stand conceal'd.

*Doct.* O sir, have mercy ! in my thought  
I never

Offended you.

*Lor.* Me ! most of all, thou monster !

What a mock-man property in thy intent  
Wouldst thou have made me ? a mere pathic  
to

Thy devilish art, had I given suffrage to it.  
Are my gray hairs, the ornament of age,  
And held a blessing by the wisest men,  
And for such warranted by holy writ,

To be conceal'd, as if they were my shame?  
Or plaister up these furrows in my face,  
As if I were a painted bawd or whore?

By such base means if that I could ascend  
To the height of all my hopes, their full fruition

Would not wipe off the scandal : no, thou  
wretch !

Thy cozening water and adulterate oil  
I thus pour in thine eyes, and tread to dust  
Thy loath'd confection with thy trumperies :—  
Vanish for ever !

*Mart.* You have your fee, as I take it,  
Dear domine doctor ! I'll be no sharer with  
you. [*Exit Doctor.*]

*Lor.* I'll court her like myself ; these rich  
adornments

And jewels, worn by me, an absolute prince,  
My order too, of which I am the sovereign,  
Can meet no ill construction ; yet 'tis far  
From my imagination to believe  
She can be taken with sublimed clay,  
The silk-worm's spoils, or rich embroideries :  
Nor must I borrow helps from power or  
greatness,

But as a loyal lover plead my cause ;

If I can feelingly express my ardour,  
And make her sensible of the much I suffer  
In hopes and fears, and she vouchsafe to-  
take

Compassion on me,—ha ! compassion ?

The word stieks in my throat : what's here,  
that tells me

I do descend too low ? rebellious spirit,  
I conjure thee to leave me ! there is now  
No contradiction or declining left,  
I must and will go on.

*Mart.* The tempest's laid ;

You may present yourselves.

[*Alonzo and Pisano come forward.*]

*Alon.* My gracious lord.

*Pisan.* Your humble vassal.

*Lor.* Ha ! both living ?

*Alon.* Sir,

We owe our lives to this good lord, and  
make it

Our humble suit—

*Lor.* Plead for yourselves : we stand

Yet unresolved whether your knees or prayers  
Can save the forfeiture of your own heads :  
Though we have put our armour off, your  
pardon

For leaving of the camp without our license,  
Is not yet sign'd. At some more fit time  
wait us.

[*Exeunt Lorenzo, Gentleman, and Page.*]

*Alon.* How's this ?

*Mart.* 'Tis well it is no worse ; I met with  
A rougher entertainment, yet I had

Good cards to shew. He's parcel mad ;  
 you'll find him  
 Every hour in a several mood ; this foolish  
 love  
 Is such a shuttlecock ! but all will be well,  
 When a better fit comes on him, never doubt  
 it. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Gonzaga, Uberti, Farneze, and  
 Manfroy.*

*Gon.* How do you find her ?  
*Uber.* Thankful for my service,  
 And yet she gives me little hope ; my rival  
 Is too great for me.

*Gon.* The great duke, you mean ?

*Uber.* Who else ? the Milanese, although  
 he be

A complete gentleman, I am sure despairs  
 More than myself.

*Farn.* A high estate, with women,  
 Takes place of all desert.

*Uber.* I must stand my fortune.

*Enter Lorenzo and Attendants.*

*Man.* The duke of Florence, sir.

*Gon.* Your highness' presence

Answers my wish. Your private ear :—I  
 have used

My best persuasion, with a father's power,  
 To work my daughter to your ends ; yet she,  
 Like a small bark on a tempestuous sea,  
 Toss'd here and there by opposite winds,  
 resolves not

At which port to put in. This prince's merits,  
 Your grace and favour ; nor is she unmindful  
 Of the brave acts (under your pardon, sir,  
 I needs must call them so) Hortensio  
 Hath done to gain her good opinion of him ;  
 All these together tumbling in her fancy,  
 Do much distract her. I have spies upon  
 her,

And am assured this instant hour she gives  
 Hortensio private audience ; I will bring you  
 Where we will see and hear all.

*Lor.* You oblige me.

*Uber.* I do not like this whispering.

*Gon.* Fear no foul play. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Hortensio, Beatrice, and two  
 Waiting Women.*

1 *Wom.* The princess, sir, long since ex-  
 pected you ;  
 And, would I beg a thanks, I could tell you  
 that

I have often moved her for you.

*Hort.* I am your servant.

*Enter Matilda.*

*Beat.* She's come ; there are others I must  
 place to hear

The conference. [Aside, and exit.]

1 *Wom.* Is't your excellency's pleasure  
 That we attend you ?

*Matil.* No ; wait me in the gallery.

1 *Wom.* Would each of us, wench, had a  
 sweetheart too

To pass away the time !

2 *Wom.* There I join with you.

[Exeunt Waiting Women.]

*Matil.* I fear this is the last time we shall  
 meet.

*Hort.* Heaven forbid !

*Re-enter above Beatrice with Lorenzo,  
 Gonzaga, Uberti, and Farneze.*

*Matil.* O my Hortensio !

In me behold the misery of greatness,  
 And that which you call beauty. Had I  
 been

Of a more low condition, I might  
 Have call'd my will and faculties mine own,  
 Not seeing that which was to be beloved  
 With others' eyes : but now, ah me, most  
 wretched

And miserable princess, in my fortune,  
 To be too much engaged for service done me !  
 It being impossible to make satisfaction  
 To my so many creditors ; all deserving,  
 I can keep touch with none.

*Lor.* A sad exordium.

*Matil.* You loved me long, and without  
 hope (alas,

I die to think on't !) Parma's prince, invited  
 With a too partial report of what  
 I was, and might be to him, left his country,  
 To fight in my defence. Your brave achieve-  
 ments

I'the war, and what you did for me, un-  
 spoken,

Because I would not force the sweetness of  
 Your modesty to a blush, are written here :  
 And, that there might be nothing wanting to  
 Sum up my numerous engagements, (never  
 In my hopes to be cancell'd,) the great duke,  
 Our mortal enemy, when my father's country  
 Lay open to his fury, and the spoil  
 Of the victorious army, and I brought  
 Into his power, hath shewn himself so noble,  
 So full of honour, temperance, and all virtues  
 That can set off a prince, that, though I  
 cannot

Render him that respect I would, I am bound  
 In thankfulness to admire him.

*Hort.* 'Tis acknowledged,  
 And on your part to be return'd.



*Matil.* How can I,  
Without the brand of foul ingratitude  
To you, and prince Uberti?

*Hort.* Hear me, madam,  
And what yourservant shall with zeal deliver,  
As a Dædalean clew may guide you out of  
This labyrinth of distraction. He that loves  
His mistress truly, should prefer her honour  
And peace of mind, above the glutting of  
His ravenous appetite: he should affect her,  
But with a fit restraint, and not take from  
her

To give himself: he should make it the height  
Of his ambition, if it lie in  
His stretch'd-out nerves to effect it, though  
she fly in  
An eminent place, to add strength to her  
wings,

And mount her higher, though he fall himself  
Into the bottomless abyss; or else  
The services he offers are not real,  
But counterfeit.

*Matil.* What can Hortensio  
Infer from this?

*Hort.* That I stand bound in duty,  
(Though in the act I take my last farewell  
Of comfort in this life,) to sit down willingly,  
And move my suit no further. I confess,  
While you were in danger, and heaven's  
mercy made me  
Its instrument to preserve you, (which your  
goodness

Prized far above the merit,) I was bold  
To feed my starv'd affection with false hopes  
I might be worthy of you: for know, madam,  
How mean soever I appear'd in Mantua,  
I had in expectation a fortune,  
Though not possess'd of't, that encouraged  
me

With confidence to prefer my suit, and not  
To fear the prince Uberti as my rival.

*Gon.* I ever thought him more than what  
he seem'd.

*Lor.* Pray you, forbear.

*Hort.* But when the duke of Florence  
Put in his plea, in my consideration  
Weighing well what he is, as you must grant  
him

A Mars of men in arms, and, those put off,  
The great example for a kingly courtier  
To imitate; annex to these his wealth,  
Of such a large extent, as other monarchs  
Call him the king of coin; and, what's  
above all,

His lawful love, with all the happiness  
This life can fancy, from him flowing to you;  
The true affection which I have ever borne  
you,  
Does not alone command me to desist,

But, as a faithful counsellor, to advise you  
To meet and welcome that felicity,  
Which hastes to crown your virtues.

*Lor.* We must break off this parley:  
Something I have to say. [*Exeunt above.*]

*Matil.* In tears I thank  
Yout care of my advancement; but I dare  
not

Follow your counsel. Shall such piety  
Pass unrewarded? such a pure affection,  
For any ends of mine, be undervalued?  
Avert it, heaven! I will be thy Matilda,  
Or cease to be; no other heat but what  
Glows from thy purest flames, shall warm this  
bosom,

Nor Florence, nor all monarchs of the earth,  
Shall keep thee from me.

*Re-enter below* Lorenzo, Gonzaga, Uberti,  
Farneze, and Manfroy.

*Hort.* I fear, gracious lady,  
Our conference hath been overheard.

*Matil.* The better:  
Your part is acted; give me leave at distance  
To zany it.—Sir, on my knees thus prostrate  
Before your feet—

*Lor.* This must not be, I shall  
Both wrong myself and you in suffering it.

*Matil.* I will grow here, and weeping thus  
turn marble,

Unless you hear and grant the first petition  
A virgin, and a princess, ever tendered:  
Nor does the suit concern poor me alone,  
It hath a stronger reference to you,  
And to your honour; and, if you deny it,  
Both ways you suffer. Remember, sir, you  
were not

Born only for yourself, heaven's liberal hand  
Design'd you to command a potent nation,  
Gave you heroic valour, which you have  
Abused, in making unjust war upon  
A neighbour-prince, a Christian; while the  
Turk,

Whose scourge and terror you should be,  
securely  
Wastes the Italian confines: 'tis in you  
To force him to pull in his horned crescents,  
And 'tis expected from you.

*Lor.* I have been  
In a dream, and now begin to wake.

*Matil.* And will you  
Forbear to reap the harvest of such glories,  
Now ripe, and at full growth, for the em-  
braces

Of a slight woman? or exchange your  
triumphs  
For chamber-pleasures, melt your able  
nerves

(That should with your victorious sword  
make way  
Through the armies of your enemies) in  
loose

And wanton dalliance? be yourself, great sir,  
The thunderbolt of war, and scorn to sever  
Two hearts long since united; your example  
May teach the prince Uberti to subscribe  
To that which you allow of.

*Lor.* The same tongue  
That charm'd my sword out of my hand,  
And threw  
A frozen numbness on my active spirit,  
Hath disenchanting me. Rise, fairest prin-  
cess!

And, that it may appear I do receive  
Your counsel as inspired from heaven, I will  
Obey and follow it: I am your debtor,  
And must confess you have lent my weaken'd  
reason

New strengths once more to hold a full  
command

Over my passions. Here, to the world,  
I freely do profess that I disclaim  
All interest in you, and give up my title,  
Such as it is, to you, sir; and, as far  
As I have power, thus join your hands.

*Gon.* To yours  
I add my full consent.

*Uber.* I am lost, Farnese.

*Farn.* Much nearer to the port than you  
suppose:—

In me our laws speak, and forbid this con-  
tract.

*Matil.* Ah me, new stops!

*Hort.* Shall we be ever cross'd thus?

*Farn.* There is an act upon record, con-  
firm'd

By your wise predecessors, that no heir  
Of Mantua (as questionless the princess  
Is the undoubted one) must be join'd in  
marriage,

But where the match may strengthen the  
estate

And safety of the dukedom. Now, this  
gentleman,

However I must style him honourable,  
And of a high desert, having no power  
To make this good in his alliance, stands  
Excluded by our laws; whereas this prince,  
Of equal merit, brings to Mantua  
The power and principality of Parma:  
And therefore, since the great duke hath let  
fall

His plea, there lives no prince that justlier  
can

Challenge the princess' favour.

*Lor.* Is this true, sir?

*Gon.* I cannot contradict it.

*Enter* Manfroy.

*Man.* There's an ambassador  
From Milan, that desires a present audience;  
His business is of highest consequence,  
As he affirms: I know him for a man  
Of the best rank and quality.

*Hort.* From Milan!

*Gon.* Admit him.

*Enter* Ambassador, and *Julio* with a letter,  
which he presents on his knee to Hortensio.

How! so low?

*Amb.* I am sorry, sir,  
To be the bringer of this heavy news;  
But since it must be known—

*Hort.* Peace rest with him!  
I shall find fitter time to mourn his loss.  
My faithful servant too!

*Jul.* I am o'erjoy'd,  
To see your highness safe.

*Hort.* Pray you, peruse this,  
And there you'll find that the objection,  
The lord Farnese made, is fully answer'd.

*Gon.* The great John Galeas dead!

*Lor.* And this his brother,  
The absolute lord of Milan!

*Matil.* I am revived.

*Uber.* There's no contending against des-  
tiny:

I wish both happiness.

*Enter* Alonzo, Maria, Octavio, Pisano, and  
Martino.

*Lor.* Married, Alonzo!

I will salute your lady, she's a fair one,  
And seal your pardon on her lips.

[*Kisses* Maria.]

*Gon.* Octavio!

Welcome e'en to my heart. Rise, I should  
kneel

To thee for mercy.

*Oct.* The poor remainder of  
My age shall truly serve you.

*Matil.* You resemble  
A page I had, Ascanio.

*Mar.* I am

Your highness' servant still.

*Lor.* All stand amazed  
At this unlook'd-for meeting; but defer  
Your several stories. Fortune here hath  
shown

Her various power; but virtue, in the end,  
Is crown'd with laurel: Love hath done his  
parts too;

And mutual friendship, after bloody jars,  
Will cure the wounds received in our wars.

[*Exeunt.*]

## EPILOGUE.

*Pray you, gentlemen, keep your seats ; something I would  
Deliver to gain favour, if I could,  
To us, and the still doubtful author. He,  
When I desired an epilogue, answer'd me,  
" 'Twas to no purpose : he must stand his fate,  
Since all entreaties now would come too late ;  
You being long since resolved what you would say  
Of him, or us, as you rise, or of the play."  
A strange old fellow ! yet this sullen mood  
Would quickly leave him, might it be understood  
You part not hence displeas'd. I am design'd  
To give him certain notice : if you find  
Things worth your liking, shew it. Hope and fear,  
Though different passions, have the self-same ear.*



# The Old Law.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Evander, <i>duke of Epire.</i>	} <i>Servants to Creon.</i>
Cratilus, <i>the executioner.</i>	
Creon, <i>father to Simonides.</i>	
imonides, } <i>young courtiers.</i>	
Cleanthes, }	
Lysander, <i>husband to Eugenia, and uncle to Cleanthes.</i>	
Leonides, <i>father to Cleanthes.</i>	
Gnotho, <i>the clown.</i>	
<i>Lawyers.</i>	
<i>Courtiers.</i>	
<i>Dancing-master.</i>	Butler,
	Bailiff,
	Tailor,
	Cochman,
	Footman,
	Cook,
	Clerk.
	Drawer.
	Antigona, <i>wife to Creon.</i>
	Hippolita, <i>wife to Cleanthes.</i>
	Eugenia, <i>wife to Lysander, and mother to Parthenia.</i>
	Parthenia.
	Agatha, <i>wife to Gnotho.</i>
	<i>Old women, wives to Creon's servants.</i>
	<i>Courtezan.</i>
	<i>Fiddlers, Servants, Guard, &amp;c.</i>

## SCENE,—Epire.

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I.—A Room in Creon's House.

*Enter Simonides and two Lawyers.*

*Sim.* Is the law firm, sir?

*1 Law.* The law! what more firm, sir, More powerful, forcible, or more permanent?

*Sim.* By my troth, sir, I partly do believe it; conceive, sir, You have indirectly answered my question. I did not doubt the fundamental grounds Of law in general, for the most solid; But this particular law that me concerns, Now, at the present, if that be firm and strong, And powerful, and forcible, and permanent?

I am a young man that has an old father.

*2 Law.* Nothing more strong, sir. It is—*Secundum statutum principis, confirmatum cum voce senatus, et voce reipublicæ*; nay, *consummatum et exemplificatum*.

Is it not in force, When divers have already tasted it, And paid their lives for penalty?

*Sim.* 'Tis true. My father must be next; this day completes Full fourscore years upon him.

*2 Law.* He is here, then, *Sub pœna statuti*: hence I can tell him, Truer than all the physicians in the world, He cannot live out to-morrow; this Is the most certain climacterical year—

'Tis past all danger, for there's no escaping it.

What age is your mother, sir!

*Sim.* Faith, near her days too;

Wants some two of threescore.

*1 Law.* So! she'll drop away One of these days too: here's a good age now, For those that have old parents, and rich inheritance!

*Sim.* And, sir, 'tis profitable for others too: Are there not fellows that lie bedrid in their offices,

That younger men would walk lustily in? Churchmen, that even the second infancy Hath silenced, yet have spun out their lives— so long,

That many pregnant and ingenious spirits Have languish'd in their hoped reversions, And died upon the thought? and, by your leave, sir,

Have you not places fill'd up in the law, By some grave senators, that you imagine Have held them long enough, and such spirits as you,

Were they removed, would leap into their dignities?

*1 Law.* *Dic quibus in terris, et eris mihi magnus Apollo.*

*Sim.* But tell me, faith, your fair opinion: Is't not a sound and necessary law, This, by the duke enacted?

*1 Law.* Never did Greece,

Our ancient seat of brave philosophers,  
'Mongst all her *nomothetæ* and lawgivers,  
Not when she flourish'd in her sevenfold  
sages,

Whose living memory can never die,  
Produce a law more grave and necessary.

*Sim.* I am of that mind too.

*2 Law.* I will maintain, sir,  
Draco's oligarchy, that the government  
Of community reduced into few,  
Framed a fair state; Solon's *chreokopia*,  
'That cut off poor men's debts to their rich  
creditors,

Was good and charitable, but not full,  
allow'd;

His *seisachtheia* did reform that error,  
His honourable senate of Areopagitæ.

Lycurgus was more loose, and gave too free  
And licentious reins unto his discipline;  
As that a young woman, in her husband's  
weakness,

Might choose her able friend to propagate;  
'Thatso the commonwealth might be supplied  
With hope of lusty spirits. Plato did err,  
And so did Aristotle, in allowing  
Lewd and luxurious limits to their laws:  
But now our Epire, our Epire's Evander,  
Our noble and wise prince, has hit the law  
That all our predecessive students  
Have miss'd, unto their shame.

*Enter Cleanthes.*

*Sim.* Forbear the praise, sir,  
'Tis in itself most pleasing:—Cleanthes!  
O, lad, here's a spring for young plants to  
flourish!

The old trees must down kept the sun from  
us;

We shall rise now, boy.

*Clean.* Whither, sir, I pray?

To the bleak air of storms, among those trees  
Which we had shelter from?

*Sim.* Yes, from our growth  
Our sap and livelihood, and from our fruit.  
What! 'tis not jubilee with thee yet, I think,  
Thou look'st so sad on't. How old is thy  
father?

*Clean.* Jubilee! no, indeed; 'tis a bad  
year with me.

*Sim.* Prithee, how old's thy father? then  
I can tell thee.

*Clean.* I know not how to answer you,  
Simonides;

He is too old, being now expos'd  
Unto the rigour of a cruel edict;  
And yet not old enough by many years,  
'Cause I'd not see him go an hour before me.

*Sim.* These very passions I speak to my  
father.

Come, come, here's none but friends here,  
we may speak

Our insides freely; these are lawyers, man,  
And shall be counsellors shortly.

*Clean.* They shall be now, sir,  
And shall have large fees if they'll under-  
take

To help a good cause, for it wants assistance;  
Bad ones, I know, they can insist upon.

*1 Law.* Oh, sir, we must undertake of both  
parts;

But the good we have most good in.

*Clean.* Pray you, say,

How do you allow of this strange edict?

*1 Law.* *Secundum justitiam*; by my faith,  
sir,

The happiest edict that ever was in Epire.

*Clean.* What, to kill innocents, sir? it  
cannot be,

It is no rule in justice there to punish.

*1 Law.* Oh, sir,

You understand a conscience, but not law.

*Clean.* Why, sir, is there so main a dif-  
ference?

*1 Law.* You'll never be good lawyer if you  
understand not that.

*Clean.* I think, then, 'tis the best to be a  
bad one.

*1 Law.* Why, sir, the very letter and the  
sense both do overthrow you in this statute,  
which speaks, that every man living to four-  
score years, and women to threescore, shall  
then be cut off as fruitless to the republic,  
and law shall finish what nature linger'd at.

*Clean.* And this suit shall soon be dis-  
patch'd in law?

*1 Law.* It is so plain it can have no demur,  
The church-book overthrows it.

*Clean.* And so it does;

The church-book overthrows it, if you read  
it well.

*1 Law.* Still you run from the law into  
error:

You say it takes the lives of innocents,  
I say no, and so says common reason;  
What man lives to fourscore, and woman to  
three,

That can die innocent?

*Clean.* A fine law evasion!

Good sir, rehearse the whole statute to me.

*Sim.* Fie! that's too tedious; you have  
already

The full sum in the brief relation.

*Clean.* Sir,

'Mongst many words may be found contra-  
dictions;

And these men dare sue and wrangle with a  
statute,

If they can pick a quarrel with some error.

2 *Law*. Listen, sir, I'll gather it as brief as I can for you:

*Anno primo Evandri, Be it for the care and good of the commonwealth, (for divers necessary reasons that we shall urge,) thus peremptorily enacted,—*

*Clean*. A fair pretence, if the reasons foul it not!

2 *Law*. *That all men living in our dominions of Epire, in their decayed nature, to the age of fourscore, or women to the age of threescore, shall on the same day be instantly put to death, by those means and instruments that a former proclamation, had to this purpose, through our said territories dispersed.*

*Clean*. There was no woman in this senate, certain.

1 *Law*. *That these men, being past their bearing arms, to aid and defend their country; past their manhood and likelihood, to propagate any further issue to their posterity; and as well past their councils (whose overgrown gravity is now run into dotage) to assist their country; to whom, in common reason, nothing should be so wearisome as their own lives, as they may be supposed tedious to their successive heirs, whose times are spent in the good of their country: yet wanting the means to maintain it; and are like to grow old before their inheritance (born to them) come to their necessary use, be condemned to die: for the women, for that they never were a defence to their country; never by counsel admitted to assist in the government of their country; only necessary to the propagation of posterity, and now, at the age of threescore, past that good, and all their goodness: it is thought fit (a quarter abated from the more worthy member) that they be put to death, as is before recited: provided that for the just and impartial execution of this our statute, the example shall first begin in and about our court, which ourself will see carefully performed; and not, for a full month following, extend any further into our dominions. Dated the sixth of the second month, at our Palace Royal in Epire.*

*Clean*. A fine edict, and very fairly gilded! And is there no scruple in all these words, To demur the law upon occasion?

*Sim*. Pox! 'tis an unnecessary inquisition; Prithee set him not about it.

2 *Law*. Troth, none, sir:

It is so evident and plain a case,

There is no succour for the defendant.

*Clean*. Possible! can nothing help in a good case?

1 *Law*. Faith, sir, I do think there may be a hole,

Which would protract; delay, if not remedy.

*Clean*. Why, there's some comfort in that; good sir, speak it.

1 *Law*. Nay, you must pardon me for that, sir.

*Sim*. Prithee, do not;

It may ope a wound to many sons and heirs, That may die after it.

*Clean*. Come, sir, I know

How to make you speak:—will this do it?

[Gives him his purse.]

1 *Law*. I will afford you my opinion, sir.

*Clean*. Pray you, repeat the literal words expressly,

The time of death.

*Sim*. 'Tis an unnecessary question; prithee let it alone.

2 *Law*. Hear his opinion, 'twill be fruitless, sir.

*That man, at the age of fourscore, and woman at threescore, shall the same day be put to death.*

1 *Law*. Thus I help the man to twenty-one years more.

*Clean*. That were a fair addition.

1 *Law*. Mark it, sir; we say, man is not at age

Till he be one and twenty; before, 'tis infancy,

And adolescence; now, by that addition, Fourscore he cannot be, till a hundred and one.

*Sim*. Oh, poor evasion!

He is fourscore years old, sir.

1 *Law*. That helps more, sir;

He begins to be old at fifty, so, at fourscore, He's but thirty years old; so, believe it, sir,

He may be twenty years in declination;

And so long may a man linger and live by it.

*Sim*. The worst hope of safety that e'er I heard!

Give him his fee again, 'tis not worth two deniers.

1 *Law*. There is no law for restitution of fees, sir.

*Clean*. No, no, sir; I meant it lost when it was given.

*Enter Creon and Antigona.*

*Sim*. No more, good sir,

Here are ears unnecessary for your doctrine.

1 *Law*. I have spoke out my fee, and I have done, sir.

*Sim*. O my dear father!

*Creon*. Tush! meet me not in exclams; I understand the worst, and hope no better.

A fine law ! if this hold, white heads will be cheap,

And many watchmen's places will be vacant ;  
Forty of them I know my seniors,  
That did due deeds of darkness too :—their country

Has watch'd them a good turn for't,  
And ta'en them napping now :  
The fewer hospitals will serve too, many  
May be used for stews and brothels ; and those people

Will never trouble them to fourscore.

*Ant.* Can you play and sport with sorrow, sir ?

*Creon.* Sorrow ! for what, Antigona ? for my life ?

My sorrow is I have kept it so long well,  
With bringing it up unto so ill an end.  
I might have gently lost it in my cradle,  
Before my nerves and ligaments grew strong,  
To bind it faster to me.

*Sim.* For mine own sake,  
I should have been sorry for that.

*Creon.* In my youth

I was a soldier, no coward in my age ;  
I never turn'd my back upon my foe ;  
I have felt nature's winters, sicknesses,  
Yet ever kept a lively sap in me  
To greet the cheerful spring of health again.  
Dangers, on horse, on foot, [by land,] by water,

I have escaped to this day ; and yet this day,  
Without all help of casual accidents,  
Is only deadly to me, 'cause it numbers  
Fourscore years to me. Where is the fault now ?

I cannot blame time, nature, nor my stars,  
Nor aught but tyranny. Even kings themselves

Have sometimes tasted an even fate with me.  
He that has been a soldier all his days,  
And stood in personal opposition  
'Gainst darts and arrows, the extremes of heat  
And pinching cold, has treacherously at home,

In's secure quiet, by a villain's hand  
Been basely lost, in his star's ignorance :—  
And so must I die by a tyrant's sword.

*Law.* Oh, say not so, sir, it is by the law.

*Creon.* And what's that, but the sword of tyranny,

When it is brandish'd against innocent lives ?  
I am now upon my deathbed, and 'tis fit  
I should unbosom my free-conscience,  
And shew the faith I die in :—I do believe  
'Tis tyranny that takes my life.

*Sim.* Would it were gone

By one means or other ! what a long day  
Will this be ere night ? *[Aside.]*

*Creon.* Simonides.

*Sim.* Here, sir,—weeping.

*Creon.* Wherefore dost thou weep ?

*Clean.* 'Cause you make no more haste to your end. *[Aside.]*

*Sim.* How can you question nature so unjustly ?

I had a grandfather, and then had not you  
True filial tears for him ?

*Clean.* Hypocrite ?

A disease of drought dry up all pity from him,  
That can disseemble pity with wet eyes !

*Creon.* Be good unto your mother, Simonides,

She must be now your care.

*Ant.* To what end, sir ?

The bell of this sharp edicts tolls for me,  
As it rings out for you.—I'll be as ready,  
With one hour's stay, to go along with you.

*Creon.* Thou must not, woman, there are years behind,

Before thou canst set forward in this voyage ;  
And nature, sure, will now be kind to all :  
She has a quarrel in't, a cruel law  
Seeks to prevent her, she will therefore fight in't,

And draw out life even to her longest thread :  
Thou art scarce fifty-five.

*Ant.* So many morrows !

Those five remaining years I'll turn to days,  
To hours, or minutes, for your company.  
'Tis fit that you and I, being man and wife,  
Should walk together arm in arm.

*Sim.* I hope

They'll go together ; I would they would, i' faith,

Then would her thirds be saved too. *[Aside.]*  
—The day goes away, sir.

*Creon.* Why wouldst thou have me gone, Simonides ?

*Sim.* O my heart ! Would you have me gone before you, sir,

You give me such a deadly wound ?

*Clean.* Fine rascal !

*Sim.* Blemish my duty so with such a question ?

Sir, I would haste me to the duke for mercy ;  
He that's above the law may mitigate

The rigour of the law. How a good meaning  
May be corrupted by a misconception !

*Creon.* Thou corrupt'st mine ; I did not think thou mean'st so.

*Clean.* You were in the more error.

*[Aside.]*  
*Sim.* The words wounded me.

*Clean.* 'Twas pity thou died'st not on't.

*Sim.* I have been ransacking the helps of law,

Conferring with these learned advocates :

If any scruple, cause, or wrested sense  
Could have been found out to preserve your  
life,

It had been bought, though with your full  
estate,

Your life's so precious to me!--but there's  
none.

*Law.* Sir, we have canvass'd her from  
top to toe,

Turn'd her upside down, thrown her upon  
her side,

Nay, open'd and dissected all her entrails,  
Yet can find none : there's nothing to be  
hoped,

But the duke's mercy.

*Sim.* I know the hope of that ;

He did not make the law for that purpose.

*Creon.* Then to this hopeless mercy last  
I go ;

I have so many precedents before me,

I must call it hopeless : Antigona,

See me delivered up unto my deathman,

And then we'll part ;—five years hence I'll  
look for thee.

*Sim.* I hope she will not stay so long  
behind you. [*Aside.*]

*Creon.* Do not bate him an hour by grief  
and sorrow,

Since there's a day prefix'd, hasten it not.

Suppose me sick, Antigona, dying now,

Any disease thou wilt may be my end,

Or when death's slow to come, say tyrants  
send. [*Exeunt Creon and Antigona.*]

*Sim.* Cleanthes, if you want money, to-  
morrow use me ;

I'll trust you while your father's dead.

[*Exit, with the Lawyers.*]

*Clean.* Why, here's a villain,

Able to corrupt a thousand by example !

Does the kind root bleed out his liveli-  
hood

In parent distribution to his branches,

Adorning them with all his glorious fruits,

Proud that his pride is seen when he's un-  
seen ;

And must not gratitude descend again,

To comfort his old limbs in fruitless winter ?

Improvident, or at least partial nature !

{Weak woman in this kind,} who, in thy last  
teeming,

Forgettest still the former, ever making

The burthen of thy last throes the dearest  
darling !

O yet in noble man reform [reform] it,

And make us better than those vegetives,

Whose souls die with them. Nature, as thou  
art old,

If love and justice be not dead in thee,

Make some the pattern of thy piety ;

Lest all do turn unnaturally against thee,  
And thou be blamed for our oblivious

*Enter Leonides and Hippolita.*

And brutish reluctations ! Ay, here's the  
ground

Whereon my filial faculties must build

An edifice of honour, or of shame,  
To all mankind.

*Hip.* You must avoid it, sir,

If there be any love within yourself :

This is far more than fate of a lost game

That another venture may restore again ;

It is your life, which you should not subject  
To any cruelty, if you can preserve it.

*Clean.* O dearest woman, thou hast  
doubled now

A thousand times thy nuptial dowry to me!—

Why, she whose love is but derived from me,  
Is got before me in my debted duty.

*Hip.* Are you thinking such a resolution,  
sir ?

*Clean.* Sweetest Hippolita, what love  
taught thee

To be so forward in so good a cause ?

*Hip.* Mine own pity, sir, did first instruct  
me,

And then your love and power did both  
command me.

*Clean.* They were all blessed angels to  
direct thee ;

And take their counsel. How do you fare,  
sir ?

*Leon.* Cleanthes, never better ; I have  
conceived

Such a new joy within this old bosom,

As I did never think would there have en-  
ter'd.

*Clean.* Joy call you it ? alas ! 'tis sorrow,  
sir,

The worst of sorrows, sorrow unto death.

*Leon.* Death ! what is that, Cleanthes ? I  
thought not on't,

I was in contemplation of this woman :

'Tis all thy comfort, son ; thou hast in her

A treasure invaluable, keep her safe.

When I die, sure 'twill be a gentle death,

For I will die with wonder of her virtues ;

Nothing else shall dissolve me.

*Clean.* 'Twere much better, sir,

Could you prevent their malice.

*Leon.* I'll prevent them,

And die the way I told thee, in the wonder  
Of this good woman. I tell thee there's  
few men

Have such a child : I must thank thee for  
her.

That the strong tie of wedlock should do  
more,



Than nature in her nearest ligaments  
Of blood and propagation! I should never  
Have begot such a daughter of my own :  
A daughter-in-law! law were above nature,  
Were there more such children.

*Clean.* This admiration  
Helps nothing to your safety ; think of that,  
sir.

*Leon.* Had you heard her, Cleanthes, but  
labour  
In the search of means to save my forfeit  
life,

And knew the wise and the sound preserva-  
tions

That she found out, you would redouble all  
My wonder, in your love to her.

*Clean.* The thought,  
The very thought, sir, claims all that from me,  
And she is now possess of't : but, good sir,  
If you have aught received from her advice,  
Let's follow it ; or else let's better think,  
And take the surest course.

*Leon.* I'll tell thee one ;  
She counsels me to fly my severe country ;  
To turn all into treasure, and there build up  
My decaying fortunes in a safer soil,  
Where Epire's law cannot claim me.

*Clean.* And, sir,  
I apprehend it as a safest course,  
And may be easily accomplished ;  
Let us be all most expeditious.  
Every country where we breathe will be our  
own,

Or better soil ; heaven is the roof of all,  
And now, as Epire's situate by this law,  
There is 'twixt us and heaven a dark eclipse.

*Hip.* Oh, then avoid it, sir ; these sad  
events

Follow those black predictions.

*Leon.* I prithee peace ;  
I do allow thy love, Hippolita,  
But must not follow it as counsel, child ;  
I must not shame my country for the law.  
This country here hath bred me, brought  
me up,

And shall I now refuse a grave in her ?  
I am in my second infancy, and children  
Ne'er sleep so sweetly in their nurse's cradle,  
As in their natural mother's.

*Hip.* Ay, but, sir,  
She is unnatural ; then the stepmother's  
To be prefer'd before her.

*Leon.* Tush ! she shall  
Allow it me in despite of her entrails.  
Why, do you think how far from judgment  
'tis,

That I should travel forth to seek a grave  
That is already digg'd for me at home,  
Nay, perhaps find it in my way to seek it ?—

How have I then sought a repentant sorrow ?  
For your dear loves, how have I banish'd you  
From your country ever ? With my base  
attempt,

How have I beggar'd you in wasting that  
Which only for your sakes I bred together ;  
Buried my name in Epire which I built  
Upon this frame, to live for ever in ?  
What a base coward shall I be, to fly from  
That enemy which every minute meets me,  
And thousand odds he had not long van-  
quish'd me

Before this hour of battle ! Fly my death !  
I will not be so false unto your states,  
Nor fainting to the man that's yet in me :  
I'll meet him bravely ; I cannot (this know-  
ing) fear

That, when I am gone hence, I shall be there.  
Come, I have days of preparation left.

*Clean.* Good sir, hear me :  
I have a genius that has prompted me,  
And I have almost form'd it into words—  
'Tis done, pray you observe them ; I can  
conceal you ;  
And yet not leave your country.

*Leon.* Tush ! it cannot be,  
Without a certain peril on us all.

*Clean.* Danger must be hazarded, rather  
than accept  
A sure destruction. You have a lodge, sir,  
So far remote from way of passengers,  
That seldom any mortal eye does greet with't ;  
And yet so sweetly situate with thickets,  
Built with such cunning labyrinths within,  
As if the provident heavens, foreseeing  
cruelty,

Had bid you frame it to this purpose only.

*Leon.* Fie, fie ! 'tis dangerous,—and trea-  
son too,

To abuse the law.

*Hip.* 'Tis holy care, sir,  
Of your dear life, which is your own to keep,  
But not your own to lose, either in will  
Or negligence.

*Clean.* Call you it treason, sir ?  
I had been then a traitor unto you,  
Had I forgot this ; beseech you, accept of it ;  
It is secure, and a duty to yourself.

*Leon.* What a coward will you make me !  
*Clean.* You mistake ;

'Tis noble courage, now you fight with  
death ;  
And yield not to him till you stoop under  
him.

*Leon.* This must needs open to discovery,  
And then what torture follows ?

*Clean.* By what means, sir ?  
Why, there is but one body in all this  
counsel,

Which cannot betray itself: we two are one,  
One soul, one body, one heart, that think  
one thought;

And yet we two are not completely one,  
But as I have derived myself from you.—  
Who shall betray us where there is no  
second?

*Hip.* You must not mistrust my faith,  
though my sex plead

Weakness and frailty for me.

*Leon.* Oh, I dare not.

But where's the means that must make  
answer for me?

I cannot be lost without a full account,  
And what must pay that reckoning?

*Clean.* Oh, sir, we will

Keep solemn obits for your funeral;  
We'll seem to weep, and seem to joy withal,  
That death so gently has prevented you  
The law's sharp rigour; and this no mortal  
ear shall

Participate the knowledge of.

*Leon.* Ha, ha, ha!

This will be a sportive fine demur,  
If the error be not found.

*Clean.* Pray doubt of none.

Your company and best provision,  
Must be no further furnish'd than by us;  
And, in the interim, your solitude may  
Converse with heaven, and fairly [so] prepare  
[For that] which was too violent and raging  
Thrown headlong on you.

*Leon.* Still, there are some doubts  
Of the discovery; yet I do allow it.

*Hip.* Will you not mention now the cost  
and charge,

Which will be in your keeping!

*Leon.* That will be somewhat,  
Which you might save too.

*Clean.* With his will against him,

What foe is more to man than man himself?  
Are you resolved, sir?

*Leon.* I am, Cleanthes:

If by this means I do get a reprieve,  
And cozen death awhile, when he shall come  
Armed in his own power to give the blow,  
I'll smile upon him then, and laughing go.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—*Before the Palace.*

*Enter Evander, Courtiers, and Cratilus.*

*Evan.* Executioner!

*Crat.* My lord.

*Evan.* How did old Diocles take his  
death?

*Crat.* As weeping brides receive their  
joys at night;

With trembling, yet with patience.

*Evan.* Why, 'twas well.

*1 Court.* Nay, I knew my father would  
do well, my lord,

Whene'er he came to die; I'd that opinion  
of him,

Which made me the more willing to part  
from him;

He was not fit to live in the world, indeed  
Any time these ten years, my lord,

But I would not say so much.

*Evan.* No! you did not well in't,

For he that's all spent, is ripe for death at  
all hours,

And does but trifle time out.

*1 Court.* Troth, my lord,

I would I'd known your mind nine years ago.

*Evan.* Our law is fourscore years, because  
we judge

Dotage complete then, as unfruitfulness

In women, at threescore; marry, if the son  
Can, within compass, bring good solid proofs  
Of his own father's weakness, and unfitness  
To live, or sway the living, though he want  
five

Or ten years of his number, that's not it;  
His defect makes him fourscore, and 'tis fit

He dies when he deserves; for every act  
Is in effect then, when the cause is ripe.

*2 Court.* An admirable prince! how rarely  
he talks!

Oh that we'd known this, lads! What a  
time did we endure

In two-penny commons, and in boots twice  
vamp'd!

*1 Court.* Now we have two pair a week,  
and yet not thankful;

'Twill be a fine world for them, sirs, that  
come after us.

*2 Court.* Ay, an they knew it.

*1 Court.* Peace, let them never know it.

*3 Court.* A pox, there be young heirs will  
soon smell't out.

*2 Court.* 'Twill come to them by instinct,  
man: may your grace

Never be old, you stand so well for youth!

*Evan.* Why now, methinks, our court  
looks like a spring,

Sweet, fresh, and fashionable, now the old  
weeds are gone.

*1 Court.* It is as a court should be:

Gloss and good clothes, my lord, no matter  
for merit;

And herein your law proves a provident act,  
When men pass not the palsy of their  
tongues,

Nor colour in their cheeks.

*Evan.* But women,  
By that law, should live long, for they're  
ne'er past it.

1 *Court.* It will have heats though, when  
they see the painting  
Go an inch deep i' the wrinkle, and take up  
A box more than their gossips: but for  
men, my lord,  
That should be the sole bravery of a palace,  
To walk with hollow eyes and long white  
beards,

As if a prince dwelt in a land of goats;  
With clothes as if they sat on their backs on  
purpose

To arraign a fashion, and condemn't to exile;  
Their pockets in their sleeves, as if they laid  
Their ear to avarice, and heard the devil  
whisper!

Now ours lie downward, here, close to the  
flank;

Right spending pockets, as a son's should be,  
That lives i' the fashion; where our diseased  
fathers,

Worrick with the sciatica and aches,  
Brought up your paned hose first, which  
ladies laugh'd at,

Giving no reverence to the place lies ruin'd:  
They love a doublet that's three hours a  
buttoning,

And sits so close makes a man groan again,  
And his soul mutter half a day; yet these  
are those,

That carry sway and worth: prick'd up in  
clothes,

Why should we fear our rising?

*Evan.* You but wrong  
Our kindness, and your own deserts, to doubt  
on't.

Has not our law made you rich before your  
time?

Our countenance then can make you honour-  
able.

1 *Court.* We'll spare for no cost, sir, to  
appear worthy.

*Evan.* Why you're i' the noble way then,  
for the most

Are but appearers; worth itself is lost,  
And bravery stands for't.

*Enter Creon, Antigona, and Simonides.*

1 *Court.* Look, look, who comes here!  
I smell death, and another courtier,  
Simonides.

2 *Court.* Sim!

*Sim.* Pish! I'm not for you yet,  
Your company's too costly; after the old man's  
Dispatch'd, I shall have time to talk with you;  
I shall come into the fashion you shall see too,

After a day or two; in the mean time,  
I am not for your company.

*Evan.* Old Creon, you have been expected  
long;

Sure you're above fourscore.

*Sim.* Upon my life,  
Not four and twenty hours, my lord; I  
search'd

The church-book yesterday. Does your grace  
think

I'd let my father wrong the law, my lord?  
'Twere pity o' my life then! no, your act  
Shall not receive a minute's wrong by him,  
While I live, sir; and he's so just himself too,  
I know he would not offer't:—here he  
stands.

*Creon.* 'Tis just I die, indeed; for I confess  
I am troublesome to life now, and the state  
Can hope for nothing worthy from me now,  
Either in force or counsel; I've o' late  
Employ'd myself quite from the world,  
and he

That once begins to serve his Maker faith-  
fully,

Can never serve a worldly prince well after;  
'Tis clean another way.

*Ant.* Oh, give not confidence  
To all hespeaks, my lord, in his own injury.  
His preparation only for the next world,  
Makes him talk wildly, to his wrong, of this;  
He is not lost in judgment.

*Sim.* She spoils all again. [*Aside.*]

*Ant.* Deserving any way for state employ-  
ment,

*Sim.* Mother—

*Ant.* His very household laws prescribed  
at home by him,

Are able to conform seven Christian king-  
doms,

They are so wise and virtuous.

*Sim.* Mother, I say—

*Ant.* I know your laws extend not to  
desert, sir,

But to unnecessary years; and, my lord,  
His are not such; though they show white,  
they are worthy,

Judicious, able, and religious.

*Sim.* Mother,

I'll help you to a courtier of nineteen.

*Ant.* Away, unnatural!

*Sim.* Then I am no fool, sure,

For to be natural at such a time

Were a fool's part, indeed.

*Ant.* Your grace's pity,

And 'tis but fit and just.

*Creon.* The law, my lord,

And that's the justest way.

*Sim.* Well said, father, i' faith!

Thou wert ever juster than my mother still.

*Evan.* Come hither, sir.

*Sim.* My lord.

*Evan.* What are those orders?

*Ant.* Worth observation, sir,  
So please you hear them read.

*Sim.* The woman speaks she knows not  
what, my lord :

He make a law, poor man! he bought a  
TABLE, indeed,

Only to learn to die by't, there's the busi-  
ness, now ;

Wherein there are some precepts for a son  
too,

How he should learn to live, but I ne'er  
look'd on't :

For, when he's dead, I shall live well enough,  
And keep a better TABLE than that, I trow.

*Evan.* And is that all, sir?

*Sim.* All, I vow, my lord ;  
Save a few running admonitions  
Upon cheese-trenchers, as—

*Take heed of whoring, shun it ;*

*'Tis like a cheese too strong of the runnet.*  
And such calves' maws of wit and admonition,  
Good to catch mice with, but not sons and  
heirs ;

They are not so easily caught.

*Evan.* Agent for death !

*Crat.* Your will, my lord ?

*Evan.* Take hence that pile of years,  
Forfeit before with unprofitable age,  
And, with the rest, from the high promon-  
tory,

Cast him into the sea.

*Creon.* 'Tis noble justice !

[*Exit Crat. with Creon.*]

*Ant.* 'Tis cursed tyranny !

*Sim.* Peace ! take heed, mother ;  
You've but short time to be cast down your-  
self ;

And let a young courtier do't, an you be wise,  
In the mean time.

*Ant.* Hence, slave !

*Sim.* Well, seven-and-fifty,  
You have but three years to scold, then  
comes your payment.

[*Exit Antigona.*]

1 *Court.* Simonides.

*Sim.* Pish, I'm not brave enough to hold  
you talk yet,  
Give a man time, I have a suit a making.

2 *Court.* We love thy form first ; brave  
clothes will come, man.

*Sim.* I'll make them come else, with a  
mischief to them,  
As other gallants do, that have less left them.

[*Recorders within.*]

*Evan.* Hark ! whence those sounds ?  
what's that ?

1 *Court.* Some funeral.  
It seems, my lord ; and young Cleanthes  
follows.

*Enter a Funeral Procession ; the hearse fol-  
lowed by Cleanthes and Hippolita, gaily  
dressed.*

*Evan.* Cleanthes !

2 *Court.* 'Tis, my lord, and in the place  
Of a chief mourner too, but strangely habited.

*Evan.* Yet suitable to his behaviour ;  
mark it ;

He comes all the way smiling, do you ob-  
serve it ;

I never saw a corse so joyfully followed :  
Light colours and light cheeks !—who should  
this be ?

'Tis a thing worth resolving.

*Sim.* One, belike,

That doth participate this our present joy.

*Evan.* Cleanthes.

*Clean.* Oh, my lord !

*Evan.* He laugh'd outright now ;  
Was ever such a contrariety seen  
In natural courses yet, nay profess'd openly ?

1 *Court.* I have known a widow laugh  
closely, my lord,

Under her handkerchief, when t'other part  
Of her old face has wept like rain in sun-  
shine ;

But all the face to laugh apparently,  
Was never seen yet.

*Sim.* Yes, mine did once.

*Clean.* 'Tis, of a heavy time, the joy-  
full'st day

That ever son was born to.

*Evan.* How can that be ?

*Clean.* I joy to make it plain,—my father's  
dead.

*Evan.* Dead !

2 *Court.* Old Leonides !

*Clean.* In his last month dead :  
He beguiled cruel law the sweetliest,  
That ever age was blest to.—  
It grieves me that a tear should fall upon't,  
Being a thing so joyful, but his memory  
Will work it out, I see ; when his poor  
heart broke,

I did not do so much : but leap'd for joy  
So mountingly, I touch'd the stars, me-  
thought ;

I would not hear of blacks, I was so light,  
But chose a colour, orient like my mind :  
For blacks are often such dissembling  
mourners,

There is no credit given to't ; it has lost  
All reputation by false sons and widows.  
Now I would have men know what I re-  
semble,

A truth, indeed ; 'tis joy clad like a joy,  
Which is more honest than a cunning grief,  
That's only faced with sables for a show,  
But gawdy-hearted : When I saw death come  
So ready to deceive you, sir,—forgive me,  
I could not choose but be entirely merry,  
And yet to see now !—of a sudden,  
Naming but death, I shew myself a mortal,  
That's never constant to one passion long.  
I wonder whence that tear came, when I  
smiled

In the production on't ; sorrow's a thief,  
That can, when joy looks on, steal forth a  
grief.

But, gracious leave, my lord ; when I've  
perform'd

My last poor duty to my father's bones,  
I shall return your servant.

*Evan.* Well, perform it,  
The law is satisfied ; they can but die :  
And by his death, Cleanthes, you gain well,  
A rich and fair revenue.

[*Flourish. Excunt Duke, Courtiers, &c.*  
*Sim.* I would I had e'en  
Another father, condition he did the like.

*Clean.* I have past it bravely now ; how  
blest was I,  
To have the duke in sight ! now 'tis confirm'd,

Past fear or doubts confirm'd : on, on I say,  
Him that brought me to man, I bring to clay.

[*Exit Funeral Procession, followed by  
Cleanthes and Hippolita.*

*Sim.* I am rapt now in a contemplation,  
Even at the very sight of yonder hearse ;  
I do but think what a fine thing 'tis now  
To live, and follow some seven uncles  
thus,

As many cousin-germans, and such people,  
That will leave legacies ; pox ! I'd see them  
hang'd else,  
Ere I'd follow one of them, an they could  
find the way.

Now I've enough to begin to be horrible  
covetous.

*Enter* Butler, Tailor, Bailiff, Cook, Coach-  
man, and Footman.

*But.* We come to know your worship's  
pleasure, sir,  
Having long serv'd your father, how your  
good will  
Stands towards our entertainment.

*Sim.* Not a jot, i'faith :  
My father wore cheap garments, he might  
do't ;

I shall have all my clothes come home to-  
morrow,

They will eat up all you, an there were more  
of you, sirs.

To keep you six at livery, and still munching !  
*Tail.* Why, I'm a tailor ; you have most  
need of me, sir.

*Sim.* Thou mad'st my father's clothes,  
that I confess ;  
But what son and heir will have his father's  
tailor,

Unless he have a mind to be well laugh'd at ?  
Thou'st been so used to wide long-side  
things, that when

I come to truss, I shall have the waist of my  
doublet

Lie on my buttocks, a sweet sight !

*But.* I a butler.

*Sim.* There's least need of thee, fellow ; I  
shall ne'er drink at home, I shall be so drunk  
abroad.

*But.* But a cup of small beer will do well  
next morning, sir.

*Sim.* I grant you ; but what need I keep  
so big a knave for a cup of small beer ?

*Cook.* Butler, you have your answer :  
inarry, sir, a cook

I know your mastership cannot be without.

*Sim.* The more ass art thou to think so ;  
for what should I do with a mountebank,  
no drink in my house?—the banishing the  
butler might have been a warning for thee,  
unless thou mean'st to choak me.

*Cook.* In the meantime you have choak'd  
me, methinks.

*Bail.* These are superfluous vanities,  
indeed,

And so accounted of in these days, sir ;  
But then, your bailiff to receive your rents—

*Sim.* I prithee hold thy tongue, fellow, I  
shall take a course to spend them faster than  
thou canst reckon them ; 'tis not the rents  
must serve my turn, unless I mean to be  
laugh'd at ; if a man should be seen out of  
slash-me, let him ne'er look to be a right  
gallant. But, sirrah, with whom is your  
business ?

*Coach.* Your good mastership.

*Sim.* You have stood silent all this while,  
like men

That know your strengths : in these days,  
none of you

Can want employment ; you can win me  
wagers,

Footman, in running races.

*Foot.* I dare boast it, sir.

*Sim.* And when my bets are all come in,  
and store,

Then, coachman, you can hurry me to my  
whore.

*Coach.* I'll firik them into foam else.

*Sim.* Speaks brave matter :  
And I'll firk some too, or't shall cost hot  
water.

[*Exeunt* Simonides, Coachman, and  
Footman.

*Cook.* Why, here's an age to make a cook  
a ruffian,  
And scald the devil indeed ! do strange mad  
things,

Make mutton-pasties of dog's flesh,  
Bakc snakes for lamprey pies, and cats for  
conies.

*But.* Come, will you be ruled by a butler's  
advice once? for we must make up our  
fortunes somewhere now, as the case stands :  
let's e'en, therefore, go seek out widows of  
nine and fifty, an we can, that's within a  
year of their deaths, and so we shall be  
sure to be quickly rid of them ; for a year's  
enough of conscience to be troubled with a  
wife, for any man living.

*Cook.* Oracle butler ! oracle butler ! he puts  
down all the doctors o' the name. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*A room in Creon's House.*

*Enter* Eugenia and Parthenia.

*Eug.* Parthenia.

*Parth.* Mother.

*Eug.* I shall be troubled  
This six months with an old clog ; would  
the law

Had been cut one year shorter !

*Parth.* Did you call, forsooth ?

*Eug.* Yes, you must make some spoonmeat  
for your father, [*Exit* Parthenia.  
And warm three nightcaps for him. Out  
upon't !

The mere conceit turns a young woman's  
stomach.

His slippers must be warm'd, in August too,  
And his gown girt to him in the very dog-days,  
When every mastiff lolls out's tongue for heat.  
Would not this vex a beauty of nineteen now?  
Alas ! I should be tumbling in cold baths now,  
Under each armpit a fine bean-flower bag,  
To screw out whiteness when I list—

And some sev'n of the properest men in the  
dukedom

Making a banquet ready i' the next room for  
me ;

Where he that gets the first kiss is enviéd,  
And stands upon his guard a fortnight after.  
This is a life for nineteen ! 'tis but justice :  
For old men, whose great acts stand in their  
minds,

And nothing in their bodies, do ne'er think  
A woman young enough for their desire ;  
And we young wenches, that have mother-  
wits,

And love to marry muck first, and man after,  
Do never think old men are old enough,  
That we may soon be rid o' them ; there's  
our quittance.

I've waited for the happy hour this two years,  
And, if death be so unkind to let him live  
still,

All that time I have lost.

*Enter* Courtiers.

1 *Court.* Young lady !

2 *Court.* O sweet precious bud of beauty !  
Troth, she smells over all the house, me-  
thinks.

1 *Court.* The sweetbriar's but a counter-  
feit to her—

It does exceed you only in the prickle,  
But that it shall not long, if you'll be ruled,  
lady.

*Eug.* What means this sudden visitation,  
gentlemen ?

So passing well perfumed too ! who's your  
milliner ?

1 *Court.* Love, and thy beauty, widow.

*Eug.* Widow, sir ?

1 *Court.* 'Tis sure, and that's as good : in  
troth we're suitors ;

We come a wooing, wench ; plain dealing's  
best.

*Eug.* A wooing ! what, before my hus-  
band's dead ?

2 *Court.* Let's lose no time ; six months  
will have an end ;

I know't by all the bonds that e'er I made  
yet.

*Eug.* That's a sure knowledge ; but it  
holds not here, sir.

1 *Court.* Do not we know the craft of you  
young tumblers ?

That when you wed an old man, you think  
upon

Another husband as you are marrying of  
him ;—

We, knowing your thoughts, made bold to  
see you.

*Enter* Simonides richly drest, and  
Coachman.

*Eug.* How wondrous right he speaks !  
'twas my thought, indeed.

*Sim.* By your leave, sweet widow, do you  
lack any gallants ?

*Eug.* Widow, again ! 'tis a comfort to be  
call'd so.

1 *Court.* Who's this ? Simonides ?

2 *Court.* Brave Sim, i' faith !

*Sim.* Coachman !

*Coach.* Sir.

*Sim.* Have an especial care of my new mares ;

They say, sweet widow, he that loves a horse well,

Must needs love a widow well.—When dies thy husband ?

Is't not July next ?

*Eug.* Oh, you are too hot, sir !  
Pray cool yourself, and take September with you.

*Sim.* September ! oh, I was but two bows wide.

*r Court.* Simonides.

*Sim.* I can entreat you, gallants, I'm in fashion too.

*Enter Lysander.*

*Lys.* Ha ! whence this herd of folly ? what are you ?

*Sim.* Well-willers to your wife ; pray 'tend your book, sir ;

We've nothing to say to you, you may go die, For here be those in place that can supply.

*Lys.* What's thy wild business here ?

*Sim.* Old man, I'll tell thee ;

I come to beg the reversion of thy wife : I think these gallants be of my mind too.—

But thou art but a dead man, therefore what should a man do talking with thee ? Come, widow, stand to your tackling.

*Lys.* Impious blood-hounds !

*Sim.* Let the ghost talk, ne'er mind him.

*Lys.* Shames of nature !

*Sim.* Alas, poor ghost ! consider what the man is.

*Lys.* Monsters unnatural ! you that have been covetous

Of your own father's death, gape you for mine now ?

Cannot a poor old man, that now can reckon Even all the hours he has to live, live quiet, For such wild beasts as these, that neither hold

A certainty of good within themselves, But scatter others' comforts that are ripen'd For holy uses ? is hot youth so hasty, It will not give an old man leave to die, And leave a widow first, but will make one, The husband looking on ? May your destructions

Come all in hasty figures to your souls ! Your wealth depart in haste, to overtake Your honesties, that died when you were infants !

May your male seed be hasty spendthrifts too, Your daughters hasty sinners, and diseased Ere they be thought at years to welcome misery !

And may you never know what leisure is,

But at repentance !—I am too uncharitable, Too foul ; I must go cleanse myself with prayers.

These are the plagues of fondness to old men, We're punish'd home with what we dote upon.

[*Exit.*

*Sim.* So, so ! the ghost is vanish'd : now, your answer, lady.

*Eug.* Excuse me, gentlemen ; 'twere as much impudence

In me, to give you a kind answer yet, As madness to produce a churlish one.

I could say now, come a month hence, sweet gentlemen,

Or two, or three, or when you will, indeed ; But I say no such thing ; I set no time, Nor is it mannerly to deny any.

I'll carry an even hand to all the world ; Let other women make what haste they will, What's that to me ? but I profess unfeignedly, I'll have my husband dead before I marry ; Ne'er look for other answer at my hands.

*Sim.* Would he were hang'd, for my part, looks for other !

*Eug.* I'm at a word.

*Sim.* And I am at a blow, then ; I'll lay you o' the lips, and leave you.

[*Kisses her.*

*r Court.* Well struck, *Sim.*

*Sim.* He that dares say he'll mend it, I'll strike him.

*r Court.* He would betray himself to be a botcher,

That goes about to mend it.

*Eug.* Gentlemen,

You know my mind ; I bar you not my house :

But if you choose out hours more seasonably, You may have entertainment.

*Re-enter Parthenia.*

*Sim.* What will she do hereafter, when she is a widow,

Keeps open house already ?

[*Excunt Simonides and Courtiers.*

*Eug.* How now, girl !

*Parth.* Those feather'd fools that hither took their flight,

Have grieved my father much.

*Eug.* Speak well of youth, wench, While thou'st a day to live ; 'tis youth must make thee,

And when youth fails, wise women will make it ;

But always take age first, to make thee rich :

That was my counsel ever, and then youth Will make thee sport enough all thy life after.

'Tis the time's policy, weuch ; what is't to bide

A little hardness for a pair of years, or so ?

A man whose only strength lies in his breath,

Weakness in all parts else, thy bedfellow,

A cough o' the lungs, or say a wheezing matter ;

Then shake off chains, and dance all thy life after ?

*Parth.* Every one to their liking ; but I say

An honest man's worth all, be he young or gray.

Yonder's my cousin.

[*Exit.*

*Enter Hippolita.*

*Eug.* Art, I must use thee now ;  
Dissembling is the best help for a virtue,  
That ever women had ; it saves their credit oft.

*Hip.* How now, cousin !

What, weeping ?

*Eug.* Can you blame me, when the time  
Of my dear love and husband now draws on ?  
I study funeral tears against the day  
I must be a sad widow.

*Hip.* In troth, Eugenia, I have cause to weep too ;

But, when I visit, I come comfortably,  
And look to be so quited :—yet more sobbing ?

*Eug.* Oh !

The greatest part of your affliction's past,  
The worst of mine's to come ; I have one to die ;

Your husband's father is dead, and fixed in his

Eternal peace, past the sharp tyrannous blow.

*Hip.* You must use patience, coz.

*Eug.* Tell me of patience !

*Hip.* You have example for't, in me and many.

*Eug.* Yours was a father-in-law, but mine a husband :

O, for a woman that could love, and live  
With an old man, mine is a jewel, cousin ;  
So quietly he lies by one, so still !

*Hip.* Alas ! I have a secret lodged within me,

Which now will out in pity :—I cannot hold.

[*Aside.*

*Eug.* One that will not disturb me in my sleep

For a whole month together, less it be  
With those diseases age is subject to,  
As aches, coughs, and pains, and these,  
Heaven knows,

Against his will too :—he's the quietest man,  
Especially in bed.

*Hip.* Be comforted.

*Eug.* How can I, lady ?

None know the terror of an husband's loss,  
But they that fear to lose him.

*Hip.* Fain would I keep it in, but 'twill not be ;

She is my kinswoman, and I am pitiful.

I must impart a good, if I know it once,

To them that stand in need on't ; I'm like one

Loves not to banquet with a joy alone,

My friends must partake too. [*Aside.*—  
Prithee, cease, cousin ;

If your love be so boundless, which is rare,  
In a young woman, in these days, I tell you,  
To one so much past service as your husband,

There is a way to beguile law, and help you ;  
My husband found it out first.

*Eug.* Oh, sweet cousin !

*Hip.* You may conceal him, and give out his death

Within the time ; order his funeral too ;

We had it so for ours, I praise heav'n for't,  
And he's alive and safe.

*Eug.* O blessed coz,  
How thou revivest me !

*Hip.* We daily see

The good old man, and feed him twice a day.

Methinks, it is the sweetest joy to cherish him,

That ever life yet shew'd me.

*Eug.* So should I think,

A dainty thing to nurse an old man well !

*Hip.* And then we have his prayers and daily blessing ;

And we two live so lovingly upon it,

His son and I, and so contentedly,

You cannot think unless you tasted on't.

*Eug.* No, I warrant you. Oh, loving cousin,

What a great sorrow hast thou eased me of ?  
A thousand thanks go with thee !

*Hip.* I have a suit to you,

I must not have you weep when I am gone. [*Exit.*

*Eug.* No, if I do ne'er trust me. Easy fool,  
Thou hast put thyself into my power for ever ;

Take heed of angering of me : I conceal !

I feign a funeral ! I keep my husband !

'Las ! I've been thinking any time these two years,

I have kept him too long already.—

I'll go count o'er my suitors, that's my business,



And prick the man down ; I've six months to do't,  
But could dispatch it in one, were I put to't.  
[Exit.]

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*Before the Church.*

*Enter Gnotho and Clerk.*

*Gnoth.* You have search'd over the parish-chronicle, sir?

*Clerk.* Yes, sir ; I have found out the true age and date of the party you wot on.

*Gnoth.* Pray you, be cover'd, sir.

*Clerk.* When you have shewed me the way, sir.

*Gnoth.* Oh, sir, remember yourself, you are a clerk.

*Clerk.* A small clerk, sir.

*Gnoth.* Likely to be the wiser man, sir ; for your greatest clerks are not always so, as 'tis reported.

*Clerk.* You are a great man in the parish, sir.

*Gnoth.* I understand myself so much the better, sir ; for all the best in the parish pay duties to the clerk, and I would owe you none, sir.

*Clerk.* Since you'll have it so, I'll be the first to hide my head.

*Gnoth.* Mine is a capcase : now to our business in hand. Good luck, I hope ; I long to be resolved.

*Clerk.* Look you, sir, this is that cannot deceive you :

This is the dial that goes ever true ;  
You may say *ipse dixit* upon this witness,  
And it is good in law too.

*Gnoth.* Pray you, let's hear what it speaks.

*Clerk.* Mark, sir.—*Agatha, the daughter of Pollux*, (this is your wife's name, and the name of her father,) *born*—

*Gnoth.* Whose daughter, say you?

*Clerk.* The daughter of Pollux.

*Gnoth.* I take it his name was Bollux.

*Clerk.* Pollux the orthography, I assure you, sir ; the word is corrupted else.

*Gnoth.* Well, on sir,—of Pollux ; now come on, Castor.

*Clerk.* *Born in an. 1540*, and now 'tis 99. By this infallible record, sir, (let me see,) she's now just fifty-nine, and wants but one.

*Gnoth.* I am sorry she wants so much.

*Clerk.* Why, sir? alas, 'tis nothing ; 'tis but so many months, so many weeks, so many—

*Gnoth.* Do not deduct it to days, 'twill be the more tedious ; and to measure it by hourglasses were intolerable.

*Clerk.* Do not think on it, sir ; half the time goes away in sleep, 'tis half the year in nights.

*Gnoth.* O, you mistake me, neighbour, I am loth to leave the good old woman ; if she were gone now it would not grieve me, for what is a year, alas, but a lingering torment? and were it not better she were out of her pain? It must needs be a grief to us both.

*Clerk.* I would I knew how to ease you, neighbour!

*Gnoth.* You speak kindly, truly, and if you say but Amen to it, (which is a word that I know you are perfect in,) it might be done. Clerks are the most indifferent honest men,—for to the marriage of your enemy, or the burial of your friend, the curses or the blessings to you are all one ; you say Amen to all.

*Clerk.* With a better will to the one than the other, neighbour : but I shall be glad to say Amen to anything might do you a pleasure.

*Gnoth.* There is, first, something above your duty : [*Gives him money.*] now I would have you set forward the clock a little, to help the old woman out of her pain.

*Clerk.* I will speak to the sexton ; but the day will go ne'er the faster for that.

*Gnoth.* Oh, neighbour, you do not conceit me, not the jack of the clock-house ; the hand of the dial, I mean.—Come, I know you, being a great clerk, cannot choose but have the art to cast a figure.

*Clerk.* Never, indeed, neighbour ; I never had the judgment to cast a figure.

*Gnoth.* I'll shew you on the back side of your book, look you,—what figure's this?

*Clerk.* Four with a cipher, that's forty.

*Gnoth.* So! forty ; what's this, now?

*Clerk.* The cipher is turn'd into 9 by adding the tail, which makes forty-nine.

*Gnoth.* Very well understood : what is't now?

*Clerk.* The four is turn'd into three ; 'tis now thirty-nine.

*Gnoth.* Very well understood ; and can you do this again?

*Clerk.* Oh! easily, sir.

*Gnoth.* A wager of that! let me see the place of my wife's age again.

*Clerk.* Look you, sir, 'tis here, 1540.

*Gnoth.* Forty drachmas, you do not turn that forty into thirty-nine.

*Clerk.* A match with you.

*Gnoth.* Done! and you shall keep stakes yourself : there they are.

*Clerk.* A firm match—but stay, sir, now I

consider it, I shall add a year to your wife's age; let me see—*Scirophorion* the 17,—and now 'tis *Hecatombaion* the 11. If I alter this, your wife will have but a month to live by law.

*Gnoth.* That's all one, sir; either do it, or pay me my wager.

*Clerk.* Will you lose your wife before you lose your wager?

*Gnoth.* A man may get two wives before half so much money by them; will you do it?

*Clerk.* I hope you will conceal me, for 'tis flat corruption.

*Gnoth.* Nay, sir, I would have you keep counsel; for I lose my money by't, and should be laugh'd at for my labour, if it should be known.

*Clerk.* Well, sir, there!—'tis done; as perfect a 39 as can be found in black and white; but mum, sir,—there's danger in this figure-casting.

*Gnoth.* Ay, sir, I know that: better men than you have been thrown over the bar for as little; the best is, you can be but thrown out of the belfry.

*Enter the Cook, Tailor, Bailiff, and Butler.*

*Clerk.* Lock close, here comes company; asses have ears as well as pitchers.

*Cook.* Oh, Gnotho, how is't? here's a trick of discarded cards of us! we were rank'd with coats, as long as old master lived.

*Gnoth.* And is this then the end of serving-men?

*Cook.* Yes, 'faith, this is the end of serving men: a wise man were better serve one God than all the men in the world.

*Gnoth.* 'Twas well spoke of a cook. And are all fallen into fasting-days and Ember-weeks, that cooks are out of use?

*Tail.* And all tailors will be cut into lists and shreds; if this world hold, we shall grow both out of request.

*But.* And why not butlers as well as tailors? if they can go naked, let them neither eat nor drink.

*Clerk.* That's strange, methinks, a lord should turn away his tailor, of all men:—and how dost thou, tailor?

*Tail.* I do so, so; but, indeed, all our wants are long of this publican, my lord's bailiff; for had he been rent-gatherer still, our places had held together still, that are now seam-rent, nay crack'd in the whole piece.

*Bail.* Sir, if my lord had not sold his lands that claim his rents, I should still have been the rent-gatherer.

*Cook.* The truth is, except the coachman and the footman, all serving-men are out of request.

*Gnoth.* Nay, say not so, for you were never in more request than now, for requesting is but a kind of a begging; for when you say, I beseech your worship's charity, 'tis all one as if you say I request it; and in that kind of requesting, I am sure serving-men were never in more request.

*Cook.* Troth, he says true: well, let that pass, we are upon a better adventure. I see, Gnotho, you have been before us; we came to deal with this merchant for some commodities.

*Clerk.* With me, sir? anything that I can.

*But.* Nay, we have looked out our wives already: marry, to you we come to know the prices, that is, to know their ages; for so much reverence we bear to age, that the more aged, they shall be the more dear to us.

*Tail.* The truth is, every man has laid by his widow; so they be lame enough, blind enough, and old enough, 'tis good enough.

*Clerk.* I keep the town-stock; if you can but name them, I can tell their ages to a day.

*All.* We can tell their fortunes to an hour, then.

*Clerk.* Only you must pay for turning of the leaves.

*Cook.* Oh, bountifully.—Come, mine first.

*But.* The butler before the cook, while you live; there's few that eat before they drink in a morning.

*Tail.* Nay, then the tailor puts in his needle of priority, for men do clothe themselves before they either drink or eat.

*Bail.* I will strive for no place; the longer ere I marry my wife, the older she will be, and nearer her end and my ends.

*Clerk.* I will serve you all, gentlemen, if you will have patience.

*Gnoth.* I commend your modesty, sir; you are a bailiff, whose place is to come behind other men, as it were in the bum of all the rest.

*Bail.* So, sir! and you were about this business too, seeking out for a widow?

*Gnoth.* Alack! no, sir; I am a married man, and have those cares upon me that you would fain run into.

*Bail.* What, an old rich wife! any man in this age desires such a care.

*Gnoth.* Troth, sir, I'll put a venture with you, if you will; I have a lusty old quean to my wife, sound of wind and limb, yet I'll give out to take three for one at the marriage of my second wife.

*Bail.* Ay, sir, but how near is she to the law?

*Gnoth.* Take that at hazard, sir; there must be time, you know, to get a new. Unseen, unseen, I take three to one.

*Bail.* Two to one I'll give, if she have but two teeth in her head.

*Gnoth.* A match; there's five drachmas for ten at my next wife.

*Bail.* A match.

*Cook.* I shall be fitted bravely: fifty-eight, and upwards; 'tis but a year and a half, and I may chance make friends, and beg a year of the duke.

*But.* Hey, boys! I am made sir butler; my wife that shall be wants but two months of her time; it shall be one ere I marry her, and then the next will be a honey moon.

*Tail.* I outstrip you all; I shall have but six weeks of Lent, if I get my widow, and then comes eating-tide, plump and gorgeous.

*Gnoth.* This tailor will be a man, if ever there were any.

*Bail.* Now comes my turn, I hope, good-man Finis, you that are still at the end of all, with a *so be it*. Well now, sirs, do you venture there as I have done; and I'll venture here after you: Good luck, I beseech thee!

*Clerk.* Amen, sir.

*Bail.* That deserves a fee already—there 'tis; please me, and have a better.

*Clerk.* Amen, sir.

*Cook.* How, two for one at your next wife! is the old one living?

*Gnoth.* You have a fair match, I offer you no foul one; if death make not haste to call her, she'll make none to go to him.

*But.* I know her, she's a lusty woman; I'll take the venture.

*Gnoth.* There's five drachmas for ten at my next wife.

*But.* A bargain.

*Cook.* Nay, then we'll be all merchants: give me.

*Tail.* And me.

*But.* What, has the bailiff sped?

*Bail.* I am content; but none of you shall know my happiness.

*Clerk.* As well as any of you all, believe it, sir.

*Bail.* Oh, clerk, you are to speak last always.

*Clerk.* I'll remember't hereafter, sir. You have done with me, gentlemen?

*Enter Agatha.*

*All.* For this time, honest register.

*Clerk.* Fare you well then; if you do, I'll cry Amen to it. [*Exit.*]

*Cook.* Look you, sir, is not this your wife?

*Gnoth.* My first wife, sir.

*But.* Nay, then we have made a good match on't; if she have no froward disease, the woman may live this dozen years by her age.

*Tail.* I'm afraid she's broken-winded, she holds silence so long.

*Cook.* We'll now leave our venture to the event; I must a wooing.

*But.* I'll but buy me a new dagger, and overtake you.

*Bail.* So we must all; for he that goes a wooing to a widow without a weapon, will never get her.

[*Exeunt all but Gnoth and Agatha.*]

*Gnoth.* Oh, wife, wife!

*Ag.* What ail you, man, you speak so passionately?

*Gnoth.* 'Tis for thy sake, sweet wife: who would think so lusty an old woman, with reasonable good teeth, and her tongue in as perfect use as ever it was, should be so near her time?—but the Fates will have it so.

*Ag.* What's the matter, man? you do amaze me.

*Gnoth.* 'Thou art not sick neither, I warrant thee.

*Ag.* Not that I know of, sure.

*Gnoth.* What pity 'tis a woman should be so near her end, and yet not sick!

*Ag.* Near her end, man! tush, I can guess at that;

I have years good yet of life in the remainder: I want two yet at least of the full number; Then the law, I know, craves impotent and useless,

And not the able women.

*Gnoth.* Ay, alas! I see thou hast been repairing time as well as thou couldst; the old wrinkles are well filled up, but the vermilion is seen too thick, too thick—and I read what's written in thy forehead; it agrees with the church-book.

*Ag.* Have you sought my age, man? and, I prithee, how is it?

*Gnoth.* I shall but discomfort thee.

*Ag.* Not at all, man, when there's no remedy, I will go, though unwillingly.

*Gnoth.* 1539. Just; it agrees with the book: you have about a year to prepare yourself.

*Ag.* Out, alas! I hope there's more than so. But do you not think a reprieve might be gotten for half a score—an 'twere but five years, I would not care? an able woman, methinks, were to be pitied.

*Gnoth.* Ay, to be pitied, but not help'd ; no hope of that : for, indeed, women have so blemish'd their own reputations now-a-days, that it is thought the law will meet them at fifty very shortly.

*Aga.* Marry, the heavens forbid !

*Gnoth.* There's so many of you, that, when you are old, become witches ; some profess physic, and kill good subjects faster than a burning fever ; and then school-mistresses of the sweet sin, which commonly we call bawds, innumerable of that sort : for these and such causes 'tis thought they shall not live above fifty.

*Aga.* Ay, man, but this hurts not the good-old women.

*Gnoth.* Faith, you are so like one another, that a man cannot distinguish them : now, were I an old woman, I would desire to go before my time, and offer myself willingly, two or three years before. Oh, those are brave women, and worthy to be commended of all men in the world, that, when their husbands die, they run to be burnt to death with them : there's honour and credit ! give me half a dozen such wives.

*Aga.* Ay, if her husband were dead before, 'twere a reasonable request ; if you were dead, I would be content to be so.

*Gnoth.* Fie ! that's not likely, for thou hadst two husbands before me.

*Aga.* Thou wouldst not have me die, wouldst thou, husband ?

*Gnoth.* No, I do not speak to that purpose ; but I say what credit it were for me and thee, if thou wouldst ; then thou shouldst never be suspected for a witch, a physician, a bawd, or any of those things : and then how daintily should I mourn for thee, how bravely should I see thee buried ! when, alas, if he goes before, it cannot choose but be a great grief to him to think he has not seen his wife well buried. There be such virtuous women in the world, but too few, too few, who desire to die seven years before their time, with all their hearts.

*Aga.* I have not the heart to be of that mind ; but, indeed, husband, I think you would have me gone.

*Gnoth.* No, alas ! I speak but for your good and your credit ; for when a woman may die quickly, why should she go to law for her death ? Alack, I need not wish thee gone, for thou hast but a short time to stay with me : you do not know how near 'tis, — it must out ; you have but a month to live by the law.

*Aga.* Out, alas !

*Gnoth.* Nay, scarce so much.

*Aga.* Oh, oh, oh, my heart ! [*Swoons.*]

*Gnoth.* Ay, so ! if thou wouldst go away quietly, 'twere sweetly done, and like a kind wife ; lie but a little longer, and the bell shall toll for thee.

*Aga.* Oh my heart, but a month to live !

*Gnoth.* Alas, why wouldst thou come back again for a month ? I'll throw her down again — oh ! woman, 'tis not three weeks ; I think a fortnight is the most.

*Aga.* Nay, then I am gone already.

[*Swoons.*]

*Gnoth.* I would make haste to the sexton now, but I am afraid the tolling of the bell will wake her again. If she be so wise as to go now — she stirs again ; there's two lives of the nine gone.

*Aga.* Oh ! wouldst thou not help to recover me, husband ?

*Gnoth.* Alas, I could not find in my heart to hold thee by thy nose, or box thy cheeks ; it goes against my conscience.

*Aga.* I will not be thus frighted to my death, I'll search the church records : a fortnight !

'Tis too little of conscience, I cannot be so near ;

O time, if thou be'st kind, lend me but a year.

[*Exit.*]

*Gnoth.* What a spite's this, that a man cannot persuade his wife to die in any time with her good will ? I have another bespoke already ; though a piece of old beef will serve to breakfast, yet a man would be glad of a chicken to supper. The clerk, I hope, understands no Hebrew, and cannot write backward what he hath writ forward already, and then I am well enough.

'Tis but a month at most, if that were gone, My venture comes in with her two for one : 'Tis use enough o' conscience for a broker — if he had a conscience. [*Exit.*]

## SCENE II.—*A Room in Creon's House.*

*Enter Eugenia at one door, Simonides and Courtiers at the other.*

*Eug.* Gentlemen courtiers.

*1 Court.* All your vow'd servants, lady.

*Eug.* Oh, I shall kill myself with infinite laughter !

Will nobody take my part ?

*Sim.* An't be a laughing business, Put it to me, I'm one of the best in Europe ; My father died last too, I have the most cause.

*Eug.* You have pick'd out such a time, sweet gentlemen,

To make your spleen a banquet.

*Sim.* Oh, the jest !  
Lady, I have a jaw stands ready for't,  
I'll gape half way, and meet it.

*Eug.* My old husband,  
That cannot say his prayers out for jealousy,  
And madness at your coming first to woo  
me—

*Sim.* Well said.

1 *Court.* Go on.

2 *Court.* On, on.

*Eug.* Takes counsel with  
The secrets of all art, to make himself  
Youthful again.

*Sim.* How ! youthful ? ha, ha, ha !

*Eug.* A man of forty-five he would fain  
seem to be,

Or scarce so much, if he might have his will,  
indeed.

*Sim.* Ay, but his white hairs, they'll be-  
tray his hoariness.

*Eug.* Why, there you are wide : he's not  
the man you take him for,  
Nor will you know him when you see him  
again ;

There will be five to one laid upon that.

1 *Court.* How !

*Eug.* Nay, you did well to laugh faintly  
there ;

I promise you, I think he'll outlive me now,  
And deceive law and all.

*Sim.* Marry, gout forbid !

*Eug.* You little think he was at fencing-  
school

At four o'clock this morning.

*Sim.* How, at fencing-school !

*Eug.* Else give no trust to woman.

*Sim.* By this light,

I do not like him, then ; he's like to live  
Longer than I, for he may kill me first, now.

*Eug.* His dancer now came in as I met  
you.

1 *Court.* His dancer, too !

*Eug.* They observe turns and hours with  
him ;

The great French rider will be here at ten,  
With his curveting horse.

2 *Court.* These notwithstanding,

His hair and wrinkles will betray his age.

*Eug.* I'm sure his head and beard, as he  
has order'd it,

Look not past fifty now : he'll bring't to  
forty

Within these four days, for nine times an  
hour

He takes a black lead comb, and kems it  
over :

Three quarters of his beard is under fifty ;

There's but a little tuft of fourscore left,  
All o' one side, which will be black by Monday.

*Enter* Lysander.

And, to approve my truth, see where he  
comes !

Laugh softly, gentlemen, and look upon him :  
[*They go aside.*]

*Sim.* Now, by this hand, he's almost  
black i' the mouth, indeed.

1 *Court.* He should die shortly, then.

*Sim.* Marry, methinks he dyes too fast  
already,

For he was all white but a week ago.

1 *Court.* Oh ! this same coney-white takes  
an excellent black.

Too soon, a mischief on't !

2 *Court.* He will beguile

Us all, if that little tuft northward turn  
black too.

*Eug.* Nay, sir, I wonder 'tis so long a  
turning.

*Sim.* May be some fairy's child held  
forth at midnight,

Has piss'd upon that side.

1 *Court.* Is this the beard ?

*Lys.* Ah, sirrah ? my young boys, I shall  
be for you :

This little mangy tuft takes up more time  
Than all the beard beside. Come you a  
wooling,

And I alive and lusty ? you shall find  
An alteration, jack-boys ; I have a spirit yet.  
(An I could match my hair to't, there's the  
fault,)

And can do offices of youth yet lightly ;  
At least, I will do, though it pain me a  
little.

Shall not a man, for a little foolish age,  
Enjoy his wife to himself ? must young court  
tits

Play tomboys' tricks with her, and he live ?  
ha !

I have blood that will not bear't ; yet, I  
confess,

I should be at my prayers—but where's the  
dancer, there !

*Enter* Dancing-master.

*Mast.* Here, sir.

*Lys.* Come, come, come, one trick a day,  
And I shall soon recover all again.

*Eug.* 'Slight, an you laugh too loud, we  
are all discover'd.

*Sim.* And I have a scurvy grinning laugh  
o' mine own,

Will spoil'all, I am afraid.

*Eug.* Marry, take heed, sir.

*Sim.* Nay, an I should be hang'd I cannot  
leave it ;

Pup !—there 'tis. [*Bursts into a laugh.*]

*Eug.* Peace ! oh peace !  
*Lys.* Come, I am ready, sir.  
 I hear the church-book's lost where I was  
 born too,  
 And that shall set me back one twenty years ;  
 There is no little comfort left in that :  
 And—then my three court-codlings, that  
 look parboill'd,  
 As if they came from Cupid's scalding-  
 house—

*Sim.* He means me specially, I hold my  
 life.

*Mast.* What trick will your old worship  
 learn this morning, sir?

*Lys.* Marry, a trick, if thou couldst teach  
 a man,

To keep his wife to himself ; I'd fain learn  
 that.

*Mast.* That's a hard trick, for an old man  
 specially ;

The horse-trick comes the nearest.

*Lys.* Thou say'st true, i' faith,

They must be horsed indeed, else there's no  
 keeping them,

And horse-play at fourscore is not so ready.

*Mast.* Look you, here's your worship's  
 horse-trick, sir. [*Gives a spring.*]

*Lys.* Nay, say not so,

'Tis none of mine ; I fall down horse and  
 man,

If I but offer at it.

*Mast.* My life for yours, sir.

*Lys.* Say'st thou me so ? [*Springs aloft.*]

*Mast.* Well offer'd, by my viol, sir.

*Lys.* A pox of this horse-trick ! 't has  
 play'd the jade with me,

And given me a wrench i' the back.

*Mast.* Now here's your inturn, and your  
 trick above ground.

*Lys.* Prithee, no more, unless thou hast a  
 mind

To lay me under-ground ; one of these tricks  
 is enough in a morning.

*Mast.* For your galliard, sir,

You are complete enough, ay, and may  
 challenge

The proudest coxcomb of them all, I'll stand  
 to't.

*Lys.* Faith, and I've other weapons for the  
 rest too :

I have prepared for them, if e'er I take  
 My Gregories here again.

*Sim.* Oh ! I shall burst,

I can hold out no longer.

*Eug.* He spoils all. [*They come forward.*]

*Lys.* The devil and his grinners ! are you  
 come ?

Bring forth the weapons, we shall find you  
 play ;

All feats of youth too, jack-boys, feats of  
 youth,

And these the weapons, drinking, fencing,  
 dancing :

Your own road-ways, you clyster-pipes ! I  
 am old, you say,

Yes, parlous old, kids, an you mark me well !

This beard cannot get children, you lank  
 suck-eggs,

Unless such weasels come from court to  
 help us.

We will get our own brats, you lecherous  
 dog-bolts !

*Enter a Servant with foils, and glasses.*

Well said, down with them ; now we shall  
 see your spirits.

What ! dwindle you already ?

*2 Court.* I have no quality.

*Sim.* Nor I, unless drinking may be  
 reckon'd for one.

*1 Court.* Why, Sim, it shall.

*Lys.* Come, dare you choose your weapon  
 now ?

*1 Court.* I? dancing, sir, an you will be  
 so hasty.

*Lys.* We're for you, sir.

*2 Court.* Fencing, I.

*Lys.* We'll answer you too.

*Sim.* I am for drinking ; your wet weapon  
 there.

*Lys.* That wet one has cost many a prin-  
 cox life ;

And I will send it through you with a powder !

*Sim.* Let it come, with a pox ! I care not,  
 so't be drink.

I hope my guts will hold, and that's e'en all  
 A gentleman can look for of such trillibubs.

*Lys.* Play the first weapon ; come strike,  
 strike, I say.

Yes, yes, you shall be first ; I'll observe  
 court rules :

Always the worst goes foremost, so 'twill  
 prove, I hope.

[*1 Courtier dances a galliard.*]

So, sir ! you've spit your poison ; now come I.

Now, forty years go backward and assist me,  
 Fall from me half my age, but for three  
 minutes,

That I may feel no crick ! I will put fair for't,  
 Although I hazard twenty sciaticas.

[*Dances.*]

So, I have hit you.

*1 Court.* You've done well, i' faith, sir.

*Lys.* If you confess it well, 'tis excellent,  
 And I have hit you soundly ; I am warm now :

The second weapon instantly.

*2 Court.* What, so quick, sir ?

Will you not allow yourself a breathing-time ?

*Lys.* I've breath enough at all times, Lucifer's musk-cod,  
To give your perfumed worship three venues:  
A sound old man puts his thrust better home,  
Than a spiced young man : there I.

[*They fence.*

*2 Court.* Then have at you, fourscore.

*Lys.* You lie, twenty, I hope, and you shall find it.

*Sim.* I'm glad I miss'd this weapon, I'd had an eye

Popt out ere this time, or my two butter-teeth

Thrust down my throat instead of a flap-dragon.

*Lys.* There's two, pentweezle.

[*Hits him.*

*Mast.* Excellently touch'd, sir.

*2 Court.* Had ever man such luck ! speak your opinion, gentlemen.

*Sim.* Methinks your luck's good that your eyes are in still ;

Mine would have dropt out like a pig's half roasted.

*Lys.* There wants a third—and there it is again !

[*Hits him again.*

*2 Court.* The devil has steel'd him.

*Eug.* What a strong fiend is jealousy !

*Lys.* You are dispatch'd, bear-whelp.

*Sim.* Now comes my weapon in.

*Lys.* Here, toadstool, here.

\*Tis you and I must play these three wet venues.

*Sim.* Venues in Venice glasses ! let them come,

They'll bruise no flesh, I'm sure, nor break no bones.

*2 Court.* Yet you may drink your eyes out, sir.

*Sim.* Ay, but that's nothing ;

Then they go voluntarily ; I do not

Love to have them thrust out, whether they will or no.

*Lys.* Here's your first weapon, duck's-meat.

*Sim.* How ! a Dutch what-do-you-call-'em, Stead of a German faulchion ! a shrewd weapon,

And, of all things, hard to be taken down : Yet down it must, I have a nose goes into't ; I shall drink double, I think.

*1 Court.* The sooner off, Sim.

*Lys.* I'll pay you speedily,——with a trick

I learnt once amongst drunkards, here's a half-pike.

[*Drinks.*

*Sim.* Half-pike comes well after Dutch what-do-you-call-'em,

They'd never be asunder by their good will.

*1 Court.* Well pull'd of an old fellow !

*Lys.* Oh, but your fellows

Pull better at a rope.

*1 Court.* There's a hair, Sim,

In that glass.

*Sim.* An't be as long as a halter, down it goes ;

No hair shall cross me.

[*Drinks.*

*Lys.* I'll make you stink worse than your polecats do :

Here's long-sword, your last weapon.

[*Offers him the glass.*

*Sim.* No more weapons.

*1 Court.* Why, how now, Sim ? bear up, thou shamest us all, else.

*Sim.* 'Slight I shall shame you worse, an I stay longer.

I have got the scotomy in my head already, The whimsey : you all turn round—do not you dance, gallants ?

*2 Court.* Pish ! what's all this ? why, Sim, look, the last venue.

*Sim.* No more venues go down here, for these two

Are coming up again.

*2 Court.* Out ! the disgrace of drinkers !

*Sim.* Yes, 'twill out,

Do you smell nothing yet ?

*1 Court.* Smell !

*Sim.* Farewell quickly, then ;

You will do, if I stay.

[*Exit.*

*1 Court.* A foil go with thee !

*Lys.* What, shall we put down youth at her own virtues ?

Beat folly in her own ground ? wondrous much !

Why may not we be held as full sufficient To love our own wives then, get our own children,

And live in free peace till we be dissolv'd, For such spring butterflies that are gaudy-wing'd,

But no more substance than those shamble flies

Which butchers' boys snap between sleep and waking ?

Come but to crush you once, you are but maggots,

For all your beamy outsides !

*Enter Cleanthes.*

*Eug.* Here's Cleanthes,

He comes to chide ;—let him alone a little, Our cause will be revenged ; look, look, his face

Is set for stormy weather ; do but mark How the clouds gather in it, 'twill pour down straight.

*Clean.* Methinks, I partly know you,  
that's my grief.

Could you not all be lost? that had been  
handsome;

But to be known at all, 'tis more than  
shameful.

Why, was not your name wont to be  
Lysander?

*Lys.* 'Tis so still, coz.

*Clean.* Judgment, defer thy coming! else  
this man's miserable.

*Eug.* I told you there would be a shower  
anon.

2 *Court.* We'll in, and hide our noddles.  
[*Exeunt Eugenia and Courtiers.*]

*Clean.* What devil brought this colour to  
your mind,

Which, since your childhood, I ne'er saw  
you wear?

[*Sure*] you were ever of an innocent gloss  
Since I was ripe for knowledge, and would  
you lose it,

And change the livery of saints and angels  
For this mixt monstrousness: to force a  
ground

That has been so long hallowed like a temple,  
To bring forth fruits of earth now; and turn  
back

To the wild cries of lust, and the complexion  
Of sin in act, lost and long since repented!

Would you begin a work ne'er yet attempted,  
To pull time backward?

See what your wife will do! are your wits  
perfect?

*Lys.* My wits!

*Clean.* I like it ten times worse, for't had  
been safer

Now to be mad, and more excusable:  
I hear you dance again, and do strange follies.

*Lys.* I must confess I have been put to  
some, coz.

*Clean.* And yet you are not mad! pray,  
say not so;

Give me that comfort of you, that you are  
mad,

That I may think you are at worst; for if  
You are not mad, I then must guess you have

The first of some disease was never heard of,  
Which may be worse than madness, and  
more fearful:

You'd weep to see yourself else, and your care  
To pray, would quickly turn you white again.

I had a father, had he lived his month out,  
But to have seen this most prodigious folly,

There needed not the law to have him cut off;  
The sight of this had proved his executioner,

And broke his heart: he would have held it  
equal

Done to a sanctuary,—for what is age

But the holy place of life, chapel of ease  
For all men's wearied miseries? and to rob  
That of her ornament, it is accurst  
As from a priest to steal a holy vestment,  
Ay, and convert it to a sinful covering.

[*Exit Lysander.*]

I see 't has done him good; blessing go  
with it,

Such as may make him pure again.

*Re-enter Eugenia.*

*Eug.* 'Twas bravely touch'd, i' faith, sir.

*Clean.* Oh, you are welcome.

*Eug.* Exceedingly well handled.

*Clean.* 'Tis to you I come; he fell but in  
my way.

*Eug.* You mark'd his beard, cousin?

*Clean.* Mark me.

*Eug.* Did you ever see a hair so changed?

*Clean.* I must be forced to wake her  
loudly too,

The devil has rock'd her so fast asleep:—  
Strumpet!

*Eug.* Do you call, sir?

*Clean.* Whore!

*Eug.* How do you, sir?

*Clean.* Be I ne'er so well,

I must be sick of thee; thou art a disease  
That stick't to the heart,—as all such  
women are.

*Eug.* What ails our kindred?

*Clean.* Bless me, she sleeps still!

What a dead modesty is in this woman,  
Will never blush again! Look on thy work

But with a Christian eye, 'twould turn thy  
heart

Into a shower of blood, to be the cause  
Of that old man's destruction, think upon't,

Ruin eternally; for, through thy loose follies,  
Heaven has found him a faint servant lately:

His goodness has gone backward, and en-  
gender'd

With his old sins again; he has lost his  
prayers,

And all the tears that were companions with  
them:

And like a blindfold man, (giddy and  
blinded,)

Thinking he goes right on still, swerves but  
one foot,

And turns to the same place where he set  
out;

So he, that took his farewell of the world,  
And cast the joys behind him, out of sight,

Summ'd up his hours, made even with time  
and men,

Is now in heart arrived at youth again,  
All by thy wildness: thy too hasty lust

Has driven him to this strong apostacy.



Immodesty like thine was never equall'd :  
I've heard of women, (shall I call them so ?)  
Have welcomed suitors ere the corpse were  
cold ;

But thou, thy husband living :—thou'rt too  
bold.

*Eug.* Well, have you done now, sir ?

*Clean.* Look, look ! she smiles yet.

*Eug.* All this is nothing to a mind re-  
solved ;

Ask any woman that, she'll tell you so much :  
You have only shewn a pretty saucy wit,  
Which I shall not forget, nor to requite it.  
You shall hear from me shortly.

*Clean.* Shameless woman !

I take my counsel from thee, 'tis too honest,  
And leave thee wholly to thy stronger  
master :

Bless the sex o' thee from thee ! that's my  
prayer.

Were all like thee, so impudently common,  
No man would e'er be found to wed a  
woman. [*Exit.*]

*Eug.* I'll fit you gloriously.

He that attempts to take away my pleasure,  
I'll take away his joy ; and I can sure.

His conceal'd father pays for't : I'll e'en tell  
Him that I mean to make my husband next,  
And he shall tell the duke—mass, here he  
comes.

*Re-enter Simonides.*

*Sim.* He has had a bout with me too.

*Eug.* What ! no ? since, sir ?

*Sim.* A flirt, a little flirt ; he call'd me  
strange nanes,

But I ne'er minded him.

*Eug.* You shall quit him, sir,  
When he as little minds you.

*Sim.* I like that well.

I love to be revenged when no one thinks of  
me ;

There's little danger that way.

*Eug.* This is it then ;

He you shall strike your stroke shall be pro-  
found,

And yet your foe not guess who gave the  
wound.

*Sim.* O' my troth I love to give such  
wounds. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*Before a Tavern.*

*Enter* Gnotho, Butler, Bailiff, Tailor, Cook,  
Drawer, and Courtezan.

*Draw.* Welcome, gentlemen, will you not

draw near ? will you drink at door, gentle-  
men ?

*But.* Oh ! the summer air is best.

*Draw.* What wine will't please you drink,  
gentlemen ?

*But.* De Clare, sirrah. [*Exit* Drawer.

*Gnoth.* What, you're all sped already,  
bullies ?

*Cook.* My widow's o' the spit, and half  
ready, lad ; a turn or two more, and I have  
done with her.

*Gnoth.* Then, cook, I hope you have  
basted her before this time.

*Cook.* And stuck her with rosemary too, to  
sweeten her ; she was tainted ere she came  
to my hands. What an old piece of flesh  
of fifty-nine, eleven months, and upwards !  
she must needs be fly-blown.

*Gnoth.* Put her off, put her off, though  
you lose by her ; the weather's hot.

*Cook.* Why, drawer !

*Re-enter* Drawer.

*Draw.* By and by :—here, gentlemen,  
here's the quintessence of Greece ; the sages  
never drunk better grape.

*Cook.* Sir, the mad Greeks of this age can  
taste their Palermo as well as the sage  
Greeks did before them.—Fill, lick-spiggot.

*Draw.* *Ad imum*, sir.

*Gnoth.* My friends, I must doubly invite  
you all, the fifth of the next month, to the  
funeral of my first wife, and to the marriage  
of my second, my two to one ; this is she.

*Cook.* I hope some of us will be ready  
for the funeral of our wives by that time, to  
go with thee : but shall they be both of a  
day ?

*Gnoth.* Oh ! best of all, sir ; where sorrow  
and joy meet together, one will help away  
with another the better. Besides, there will  
be charges saved too ; the same rosemary  
that serves for the funeral, will serve for the  
wedding.

*But.* How long do you make account to  
be a widower, sir ?

*Gnoth.* Some half an hour ; long enough  
o' conscience. Come, come, let's have some  
agility ; is there no music in the house ?

*Draw.* Yes, sir, here are sweet wire-  
drawers in the house.

*Cook.* Oh ! that makes them and you  
seldom part ; you are wine-drawers, and  
they wire-drawers.

*Tail.* And both govern by the pegs too.

*Gnoth.* And you have pipes in your con-  
sort too.

*Draw.* And sack-butts too, sir.

*But.* But the heads of your instruments

differ ; yours are hogs-heads, theirs cittern and gittern-heads.

*Bail.* All wooden heads ; there they meet again.

*Cook.* Bid them strike up, we'll have a dance, Gnotho ; come, thou shalt foot it too.

[*Exit* Drawer.]

*Gnoth.* No dancing with me, we have Siren here.

*Cook.* Siren ! 'twas Hiren, the fair Greek, man.

*Gnoth.* Five drachmas of that. I say Siren, the fair Greek, and so are all fair Greeks.

*Cook.* A match ; five drachmas her name was Hiren.

*Gnoth.* Siren's name was Siren, for five drachmas.

*Cook.* 'Tis done.

*Tail.* Take heed what you do, Gnotho.

*Gnoth.* Do not I know our own country-women, Siren and Nell of Greece, two of the fairest Greeks that ever were ?

*Cook.* That Nell was Helen of Greece too.

*Gnoth.* As long as she tarried with her husband, she was Ellen ; but after she came to Troy, she was Nell of Troy, or Bonny Nell, whether you will or no.

*Tail.* Why, did she grow shorter when she came to Troy ?

*Gnoth.* She grew longer, if you mark the story. When she grew to be an ell, she was deeper than any yard of Troy could reach by a quarter ; there was Cressid was Troy weight, and Nell was avoirdupois ; she held more, by four ounces, than Cressida.

*Bail.* They say she caused many wounds to be given in Troy.

*Gnoth.* True, she was wounded there herself, and cured again by plaister of Paris ; and ever since that has been used to stop holes with.

*Re-enter* Drawer.

*Draw.* Gentlemen, if you be disposed to be merry, the music is ready to strike up ; and here's a consort of mad Greeks, I know not whether they be men or women, or between both ; they have, what do you call them, wizards on their faces.

*Cook.* Vizards, good man lick-spiggot.

*But.* If they be wise women, they may be wizards too.

*Draw.* They desire to enter amongst any merry company of gentlemen-good-fellows, for a strain or two.

*Enter* old Women and Agatha in masks.

*Cook.* We'll strain ourselves with them,

say ; let them come, Gnotho ; now for the honour of Epire !

*Gnoth.* No dancing with me, we have Siren here.

[*A dance by the old Women and Agatha ; they offer to take the men, all agree except Gnotho, who sits with the Courtezan.*]

*Cook.* Ay ! so kind ! then every one his wench to his several room ; Gnotho, we are all provided now as you are.

[*Excunt all but Gnotho, Courtezan, and Agatha.*]

*Gnoth.* I shall have two, it seems : away ! I have Siren here already.

*Aga.* What, a mermaid ?

[*Takes off her mask.*]

*Gnoth.* No, but a maid, horse-face : oh, old woman ! is it you ?

*Aga.* Yes, 'tis I ; all the rest have gulled themselves, and taken their own wives, and shall know that they have done more than they can well answer ; but I pray you, husband, what are you doing ?

*Gnoth.* Faith, thus should I do, if thou wert dead, old Ag, and thou hast not long to live, I'm sure : we have Siren here.

*Aga.* Art thou so shameless, whilst I am living, to keep one under my nose ?

*Gnoth.* No, Ag, I do prize her far above thy nose ; if thou wouldst lay me both thine eyes in my hand to boot, I'll not leave her : art not ashamed to be seen in a tavern, and hast scarce a fortnight to live ? oh, old woman, what art thou ? must thou find no time to think of thy end ?

*Aga.* O, unkind villain !

*Gnoth.* And then, sweetheart, thou shalt have two new gowns ; and the best of this old woman's shall make thee raiment for the working days.

*Aga.* O, rascal ! dost thou quarter my clothes already too ?

*Gnoth.* Her ruffs will serve thee for nothing but to wash dishes ; for thou shalt have thine of the new fashion.

*Aga.* Impudent villain ! shameless harlot !

*Gnoth.* You may hear, she never wore any but rails all her lifetime.

*Aga.* Let me come, I'll tear the strumpet from him.

*Gnoth.* Dar'st thou call my wife strumpet, thou preterpluperfect tense of a woman ! I'll make thee do penance in the sheet thou shalt be buried in ; abuse my choice, my two-to-one !

*Aga.* No, unkind villain, I'll deceive thee yet,

I have a reprieve for five years of life ;  
I am with child.

*Court.* Cud so, Gnotho, I'll not tarry so long ; five years ! I may bury two husbands by that time.

*Gnoth.* Alas ! give the poor woman leave to talk, she with child ! ay, with a puppy : as long as I have thee by me, she shall not be with child, I warrant thee.

*Aga.* The law, and thou, and all, shall find I am with child.

*Gnoth.* I'll take my corporal oath I begat it not, and then thou diest for adultery.

*Aga.* No matter, that will ask some time in the proof.

*Gnoth.* Oh ! you'd be stoned to death, would you ? all old women would die o' that fashion with all their hearts ; but the law shall overthrow you the other way, first.

*Court.* Indeed, if it be so, I will not linger so long, Gnotho.

*Gnoth.* Away, away ! some botcher has got it ; 'tis but a cushion, I warrant thee : the old woman is *loth to depart* ; she never sung other tune in her life.

*Court.* We will not have our noses bored with a cushion, if it be so.

*Gnoth.* Go, go thy ways, thou old almack at the twenty-eighth day of December, e'en almost out of date ! Down on thy knees, and make thee ready ; sell some of thy clothes to buy thee a death's head, and put upon thy middle finger : your least considering bawd does so much ; be not thou worse, though thou art an old woman, as she is : I am cloy'd with old stock-fish, here's a young perch is sweeter meat by half ; prithee, die before thy day, if thou canst, that thou mayst not be counted a witch.

*Aga.* No, thou art a witch, and I'll prove it ; I said I was with child, thou knew'st no other but by sorcery : thou said'st it was a cushion, and so it is ; thou art a witch for't, I'll be sworn to't.

*Gnoth.* Ha, ha, ha ! I told thee 'twas a cushion. Go, get thy sheet ready ; we'll see thee buried as we go to church to be married. [*Exeunt Gnotho and Courtezan.*]

*Aga.* Nay, I'll follow thee, and shew myself a wife. I'll plague thee as long as I live with thee ; and I'll bury some money before I die, that my ghost may haunt thee afterward. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*The Country. A Forest.*

*Enter Cleanthes.*

*Clean.* What's that ? oh, nothing but the whispering wind

Breathes through yon churlish hawthorn, that grew rude,

As if it chid the gentle breath that kiss'd it. I cannot be too circumspect, too careful ; For in these woods lies hid all my life's treasure,

Which is too much never to fear to lose, Though it be never lost : and if our watchfulness

Ought to be wise and serious 'gainst a thief That comes to steal our goods, things all without us,

That prove vexation often more than comfort ;

How mighty ought our providence to be, To prevent those, if any such there were, That come to rob our bosom of our joys, That only make poor man delight to live ! Pshaw ! I'm too fearful—fie, fie ! who can hurt me ?

But 'tis a general cowardice, that shakes The nerves of confidence ; he that hides treasure,

Imagines every one thinks of that place, When 'tis a thing least minded ; nay, let him change

The place continually ; where'er it keeps, There will the fear keep still : yonder's the storehouse

Of all my comfort now—and see ! it sends forth

*Enter Hippolita, from the wood.*

A dear one to me :—Precious chief of women,

How does the good old soul ? has he fed well ?

*Hip.* Beshrew me, sir, he made the heartiest meal to day—

Much good may't do his health.

*Clean.* A blessing on thee,

Both for thy news and wish !

*Hip.* His stomach, sir,

Is better'd wondrously, since his concealment.

*Clean.* Heaven has a blessed work in't. Come, we are safe here ;

I prithee call him forth, the air's much wholesomer.

*Hip.* Father !

*Enter Leonides.*

*Leon.* How sweetly sounds the voice of a good woman !

It is so seldom heard, that, when it speaks, It ravishes all senses. Lists of honour !

I've a joy weeps to see you, 'tis so full,

So fairly fruitful.

*Clean.* I hope to see you often and return

Loaded with blessings, still to pour on  
some ;

I find them all in my contented peace,  
And lose not one in thousands, they are dis-  
persed

So gloriously, I know not which are  
brightest.

I find them, as angels are found, by legions :  
First, in the love and honesty of a wife,  
Which is the chiefest of all temporal bless-  
ings ;

Next in yourself, which is the hope and joy  
Of all my actions, my affairs, my wishes ;  
And lastly, which crowns all, I find my soul  
Crown'd with the peace of them, the eternal  
riches,

Man's only portion for his heavenly mar-  
riage !

*Leon.* Rise, thou art all obedience, love,  
and goodness.

I dare say that which thousand fathers can-  
not,

And that's my precious comfort, never son  
Was in the way more of celestial rising :  
Thou art so made of such ascending virtue,  
That all the powers of hell can't sink thee.

[*A horn sounded within.*]

*Clean.* Ha !

*Leon.* What was't disturb'd my joy ?

*Clean.* Did you not hear,

As afar off ?

*Leon.* What, my excellent comfort ?

*Clean.* Nor you ?

*Hip.* I heard a— [ *A horn.* ]

*Clean.* Hark, again !

*Leon.* Bless my joy,

What ails it on a sudden ?

*Clean.* Now ? since lately ?

*Leon.* 'Tis nothing but a symptom of thy  
care, man.

*Clean.* Alas ! you do not hear well.

*Leon.* What was't, daughter ?

*Hip.* I heard a sound, twice. [ *A horn.* ]

*Clean.* Hark ! louder and nearer :

In, for the precious good of virtue, quick,  
sir !

Louder and nearer yet ! at hand, at hand !

[ *Exit Leonides.* ]

A hunting here ? 'tis strange ! I never knew  
Game followed in these woods before.

*Enter Evander, Simonides, Courtiers,  
and Cratilus.*

*Hip.* Now let them come, and spare not.

*Clean.* Ha ! 'tis—is't not the duke ?—look  
sparingly.

*Hip.* 'Tis he, but what of that ? alas, take  
heed, sir,

Your care will overthrow us.

*Clean.* Come, it shall not :  
Let's set a pleasant face upon our fears,  
Though our hearts shake with horror.—Ha,  
ha, ha !

*Evan.* Hark !

*Clean.* Prithce, proceed ;  
I am taken with these light things infinitely,  
Since the old man's decease ; ha !—so they  
parted ? ha, ha, ha !

*Evan.* Why, how should I believe this ?  
look, he's merry

As if he had no such charge : one with that  
care

Could never be so ; still he holds his temper,  
And 'tis the same still (with no difference)  
He brought his father's corpse to the grave  
with ;

He laugh'd thus then, you know.

*i Court.* Ay, he may laugh,  
That shews but how he glories in his cunning ;  
And is, perhaps, done more to advance his  
wit,

That only he has over-reach'd the law,  
Than to express affection to his father.

*Sim.* He tells you right, my lord, his own  
cousin-german

Reveal'd it first to me ; a free-tongued woman,  
And very excellent at telling secrets.

*Evan.* If a contempt can be so neatly  
carried,

It gives me cause of wonder.

*Sim.* Troth, my lord,  
'Twill prove a delicate cozening, I believe :  
I'd have no scrivener offer to come near it.

*Evan.* Cleanthes.

*Clean.* My loved lord.

*Evan.* Not moved a whit,  
Constant to lightness still ! 'Tis strange to  
meet you

Upon a ground so unfrequented, sir :  
This does not fit your passion ; you're for  
mirth,

Or I mistake you much.

*Clean.* But finding it  
Grow to a noted imperfection in me,  
For anything too much is vicious,  
I come to these disconsolate walks, of pur-  
pose,

Only to dull and take away the edge on't.

I ever had a greater zeal to sadness,  
A natural propension, I confess,  
Before that cheerful accident fell out—  
If I may call a father's funeral cheerful,  
Without wrong done to duty or my love.

*Evan.* It seems, then, you take pleasure  
in these walks, sir.

*Clean.* Contemplative content I do, my  
lord :

They bring into my mind oft meditations

So sweetly precious, that, in the parting,  
I find a shower of grace upon my cheeks,  
They take their leave so feelingly.

*Evan.* So, sir!

*Clean.* Which is a kind of grave delight,  
my lord.

*Evan.* And I've small cause, Cleanthes,  
to afford you

The least delight that has a name.

*Clean.* My lord!

*Sim.* Now it begins to fadge.

*1 Court.* Peace! thou art so greedy, *Sim.*

*Evan.* In your excess of joy you have ex-  
press'd

Your rancour and contempt against my law :  
Your smiles deserve a fining; you have pro-  
fess'd

Derision openly, e'en to my face,  
Which might be death, a little more in-  
censed.

You do not come for any freedom here,

But for a project of your own :—

But all that's known to be contentful to thee,

Shall in the use prove deadly. Your life's  
mine,

If ever your presumption do but lead you  
Into these walks again,—ay, or that woman ;  
I'll have them watch'd o' purpose.

[*Cleanthes retires from the wood, fol-  
lowed by Hippolita.*

*1 Court.* Now, now, his colour ebbs and  
flows.

*Sim.* Mark hers too.

*Hip.* Oh, who shall bring food to the poor  
old man, now !

Speak somewhat, good sir, or we're lost for  
ever.

*Clean.* Oh, you did wonderous ill to call  
me again.

There are not words to help us ; if I entreat,  
'Tis found ; that will betray us worse than  
silence :

Prithce let heaven alone, and let's say nothing.

*1 Court.* You have struck them dumb, my  
lord.

*Sim.* Look how guilt looks !

I would not have that fear upon my flesh,  
To save ten fathers.

*Clean.* He is safe still, is he not ?

*Hip.* Oh, you do ill to doubt it.

*Clean.* Thou art all goodness.

*Sim.* Now does your grace believe ?

*Evan.* 'Tis too apparent.

Search, make a speedy search ; for the in-  
posture

Cannot be far off, by the fear it sends.

*Clean.* Ha !

*Sim.* He has the lapwing's cunning, I am  
afraid,

That cries most when she's furthest from the  
nest.

*Clean.* Oh, we are betray'd.

*Hip.* Betray'd, sir !

*Sim.* See, my lord,

It comes out more and more still.

[*Simonides and Courtiers enter the  
wood.*

*Clean.* Bloody thief!

Come from that place ; 'tis sacred, homicide !  
'Tis not for thy adulterate hands to touch it.

*Hip.* Oh miserable virtue, what distress  
Art thou in at this minute !

*Clean.* Help me, thunder,

For my power's lost ! angels, shoot plagues,  
and help me !

Why are these men in health, and I so heart-  
sick ?

Or why should nature have that power in me  
To levy up a thousand bleeding sorrows,

And not one comfort ? only make me lie  
Like the poor mockery of an earthquake

here,

Panting with horror,

And have not so much force in all my ven-  
geance,

To shake a villain off me.

*Re-enter Simonides and Courtiers with  
Leonides.*

*Hip.* Use him gently,

And heaven will love you for it.

*Clean.* Father ! oh father ! now I see thee  
full

In thy affliction ; thou'rt a man of sorrow,  
But reverently becom'st it, that's my com-  
fort :

Extremity was never better graced,

Than with that look of thine ; oh ! let me  
look still,

For I shall lose it ; all my joy and strength  
[*Kneels.*

Is e'en eclipsed together : I transgress'd

Your law, my lord, let me receive the sting  
on't :

Be once just, sir, and let the offender die :

He's innocent in all, and I am guilty.

*Leon.* Your grace knows, when affection  
only speaks,

Truth is not always there ; his love would draw  
An undeserved misery on his youth,

And wrong a peace resolv'd, on both parts  
sinful.

'Tis I am guilty of my own concealment,  
And, like a worldly coward, injured heaven

With fear to go to't :—now I see my fault,  
I am prepared with joy to suffer for it.

*Evan.* Go, give him quick dispatch, let  
him see death :

And your presumption, sir, shall come to judgment.

[*Exeunt* Evander, Courtiers, Simonides; and *Cratilus* with Leonides.

*Hip.* He's going! oh, he's gone, sir!

*Clean.* Let me rise.

*Hip.* Why do you not then, and follow?

*Clean.* I strive for it,

Is there no hand of pity that will ease me,  
And take this villain from my heart awhile?

[*Rises.*

*Hip.* Alas! he's gone.

*Clean.* A worse supplies his place then,  
A weight more ponderous; I cannot follow.

*Hip.* Oh misery of affliction!

*Clean.* They will stay

Till I can come; they must be so good ever,  
Though they be ne'er so cruel:

My last leave must be taken, think of that,  
And his last blessing given; I will not lose  
That for a thousand consorts.

*Hip.* That hope's wretched.

*Clean.* The unutterable stings of fortune!  
All griefs are to be borne save this alone,  
This, like a headlong torrent, overturns  
The frame of nature:

For he that gave us life first, as a father,  
Locks all his natural sufferings in our blood,  
The sorrows that he feels are our heart's too,  
They are incorporate to us.

*Hip.* Noble sir!

*Clean.* Let me behold thee well.

*Hip.* Sir!

*Clean.* Thou should'st be good,  
Or thou'rt a dangerous substance to be  
lodged

So near the heart of man.

*Hip.* What means this, dear sir?

*Clean.* To thy trust only was this blessed  
secret

Kindly committed, 'tis destroy'd, thou seest;  
What follows to be thought on't?

*Hip.* Miserable!

Why, here's the unhappiness of woman still;  
That, having forfeited in old times her trust,  
Now makes their faiths suspected that are  
just.

*Clean.* What shall I say to all my sorrows  
then,

That look for satisfaction?

*Enter* Engenia.

*Eug.* Ha, ha, ha! cousin.

*Clean.* How ill dost thou become this  
time!

*Eug.* Ha, ha, ha!

Why, that's but your opinion; a young  
wench

Becomes the time at all times.

Now, coz, we are even: an you be remem-  
ber'd,

You left a *strumpet* and a *whore* with me,  
And such fine field-bed words, which could  
not cost you

Less than a father.

*Clean.* Is it come that way?

*Eug.* Had you an uncle,

He should go the same way too.

*Clean.* Oh eternity,

What monster is this fiend in labour with?

*Eug.* An ass-colt with two heads, that's  
she and you:

I will not lose so glorious a revenge,  
Not to be understood in't; I betray'd him;  
And now we are even, you'd best keep you so.

*Clean.* Is there not poison yet enough to  
kill me?

*Hip.* Oh, sir, forgive me; it was I betray'd  
him.

*Clean.* How!

*Hip.* I.

*Clean.* The fellow of my heart! 'twill speed  
me, then.

*Hip.* Her tears that never wept, and mine  
own pity

Even cozen'd me together, and stole from me  
This secret, which fierce death should not  
have purchased.

*Clean.* Nay, then we are at an end; all  
we are false ones,

And ought to suffer. I was false to wisdom,  
In trusting woman; thou wert false to faith,  
In uttering of the secret; and thou false  
To goodness, in deceiving such a pity:

We are all tainted some way, but thou worst,  
And for thy infectious spots ought'st to die  
first. [*Offers to kill* Engenia.

*Eug.* Pray turn your weapon, sir, upon  
your mistress,

I come not so ill friended:—rescue, servants!

*Re-enter* Simonides and Courtiers.

*Clean.* Are you so whorishly provided?

*Sim.* Yes, sir,

She has more weapons at command than  
one.

*Eug.* Put forward, man, thou art most  
sure to have me.

*Sim.* I shall be surer, if I keep behind,  
though.

*Eug.* Now, servants, shew your loves.

*Sim.* I'll shew my love, too, afar off.

*Eug.* I love to be so courted, woo me  
there.

*Sim.* I love to keep good weapons,  
though ne'er fought with.

I'm sharper set within than I am without.

*Hip.* Oh gentlemen! Cleanthes!

*Eug.* Fight ! upon him !

*Clean.* Thy thirst of blood proclaims thee now a strumpet.

*Eug.* 'Tis dainty, next to procreation fitting ;

I'd either be destroying men or getting.

*Enter Guard.*

*Officer.* Forbear, on your allegiance, gentlemen.

He's the duke's prisoner, and we seize upon him

To answer this contempt against the law.

*Clean.* I obey fate in all things.

*Hip.* Happy rescue !

*Sim.* I would you'd seized upon him a minute sooner, it had saved me a cut finger : I wonder how I came by't, for I never put my hand forth, I'm sure ; I think my own sword did cut it, if truth were known ; may be the wire in the handle : I have lived these five and twenty years and never knew what colour my blood was before. I never durst eat oysters, nor cut peck-loaves.

*Eug.* You've shewn your spirits, gentlemen ; but you

Have cut your finger.

*Sim.* Ay, the wedding-finger too, a pox on't !

*Court.* You'll prove a bawdy bachelor, Sim, to have a cut upon your finger, before you are married.

*Sim.* I'll never draw sword again, to have such a jest put upon me. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—*A Court of Justice.*

*Enter Simonides and Courtiers, sword and mace carried before them.*

*Sim.* Be ready with your prisoner ; we'll sit instantly,

And rise before eleven, or when we please ; Shall we not, fellow-judges ?

*Court.* 'Tis committed

All to our power, censure, and pleasure, now ;

The duke hath made us chief lords of this sessions,

And we may speak by fits, or sleep by turns.

*Sim.* Leave that to us, but, whatsoever we do,

The prisoner shall be sure to be condemn'd ; Sleeping or waking, we are resolved on that, Before we sit upon him !

*Court.* Make you question If not ?—Cleanthes ! and an enemy !

Nay a concealer of his father too !

A vile example in these days of youth.

*Sim.* If they were given to follow such examples ;

But sure I think they are not : howsoever, 'Twas wickedly attempted ; that's my judgment,

And it shall pass whilst I am in power to sit. Never by prince were such young judges made,

But now the cause requires it : if you mark it, He must make young or none ; for all the old ones

He hath sent a fishing—and my father's one, I humbly thank his highness.

*Enter Eugenia.*

*Court.* Widow !

*Eug.* You almost hit my name now, gentlemen ;

You come so wondrous near it, I admire you For your judgment.

*Sim.* My wife that must be ! She.

*Eug.* My husband goes upon his last hour now.

*Court.* On his last legs, I am sure.

*Sim.* September the seventeenth— I will not bate an hour on't, and to-morrow His latest hour's expired.

*Court.* Bring him to judgment ;

The jury's pannell'd, and the verdict given Ere he appears ; we have ta'en a course for that.

*Sim.* And officers to attach the gray young man,

The youth of fourscore : Be of comfort, lady,

You shall no longer bosom January ; For that I will take order, and provide For you a lusty April.

*Eug.* The month that ought, indeed, To go before May.

*Court.* Do as we have said,

Take a strong guard, and bring him into court.

Lady Eugenia, see this charge performed,

That, having his life forfeited by the law, He may relieve his soul.

*Eug.* Willingly.

From shaven chins never came better justice Than these ne'er touch'd by razor. [*Exit.*]

*Sim.* What you do,

Do suddenly, we charge you, for we purpose To make but a short sessions :—a new business !

*Enter Hippolita.*

*Court.* The fair Hippolita ! now what's your suit ?

*Hip.* Alas ! I know not how to style you yet ;

To call you judges doth not suit your years,  
Nor heads and beards shew more antiquity ;—

Yet sway yourselves with equity and truth,  
And I'll proclaim you reverend, and repeat  
Once in my lifetime I have seen grave heads  
Placed upon young men's shoulders.

*2 Court.* Hark ! she flouts us,  
And thinks to make us monstrous.

*Hip.* Prove not so ;  
For yet, methinks, you bear the shapes of  
men ;

(Though nothing more than merely beauty  
serves

To make you appear angels,) but if you  
crimson

Your name and power with blood and  
cruelty,

Suppress fair virtue, and enlarge bold vice,  
Both against heaven and nature, draw your  
sword,

Make either will or humour turn the soul  
Of your created greatness, and in that  
Oppose all goodness, I must tell you there  
You are more than monstrous ; in the very  
act,

You change yourselves to devils.

*1 Court.* She's a witch ;  
Hark ! she begins to conjure.

*Sim.* Time, you see,  
Is short, much business now on foot :—shall I  
Give her her answer ?

*2 Court.* None upon the bench,  
More learnedly can do it.

*Sim.* He, he, hem ! then list :  
I wonder at thine impudence, young hus-  
wife,

That thou darest plead for such a base  
offender.

Conceal a father past his time to die !  
What son and heir would have done this  
but he ?

*1 Court.* I vow, not I.

*Hip.* Because ye are paricides ;  
And how can comfort be derived from such  
That pity not their fathers ?

*2 Court.* You are fresh and fair ; practise  
young women's ends ;  
When husbands are distress'd, provide them  
friends.

*Sim.* I'll set him forward for thee without  
fee :

Some wives would pay for such a courtesy.

*Hip.* Times of amazement ! what duty,  
goodness dwell—

I sought for charity, but knock at hell.

[*Exit.*

*Re-enter Eugenia, and Guard, with Ly-  
sander.*

*Sim.* Eugenia come ! command a second  
guard

To bring Cleanthes in ; we'll not sit long ;  
My stomach strives to dinner.

*Eug.* Now, servants, may a lady be so bold  
To call your power so low ?

*Sim.* A mistress may,  
She can make all things low ; then in that  
language

There can be no offence.

*Eug.* The time's now come  
Of manumissions, take him into bonds,  
And I am then at freedom.

*2 Court.* This the man !  
He hath left off o' late to feed on snakes ;  
His beard's turn'd white again.

*1 Court.* Is't possible these gouty legs  
danced lately,  
And shatter'd in a galliard ?

*Eug.* Jealousy  
And fear of death can work strange prodigies.

*2 Court.* The nimble fencer this, that  
made me tear

And traverse 'bout the chamber ?

*Sim.* Ay, and gave me  
Those elbow healths, the hangman take him  
for't !

They'd almost fetch'd my heart out : the  
Dutch what-you-call,

I swallow'd pretty well ; but the half-pike  
Had almost pepper'd me ; but had I ta'en  
long-sword,

Being swollen, I had cast my lungs out.

*A Flourish. Enter Evander and Cratilus.*

*1 Court.* Peace, the duke !

*Evan.* Nay, back t' your seats : who's  
that ?

*2 Court.* May't please your highness, it is  
old Lysander.

*Evan.* And brought in by his wife ! a  
worthy precedent

Of one that no way would offend the law,  
And should not pass away without remark.  
You have been look'd for long.

*Lys.* But never fit

To die till now, my lord. My sins and I  
Have been but newly parted ; much ado  
I had to get them leave me, or be taught  
That difficult lesson how to learn to die.

I never thought there had been such an act,  
And 'tis the only discipline we are born for :  
All studies else are but as circular lines,  
And death the centre where they must all  
meet.

I now can look upon thee, erring woman,



And not be vex'd with jealousy ; on young men,

And no way envy their delicious health,  
Pleasure, and strength ; all which were once mine own,

And mine must be theirs one day.

*Evan.* You have tamed him.

*Sim.* And know how to dispose him ; that, my liege,

Hath been before determined. You confess Yourself of full age ?

*Lys.* Yes, and prepared to inherit—

*Eug.* Your place above.

*Sim.* Of which the hangman's strength Shall put him in possession.

*Lys.* 'Tis still cared

To take me willing and in mind to die ;  
And such are, when the earth grows weary of them,

Most fit for heaven.

*Sim.* The court shall make his mittimus,  
And send him thither presently : i' the mean time—

*Evan.* Away to death with him.

[*Exit Cratilus with Lysander.*]

*Enter Guard with Cleanthes, Hippolita following, weeping.*

*Sim.* So ! see another person brought to the bar.

*1 Court.* The arch-malefactor.

*2 Court.* The grand offender, the most refractory

To all good order ; 'tis Cleanthes, he—

*Sim.* That would have sons grave fathers,  
ere their fathers

Be sent unto their graves.

*Evan.* There will be expectation

In your severe proceedings against him ;  
His act being so capital.

*Sim.* Fearful and bloody ;

Therefore we charge these women leave the court,

Least they should swoon to hear it.

*Eug.* I, in expectation

Of a most happy freedom. [*Exit.*]

*Hip.* I, with the apprehension

Of a most sad and desolate widowhood. [*Exit.*]

*1 Court.* We bring him to the bar—

*2 Court.* Hold up your hand, sir.

*Clean.* More reverence to the place than to the persons :

To the one I offer up a [spreading] palm  
Of duty and obedience, as to heaven,  
Imploring justice, which was never wanting  
Upon that bench whilst their own fathers sat ;  
But unto you, my hands contracted thus,  
As threatening vengeance against murderers,

For they that kill in thought, shed innocent blood.—

With pardon of your highness, too much passion

Made me forget your presence, and the place I now am call'd to.

*Evan.* All our majesty

And power we have to pardon or condemn,  
Is now conferr'd on them.

*Sim.* And these we'll use,

Little to thine advantage.

*Clean.* I expect it :

And, as to these, I look no mercy from them,  
And much less mean to entreat it, I thus now  
Submit me to the emblems of your power,  
The sword and bench : but, my most reverend judges,

Ere you proceed to sentence, (for I know  
You have given me lost,) will you resolve me one thing ?

*1 Court.* So it be briefly question'd.

*2 Court.* Shew your honour ;

Day spends itself apace.

*Clean.* My lords, it shall.

Resolve me, then, where are your filial tears,  
Your mourning habits, and sad hearts become,

That should attend your fathers' funerals ?  
Though the strict law (which I will not accuse,  
Because a subject) snatch'd away their lives,  
It doth not bar you to lament their deaths :  
Or if you cannot spare one sad suspire,  
It doth not bid you laugh them to their graves,

Lay subtle trains to antedate their years,

To be the sooner seized of their estates.

Oh, time of age ! where's that Æneas now,

Who letting all his jewels to the flames ;

Forgetting country, kindred, treasure, friends,

Fortunes and all things, save the name of son,

Which you so much forget, godlike Æneas,

Who took his bedrid father on his back,

And with that sacred load (to him no burthen),

Hew'd out his way through blood, through fire,  
through [arms,]

Even all the arm'd streets of bright-burning Troy,

Only to save a father ?

*Sim.* We've no leisure now,

To hear lessons read from Virgil ; we are past school,

And all this time thy judges.

*2 Court.* It is fit

That we proceed to sentence.

*1 Court.* You are the mouth,

And now 'tis fit to open.

*Sim.* Justice, indeed,

Should ever be close-car'd, and open-mouth'd ;

That is to hear a little and speak much.  
Know then, Cleanthes, there is none can be  
A good son and bad subject; for, if princes  
Be called the people's fathers, then the  
subjects

Are all his sons, and he that flouts the prince,  
Doth disobey his father: there you are gone.

1 *Court.* And not to be recover'd.

*Sim.* And again—

2 *Court.* If he be gone, once, call him not  
again.

*Sim.* I say again, this act of thine expresses  
A double disobedience: as our princes  
Are fathers, so they are our sovereigns too;  
And he that doth rebel 'gainst sovereignty,  
Doth commit treason in the height of degree:  
And now thou art quite gone.

1 *Court.* Our brother in commission,  
Hath spoke his mind both learnedly and  
neatly,

And I can add but little; howsoever,  
It shall send him packing.

He that begins a fault that wants example,  
Ought to be made example for the fault.

*Clean.* A fault! no longer can I hold  
myself

To hear vice upheld and virtue thrown down.  
A fault! judge, I desire, then, where it lies,  
In those that are my judges, or in me:  
Heaven stands on my side, pity, love, and  
duty.

*Sim.* Where are they, sir? who sees them  
but yourself?

*Clean.* Not you; and I am sure,  
You never had the gracious eyes to see them.  
You think that you arraign me, but I hope  
To sentence you at the bar.

2 *Court.* That would shew brave.

*Clean.* This were the judgment-seat we  
[stand at] now!

Of the heaviest crimes that ever made up  
[sin],

Unnaturalness, and inhumanity,  
You are found foul and guilty, by a jury  
Made of your father's curses, which have  
brought

Vengeance impending on you; and I, now,  
Am forced to pronounce judgment on my  
judges.

The common laws of reason and of nature  
Condemn you, *ipso facto*; you are parricides,  
And if you marry, will beget the like,  
Who, when they are grown to full maturity,  
Will hurry you, their fathers, to their graves.  
Like traitors, you take council from the  
living,

Of upright judgment you would rob the bench,  
(Experience and discretion snatch'd away  
From the earth's face,) turn all into disorder,

Imprison virtue, and infranchise vice,  
And put the sword of justice in the hands  
Of boys and madmen.

*Sim.* Well, well, have you done, sir?

*Clean.* I have spoke my thoughts.

*Sim.* Then I'll begin and end.

*Evan.* 'Tis time I now begin—

Here your commission ends.

Cleanthes, come you from the bar. Because  
I know you are severally disposed, I here  
Invite you to an object will, no doubt,  
Work in you contrary effects.—Music!

*Loud music.* Enter Leonides, Creon,  
Lysander, and other old men.

*Clean.* Pray, heaven, I dream not! sure  
he moves, talks comfortably,  
As joy can wish a man. If he be changed,  
(Far above from me,) he's not ill entreated;  
His face doth promise fullness of content,  
And glory hath a part in't.

*Leo.* Oh my son!

*Evan.* You that can claim acquaintance  
with these lads,  
Talk freely.

*Sim.* I can see none there that's worth  
One hand to you from me.

*Evan.* These are thy judges, and by their  
grave law

I find thee clear, but these delinquents guilty.  
You must change places, for 'tis so decreed:  
Such just pre-eminence hath thy goodness  
gain'd,

Thou art the judge now, they the men  
arraign'd. [To Cleanthes.

1 *Court.* Here's fine dancing, gentlemen.

2 *Court.* Is thy father amongst them?

*Sim.* Oh, pox! I saw him the first thing  
I look'd on.

Alive again! 'slight, I believe now a father  
Hath as many lives as a mother.

*Clean.* 'Tis full as blessed as 'tis wonderful.  
Oh! bring me back to the same law again,  
I am fouler than all these; seize on me,  
officers,

And bring me to new sentence.

*Sim.* What's all this?

*Clean.* A fault not to be pardon'd,  
Unnaturalness is but sin's shadow to it.

*Sim.* I am glad of that; I hope the case  
may alter,  
And I turn judge again.

*Evan.* Name your offence.

*Clean.* That I should be so vile  
As once to think you cruel.

*Evan.* Is that all?

'Twas pardon'd ere confess'd: you that have  
sons,

If they be worthy, here may challenge them.

*Creon.* I should have one amongst them, had he had grace

To have retained that name.

*Sim.* I pray you, father. [*Kneels.*]

*Creon.* That name, I know, Hath been long since forgot.

*Sim.* I find but small comfort in remembering it now.

*Evan.* Cleanthes, take your place with these grave fathers, And read what in that table is inscribed.

[*Gives him a paper.*]

Now set these at the bar,

And read, Cleanthes, to the dread and terror Of disobedience and unnatural blood.

*Clean.* [*reads.*] *It is decreed by the grave and learned council of Epire, that no son and heir shall be held capable of his inheritance at the age of one and twenty, unless he be at that time as mature in obedience, manners, and goodness.*

*Sim.* Sure I shall never be at full age, then, though I live to an hundred years; and that's nearer by twenty than the last statute allow'd.

1 *Court.* A terrible act!

*Clean.* Moreover, it is enacted that all sons aforesaid, whom either this law, or their own grace, shall reduce into the true method of duty, virtue, and affection, [*shall appear before us*] and relate their trial and approbation from Cleanthes, the son of Leonides—from me, my lord!

*Evan.* From none but you, as fullest.

Proceed, sir.

*Clean.* Whom, for his manifest virtues, we make such judge and censor of youth, and the absolute reference of life and manners.

*Sim.* This is a brave world! when a man should be selling land he must be learning manners. Is't not, my masters?

*Enter Eugenia.*

*Eug.* What's here to do? my suitors at the bar!

The old band shines again: oh miserable!

[*She swoons.*]

*Evan.* Read the law over to her, 'twill awake her:

'Tis one deserves small pity.

*Clean.* Lastly, it is ordained, that all such wives now whatsoever, that shall design their husband's death, to be soon rid of them, and entertain suitors in their husbands' lifetime—

*Sim.* You had best read that a little louder; for, if anything, that will bring her to herself again, and find her tongue.

*Clean.* Shall not presume, on the penalty

of our heavy displeasure, to marry within ten years after.

*Eug.* That law's too long by nine years and a half,

I'll take my death upon't, so shall most women.

*Clean.* And those incontinent women so offending, to be judged and censured by Hippolita, wife to Cleanthes.

*Eug.* Of all the rest, I'll not be judged by her.

*Re-enter Hippolita.*

*Clean.* Ah! here she comes. Let me prevent thy joys, Prevent them but in part, and hide the rest; Thou hast not strength enough to bear them, else.

*Hip.* Leonides! [*She faints.*]

*Clean.* I fear'd it all this while; I knew 'twas past thy power. Hippolita! What contrariety is in women's blood! One faints for spleen and anger, she for grace.

*Evan.* Of sons and wives we see the worst and best.

May future ages yield Hippolitas Many; but few like thee, Eugenia! Let no Simonides henceforth have a fame, But all blest sons live in Cleanthes's name—

[*Harsh music within.*]

Ha! what strange kind of melody was that? Yet give it entrance, whatso'er it be, This day is all devote to liberty.

*Enter Fiddlers, Gnatho, Courtezan, Cook, Butler, &c., with the Old Women, Agatha, and one bearing a bridecake for the wedding.*

*Gnatho.* Fiddlers, crowd on, crowd on; let no man lay a block in your way.—Crowd on, I say.

*Evan.* Stay the crowd awhile; let's know the reason of this jollity.

*Clean.* Sirrah, do you know where you are?

*Gnatho.* Yes, sir; I am here, now here, and now here again, sir.

*Lys.* Your hat is too high crown'd, the duke in presence.

*Gnatho.* The duke! as he is my sovereign, I do give him two crowns for it, and that's equal change all the world over: as I am lord of the day (being my marriage-day the second) I do advance my bonnet. Crowd on afore.

*Leon.* Good sir, a few words, if you will vouchsafe them;

Or will you be forced?

*Gnatho.* Forced! I would the duke himself would say so.

*Evan.* I think he dares, sir, and does ; if you stay not,  
You shall be forced.

*Gnoth.* I think so, my lord, and good reason too ; shall not I stay when your grace says I shall? I were unworthy to be a bridegroom in any part of your highness's dominions, then : will it please you to taste of the wedlock-courtesy?

*Evan.* Oh, by no means, sir ; you shall not deface so fair an ornament for me.

*Gnoth.* If your grace please to be caked, say so.

*Evan.* And which might be your fair bride, sir?

*Gnoth.* This is my two-for-one that must be the *uxor uxoris*, the *remedy doloris*, and the very *syceum amoris*.

*Evan.* And hast thou any else?

*Gnoth.* I have an older, my lord, for other uses.

*Clean.* My lord,

I do observe a strange decorum here : These that do lead this day of jollity,  
Do march with music and most mirthful cheeks ;

Those that do follow, sad, and woefully,  
Nearer the haviour of a funeral,  
Than of a wedding.

*Evan.* 'Tis true ; pray expound that, sir.

*Gnoth.* As the destiny of the day falls out, my lord, one goes to wedding, another goes to hanging ; and your grace, in the due consideration, shall find them much alike ; the one hath the ring upon her finger, the other the halter about her neck. *I take thee, Beatrice*, says the bridegroom ; *I take thee, Agatha*, says the hangman ; and both say together, *to have and to hold, till death do part us*.

*Evan.* This is not yet plain enough to my understanding.

*Gnoth.* If further your grace examine it, you shall find I shew myself a dutiful subject, and obedient to the law, myself, with these my good friends, and your good subjects, our old wives, whose days are ripe, and their lives forfeit to the law : only myself, more forward than the rest, am already provided of my second choice.

*Evan.* Oh ! take heed, sir, you'll run yourself into danger ;

If the law finds you with two wives at once,  
There's a shrewd preunire.

*Gnoth.* I have taken leave of the old, my lord. I have nothing to say to her ; she's going to sea, your grace knows whither, better than I do : she has a strong wind with her, it stands full in her poop ; when you please, let her disembogue.

*Cook.* And the rest of her neighbours with her, whom we present to the satisfaction of your highness' law.

*Gnoth.* And so we take our leaves, and leave them to your highness.—Crowd on.

*Evan.* Stay, stay, you are too forward. Will you marry,  
And your wife yet living?

*Gnoth.* Alas ! she'll be dead before we can get to church. If your grace would set her in the way, I would dispatch her : I have a venture on't, which would return me, if your highness would make a little more haste, two for one.

*Evan.* Come, my lords, we must sit again ; here's a case  
Craves a most serious censure.

*Cook.* Now they shall be dispatch'd out of the way.

*Gnoth.* I would they were gone once ; the time goes away.

*Evan.* Which is the wife unto the forward bridegroom?

*Aga.* I am, an it please your grace.

*Evan.* Trust me, a lusty woman, able-bodied,  
And well-blooded cheeks.

*Gnoth.* Oh, she paints, my lord ; she was a chambermaid once, and learn'd it of her lady.

*Evan.* Sure I think she cannot be so old.

*Aga.* Truly I think so too, an't please your grace.

*Gnoth.* Two to one with your grace of that ! she's threescore by the book.

*Leon.* Peace, sirrah, you are too loud.

*Cook.* Take heed, Gnotho : if you move the duke's patience, 'tis an edge-tool ; but a word and a blow, he cuts off your head.

*Gnoth.* Cut off my head ! away, ignorant ! he knows it cost more in the hair ; he does not use to cut off many such heads as mine : I will talk to him too ; if he cut off my head, I'll give him my ears. I say my wife is at full age for the law, the clerk shall take his oath, and the church-book shall be sworn too.

*Evan.* My lords, I leave this censure to you.

*Leon.* Then first, this fellow does deserve punishment,

For offering up a lusty able woman,  
Which may do service to the commonwealth,

Where the law craves one impotent and useless.

*Creon.* Therefore to be severely punished,  
For thus attempting a second marriage,  
His wife yet living.

*Lys.* Nay, to have it trebled ;

That even the day and instant when he should mourn,

As a kind husband, at her funeral,  
He leads a triumph to the scorn of it ;  
Which unseasonable joy ought to be punish'd  
With all severity.

*But.* The fiddles will be in a foul case too,  
by and by.

*Leon.* Nay, further ; it seems he has a venture

Of two for one at his second marriage,  
Which cannot be but a conspiracy  
Against the former.

*Gnoth.* A mess of wise old men !

*Lys.* Sirrah, what can you answer to all these ?

*Gnoth.* Ye are good old men, and talk as age will give you leave. I would speak with the youthful duke himself ; he and I may speak of things that shall be thirty or forty years after you are dead and rotten. Alas ! you are here to-day, and gone to sea to-morrow.

*Evan.* In troth, sir, then I must be plain with you.

The law that should take away your old wife from you,

The which I do perceive was your desire,  
Is void and frustrate ; so for the rest :

There has been since another parliament,  
Has cut it off.

*Gnoth.* I see your grace is disposed to be pleasant.

*Evan.* Yes, you might perceive that ; I had not else

Thus dallied with your follies.

*Gnoth.* I'll talk further with your grace when I come back from church ; in the mean time, you know what to do with the old women.

*Evan.* Stay, sir, unless in the mean time you mean

I cause a gibbet to be set up in your way,  
And hang you at your return.

*Aga.* O gracious prince !

*Evan.* Your old wives cannot die to-day by any law of mine ; for aught I can say to them,

They may, by a new edict, bury you,  
And then, perhaps, you'll pay a new fine too.

*Gnoth.* This is fine, indeed !

*Aga.* O gracious prince ! may he live a hundred years more.

*Cook.* Your venture is not like to come in to-day, Gnotho.

*Gnoth.* Give me the principal back.

*Cook.* Nay, by my troth, we'll venture still—and I'm sure we have as ill a venture of it as you ; for we have taken old wives of

purpose, that we had thought to have put away at this market, and now we cannot utter a pennyworth.

*Evan.* Well, sirrah, you were best to discharge your new charge, and take your old one to you.

*Gnoth.* Oh music ! no music, but prove most doleful trumpet ;

Oh bride ! no bride, but thou mayst prove a strumpet ;

Oh venture ! no venture, I have, for one, now none ;

Oh wife ! thy life is saved when I hoped it had been gone.

Case up your fruitless strings ; no penny, no wedding ;

Case up thy maidenhead ; no priest, no bedding :

Avaunt, my venture ! ne'er to be restored,  
Till Ag, my old wife, be thrown overboard :

Then come again, old Ag, since it must be so ;

Let bride and venture with woful music go.

*Cook.* What for the bridecake, Gnotho ?

*Gnoth.* Let it be mouldy, now 'tis out of season,

Let it grow out of date, currant, and reason ;  
Let it be chipt and chopt, and given to chickens.

No more is got by that, than William Dickins

Got by his wooden dishes.

Put up your plums, as fiddlers put up pipes,  
The wedding dash'd, the bridegroom weeps and wipes.

Fiddlers, farewell ! and now, without perhaps,  
Put up your fiddles as you put up scraps.

*Lys.* This passion has given some satisfaction yet. My lord, I think you'll pardon him now, with all the rest, so they live

honestly with the wives they have.

*Evan.* Oh ! most freely ; free pardon to all.

*Cook.* Ay, we have deserved our pardons, if we can live honestly with such reverend

wives, that have no motion in them but their tongues.

*Aga.* Heaven bless your grace ! you are a just prince.

*Gnoth.* All hopes dash'd ; the clerk's duties lost,

My venture gone ; my second wife divorced ;  
And which is worst, the old one come back again !

Such voyages are made now-a-days !  
Besides these two fountains of fresh water,

I will weep two salt out of my nose. Your grace had been more kind to your young

subjects—heaven bless and mend your laws,  
that they do not gull your poor countrymen:

but I am not the first, by forty, that has been undone by the law. 'Tis but a folly to stand upon terms ; I take my leave of your grace, as well as mine eyes will give me leave : I would they had been asleep in their beds when they opened them to see this day ! Come Ag, come Ag.

[*Exeunt* Gnotho and Agatha.

*Creon.* Were not you all my servants ?

*Cook.* During your life, as we thought, sir ; but our young master turn'd us away.

*Creon.* How headlong, villain, wert thou in thy ruin !

*Sim.* I followed the fashion, sir, as other young men did. If you were as we thought you had been, we should ne'er have come for this, I warrant you. We did not feed, after the old fashion, on beef and mutton, and such like.

*Creon.* Well, what damage or charge you have run yourselves into by marriage, I cannot help, nor deliver you from your wives ; them you must keep ; yourselves shall again return to me.

*All.* We thank your lordship for your love, and must thank ourselves for our bad bargains.

[*Exeunt.*

*Evan.* Cleanthes, you delay the power of law,

To be inflicted on these misgovern'd men,  
That filial duty have so far transgress'd.

*Clean.* My lord, I see a satisfaction Meeting the sentence, even preventing it, Beating my words back in their utterance. See, sir, there's salt sorrow bringing forth fresh

And new duties, as the sea propagates.

The elephants have found their joints too—

[*They kneel.*

Why, here's humility able to bind up

The punishing hands of the severest masters,  
Much more the gentle fathers'.

*Sim.* I had ne'er thought to have been brought so low as my knees again ; but since there's no remedy, fathers, reverend fathers, as you ever hope to have good sons and heirs, a handful of pity ! we confess we have deserved more than we are willing to receive at your hands, though sons can never deserve too much of their fathers, as shall appear afterwards.

*Creon.* And what way can you decline your feeding now ?

You cannot retire to beeves and muttens sure.

*Sim.* Alas ! sir, you see a good pattern for that, now we have laid by our high and lusty meats, and are down to our marrow-bones already.

*Creon.* Well, sir, rise to virtues : we'll bind you now ;

[*They rise.*

You that were too weak yourselves to govern,  
By others shall be govern'd.

*Lys.* Cleanthes,

I meet your justice with reconilement :

If there be tears of faith in woman's breast,  
I have received a myriad, which confirms me  
To find a happy renovation.

*Clean.* Here's virtue's throne,  
Which I'll embellish with my dearest jewels  
Of love and faith, peace and affection !

This is the altar of my sacrifice,  
Where daily my devoted knees shall bend.  
Age-honoured shrine ! time still so love you,  
That I so long may have you in mine eye  
Until my memory lose your beginning !

For you, great prince, long may your fame  
survive,

Your justice and your wisdom never die,  
Crown of your crown, the blessing of your  
land,

Which you reach to her from your regent  
hand !

*Leon.* O Cleanthes, had you with us tasted  
The entertainment of our retirement,  
Fear'd and exclaim'd on in your ignorance,  
You might have sooner died upon the won-  
der,

Than any rage or passion for our loss.

A place at hand we were all strangers in,  
So spher'd about with musie, such delights,  
Such viands and attendance, and once a day  
So cheered with a royal visitant,

That oft times, waking, our unsteady fancies  
Would question whether we yet lived or no,  
Or had possession of that paradise

Where angels be the guard !

*Evan.* Enough, Leonides,  
You go beyond the praise ; we have our end,  
And all is ended well : we have now seen  
The flowers and weeds that grow about our  
court.

*Sim.* If these be weeds, I'm afraid I shall  
wear none so good again as long as my  
father lives.

*Evan.* Only this gentleman we did abuse  
With our own bosom : we seem'd a tyrant,  
And he our instrument. Look, 'tis Cratilus.

[*Discovers* Cratilus.

The man that you supposed had now been  
travell'd ;

Which we gave leave to learn to speak,  
And bring us foreign languages to Greece.  
All's joy, I see ; let music be the crown :  
And set it high, "The good needs fear no  
law,

It is his safety, and the bad man's awe."

[*Flourish. Exeunt.*

# Believe as you List.

## PROLOGUE.

*So far our author is from arrogance  
That he craves pardon for his ignorance  
In story. If you find what's Roman here,  
Grecian or Asiatic, draw too near  
A late and sad example, 'tis confess  
He's but an English scholar; at his best  
A stranger to cosmography, and may err  
In the country's names, the shape and character  
Of the person he presents. Yet he is bold  
In me to promise, be it new or old,  
The tale is worth the hearing; and may move  
Compassion, perhaps deserve your love  
And approbation. He dares not boast  
His pains and care, or what books he hath tost  
And turned to make it up. The rarity  
Of the events in this strange history,  
Now offered to you, by his own confession  
Must make it good, and not his weak expression.  
You sit his judges, and like judges be  
From favour to his cause, or malice, free;  
Then, whether he hath hit the white or miss'd,  
As the title speaks, Believe you as you list!*

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Antiochus, <i>king of the Lower Asia, a fugitive.</i>	Titus, <i>head of Flaminius' intelligence department.</i>
A Stoic Philosopher, <i>friend to Antiochus.</i>	Prusias, <i>King of Bithynia.</i>
Chrysalus, Syrus, Geta, <i>ungrateful servants of Antiochus.</i>	Philoxenus, <i>tutor and minister of Prusias.</i>
Berecinthius, <i>a flamen of Cybele.</i>	Metellus, <i>Proconsul of Lusitania.</i>
First, Second, and Third Merchants, <i>born subjects of Antiochus.</i>	Sempronius, <i>a Captain.</i>
Flaminius, <i>the Roman Ambassador at Carthage.</i>	Marcellus, <i>a noble Roman, Proconsul of Sicily.</i>
Calistus, } <i>Freedmen of Flaminius.</i>	Jailor, Officer, Captain, &c.
Demetrius, }	Queen of Prusias.
Amilcar, <i>Prince of the Carthaginian Senate.</i>	Courtezan.
Hanno, Asdrubal, Carthalo, <i>Carthaginian Senators.</i>	Cornelia, <i>a noble Roman lady, wife to Marcellus.</i>
Lentulus, <i>successor of Flaminius at Carthage.</i>	Moorish Waiting Woman..
	<i>Guards, &amp;c., &amp;c.</i>

SCENE,—Carthage, Bithynia, Callipolis, Syracuse.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—*The neighbourhood of Carthage.*

*Enter Antiochus and a Stoic.*

*Stoic.* You're now in sight of Carthage, that great city,

Which, in her empire's vastness, rivals Rome—  
At her proud height; two hours will bring  
you thither.  
Make use of what you've learn'd in your-  
long travails,  
And from the golden principles, read to you;

In the Athenian Academie, stand resolved  
For either fortune. You must now forget  
The contemplations of a private man,  
And put in action that which may comply  
with

The majesty of a monareh.

*Ant.* How that title,  
That glorious attribute of majesty,  
That troublesome, though most triumphant  
robe

Designed me in my birth, which I have worn  
With terror and astonishment to others,  
Affrights *me* now ! O memory ! memory  
Of what I was once when the Eastern world  
With wonder, in my May of youth, look'd  
on me.

Ambassadors of the most potent kings,  
With noble emulation, eontending  
To court my friendship, their fair daughters  
offered

As pledges to assure it, with all pomp  
And circumstance of glory. Rome herself,  
And Carthage, emulous whose side I should  
Confirm in my protection. O remembrance,  
With what ingenious eruelty and tortures,  
Out of a due consideration of  
My present low and desperate condition,  
Dost thou afflict me now.

*Stoic.* You must oppose  
(For so the stoie discipline commands you)  
That wisdom with your patience fortified,  
Which holds dominion over fate, against  
The torrent of your passion.

*Ant.* I should,  
I do confess I should, if I could drink up  
That river of forgetfulness poets dream of.  
But still in dreadful forms, (philosophy  
wanting

Power to remove them,) all those innocent  
spirits,

Borrowing again their bodies, gashed with  
wounds,

(Which strewed Achaia's bloody plains, and  
made

Rivulets of gore) appear to me, exacting  
A strict account of my ambitious folly,  
For the exposing of twelve thousand souls,  
Who fell that fatal day, to certain ruin ;  
Neither the counsel of the Persian king  
Prevailing with me; nor the grave advice  
Of my wise enemy, Marcus Scaurus, hinder-  
ing

My desperate enterprise—too late repented.  
Methinks I now look on my butchered army!

*Stoic.* This is mere melancholy.

*Ant.* O, 'tis more, sir ;  
Here, there, and everywhere they do pur-  
sue me !

The genius of my country made a slave,

Like a weeping mother, seems to kneel be-  
fore me,  
Wringing her manaeled hands ! The hope-  
ful youth

And bravery of my kingdom, in their pale  
And ghastly looks, lamenting that they were  
Too soon by my means forced from their  
sweet being :

Old [He]sper with his fierce beams [seorc]h-  
ing in vain

Their [wives, their sisters, and their tender  
daughters]

Trained up in all delights, or sacred to  
The chaste Diana's rites, compelled to  
bow to

The soldiers' lusts, or at an outcry sold  
Under the spear like beasts—to be spurned  
and trod on

By their proud mistresses, the Roman  
matrons !

O, sir, consider then if it can be  
In the constancy of a stoic to endure  
What now I suffer ?

*Stoic.* Two and twenty years  
Travailing o'er the world, you've paid the  
forfeit

Of this engagement : shed a sea of tears  
In your sorrow for it : and now, being called  
from

The rigour of a strict philosopher's life  
By the eries of your poor country, you are  
bound

With an obedient cheerfulness to follow  
The path that you are entered in, which will  
Guide you out of a wilderness of horror,  
To the flourishing plains of safety, the just  
gods

Smoothing the way before you.

*Ant.* Though I grant  
That all impossibilities are easy

To their omnipotence, give me leave to fear  
The more than doubtful issue. Can it fall

In the compass of my hopes—the lordly  
Romans,

So long possessed of Asia, their plea  
Made good by conquest, and that ratified  
With their religious authority,

The propagation of the commonwealth  
To whose increase they're sworn to, will e'er  
part with

A prey so precious, and so dearly purchased ?  
A tigress circled with her famished whelps  
Will sooner yield a lamb, snatched from the  
flock,

To the dumb oratory of the ewe  
Than Rome restore one foot of earth that may  
Diminish her vast empire !

*Stoic.* In her will  
This may be granted, but you have a title



So strong and clear that there's no colour left  
To varnish Rome's pretences. Add this, sir,  
The Asian princes, warned by your example,  
And yet unconquered, never will consent  
That such a foul example of injustice  
Shall, to the scandal of the present age,  
Hereafter be recorded. They in this  
Are equally engaged with you, and must,  
Though not in love to justice, for their safety  
In policy assist, guard, and protect you.  
And, you may rest assured, neither the king  
Of Parthia, the Gauls, nor big-boned Germans,  
Nor this great Carthage, grown already

jealous  
Of Rome's encroaching empire, will cry *Aim*  
To such an usurpation, which must  
Take from their own security. Besides  
Your mother was a Roman; for her sake,  
And the families from which she is derived,  
You must find favour.

*Anti.* For her sake! Alas, sir,  
Ambition knows no kindred. Right and  
lawful

Was never yet found as a marginal note  
In the black book of profit. I am sunk  
Too low to be buoyed up, it being held  
A foolish weakness and disease in statistas,  
In favour of a weak man, to provoke  
Such as are mighty. The imperious waves  
Of my calamities have already fallen

[Here is a sad hiatus in the manuscript.]

To them enter Chrysalus, Syrus, Geta, ser-  
vants of Antiochus, who revile him, and  
rob and strip him.

[The hiatus continues.]

[*Exeunt all but Antiochus.*

*Anti.*

[Farewell my hopes; despair with sable  
wings

[Sail-stretch'd above my head: the gold  
with which

[us furnished me to supply my wants,  
[And] make my first appearance like myself  
[Have these] disloyal villains ravished from  
me.

Wretch that I was to tempt their abject minds  
With such a purchase. Can I, in this weed,  
Without the gold to fee an advocate  
To plead my royal title, nourish hope  
Of a recovery? Forlorn majesty,  
Wanting the outer gloss and ceremony  
To give it lustre, meets no more respect  
Than knowledge with the ignorant. Ha!  
what is

Contained in this waste paper? 'Tis endorsed  
To the no-king Antiochus; and subscribed  
No more thy servant, but superior, Chrysalus.

What am I fallen to? There is something  
writ more.

Why this small piece of silver? What I read  
may

Reveal the mystery:—*Forget thou wert ever  
Called king Antiochus. With this charity  
I enter thee a beggar.* Too tough heart  
Will nothing break thee? O that now I stood  
On some high pyramid, from whence I might  
Be seen by the whole world, and with a voice  
Louder than thunder pierce the ears of proud  
And secure greatness with the true relation  
Of my remarkable story, that my fall  
Might not be fruitless, but still live the great  
Example of man's frailty. I that was  
Born and bred up a king, whose frown or  
smile

Spake death or life; my will a law; my  
person

Environed with an army: now exposed  
To the contempt and scorn of my own slave,  
Who in his pride, as a god compared with  
me,

Bids me become a beggar! But complaints  
are weak

And womanish. I will like a palm tree grow  
Under my [own] huge weight. Nor shall the  
fear

Of death or torture that dejection bring,  
Make me [or] live or die less than a king!

[*Exit.*

SCENE II.—*A Street in Carthage.*

Enter Berecinthus (with three petitions,)  
and three Merchants of Asia.

1 *Merch.* We are grown so contemptible  
he disdains

To give us hearing.

2 *Merch.* Keeps us at such a distance,  
And with his Roman gravity declines  
Our suit for conference, as with much more  
ease

We might make our approaches to the  
Parthian,

Without a present, than work him to have  
A feeling of our grievances.

3 *Merch.* A statesman!  
The devil, I think, who only knows him truly,  
Can give his character. When he is to deter-  
mine

A point of justice, his words fall in measure  
Like plummets of a clock, observing time  
And just proportion.

1 *Merch.* But when he is  
To speak in any cause concerns himself,  
Or Rome's republic, like a gushing torrent,  
Not to be stopp'd in its full course, his  
reasons,

Delivered like a second Mercurie,

Break in, and [bear down] whatsoever is  
Opposed against them.

*2 Merch.* When he smiles, let such  
Beware as have to do with him, for then,  
Sans doubt, he's bent on mischief.

*Berec.* As I am  
Cybele's flamen (whose most sacred image,  
Drawn thus in pomp, I wear upon my  
breast),

I am privileged, nor is it in his power  
To do me wrong; and he shall find I can  
Think, and aloud too, when I am not at  
Her altar kneeling. Mother of the gods!  
what is he?

At his best but a patrician of Rome,  
His name Titus Flaminius; and speak mine,  
Berecinthus, arch-flamen to Cybele,  
It makes as great a sound.

*3 Merch.* True; but his place, sir,  
And the power it carries in it, as Rome's  
legate,

Gives him pre-eminence o'er you.

*Berec.* Not an atom.  
When moral honesty and *ius gentium* fail  
To lend relief to such as are oppressed,  
Religion must use her strength. I'm perfect  
In these notes you gave me. Do they con-  
tain at full,

Your grievances and losses.

*1 Merch.* Would they were  
As well redressed, as they are punctually  
Delivered to you.

*Berec.* Say no more, they shall  
And to the purpose.

*2 Merch.* Here he comes.  
*Berec.* Have at him.

*Enter Flaminius with two freedmen,  
Calistus and Demetrius.*

*Flam.* Blow away these troublesome  
and importunate drones,  
I've embryos of greater consequence  
In my imaginations to which  
I must give life and form, not now vouchsafing  
To hear their idle buzzes.

*2 Merch.* Note you that?  
*Berec.* Yes, I do note it; but the Flamen  
is not

So light to be removed by a groom's breath.  
I must, and will, speak, and I thus confront  
him.

*Flam.* But that the image of the god-  
dess, which  
'Thou wear'st upon thy breast, protects thy  
rudeness,

"T had forfeited thy life. Dost thou not tremble  
When an incensed Roman frowns?

*Berec.* I see  
No Gorgon in your face.

*Flam.* Must I speak in thunder  
Before thou wilt be awed?

*Berec.* I rather look  
For reverence from thee if thou respectest  
The goddess' power, and in her name I  
charge thee

To give me hearing. If these lions roar,  
For thy contempt of her expect a vengeance  
Suitable to thy pride.

*Flam.* Thou shalt o'ercome,  
There's no contending with thee.

*3 Merch.* Hitherto  
The Flamen hath the better.

*1 Merch.* But I fear  
He will not keep it.

*Berec.* Know you these men's  
faces?

*Flam.* Yes, yes, poor Asiatics.

*Berec.* Poor! They are made so  
By your Roman tyranny and oppression.

*Flam.* [to task]  
If arrogantly you presume to take

The Roman government, your goddess can-  
not

Give privilege to it, and you'll find and feel  
'Tis little less than treason, Flamen.

*Berec.* Truth  
In your pride is so interpreted: these poor  
men,

These Asiatic merchants, whom you look  
on

With such contempt and scorn, are they to  
whom

Rome owes her bravery: their industrious  
search

To the farthest Inde, with danger to them-  
selves

Brings home security to you—to you—un-  
thankful:

Your magazines are from their sweat sup-  
plied:

The legions with which you fright the world  
Are from their labour paid: the Tyrian  
fish,

Whose blood dyes your proud purple, in the  
colour

Distinguishing the senator's garded robe  
From a plebeian habit, their nets catch:

The diamond hewed from the rock, the  
pearl

Dived for into the bottom of the sea,  
The sapphire, ruby, jacinth, amber, coral,  
And all rich ornaments of your Latian  
dames

Are Asian spoils. They are indeed the  
nurses

And sinews of your war, and without them  
What could you do? Your handkercher—

*Flam.* Wipe your face,

You're in a sweat. The weather's hot, take heed

Of melting your fat kidneys.

*Berec.* There's no heat

Can thaw thy frozen conscience.

*Flam.* To it again ;

I am not mov'd.

*Berec.* I see it. If you had

The feeling of a man you would not suffer  
These men, who have deserved so well, to sink

Under the burthen of their wrongs. If they  
Are subjects, why enjoy they not the right  
And privilege of subjects? What defence

Can you allege for your connivance to  
The Carthaginian gallies, who forced from  
them

The prize they took, belonging not to them  
Nor their confederates ?

*Flam.* With reverence

To your so sacred goddess, I must tell you  
You're grown presumptuous ; and, in your  
demands,

A rash and saucy Flamen. Meddle with  
Your juggling mysteries, and keep in awe  
Your gilded ministers. Shall I yield account  
Of what I do to you ?

1 *Merch.* He smiles in frown.

2 *Merch.* Nay then I know what follows.

3 *Merch.* In his looks

A tempest rises.

*Flam.* How dare you complain,

Or in a look repine? Our government  
Hath been too easy, and the yoke, which  
Rome

In her accustomed lenity imposed  
Upon your stubborn necks, begets contempt.

Hath our familiar commerce and trading,  
Almost as with our equals, taught you to  
Dispute our actions? Have you quite forgot  
What we are, and you ought to be? Shall  
vassals

Capitulate with their lords?

2 *Merch.* I vow he speaks

In his own dialect.

*Flam.* 'Tis too frequent, wretches,

To have the vanquished hate the conqueror,  
And from us needs no answer. Do I not  
know

How odious the lordly Roman is  
To the despis'd Asian ; and that  
To gain your liberty you would pull down  
The altars of your gods, and like the giants  
Raise a new war gainst heaven.

1 *Merch.* Terrible !

*Flam.* Did you not give assurance of this,  
when

Giddy Antiochus died, and rather than

Accept us guardians of your orphan kingdom,

When the victorious Scaurus with his sword  
Pleaded the Roman title, with our vote,  
You did exclaim against us as the men  
That sought to lay an unjust gripe upon  
Your territories ; never remembering that  
In the brass-leaved book of fate it was set  
down

The earth should know no sovereign but  
Rome.

Yet you repine, and rather choose to pay  
Homage and fealty to the Parthian,  
The Egyptian Ptolemy, or indeed any,  
Than bow unto the Roman.

*Berec.* And perhaps  
Our government in them had been more  
gentle,

Since yours is insupportable.

*Flam.* If thou wert not  
In a free state, the tongue that belloweth  
forth

These blasphemies should be seared. For  
you—presume not [*To the Merchants.*  
To trouble me, hereafter. If you do,  
You shall with horror to your proudest  
hopes

Feel really that we have iron hammers

To pulverize rebellion, and that

We dare use you as slaves. Be you, too,  
warned, sir, [*To Berec.*

And this is my last caution. I have seen  
A murmurer, like yourself, for his attempting  
To raise sedition in Rome's provinces,  
Hang'd up in such a habit !

[*Exeunt Flaminius and freedmen.*

*Berec.* I have took  
Poison in at my ears, and I shall burst  
If it come not up in my reply.

1 *Merch.* He's gone, sir.

*Berec.* He durst not stay me. If he had,  
he'd found

I would not swallow my spittle.

2 *Merch.* As we must  
Our wrongs and our disgraces.

3 *Merch.* O, the wretched  
Condition that we live in ! Made the anvil  
On which Rome's tyrannies are shaped and  
fashioned.

1 *Merch.* But our calamities there's nothing  
left us,

Which we can call our own.

2 *Merch.* Our wives and daughters  
Lie open to their lusts, and such as should be  
Our judges dare, not right us.

3 *Merch.* O, Antiochus !  
Thrice happy were the men whom fate appointed

To fall with thee in Achaia.

2 *Merch.* They have set  
A period to their miseries.  
1 *Merch.* We survive  
To linger out a tedious life ; and death--  
We call in vain what flies us.  
*Berec.* If religion  
Be not a mere word only, and the gods  
Are just, we shall find a delivery  
When least expected.

*Enter Antiochus.*

1 *Merch.* 'Tis beyond all hope, sir.  
*Berec.* Ha ! who is this ?  
*Ant.* Your charity to a poor man  
As you are Asians.  
2 *Merch.* Pray you observe him.  
3 *Merch.* I am amazed !  
1 *Merch.* I thunderstrook !  
*Berec.* What are you ?  
*Ant.* The King Antiochus.  
2 *Merch.* Or some deity  
That hath assumed his shape ?  
*Berec.* He only differs  
In the colour of his hair, and age.  
*Ant.* Consider  
What two and twenty years of misery  
Can work upon a wretch : that long time  
spent too  
Under distant zeniths, and the change you  
look on  
Will not deserve your wonder.  
1 *Merch.* His own voice !  
2 *Merch.* His very countenance, his fore-  
head, eyes !  
3 *Merch.* His nose, his very lip !  
*Berec.* His stature, speech !  
1 *Merch.* His very hand, leg, foot !  
2 *Merch.* The moles upon  
His face and hands.  
3 *Merch.* The scars caused by his hurts  
On his right brow and head.  
*Berec.* The hollowness  
Of his under jaw, occasioned by the loss  
Of a tooth pulled out by his chirurgeon.  
1 *Merch.* To confirm us, tell your chirur-  
gion's name  
When he served you.  
*Ant.* You all knew him as I  
Do you : Demetrius Castor.  
2 *Merch.* Strange. But  
3 *Merch.* Most infallibly true.  
*Berec.* So many marks  
Confirming us, we'll pay for our distrust  
A sacrifice for his safety.  
1 *Merch.* May Rome smile !  
2 *Merch.* And Asia once more flourish !  
3 *Merch.* You the means, sir !

*Ant.* Silence your shouts : I will give  
stronger proofs  
Than these exterior marks when I appear  
Before the Carthaginian senators,  
With whom I have held more intelligence  
And private counsels than with all the kings  
Of Asia or Afric : I'll amaze them  
With the wonder of my story.  
*Berec.* Yet, until  
Your majesty be furnished like yourself,  
To a neighbour village—  
*Ant.* Where you please. The omen  
Of this encounter promises a good issue :  
And, our gods pleased, oppressed Asia,  
When aid is least expected, may shake off  
The insulting Roman bondage, and in me  
Gain and enjoy her pristine liberty. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—Carthage. *A Room in the House of Flaminius.*

*Enter Flaminius and his freedman Calistus.*  
*Flam.* A man that styles himself Antiochus  
say you ?  
*Calis.* Not alone styled so, but as such  
received  
And honoured by the Asians.  
*Flam.* Two impostors,  
For their pretension to that fatal name,  
Already have paid dear ; nor shall this third  
Escape unpunished.  
*Calis.* I will exact your wisdom  
With an Herculean arm (the cause requires it)  
To strangle this new monster in the birth.  
For, on my life, he hath delivered to  
The credulous multitude such reasons why  
They should believe he is the true Antiochus  
That, with their gratulations for his safety,  
And wishes for his restitution, many  
Offer the hazard of their lives and fortunes.  
To do him service.  
*Flam.* Poor seduced fools !  
However 'tis a business of such weight  
I must not sleep in 't. Is he now in Carthage ?  
*Calis.* No, sir ; removed to a grange some  
two miles off ;  
And there the malcontents, and such, whose  
wants  
With forfeited credits make them wish a  
change  
Of the Roman government, in troops flock  
to him.  
*Flam.* With one puff—thus—will I dis-  
perse and scatter  
This heap of dust. Here take my ring. By  
this

Entreat my friend Amilcar to procure  
A mandate from the Carthaginian senate  
For the apprehension of this impostor,  
And with all possible speed. [*Exit* Calistus.  
Howe'er I know  
The rumour of Antiochus' death uncertain,  
It much imports the safety of great Rome  
To have it so believed.

*Enter* Demetrius.

*Dem.* There wait without  
Three fellows I ne'er saw before, who much  
Importune their access. They swear they  
bring  
Business along with 'em that deserves your  
care,

It being for the safety of the republic,  
And quiet of the provinces. They are full  
Of gold—I've felt their bounty.

*Flam.* Such are welcome.  
Give them admittance. In this various play  
Of state and policy, there is no property  
But may be useful.

*Enter* Chrysalus, Geta, and Syrus.

Now, friends, what design  
Carries you to me?

*Geta.* My most honoured lord—  
*Syrus.* May't please your mightiness—

*Flam.* Let one speak for all.  
I cannot brook this discord.

*Chrys.* As our duties  
Command us, noble Roman, having dis-  
covered

A dreadful danger, with the nimble wings  
Of speed approaching to the state of Rome,  
We hold it fit you should have the first notice,  
That you may have the honour to prevent it.

*Flam.* I thank you; but instruct me what  
form wears

The danger that you speak of.

*Chrys.* It appears  
In the shape of King Antiochus.

*Flam.* How! Is he  
Rose from the dead?

*Chrys.* Alas! he never died, sir;  
He at this instant lives—the more the pity  
He should survive, to the disturbance of  
Rome's close and politic counsels in the  
getting

Possession of his kingdom, which he would  
Recover (simple as he is) the plain  
And downright way of justice.

*Flam.* Very likely.  
But how are you assured this is Antiochus,  
And not a counterfeit? Answer that.

*Chrys.* I serv'd him  
In the Achaian war, where, his army routed,

And the warlike Romans hot in their exe-  
cution,

To shun their fury he and his minions were  
(Having cast off their glorious armour) forced  
To hide themselves as dead, with fear and  
horror,

Among the slaughtered carcasses. I lay by  
them,

And rose with them at midnight. Then  
retiring

Unto their ships, we sailed to Corinth: thence  
To India, where he spent many years

With their gymnosophists. There I waited  
on him,

And came thence with him. But, at length,  
tired out

With an unrewarded service, and affrighted.  
In my imagination with the dangers,

Or rather certain ruins, in pursuing  
His more than desperate fortunes, we forsook  
him.

*Flam.* A wise and politic fellow! Give me  
thy hand.

Thou'rt sure of this?

*Chrys.* As of my life.

*Flam.* And this is  
Known only to you three?

*Chrys.* There's no man lives else  
To witness it.

*Flam.* The better: but inform me,  
And, as you would oblige me to you, truly,  
Where did you leave him?

*Syrus.* For the payment of  
Our long and tedious travail, we made bold  
To rifle him.

*Flam.* Good!

*Geta.* And so disabling him—  
Of means to claim his right, we hope-  
despair

Hath made him hang himself.

*Flam.* It had been safer  
If you had done it for him. But as it is,

You are honest men. You have revealed this  
secret

To no man but myself?

*Chrys.* Nor ever will.

*Flam.* I will take order that you never  
shall. [*Aside.*

And, since you have been true unto the  
state,

I'll keep you so. I'm even now considering  
How to advance you.

*Chrys.* What a plesant smile—  
His honour throws upon us.

*Geta.* We are made.

*Flam.* And now 'tis found out, that no  
danger may

Come near you, should the robbery be dis-  
covered,

Which the Carthaginian laws, you know,  
call death,

My house shall be your sanctuary.

*Syrus.* There's a favour!

*Flam.* And that our entertainment come  
not short

Of your deservings, I commit you to  
My secretary's care. See that they want not,  
Among their other delicates—

*Chrys.* Mark that!

*Flam.* —A sublimated pill of mercurie,

For sugar to their wine.

*Dem.* I understand you.

*Flam.* Attend these honest men, as if they  
were

Made Roman citizens. And be sure, at  
night,

I may see 'em well-lodged.—Dead in the  
vault, I mean,

Their gold is thy reward.

*Dem.* [Aside to Demetrius.  
Believe it done, sir.

*Flam.* And when 'tis known how I have  
recompensed

(Though you were treacherous to your own  
king,)

The service done to Rome, I hope that others  
Will follow your example. Enter, friends ;  
I'll so provide that when you next come  
forth,

You shall not fear who sees you.

*Chrys.* Was there ever

So sweet a tempered Roman ?

*Flam.* You shall find it.

[Exit.

Ha ! what's the matter ? Do I feel a sting  
here,

For what is done to these poor snakes ? My  
reason

Will easily remove it. That assures me,

That, as I am a Roman, to preserve  
And propagate her empire, though they  
were

My father's sons, they must not live to witness  
Antiochus is in being. The relation

The villain made, in every circumstance

Appeared so like to truth, that I began

To feel an inclination to believe

What I must have no faith in. By my birth  
I am bound to serve thee, Rome, and what

I do,

Necessity of state compels me to. [Exit.

SCENE II.—*The Senate Hall in Carthage.*

*Enter Amilcar, Hanno, Asdrubal, and  
Carthalo.*

*Amil.* To steer a middle' course 'twixt  
these extremes,

Exacts our serious care.

*Hanno.* I know not which way  
I should incline.

*Amil.* The reasons this man urges,  
To prove himself Antiochus, are so pregnant,  
And the attestation of his countrymen  
In every circumstance so punctual,  
As not to show him our compassion were  
An act of barb'rous cruelty.

*Carth.* Under correction,  
Give me leave to speak my thoughts. We're  
bound to weigh

Not what we should do in the point of  
honour,

Swayed by our pity, but what may be done  
With the safety of the state.

*Asd.* Which is, indeed,  
The main consideration : for, grant

This is the true Antiochus, without danger,  
Nay, almost certain ruin to ourselves,

We cannot yield him favour or protection.

*Hanno.* We've fear'd and felt the Roman  
power, and must

Expect, if we provoke him, a return  
Not limited to the quality of the offence,

But left at large to his interpretation,  
Which seldom is confined. Who knows not  
that

The tribute Rome receives from Asia, is  
Her chief supportance ; other provinces  
Hardly defray the charge by which they are  
Kept in subjection. They, in name, perhaps,  
Render the Roman terrible ; but his strength  
And power to do hurt, without question, is  
Derived from Asia. And can we hope then,  
That such as lend their aids to force it from  
them,

Will be held for less than capital enemies,  
And, as such, pursued and punished ?

*Carth.* I could wish  
We were well rid of him.

*Asd.* The surest course  
Is to deliver him into the hands  
Of bold Flaminius.

*Hanno.* And so oblige  
Rome, for a matchless benefit.

*Amil.* If my power  
Were absolute, as 'tis but titular,  
And that confined too, being by you elected  
Prince of the Senate only for a year,  
I would oppose your counsels, and not  
labour

With arguments to confute them. Yet, how-  
ever,

Though a fellow-patriot with you, let it not  
savour

Of usurpation, though in my opinion  
I cross your abler judgments. Call to mind  
Our grandsires' glories (though not seconded  
With due imitation), and remember

With what expense of coin, as blood, they did

Maintain their liberty, and kept the scale  
Of empire even 'twixt Carthage and proud  
Rome ;

And though the Punic faith is branded by  
Our enemies, our confederates and friends,  
And seventeen kings, our feudaries, found it  
As firm as fate. Our strengths upon the sea  
Exceeding theirs—and our land soldiers  
In number far above theirs, though inferior  
In arms and discipline (to our shame we  
speak it)

And then for our cavallery, in the champaign  
How often have they brake their piles, and  
routed

Their coward legions.

*Hanno.* This, I graut, is not  
To be contradicted.

*Amil.* If so we find it  
In our records, and that this state hath been  
The sanctuary to which mighty kings  
Have fled to for protection, and found it,  
Let it not to posterity be told

That we so far degenerate from the race  
We are derived, as in a servile fear  
Of the Roman power, in a kind to play the  
bawds

To their ravenous lusts, by yielding up a  
man,

That wears the shape of our confederate,  
To their devouring gripe, whose strong  
assurance

Of our integrity and impartial doom  
Hath made this seat his altar.

*Carth.* I join with you  
In this opinion, but no farther than  
It may be done with safety.

*Asd.* In his ruins  
To bury ourselves, you needs must grant  
to be

An inconsiderate pity, no way suiting  
With a wise man's reason.

*Carth.* Let us face to face  
Hear the accuser and accused, and then,  
As either's arguments work on us, determine  
As the respect of our security  
Or honour shall invite us.

*Amil.* From the Senate,  
Entreat the Roman, Titus Flaminius  
To assist us with his counsel.

*Hanno.* And let the prisoner  
Be brought into the court.

*Amil.* The gods of Carthage  
Direct us the right way !

*Enter Flaminius.*

*Asd.* With what gravity  
He does approach us.

*Carth.* As he would commaud,  
Not argue his desires.

*Amil.* May it please your lordship  
To take your place.

*Flam.* In civil courtesy  
As I am Titus Flaminius, I may thank you ;  
But, sitting here as Rome's ambassador,  
(In which you are honoured,) to instruct  
you in

Her will, (which you are bound to serve,  
not argue)

I must not borrow—that were poor—but  
take

As a tribute due to her, that's justly styled  
The mistress of this earthly globe, the bold-  
ness

To reprehend your slow progression in  
Doing her greatness right. That she believes,  
In me, that this impostor was suborned  
By the conquered Asiatics, in their hopes  
Of future liberty, to usurp the name  
Of dead Antiochus, should satisfy  
Your scrupulous doubts ; all proofs beyond  
this being

Merely superfluous.

*Carth.* My lord, my lord,  
You trench too much upon us.

*Asd.* We are not  
Led by an implicit faith.

*Hanno.* Nor, though we would  
Preserve Rome's amity, must not yield up  
The freedom of our wills and judgments to  
Quit or condemn, as we shall be appointed  
By her imperious pleasure.

*Carth.* We confess not,  
Nor ever will, she hath a power above us.  
Carthage is still her equal.

*Amil.* If you can  
Prove this man an impostor, he shall suffer  
As he deserves. If not, you shall perceive  
You have no empire here.

*Hanno.* Call in the pris'ner :  
Then, as you please, confront him.

*Flam.* This neglect  
Hereafter will be thought on.

*Amil.* We shall stand  
The danger howsoever. When we did,  
His cause unheard, at your request commit  
This king or this impostor, you received  
More favour than we owed you.

*Officer [within].* Room for the prisoner !

*Enter Antiochus, habited as a king, Bere-  
cinthus, the three Merchants, and a Guard.*

*Ant.* This shape, that you have put me  
in, suits ill

With the late austereness of my life.

*Berec.* Fair gloss  
Wrongs not the richest stuff, but sets it off,

And let your language, high and stately,  
speak you

As you were born—a king.

*Ant.* Health to the Senate.

We do suppose your duties done. Sit still.  
Titus Flaminius, we remember you.

As you are a public minister from Rome  
You may sit covered.

*Flam.* How!

*Ant.* But as we are

A potent king in whose court you have waited  
And sought our favour, you betray your pride,  
And the more than saucy rudeness of your  
manners.

A bended knee, remembering what we are,  
Much better had become you.

*Flam.* Ha!

*Ant.* We said it:

But fall from our own height to hold dis-  
course

With a thing so far beneath us.

*Berec.* Admirable!

*Amil.* The Roman looks as he had seen  
the wolf.

How his confidence awes him.

*Asd.* Be he what he will,

He bears him like a king; and I must tell  
you

I am amazed too.

*Ant.* Are we so transformed

From what we were, since our disaster in  
The Grecian enterprise, that you gaze upon us

As some strange prodigy ne'er seen in Afric.  
Antiochus speaks to you, the King Antiochus,

And challenges a retribution in  
His entertainment of the love and favours

Extended to you. Call to memory  
Your true friend and confederate, who re-  
fused

In his respect to you the proffered amity  
Of the Roman people. Hath this vile en-  
chanter

Environed me with such thick clouds in your  
Erroneous belief, from his report

That I was long since dead, that, being  
present,

The beams of majesty cannot break through  
The foggy mists, raised by his wicked charms,

To lend you light to know me? I cite you,  
My lord Amilcar: now I look on you

As prince of the senate, but, when you were  
less,

I've seen you in my court assisted by  
Grave Hanno, Asdrubal, and Carthalo,

The pillars of the Carthaginian greatness.  
I know you all. Antiochus ne'er deserved

To be thus slighted.

*Amil.* Not so. We in you

Look on the figure of the King Antiochus,

But, without stronger proofs than yet you  
have

Produced to make us think so, cannot near  
you

But as a man suspected.

*Ant.* Of what guilt?

*Flam.* Of subornation and imposture.

*Ant.* Silence

This fellow's saucy tongue. O Majesty!  
How soon a short eclipse hath made thy  
splendour,

As it had never shined on these, forgotten!

But you refuse to hear me as a king,  
Deny not yet, in justice, what you grant

To common men, free liberty without  
His interruption (having heard what he

Objects against me) to acquit myself  
Of that, which, in his malice, I am charged

with.

*Amil.* You have it.

*Ant.* As my present fortune will me  
I thank your goodness. Rise thou cursed  
agent

Of mischief, and accumulate in one heap  
All engines, by the devil thy tutor fashioned

To ruin innocence. In poison steep  
Thy bloodied tongue, and let thy words, as  
full

Of bitterness as malice, labour to  
Seduce these noble hearers. Make me, in  
Thy coined accusation, guilty of

Such crimes, whose names my innocence  
ne'er knew,

I'll stand the charge. And when that thou  
hast shot

All arrows in thy quiver, feathered with  
Slanders, and aimed with cruelty, in vain,

My truth, though yet concealed, the moun-  
tains of

Thy glosséd fictions in her strength re-  
moved,

Shall in a glorious shape appear, and show  
Thy painted mistress, falsehood, when  
stripped bare

Of borrowed and adulterate colours, in  
Her own shape and deformity.

*Berec.* I am ravished!

*1 Merch.* O, more than royal sir!

*Amil.* Forbear.

*2 Merch.* The monster

Prepares to speak.

*Berec.* And still that villainous smile  
Ushers his following mischiefs.

*Flam.* Since the assurance,  
From one of my place, quality, and rank,

Is not sufficient with you to suppress  
This bold seductor, and to acquit our state

From the least tyrannous imputation,  
I will forget awhile I am a Roman,



Whose arguments are warranted by his sword

And not filled from his tongue. This creature here,

That styles himself Antiochus, I know  
For an apostata Jew, though others say  
He is a cheating Greek called Pseudolus,  
And keeps a whore in Corinth. But I'll come

To real proofs ; reports and rumours being  
Subjects unsuitable with my gravity  
To speak, or yours to hear. 'Tis most apparent

The king Antiochus was slain in Greece ;  
His body, at his subjects' suit, delivered ;  
His ashes, from the funeral pile, raked up,  
And in a golden urn preserved, and kept  
In the royal monument of the Asian kings.

Such was the clemency of Marcus Scourus,  
The Roman conqueror, whose triumph was  
Graced only with his statue. But suppose  
He had survived (which is impossible)

Can it fall in the compass of your reason  
That this impostor (if he were the man  
Which he with impudence affirms he is)  
Would have wandered two and twenty tedious years

Like a vagabond o'er the world, and not have tried

Rome's mercy as a suppliant.

*Hanno.* Shrewd suspicions.

*Flam.* A mason of Callipolis, heretofore,  
Presumed as far, and was, like this impostor,

By slavish Asians followed. And a second,  
A Cretan of a base condition, did  
Maintain the like. All ages have been furnished

With such as have usurped upon the names  
And persons of dead princes. Is it not  
As evident as the day this wretch, instructed  
By these poor Asians (sworn enemies  
To the majesty of Rome) but personates  
The dead Antiochus : hired to it by these  
To stir up a rebellion, which they call  
Delivery or restoring. And will you,  
Who, for your wisdom, are esteemed the sages

And oracles of Afric, meddle in

The affairs of this affronter, which no monarch,

Less rash and giddy than Antiochus was,  
Would undertake.

*Ant.* Would I were dead, indeed,  
Rather than hear this, living !

*Flam.* I confess .  
He hath some marks of king Antiochus, but  
The most of 'em artificial. Then observe

What kind of men they are that do abet him :

Proscribed and banished persons : the ring-leader

Of this seditious troop a turbulent Flamen,  
Grown fat with idleness——

*Berec.* That's I.

*Flam.* And puffed up  
With the wind of his ambition.

*Berec.* With reverence to  
[This place,] thou liest. I am grown to this bulk

By being

*Amil.* I [bow to] your goddess. She  
Defends you from a whipping.

*Hanno.* Take him off,  
He does disturb the court.

*Berec.* I'll find a place yet  
Where I will roar my wrongs out.

[*Exeunt Officers with Berecintbius.*

*Flam.* As you have,  
In the removing of that violent fool,  
Given me a taste of your severity,  
Make it a feast, and perfect your great justice

In the surrendering up this false pretender  
To the correction of the law, and let him  
Undergo the same punishment, which others  
Have justly suffered that preceded him  
In the same machination.

*Ant.* As you wish

A noble memory to after times  
Reserve one ear for my defence, and let not—  
For your own wisdoms let not—that belief,  
This subtle fiend would plant, be rooted in you

Till you have heard me. Would you know the truth,

And real cause, why poor Antiochus hath  
So long concealed himself? Though in the opening

A wound, in some degree by time closed up,  
I shall pour scalding oil and sulphur in it,  
I will, in the relation of my  
To be lamented story, punctually  
Confute my false accuser. Pray you conceive,  
As far as your compassion will permit,  
How great the grief and agony of my soul was,

When I considered that the violence  
Of my ill-reined ambition had made Greece  
The fatal sepulchre of so many thousands  
Of brave and able men, that might have stood

In opposition for the defence  
Of mine own kingdom, and a ready aid  
For my confed rates. After which rout,  
And my retreat in a disguise to Athens,

The shame of this disgrace, though I then had

The forehead of this man, would have deterred me

From being ever seen where I was known ; And such was then my resolution.

*Amil.* This granted, whither went you ?

*Ant.* As a punishment

Imposed upon myself, and equal to My wilful folly, giving o'er the world, I went into a desert.

*Flam.* This agrees

With the dead slaves' report ; but I must condemn it. [*Aside.*]

*Amil.* What drew you from that austere life ?

*Asd.* Clear that.

*Ant.* The counsel of a grave philosopher Wrought on me to make known myself the man

That I was born. And, of all potentates

In Afric, to determine of the truth

Of my life and condition I preferred

The commonwealth of Carthage.

*Flam.* As the fittest

To be abused.

*Ant.* This is not fair.

*Amil.* My lord,

If not entreat, I must command your silence, Or absence—which you please.

*Flam.* So peremptory ?

*Ant.* To vindicate myself from all suspicion

Of forgery and imposture, in this scroll,

Writ with my royal hand, you may peruse

A true memorial of all circumstances,

Answers, despatches, doubts, and difficulties

Between myself and your ambassadors,

Sent to negotiate with me.

*Amil.* Fetch the records.

*Ant.* 'Tis my desire you should. Truth seeks the light.

And, when you have compared them, if you find them

In any point of moment differing,

*Enter one with the books.*

Conclude me such a one, as this false man

Presents me to you. But, if you perceive

Those private passages, in my cabinet argued,

And, but to your ambassadors and myself,

Concealed from all men, in each point agreeing,

Judge if a cheating Greek, a Pseudolus,

Or an apostata Jew, could e'er arrive at

Such deep and weighty secrets.

*Hanno.* To a syllable

They are the same.

*Amil.* It cannot be but this is The true Antiochus !

*Flam.* A magician rather, And hath the spirit of Python.

*Carth.* These are toys.

*Ant.* You see he will omit no trifle, that His malice can lay hold of, to divert Your love and favour to me. Now for my death :

The firmest base on which he builds the strength

Of his assertions : if you please to weigh it, With your accustom'd wisdom, you'll perceive

'Tis merely fabulous. Had they meant fairly

And, as a truth, would have it so confirmed

To the doubtful Asians, why did they not

Suffer the carcass they affirmed was mine

To be viewed by such men as were interested In the great cause, that were bred up with

me,

And were familiar with the marks I carried Upon my body, and not rely upon

Poor prisoners taken in the war, from whom,

In hope of liberty and reward, they drew Such depositions as they knew would make

For their dark ends. Was anything more easy

Than to suppose a body, and that placed on A solemn hearse,—with funeral pomp to enter it

In a rich monument ; and, then, proclaim.

This is the body of Antiochus,

King of the lower Asia !

*Flam.* Rome's honour

Is taxed in this of practise and corruption !

I'll hear no more. In your determinations,

Consider what it is to hold and keep her Your friend or enemy. [*Exit Flaminius.*]

*Amil.* We wish we could.

Receive you as a king, since your relation Hath wrought so much upon us that we do

Incline to that belief. But since we cannot As such protect you, but with certain danger,

Until you are by other potent nations

Proclaimed for such, our fitting caution

Cannot be censured, though we do entreat

You would elsewhere seek justice.

*Ant.* Where? when 'tis

Frighted from you by power ?

*Amil.* And yet take comfort.

Not all the threats of Rome shall force us to Deliver you. The short time that you stay

In Carthage you are safe. No more a prisoner—

You are enlarged. With full security

Consult of your affairs. In what we may

We are your friends. Break up the court.  
*[Exeunt all but Antiochus and the three Merchants.]*

*1 Merch.* Dear sir,  
 Take courage in your liberty. The world  
 Lies open to you.

*2 Merch.* We shall meet with comfort  
 When most despaired of by us.

*Ant.* Never, never!  
 Poor men, though fallen, may rise, but  
 kings like me,  
 If once by fortune slaved, are ne'er set free.  
*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*House of Flaminius at Carthage.*

*Enter Flaminius (with two letters), Calistus,  
 and Demetrius.*

*Flam.* You gave him store of gold with  
 the instructions  
 That I prescribed him?

*Cal.* Yes, my lord, and on  
 The forfeiture of my credit with your honour,  
 Titus will do his parts, and dive into  
 Their deepest secrets.

*Flam.* Men of place pay dear  
 For their intelligence. It eats out of the  
 profit

Of their employment. But, in a design  
 Of such weight, prodigality is a virtue.  
 The fellow was of trust that you despatched  
 To Rome with the packets?

*Dem.* Yes, sir, he flies—not rides.  
 By this, if his access answer his care,  
 He is upon return.

*Flam.* I am on the stage,  
 And if now, in the scene imposed upon me,  
 So full of change—nay, a mere labyrinth  
 Of politic windings—I show not myself  
 A Protean actor, varying every shape  
 With the occasion, it will hardly poison  
 The expectation. I'll so place my nets  
 That, if this bird want wings to carry him,  
 At one flight, out of Afric, I shall catch him.  
 Calistus!

*Cal.* Sir,  
*Flam.* Give these at Syracuse  
 To the proconsul Marcellus. Let another post  
 To Sardinia with these. You have the picture  
 Of the impostor?

*Dem.* Drawn to the life, my lord.  
*Flam.* Take it along with you. I have  
 commanded,

In the senate's name, that they man out  
 their galleys,  
 And not to let one vessel pass without  
 A strict examination. The sea

Shall not protect him from me. I've charged  
 too

The garrisons, that keep the passages  
 By land, to let none 'scape, that come from  
 Carthage,  
 Without a curious search.

*Enter Lentulus.*

*Lent.* I will excuse  
 My visit without preparation. Fear not—  
*Flam.* Who have we here?

*Lent.* When you have viewed me better  
 You will resolve yourself.

*Flam.* My good lord Lentulus!  
*Lent.* You name me right. The speed  
 that brought me hither

As you see accoutred—and without a train  
 Suitable to my rank—may tell your lordship  
 That the design admits no vacant time  
 For compliment. Your advertisements have  
 been read

In open court. The consuls and the senate  
 Are full of wonder and astonishment  
 At the relation. Your care is much  
 Commended, and will find a due reward,  
 When what you have so well begun is ended.  
 In the meantime with their particular thanks  
 They thus salute you. You'll find there that  
 they

(Their good opinion of me far above  
 My hopes or merits) have appointed me  
 Your successor in Carthage, and commit  
 Unto your abler trust the prosecution  
 Of this impostor.

*Flam.* As their creature ever  
 I shall obey, and serve them. I will leave  
 My freedman to instruct you in the course  
 Of my proceedings. You shall find him able  
 And faithful, on my honour.

*Lent.* I receive him  
 At his due value. Can you guess yet  
 whither

This creature tends. By some passengers I  
 met

I was told howe'er the state denies to yield him  
 To our dispose, they will not yet incense us  
 By giving him protection.

*Flam.* Ere long,  
 I hope I shall resolve you. To my [aid]

*Enter Titus.*

Here comes my true discoverer. Be brief,  
 And labour not with circumspection to endear  
 The service thou hast done me.

*Titus.* As your lordship  
 Commanded me, in this Carthaginian habit  
 I made my first approaches, and delivered  
 The gold was given me, as a private present,  
 Sent from the lord Amilcar for his viaticum

To another country. For I did pretend  
I was his menial servant.

*Flam.* Very well.

*Titus.* 'Twas entertained almost with  
sacrifice,

And I, as one most welcome, was admitted  
Into their turbulent counsel. Many means  
Were there propounded, whither, and to  
whom,

Their king Antiochus (for so they style him)  
Should fly for safety. One urged to the  
Parthian,

A second into Egypt, and a third  
To the Batavian. But, in conclusion,  
The corpulent Flamen, that would govern  
all,

And in his nature would not give allowance  
To any proposition that was not  
The child of his own brain, resolved to  
carry

Their May-game prince, covered with a  
disguise,

To Prusias king of Bithynia. His opinion  
Carried it; and thither, without pause or  
stay,

To thank my lord for his bounty, they are  
gone—

Upon my certain knowledge, for I rid  
Two days and nights along, that I might  
not build

Upon suppositions. By this they are  
At their journey's end.

*Flam.* With my thanks, there's thy reward.  
I will take little rest until I have  
Soured his sweet entertainment. You have  
been

In the court of this Prusias. Of what temper  
is he?

*Lent.* A well disposed and noble gentle-  
man,

And very careful to preserve the peace  
And quiet of his subjects.

*Flam.* I shall find him  
The apter to be wrought on. Do you know  
who is

His special favourite?

*Lent.* One that was his tutor,  
A seeming politician, and talks often  
The end of his ambition is to be  
A gentleman of Rome.

*Flam.* I shall fit him, fear not.  
Your travail's ended—mine begins: I take  
my leave.

Formality of manners now is useless:  
I long to be a horseback.

*Lent.* You have my wishes  
For a fair success.

*Flam.* My care shall not be wanting.  
*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II.—*Capital of Prusias, king of  
Bithynia.*

*Enter Antiochus and the three Merchants.*

*1 Merch.* This tedious journey, from your  
majesty's

Long discontinuance of riding hard,  
With weariness hath dull'd your spirits.

*2 Merch.* The Flamen,  
His corpulency considered, hath held out  
Beyond imagination.

*3 Merch.* As often  
As he rode down a hill I did expect  
The chining of his horse.

*Ant.* I wonder more  
How mine sustained his burden, since the  
weight

That sits on my more heavy heart would  
crack

The sinews of an elephant.

*2 Merch.* 'Tis said  
That beast hath strength to carry six armed  
men

In a turret on his back.

*Ant.* True. But the sorrow  
Of a wretched and forsaken king like me  
Is far more ponderous.

*1 Merch.* O part not, sir,  
From your own strength by yielding to  
despair.

I am most confident Berecinthus will,  
From the great king Prusias—in his good-  
ness great—

Bring comfort to you. *[Flourish.]*  
*Ant.* I am prepared, however,  
Lower I cannot fall.

*Enter Berecinthus.*

*3 Merch.* Ha! these are signs  
Of a glorious entertainment—not contempt!

*Berec.* Bear up, sir. I have done you  
simple service:

I thank my eloquence and boldness for it.  
When would a modest silent fool effect  
What I have done? But such men are not  
born

For great employments. The fox, that  
would confer

With a lion without fear, must see him often.  
O for a dozen of rubbers and a bath,  
And yet I need no tub since I drench  
myself

In mine own balsam.

*1 Merch.* Balsamm? It smells  
Like a tallow chandler's shop.

*Berec.* Does it so? thou thin-gut!  
Thou thing without moisture! But I have  
no time

To answer thee. The great king—by my means, sir—

Ever remember that—in his own person,  
With his fair consort and a gallant train,  
[Flourish.

Are come to entertain you.

*Ant.* Jove! if thou art  
Pleased that it shall be so—

*Berec.* Change not Jove's purpose  
In your slowness to receive it. In your carriage

Express yourself. They come.

*Enter Prusias, his Queen, and Philoxenus.*

*Prusias.* The strong assurance  
You gave at Carthage to confirm you are  
The king Antiochus (for so much, from  
My agent there I've heard) commands me to  
Believe you are so. And however they,  
Awed by the Roman greatness, durst not  
lend you

Aid or protection; in me you shall find  
A surer guard. I stand on mine own bases,  
Nor shall or threats or prayers deter me  
from

Doing a good deed in itself rewarded;  
You are welcome to my bosom.

*Ant.* All that yet  
I can return you, sir, is thanks, expressed  
In tears of joy, to find here that compassion  
Hath not forsook the earth.

*Queen.* Alas, good king,  
I pity him!

*Prus.* This lady, sir, your servant,  
Presents her duty to you.

*Ant.* Pray you forgive me.  
Calamity, my too long rude companion,  
Hath taught me, gracious madam, to forget  
Civility and manners. [Kisses her.

*Queen.* I ne'er touched  
But the king, my husband's lips, and, as I  
live,  
He kisses very like him.

*Prus.* Here is one  
I dare present to you, for a knowing man  
In politic designs. But he is present,  
I should say more else.

*Ant.* Your assistance, sir,  
To raise a trod-down king, will well become  
you.

*Philox.* What man can do that is fami-  
liar with

The deep directions of Xenophon,  
Or Aristotle's politics, besides  
Mine own collections, which some prefer,  
And with good reason, as they say, before  
'em,

Your highness may expect.

*Prus.* We will at leisure,

Consider of the manner and the means  
How to restore you to your own.

*Queen.* And till then  
Suppose yourself in your own court.

*Ant.* The gods  
Be sureties for the payment of this debt  
I stand engaged. Your bounties overwhelm  
me.

[Flourish. *Exeunt all but Berecin-  
thius, and the Merchants.*

*Berec.* Ay! marry this is as it should be!  
Ha!

After these storms raised by this Roman  
devil,

Titus Flaminius—you know whom I mean—  
Are we got into the port once. I must  
purge.

*1 Merch.* Not without cause.

*Berec.* Or my increasing belly  
Will metamorphose me into the shape  
Of a great tortoise, and I shall appear  
A cipher, a round man, or what you will.  
Now jeer at my bulk, and spare not.

*1 Merch.* You are pleasant.

*Berec.* Farce thy lean ribs with hope, and  
thou wilt grow to

Another kind of creature. When our king is  
Restored, let me consider, as he must be,  
And I the principal means, I'll first grow  
rich,

Infinite rich, and build a strange new temple  
To the goddess that I worship, and so bind  
her

To prosper all my purposes.

*2 Merch.* Be not rapt so.

*Berec.* Prithee, do not trouble me. First  
I will expel

The Romans out of Asia. And, so breaking  
Their reputation in the world, we will  
Renew our league with Carthage. Then  
draw to

Our party the Egyptian Ptolemy,  
And great Arsaces' issue. I will be  
The general, and march to Rome, which  
taken,

I'll fill proud Tiber with the carcasses  
Of men, women, and children. Do not per-  
suade me,—

I'll show no mercy!

*3 Merch.* Have the pow'r to hurt first.

*Berec.* Then by the senators, whom I'll  
use as horses,  
I will be drawn in a chariot, made for my  
bulk,

In triumph to the capitol, more admired  
Than Bacchus was in India. Titus Fla-  
minius

Our enemy, led like a dog in a chain,

As I descend or reascend in state,

Shall serve for my foot-stool. I will conjure  
him  
If revenge hath any spells.

*Enter Flaminius with Demetrius.*

*Flam.* Command the captain  
To wait me with his galley at the next port.  
I'm confident I shall fraught him.

[*Exit Demetrius.*

*1 Merch.* You are conjuring,  
And see what you have raised.

*Berec.* Cybele save me!  
I do not fear me, Pluto, though thou hast  
Assumed a shape not to be matched in  
Cocytus!

Why dost thou follow me?

*Flam.* Art thou mad?

*Berec.* Thou com'st  
To make me so. How my jelly quakes.  
Avaunt!

What have I to do with thee?

*Flam.* You'll know at leisure.  
The time is now too precious.

[*Exit Flaminius.*

*Berec.* 'Tis vanished.  
Sure, 'twas an apparition.

*1 Merch.* I fear

A fatal one to us.  
*2 Merch.* We may easily guess at  
The cause that brings him hither.

*3 Merch.* Now, if ever,  
Confirm the king——

*1 Merch.* Against this battery  
New works are to be raised, or we are  
ruined.

*Berec.* What think you of this rampire?  
'twill hold out!

And he shall shoot through an' through it but  
I'll cross him.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*Court of Prusias.*

*Enter Flaminius and Philoxenus.*

*Flam.* What we have said, the consuls  
will make good,

And the glad senate ratify.

*Philox.* They have so  
Obliged me for this favour, that there is not  
A service of that difficulty, from which  
I would decline. In this rest confident,  
I am your own—and sure.

*Flam.* You shall do, sir,  
A noble office in it. And, however

We thank you for the courtesy, the profit  
And certain honours, the world's terror,  
Rome,

In thankfulness cannot but shower upon you,  
Are wholly yours. How happy I esteem

Myself, in this employment, to meet with  
A wise and provident statesman.

*Philox.* My good lord!

*Flam.* I flatter not in speaking truth. You  
are so,

And, in this prompt alacrity, confirm it.  
Since a wise forecast in the managing  
Worldly affairs is the true wisdom—rashness,  
The schoolmistress of idiots. You well know  
Charity begins at home, and that we are  
Nearest unto ourselves. Fools build upon  
Imaginary hopes, but wise men ever  
On real certainties. A tender conscience,  
Like a glowworm, shows a seeming fire in  
darkness,

But, set near to the glorious light of honour,  
It is invisible. As you are a statesman—  
And a master in that art—you must remove  
All rubs—tho' with a little wrong some-  
times—

That may put by the bias of your counsels  
From the fair mark they aim at.

*Philox.* You are read well  
In worldly passages.

*Flam.* I barter with you  
Such trifles as I have. But, if you pleased,  
You could instruct me that philosophy  
And policy, in states, are not such strangers  
As men o'er curious and precise would have  
them.

But to the point. With speed get me access  
To the king your pupil. And 'tis well for him  
That he hath such a tutor.—Rich Bithynia  
Was never so indebted to a patriot,  
And vigilant watchman, for her peace and  
safety,

As to yourself.

*Philox.* Without boast I may whisper  
I have done something in that way.

*Flam.* All, in all!  
Fame, filling her loud trump with truth,  
proclaims it!

But, when it shall be understood you are  
The principal means, by which a dangerous  
serpent,

Warm'd in your sovereign's bosom, is de-  
livered

To have his sting and venomous teeth pulled  
out;

And the ruin, in a willing grant, avoided,  
Which in detaining him falls on the king-  
dom,

Not Prusias alone, but his saved people,  
Will raise your providence altars!

*Philox.* Let me entreat  
Your patience some few minutes. I'll bring  
the king

In person to you.

*Flam.* Do, and, this effected,  
Think of the ring you are privileged to wear  
When a Roman gentleman; and, after that,

Of provinces and purple !

[Exit Philoxenus.

I must smile now

In my consideration with what glibness  
My flatteries, oiled with hopes of future  
greatness,

Are swallowed by this dull pate. But it is  
not

Worth the observation. Most of our seem-  
ing statesmen

Are caught in the same noose.

*Prusias and Philoxenus approaching.*

Returned so soon—

And the king with him! But his angry  
forehead

Furrowed with frowns. No matter, I am  
for him.

*Prus.* From the people of Rome—so

quick? Hath he brought with him

Letters of credence, and authority

To treat with us?

*Philox.* I read them.

*Prus.* What can he

Propound which I must fear to hear? I  
would

Continue in fair terms with that warlike  
nation,

Ever provided I wrong not myself

In the least point of honour.

*Philox.* To the full

He will instruct your majesty.

*Flam.* So may

Felicity, as a page, attend your person,

As you embrace the friendly counsel sent  
you

From the Roman senate.

*Prus.* With my thanks to you

Your instrument, if the advice be such,

As by this preparation you would have me

Conceive it is, I shall—and 'twill become  
me—

Receive it as a favour.

*Flam.* Know then, Rome,

In her pious care that you may still increase  
The happiness you live on; and your sub-  
jects,

Under the shadow of their own vines, eat

The fruit they yield them—their soft musical  
feasts

Continuing, as they do yet, unaffrighted

With the harsh noise of war—entreats as low  
As her known power and majesty can

descend,

You would return, with due equality,

A willingness to preserve what she hath con-  
quered

From change and innovation.

*Prus.*

I attempt not

To trouble her, nor ever will.

*Flam.*

Fix there!

Or if, for your own good, you will move  
further,

Make Rome your thankful debtor by sur-  
rendering

Into her hands the false impostor, that

Seeks to disturb her quiet.

*Prus.*

This I looked for:

And that I should find mortal poison  
wrapp'd up

In your candied pills. Must I, because you  
say so,

Believe that this most miserable king is

A false affrouter? who, with arguments

Unanswerable, and near miraculous proofs,  
Confirms himself the true Antiochus.

Or is it not sufficient that you Romans,

In your unsatisfied ambition, have

Seized with an unjust gripe on half the  
world,

Which you call conquest? If that I consent  
not

To have my innocence soiled with that po-  
lution

You are willingly smeared o'er with—

*Flam.*

Pray you, hear me—

*Prus.*

I will be first heard. Shall I, for  
your ends,

Infringe my princely word? or break the  
laws

Of hospitality? defeat myself

Of the certain honour to restore a king

Unto his own? and what you Romans have  
Extorted and keep from him? Far be't from  
me!

I will not buy your amity at such loss.

So it be to all after times remembered

I held it not sufficient to live

As one born only for myself, and I

Desire no other monument!

*Flam.*

I grant

It is a specious thing to leave behind us

A fair report, though in the other world

We have no feeling of it: and to lend  
A desperate, though fruitless, aid to such

As Fate, not to be altered, hath marked out  
Examples of calamity, may appear

A glorious ornament: but here's a man,

The oracle of your kingdom, that can tell  
you,

When there's no probability it may be

Effected, 'tis mere madness to attempt it.

*Philox.*

A true position.

*Flam.*

Your inclination

Is honourable, but your power deficient,

To put your purpose into act.

*Prus.*

My power?

R R 2

*Flam.* Is not to be disputed, if weighed truly  
 With the petty kings your neighbours; but,  
 when balanced  
 With the globes and sceptres of my mistress  
 Rome,  
 Will but—I spare comparisons, but you  
 build on  
 Your strength to justify the fact. Alas,  
 It is a feeble reed, and leaning on it  
 Will wound your hand much sooner than  
 support you.  
 You keep in pay, 'tis true, some peace-  
 trained troops,  
 Which awe your neighbours; but consider,  
 when  
 Our eagles shall display their sail-stretched  
 wings,  
 Hovering o'er our legions, what defence  
 Can you expect from yours?  
*Philox.* Urge that point home.  
*Flam.* Our old victorious bands are ever  
 ready;  
 And such, as are not our confed'rates,  
 tremble,  
 To think where next the storm shall fall,  
 with horror.  
 Philoxenus knows it. Will you to help one  
 You should contemn, and is not worth your  
 pity,  
 Pull it on your own head? Your neighbour  
 Carthage  
 Would smile to see your error. Let me paint  
 The danger to you ere it come. Imagine  
 Our legions, and the auxiliari forces  
 Of such as are our friends and tributaries,  
 Drawn up—Bithynia covered with our  
 armies—  
 All places promising defence blocked up  
 With our armed troops—the siege con-  
 tinuing—  
 Famine within and force without disabling  
 All opposition—then the army entered!  
 As victory is insolent, the rages  
 Of virgins and grave matrons—reverend old  
 men  
 With their last groans accusing you—your  
 city  
 And palace sacked—  
*Philox.* Dear sir!  
*Flam.* And you yourself  
 Captived; and, after that, chained by the  
 neck;  
 Your matchless queen, your children, officers,  
 friends,  
 Waiting, as scorns of fortune, to give lustre  
 To the victor's triumph.  
*Philox.* I am in a fever  
 To think upon it.

*Flam.* As a friend I have delivered,  
 And more than my commission warrants me,  
 This caution to you. But now—Peace—or  
 War?  
 If the first I entertain it. If the latter,  
 I'll instantly defy you!  
*Philox.* Pray you say *Peace*, sir.  
*Prus.* On what conditions?  
*Flam.* The delivery  
 Of this seductor and his complices.  
 On no terms else—and suddenly.  
*Prus.* How can I  
 Dispense with my faith given?  
*Philox.* I'll yield you reasons.  
*Prus.* Let it be *Peace* then, oh. Pray you  
 call in [*Exit Philoxenus.*]  
 The wretched man. In the meantime I'll  
 consider  
 How to excuse myself.  
*Flam.* While I, in silence,  
 Triumph in my success, and meditate  
 On the reward that crowns it. A strong  
 army  
 Could have done no more than I alone, and  
 with  
 A little breath, have effected.  
*Enter Queen, Antiochus, Berecinthius, the  
 three Merchants, Philoxenus, and Deme-  
 trius.*  
*Ant.* Goodness guard me!  
 Whom do I look on? Sir, come further from  
 him.  
 He is infectious; so swollen with mischief,  
 And strange impieties; his language too  
 So full of siren sorceries, if you hear him  
 There is no touch of moral honesty,  
 Though rampired in your soul, but will fly  
 from you.  
 The mandrake's shrieks, the aspick's deadly  
 tooth,  
 The tears of crocodiles, or the basilisk's eye  
 Kill not so soon, nor with that violence  
 As he who, in his cruel nature, holds  
 Antipathy with mercy.  
*Prus.* I am sorry—  
*Ant.* Sorry—for what? That you had an  
 intent  
 To be a good and just prince? Are com-  
 passion  
 And charity grown crimes?  
*Prus.* The gods can witness  
 How much I would do for you. And hut that  
 Necessity of state—  
*Ant.* Make not the gods  
 Guilty of your breach of faith! From *them*  
 you find not  
 Treachery commanded; and the state, that  
 seeks



Strength from disloyalty, in the quicksands  
which

She trusteth in, is swallowed. 'Tis in vain  
To argue with you. If I am condemned,  
Defences come too late. What do you  
purpose  
Shall fall on poor Antiochus?

*Prus.* For my  
Security—there being no means left else—  
Against my will I must deliver you.

*Ant.* To whom?

*Enter Guard.*

*Prus.* To Rome's ambassador.

*Ant.* O, the Furies  
Exceed not him in cruelty! Remember  
I am a king! your royal guest! Your right  
hand,

The pawn and pledge that should defend me  
from

My bloody enemy! Did you accuse  
The Carthaginian senate for denying  
Aid and protection to me—giving hope  
To my despairing fortunes? Or but now  
Raise me to make my fall more terrible?  
Did you tax them of weakness, and will  
you

So far transcend them in a coward fear,  
Declaimed against by your own mouth? O,  
sir,

If you dare not give me harbour, set me safe  
yet

In any desert, where this serpent's hisses  
May not be heard; and to the gods I'll speak  
you

A prince both wise and honourable.

*Prus.* Alas!  
It is not in my power.

*Ant.* As an impostor  
Take off my head then. At the least—so far—  
Prove merciful. Or with any torture ease me  
Of the burthen of a life: rather than yield me  
To this politic state hangman.

*Flam.* This to me is  
A kind of ravishing music!

*Queen.* I have lived  
For many years, sir, your obedient handmaid,  
Nor ever in a syllable presumed  
To cross your purpose. But now, with a  
sorrow

As great almost as this poor king's, beholding  
Your poverty of spirit—for it does  
Deserve no better name—I must put off  
Obsequiousness and silence, and take to me  
The warrant and authority of your queen,  
And, as such, give you counsel.

*Prus.* You displease me.

*Queen.* The physic promising health is  
ever bitter.

Hear me. Will you that are a man—nay  
more,

A king of men—do that, forced to it by fear,  
Which common men would scorn? I am a  
woman—

A weak and feeble woman—yet before  
I would deliver up my bondwoman,  
And have it told I did it by constraint,  
I would endure to have these hands cut off,  
These eyes pull'd out—

*Prus.* I'll hear no more.

*Queen.* Do then,  
As a king should.

*Prus.* Away with her!

[*They bear off the Queen.*]

*Flam.* My affairs  
Exact a quick despatch.

*Prus.* He's yours. Conceive  
What I would say. Farewell.

[*Exeunt Prusias and Philoxenus.*]

*Ant.* That I had been  
Born deaf! I will not grace thy triumph,  
tyrant,

With one request of favour.

[*Exit Antiochus guarded.*]

*Berec.* My good lord!

*Flam.* Your will, dear Flamen?

*Berec.* I perceive you are like  
To draw a great charge upon you. My fat  
bulk,  
And these my lions, will not be kept for a  
little.

Nor would we be chargeable. And, there-  
fore, kissing

Your honoured hands, I take my leave.

*Flam.* By no means,  
I have been busy, but I shall find leisure  
To treat with you in another place.

*Berec.* I would not  
Put your lordship to the trouble.

*Flam.* It will be  
A pleasure rather. Bring them all away.

*Berec.* The comfort is, whether I drown or  
hang

I shall not be long about it. I'll preserve  
The dignity of my family.

*Flam.* 'Twill become you.  
[*Exeunt omnes.*]

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I.—*A Street in Callipolis.*

*Enter Metellus, Proconsul of Lusitania, and  
Sempronius, a Captain.*

*Met.* A revolt in Asia?

*Semp.* Yes. On the report  
The long-thought dead Antiochus lives.

*Met.* I heard

Such a one appeared in Carthage, but suppressed

By Titus Flaminius, my noble friend,  
Who, by his letters, promised me a visit  
If his designs, as I desire they may,  
Succeeded to his wishes.

*Semp.* Till you behold him  
I can bring your honour, if you please, where  
you

May find fair entertainment.

*Met.* From whom, captain ?

*Semp.* A new rigg'd pinnace, that put off  
from Corinth,

And is arrived among us—tight and yare—  
Nor comes she to pay custom for her freight,  
But to impose a tax, on such as dare  
Presume to look on her, which smock  
gamesters offer

Sooner than she demands it.

*Met.* Some fresh courtezan  
Upon mine honour !

*Semp.* You are i' the right, my lord.

*Met.* And there lies your intelligence ?

*Semp.* True, my good lord.  
'Tis a discovery will not shame a captain  
When he lies in garrison. Since I was a  
trader

In such commodities I never saw  
Her equal. I was ravished with the object,  
And, would you visit her, I believe you'd  
write

Yourself of my opinion.

*Met.* Fie upon thee !

I am old.

*Semp.* And therefore have the greater use  
Of such a cordial. All Medea's drugs,  
And her charms to boot, that made old  
Æson young,

Were nothing to her touch. Your viper wine,  
So much in practice with grey-bearded  
gallants,

But vappa to the nectar of her lips.  
She hath done miracles since she came. A  
usurer,

Full of the gout, and more diseases than  
His crutches could support, used her rare  
physic

But one short night, and rising in the morn-  
ing, he

Danced a lavolta !

*Met.* Prithee, leave thy fooling,  
And talk of something else.

*Semp.* The whole world yields not  
Apter discourse. She hath all the qualities  
Conducing to the sport ; sings like a siren ;  
Dances, as the gross element of earth  
Had no part in her ; her discourse, so full  
Of eloquence and prevailing, there is nothing  
She asks to be denied her. Had she desired

My captain's place, I had cashier'd myself :  
And, should she beg your proconsulship, if  
you heard her,

'Twere bers upon my life.

*Met.* She should be damued first,  
And her whole tribe !

*Enter Flaminius.*

My lord Flaminius, welcome !

I have long been full of expectation  
Of your great design, and hope a fair success  
Hath crowned your travail in your bringing  
in

This dangerous impostor.

*Flam.* At the length

I have him and his complices.

*Met.* I'll not now  
Enquire how you achieved him, but would  
know,

Since 'tis referr'd to you, what punishment  
Should fall upon him ?

*Flam.* If you please, in private,  
I will acquaint you.

*Met.* Captain, let me entreat you  
To meditate on your woman in the next  
room.

We may have employment for you.

*Semp.* I'd rather  
She would command my service.

[*Exit Sempronius.*

*Met.* Pray you sit.  
*Flam.* Now, my good lord, I ask your  
grave advice

What course to take.

*Met.* That, in my judgment, needs not  
Long consultation. He is a traitor,  
And, his process framed, must, as a traitor,  
suffer

A death due to his treason.

*Flam.* There's much more

To be considered, there being a belief,  
Dispersed almost through Asia, that he is  
The true Antiochus ; and we must decline  
The certain scandal it will draw upon  
The Roman government, if he die the man  
He is by the most received to be ; and there-  
fore,

Till that opinion be removed, we must

Use some quaint practice, that may work  
upon

His hopes or fears, to draw a free confession  
That he was suborned to take on him the  
name

He still maintains.

*Met.* That, torture will wrest from him.  
I know no readier way.

*Flam.* If you had seen  
His carriage in Carthage and Bithynia  
You would not think so. Since I had him in

My power I have used all possible means  
that might

Force him into despair, and so to do  
A violence on himself. He hath not tasted  
These three days any sustenance, and still  
Continues fasting.

*Met.* Keep him to that diet  
Some few hours more.

*Flam.* I am of opinion rather,  
Some competence offered him, and a place  
of rest,

Where he might spend the remnant of his days  
In pleasure and security, might do more  
Than fear of death or torture.

*Met.* It may be  
There are such natures: and now I think  
upon't,

I can help you to a happy instrument  
To motion it. Your ear. [*Whispers.*]

*Flam.* 'Tis wondrous well,  
And may prove fortunate.

*Met.* 'Tis but a trial.  
However, I will send for her.

*Flam.* Pray you do.  
She shall have my directions.

*Met.* What botches  
Are made in the shop of policy!

*Flam.* So they cover  
The nakedness we must conceal, it skills not.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The Prison in Callipolis.*

*Enter Jailor, with a poniard and a halter.*

*Jailor.* Why should I feel compunction  
for that

Which yields me profit? Ha! a prisoner's  
tears

Should sooner pierce flint, or Egyptian  
marble

Than move us to compassion. Yet I know not  
Why, the sufferings of this miserable man  
Work strangely on me. Some say he is a  
king.

It may be so; but, if they hold out thus,  
I'm sure he's like to die a beggar's death,  
And starve for hunger. I am, by a servant  
Of the lord Flaminius, strictly commanded,  
Before I have raised him out of the dungeon, to  
Lay these instruments in his view. To what  
end

I'm not to enquire, but I am certain,  
After his long fast, they are viands that  
Will hardly be digested. Do you hear, sir?

*Ant.* [*below.*] If thou'rt my death's man,  
welcome!

*Jailor.* I so pity you  
That I wish I had commission, as you rise,  
To free you from all future misery,  
To knock your brains out.

*Ant.* Would thou hadst!  
*Jailor.* You have

The liberty to air yourself, and that  
Is all I can afford you. Fast, and be merry;  
I am elsewhere called on. [*Exit Jailor.*]

*Ant.* Death! as far as faintness.  
Will give me leave to chide thee, I am angry  
Thou comest not at me. No attendance?  
Famine,

Thy meagre harbinger, flatters me with hope  
Of thy so wished arrival, yet thy coming  
Is still deferred. Why? Is it in thy scorn  
To take a lodging here? I am a king,

And know that not the reverence that waits  
Upon the potent sceptre, nor the guards  
Of faithful subjects; neither threats nor  
prayers

Of friends or kindred; nor yet walls of brass  
Or iron, should their proud height knock at  
the moon,

Can stop thy passage, when thou art resolved  
To force thy entrance: yet a king, in reason,  
By the will of fate severed from common men,  
Should have the privilege and prerogative,  
When he is willing, to disrobe himself  
Of this cobweb garment, life, to have thee—  
ready

To do thy fatal office. What have we here?

*Enter Flaminius, Metellus, and Sempronius  
above.*

A poniard, and a halter! From the objects  
I am easily instructed to what end  
They were prepared. Either will serve the  
turn

To ease the burthen of a wretched life.  
Or thus [*lifts the dagger*] or thus [*lifts the  
halter*] in death! I must commend

The Roman courtesy. How am I grown  
So cheap and vile in their opinion that  
I am denied an executioner?

Will not the loss of my life quit the cost?  
O rare frugality! Will they force me to  
Be mine own hangman? Every slave, that's  
guilty

Of crimes not to be named, receives such  
favour

By the judge's doom, and is my innocence—  
The oppressed innocence of a star-crossed  
king—

Held more contemptible? My better angel,  
Though wanting power to alter fate, discovers  
Their hellish purposes. Yes—yes—'tis so.

My body's death will not suffice, they aim at  
My soul's perdition. And shall I, to shun  
A few more hours of misery, betray her?  
No, she is free still, and shall so return  
From whence she came, and in her pureness,  
triumph.

Their tyranny chained and fettered—

[Sinks back from weakness.

*Flam.* O, the devil!

Thou art weak. This will not do.

[Orders the Jailer to take in food.

*Met.* Mark how he'll stand

The second charge.

*Semp.* The honour is reserved

For the pretty tempting friend I brought—  
my life on't.

*Enter Jailer, with brown bread, and a  
wooden dish of water.*

*Jailer.* Here, sir, take this. Tho' coarse  
it will kill hunger.

It is your daily pittance. Yet, when you  
please,

Your commons may be mended.

*Ant.* Show me the way.

*Jailer.* Confess yourself to be a cozening  
knave—

The matter's feasible. But, if you will be  
Still king of the crickets, feed on this and live.  
You shall not say we starved you.

[Exit Jailer.

*Ant.* Stay, I beseech thee,

And take thy cruel pity back again

To him that sent it. This is a tyranny

That doth transcend all precedents. Mysoul,

But even now, this lump of clay, her prison,

Of itself, in the want of nourishment, opening,

Had shook off her sick feathers, and prepared

Herself to make a noble flight, as set

At liberty, and now this reparation

Again immures. You! for whose curious  
palates

The elements are ransacked, look upon

This bill of fare, by my penurious steward,

Necessity, served to a famished king;

And, warned by my example, when your tables

Crack not with the weight of deer, and far-  
fetched dainties,

Dispute not with heaven's bounties. What  
shall I do?

If I refuse to touch and taste these coarse

And homely cakes, I hasten my own fate,

And so, with willingness, embrace a sin

I hitherto have fled from. No—I'll eat;

And if, at this poor rate, life can continue,

I will not throw it off.

*Flam.* I pine with envy

To see his constancy. [A lute is heard.

*Met.* Bid your property enter

And use her subtlest magic.

*Semp.* I have already

Acquainted her with her cue. The music  
ushers

Her personal appearance.

*Ant.* [A song.  
From what hand

And voice do I receive this charity?

It is unusual at such a feast:

But I miscall it. 'Tis some new-found engine

Mounted to batter me! Ha!

*Enter Courtezan.*

*Court.*

If I were not  
More harsh and rugged in my disposition  
Than thy tormentors, these eyes had out-  
stripped

My tongue, and, with a shower of tears, had  
told you

Compassion brings me hither.

*Ant.*

That I could  
Believe so much, as, by my miseries!  
(An oath I dare not break) I gladly would;  
Pity methinks, I know not how, appears  
So lovely in you.

*Court.*

It being spent upon  
A subject, in each circumstance deserving  
An universal sorrow, tho' 'tis simple  
It cannot be deformed. May I presume  
To kiss your royal hand, for sure you are not  
Less than a king!

*Ant.*

Have I one witness living  
Dares only think so much?

*Court.*

I do believe it,  
And will die in that belief; and nothing  
more

Confirms it than your patience, not to be  
Found in a meaner man. Not all the trim  
Of the majesty you were born to, tho' set off  
With pomp and glorious lustre, showed you  
in

Such full perfection as, at this instant,  
Shines round about you, in your constant  
bearing

Your adverse fortune—a degree beyond

All magnanimity that ever was

Canonized by mankind!

*Ant.*

Astonishment  
And wonder seizes on me. Pray what are  
you?

*Court.*

Without your pity—nearer to the  
grave

Than the malice of prevailing enemies

Can hurry you.

*Ant.*

My pity! I will part with  
So much from what I have engrossed to  
mourn

Mine own afflictions, as—I freely grant it.

Will you have me weep before I know the  
cause

In which I may serve you?

*Court.*

You already have  
Spent too much of that stock. Pray you,  
first hear me,

And wrong not my simplicity with doubts

Of that I shall deliver. I am a virgin—

*Semp.* If I had not toyed with her myself,  
I should now believe her!

*Court.* And, tho' not of the eagle's brood,  
descended

From a noble family.

*Semp.* Her mother sold her  
To a Corinthian lecher at thirteen,  
As 'tis reported.

*Met.* Be silent, I command you.

*Ant.* To be a virgin, and so well derived,  
In my opinion, fair one, are not things  
To be lamented.

*Court.* If I had not fallen  
From my clear height of chastity—I confess  
it—

In my too forward wishes. That, sir, is  
A sin I am guilty of! I am in love, sir,—  
Impotently mad in love—and my desires  
Not to be stopped in their career.

*Ant.* With whom

Are you so taken?

*Court.* With your own dear self, sir,  
Behold me not with such a face of wonder:  
It is too sad a truth. The story of  
Your most deplorable fortune at the first  
warmed me

With more than modest heats; but, since I  
saw you,

I am all fire, and shall turn cinders, if  
You show not mercy to me.

*Ant.* Foolish creature,  
If I could suppose this true, and met your  
wishes

With equal ardour,—as I am, what  
shadow

Of seeming hope is left you to arrive at  
The port you long for?

*Court.* If you will be good  
Unto yourself the voyage is accomplished.  
It is but putting off a poisoned shirt,  
Which in the wearing eats into your flesh,  
And must, against your will, be soon forced  
from you:—

The malice of your enemies tendering to you  
More true security, and safety, than  
The violence of your friends' and servants'  
wishes

Could heap upon you.

*Ant.* 'Tis impossible.

Clear this dark mystery, for yet, to me,  
You speak in riddles.

*Court.* I will make it easy  
To your understanding, and thus—sweeten  
it [Offers to kiss him.]

In the delivery. 'Tis but to disclaim,  
With the continual cares that wait upon it,  
The title of a king.

*Ant.* Devil Flaminius!

I find you here!

*Court.* Why do you turn away?

The counsel that I offer, if you please  
To entertain it, as long-wished companions,  
In her right hand, brings liberty and a calm,  
After so many storms. And you no sooner  
Shall, to the world, profess you were suborned  
To this imposture—tho' I still believe  
It is a truth—but, with a free remission  
For the offence, I, as your better genius,  
Will lead you, from this place of horror, to  
A paradise of delight, to which compared,  
Thessalian Tempe, or that garden, where  
Venus with her revived Adonis spend  
Their pleasant hours, and make from their  
embraces

A perpetuity of happiness,  
Deserve not to be named. There, in an  
arbour,

Of itself supported o'er a bubbling spring,  
With purple hyacinths and roses covered,  
We will enjoy the sweets of life; nor shall  
Arithmetic sum up the varieties of  
Our amorous dalliance. Our viands such,  
As not alone shall nourish appetite,  
But strengthen our performance. And,  
when call'd for,

The quirksters of the air shall give us music:  
And, when we slumber, in a pleasant dream  
You shall behold the mountains of vexations  
Which you have heaped upon the Roman  
tyrants

In your free resignation of your kingdom,  
And smile at their afflictions.

*Ant.* Hence, you siren!

*Court.* Are you displeas'd?

*Ant.* Were all your flatteries  
Aimed at this mark? Will not my virtuous  
anger,  
Assisted by contempt and scorn, yield  
strength

To spurn thee from me? But thou art some  
whore—

Some common whore—and, if thou hast a  
soul,

(As in such creatures it is more than doubted)  
It hath its being in thy wanton veins,  
And will, with thy expense of blood, become  
Like that of sensual beasts!

*Met.* This will not do.

*Ant.* How did my enemies lose them-  
selves to think,

A painted prostitute with her charms could  
conquer

What malice, at the height, could not  
subdue.

Is all their stock of malice so consumed,  
As, out of penury, they are forced to use  
A whore for their last agent?

*Court.* If thou wert

Ten times a king thou liest. I am a lady—  
A gamesome lady—of the last edition ;  
And, tho' I physic noblemen, no whore.

*Met.* He hath touched her freehold !

*Semp.* Now let her alone,  
And she will worry him.

*Court.* Have I lived to have  
My courtesies refused ? That I had leave  
To pluck thy eyes out !

Are you so coy ? Thou art a man of snow,  
And thy father got thee in the wane of the  
moon !

But scorn me not. 'Tis true I was set on  
By the higher powers ; but now, for all the  
wealth

In Asia, thou shalt not have the favour,  
Though, prostrate on the earth, thou wouldst  
implore it

To kiss my shoestring.

*Enter Jailor and others.*

*Flam.* We lose time, my lord.

*Court.* Foh ! how he stinks ! I will not  
wear a rag more

That he hath breathed on.

*Met.* Without more ado

Let him have his sentence.

*Flam.* Drag him hence.

*Ant.* Are you there ?

Nay then—

*Flam.* I will not hear him speak. My  
anger

Is lost. Why linger you ?

*Ant.* Death ends all,  
however ! *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III.—*Place of Execution, Callipolis.*

*Enter Officers, leading in Berecinthus  
and 1st Merchant, with halters.*

*Berec.* What a skeleton they've made of  
me ! Starve me first,  
And hang me after ! Is there no conscience  
extant

To a man of my order ? They have de-  
graded me,

Ta'en away my lions, and to make me roar  
like them

They've pared the flesh off from my fingers'  
ends,

And then laughed at me ! I've been kept  
in darkness

These five long days—no visitants but devils,  
Or men in shapes more horrid, coming at  
me.

A chafing dish of coals and a butcher's knife  
I found set by me—and, inquiring why,  
I was told that I had flesh enough of mine  
own,

And, if that I were hungry, I might freely

Eat mine own carbonadoes, and be chro-  
nicked

For a cannibal never read of !

*Off.* Will you walk, sir ?

*Berec.* I shall come too soon, tho' I creep,  
to such a breakfast !

I ever use to take my portion sitting :

Hanging in the air, it is not physical.

*Off.* Time flies away, sir.

*Berec.* Why let him fly, sir. Or, if you  
please to stay him,

And bind up the bold knave's wings, make  
use of my collar.

There's substance in it, I can assure your  
worship,

And I thank your wisdom that you make  
distinction

Between me and this starveling. He goes  
to it

Like a greyhound for killing of sheep in a  
twopenny slip,

But here's a cable will weigh up an anchor,  
And yet, if I may have fair play, ere I die  
Ten to one I shall make it crack.

*Off.* What would you have, sir ?

*Berec.* My ballast about me. I shall ne'er  
sail well else

To the other world. My bark you see wants  
stowage.

But give me half a dozen hens, and a loin of  
veal

To keep it steady, and you may spare the  
trouble

Of pulling me by the legs, or setting the knot  
Under mine ear. This drum, well braced,  
defies

Such foolish courtesies.

*1 Merch.* This mirth, good Flamen,  
Is out of season. Let us think of Elysium

If we die honest men ; or what we—there—  
Shall suffer from the furies.

*Berec.* Thou'rt a fool

To think there are or gods or goddesses,  
For the latter, if that they had any power,

Mine, being the mother of them, would have  
helped me.

They are things we make ourselves. Or,  
grant there should be

A hell, or an Elysium, sing I cannot

To Orpheus' harp in the one, nor dance in  
the other.

But—if there be a Cerberus, if I serve not  
To make three cops for his three heads, that  
may serve

For something more than an ordinary break-  
fast,

The cur is devilish hungry. Would I had  
Run away with your fellow merchants, I had  
then

Provided for my frame. Yet, as I am,  
I have one request to make, and that, my  
friends,

Concerns my body, which I pray you grant,  
And then I shall die in peace.

*Off.* What is it?

*Berec.* Marry,

That you would be suitors to the proconsul  
for me

That no covetous Roman, after I am dead,  
May beg to have my skin flayed off, and stuff it  
With strawlike an alligator, and then show it  
In fairs and markets for a monster. Tho'  
I know the sight will draw more fools to  
gape on't

Than a camel or an elephant, aforehand  
I tell you, if you do, my ghost shall haunt you.  
*Off.* You shall have burial, fear not.

*Berec.* And room enough

To tumble in, I pray you, tho' I take up  
More grave than Alexander. I have ill luck  
If I stink not as much as he, and yield the  
worms

As large a supper.

*Merch.* Are you not mad to talk thus?

*Berec.* I came crying into the world, and  
am resolved

To go out merrily—therefore despatch me.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—Proconsul's House at  
Callipolis.

*Enter Metellus and Flaminius.*

*Met.* There was never such constancy.

*Flam.* You give it

Too fair a name. 'Tis foolish obstinacy,  
For which he shall, without my pity, suffer.  
What we do for the service of the republic,  
And propagation of Rome's glorious empire,  
Needs no defence, and we shall wrong our  
judgments

To feel compunction for it. Have you given  
order,

According to the sentence, that the impostor,  
Riding upon an ass, his face turned to  
The hinder part, may in derision be  
Brought through Callipolis?

*Met.* Yes. And a paper

Upon his head, in which, with capital letters,  
His faults are inscribed, and by three trump-  
eters

Proclaimed before him; and—that done—to  
have him

Committed to the galleys. Here comes  
Sempronius,

*Enter Sempronius.*

To whom I gave the charge.

*Semp.* I have performed it  
In every circumstance.

*Flam.* How do the people  
Receive it?

*Semp.* As an act of cruelty,  
And not of justice. It drew tears from all  
The sad spectators. His demeanour was  
In the whole progress worth the observation,  
But, in one thing, most remarkable.

*Flam.* What was that?

*Semp.* When the city-clerk with a loud  
voice read the cause

For which he was condemned, in taking on  
him

The name of a king, with a settled coun-  
tenance

The miserable man replied, *I am so*;  
But when he touched his being a cheating

Jew,

His patience moved, with a face full of anger  
He boldly said, *'Tis false.* I never saw

Such magnanimity.

*Flam.* Frontless impudence rather!

*Met.* Or anything else you please.

*Flam.* Have you forced on him:

The habit of a slave?

*Semp.* Yes, and in that,  
Pardon my weakness, still there does appear  
A kind of majesty in him.

*Flam.* You look on it

With the eyes of foolish pity that deceives  
you.

*Semp.* This way he comes; and, I believe,  
when you see him,

You'll be of my opinion.

*Off. (within).* Make way there.

*Enter Officers leading in Antiochus, his  
head shaved, in the habit of a slave.*

*Ant.* Fate! 'tis thy will it should be thus,  
and I

With patience obey it. Was there ever,  
In all precedent maps of misery,  
Calamity so drawn out to the life

As she appears in me? In all the changes  
Of fortune, such a metamorphosis

Antiquity cannot show us! Men may read  
there

Of kings deposed, and some in triumph led  
By the proud insulting Roman. Yet they  
were

Acknowledged such, and died so. My sad  
fate

Is of worse condition, and Rome  
To me more barbarous than ere yet to any  
Brought in subjection. Is it not sufficient

That the locks of this our royal head are  
shaved off—

My glorious robes changed to this slavish habit—

This hand, that grasped a sceptre, manacled—  
Or that I have been, as a spectacle,  
Exposed to public frown, if to make perfect  
This cruel reckoning I am not compelled  
To live beyond this, and, with stripes, be  
forced

To stretch my sbrunk-up sinews at an oar,  
In the company of thieves and murderers—  
My innocence, and their guilt, no way dis-  
tinguished,

But equal in our sufferings?

*Met.* You may yet  
Redeem all, and be happy.

*Flam.* But, persisting  
In this imposture, think but what it is  
To live in hell on earth, and rest assur'd  
It is your fatal portion.

*Ant.* Do what you please!  
I am in your power, but still Antiochus,  
King of the lower Asia—no impostor—  
That, four and twenty years since, lost a  
battle,

And challenge now mine own, which  
tyrannous Rome

With violence keeps from me.

*Flam.* Stop his mouth!

*Ant.* This is the very truth; and if I live  
Thrice Nestor's years in torture, I will speak  
No other language.

*Met.* I begin to melt.

*Flam.* To the galley with him!

*Ant.* Every place shall be  
A temple to my penitence in me!

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—Syracuse.

*Enter Marcellus, proconsul of Sicily (with a  
letter), and the 2nd and 3rd Merchants.*

*Mar.* Upon your recantation this Gal-  
lerien

Was not Antiochus, you had your pardons  
Signed by the senate?

*2 Merch.* Yes, my lord.

*Mar.* Troth, tell me,  
And freely—I am no informer—did you  
Believe and know him such, or raised that  
rumour

For private ends of your own?

*3 Merch.* May it please your excellence  
To understand, the fear of death wrought  
on us,

In a kind, to turn apostatas: besides,  
Having proved our testimonies could not  
help him,

We studied our safeties.

*2 Merch.* A desire too  
Of the recovery of our own, kept from us  
With strong hand, by his violent persecutor,  
Titus Flaminius, when he was at Carthage,  
Urged us to seek redress; nor was it fit  
We should oppose great Rome.

*Mar.* In worldly wisdom  
You are excusable. But—

*3 Merch.* We beseech your honour  
Press us no further.

*Mar.* I do not purpose it.  
Do you know what this contains?

[*Holding up the letter.*]

*2 Merch.* No, my good lord.

*3 Merch.* Perhaps we b[ring the warra]nt  
for our [deat]hs,

As 'tis said of Bellerophon, yet we durst not  
Presume to open it.

*Mar.* 'Twas manners in you.  
But I'll discharge you of that fear. There is  
Nor hurt intended to you.

*3 Merch.* We thank your lordship.

*Mar.* How is the service of Flaminius  
spoke of  
In Rome?

*2 Merch.* With admiration, and many  
Divine great honours to him.

*Mar.* The people's voice  
Is not oraculous ever. Are you sure  
The galley in which your supposed king is  
chained

Was bound for Syracuse?

*3 Merch.* She is now  
In the port, my lord.

*Mar.* Titus Flaminius in her?

*3 Merch.* Upon my certain knowledge.

*Mar.* Keep yourselves  
Concealed till you are called for. When  
least hoped for

You shall have justice.

*2 Merch.* Your honour's vassals ever.  
[*Exeunt Merchants.*]

*Mar.* Here, here, it is apparent that the  
poet

Wrote truth, tho' no proof else could be  
alleged

To make it good, that though the heavens  
lay open

To human wishes, and the fates were bound  
To sign what we desire, such clouds of  
error

Involve our reason, we'd still beg a curse,  
And not a blessing. How many, born unto

Ample possessions, and, like petty kings,  
Disposing of their vassals, sated with

The peace and quiet of a country life,  
Carried headlong with ambition, contend

To wear the golden fetters of employment,  
Presuming there's no happiness but in



The service of the state. But when they have tried,

By a sad experience, the burthen of them,  
When 'tis not in their power, at any rate,  
They would redeem their calm security,  
Mortgaged in wantonness. Alas! what are we,

That govern provinces, but preys exposed  
To every subtle spy; and when we have,  
Like sponges, sucked in wealth, we are squeezed out

By the rough hand of the law; and, failing in  
One syllable of our commission, with  
The loss of what we got with toil, we draw  
What was our own in question. You come timely,

*Enter Cornelia, with a Moor-woman.*

To turn my tired thoughts from a sad discourse

That I had with myself.

*Corn.* I rather fear, sir,  
I bring an argument along with me  
That will increase, not lessen, such conceptions

As I found with you.

*Mar.* Why, sweet! what's the matter?

*Corn.* When I but name Antiochus, tho' I spare,

To make a brief relation, how he died,  
Or what he is, if he now live, a sigh,  
And seconded with a tear, I know, must fall  
As a due tribute to him.

*Mar.* Which I pay  
Without compulsion. But why do you  
Lance this old sore?

*Corn.* The occasion commands it,  
And now I would forget it, I am forced,  
In thankfulness, to call to memory  
The favours for which we must ever owe him.  
You had the honour, in his court at Sardis,  
To be styled his friend, an honour Rome  
and Carthage

Were rivals for, and did deserve the envy  
Of his prime minions and favourites:  
His natural subjects planted in his favour  
Or rooted up, as your dislike or praise  
Reported them—the good king holding  
what

You spake to be oraculous, and not  
To be disputed. His magnificent gifts  
Confirmed his true affection, which you were  
More weary to receive than he to give:  
Yet still he studied new ones.

*Mar.* Pray you no more.

*Corn.* O 'tis a theme, sir, I could ever dwell  
on.

But since it does offend you, I will speak  
Of what concerns myself. He did not blush,

In the height of his felicity, to confess  
Fabricius, my lord and father, for  
His much-loved kinsman, and as such observed him.

You may please to remember too, when, at  
A public sacrifice, made to the gods  
After a long infection, in which  
The Asian kings and queens were his  
assistants,

With what respect and grace he did receive me.

And, at a solemn tilting, when he had  
Put on the richest armour in the world,  
Smiling he said—his words are still, and shall be,

Writ in the tablet of my heart—*Fair cousin,*

So he began (and then you thought me fair too),

*Since I am term'd a soldier, 'twere a solecism,  
In the language of the war, to have no mistress,*

*And therefore, as a prosperous omen to  
My undertakings, I desire to fight—  
So you with willingness give suffrage to it—  
Under your gracious colours: and, then,  
loosening*

A scarf tied to mine arm, he did entreat me  
To fasten it on his. O, with what joy  
I did obey him, rapt, beyond myself,  
In my imagination, to have  
So great a king my servant!

*Mar.* You had too  
Some private conference.

*Corn.* And you gave way to it.  
Without a sign of jealousy, and dispensed  
with  
The Roman gravity.

*Mar.* Would I could again  
Grant you like opportunity; but why  
Is this remembered now?

*Corn.* It does prepare  
A suit I have, which you must not deny me.  
To see the man, who, as it is reported,  
In the exterior parts nature hath drawn  
As his perfect copy. There must be something  
in him  
Remarkable in his resemblance only  
Of King Antiochus' features.

*Mar.* 'Twas my purpose.

*Enter Flaminius and Demetrius.*

And so much, my Cornelia, Flaminius  
Shall not deny us.

*Flam.* As my duty binds me,  
My stay here being but short, I come, un-  
sent for

To kiss your lordship's hands.

*Mar.* I answer you

In your own language, sir. And yet your stay here

May be longer than you think. [*Aside.*

*Flam.* Most honoured madam, I cannot stoop too low in tendering of My humblest service.

*Corn.* You disgrace your courtship By overacting it, my lord. I look not For such observance.

*Flam.* I am most unhappy, If that your excellence make any scruple Of doubt you may command me.

*Corn.* This assurance Gives me encouragement to entreat a favour, In which, my lord being a suitor with me, I hope shall find a grant.

*Flam.* Tho' all that's mine Be comprehended in it.

*Mar.* Your promise, sir, Shall not so far engage you. In respect Of some familiar passages between King Antiochus, when he lived, and us, And, tho' it needs not, for farther proof That this is an impostor, we desire Some conference with him.

*Flam.* For your satisfaction I will dispense a little with the strictness Of my commission. Sirrah! Will the captain To bring him to the proconsul.

*Corn.* His chains took off : That I entreat too. Since I would not look on The image of a king I so much honoured Bound like a slave.

*Flam.* See this great lady's will Be punctually obeyed. [*Exit* Demetrius.

*Mar.* Your wisdom, sir, Hath done the state a memorable service, In strangling, in the birth, this dreadful monster ; And, tho' with some, your cruel usage of him—

(For so they call your fit severity) They find a harsh interpretation, wise men In judgment must applaud it.

*Flam.* Such as are Selected instruments for deep designs, As things unworthy of them must not feel Or favours or affections. Tho' I know The ocean of your apprehensions needs not The rivulet of my poor cautions, yet, Bold from my long experience, I presume (As a symbol of my zeal, and service to you)

To leave this counsel. When you are, my lord, Graced, or distasted by the state, remember Your faculties are the state's, and not your own.

And, therefore, have a care the empty sounds

Of friend or enemy sway you not beyond The limits are assigned you. We, with ease, Swim down the stream, but to oppose the torrent

Is dangerous, and to go more, or less, Than we are warranted, fatal.

*Mar.* With my thanks For your so grave advice, I'll put in practice On all occasions what you deliver, And study 'em as aphorisms. In the mean time,

Pray you attempt such entertainment as Syracusa can present you. When the impostor

Arrives let us have notice. Pray you walk, sir. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*Hall in Syracuse.*

*Enter* Antiochus, Captain, and Soldiers.

*Capt.* Wait at the palace gate. There is no fear now

Of his escape. I'll be myself his guardian Till you hear further from me.

*Ant.* What new engine Hath cruelty found out to raise against This poor demolished rampire? It is levelled

With the earth already. Will they triumph in The ruins they have made ; or is there yet One masterpiece of tyranny in store Beyond that I have suffered? If thou be A vial of affliction, not poured out yet Upon this sinful head, I am prepared, And will look on the cloud before it break Without astonishment. Scorn me not, captain,

As a vain braggart, I will make this good, And I have strength to do it. I am armed With such varieties of defensive weapons, Lent to me from my passive fortitude. That there's no torment, of a shape so horrid, Can shake my constancy ! Where lies the scene now ?

Tho' the hangings of the stage were congealed gore,

The chorus flinty executioners, And the spectators, if it could be, more Inhuman than Flaminius, the cue given, The principal actor's ready.

*Capt.* If I durst I could show my compassion.

*Ant.* Take heed, captain, Pity in Roman officers is a crime To be punished more than murder in cold blood.

Bear up. To tell me where I am, I take it, Is no offence.

*Capt.* You are in Syracusa—  
In the court of the Proconsul.

*Ant.* Who? Marcellus.

*Capt.* That noble Roman. By him you are  
sent for,

But to what end I'm ignorant.

*Ant.* Ha! He was  
My creature, and, in my prosperity, proud  
To hold dependence of me, tho' I grand him  
With the title of a friend; and his fair lady  
In courtship styled my mistress. Can *they* be  
Infected with such barbarism as to make me  
A spectacle for their sport?

*Enter* Marcellus, Flaminius, Cornelia,  
Moor-woman, and Servants.

*Capt.* They are here, and soon  
They will resolve you.

*Mar.* Be reserved, and let not  
The near resemblance of his shape transport  
you

Beyond yourself. Though I confess the  
object  
Does much amaze me.

*Corn.* You impose, my lord,  
What I want power to bear.

*Mar.* Let my example,  
Though your fierce passions make war  
against it,  
Strengthen your reason.

*Ant.* Have you taken yet  
A full view of me? In what part do I  
Appear a monster?

*Corn.* His own voice!  
*Ant.* Forbear.

Tho' I were an impostor, as this fellow  
Labours you to believe, you break the laws  
Of fair humanity in adding to  
Affliction at the height; and I must tell you  
The reverence, you should pay unto the shape  
Of King Antiochus, may challenge pity  
As a due debt—not scorn. Wise men  
preserve

Dumb pictures of their friends, and look  
upon them

With feeling and affection, yet not hold it  
A foolish superstition. But there is  
In thankfulness a greater tye on you  
To show compassion.

*Mar.* Were it possible  
Thou couldst be King Antiochus—

*Ant.* What then?

*Mar.* I should both say and do—

*Ant.* Nothing for me  
(As far as my persuasion could prevent it)  
Not suiting with the quality and condition  
Of one, that owes his loyalty to Rome.  
And, since it is, by the inscrutable will

Of fate, determined that the royalties  
Of Asia must be conferred upon her—  
For what offence I know not—'tis in vain  
For men to oppose it. You express, my  
lord,

A kind of sorrow for me, in which, madam,  
You seem to be a sharer. That you may  
Have some proof to defend it, for your  
mirth's sake

I'll play the juggler, or more subtle gipsy,  
And to your admiration reveal  
Strange mysteries to you, which, as you are  
Romans,

You must receive for cunning tricks, but give  
No farther credit to them.

*Flam.* At your peril  
You may give him hearing. But to have  
faith in him

Neighbours to treason. Such an impudent  
slave

Was never read of.

*Mar.* I dare stand his charms  
With open ears—speak on.

*Ant.* If so, have at you!  
Can you call to your memory when you were  
At Sardis with Antiochus, before  
His Grecian expedition, what he,  
With his own hands, presented you as a  
favour,

No third man by to witness it?

*Mar.* Give me leave  
To recollect myself. Yes—sure 'twas so—  
He gave me a fair sword.

*Ant.* 'Tis true, and you  
Vowed never to part from it. Is it still  
In your possession?

*Mar.* The same sword I have,  
And, while I live, will keep.

*Ant.* Will you not say,  
It being four and twenty years since you  
Were master of that gift, if now I know it,  
Among a thousand others, that I have  
The art of memory?

*Mar.* I shall receive it  
As no common sleight. Sirrah! Fetch all  
the swords

For mine own use in my armoury, and, do  
you hear, [Whispers.

Do as I give directions.

*Servant.* With all care, sir,  
[Exit Servant.

*Ant.* To entertain the time until your  
servant

Returns. There is no syllable that passed  
Between you and Antiochus, which I could  
not

Articulately deliver. You must still  
Be confident that I am an impostor,  
Or else the trick is nothing.

*Enter Servant with many swords.*

*Corn.* Can this be?

*Ant.* O welcome, friend. Most choice and curious swords,  
But mine is not among them.

*Marc.* Bring the rest!

*Enter another Servant with more swords.*

*Ant.* Aye! this is it. This is the sword I gave you

Before I went to Greece. Be not amazed  
Nor let this trifle purchase a belief  
I am Antiochus. Here is one will assure you  
These are but juggling tricks of an affronter.

*Flam.* They are no more. A contract's sealed between

The devil and this seducer, at the price  
Of his damned soul. And his familiar  
Dæmon

Acquaints him with these passages.

*Marc.* I know not  
But I am thunderstruck.

*Corn.* I can contain  
Myself no longer.

*Ant.* Stay, dear madam. Though  
Credulity be excusable in your sex  
To take away all colour of guilt in you,  
You shall have stronger proofs. The scarf  
you gave me,

As a testimony you adopted me  
Into your service, I wore on mine armour,  
When I fought with Marcus Scaurus; and  
mine eye

Hath on the sudden found a precious jewel  
You deigned to receive from me. [The  
armlet]

Which you wear on your sleeve.

*Corn.* I acknowledge  
It was the king Antiochus' gift.

*Ant.* I will  
Make a discovery of a secret in it  
Of which you yet are ignorant. Pray you  
trust it,

For king Antiochus' sake, into my hands.  
I thank your readiness. Nay dry your eyes.  
You hinder else the faculty of seeing  
The cunning of the lapidary. I can  
Pull out the stone, and under it you shall  
find

My name, and cipher I then used, engraven.  
*Corn.* 'Tis most apparent. Tho' I lose  
my life for it,

These knees shall pay their duty.

*Ant.* By no means;  
For your own sake be still incredulous,  
Since your faith cannot save me. I should  
know

This Moorish woman. Yes. 'Tis she. Thou wert

One of my laundry, and thou wast called  
Zanthia

While thou wert mine. I'm glad thou'st  
lighted on

So gracious a mistress.

*Moor-woman.* Mine own king!

O let me kiss your feet. What cursed villains  
Have thus transformed you?

*Flam.* 'Tis not safe, my lord,  
To suffer this.

*Marc.* I am turn'd statue, or  
All this is but a vision.

*Ant.* Your ear, madam,  
[Speaks aside.]

Since what I now shall say is such a secret  
As is known only to yourself and me,  
And must exclude a third—tho' your own  
lord,

From being of the counsel. Having gained  
Access, and privacy with you, my hot blood  
(No friend to modest purposes) prompted me  
With pills of poisoned language, candied o'er  
With hopes of future greatness, to attempt  
The ruin of your honour. I enforced then  
My power to justify the ill, and pressed  
You with mountainous promises of love and  
service.

But when the building of your faith and  
virtue

Began to totter, and a kind of grant  
Was offered, my then sleeping temperance  
Began to rouse itself; and, breaking through  
The obstacles of lust, when most assured  
To enjoy a pleasant hour, I let my suit fall,  
And, with a gentle reprehension, taxed  
Your forward proneness—but with many  
vows

Ne'er to discover it, which heaven can witness  
I have and will keep faithfully.

*Corn.* This is  
The king Antiochus, as sure as I am  
The daughter of my mother.

*Marc.* Be advised.

*Flam.* This is little less than treason I  
*Corn.* They are traitors—  
Traitors to innocence and oppressed justice—  
That dare affirm the contrary.

*Marc.* Pray you temper  
The violence of your passion.

*Corn.* [Do] but express  
Your thankfulness for his so many [favours]:  
And labour that the senate may restore him  
Unto his own. I'll die else.

*Ant.* Live long, madam,  
To nobler and more profitable uses.  
I am a falling structure: and desire not

Your honours should be buried in my ruins.  
Let it suffice. My lord, you must not see  
The sun, if, in the policy of state,  
It is forbidden. With compassion  
Of what a miserable king hath suffered  
Preserve me in your mem'ry.

*Flam.* You stand as  
This sorc'rer had bewitched you. Drag him  
to  
His oar, and let his weighty chains be  
doubled.

*Marc.* For my sake let the poor man  
have what favour  
You can afford him.

*Flam.* Sir, you must excuse me.  
You have abused the liberty I gave you,  
[To Antiochus.

But, villain, you pay dear for't. I will trust  
The execution of his punishment  
To no man but myself. His cries and groans  
Shall be my hourly music. So, my lord,  
I take my leave abruptly.

*Corn.* May all plagues,  
That ever followed tyranny, pursue thee!

*Marc.* Pray you stay a little.

*Flam.* On no terms.

*Marc.* Yield so much

To my entreaties.

*Flam.* Not a minute, for  
Your government!

*Marc.* I will not purchase, sir,  
Your company at such a rate. And yet  
Must take the boldness upon me to tell you  
You must, and shall, stay.

*Flam.* How!

*Marc.* Nay, what is more,  
As a prisoner—not a guest. Look not so  
high,

I'll humble your proud thoughts.

*Flam.* You dare not do this  
Without authority.

*Marc.* You shall find I have  
Sufficient warrant, with detaining you,  
To take this man into my custody.  
Tho' 'tis not in my power, whate'er you are,  
To do you further favour, I thus free you  
Out of this devil's paws.

*Ant.* I take it as  
A lessening of my torments.

*Flam.* You shall answer  
This in another place.

*Marc.* But you shall, here,

Yield an account without appeal for what  
You have already done. You may peruse.  
[Does it] [Hands him the letter.  
Shake you already? Do you find I have  
[The warrant? Call in the Asian merchants.

*Enter the two Merchants and a Guard.*

2 *Merch.* [. . .] now to be hanged  
3 *Merch.* [. . .] him that pities thee  
*Flam.* [. . .] accusers

*Marc.* . . .  
die and will prove that you took bribes  
Of the Carthaginian merchants, to detain  
Their lawful prize; and, for your sordid  
ends,

Abused the trust, committed by the state,  
To right their vassals. The wise senate, as  
They will reward your good and faithful  
service,

Cannot, in justice, without punishment  
Pass o'er your ill. Guiltiness makes you  
dumb.

But, 'till that I have leisure, and you find  
Your tongue—to prison with him!

*Flam.* I prove too late,  
As heaven is merciful, man's cruelty  
Never escapes unpunished.

[Exit with Flaminius.

*Ant.* How a smile  
Labours to break forth from me. But  
what is

Rome's pleasure shall be done with me?

*Marc.* Pray you think, sir,  
'Tis a Roman—not your constant friend—  
that tells you

You are confined unto the Gyaræ  
With a strong guard upon you.

*Re-enter Guard.*

*Ant.* Then 'tis easy  
To prophecy I have not long to live,  
Though the manner how I shall die is un-  
certain.

Nay, weep not. Since 'tis not in you to  
help me,  
These showers of tears are fruitless. May  
my story

Teach potentates humility, and instruct  
Proud monarchs, tho' they govern a human  
things,  
A greater power does raise, or pull down,  
kings.

### EPILOGUE.

*The end of epilogues is to enquire  
The censure of the play, or to desire  
Pardon for what's amiss. In his intent  
The maker vows that he is innocent.*

*And, for me and my fellows, I protest,  
And you may believe me, we have done our best ;  
And reason too we should, but whether you  
Conceive we have with care discharg'd what's due  
Rests yet in supposition, you may  
If you please resolve us. If our fate this day  
Prove prosperous ; and you too vouchsafe to give  
Some sign your pleasure is this work shall live,  
We will find out new ways for your delight,  
And, to our power, ne'er fail to do you right.*



# POEMS

ON SEVERAL OCCASIONS.

*To my Honorable freinde Sr. ffancis ffoliambe  
Knight and Baronet.*

Sr. with my service I praesent this booke,  
A trifle, I confesse, but pray you looke  
Upon the sender, not his guift, with your  
Accustomde favor, and then 't will indure  
Your serch the better. Somethinge there  
may bee  
You 'l finde in the perusall fit for mee  
To give to one I henor, and may pleade,  
In your defence, though you descende to  
reade

A Pamplet of this nature. May it prove  
In your free iudgement, though not worth  
your llove,  
Yet fit to finde a pardon, and I'll say  
Upon your warrant that it is a play.

Ever at your commaundment,

PHILIP MASSINGER.

*To my judicious and learned Friend the Author, [James Shirley] upon his inge-  
nious Poem, the Grateful Servant, a Comedy, published in 1630.*

THOUGH I well know, that my obscurer  
name  
Listed with theirs who here advance thy  
fame,  
Cannot add to it, give me leave to be,  
Among the rest a modest votary  
At the altar of thy Muse. I dare not  
raise  
Giant hyperboles unto thy praise ;  
Or hope it can find credit in this age,  
Though I should swear, in each triumphant  
page  
Of this thy work there's no line but of  
weight,  
And poesy itself shewn at the height :  
Such common places, friend, will not agree  
With thy own vote, and my integrity.

I'll steer a mid way, have clear truth my  
guide,  
And urge a praise which cannot be denied.  
Here are no forced expressions, no rack'd  
phrase ;  
No Babel compositions to amaze  
The tortured reader ; no believed defence  
To strengthen the bold Atheist's insolence ;  
No obscene syllable, that may compel  
A blush from a chaste maid ; but all so well  
Express'd and order'd, as wise men must  
say  
It is a grateful poem, a good play :  
And such as read ingeniously, shall find  
Few have outstripp'd thee, many hatt  
behind.

PHILIP MASSINGER.

*To his Son, J[ames] S[mith] upon his Minerva.*

<p>THOU art my son ; in that my choice is spoke :</p> <p>Thine with thy father's Muse strikes equal stroke.</p> <p>It shew'd more art in Virgil to relate, And make it worth the hearing, his gnat's fate,</p> <p>Than to conceive what those great minds must be</p> <p>That sought, and found out, fruitful Italy. And such as read and do not apprehend, And with applause, the purpose and the end</p> <p>Of this neat poem, in themselves confess A dull stupidity and barrenness.</p>	<p>Methinks I do behold, in this rare birth, A temple built up to facetious Mirth, Pleased Phœbus smiling on it : doubt not, then,</p> <p>But that the suffrage of judicious men Will honour this Thalia ; and, for those That praise sir Bevis, or what's worse in prose,</p> <p>Let them dwell still in ignorance. To write In a new strain, and from it raise delight, As thou in this hast done, doth not by chance,</p> <p>But merit, crown thee with the laurel branch.</p> <p style="text-align: right;">PHILIP MASSINGER.</p>
---	---

~~~~~

SERO SED SERIO.

*To the Right Honourable my most singular good Lord and Patron, Philip Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery, Lord-Chamberlain of His Majesty's Household, &c. upon the deplorable and untimely Death of his late truly noble Son, Charles Lord Herbert, &c.*

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                               |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>"TWAS fate, not want of duty, did me wrong;<br/>Or, with the rest, my hymenæal song<br/>Had been presented, when the knot was tied<br/>That made the bridegroom and the virgin<br/>bride</p> <p>A happy pair. I curs'd my absence then<br/>That hinder'd it, and bit my star-cross'd<br/>pen,</p> <p>Too busy in stage-blanks, and trifling rhyme,<br/>When such a cause call'd, and so apt a time<br/>To pay a general debt ; mine being more<br/>Than they could owe, who since, or hereto-<br/>fore,</p> <p>Have labour'd with exalted lines to raise<br/>Brave piles, or rather pyramids of praise<br/>To Pembroke and his family : and dare I,<br/>Being silent then, aim at an elegy?<br/>Or hope my weak Muse can bring forth one<br/>verse</p> <p>Deserving to wait on the sable hearse<br/>Of your late hopeful Charles? his obsequies<br/>Exact the mourning of all hearts and eyes<br/>That knew him, or loved virtue. He that<br/>would</p> <p>Write what he was, to all posterity, should</p> | <p>Have ample credit in himself, to borrow,<br/>Nay, make his own, the saddest accents<br/>sorrow</p> <p>Ever express'd, and a more moving quill,<br/>Than Spenser used when he gave Astrophil<br/>A living epicedim. For poor me,<br/>By truth I vow it is no flattery,<br/>I from my soul wish, (if it might remove<br/>Grief's burthen, which too feelingly you<br/>prove,)</p> <p>Though I have been ambitious of fame,<br/>As poets are, and would preserve a name,<br/>That, my toys burnt, I had lived unknown<br/>to men,</p> <p>And ne'er had writ, nor ne'er to write<br/>again.</p> <p>Vain wish, and to be scorn'd ! can my foul<br/>dross,</p> <p>With such pure gold be valued ? or the loss<br/>Of thousand lives like mine, merit to be<br/>The same age thought on, when his destiny<br/>Is only mentioned ? no, my lord, his fate,<br/>Is to be prized at a higher rate ;<br/>Nor are the groans of common men to be<br/>Blended with those, which the nobility</p> |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|



Vent hourly for him. That great ladies  
mourn

His sudden death, and lords vie at his urn  
Drops of compassion ; that true sorrow, fed  
With showers of tears, still bathes the  
widow'd bed

Of his dear spouse ; that our great king and  
queen

(To grace your grief) disdain'd not to be  
seen

Your royal comforters ; these well become  
The loss of such a hope, and on his tomb  
Deserve to live : but, since no more could be  
Presented, to set off his tragedy,

And with a general sadness, why should you  
(Pardon my boldness !) pay more than his  
due,

Be the debt ne'er so great ? No stoic can,  
As you were a loving father, and a man,  
Forbid a moderate sorrow ; but to take  
Too much of it, for his or your own sake

If we may trust divines, will rather be  
Censured repining, than true piety.

I still presume too far, and more than fear  
My duty may offend, pressing too near  
Your private passions. I thus conclude,

If now you shew your passive fortitude,

In bearing this affliction, and prove

You take it as a trial of heaven's love  
And favour to you, you ere long shall see

Your second care return'd from Italy,  
To bless his native England, each rare part,  
That in his brother lived, and joy'd your  
heart,

Transferr'd to him ; and to the world make  
known

He takes possession of what's now his own.

Your honour's  
most humble  
and faithful servant,

PHILIP MASSINGER.



## DEDICATIONS TO THE PLAYS.

### The Unnatural Combat.

*To my much Honoured Friend, Anthony Sentleger, of Oakham in Kent, Esq.*

SIR,

THAT the patronage of trifles, in this kind, hath long since rendered dedications, and inscriptions obsolete, and out of fashion, I perfectly understand, and cannot but ingenuously confess, that I walking in the same path, may be truly argued by you of weakness, or wilful error: but the reasons and defences, for the tender of my service this way to you, are so just, that I cannot (in my thankfulness for so many favours received) but be ambitious to publish them. Your noble father, Sir Warham Sentleger (whose remarkable virtues must be ever remembered) being, while he lived, a master, for his pleasure, in poetry, feared not to hold converse with divers, whose necessitous fortunes made it their profession, among which, by the clemency of his judgment, I was not in the last place admitted. You (the heir of his honour and estate) inherited his good inclinations to men of my poor quality, of which I cannot give any ampler testimony, than by my free and glad profession of it to the world. Besides (and it was not the least encouragement to me) many of eminence, and the best of such, who disdained not to take notice of me, have not thought themselves disparaged, I dare not say honoured, to be celebrated the patrons of my humble studies. In the first file of which, I am confident, you shall have no cause to blush, to find your name written. I present you with this old tragedy, without prologue or epilogue, it being composed in a time (and that too, per-adventure, as knowing as this) when such by-ornaments were not advanced above the fabric of the whole work. Accept it, I beseech you, as it is, and continue your favour to the author,

Your Servant,

PHILIP MASSINGER.

---

### The Duke of Milan.

*To the Right Honourable, and much esteemed for her high birth, but more admired for her virtue, the Lady Catherine Stanhope, wife to Philip Lord Stanhope, Baron of Shelford.*

MADAM,

IF I were not most assured that works of this nature have found both patronage and protection amongst the greatest princesses of Italy, and are at this day cherished by persons most eminent in our kingdom, I should not presume to offer these my weak and imperfect labours at the altar of your favour. Let the example of others, more knowing, and more experienced in this kindness (if my boldness offend) plead my pardon, and the rather, since there is no other means left me (my misfortunes having cast me on this course) to publish to the world (if it hold the least good opinion of me) that I am ever your ladyship's creature. Vouchsafe, therefore, with the never-failing clemency of your noble disposition, not to condemn the tender of his duty, who, while he is, will ever be

An humble Servant to your

Ladyship, and yours,

PHILIP MASSINGER.

## The Bondman.

*To the Right Honourable, my singular good Lord, Philip Earl of Montgomery,  
Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter, &c.*

RIGHT HONOURABLE,

HOWEVER I could never arrive at the happiness to be made known to your lordship, yet a desire, born with me, to make a tender of all duties and service to the noble family of the Herberts, descended to me as an inheritance from my dead father, Arthur Massinger. Many years he happily spent in the service of your honourable house, and died a servant to it; leaving his to be ever most glad and ready, to be at the command of all such as derive themselves from his most honoured master, your lordship's most noble father. The consideration of this encouraged me (having no other means to present my humblest service to your honour) to shroud this trifle under the wings of your noble protection; and I hope, out of the clemency of your heroic disposition, it will find, though perhaps not a welcome entertainment, yet, at the worst, a gracious pardon. When it was first acted, your lordship's liberal suffrage taught others to allow it for current, having received the undoubted stamp of your lordship's allowance: and if in the perusal of any vacant hour, when your honour's more serious occasions shall give you leave to read it, it answer, in your lordship's judgment, the report and opinion it had upon the stage, I shall esteem my labours not ill employed, and, while I live, continue

The humblest of those that

truly honour your lordship,

PHILIP MASSINGER.

---

## The Renegado.

*To the Right Honourable George Harding, Baron Berkeley, of Berkeley Castle, and  
Knight of the Honourable Order of the Bath.*

MY GOOD LORD,

To be honoured for old nobility, or hereditary titles, is not alone proper to yourself, but to some few of your rank, who may challenge the like privilege with you: but in our age to vouchsafe (as you have often done) a ready hand to raise the dejected spirits of the contemned sons of the Muses; such as would not suffer the glorious fire of poesy to be wholly extinguished, is so remarkable and peculiar to your lordship, that with a full vote and suffrage, it is acknowledged that the patronage and protection of the dramatic poem, is yours, and almost without a rival. I despair not therefore, but that my ambition to present my service in this kind, may in your clemency meet with a gentle interpretation. Confirm it, my good lord, in your gracious acceptance of this trifle; in which, if I were not confident there are some pieces worthy the perusal, it should have been taught an humbler flight; and the writer, your countryman, never yet made happy in your notice and favour, had not made this an advocate to plead for his admission among such as are wholly and sincerely devoted to your service. I may live to tender my humble thankfulness in some higher strain; and till then, comfort myself with hope, that you descend from your height to receive

Your honour's commanded servant,

PHILIP MASSINGER.

## The Roman Actor.

*To my much honoured and most true Friends, Sir Philip Knyvet, Knt. and Bart. and to Sir Thomas Jeay, Knt., and Thomas Bellingham, of Newtimber, in Sussex, Esq.*

How much I acknowledge myself bound for your so many and extraordinary favours conferred upon me, as far as it is in my power, posterity shall take notice : I were most unworthy of such noble friends, if I should not, with all thankfulness, profess and own them. In the composition of this Tragedy you were my only supporters, and it being now by your principal encouragement to be turned into the world, it cannot walk safer than under your protection. It hath been happy in the suffrage of some learned and judicious gentlemen when it was presented, nor shall they find cause, I hope, in the perusal, to repent them of their good opinion of it. If the gravity and height of the subject distaste such as are only affected with jigs and ribaldry, (as I presume it will,) their condemnation of me and my poem, can no way offend me : my reason teaching me, such malicious and ignorant detractors deserve rather contempt than satisfaction. I ever held it the most perfect birth of my Minerva ; and therefore in justice offer it to those that have best deserved of me ; who, I hope, in their courteous acceptance will render it worth their receiving, and ever, in their gentle construction of my imperfections, believe they may at their pleasure dispose of him, that is wholly and sincerely

Devoted to their service,

PHILIP MASSINGER.

---

## The Great Duke of Florence.

*To the truly honoured, and my noble Favourer, Sir Robert Wiseman, Knt., of Thorrell's-Hall, in Essex.*

SIR,

As I dare not be ungrateful for the many benefits you have heretofore conferred upon me, so I have just reason to fear that my attempting this way to make satisfaction (in some measure) for so due a debt, will further engage me. However, examples encourage me. The most able in my poor quality have made use of Dedications in this nature, to make the world take notice (as far as in them lay) who and what they were that gave supportment and protection to their studies, being more willing to publish the doer than receive a benefit in a corner. For myself, I will freely, and with a zealous thankfulness, acknowledge, that for many years I had but faintly subsisted, if I had not often tasted of your bounty. But it is above my strength and faculties to celebrate to the desert your noble inclination, and that made actual, to raise up, or, to speak more properly, to rebuild the ruins of demolished poesie. But that is a work reserved, and will be, no doubt, undertaken, and finished, by one that can to the life express it. Accept, I beseech you, the tender of my service, and in the list of those you have obliged to you, contemn not the name of

Your true and faithful honourer,

PHILIP MASSINGER.

## The Maid of Honour.

*To my most honoured Friends, Sir Francis Foljambe, Knt. and Bart. and Sir Thomas Bland, Knt.*

THAT you have been, and continued so for many years, since you vouchsafed to own me, patrons to me and my despised studies, I cannot but with all bumble thankfulness acknowledge: and living, as you have done, inseparable in your friendship, (notwithstanding all differences, and suits in law arising between you,) I held it as impertinent as absurd, in the presentment of my service in this kind, to divide you. A free confession of a debt in a meaner man, is the amplest satisfaction to his superiors; and I heartily wish, that the world may take notice, and from myself, that I had not to this time subsisted, but that I was supported by your frequent courtesies and favours. When your more serious occasions will give you leave, you may please to peruse this trifle, and peradventure find something in it that may appear worthy of your protection. Receive it, I beseech you, as a testimony of his duty who, while he lives, resolves to be

Truly and sincerely devoted to your service,  
PHILIP MASSINGER.

---

## The Picture.

*To my honoured and selected Friends, of the Noble Society of the Inner Temple.*

It may be objected, my not inscribing their names, or titles, to whom I dedicate this poem, proceedeth either from my diffidence of their affection to me, or their unwillingness to be published the patrons of a trifle. To such as shall make so strict an inquisition of me, I truly answer, The play, in the presentment, found such a general approbation, that it gave me assurance of their favour to whose protection it is now sacred; and they have professed they so sincerely allow of it, and the maker, that they would have freely granted that in the publication, which, for some reasons, I denied myself. One, and that is a main one; I had rather enjoy (as I have done) the real proofs of their friendship, than, mountebank-like, boast their numbers in a catalogue. Accept it, noble Gentlemen, as a confirmation of his service, who hath nothing else to assure you, and witness to the world, how much he stands engaged for your so frequent bounties; and in your charitable opinion of me believe, that you now may, and shall ever command,

Your Servant,  
PHILIP MASSINGER.

---

## The Emperor of the East.

*To the Right Honourable, and my especial good Lord, John Lord Mohun, Baron of Okehampton, &c.*

MY GOOD LORD,

LET my presumption in styling you so, (having never deserved it in my service,) from the clemency of your noble disposition, find pardon. The reverence due to the name of Mohun, long since honoured in three earls of Somerset, and eight barons of Munster, may challenge from all pens a deserved celebration. And the rather in respect those titles were not purchased, but conferred, and continued in your ancestors, for many virtuous, noble, and still living actions; nor ever forfeited or tainted, but when the iniquity of those times laboured the depression of approved goodness, and in wicked policy held it fit that loyalty and faith, in taking part with the true prince, should be degraded and mulcted. But this admitting no further dilation in this place, may your lordship please, and with all possible brevity, to understand the reasons why I am, in humble thankfulness, ambitious

to shelter this poem under the wings of your honourable protection. My worthy friend, Mr. Aston Cockayne, your nephew, to my extraordinary content, delivered to me that your lordship, at your vacant hours, sometimes vouchsafed to peruse such trifles of mine as have passed the press, and not alone warranted them in your gentle suffrage, but disdained not to bestow a remembrance of your love, and intended favour to me. I profess to the world, I was exalted with the bounty, and with good assurance, it being so rare in this age to meet with one noble name, that, in fear to be censured of levity and weakness, dares express itself a friend or patron to contemned poetry. Having, therefore, no means else left me to witness the obligation in which I stand most willingly bound to your lordship, I offer this Tragi-comedy to your gracious acceptance, no way despairing, but that with a clear aspect you will deign to receive it, (it being an induction to my future endeavours,) and that in the list of those, that to your merit truly admire you, you may descend to number

Your lordship's faithful honourer,

PHILIP MASSINGER.

## A New Way to Pay Old Debts.

*To the Right Honourable, Robert Earl of Carnarvon, Master Falconer of England.*

MY GOOD LORD,

PARDON, I beseech you, my boldness, in presuming to shelter this Comedy under the wings of your lordship's favour and protection. I am not ignorant (having never yet deserved you in my service) that it cannot but meet with a severe construction, if, in the clemency of your noble disposition, you fashion not a better defence for me, than I can fancy for myself. All I can allege is, that divers Italian princes, and lords of eminent rank in England, have not disdained to receive and read poems of this nature; nor am I wholly lost in my hopes, but that your honour (who have ever expressed yourself a favourer, and friend to the Muses) may vouchsafe, in your gracious acceptance of this trifle, to give me encouragement to present you with some laboured work, and of a higher strain, hereafter. I was born a devoted servant to the thrice noble family of your incomparable lady, and am most ambitious, but with a becoming distance, to be known to your lordship, which, if you please to admit, I shall embrace it as a bounty, that while I live shall oblige me to acknowledge you for my noble patron, and profess myself to be,

Your honour's true servant,

PHILIP MASSINGER.

## The City Madam.

*To the truly Noble and Virtuous Lady Ann Countess of Oxford.*

HONOURED LADY,

IN that age when wit and learning were not conquered by injury and violence, this poem was the object of love and commendations, it being composed by an infallible pen, and censured by an unerring auditory. In this epistle I shall not need to make an apology for plays in general, by exhibiting their antiquity and utility: in a word, they are mirrors or glasses which none but deformed faces, and fouler consciences fear to look into. The encouragement I had to prefer this dedication to your powerful protection proceeds from the universal fame of the deceased author, who, (although he composed many,) wrote none amiss, and this may justly be ranked among his best. I have redeemed it from the teeth of Time, by committing of it to the press, but more in imploring your patronage. I will not slander it with my praises, it is commendation enough to call it MASSINGER'S; if it may gain your allowance and pardon, I am highly gratified, and desire only to wear the happy title of,

Madam,

Your most humble servant,

ANDREW PENNYCUICKE.

# GLOSSARIAL INDEX.

*a* means left column ; *b* right column.

## ABRAM-MEN. 396 *b*.

An Abram-man was an impudent impostor who, under the garb and appearance of a luocatic, rambled about the country, and compelled, as Decker says, the servants of small families "to give him, through fear, whatever he demanded."

## ABSURD. 331 *a*.

In logical phraseology, is a term used when false conclusions are drawn from the opponent's premises.

## ABUSE. 270 *a*.

"You abuse me:" *i.e.*, you practise on my credulity with a forged tale. The word often occurs in this sense.

## ALBA REGALIS. 286 *a*, 305 *a*.

The town where the kings of Hungary were anciently crowned. Whitehall is often called so by writers of the seventeenth century.

## ALTAR. 176 *b*.

"That binds no further than to the altar," is not an allusion to the married state, but to the saying of Pericles, that he would support the interests of his friend as far as the altar; *i.e.*, as far as his respect for the gods would permit.

## AMSTERDAM. 133 *b*.

The toleration allowed to religious sects of all denominations had, in Massinger's time, filled Amsterdam with fanatics from every country in Europe. To this aggregation of zealots there are perpetual allusions in our old writers.

## ANAXARETE. 209 *a*.

The story of Iphis and Anaxarete is beautifully told by Ovid ("Met." xiv. 698 *et seq.*) Massinger has followed his leader *pari passu*.

## ANGEL. 10 *b*.

This word is frequently used for *Bird*, by our old writers. "Roman angel," therefore, means the eagle, the military ensign.

## APES. 115 *a*.

Our ancestors certainly excelled us in the education which they bestowed on their animals. Banks's horse far surpassed all that have been brought up in the academy of Mr. Astley, and the apes of these days are mere clowns to their progenitors. The apes of Massinger's time were gifted with a pretty smattering of politics and philosophy. In the "Parson's Wedding" we have an allusion to one that would frown when the Pope's name was mentioned; and in "Ram Alley" to another (or the same), that would hold up his haud at the word Geneva.

## APOSTATA. 27 *b*, 32 *a*, 38 *b*, 40 *b*, 605 *a*, 606 *a*, 620 *a*.

Our old writers usually said *apostata*, *statua*, &c., where we now say *apostate*, *statue*. The metre is often absolutely destroyed by the editors in attempting to alter the spelling.

## APPLE. 344 *b*.

The ancients attached a certain degree of mystical consequence to the presentation of an apple; which they universally agreed to consider as a tacit confession of passion, accepted and returned.

## AT ALL! 445 *a*.

This expression occurs in Skeltoo's bold and animated description of Ryotte, the prototype of a gamester:—

"With that came Ryotte, rushing all at ones  
A rustic galaode, to ragged and to rente,  
And on the horde he whirled a pair of bones,  
Quater, trey, dew! he chattered as he went,  
Now have at all, by St. Thomas of Kent."

*Bouge of Court.*

## ATHEISM. 270 *b*.

Our old writers seem to have used such words as profaneness, blasphemy, *atheism*, &c., with a laxity which modern practice does not acknowledge. They applied them to any extraordinary violation of moral or natural decorum.

## ATONEMENT. 88 *b*, 543 *b*.

Reconciliation. To atone is often used in this sense by Shakespeare and others.

## AVENTINE. 195 *a*.

My security, my defence. The Aventine was a post of great strength. It is used in the same metaphorical sense by Fletcher, and others of our old dramatists.

## BAKEHOUSE. 186 *a*.

The *conduit* and the *bakehouse* in the age of Massinger were the general rendezvous of gossips of both sexes: they are so still in most country townes.

## BANDOG. 12 *b*.

A dog so fierce as to require to be chained up, as the name implies.

## BANQUET. 46 *b*, 101 *b*, 430 *b*.

A banquet was what we now call a dessert, and was composed of fruit, sweetmeats, &c. It was usually placed in a separate room, to which the guests removed as soon as they had dined. The common place of banqueting was the garden-house, or arbour, with which almost every dwelling was once furnished.

## BARATHRUM. 406 *a*.

"Barathrum of the shamblies" is taken literally from Horace.

"Femicies et tempestas, barathrumque macelli."

The word is used by Shirley and others in the classical sense of an abyss or devouring gulf.

[I have no doubt that when Meg Merrilies called Dominie Sampson "You black *barrowtram* of the kirk," preparatory to the order "Gape, sinner, and swallow," Sir Walter Scott was thinking of this word, and not of "the side of a wheelbarrow," as interpreted in the Glossary to the Waverley novels.]

## BARLEY-BREAK. 30 *b*, 185 *a*.

A game played by six people (three of each sex), who were coupled by lot. A piece of ground was then chosen, and divided into three compartments, of which the middle one was called Hell. It was the object of the couple condemned to this division to catch the others who advanced from the two extremities.

"[At *barley-break* her sweet swift foot to try," is a line in the "Arcadia.]"

## BASES. 292 *b*.

Seem to have been some kind of quilted and ornamented covering for the thighs. Highlanders wear a kind of *bases* at this day. [*Qy.*, the French word, *bas*, stockings.]

**BASKET.** 382 a, 393 b, 425 a.

The allusions are to the basket in which the broken bread and meat was distributed to the poor at the porter's lodge of great houses. The "sheriff's basket" was that in which the victuals were sent to the prisons from the sheriff's table.

**BEADSMEN.** 429 b, 438 b.

Is pure Saxon, and means prayers men, *i.e.*, such as are engaged, in consequence of past or present favours, to pray for their benefactors. The name was formerly given with great propriety to the inhabitants of almshouses, and, in general, to the objects of our public charities.

**BEARING-DISHES.** 420 a.

Means solid, substantial dishes, like the "portly viands" spoken of at 46 a.

**BECCO.** 318 b.

Is rendered by the commentators on our old plays a *cuckold*. The Italians generally use it for one necessary to his own disgrace, and in this sense Massinger employs it.

**BEGGING ESTATES.** 324 a.

A severe sarcasm on the avidity of the courtiers. The estates of many condemned persons were *begged* with scandalous precipitancy by the favourites of the day; and, what is worse, were justly suspected in more than one instance to have constituted the principal part of the crime for which the possessors suffered.

**BEGLEBEG.** 150 a.

Chief governor of a city.

**BENO HER BODY.** 77 b, 545 a.

To try if there be any life in it. In "The Maid's Tragedy,"

"I've heard if there be any life, but *beno*  
The body thus, and it will show itself.

**BIND.** 462 a.

"And by turns *bind* with her." This exquisite description of rural amusements is from the hand of a great master. I lament that it is so technical; but in Massinger's time this language was perfectly familiar to the audience who heard it, in a greater or less degree, in every play that came before them. A hawk is said to *bind* when she seizes her prey.

**BISOGNION.** 272 a.

A necessitous person, a beggar. In our old writers it frequently occurs as a term of contempt.—[The *Besonians* of Ancient Pistol.]

**BLACKS.** 360 b, 568 b.

Constantly used by our old writers for mourning weeds.

**BLASPHEMOUS.** 237 a.

The word was constantly thus accented by Sidney, Spenser, and others, and with strict regard to its Greek derivation.

**BLUE GOWN.** 446 b, 455 a.

The livery of Bridewell.

**BOMAN.** 446 b.

In the language of Alsatia a gallant fellow; but most probably, in this instance, a misprint for Roman, which reading is here adopted.

**BOX-KEEPER.** 422 *Dram. Pers.*

The groom-porter of a gambling-house. This important character never plays, but is seated on a box or elevated chair, where he declares the state of the game, the odds, and the success of the parties.

**BRACHES.** 58 a, 388 a, 437 b.

The *Gentleman's Recreation* says "Braches is a *mannerly* name for hound bitches," and, adds Gifford, "for all others."

**BREDA.** 391 a.

This was one of the most celebrated sieges of the time. Spinola sat down before the town on the 26th August, 1624, and it did not surrender till the 1st July, 1625. Tobacco was sold for 100 florins the lb.

**BROADSIDE (to shew).** 165 b.

Gifford adduces this as an illustration of the familiarity of our ancestors with nautical language. It is here offered with great propriety to prove that the fugitives thought themselves out of danger of pursuit—*they bore up in the wind*, which checked their course.

**BUCK.** 26 a.

To *duck* is to wash clothes by laying them on a smooth plank or stone, and beating them with a pole flattened at the sides.

**BUG-WORDS.** 407 b.

Frightful, terrific words,—in the same way as *bug* bear.

**BURSE.** 436 b.

The New Exchange, which was then full of shops, where all kinds of finery for the ladies, trinkets, ornaments, &c., were sold.

**BUTLER.** 570 a.

"Oracle Butler!" He alludes to Dr. W. Butler, a very celebrated physician of Queen Elizabeth's time.

**CALVERED SALMON.** 266 b, 482 b.

Appears to have differed very little from pickled salmon, as the directions are to "boil it in vinegar, with oil and spices."

**CANCELIER.** 462 a.

"Is when a high-flown hawk in her stooping, turneth two or three times upon the wing, to recover herself before she seizeth upon her prey."

**CANDOUR.** 183 a, 471 b.

Massinger uses *candour* in both these places as synonymous with "honour," or fairness of reputation.

**CAPITULATE.** 599 a.

To draw up articles. So Shakspeare: "The Archbishop's Grace of York, Douglas, and Mortimer,  
Capitulate against us, and are up."

**CARANZA.** 44 a, 473 a.

This man wrote a treatise on duelling, which seems to have been the *Vade Mecum* of the punctilious gallants about the Court of James I. He is frequently mentioned by Beaumont and Fletcher, and Jonson.

**CASTER.** 446 a.

"I long to *ware* the *caster*." When at a gaming-table a *setter* supposes himself to possess more money than the *caster*, it is usual for him, on putting his stake into the ring, to cry *Ware Caster!* The *caster* then declares at all under such a sum, ten, twenty, or fifty pounds, for instance; or else to place against the stakes of certain setters the corresponding sums, and cry *Ware, covered only!*

**CASTING.** 315 a.

"When the hawk will come to the lure, then give her every night *stones*, till you find her stomach good: after that, proffer her *casting*, to make her cleanse and purge her gorge."

**CAT-STICK.** 260 b.

This is what is now called a buck-stick, used by children in the game of tip-cat or kit-cat.

**CAUTELOUS.** 110 b.

This word occurs continually in the sense of wary, suspicious, over-circumspect.



- CENSURE.** 129 *a*, 249 *a*, 494 *a*, 526 *epi.*, 587 *a*, 592 *b*, 625 *epi.*, 634.  
Our ancestors used this word precisely as we do *judgment*: sometimes for a quality of the mind, sometimes for a judicial determination. [It was so used even in Congreve's time ("Old Batch," iv. 5). At page 625 Mr. Crofton Croker reads "conjure," which is meaningless.]
- CERUSES.** 493 *a*.  
Ceruse is white paint for the complexion. No one has yet been successful in procuring oil from *talc*, although many have pretended to do so, and have sold the preparations to those who desire to be "beautiful for ever."
- CHAMBERS.** 165 *a*.  
Small pieces of ordnance, such as are still fired in the Park on rejoicing days.
- CHAPINES.** 136 *a*.  
A kind of clogs with thick cork soles, which the ladies wear on their shoes when they go abroad. They are mentioned by Shakespeare, and most of our old dramatists.
- CHARMS.** 233 *a*.  
"Can charms be writ on such pure rubies." This alludes to a very old opinion that some sorts of gems (from an inherent sanctity) could not be profaned, or applied to the purposes of magic.
- CHEESE-TRENCHERS.** 568 *a*.  
Before the general introduction of books, our ancestors were careful to dole out instruction in many ways. Hangings, pictures, *trenchers*, knives, wearing apparel, everything—in a word—that was capable of containing a short sentence, was turned to account.
- CHIAUS.** 150 *a*.  
An officer in the Turkish court, who performs the duty of an usher.
- CHINING.** 608 *b*.  
To *chine* is to cut through the backbone. Mr. Crofton Croker reads "chining of the *fork*," but it is evident from what follows that the beast, not the rider, is referred to.
- CHREOKOPIA.** 561 *a*.  
Signifies the cutting off that part of a debt which arises from the interest of the sum lent.
- CHUFFS.** 78 *b*.  
Coarse unmannered clowz; at once sordid and wealthy.
- CIRCULAR.** 333 *b*.  
Full and perfect—a latinism.
- CIVIL.** 161 *a*, 427 *a*.  
*Civilis*, in Massinger, as well as in his contemporaries, alludes to the political regulations, customs, and habits of the City, as distinguished from the Court; sometimes, indeed, it takes a wider range, and comprises a degree of civilization, or moral improvement, as opposed to a state of barbarism or pure nature.
- CLEMM'D.** 205 *a*.  
To have the entrails shrunk up with hunger, so as to cling together—metaphorically, to be starved.
- COATS.** 574 *a*.  
What we now call *court-cards*.
- COLON.** 36 *b*, 293 *a*.  
The largest of the human intestines. "To satisfy colon" means to satisfy hunger. It frequently occurs in the same sense in our old poets.
- COMMODITIES.** 112 *a*.  
Wares, of which needy borrowers made what they could,—["the old masters and curious old sherry" of the usurers of the present day.]
- COME OFF.** 58 *a*.  
"Will you come off, sir?" *i.e.* Will you pay, sir! The word is used by all our old dramatic writers.
- CONCEITED.** 110 *b*.  
Facetious, witty. Abounding with *conceits*, not conceit.
- CONDUIT.** 186 *a*.  
*See* BAKEHOUSE.
- CONSTANTLY.** 248 *b*.  
"So constantly;" with such unshaken patience, such immovable resolution.
- CORSIVE.** 227 *a*, 349 *b*.  
Our old authors used *corsive* or *corrosive* indifferently, as suited the verse.
- COUNSEL.** 79 *a*, 214 *a*.  
Is used for *secrecy*.
- COUNTERFEIT GOLD THREAD.** 112 *a*.  
*See* MOMPESON.
- COURTSHIP.** 83 *a*, 85 *b*, 228 *a*, 245 *b*, 494 *a*.  
The court paid to rank, court-policy, court-breeding, the grace and elegance learned in courts.
- CRACK.** 36 *a*, 528 *b*.  
An arch, sprightly boy. The word is of constant occurrence in our old plays.
- CRINCOMES.** 483 *a*.  
Calippo's meaning is that, having already lost her nose, she is secured from one of the evils, still known among the vulgar by the name which she assigns to it.
- CRONE.** 36 *a*.  
This word, which, as Johnson says, means an old toothless ewe, is constantly used for an old woman.
- CROWD.** 591 *b*.  
Another word for *fidale*.
- CROWNS O' THE SUN.** 36 *b*, 176 *b*.  
The best kind of crown then struck. They had a star (sun) on one side.
- CRY AIM!** 105 *a*, 135 *a*, 597 *a*.  
A phrase taken from archery. "When any one had challenged another to shoot at the butts, the standers by used to cry "Aim" to encourage the shooting.
- CUPID AND DEATH.** 26 *b*.  
This is a beautiful allusion to a little poem among the *Elegies of Secundus*. The fable is very ancient.
- CULLIONS.** 469 *b*.  
Abject wretches: a term taken from the Italians, and strongly expressive of contempt.
- CURIOSITY.** 424 *a*.  
Here, as in many other passages of these plays, signifies scrupulous attention, anxiety.
- CURIOUS IMPERTINENT.** 372 *b*.  
An allusion to the title of one of Cervantes's novels, which were much read in Massinger's time.
- CURIOSUNESS.** 53 *a*, 166 *b*.  
Refined and over-scrupulous consideration of the subject.
- DAG.** 376 *a*.  
A pocket-pistol. Their introduction is mentioned by Knolles in his "History of the Turks."
- DALLIANCE.** 23 *b*.  
Hesitation, delay.

**DANGER.** 358 *b*, 453 *b*.

To be in your *danger* meant to be in your *debt*. So Portia:

"You stand within his danger, do you not?"

**DEAD-PAYS.** 57 *b*.

The collusory practices here alluded to appear not to have been unfrequent—Sir W. Davenant mentions many similar corruptions in the "war department" of his time.

**DEAF.** 613 *b*.

[Mr. Crofton Creker reads *dumb*, but the change seems required by the sense. It may, however, be the correct word, and have been used as meaning not merely muteness, but the mental state generally of what we call the "*dumb* creation." Antiochus in short may have wished that he had been born "a beast wanting *discourse of reason*."] ]

**DECIMO-SEXTO.** 49 *a*, 260 *b*.

This expression in both places applied to a page. Gifford says that no author, with whom he is acquainted, repeats himself so frequently, and with so little ceremony as Massinger.

**DECK.** 472 *b*.

"Ready in the *deck*" means in *the heap*, *the gross*. In our old poets a pack of cards is called a *deck*.

**DECLINE.** 255 *a*.

Here means to divert from their course.

**DEDUCT.** 573 *a*.

"Do not *deduct* it to days." A latinism from *deducere*, to bring it down, or reduce it to days.

**DEER OF TEN.** 340 *a*.

A deer that has ten branches to his horns, which they have at three years old.

**DEFENDED.** 482 *b*.

Forbidden, interdicted, as in the French. The word occurs in this sense in many of our old writers.

**DEFENSIBLE.** 460 *b*.

Become an object of justification rather than of shame.

**DEGREES.** 207 *b*.

Scala Gemonia. Abrupt and rugged precipices on the Aventine, where the bodies of state criminals were flung.—*See GEMONIES*.

**DEMEANS.** 284 *b*.

Here used for means, as demerits for merits. [*Qy. Demesnes*.]

**DEPART.** 136 *a*.

Depart and part were anciently synonymous. Thus Bea Jonson—

"He that *departs* with his own honesty  
For vulgar praise, does it too dearly buy."

**DEPENDENCIES.** 254 *b*.

"Masters of dependencies" were a set of needy bravoos, who undertook to ascertain the authentic grounds of a quarrel, and in some cases to settle it for the timorous or unskilful.

**DERIVE.** 603 *a*.

Verb neuter, *to come from*.—JOHNSON.

**DISCLOSE.** 258 *b*.

Constantly used by our old writers for *hatch*.

**DISSOLVE.** 90 *b*, 209 *b*.

"Dissolve this doubtful riddle." Our old writers used *dissolve* and *solve* indiscriminately; or if they made any difference it was in favour of the former.

**DISTASTE.** 52 *b*, 135 *b*, 622 *a*.

Displease. The word perpetually recurs in this sense; as also in that of *dislike*. It is so used by Congreve.

**DISTEMPERED.** 65 *b*:

Intoxicated. It is used thus in "Hamlet," and by Shirley in "The Grateful Servant."

**DIVERT.** 227 *a*.

The motives that *divert* us, *i.e.*, turn us aside from following your advice.

**DRESSER.** 46 *b*, 472 *b*.

In both these places the dresser is called the cook's drum. It was formerly customary for the cook, when dinner was ready, to knock on the dresser with his knife by way of summoning the servants to carry it into the hall. Thus Suckling—

"Just in the nick the cook knocked thrice,  
And all the waiters in a trice  
His summons did obey."

**ELENCHS.** 331 *a*.

A sophistical refutation of a position maintained by an opponent.

**EMPIRIC.** 342 *b*.

Massinger's empiric may be considered as the fruitful parent of the quack, which for the two last centuries has poisoned us in the closet and entertained us on the stage. It may be doubted whether Massinger ever fell into Molière's hands, but there is so striking a resemblance between a passage in the "Malade Imaginaire" and this before us, that it is difficult to believe the coincidence accidental.

*Tourette. Je voudrais que vous eussiez toutes les maladies que je viens de dire; que vous fussiez abandonné de tous les medecins, désespéré, à l'agonie, pour vous montrer l'excellence de mes remèdes, et l'envie que j'aurais de vous rendre service.*  
*Argan. Je vous suis obligé, monsieur, des bontés que vous avez pour moi, etc.*

**ENTRADAS.** 487 *b*.

Rents, revenues.

**EQUAL MART.** 539 *b*.

A vile translation of *in aquo Marte*, in equal fight,

**ESTRIDGE TRAIN.** 57 *b*, 263 *b*.

Ostrich tail. There is some humour in this lively apostrophe to the bird.

**EXTENDED.** 418 *b*, 453 *b*.

"This maor is extended to my use," *i.e.*, *seized*. It is a legal phrase, and occurs continually.

**EYASSES.** 315 *a*.

A young hawk newly taken out of the nest, and not able to prey for himself.

**FADGE.** 585 *a*.

To suit—to fit.

**FARCE.** 609 *b*.

To stuff—a culinary term.

**FAULT.** 126 *b*, 577 *b*.

Misfortune. That the word anciently had this meaning could be proved by many examples.

**FESTIVAL-EXCEEDINGS.** 314 *a*, 425 *a*.

At the Middle Temple an additional dish to the regular dinner is still called "Exceedings."

**FEWTERER.** 260 *b*, 314 *b*.

A name which frequently occurs in our old treatises on Hunting. He was the person who took charge of the dogs immediately under the huntsman.

**FINE-NESS.** 152 *b*.

Subtle and ingenious device. Johnson and Gifford concur in reproaching the introduction of the word *finesse* into our language as quite unnecessary.

- FLIES.** 10 *a.*  
This word is used by Ben Jonson, a close and devoted imitator of the ancients, for a domestic parasite, a familiar, &c.
- FOR.** 29 *b.*  
"But far enough *for* reaching." The word *for* occurs perpetually in these plays in the sense of *prevention*. It is so used by every writer of Massinger's age.
- FREQUENT.** 195 *a.*  
"Tis *frequent* in the city," a latinism, for 'tis currently reported in the city.
- FREQUENT** 197 *b.*  
"Frequent senate," a latinism for a "full house."
- FRIPPERY.** 425 *a.*  
An old clothes shop. The word is pure French, but occurs in most of our ancient dramatists.
- FUR.** 425 *b.*  
"Get your fur" to put under her feet while she tried on the shoes, says M. Mason. Gifford characteristically adds, "*Grande certamen!*" was not the fur a piece of undressed skin, such as is sometimes used by ladies of the present day in lieu of a shoeing horn?"
- FEELING.** 31 *b.*  
[Gifford printed *feeling*. I have made the change with some hesitation.]
- GABEL.** 326 *a.*  
This spirit of imposition is well touched on by Donne:  
— shortly, boys shall not pay  
At span-counter, or blow point, but shall pay  
*Toll* to some courtier.—Sat. iv.
- GALLERIEN.**  
A galley slave.—*French*.
- GALLIARD.** 578 *a.*  
Is described by Sir John Davies as a "swift and wandering dance with lofty turns and capriols in the air."
- GARDED ROBE.** 194 *b.*, 598 *b.*  
A laced or bordered robe.
- GAZET.** 266.  
A Venetian coin (gazetta) worth about three farthings of our money. The petty Italian courier, or written summary of intelligence was originally sold for this sum; hence it derived the name which is now common to all the newspapers of Europe.
- GEMONIES.** 207 *b.*  
The Gemonies (*Scala Gemonia*) were abrupt and rugged precipices on the Aventine, where the bodies of state criminals were flung, and whence, after they had been exposed to the insults of the rabble, they were dragged to the Tiber, which flowed at the foot of the hill.
- GENEVA PRINT.** 65 *a.*  
Alluding to the spirituous liquor so called.
- GLORIOUS.** 39 *a.*, 55 *a.*, 227 *b.*  
Vain, boastful, ostentatious, vaunting.
- GO BY!** 278 *b.*  
This is an allusion to the "Spanish Tragedy;" the constant butt of all the writers of those times, who seem to be a little uneasy, notwithstanding their scoffs at its popularity.
- GOLD AND STORE.** 296 *a.*, 446 *a.*  
This expression, which is taken from an old ballad, frequently occurs in these plays.
- GO NO LESS.** 441 *a.*, 547 *b.*  
This is a gaming phrase, and means I will not play for a smaller stake.
- GOLLS.** 443 *a.*  
A cant word for hands, or rather fists. It occurs continually in our old writers.
- GOOD.** 358 *b.*, 442 *a.*  
Luke here alludes to the mercantile sense of the word *good*, i.e. *rich*.
- GOOD FELLOWS.** 487 *b.*, 490 *a.*  
A cant name by which highwaymen and thieves have been long pleased to denominate themselves; and which has been given them, in courtesy, by others.
- GOVERNOR'S PLACE.** 7 *a.*  
From the Latin, *ne sis mihi tutor*.
- GRANSON.** 358 *a.*  
The "memorable overthrow" of Granson took place March 3rd, 1476; that of Morat, June 22nd, in the same year; and that of Nancy, January 5th, 1477. In this Charles (or, as he is here called, Charalois), Duke of Burgundy, fell, and the subtle fox of France, the politic Louis XI., shortly after seized upon the defenceless duchy.
- GREAT—wholesale.** 318 *b.*
- GREEN APRON.** 134 *a.*  
It should be observed that this colour is appropriated to the descendants of Mahomet. To "land at Tunis," or any other town professing the Mahometan religion, in a green dress at this day would place the wearer's safety in danger.
- GREGORIES.** 578 *a.*  
Gifford leaves this word unexplained. Gregorie was a famous barber and wigmaker of Massinger's day. Bishop Hall, for some similar reason, I suppose, uses *Rogersians* for false scapls.
- GUARD.** 288 *b.*  
Posture of defence.
- GYARÆ.** 625 *b.*  
Gyaros or Gyara was a small island in the Ægæan sea. Under the Romans it was used as a place of banishment, and was one of the most dreaded spots employed for that purpose.
- HAND.** 153 *b.*  
"Hand with my will" means go hand-in-hand, cooperate, with my will.
- HAWKING.** 315 *a.*  
Humanity has seldom obtained a greater triumph in the animal world than in the abolition of this most execrable pursuit, compared to which cock-fighting and bull-baiting are innocent amusements; and this not so much on account of the game killed in the open field, as of the immense number of domestic animals sacrificed to the instruction of the hawk. The blood runs cold while we peruse the calm directions of the brutal falconer to impale, tie down, fasten by the beak, break the legs and wings of living pigeons, hens, and sometimes herons, for the hourly exercise of the hawk, who was thus enabled to pull them to pieces without resistance.
- HELL.** 424 *a.*  
The *hole* was one of the wretched departments of a gaol, in which prisoners, who could not afford to pay for better accommodations, were obliged to take up their residence. The darkest part of this *hole* was called *hell*—a dungeon within a dungeon in some prisons.—See "Howard's Reports."

**HORNED MOONS.** 143 *b*.

This elegant allusion to the impress of the Turkish standards is beautifully varied in the "Knight of Malta" by Fletcher.

"And all their silver crescents then I saw,  
Like falling meteors spent, and set for ever  
Under the cross of Malta."

**HOSE.** 240 *a*, 567 *a*.

*Hose* are breeches; *pained hose* are breeches composed of small squares or panels. [Perhaps, rather, breeches with openings in the cloth where pieces of stuff of other colours were inserted.]

**HUMANITY.** 360 *a*.

Polite literature. The term is still preserved in the Scotch universities.

**HUNT'S UP.** 76 *a*.

Was a lesson on the horn, played under the windows of sportsmen, to call them up in the morning. It was probably sufficiently ostreperous, for it is frequently applied by our old writers, as in this place, to any noise or clamour of an awakening or alarming nature.

**IMP.** 165 *a*, 221 *b*, 226 *a*.

To *imp* "is to insert a feather into the wing of a hawk, or other bird, in place of one that is broken." To this practice our old writers, who seem to have been, in the language of the present day, keen sportsmen, perpetually allude. There is a passage in Tomkiss's "Albumazar" which would be admired even in the noblest scenes of Shakspeare:

How slow the day slides on I when we desire  
Time's haste, he seems to lose a match with lobsters;  
And when we wish him stay, he *imps* his wings  
With feathers plumed with thought!

**IMPOTENT.** 48 *a*, 227 *b*, 499 *a*, 617 *a*.

Wild, fierce, uncontrollable in his passions: this is a Latinism, *impotens amoris*, and is a very strong expression. Horace applies the word to Cleopatra.

**INGLES.** 443 *a*.

Bosom friends, associates.

**IPHIS.** 209 *a*.

Vide Anaxarete.

**KA ME, KA THEE!** 432 *a*.

Is a Scotch proverb, and means, indulge or serve me, and I'll serve thee in my turn. It is not uncommon in our old dramas.

**KATEXORÉN.** 471 *a*.

Supereminently—the Greek *κατέξορην*.

**KEEPER OF THE DOOR.** 184 *a*.

This was one of the thousand synonyms of a bawd or pander.

**LACHRYMÆ.** 254 *b*, 318 *b*.

Was the title of a musical work, composed by John Douland, a celebrated lutanist in the time of James I. It is alluded to in the *Knights of the burning Pestle*.

**LADY OF THE LAKE.** 397 *a*.

This is a very prominent character in *Morte Arthur*, and in many of our old romances. She seems to be the Circe of the dark ages; and is frequently mentioned by our old dramatists.

**LAMIA.** 24 *b*.

The sorceress, the bag. The word is pure Latin.

**LANCE PREZADO.** 260 *a*.

"The lowest range, and meanest officer in an army is called the lance prezado or prezado, who is the leader or governor of half a file; and therefore is called a middleman, or captain over four."—*The Soldier's Accidence*. [The lowest rank at the present time among non-commissioned officers is lance corporal.]

**LAVENDER ROBES.** 418 *a*.

Clothes just redeemed out of pawn. To lay a thing in lavender was a common phrase for pawning it.

**LAVOLTA.** 168 *a*, 243 *a*, 438 *a*, 614 *a*.

Lavolta (literally the *turn*) was a dance, originally imported with many others from Italy. It is frequently mentioned by our old writers, with whom it was a favourite; and is so graphically described by Sir John Davies, in his *Orchestra*, that all further attempts to explain it must be superfluous.

"Yet is there one, the most delightful kind,  
A lofty jumping or a leaping round,  
Where, arm-in-arm, two dancers are entwined,  
And whirl themselves in strict embracements bound."

Our countrymen, who seem to be lineally descended from Sisypheus, and who, at the end of every century, usually have their work to do over again, after proudly importing from Germany the long-exploded trash of their own nurseries, have just brought back from the same country, and with an equal degree of exultation, the well-known *lavolta* of their grandfathers under the mellifluous name of *waltz*.

**LEAGUER LAUNDRESS.** 285 *b*, 369 *a*.

Camp washerwoman. *Leaguer* is the Dutch, or rather Flemish, word for a camp; and was one of the new-fangled terms introduced from the Low Countries.

**LENT.** 159 *b*.

Massinger alludes to the custom which all good Catholics had of confessing themselves at Easter. Good Friday and Easter Sunday are almost the only two days on which the French and Italian sãdors ever think of repairing to a confessional.

**L'ENVOY.** 548 *b*, 555 *b*.

Conclusion, termination, main import.

**LEPER.** 171 *a*.

"A leper with a clap-dish (to give notice  
He is infectious)."

This explains the origin of the custom to which our old writers have such frequent allusions. The leprosy was once very common here, and the old poets seldom mention a leper without noticing at the same time his constant accompaniments, the cup and clapper. Thus Henryson—

"Thus shalt thou go begging from hous to hous  
With cuppe and clapper like a Lazarous."

The clapper was not, as some imagine, an instrument solely calculated for making a noise; it was simply the cover of the cup or dish, which the poor wretch opened and shut with a loud clap at the doors of the well-disposed.

**LETS.** 7 *a*, 61 *a*.

Impediments, obstacles.

**LIGHTLY.** 117 *a*.

Commonly, usually.

**LIME-HOUND.** 529 *a*.

The common hound.

**LIONS.** 598 *b*, 613 *b*, 618 *a*.

Cybele was often represented in a chariot drawn by lions. The old Flamen wore her "sacred image drawn thus in pomp" upon his breast. Hence his frequent references to his lions.

**LITTLE LEGS.** 506 *b*.

Slender legs seem at this time to have been considered as one of the characteristics of a fine gentleman. Jonsou expressly says so in the "Poetaster,"—"a man borne upon little legs is always a gentleman born."

**LOOKING-GLASSES.** 424 *a*.

It appears from innumerable passages in our old writers that it was customary, not only for ladies, but for gentlemen, to carry mirrors about them.

- LOTH TO DEPART.** 583 *a.*  
There was anciently both a tune and a dance of this name.
- LUDGATE.** 428 *b.*  
This prison was anciently appropriated to the freedom of the city and to clergymen. It was taken down in Nov. 1760.
- MAGNIFICENT.** 329 *b.*  
Constantly used by Massinger for *munificent*.
- MANDRAKES.** 35 *a.*  
Mandrakes have a soporific quality, and were used by the ancients when they wanted a narcotic of the most powerful kind. To this there are perpetual allusions in our old writers.
- MANKIND.** 437 *b.*  
Masculine, mannish. It sometimes carried with it the stronger sense of violent, ferocious, wicked.
- MARMOSET.** 437 *a.*  
A small monkey.
- MERMAID.** 582 *b.*  
The mermaids of the writer's time had succeeded to the sirens of the ancients, and possessed all their musical as well as seductive qualities. Mermaid also was one of the thousand cant terms which served to denote a strumpet; and to this perhaps Agatha alludes.
- MICHER.** 474 *a.*  
To mich is to lurk.
- MINERVA.** 220 *a.*  
This attachment of Donitun to Minerva is an historical fact. He chose her at an early period of his life for his protectress, multiplied her statues to a great extent, and had always a strong reliance on her favour.
- MISTRESSES.** 129 *a.*, 168 *a.*, 621 *b.*, 623 *a.*  
Servant and Mistress signified in the language of Massinger's time, a lover and the object of his affections. Let me now call the reader's attention to the exquisite melody of this speech (*Charles* in Scene v. Act 1 of "Parliament of Love, p. 168 *a.*"). Nothing is affected, nothing is inverted; plainness and simplicity are all the aids of which the poet has availed himself; yet a more perfect specimen of flowing, elegant, and rhythmical modulation is not to be found in the English language. The sprightliness, energy, and spirit, which pervade the remainder of this scene, are worthy of all praise.
- MOMPESSEON, SIR GILES.** 395 *b.*  
Was undoubtedly the prototype of Sir Giles Overreach. He and one Michel had obtained of the facile James a patent for the sole manufacturing of gold and silver thread, which they abused to the most detestable purposes. This is specially alluded to in the "Bondman." Act ii. scene 3. His character will be found in Wilson's "Life and Reign of James I." *viz anno 1601*. When the cup of his iniquities was full, and the House of Commons ordered his apprehension (3rd March, 1602), he made his escape beyond sea. On the 30th of the same month a proclamation was issued, banishing him from the king's dominions, and degrading him from knighthood. His associate, Sir Francis Michel (Justice Creed), was also degraded, fined a thousand pounds, carried on horseback through the principal streets (his face to the tail), and imprisoned for life.
- MORAT.** 358 *a.*  
*Vide* Granson.
- MUSICIANS.** 376 *b.*  
In these lines there is an allusion to another profession (of a less honourable nature), which in those days was commonly added to that of music-master.
- NANCY.** 358 *a.*  
*Vide* Granson.
- NEAT-HOUSE.** 437 *a.*  
The Neat-house was a celebrated garden and nursery near Chelsea.
- NIMMING.** 486 *a.*  
The word is pure Saxon, and means to *take*, to *seize*. It is found in all our old writers, and, indeed, is still in use as a cant term for stealing.
- NO CUNNING QUEAN.** 100 *b.*  
In our author's time, as is justly observed by Warburton, "the negative, in common speech, was used ironically to express the excess of a thing."
- OIL OF ANGELS.** 82 *a.*  
It may be just necessary to observe that this is a pleasant allusion to the gold coin of that name.
- OLYMPUS.** 411 *a.*  
Either Massinger or his transcriber has mistaken Olympus for Parnassus. It may be the former; for in trusting to their memory, such slips are not unusual in our old writers, who were, indeed, little solicitous of accuracy in these trivial matters.
- ORC.** 220 *b.*  
A fabulous sea monster, depicted on most of the charts of Massinger's time. The whale of our old romances.
- OUT.** 170 *b.*  
"I'll not out for a second."  
[It is evident from the sequel that Novall *did* take up the bet, the Edinburgh Reviewers maintained that the word "not" in this line should have been omitted. Gifford successfully defended his reading, and proved beyond all question that the meaning of "I'll not out" was "I'll not be found wanting."]
- OUTCRY.** 429 *a.*, 596 *b.*  
A public auction. [The word is still used by our countrymen in India.]
- OWE.** 5 *a.*, 108 *a.*, 141 *b.*  
To *own*.  
"No sound that the earth owes."—*Tempest*.
- PACKING.** 239 *b.*  
Insidious contivance; iniquitous collusion. The word is thus used by Shakspeare, and others, [and the term is preserved in "packing a jury."]
- PADDER.** 396 *b.*  
A lurker about the highways, a foot-pad.
- PANTOFFLE.** 49 *a.*  
"Ere I was sworn to the pantoffle" means before I was taken from my first menial service, and made attendant on a lady.
- PARALLEL.** 88 *b.*  
"And, but herself, admits no parallel."  
This idea, in the much ridiculed form of  
"None but himself can be his parallel,"  
is familiar to every one as a verse of Theobald's; but not only is it found in Massinger, but twenty instances of it could be adduced from his contemporaries.
- PARALLELS.** 258 *b.*  
The word seems to be used here for *radii*. Other writers of the time fell into the same error.
- PARTED.** 11 *b.*, 244 *b.*  
Favoured, or endowed, with a part, or parts.
- PARTHIAN.** 597 *b.*  
Mr. Crofton Croker prints *Parthenon*.

PASH. 10 *b*.

To strike a thing with such force as to crush it to pieces.

PASSIONATE. 226 *a*, 575 *b*.

Plaintive, full of sorrow, deeply affected.

PASSION. 561 *a*, 593 *b*.

Pathetic speech, or exclamation.

PASTRY FORTIFICATIONS. 391 *a*.

The cooks of Elizabeth and James took great pride in the construction of these fortifications; [and in later days Gibraltar and Seringapatam were similarly commemorated. The earth-works of Todeben were not picturesque enough for the purpose.]

PATCH. 9 *b*, 406 *b*, 419 *a*.

Patch was the cant name of a fool kept by Cardinal Wolsey; and who has had the honour of transmitting his appellation to a very numerous body of descendants; he being "a notable fool in his time."

PEEVISH. 20 *b*.

Foolish. Mrs. Quickly says of her fellow servant, "His worst fault is that he is given to prayer: he is something *peevish* that way." "Your peevishness," 415 *b*, means *you*—his daughter.

PESCARA. 70 *b*.

The Marquis was indeed a "great soldier," a fortunate commander, an able negotiator, in a word one of the chief ornaments of a period which abounded in extraordinary characters.

PIG-SCONCE. 438 *a*.

A heavy, dull-pated fellow.

PLACE. 462 *a*, 557 *a*.

In falconry means the greatest elevation which a bird of prey attains to its flight. This lends additional force to Shakspeare's line—

"A falcon towering in his pride of *place*."

PLEURISY OF GOODNESS. 55 *a*.

Superabundance of goodness.

PLYMOUTH CLOAK. 388 *a*.

An old expression for a *cuagel*. Davenant says—

"Whose cloak, at Plymouth sput, was crab-tree wood."

POET. 620 *b*.

"The poet wrote truth"—Mr. Crofton Croker prints *post*.

POOR JOHN. 133 *b*, 298 *b*.

Hake dried and salted.

PORTER'S LODGE. 82 *b*, 390 *a*.

The porter's lodge in great houses was the usual place of punishment for the domestics.

PORTS. 2 *b*, 163 *a*.

The *gates* of a city, as in Edinburgh.

POSSESS. 235 *b*.

Acquaint, inform. In this sense the word perpetually occurs in our old writers.

POWER OF THINGS. 195 *b*.

A Latioism—that now sways the world, *verum potestas*.

PRACTICE. 187 *a*, 252 *a*.

Insidious trick, stratagem, artifice.

PREST. 440 *b*.

Ready, prepared.

PREVENT. 139 *b*, 406 *a*, 416 *a*, 563 *b*.

Anticipate, from the Latin. It is so used in the Psalms, "Mine eyes *prevent* the night-watches."

PROVANT SWORD. 254 *b*.

A plain, unornamented sword, such as the army is supplied with.

PUT ON. 185 *b*, 405 *b*, 452 *b*.

Be covered; a frequent expression in these plays.

PUT ON YOUR SPIRITS. 353 *b*.

Rouse, animate them.

QUALITY. 197 *b*, 292 *b*, 376 *b*, 630.

Used in a general sense for any occupation, calling, or condition of life, but more peculiarly appropriated by our old writers to that of a player.

QUELLIO RUFFS. 449 *b*.

Ruffs for the neck, a corruption of *cuello*.

QUIRPO. 363 *a*.

Quirpo (*cuerpo*) is an undress. The Spaniards, from whom we borrowed the word, apply it to a person in a light jacket, without his cabot or cloak; but our old dramatists, who use the expression upon all occasions, mean by it any state from nakedness to imperfect clothing. Gifford could not satisfy himself as to the meaning of *Gallyfoist* and *Bullion* in this passage.

RAGGED CLIFFS. 188 *a*.

This expressive epithet is from Scripture. "To go into the clefts of the rocks, and into the tops of the ragged rocks."—*Isaiah* ii. 21. Massinger is frequently indebted to this source.

RAM ALLEY. 399 *a*.

Ram Alley is one of the avenues into the Temple from Fleet Street. The stink from its cook-shops is spoken of by Barrey in his comedy (1611).

REMARKABLE. 43 *b*.

Had in Massinger's time a more dignified sound, and a more appropriate meaning than it bears at present. With him it constantly stands for surprising, highly striking, or observable in an uncommon degree.

REMEMBER. 122 *b*, 172 *b*, 472 *a*.

Is used for *cause to remember*, put in mind of.

RESOLVED. 77 *a*, 318 *a*.

*Convinced*. Thus Shakspeare—

"By heavens! I am *resolved*

That Clifford's manhood lies upon his tongue."

REST ON IT. 103 *a*.

Fixed, determined on it. Taken from the gaming-table.

RIDE. 437 *b*.

"I can but ride"—*i.e.*, I know the worst of my punishment; I can but be carted for a strumpet.

RIVO. 145 *b*.

This interjection is frequently introduced by our old poets, and generally as an incitement to boisterous mirth and revelry.

ROARER. 139 *a*.

A cant term for what we now call a blusterer, or bully.

ROSES. 425 *a*, 449 *b*.

These were not the flowers of that name, but knots of ribands to be fixed on the shoes. They were of preposterous size, and extremely dear.

ROUSE. 65 *b*, III *a*.

A *rouse* was a large glass in which a health was given, the drinking of which by the rest of the company formed a *carouse*.

SACRED. 344 *b*.

Theodosius alludes to the Latin word *sacer*.

## ST. MARTIN'S. 445 a.

The parish of St. Martin appears, from the old histories of London, to have been distinguished successively for a sanctuary, a hridewell, a spittle, and an almshouse. Which of them was to be driven from the mind of Mistress Shave'em by the full tide of prosperity which is here anticipated, must be left to the sagacity of the reader.

## SANZACKE. 150 a.

Governor of a city.

## SCARABS. 78 b.

Beetles.

## SCARLET. 428 a.

"Or they will ne'er wear scarlet," *i.e.*, never rise to city honours. Our old writers have innumerable allusions to the *scarlet* gowns of the mayors and aldermen of London.

## SCOTOMY. 579 b.

From the Greek; a dizziness or swimming in the head.

## SEEK TO. 62 a, 290 a.

To supplicate, entreat, have earnest recourse to. Thus in 2 Chron. xvi. 12, we read, "And Asa was diseased in his feet, yet in his disease he sought not to the Lord, but to his physicians."

## SEISACTHEIA. 561 a.

*Σεισάκθεια*, *i.e.*, a shaking off a burthen; metaphorically an abolition of debt.

## SERVANT. 52 a, 168 a, 621 b, 623 a.

*Vide* Mistress.

## SHADOWS. 46 a.

It was considered, Plutarch says, as a mark of politeness, to let an invited guest know that he was at liberty to bring a friend or two with him; a permission that was, however, sometimes abused. These friends the Romans called *shadows* (*umbrae*), a term which Massinger has very happily explained.

## SHAPE. 131 a, 178 a, 207 a, 209 a, 337 b, 603 b, 607 a.

Dress, habit—derived from the phraseology of the theatre.

## SHEW WATER. 253 a.

Shew water, to clear his sight. This was a proverbial periphrasis for a bribe, which, in Massinger's days, was found to be the only collyrium for the eyes of a courtier.

## SIEGE. 462 a.

"*Horn at siege* is when you find a bern standing by the water side watching for prey or the like."

## SKILLS NOT. 65 b, 192 a, 194 a, 615 a.

Matters not, signifies not.

## SLEEPS MOST AN END. 506 a.

Almost perpetually—without intermission.

## SLEEP ON EITHER EAR. 466 a.

This idea is derived from Terence, "*in aurem utramvis dormire*," and means to sleep soundly, free from care.

## SORT 20 b.

"*Sort of rogues*," a set, or pack of rogues. Of constant recurrence in our old writers.

## SPITTLE. 309 b, 369 b, 437 b.

The earlier editors in each instance changed this word to *Spital*; but our old writers carefully distinguished between the two. With them, a hospital, or spital, signified a charitable institution for the advantage of poor, infirm, and aged persons, an almshouse

in short; while *Spittles* were mere leazarhouses, receptacles for wretches in the leprosy, and other loathsome diseases, the consequence of debauchery and vice. [Thus Ancient Pistol, "News have I that my Doll is dead i' the *Spittle* of malady of France."]

## SQUIRE O' DAMES. 183 b, 323 a.

This honourable term was degraded by our old dramatists to mean a pander.

## START-UP. 315 a.

A coarse kind of half boot or spatterdash with thick soles; the *paro* of the ancients,

## STATE. 102 a, 251 a.

The *state* was a raised platform, on which was placed a chair with a canopy over it. The word occurs perpetually in our old writers. It is used by Dryden, but seems to have been growing obsolete while he was writing; in the first edition of Mac Fleckno, the monarch is placed on a *state*: in the subsequent ones he is seated, like his fellow kings, on a *throne*: it occurs also, and I believe for the last time, in Swift: "As she affected not the grandeur of a *state* with a canopy, she thought there was no offence in an elbow chair."—*Hist. of John Bull*, c. 1.

## STATES. 247 a.

Statesmen, men of power, &c., a common acceptation of the word.

## STONES. 315 a.

*Vide* Casting.

## STOOLS, TO BRING WITH ONE, 50 b, 266 b.

The singular custom of uninvited or unexpected guests bringing seats with them, is frequently noticed by the writers of Massinger's time. [In the army at this day "camp fashion" means that the guest should bring not chair only, but plate, knife, fork, spoon, and glass likewise.]

## STRANGELY GUARDED. 340 b.

Perhaps this ought to be *strongly* guarded.

## STRENGTHS. 155 b, 164 b, 339 b.

Castles, strong places, and, metaphorically, defences.

## STRIKER. 58 a.

A striker is a wench. The word occurs again in the "Parliament of Love."

## SUPPLANT. 154 b.

To trip up, to overthrow; a Latinism.

## SWEATING SICKNESS. 58 a.

This alludes to a species of plague (*sudor anglicus*) peculiar, the physicians say, to this country, where it made dreadful ravages in the 16th century. It is frequently mentioned by our old writers.

## SWORN SERVANTS. 204 b.

In Massinger's time the attendants of the great, who maintained them in considerable numbers, took an oath of fidelity on their entering into service.

## TAILORS. 381 b.

Our old writers abound in allusion to the quantity of bread devoured by tailors.

## TAINT. 184 a.

To break, in a derogatory sense. It is used in the same way in "Every Man out of his Humour."

## TAKE UP. 228 a, 317 b.

Stop, check yourself. [*Shut up*, in the slang of 1868.]

## TALL. 32 b, 46 b.

*Tall*, in the language of our old writers, meant stout, or, rather, bold and fearless; but they abused the word (of which they seem fond) in a great variety of senses. A *tall man* of his hands, was a great fighter; a *tall man* of his tongue, a licentious speaker; and a *tall treacherman*, a hearty feeder.

**TAMIN.** 403 *b*.

A coarse linsey-woolsey stuff, still worn by the poor of this country, under the name of *tammy*, or, rather, *tammy*; a corruption, I suppose, of *clausine*, Fr., which has the same meaning.

**THING OF THINGS.** III *b*.

A literal translation of *Ens Entium*.

**TIMARIOTS.** 284 *a*.

The Turkish Cavalry, a sort of feudal yeomanry, who hold their lands on condition of service.

**TOKEN.** 389 *a*, 447 *b*.

During the reign of Elizabeth, and down to Charles II., very little copper money was coined. For the convenience of the public, tradesmen were permitted to strike *tokens*, as they were called. The value generally was about one farthing.

**TRILLIBUBS.** 578 *b*.

A cant word for anything of a trifling nature.

**TRIBE.** 266 *b*.

A tripe shop. To "carry my own stool" is explained elsewhere.

**UNCIVIL.** 373 *b*.

Unacquainted with the usages and customs of *civil*, or municipal life.

**UNEQUAL.** 348 *b*.

Unjust.

**UNTAPPICE.** 511 *a*.

To discover one's self. A hunting frame for turning the game out of a bag, or driving it out of a cover.

**USES.** 254 *b*, 335 *a*.

An expression adopted by our old dramatists from the Puritans, who usually divided their discourses into *doctrines* and *uses*. By the former they meant the explanation of their subject; and by the latter the practical inferences drawn from it.

**VARLETS.** 381 *a*.

So our old writers call the sheriff's officers.

**VIRBIUS.** 209 *a*.

The name given to Hippolytus, after he was restored to life by Æsculapius. He was so called, say the critics, "quod inter viros bis fuerit."

**VOLEY.** 304 *b*.

"What we spake on the voley," a literal translation of the French phrase *à la volée*, which signifies at random, or inconsiderately. [The word is preserved in the technical language of the racquet-court.]

**VOTES.** 484 *b*.

Prayers. I do not know who led the way to this pedantic adoption of the Latin word (*votum*), but I find it in Jonson, and in others before his time.

**VAPPA.** 614 *a*.

Palled wine that has lost its strength (Latin).

**WAISTCOATEER.** 437 *a*.

It appears from innumerable passages in our old plays that *waistcoater* was a cant term for a strumpet of the lowest kind; probably given to them from their usually appearing, either through choice or necessity, in a succinct habit.

**WHERE.** 168 *b*, 354 *a*, 389 *a*, 496 *a*, 525 *a*, 567 *a*.

Constantly used for *whereas*.

**WHILE.** 219 *b*.

Until; a very common acceptance of the word in our old writers.

**WHITING MOP.** 482 *b*.

A young whiting. Pattenham says "We call little fishes that be not come to their full growth moppes, as whiting moppes, gurnard moppes, &c."

**WITNESS.** 333 *a*.

The puritan ward for sponsor.

**WORK OF GRACE.** 152 *b*.

This is a reverential description of the elevation of the host; and could only be written by a man on whom that awful act of pious daring had made a deep and lasting impression.

**WREAK.** 135 *a*.

To revenge. So Spenser:

"Another's wrongs to *wreak* upon thyself."

**YAW.** 510 *b*.

*Yaw* is that unsteady motion which a ship makes in a great swell, when in steering she inclines to the right or left of her course.

**YELLOW.** 87 *a*.

"I should wear yellow breeches." Be jealous; yellow, with our old poets, being the livery of jealousy; probably because it was that of Hymen.

**ZANY.** 557 *b*.

To imitate. So Lovelace:

"As I have seen an arrogant baboon  
With a small piece of glass *zany* the sun."





## VERY IMPORTANT NEW BOOKS. Special List for 1872.

\* \* \* NOTE.—In order to ensure the correct delivery of the actual Works or Particular Editions specified in this List, the Name of the Publisher SHOULD BE DISTINCTLY GIVEN. Stamps or a Post-Office Order may be remitted direct to the Publisher, who will forward per return.

When "DIRECT application" is requested, the Trade will please communicate with Mr. Hotten.

---

### A Splendid New Gift-Book.

The uncertain and evanescent character of all books illustrated by Photography is so well known, that it was thought a Gathering of our finest Modern Paintings, engraved upon Steel in the highest style of art, would form an acceptable Gift-Book for the coming festive season.

### BEAUTIFUL PICTURES BY BRITISH ARTISTS.

A Gathering of Favourites from our Picture Galleries, 1800—1870. Including examples by WILKIE, CONSTABLE, J. M. W. TURNER, MULREADY, SIR EDWIN LANDSEER, MACLISE, LESLIE, E. M. WARD, FRITH, JOHN GILBERT, ANSDALL, MARCUS STONE, SIR NOEL PATON, EYRE CROWE, O'NEIL, FAED, MADOX BROWN. All Engraved in the highest style of Art by the most Eminent English Engravers. Edited, with Notices of the Artists, by SYDNEY ARMYTAGE, M.A. The whole forming a Magnificent Volume, in imperial 4to, bound in Byzantine cloth gilt, 21s.

\* \* \* The value of the Paintings here indelibly reflected by the engraver's art is estimated at £50,000. IT IS AN ART BOOK FOR ALL TIME.

---

### AARON PENLEY'S SKETCHING IN WATER COLOURS. 21s.

By the Author of "The English School of Painting in Water-Colours," &c. ILLUSTRATED WITH TWENTY-ONE BEAUTIFUL CHROMO-LITHOGRAPHS, produced with the utmost care to resemble original WATER-COLOUR DRAWINGS. Small folio, the text tastefully printed, in handsome binding, gilt edges, suitable for the Drawing-room table, price 21s.

\* \* \* It has long been felt that the magnificent work of the great English master of Painting in Water-colours, published at £4 4s., was too dear for general circulation. The above embodies all the instructions of the distinguished author, with Twenty-one beautiful Specimens of Water-colour Painting. IT IS A MOST CHARMING PRESENT FOR A YOUNG LADY.

---

### The Famous "Fraser" Portraits.

### THE "MACLISE GALLERY" OF ILLUSTRIOUS LITERARY

PORTRAITS, Drawn and Engraved by the late DANIEL MACLISE, R.A. With Letterpress Descriptions by the late WILLIAM MAGINN, "The Doctor." Now first issued in a complete form, from the Original Plates, &c. 4to, nearly 400 pages. An elegant and most interesting volume.

\* \* \* "What a truly charming book of pictures and prose, the quintessence, as it were, of Maclise and Maginn, giving the very form and pressure of their literary time, would this century of illustrious characters make"—*Notes and Queries*, March 11, 1871.

---

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

---

## Very Important New Books.

---

### A truly Magnificent Work.

**"LIVES OF THE SAINTS."** Enriched with 51 exquisite Full-page Miniatures, in Gold and Colours. Every page of the Text within Engraved Borders of Beautiful Design. In thick 4to, sumptuously printed, and bound in silk velvet, enriched with gold, preserved in a case, £7 7s. ; in morocco, extra gilt, inlaid, £10 15s.

**THIS VERY IMPORTANT WORK**, commenced three years since, has at length been completed, and fully justifies the high expectations formed of it during its progress through the press. Taking the text of the Rev. Alban Butler as his guide, the Editor has, wherever practicable, carefully verified the references of that eminent divine. The delicacy and finish of the beautiful miniatures have never before been approached in any similar work in this country. They exhibit a beauty and exquisite softness of colour which have hitherto only been realised by the most expensive miniature paintings. The work must be seen to be appreciated, as it is like no other of the kind. The preparation has been so costly and slow, that the book is never likely to decrease in value.

---

### A very Splendid Volume.

**SAINT URSULA, Princess of Britain, and her Companions.**

With 25 Full-page 4to Illuminated Miniatures from the Pictures of Cologne, and exquisitely designed Woodcut Borders. In crown 4to, beautifully bound in silk and gold, £3 15s.

\* \* THE FINEST BOOK-PAINTINGS OF THE KIND EVER PUBLISHED. THE ARTIST OBTAINED THE GOLD PRIZE AT THE PARIS EXPOSITION.

**THE BOOK MUST BE SEEN TO BE APPRECIATED.** The Illustrations are exact reproductions of the exquisite paintings of the Van Eyck school, and in finish and beauty are far above any similar book-paintings issued in this country. As the preparation of the work has been so costly and slow, it is never likely to decrease in value.

---

### Exquisite Miniatures and Illuminations.

**"GOLDEN VERSES FROM THE NEW TESTAMENT."**

With 50 Illuminations and Miniatures from celebrated Missals and Books of Hours of the 14th and 15th Centuries, in Gold and Colours; The Text very beautifully printed in Letters of Gold on fine Ivory Paper. 4to, in a handsome cloth case with silk ribbons, 30s. ; or bound in a volume, morocco, gilt edges, £2 5s.

---

**ALBERT DURER'S "LITTLE PASSION,"** as Engraved by the distinguished Artist in 1509-10; consisting of 37 inimitable Designs upon Wood. With a Survey of Durer's Works by W. C. PRIME. Royal 4to. The Illustrations in exquisite facsimile, emblematic binding, 25s.

\* \* Only 100 copies of this beautiful book were printed.

---

**BRUNET'S MANUEL DU LIBRAIRE.** 5 vols. royal 8vo, half morocco, top edge gilt, 25s. only.

---

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

---

**CURIOSITIES OF LONDON.** Exhibiting the most Rare and Remarkable Objects of Interest in the Metropolis; with nearly Sixty Years' Personal Recollections. By JOHN TIMBS, F.S.A. New Edition, Corrected and Enlarged, 21s.

\* \* \* "A most valuable and interesting work, and a mine of information to all who desire any particulars about London, past and present. It contains nearly 1,000 closely printed pages."



BOW CHURCH AND CHEAPSIDE, 1750.

---

**LONDON CHARACTERS: The Humour, Pathos, and Peculiarities of London Life.** By HENRY MAYHEW (Author of "London Labour and the London Poor)," and other Writers. With upwards of 70 Characteristic Illustrations of London Life. Crown 8vo, 480 pages, 7s. 6d.

---

**KNIGHT'S (Charles) PICTORIAL HISTORY OF LONDON, Ancient and Modern.** With nearly 700 Engravings of Buildings, Antiquities, Costumes, Remarkable Characters, Curiosities, &c., &c. 6 vols. imp. 8vo, bound in 3, cloth neat, 35s.

\* \* \* *The most delightful book ever written about Old and Modern London. It is a perfect mine of information, and should be in every English Library. If looked at from the point of cheapness alone, the work is a perfect marvel, containing as it does more than 2,500 large and handsomely printed pages, crowded with pictures.*

---

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

---

**THE HISTORY OF ADVERTISING, in all Ages and Countries.** A Companion to the "HISTORY OF SIGNBOARDS." With many very amusing Anecdotes and Examples of Successful Advertisers. By MESSRS. LARWOOD and HOTTEN. [In preparation.]

---

**MARY HOLLIS: A Romance of the Days of Charles II. and William Prince of Orange.** From the Dutch of H. J. SCHIMMEL, "the Sir Walter Scott of Holland." 3 vols. cr. 8vo, £1 11s. 6d.

\*.\* This novel relates to one of the most interesting periods of our history. It has created the greatest excitement on the Continent, where it quickly passed through several editions. It is now translated from the Dutch with the assistance of the author.

---

New Series of Illustrated Humorous Novels.

1. **THE STORY OF A HONEYMOON.** By CHAS. H. ROSS and AMBROSE CLARKE. With numerous Illustrations, crown 8vo, cloth gilt, 6s.

\*.\* An inimitable story of the adventures and troubles of a newly-married couple. Not unlike Mr. Burnand's "Happy Thoughts."

---

2. **CENT. PER CENT: A Story written upon a Bill Stamp.** By BLANCHARD JERROLD. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, cloth gilt, 6s.

\*.\* A capital novel, "intended not only for City readers, but for all interested in money matters."—*Athenæum*.

---

**MELCHIOR GORLES.** By HENRY AITCHENBIE. 3 vols. 8vo, £1 11s. 6d.

\*.\* The New Novel, illustrative of "Mesmeric Influence," or whatever else we may choose to term that strange power which some persons exercise over others.

---

**YANKEE DROLLERIES.** Edited by GEORGE AUGUSTUS SALA. Containing ARTEMUS WARD, BIGLOW PAPERS, ORPHEUS, C. KERR, MAJOR JACK DOWNING, and NASBY PAPERS. One of the Cheapest Books ever published. New Edition, on toned paper, cloth extra, 700 pages, 3s. 6d.

---

**MORE YANKEE DROLLERIES.** A Second Series of Celebrated Works by the best American Humorists. ARTEMUS WARD'S TRAVELS; HANS BREITMANN; PROFESSOR AT THE BREAKFAST-TABLE; BIGLOW PAPERS, Part II.; JOSH BILLINGS. Introduction by G. A. SALA. Cr. 8vo, 700 pages, cloth extra, 3s. 6d.

---

**Third Supply of YANKEE DROLLERIES.** The best recent Works of American Humorists. A. WARD'S FENIANS, MARK TWAIN, AUTOCRAT OF THE BREAKFAST TABLE, BRET HARTE, INNOCENTS ABROAD. Introduction by G. A. SALA. Crown 8vo, 700 pages, cloth extra, 3s. 6d.

\*.\* An entirely new gathering of Transatlantic humour. Fourteen thousand copies have been sold of the first and second series.

---

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

GEORGE COLMAN'S HUMOROUS WORKS.



**BROAD GRINS.** *My Nightgown and Slippers, and other Humorous Works, Prose and Poetical,* of GEORGE COLMAN the Younger. Now first collected, with Life and Anecdotes of the Author, by GEORGE B. BUCKSTONE. Crown 8vo, 500 pages, 7s. 6d.

\*\*\* Admirers of genuine old English wit and humour—irresistible and always fresh—will be delighted with the collected edition of George Colman's humorous work. As a wit, he has had no equal in our time; and a man with a tithes of his ability could, at the present day, make the fortune of any one of our so-called "comic journals," and bankrupt the rest.

Are you Engaged? If so, procure  
**ADVICE TO PARTIES ABOUT  
TO MARRY.** A Series of Instructions in Jest and Earnest. By the

Hon. HUGH ROWLEY. With Humorous Illustrations. Price 3s. 6d., elegantly bound.

\*\*\* Before taking the "awful plunge" be sure to consult this little work. If it is not a guarantee against life-long misery, it will at least be found of great assistance in selecting a partner for life.

**SEYMOUR'S SKETCHES.** *A Companion Volume to "Leech's Pictures."* The Book of Cockney Sports, Whims, and Oddities. Nearly 200 highly amusing Illustrations. Oblong 4to, a handsome volume, half morocco, price 12s.

\*\*\* A re-issue of the famous pictorial comicalities which were so popular thirty years ago. The volume is admirably adapted for a table-book, and the pictures will doubtless again meet with that popularity which was extended towards them when the artist projected with Mr. Dickens the famous "Pickwick Papers."

**THE GENIAL SHOWMAN ; or,**  
*Adventures with Artemus Ward,*  
and the Story of his Life. By E. P. HINGSTON, companion of Artemus Ward during the latter's Adventures. Cheap and popular Edition, cr. 8vo, illustrated by Brunton, 7s. 6d.

\*\*\* This is a most interesting work. It gives Sketches of Show-Life in the Far West, on the Pacific Coast, among the Mines of California, in Salt Lake City, and across the Rocky Mountains; including chapters descriptive of Artemus Ward's visit to England.



JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

Very Important New Books.

## Capital Shilling Books.

**BISMARCK: The Story of his Career, told for Popular Reading.** By Mr. GEO. BULLEN, of the British Museum. 1s.

\* \* \* An admirable account of the "Man of Blood and Iron"; giving numerous very characteristic anecdotes.

**THE CONSCRIPT: A Story of the French and German War of 1813.** By MM. ERCKMANN-CHATRIAN. 1s.

\* \* \* The only unabridged English translation published.

**WATERLOO. A Story of the War of 1814.** By MM. ERCKMANN-CHATRIAN. The only unabridged translation. 1s.

**KILLED AT SAARBRÜCK: An Englishman's Adventures during the War.** By EDWARD LEGGE, Correspondent at the Seat of War. Cloth, 2s. 6d.; paper, 1s.

**NEVER CAUGHT: The thrilling Narrative of a Blockade Runner during the American War.** 1s.

**CHIPS FROM A ROUGH LOG.** Amusing Account of a Voyage to the Antipodss. 1s.

**THACKERAY, the Humourist and Man of Letters.** A Story of his Life. By the Author of the "Life of Dickens." 1s.

**HOWARD PAUL'S New Story Book, Lord BYRON in LOVE,** &c. 1s.

**MYSTERY OF MR. E. DROOD.** A delightful Adaptation. By ORPHEUS C. KERR. 1s.

**POLICEMAN Y: His Opinions on War and the Millingitary.** With Illustrations by SODEN. Cloth, 2s. 6d.; paper, 1s.

\* \* \* Readers of Thackeray's "Policeman X Ballads" will be much amused with the "Opinions" of his brother officer, "Policeman Y."

**BIGLOW PAPERS.** By J. R. LOWELL. The best and fullest edition of these Humorous and very Clever Verses. 1s.

**ORPHEUS C. KERR [Office-Seeker] PAPERS.** By R. S. NEWELL. A most mirth-provoking work. 1s.

**JOSH BILLINGS: His Book of Sayings.** Exceedingly droll, and of world-wide reputation. 1s.

**VERE VEREKER'S VENGEANCE.** By TOM HOOD. A delightful piece of humour. Idiotically illustrated by BRUNTON. 1s.

**WIT AND HUMOUR.** Verses by O. W. HOLMES, Author of the "Autocrat of the Breakfast Table." 1s.

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

THE STANDARD EDITION.

**ROBINSON CRUSOE.** Profusely Illustrated by ERNEST GRISET. Edited, with a New Account of the Origin of Robinson Crusoe, by WILLIAM LEE, Esq. Crown 8vo, 5s.

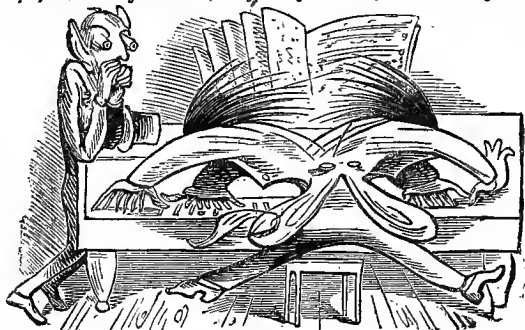
\*.\* This edition deserves special attention from the fact that it is the only correct one that has been printed since the time of Defoe. By the kindness of Mr. Lee a copy of the rare and valuable original, in three vols., was deposited with the printers during the progress of the work, and all those alterations and blunders which have been discovered in every recent edition are in this case avoided. There is no living artist better adapted to the task of illustrating Crusoe than Ernest Griset.

**LEGENDS OF SAVAGE LIFE.** By JAMES GREENWOOD, the famous Author of "A Night in a Workhouse." With 36 inimitably droll Illustrations, drawn and coloured by ERNEST GRISET, the "English Gustave Doré." 4to, coloured, 7s. 6d.; plain, 5s.

\*.\* The pictures are among the most surprising which have come from this artist's pencil. "A Munchausen sort of book. The drawings by M. Griet are very powerful and eccentric."—*Saturday Review*.

Walk up! Walk up! and see the  
**FOOL'S PARADISE**; with the Many Wonderful Adventures there, as seen in the strange, surprising  
**PEEP-SHOW OF PROFESSOR WOLLEY COBBLE,**  
Rare Showman these Five-and-Twenty Years.

*N.B.—Money Returned if the Performance not Approved of. Private Parties attended on the Shortest Notice.*  
Crown 4to, with nearly 200 immensely funny Pictures, all beautifully Coloured.



THE PROFESSOR'S LITTLE MUSIC LESSON.

\*.\* One of the drollest, most comical books ever published.

**THE HATCHET-THROWERS.** With Thirty-six Illustrations, coloured after the inimitably grotesque Drawings of ERNEST GRISET. 4to, cloth gilt, 7s. 6d.; plates uncoloured, 5s.

\*.\* Comprises the astonishing adventures of Three Ancient Mariners, the Brothers Brass of Bristol, Mr. Corker, and Mungo Midge.

JOHN CAMDEN HOTEL, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

### WORKS BY BRET HARTE.

WIDELY KNOWN FOR THEIR EXQUISITE PATHOS AND DELIGHTFUL HUMOUR.

☞ BLACKWOOD'S MAGAZINE goes into raptures over this Author, and gives page after page to prove that he is a literary star of undoubted brilliancy.

1. **LUCK OF ROARING CAMP, and other Stories.** By BRET HARTE. Crown 8vo, toned paper, 3s. 6d.; a paper edition, 1s.

\* \* \* The "Saturday Review" devoted three columns to the praise of these marvelous stories. "Chambers's Journal" gives several pages under the heading, "A New Transatlantic Genius." The "Spectator" is delighted with this new author; and readers are everywhere asking for his books.

2. **THAT HEATHEN CHINEE, and other Humorous Poems.** By BRET HARTE. Cloth, very neat, 2s. 6d.; paper, 1s. 6d.

\* \* \* An entirely new style of humour. Since the publication of these poems in this country, extracts from them have been copied and re-copied into every newspaper throughout the country, giving the public an infinity of delight.

3. **SENSATION NOVELS.** Condensed by BRET HARTE. Price 2s. 6d., cloth, neat; or in paper, 1s. 6d.

\* \* \* A most enjoyable book. Here are the titles of some of the "Sensation Novels":  
SELINA SEDILIA: by Miss M. E. B-d-d-n and Mrs. H-d-y W-d. FANTINE: after the French of Victor Hugo. TREENCE DRUVILLE: by Ch-l-s L-v-r. THE DWELLER ON THE THRESHOLD: by Sir Ed-d L-t-t-n B-lw-r. THE NINETY-NINE GUARDSMEN: by Al-x-a-d-r D-m-s. MR. MIDSHIPMAN BREEZY, A Naval Officer: by Captain M-rt-y-t, R.N. GUY HEAVYSTONE; or, "ENTIRE:" A Muscular Novel: by the Author of "Sword and Gun." THE HAUNTED MAN: A Christmas Story: by Ch-r-s D-e-k-ns. MARY MCGILLUP: A Southern Novel: after Belle Boyd. MISS MIX: by Ch-l-tte Br-ntë. NO TITLE: by W-lk-e C-l-l-ns.

4. **LOTHAW: or, The Adventures of a Young Gentleman in Search of a Religion.** By Mr. BENJAMINS (Bret Harte). Price 6d. Curiously Illustrated.

\* \* \* A most mirth-making little volume. Readers of a recent popular novel will enjoy it with considerable relish. It is so droll, so entirely new, that it cannot fail to amuse.

5. **Illustrated Edition of THAT HEATHEN CHINEE, and Poems.** By BRET HARTE. With "That Heathen Chinee" set to Music by STEPHEN TUCKER, Author of "Beautiful Isle of the Sea." Cloth, very neat, 3s. 6d.

\* \* \* These are the Illustrations which have so tickled our American cousins. There's a sort of "kick-up-your-heels" delight about them. In a word, they're immense!

6. **EAST AND WEST.** The New Volume of Verse. By BRET HARTE, Author of "That Heathen Chinee." Cloth, very neat, 2s. 6d.; or in paper, 1s. 6d.

\* \* \* Readers who found pleasure in reading this Author's first books will not be disappointed with this new work.

COMPANION TO BRET HARTE'S "HEATHEN CHINEE."

- LITTLE BREECHES, and other Pieces, Descriptive and Pathetic.** By Col. JOHN HAY. Cloth, neat, 2s. 6d.; in paper, 1s. 6d.

\* \* \* The dramatic fire and vigour of these PIKE COUNTY BALLADS will startle English readers. The last lines of the first ballad are simply terrific,—something entirely different from what any English author would dream of, much less put on paper.

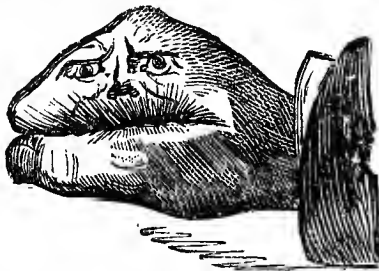
JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.



## Very Important New Books.

**MAGICIAN'S OWN BOOK.** Containing Ample Instructions for PERFORMANCE in LEGERDEMAIN, CUPS and BALLS, EGGS, HATS, HANDKERCHIEFS, &c. By the Author of "The Secret Out." All from Actual Experience, and Edited by W. H. CREMER, Jun., of Regent Street. With 200 Illustrations, 4s. 6d.

**THE SECRET OUT; or, One Thousand Tricks with Cards, and other Recreations; with Entertaining Experiments in Drawing-Room or "White Magic."** By the Author of the "Magician's Own Book." Edited by W. H. CREMER, Jun., of Regent Street. With 300 Engravings. Crown 8vo, cloth, 4s. 6d.



\* \* \* These Books are complete Cyclopaedias of Legerdemain. Under the title of "Le Magicien des Salons" the first has long been a standard Magic Book with all French and German Professors of the Art. The tricks are described so carefully, with engravings to illustrate them, that anybody can easily learn how to perform them.

### ENTIRELY NEW GAMES.

**THE MERRY CIRCLE.** A Book of NEW, GRACEFUL, and INTELLECTUAL GAMES and AMUSEMENTS. Edited by Mrs. CLAR' BELLEW. Crown 8vo, numerous Illustrations, 4s. 6d.

\* \* \* A new and capital book of Household Amusements. These are in every wo, Intellectual Games, and will please both old and young. It is an excellent book to consult before going to an evening party.

**THE ART OF AMUSING.** A Collection of Graceful Arts, Games, Tricks, Puzzles, and Charades, intended to amuse everybody, and enable all to amuse everybody else. By FRANK BELLEW. With nearly 300 Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 4s. 6d.

\* \* \* One of the most entertaining handbooks for amusement ever published.

**NOTICE.**—Of the four books offered above, the first is the most Advanced in the Mysteries of White Magic. The second is a capital Beginners' Book on the Wonderful Art of Conjuring. The third work, "The Merry Circle," is a book of an Advanced Character in Family Amusements, and requires considerable judgment on the part of the players. The last work is a capital introductory book to the Art of Amusing generally.

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

Very Important New Books.

---

## WORKS BY MARK TWAIN.

WIDELY KNOWN FOR THEIR FRESH AND DELIGHTFUL HUMOUR.

---

- 1.—**PLEASURE TRIP ON THE CONTINENT OF EUROPE.**  
By MARK TWAIN. 500 pages, 2s. ; or in cloth, 3s.
- 

\* \* \* TWAIN'S PLEASURE TRIP is also issued in two-vol. form under the title of

- 2.—**"THE INNOCENTS ABROAD."** By MARK TWAIN.  
**THE VOYAGE OUT.** Cloth, neat, fine toned paper, "SUPERIOR EDITION," 3s. 6d. ; or in paper, 1s.

- 3.—**THE NEW PILGRIM'S PROGRESS.** By MARK TWAIN.  
**THE VOYAGE HOME.** Cloth, neat, fine toned paper, "SUPERIOR EDITION," 3s. 6d. ; or in paper, 1s.

\* \* \* Readers who approved of this Author's quaint story of "The Jumping Frog," will be very well satisfied with the "New Pilgrim's Progress:" there has been no work like it issued here for years.

---

- 4.—**BURLESQUE "AUTOBIOGRAPHY," "FIRST MEDIAEVAL ROMANCE," AND "ON CHILDREN."** By MARK TWAIN. 6d.
- 



- 
- 5.—**THE JUMPING FROG, and other Humorous Sketches.**  
By MARK TWAIN. 1s.

"An inimitably funny book."—*Saturday Review.*

---

- 6.—**EYE-OPENERS.** A volume of immensely Funny Sayings, and Stories that will bring a smile upon the gruffest countenance. By the celebrated MARK TWAIN. Cloth, neat, 2s. 6d. ; Cheap Paper Edition, 1s.
- 

- 7.—**SCREAMERS.** A Gathering of Delicious Bits and Short Stories, by the renowned MARK TWAIN. Cloth, neat, 2s. 6d. ; Cheap Paper Edition, 1s.
- 

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

### GUSTAVE DORÉ'S MOST CHARACTERISTIC WORKS.

**RABELAIS.** Faithfully translated from the French, with variorum Notes, and numerous characteristic Illustrations by GUSTAVE DORÉ. Cloth neat, 600 pages. Price 7s. 6d.

\*.\* When it is stated that this is a "faithful translation," scholars will know what is meant. The 60 full-page illustrations are in the Artist's best and most fantastic manner.



**COCKAYNES IN PARIS, The;** or, an English Family Abroad. By BLANCHARD JERROLD. With MOST AMUSING thumb-nail SKETCHES of the ENGLISH by GUSTAVE DORÉ, taken on the Rail, the Steam-boat, and the Pavement. Price 7s. 6d.

\*.\* Returned tourists who would like to see themselves from a French point of view, will be greatly diverted with this new travel-book. The pictures are very droll, and give the exact notions of foreigners concerning us. One of these notions is that all English ladies and gentlemen breathe through their mouths instead of through their noses, hence our mouths are always open, our teeth protrude, and we are continually on the grin. Some of their caricatures of our weaknesses are not wholly devoid of truth.

**CAPTAIN CASTAGNETTE: His Surprising, almost Incredible Adventures.** 4to, with GUSTAVE DORÉ'S Illustrations. Price 1r. 9d. (sells at 5s.) Apply DIRECT to Mr. HOTTEN for this book.

**Hotten's Edition of "CONTES DROLATIQUES" (Droll Tales collected from the Abbeys of Lorraine),** par BALZAC. With 425 Marvellous, Extravagant, and Fantastic Woodcuts by DORÉ. Beautifully printed, thick 8vo, half morocco, Roxburghe. 12s. 6d.

\*.\* The most singular designs ever attempted by any artist. So crammed is the book with pictures that even the contents are adorned with thirty-three illustrations. DIRECT application must be made to Mr. HOTTEN for this work.

### GUSTAVE DORÉ'S FAVOURITE PENCIL SKETCHES.

**HISTORICAL CARTOONS; or, Rough Pencillings of the World's History from the First to the Nineteenth Century.** By GUSTAVE DORÉ. With admirable letterpress descriptions by THOMAS WRIGHT, F.S.A. Oblong 4to, handsome Table Book. Price 7s. 6d.



\*.\* This is a new book of daring and inimitable designs, which will excite considerable attention, and doubtless command a very wide circulation.

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

**THE COLLECTOR; Essays on Books, Newspapers, Pictures, Inns, Authors, Doctors, Holidays, Actors, Preachers.** By HENRY T. TUCKERMAN; with an Introduction by Dr. DORAN. Half morocco, 6s.

\* \* \* *A charming volume of delightful Essays, and a Companion to John Hill Burton's "Book-Hunter."*

**LITERARY COPYRIGHT.** *Seven Letters addressed by permission to Earl Stanhope, D.C.L., F.R.S.* By JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN. Price 5s.

"A sensible and valuable little book."—*Athenaeum*.

"We agree with Mr. Hotten."—*Saturday Review*.

### OLD DRAMATISTS—NEW EDITIONS.

**MARLOWE'S (Christopher) WORKS; Including his Translations.** Edited, with Notes and Introduction, by Lieut.-Col. F. CUNNINGHAM. Cr. 8vo, Portrait, cloth, 4s. 6d.; cloth gilt, 5s.

**MASSINGER'S (Philip) PLAYS.** From the Text of WM. GIFFORD. With the addition of the Tragedy of "Believe as You List." Edited by Lieut.-Col. FRANCIS CUNNINGHAM. Crown 8vo, Portrait. Cloth, 4s. 6d.; cloth gilt, 5s.

**BEN JONSON'S WORKS.** With Notes, Critical and Explanatory, and a Biographical Memoir by WILLIAM GIFFORD. Edited by Lieut.-Col. FRANCIS CUNNINGHAM. Complete in 3 vols. crown 8vo, Portrait, cloth, 4s. 6d. each; cloth gilt, 5s. each.

**LIFE AND NEWLY-DISCOVERED WRITINGS OF DANIEL DEFOE.** Comprising Several Hundred Important Essays, Pamphlets, and other Writings, now first brought to light, after many years' diligent search. By WILLIAM LEE, Esq. With Facsimiles and Illustrations. 3 vols., uniform with "Macaulay's History of England." 36s.

A VERY USEFUL BOOK.—In folio, half morocco, cloth sides, 7s. 6d.

**LITERARY SCRAPS, CUTTINGS from NEWSPAPERS, EXTRACTS, MISCELLANEA, &c.** A FOLIO SCRAP-BOOK OF 340 COLUMNS, formed for the reception of Cuttings, &c., with guards.

\* \* \* *A most useful volume, and one of the cheapest ever sold.*

**THE ROSICRUCIANS; their Rites and Mysteries.** With Chapters on the Ancient Fire and Serpent Worshipers, and Explanations of the Mystic Symbols represented in the Monuments and Talismans of the Primeval Philosophers. By HAR- GRAVE JENNINGS. 10s. 6d.

\* \* \* *A volume of startling facts and opinions upon this very mysterious subject, illustrated by nearly 300 engravings.*

"Curious as many of Mr. Hotten's works have been, the volume now under notice is, among them all, perhaps the most remarkable. The work purports to describe the Rites and Mysteries of the Rosicrucians. It dilates on the ancient Fire and Serpent Worshipers. The Author has certainly devoted an enormous amount of labour to these memorials of the Rose-Cross—otherwise the Rosicrucians."—*The Sun*.

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

**FLAGELLATION and the FLAGELLANTS; A History of the Rod in all Countries, from the Earliest Period to the Present Time.** By the Rev. WILLIAM COOPER, B.A. With numerous Illustrations. Thick crown 8vo, 12s. 6d.

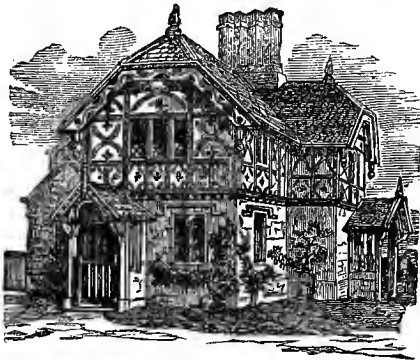
THE ROD  
IN  
THE CHURCH,  
CONVENT,  
MONASTERY,  
PRISON,  
ARMY, NAVY,  
IN PUBLIC  
AND  
IN PRIVATE



THE BIRCH  
IN  
THE FAMILY,  
LADIES' SEMINARIES,  
BOYS' SCHOOLS,  
COLLEGES,  
THE BOUDOIR,  
Ancient and Modern.

\*\*\* "A very remarkable, and certainly a very readable volume. Those who care for quaint stories of this birch will find much matter for reflection, and not a little amusement, in Mr. Cooper's 'Flagellation' Book."—*Daily Telegraph*.

**The ENGLISHMAN'S HOUSE, from a Cottage to a Mansion.** A Practical Guide to Members of Building Societies, and all interested in Selecting or Building a House. By C. J. RICHARDSON, Architect, Author of "Old English Mansions," &c. Second Edition, Corrected and Enlarged, with nearly 600 Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 50 pages, cloth, 7s. 6d.



\*\*\* This Work might not inappropriately be termed "A Book of Houses." It gives every variety of house, from a workman's cottage to a nobleman's palace. The book is intended to supply a want long felt, viz., a plain non-technical account of every style of house, with the cost and manner of building.

JOHN CAMDEN HOLTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

### **RUSKIN AND CRUIKSHANK. "German Popular Stories."**

Collected by the Brothers GRIMM. Translated by EDGAR TAYLOR. Edited by JOHN RUSKIN. With Twenty-two Illustrations after the inimitable designs of GEORGE CRUIKSHANK. BOTH SERIES COMPLETE. Cloth, 8vo, 6s. 6d.; gilt leaves, 7s. 6d.

\*.\* These are the designs which Mr. Ruskin has praised so highly, placing them for above all Cruikshank's other works of a similar character. So rare had the original book (published in 1823-1826) become, that £5 to £6 per copy was an ordinary price.

### **"FAMILY FAIRY TALES;" or, Glimpses of Elfland at**

Heatherston Hall. Edited by CHOLMONDELEY PENNELL, Author of "Puck on Pegasus," &c. Adorned with beautiful Pictures of "My Lord Lion," "King Uggermugger," and other Great Folks. Handsomely printed on toned paper, in cloth, green and gold, price 4s. 6d. plain, 5s. 6d. coloured.

\*.\* This charming volume has been universally praised by the critical press.

### **SCHOOL LIFE AT WINCHESTER COLLEGE; or, The**

Reminiscences of a Winchester Junior. By the Author of "The Log of the Water Lily," and "The Water Lily on the Danube." Second Edition, Revised, COLOURED PLATES, 7s. 6d.



\*.\* This book does for Winchester what "Tom Brown's School Days" did for Rugby.

### **PRINCE UBBELY BUBBLE'S NEW STORY BOOK. The**

Dragon all Covered with Spikes; The Long-tailed Nag; The Three One-legged Men; The Old Fly and the Young Fly; Tom and the Ogre; and many other Tales. By J. TEMPLETON LUCAS. With numerous Illustrations by MATT MORGAN, BARNES, GORDON THOMPSON, BRUNTON, and other Artists. In small 4to, green and gold, 4s. 6d.; gilt leaves, 5s. 6d.

\*.\* The Times devoted a special column in praise of this New Story Book.

### **MADGE AND THE FAIRY CONTENT. A charming Child's**

Story. By BLANCHARD JERROLD. Intended to inculcate a spirit of Contentment. With nearly 100 Pictures of the Industry requisite to produce the Christmas Pudding. 4s. 6d.

### **LITTLE CHARLIE'S LIFE OF HIMSELF. Edited by the**

Rev. W. R. CLARK, M.A., Vicar of Taunton. 4to, cloth, full of curious Illustrations, 3s. 6d.

\*.\* A most amusing Present for a child. It is an exact facsimile of the autobiography of a boy between six and seven years of age, as written by himself in his copy-book.

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

**CHARLES DICKENS**—*The Story of his Life.* By the Author of "The Life of Thackeray." Price 7s. 6d., with NUMEROUS PORTRAITS AND ILLUSTRATIONS, 370 pp.

"Anecdotes seem to have poured in upon the author from all quarters. . . Turn where we will through these 370 pleasant pages, something worth reading is sure to meet the eye."—*The Standard.*

*Dickens's Life*: Another Edition, without Illustrations, uniform with the "CHARLES DICKENS EDITION," and forming a Supplementary Volume to that favourite issue, crimson cloth, 3s. 6d.



DICKENS'S SUMMER HOUSE.

*Dickens's Life*.—CHEAP POPULAR EDITION, in paper, 2s.

**DICKENS'S SPEECHES**, *Literary and Social.*—Now first collected. With Chapters on "Charles Dickens as a Letter Writer, Poet, and Public Reader." Price 7s. 6d., with Fine Portrait by Count D'ORSAY, 370 pages.



\*\*\* "His capital speeches. Every one of them reads like a page of 'Pickwick.'"—*The Critic.*

"His speeches are as good as any of his printed writings."—*The Times.*

*Dickens's Speeches*.—Uniform with the "CHARLES DICKENS EDITION," and forming a Supplementary Volume to that favourite issue, crimson cloth, 3s. 6d.

*Dickens's Speeches*.—CHEAP EDITION, without Portrait, in paper wrapper, 2s.

**HUNTED DOWN.** A Story by CHARLES DICKENS. With some Account of Wainwright, the Poisoner. Price 6d.

\*\*\* A powerful and intensely thrilling story, now first printed in book-form in this country.

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

For Gold and Silversmiths.

### **PRIVATE BOOK OF USEFUL ALLOYS AND MEMORANDA**

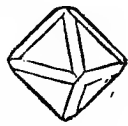
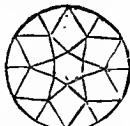
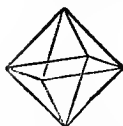
for **GOLDSMITHS** and **JEWELLERS**. By **JAMES E. COLLINS, C.E.**, of Birmingham Royal 16mo, 3s. 6d.

\*.\* *The secrets of the Gold and Silversmiths' Art are here given, for the benefit of young Apprentices and Practitioners. It is an invaluable book to the Trade.*

### **THE STANDARD WORK ON DIAMONDS AND PRECIOUS**

**STONES: their History, Value, and Properties; with Simple Tests for ascertaining their Reality.** By **HARRY EMANUEL, F.R.G.S.**

With numerous Illustrations, tinted and plain. New Edition. Prices brought down to the present time, full gilt, 6s.



"Will be acceptable to many readers."—*Times'* review of three columns.

"An invaluable work for buyers and sellers."—*Spectator*.

\*.\* *This Second Edition is greatly superior to the previous one. It gives the latest market value for Diamonds and Precious Stones of every size.*

### **GUNTER'S MODERN CONFECTIONER.** The Best Book

on Confectionery and Desserts. An Entirely New Edition of this Standard Work, adapted for Private Families or Large Establishments, By **WILLIAM JEANES**, Chief Confectioner at Messrs. **GUNTER'S**, Berkeley-square. With Plates, 8vo, cloth, 6s. 6d.

"All housekeepers should have it."—*Daily Telegraph*.

\*.\* *This work has won for itself the reputation of being the Standard English Book on the preparation of all kinds of Confectionery, and on the arrangement of Desserts.*

### **HOUSEKEEPER'S ASSISTANT.** A Collection of the most

valuable Recipes, carefully written down for future use by Mrs. **B—**, during her Forty Years' active Service. Cloth, price 2s. 6d.

\*.\* *As much as two guineas have been paid for a copy of this invaluable little work.*

### **THE YOUNG BOTANIST: A Popular Guide to Elementary Botany.** By **T. S. RALPH**, of the Linnæan Society. In 1 vol.,

with 300 Drawings from Nature, 2s. 6d. plain; 4s. Coloured by hand.

\*.\* *An excellent book for the young beginner. The objects selected as illustrations are either easy of access as specimens of wild plants, or are common in gardens.*

### **CHAMPAGNE: its History, Manufacture, Properties,**

&c. By **CHARLES Tovey**, Author of "Wine and Wine Countries," "British & Foreign Spirits," &c. Cr. 8vo, numerous illustrations, 5s.

\*.\* *A practical work, by one of the largest champagne merchants in London.*

### **BRIGHAM'S (Dr. A.) MENTAL EXERTION: Its In-**

fluence on Health. With Notes and Remarks on Dyspepsia of Literary Men. By **ARTHUR LEARED, M.D.** 8vo, boards, 1s. 6d.

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.



## Very Important New Books.

### HOGARTH'S FIVE DAYS'

*Frolic; or, "Periprinations by Land and Water."* Illustrated with TINTED DRAWINGS, made by HOGARTH and SCOTT during the Journey. 4to, beautifully printed, 10s. 6d.

\* \* \* *A graphic and most extraordinary picture of the hearty English times in which these merry artists lived.*



### ACROSTICS, in Prose and

*Verse.* Edited by A. E. H. 12mo, gilt cloth, gilt edges, 3s.

— SECOND SERIES, cloth gilt, 3s.

— THIRD SERIES, cloth gilt, 3s.

— FOURTH SERIES. With 8 Pictorial Acrostics. Cloth, gilt, 3s.

— FIFTH SERIES. An entirely New and Original Work. Cloth elegant, 4s. 6d.

— SUPPLEMENT, under the title of "Easy Double, Historical, and Scriptural Acrostics. Cloth gilt, 3s.

\* \* \* *Each series sold separately. These are the best volumes of Acrostics ever issued. They comprise Single, Double, Treble, and every variety of acrostic, and the set would amuse the younger members of a family for an entire winter.*

The Five Series Complete in a Case, "The Acrostic Box," price 15s.

### WONDERFUL CHARACTERS: Memoirs and Anecdotes

*of Remarkable and Eccentric Persons of Every Age and Nation.*

From the text of HENRY WILSON and JAMES CAULFIELD. 8vc,

with SIXTY-ONE FULL-PAGE ENGRAVINGS OF EXTRAORDINARY PERSONS, price 7s. 6d.



*This was written by  
James Caulfield*

*from  
M. Thackeray's  
Lectures*

\* \* \* *There are so many curious matters discussed in this volume, that any person who takes it up will not readily lay it down. The introduction is almost entirely devoted to a consideration of Pig-Faced Ladies, and the various stories concerning them.*

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

**AN EPIC OF WOMEN, and other Poems.** By ARTHUR W. E. O'SHAUGHNESSY. With Original Designs by Mr. J. T. NETTLESHIP. Cloth, neat, price 6s.

"What he has given us is remarkable. With its quaint title, and quaint illustrations, 'AN EPIC OF WOMEN' will be a rich treat to a wide circle of admirers."—*Athenaeum*, Nov. 5, 1870.

"Combine Morris and Swinburne, and inspire the product with a fervour essentially original, and you have, as we take it, a fair notion of Mr. O'Shaughnessy's poems."—*Dispatch*, Oct. 30, 1870.

**ANACREON.** Illustrated by the Exquisite Designs of GIRODET. Translated by THOMAS MOORE. Bound in vellum cloth and Etruscan gold, 12s. 6d.



\*\*\* A MOST BEAUTIFUL AND CAPTIVATING VOLUME. The well-known Paris house, Firmin Didot, a few years since produced a miniature edition of these exquisite designs by the photographic process, and sold a large number at £2 per copy. The designs have been universally admired by both artists and poets.

**ECHOES FROM THE FRENCH POETS.** An Anthology from BAUDELAIRE, ALFRED DE MUSSET, LAMARTINE, VICTOR HUGO, A. CHENIERE, T. GAUTIER, BERANGER, NADAUD, DUPONT, PARNY, and others. By HARRY CURWEN. Fcap. 8vo, cloth, 5s.; half-morocco, 6s.

"A pleasant little volume of translations from modern French poets."—*Graphic*, Aug. 20, 1870.

**FAIR ROSAMOND, and other Poems.** By B. MONTGOMERIE RANKING (of the Inner Temple). Fcap. 8vo, price 6s.

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

### THE NEW "PUNIANA" SERIES OF CHOICE ILLUSTRATED WORKS OF HUMOUR.

*Elegantly printed on toned paper, full gilt, gilt edges, for the Drawing-Room, price 6s. each.*

1. **CAROLS OF COCKAYNE.** By HENRY S. LEIGH. Vers de Société, and charming Verses descriptive of London Life. With numerous exquisite little Designs by ALFRED CONCANEN and the late JOHN LEECH. Small 4to, elegant, uniform with "Puniana," 6s.



2. **COUNTRY-HOUSE CHARADES,** for Acting. By Capt. E. C. NUGENT. With Illustrations by W. R. SNOW. Small 4to, green and gold, 6s.

*\*\*\* An entirely new book of Household Amusements. An Appendix gives the various Songs set to Music for accompaniment upon the Pianoforte.*

"AN AWFULLY JOLLY BOOK FOR PARTIES."

3. **PUNIANA: Thoughts Wise and Otherwise.** Best Book of Riddles and Puns ever formed. With nearly 100 exquisitely fanciful Drawings. Contains nearly 3,000 of the best Riddles and 10,000 most outrageous Puns, and is one of the most Popular Books ever issued. New Edition, uniform with the "Bab Ballads." Price 6s.

*Why did Du Chaillu get so angry when he was chaffed about the Gorilla?—Why? we ask.*

*Why is a chrysalis like a hot roll?—You will doubtless remark, "Because it's the grub that makes the butter fly!" But see "Puniana."*

*Why is a wide-awake hat so called?—Because it never had a nap, and never wants one.*

The *Saturday Review* says of this most amusing work:—"Enormous burlesque—unapproachable and pre-eminent. We venture to think that this very queer volume will be a favourite. It deserves to be so; and we should suggest that, to a dull person desirous to get credit with the young holiday people, it would be good policy to invest in this book, and dole it out by instalments."

NEW SOCIETY BOOK BY THE AUTHOR OF "PUNIANA."



4. **GAMOSAGAMMON;** or, Advice to Parties about to Connubialise. By the Hon. HUGH ROWLEY. With numerous exquisite and fanciful designs from his pencil. Small 4to, green and gold, 6s.

*\*\*\* The Quaintest, Funniest, most Original Book published for a long time.*

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

**PIERCE EGAN'S "FINISH" TO "LIFE IN AND OUT OF LONDON."** Royal 8vo, cloth extra, WITH SPIRITED COLOURED ILLUSTRATIONS BY CRUIKSHANK, 21s.

\*\*\* An extraordinary picture of "LONDON BY NIGHT" in the days of George the Fourth. All the strange places of Amusement around Covent Garden and in St. James's are fully described, and very queer places they were too!

**LIFE IN LONDON; or, The Day and Night Scenes of Jerry Hawthorn and Corinthian Tom.** Crown 8vo. WITH THE WHOLE OF CRUIKSHANK'S VERY DROLL ILLUSTRATIONS, IN COLOURS, AFTER THE ORIGINALS. Cloth extra, 7s. 6d.



TOM AND JERRY TAKING A STROLL.

\*\*\* One of the most popular books ever issued. It was an immense favourite with George IV., and as a picture of London life fifty years ago was often quoted by Thackeray, who devotes one of his "Roundabout Papers" to a description of it. Clean Second-hand copies of this work always realize from £1 to £2.

**VYNER'S NOTITIA VENATICA: A Treatise on Fox-Hunting, the General Management of Hounds, and the Diseases of Dogs; Distemper and Rabies; Kennel Lameness, &c.** Sixth Edition, Enlarged. By ROBERT C. VYNER, Esq., of Eathorpe Hall, Warwickshire. Royal 8vo. WITH SPIRITED ILLUSTRATIONS IN COLOURS, BY ALKEN, OF MEMORABLE FOX-HUNTING SCENES. 21s.

\*\*\* An Entirely New Edition of the best work extant upon Fox-Hunting.

"TOM SMITH."

**REMINISCENCES OF THE LATE THOMAS ASSHETON SMITH, Esq.;** or, *The Pursuits of an English Country Gentleman.* By SIR JOHN E. EARDLEY WILMOT, Bart. With Illustrations COLOURED and PLAIN. New Edition, (uniform with Nimrod's "Chase, Turf, and Road. Price 7s. 6d.

**FINE OLD HUNTING BOOKS, with Coloured Plates.**

MR. JORROCKS'S JAUNTS AND JOLLITIES.

LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF JACK MYTTON.

ANALYSIS OF THE HUNTING FIELD.

LIFE OF A SPORTSMAN. By NIMROD.

Apply to Mr. HOTTEN DIRECT for these books.

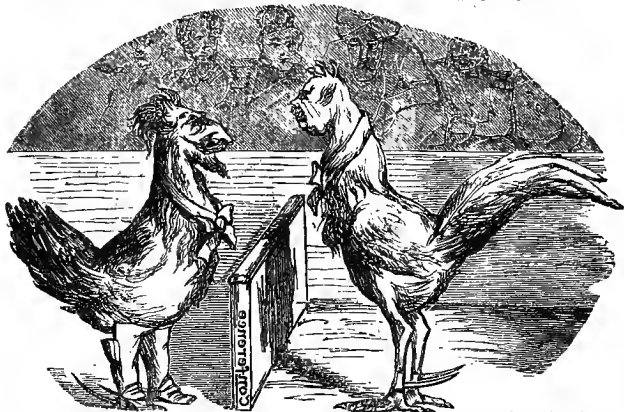
JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

### **NAPOLEON III., THE MAN OF HIS TIME:**

PART I.—The STORY OF THE LIFE OF NAPOLEON III., as told by JAS. W. HASWELL.

PART II.—The SAME STORY, as told by the POPULAR CARICATURES of the past Thirty-five Years. Crown 8vo, 400 pages, 7s. 6d.



\*\* The object of this Work is to give Both Sides of the Story. The Artist has gone over the entire ground of Continental and English Caricatures for the last third of a century, and a very interesting book is the result.

**CRUIKSHANK'S COMIC ALMANACK.** A Nineteen Years' gathering of the BEST HUMOUR, the WITTIEST SAYINGS, the Drollest Quips, and the Best Things of THACKERAY, HOOD, MAYHEW, ALBERT SMITH, A'BECKETT, ROBERT BROUGH, 1835-1853. With nearly Two Thousand Woodcuts and Steel Engravings by the inimitable CRUIKSHANK, HINE, LANDELLS, &c. Two Series, Crown 8vo, each of 600 pages, price 7s. 6d. each.



\*\* A most extraordinary gathering of the best wit and humour of the past half-century. Readers can purchase one Series and judge for themselves. The work forms a "Comic History of England" for twenty years.

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

**Original Edition of the Famous JOE MILLER'S JESTS;**  
*the politest Repartees, most elegant Bon-Mots, and most pleasing short Stories in the English Language.* London: printed by T. Read, 1739. Remarkable facsimile. 8vo, half morocco, price 9s. 6d.  
**\*\*\* ONLY A VERY FEW COPIES OF THIS HUMOROUS AND RACY OLD BOOK HAVE BEEN REPRODUCED.**

**HISTORY OF PLAYING CARDS.** With Sixty curious Illustrations, 550 pp., price 7s. 6d.

"A highly interesting volume."—*Morning Post.*

ANECDOTES, ANCIENT  
 AND MODERN GAMES.  
 CONJURING, FORTUNE-  
 TELLING AND CARD-  
 SHARPING, SKILL AND  
 SLEIGHT OF HAND,  
 GAMBLING AND CAL-  
 CULATION, CARTOMANCY



AND CHEATING, OLD  
 GAMES AND GAMING-  
 HOUSES, CARD REVELS  
 AND BLIND HOOKY,  
 PICQUET AND VINGT-  
 ET-UN, WHIST AND  
 CRIBBAGE, OLD-FASH-  
 IONED TRICKS.

**SLANG DICTIONARY; or, The Vulgar Words, Street Phrases, and "Fast" Expressions of High and Low Society;** many with their Etymology, and a few with their History traced. WITH CURIOUS ILLUSTRATIONS. A New Dictionary of Colloquial English. Pp. 328, in 8vo, price 6s. 6d.



See TWO UPON TEN, in the Dictionary, p. 264.

"It may be doubted if there exists a more amusing volume in the English language."—*Spectator.*

"Valuable as a work of reference."—*Saturday Review.*

"All classes of society will find amusement and instruction in its pages."—*Times.*



*Egyptian Hieroglyphic verb, to be drunk; showing the amputation of a man's leg. See under BERRY LEG (viz. Strong Drink) in the Dictionary, p. 81.*

**CAPTAIN GROSE'S DICTIONARY of the VULGAR TONGUE,** 1785. A genuine unmutilated Reprint of the First Edition. Price 8s.

\*\*\* Only a small number of copies of this very vulgar, but very curious, book have been printed for the Collectors of "Street Words" and Colloquialisms, on fine toned paper, half-bound morocco, gilt top.

JOHN CALDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

### **HISTORY OF CARICATURE AND THE GROTESQUE in**

*Art, Literature, Sculpture, and Painting, from the Earliest Times to the Present Day.* By THOMAS WRIGHT, F.S.A. (Author of "A Caricature History of the Georges.") 4to, profusely illustrated by FAIRHOLT. 21s.

\* \* \* *A valuable historical, and at the same time most entertaining work. The author's first idea was to call it a "History of Comic Literature and Art in Great Britain." The illustrations are full of interest.*



GEORGE III. WONDERING HOW THE APPLES GOT INSIDE THE DUMPLINGS.

**CARICATURE HISTORY OF THE GEORGES** (*House of Hanover*). Very Entertaining Book of 640 pages, with 400 Pictures, Caricatures, Squibs, Broad-sides, Window Pictures. By T. WRIGHT, F.S.A. 7s. 6d.

\* \* \* *Companion Volume to "History of Signboards." Reviewed in almost every English journal with the highest approbation.*

"A set of caricatures such as we have in Mr. Wright's volume brings the surface of the age before us with a vividness that no prose writer, even of the highest power, could emulate. Macanlay's most brilliant sentence is weak by the side of the little woodcut from Gillray, which gives us Burke and Fox."—*Saturday Review*.

"A more amusing work of its kind was never issued."—*Art Journal*.

"It is emphatically one of the liveliest of books, as also one of the most interesting. It has the twofold merit of being at once amusing and edifying. The 600 odd pages which make up the goodly volume are doubly enhanced by some 400 illustrations, of which a dozen are full-page ones."—*Morning Post*.

LARGE-PAPER EDITION, 4to, only 100 printed, on extra fine paper, wide margins, for the lovers of choice books, with extra Portraits, half morocco (a capital book to illustrate) 30s.

A Companion Table Book to "Leech's Sketches."

**MAIDEN HOURS AND MAIDEN WILES.** Designed by "BEAUJOLAIS" (CAPTAIN HANS BUSK). A SERIES OF REMARKABLY CLEVER SKETCHES, showing the Occupations of a Fashionable Young Lady at All Hours of the Day. With appropriate Text. Folio, half morocco, blue and gold, gilt edges, 10s. 6d.

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.



A CLEVER AND BRILLIANT BOOK,  
Companion to the "*Bon Gouetier Ballads*,"  
**PUCK ON PEGASUS.** By  
H. CHOLMONDELEY PENNELL.  
In 4to, printed within an India-paper  
tone, and elegantly bound, gilt, gilt  
edges, price 10s. 6d. only.

\*\*\* This most amusing work has already  
passed through Five Editions, receiving every-  
where the highest praise as "a clever and  
brilliant book." To no other work of the  
present day have so many distinguished Ar-  
tists contributed Illustrations. To the designs  
of GEORGE CRUKSHANK, JOHN LEECH,  
JULIAN PORTCH, "PHIZ," and other Artists,  
SIR NOEL PATON, MILLAIS, JOHN TENNIEL,  
RICHARD DOYLE, and M. ELLEN EDWARDS,  
have now contributed several exquisite pictures,  
thus making the New Edition—which is Twice  
the Size of the old one, and contains irresis-  
tibly funny pieces—the best book for the  
Drawing-room table now published.

### AUSTIN'S (Alfred) *THE SEASON: A Satire.*

Elegantly bound for the Drawing-room, 5s.

\*\*\* An entirely New Edition of this famous Work, it having been out of  
print seven years.

**SIGNBOARDS: Their History. With Anecdotes of Famous  
Taverns and Remarkable Characters.** By JACOB LARWOOD and  
JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN. "A book which will delight all."—  
*Spectator*. Fourth Edition, 580 pp., price 7s. 6d. only.

From the "*Times*."

"It is not fair  
on the part of a  
reviewer to pick  
out the plums  
of an author's  
book, thus flch-  
ing away his  
cream, and leav-  
ing little but  
skim-milk re-  
maining; but,  
even if we were  
ever so mali-  
ciously inclined,



BULL AND MOUTH.

\*\*\* Nearly 100 most curious illustrations on wood are given, showing the various  
old signs which were formerly hung from taverns and other houses.

From the "*Times*."

we could not in  
the present in-  
stance pick out  
all Messrs. Lar-  
wood and Hot-  
ten's plums, be-  
cause the good  
things are so  
numerous as to  
defy the most  
wholesale depre-  
dation."—*Review*  
of three columns.

**ROMANCE OF THE ROD: An Anecdotal History of the  
Birch, in Ancient and Modern Times.** With some quaint Illustra-  
tions. Crown 8vo, handsomely printed. [In preparation.]

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.



## Very Important New Books.

### THE FAMOUS "DOCTOR SYNTAX'S" THREE TOURS.

One of the most amusing and Laughable Books ever published. WITH THE WHOLE OF ROWLANDSON'S VERY DROLL FULL-PAGE ILLUSTRATIONS, IN COLOURS, AFTER THE ORIGINAL DRAWINGS. Comprising the well-known TOURS—

1. In Search of the Picturesque.
2. In Search of Consolation.
3. In Search of a Wife.

The Three Series Complete and Unabridged in One Handsome Volume, with a Life of this industrious Author—the English Le Sage—now first written by JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN. This Edition contains the whole of the original, hitherto sold for 31s. 6d., now published at 7s. 6d. only.

UNIFORM WITH "WONDERFUL CHARACTERS."

### REMARKABLE TRIALS AND NOTORIOUS CHARACTERS.

From "Half-Hanged Smith," 1700, to Oxford who shot at the Queen, 1840. By CAPTAIN L. BENSON. With spirited full-page Engravings by PHIZ. 8vo. 550 pages, 7s. 6d.



\* \* \* A Complete Library of Sensation Literature! There are plots enough here to produce a hundred "exciting" Novels, and at least five hundred "powerful" Magazine Stories. The book will be appreciated by all readers whose taste lies in this direction. Phiz's pictures are fully equal to those in "Master Humphrey's Clock."

A Keepsake for Smokers.

### "THE SMOKER'S TEXT-BOOK." By J. HAMER, F.R.S.L.

Exquisitely printed from "silver-faced" type, cloth, very neat, gilt edges, 2s. 6d., post free.

"A pipe is a great comforter, a pleasant soother. The man who smokes, thinks like a sage, and acts like a Samaritan."  
—*Bulwer.*

"A tiny volume, dedicated to the votaries of the weed; beautifully printed on toned paper, in, we believe, the smallest type ever made (cast especially for show at the Great Exhibition in Hyde Park), but very clear, notwithstanding its minuteness. . . . The pages sing, in various styles, the praises of tobacco. Amongst the writers laid under contribution are Bulwer, Kingsley, Charles Lamb, Thackeray, Isaac Browne, Cowper, and Byron."  
—*The Field.*

18

#### THE TRUE CONSOLER.

HE who doth not smoke hath either known no great grief, or refused himself the softest consolation, next to that which comes from heaven. "What softer than woman?" whispers the young reader. Young reader, woman teases as well as consoles. Woman makes half the sorrows which she boasts the privilege to soothe. Woman consoles us, it is true, while we are young and handsome; when we are old and ugly, woman smite and scold us. On the whole, then, woman in this scale, the weed in that, Jupiter, hang out thy balance, and weigh them both; and if thou give the preference to woman all I can say is, the next time Juno ruffles thee—O Jupiter! try the weed.  
BULWER'S "What will he do with it?"

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

### ORIGINAL EDITION OF BLAKE'S WORKS.

**NOTICE.**—Mr. HOTTEN has prepared a few Facsimile Copies (*exact as to paper and printing—the water-colour drawings being filled in by an artist*) of the ORIGINAL EDITION OF BLAKE'S "MARRIAGE OF HEAVEN AND HELL." 4to, price 30s., half morocco.

"Blake is a real name, I assure you, and a most extraordinary man he is, if he still be living. He is the Blake whose wild designs accompany a splendid edition of 'Blair's Grava.' He paints in water-colours marvellous strange pictures—visions of his brain—which he asserts he has seen. They have great merit. I must look upon him as one of the most extraordinary persons of the age."—CHARLES LAMB.

**EMERSON.** *The Uncollected Writings, Essays, and Lectures of RALPH WALDO EMERSON.* With Introductory Preface by MONCURE CONWAY. 2 vols. 8vo. By Arrangement with Mr. EMERSON.

**INFELICIA.** *Poems by Adah Isaacs Menken.* With NUMEROUS GRACEFUL DESIGNS ON WOOD. Dedicated, by permission, to CHARLES DICKENS, with Photographic Facsimile of his Letter, and a Portrait of the Authoress. In green and gold, 5s. 6d.

"A pathetic little volume exquisitely got up."—*Sun.*

"Faw, if any, could have guessed the power and beauty of the thoughts that possessed her soul, and found expression in language at once pure and melodious."—*Press.*

"There is a passionate richness about many of the poems which is almost startling."—*Sunday Times.*

"What can we say of this gifted and wayward woman, the existence



of whose better nature will be agitated for the first time to many by the posthumous disclosure of this book? We do not envy the man who, reading it, has only a sneer for its writer; nor the woman who finds it in her heart to turn away with averted face."—*New York Round Table.*

"An amusing little book, unhappily posthumous, which a distinguished woman has left as a legacy to mankind and the age."—*Saturday Review.*

Fcap. 8vo, 450 pages with fine Portrait and Autograph, 7s. 6d.

**WALT WHITMAN'S POEMS.** (*Leaves of Grass, Drum-Taps, &c.*) Selected and Edited by WILLIAM MICHAEL ROSSETTI.

"Whitman is a poet who bears and needs to be read as a whole, and then the volume and torrent of his power carry the disfigurements along with it and away. He is really a fine fellow."—*Chambers's Journal*, in a very long notice.

**THE EARTHWARD PILGRIMAGE.** By MONCURE CONWAY.

Cr. 8vo, 400 pages, cloth, neat, 7s. 6d.

\*.\* This volume has excited considerable discussion, as it advances many entirely new views upon the life hereafter. The titles to some of the chapters will convey an idea of the contents of the work:—"How I left the world to come for that which is."

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

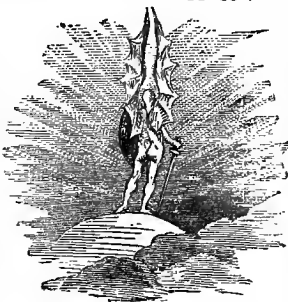
### MR. SWINBURNE'S ESSAY.

\*\* "A wonderful literary performance."—"Splendour of style and majestic beauty of diction never surpassed."

**WILLIAM BLAKE: A Critical Essay.** With facsimile Paintings, Coloured by Hand, from the Original Drawings painted by Blake and his Wife. Thick 8vo, pp. 350, 16s.

"An extraordinary work: violent, extravagant, perverse, calculated to startle, to shock, and to alarm many readers, but abounding in beauty, and characterised by intellectual grasp.

His power of word-painting is often truly wonderful—sometimes, it must be admitted, in excess, but always full of matter, form, and colour, and



instinct with a sense of vitality."—*Daily News*, Feb. 12, 1868.

"It is in every way worthy of Mr. Swinburne's high fame. In no prose work can be found passages of keener poetry, or more finished grace, or more impressive harmony. Strong, vigorous, and musical, the style sweeps on like a river."—*The Sunday Times*, Jan. 12, 1868.

**MR. SWINBURNE'S SONG OF ITALY.** Fcap. 8vo, toned paper, cloth, price 3s. 6d.

\*\* The *Athenæum* remarks of this poem—"Seldom has such a chant been heard, so full of glow, strength, and colour."

**MR. SWINBURNE'S POEMS AND BALLADS.** FOURTH EDITION. Price 9s.

**MR. SWINBURNE'S NOTES ON HIS POEMS, and on the Reviews which have appeared upon them.** Price 1s.

**MR. SWINBURNE'S ATALANTA IN CALYDON.** New Edition. Fcap. 8vo, price 6s.

**MR. SWINBURNE'S CHASTELARD.** A Tragedy. New Edition. Price 7s.

**MR. SWINBURNE'S QUEEN MOTHER AND ROSAMOND.** New Edition. Fcap. 8vo, price 5s.

**MR. SWINBURNE'S BOTHWELL.** A New Poem.  
[In preparation.]

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

**\*\* Mr. HOTTEN is enabled to afford most material and important assistance to all interested in Genealogical Inquiries, difficult Pedigree Researches, or in the compilation of Family Histories. He has the following**

### FAMILY HISTORIES FOR SALE:—

- FORSTER and FOSTER FAMILIES.** 4to. Illustrations, 31s. 6d.  
**BAIRD FAMILY.** Roy. 8vo. Facsimiles. 10s. 6d.  
**CHICHESTER and RALEIGH FAMILIES.** 4to. Illustrations, 21s. ;  
with Arms emblazoned, 31s. 6d.  
**MILLAIS FAMILY.** With Etchings by Millais. 28s.  
**WASHINGTON FAMILY.** Preparing.  
**COLE FAMILY.**  
**STUART FAMILY.** 8vo, half morocco. 8s. 6d.  
**CHICHELE FAMILY.** (Contains Pedigrees of many other Families.)  
4to. 17s. 6d.

**ROLL OF CAERLAVEROCK, with the Arms of the Knights and others present at the Siege of the Castle in Scotland, A.D. 1300.** Emblazoned in Gold and Colours, 4to, 12s.

**MAGNA CHARTA.** EXACT FACSIMILE of the Original Document in the British Museum. With ARMS AND SEALS OF THE BARONS EMBLAZONED IN GOLD AND COLOURS. A.D. 1215. 5s.

**\*\* Copied by express permission, and the only correct drawing of the Great Charter ever taken. A full translation, with notes, price 6d. The Charter framed and glazed in carved oak, 22s. 6d.**

**ROLL OF BATTLE ABBEY: A List of the Normans who came over with William the Conqueror, and settled in this Country, A.D. 1066-67. WITH ARMS OF THE BARONS EMBLAZONED IN GOLD AND COLOURS.** Price 5s.

**\*\* A most curious document, and of the greatest interest to all of Norman descent. Framed and glazed in carved oak, 22s. 6d.**

**WARRANT TO EXECUTE CHARLES I.** Exact Facsimile, with the 59 Signatures of Regicides, and Seals. Price 2s. ; by post, 2s. 4d.

**\*\* Very curious, and copied by express permission. In carved oak and glazed, 14s. 6d.**

**WARRANT TO EXECUTE MARY QUEEN OF SCOTS.** Exact Facsimile, with Signature of Queen Elizabeth, and Great Seal of England. Price 2s. ; by post, 2s. 4d.

**\*\* Very curious, and copied by express permission. In carved oak and glazed, 14s. 6d.**

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

## Very Important New Books.

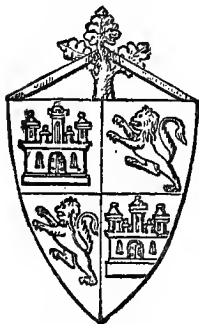
### **HANDBOOK OF FAMILY HISTORY OF THE ENGLISH**

**COUNTIES:** Descriptive Account of 20,000 most Curious and Rare Booke, Old Tracte, Ancient Manuscripte, Engravinge, and Privately-printed Family Papers, relating to the History of almost every Landed Estate and Old English Family in the Country; interspered with nearly Two Thousand Original Anecdotes, Topographical and Antiquarian Notes. By JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN. Nearly 350 pages, very neat, price 5s.

*\*\* By far the largest collection of English and Welsh Topography and Family History ever formed. Each article has a small price affixed, for the convenience of those who may desire to possess any book or tract that interests them.*

### **CAXTON'S STATUTES OF HENRY VII., 1489.** Edited by

JOHN RAE, Esq., Fellow of the Royal Institution. The Earliest known Volume of Printed Statutes, and remarkable as being in English. MARVELLOUS FACSIMILE, from the rare original. Small folio, half morocco, £1 11s. 6d.



### **THE BEST HANDBOOK OF HERALDRY.**

Profusely Illustrated with Plates and Woodcuts. By JOHN E. CUSSANS. In crown 8vo, pp. 360, in emblazoned gold cover, with copious Index, 7s. 6d.

*\*\* This volume, beautifully printed on toned paper, contains not only the ordinary matter to be found in the best books on the science of Armory, but several other subjects hitherto unnoticed. Amongst these may be mentioned:—1. Directions for Tracing Pedigrees. 2. Deciphering Ancient MSS., Illustrated by Alphabets and Facsimiles. 3. The Appointment of Liveries. 4. Continental and American Heraldry, &c.*

Best Guide to Reading Old MSS., Records, &c.

### **WRIGHT'S COURT HAND RE-**

**STORED;** or, Student's Assistant in Reading Old Deeds, Charters, Records, &c."

Half morocco, 10s. 6d.

*\*\* A New Edition, corrected, of an invaluable work to all who have occasion to consult Old MSS., Deeds, Charters, &c. It contains a series of Facsimiles of Old MSS. from the Time of the Conqueror, Tables of Contractions and Abbreviations, Ancient Surnames, &c.*

### **LISTS OF THE ROMAN CATHOLICS AND RECUSANTS IN**

**YORKSHIRE, temp. James I. (A.D. 1604).** Edited, with Copious Genealogical Notes, by EDWARD PEACOCK, F.S.A. (Editor of "Army Lists of the Roundheads and Cavaliers, 1642"). 4to, elegantly printed, 12s. 6d.

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.

Very Important New Books.

---

## Hotten's "Golden Library"

OF THE BEST AUTHORS.

\* \* \* A charming collection of Standard and Favourite Works, elegantly printed in Handy Volumes, uniform with the Tauchnitz Series, and published at exceedingly low prices. The New Volumes are:—

**ROCHEFOUCAULD.**—*Reflections and Moral Maxims.* 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d. Essay by SAINTE-BEUVE.

**SHELLEY.**—*Poetical Works.* From the Author's Original Editions. First Series, *QUEEN MAB* and *EARLY POEMS.* 1s. 8d.; in cloth, 2s. 2d.

**HOLMES.**—*Autocrat of the Breakfast Table.* 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.

**THE CLERGY.**—*The Book of Clerical Anecdotes and Pulpit Eccentricities.* 1s. 4d.; cloth, 1s. 10d.

**CHARLES LAMB.**—*The Essays of Elia.* Complete. Both Series. 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.

**DICKENS.**—*Life.* By the Author of the "Life of Thackeray." 2s.

**DICKENS.**—*Speeches upon Literary and Social Topics.* 2s.

"His Speeches are as good as any of his printed writings."—*The Times.*

**ARTEMUS WARD.**—*In London;* with the "PUNCH" Letters. 1s. 6d.; cloth, 2s.

**TENNYSON.**—*Old Prose Stories of Idylls of the King.* 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.

**DISRAELI'S, GLADSTONE'S, AND BRIGHT'S SPEECHES**  
in separate vols., at 1s. 4d.; cloth, 1s. 10d.  
*Comprise all the Important Speeches of these Statesmen during the past 25 years.*

**CARLYLE.**—*On the Choice of Books.* 1s.; cl. 1s. 6d.  
*Should be read and re-read by every young man in the three kingdoms.*

**HOLMES.**—*Professor at the Breakfast Table.* 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.

**LEIGH HUNT.**—*Tale for a Chimney Corner, and other Essays.* 1s. 4d.; cloth, 1s. 10d.

**HOOD.**—*Whims and Oddities.* 80 Illustrations. 2 Series, Complete. 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.

**LELAND.**—*Hans Breitmann's Ballads,* Complete. 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.

---

JOHN CAMDEN HOTTEN, 74 AND 75, PICCADILLY, LONDON.









